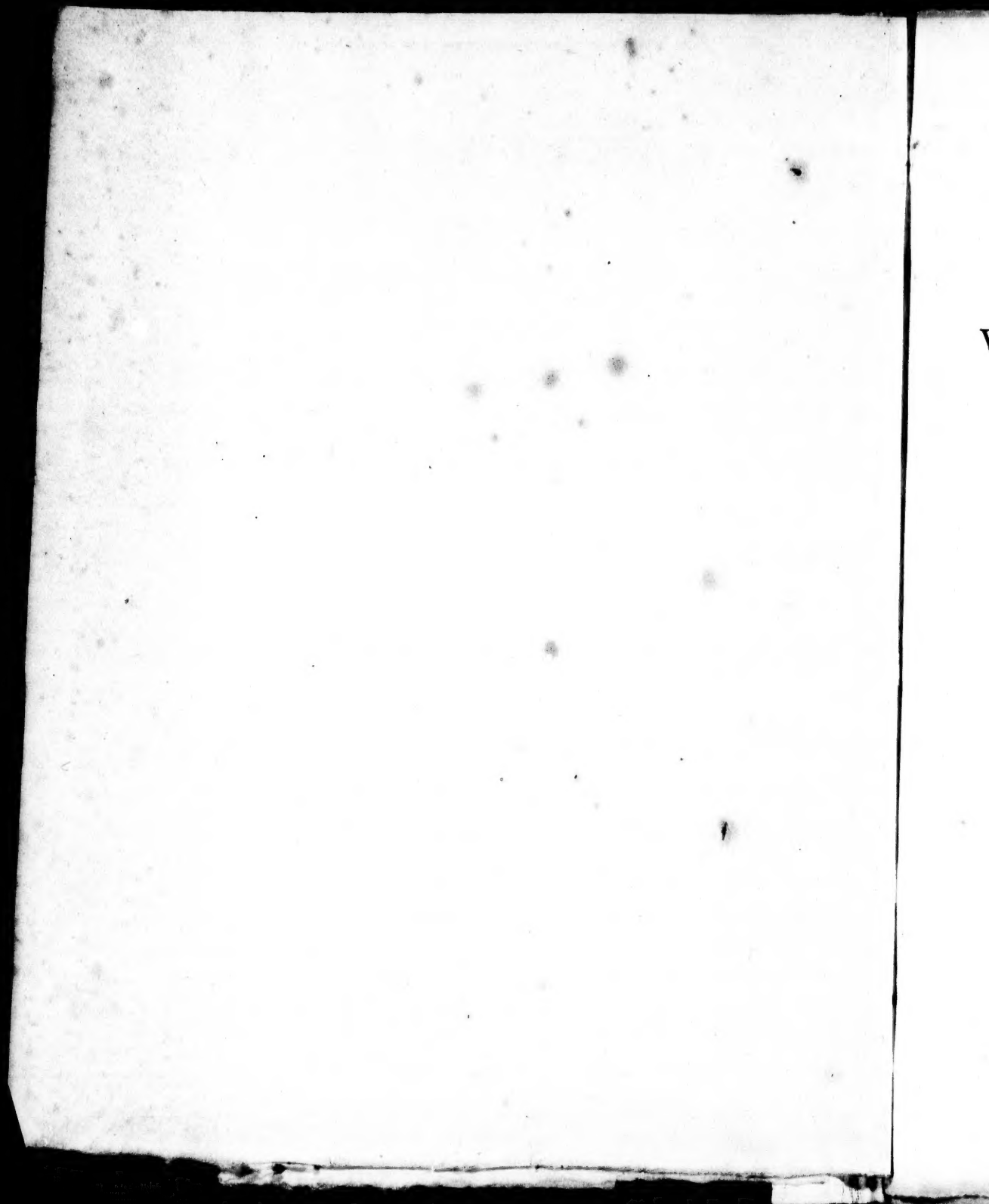




HAKLUYT'S
COLLECTION OF THE EARLY
VOYAGES, TRAVELS, AND DISCOVERIES,

OF THE

ENGLISH NATION.

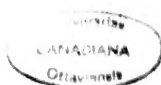
A NEW EDITION, WITH ADDITIONS.

THE FIFTH AND LAST VOLUME.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR R. H. EVANS, 26, PALL MALL; AND R. PRIESTLEY,
HOLBORN.

1812.



REVISED

OF THIS EDITION THERE ARE ONLY 250 COPIES PRINTED ON ROYAL PAPER AND 75 ON IMPERIAL PAPER.

G. WOODFALL.

Cop.

G

242

18146

1809

V.5

G. WOODFALL, Printer, Paternoster Row, London.

A V
15
The
ster
the
New
and
ma
The
hab
The
Sh
Isle
The
cor
Virg
the
me
A D
So
A T
Po
as
En
The
po

A CATALOGUE

OF THE

VOYAGES, &c. OF THIS FIFTH VOLUME.

	Page
A Voyage made by certaine Ships of Holland into the East Indies, who set forth on the 2d of April, 1595, and returned on the 14th of April, 1597.	1
The Prosperous and Speedy Voiage to Iaua in the East Indies, performed by a fletee of 8. Ships of Amsterdam: which set forth from Texell in Holland, the First of Maie 1598, whereof 4. returned againe the 19 of Iuly 1599, the other 4. went forward from Iaua for the Moluccas.	33
Newes from the East Indies: or a Voyage to Bengalla, one of the greatest Kingdomes under the high and mighty Prince Pedesha Shassallem, usually called the Great Mogull, with their detestable religion, mad and foppish rites, wicked sacrifices and impious Customes	45
The Fardle of Facions, containing the Aunciente Maners, Customes and Lawes of the Peoples Enhabiting the two partes of the Earth, called Affricke and Asie.	61
The Conquest of the Grand Canaries, made this last Summer by threescore and thirteene saile of Shippes, sent forth at the Command of the States Generall to the Coast of Spaine and the Canarie Isles.	141
The Historie of the West Indies, containing the Actes and Aduentures of the Spaniards, which haue conquered and peopled those Countries, published in Latin by Hakluyt and translated by Lok.	155
Virginia richly valued, by the description of the Maine Land of Florida, her next Neighbour: out of the foure yeeres continuall trauell and discouerie of Don Ferdinando de Soto and sixe hundred able men in his companie, translated out of the Portuguese by Hakluyt.	477
A Discovery of the Barmidas, otherwise called the Ile of Diuels: by Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Sommers, and Captayne Newport, set forth by Sil. Iourdan.	551
A True Coppie of a Discourse written by a Gentleman, employed in the late Voyage of Spaine and Portingale: sent to his particular friend, and by him published for the better satisfaction of all such as haue been seduced by particular report, haue entred into conceipts tending to the discredit of the Enterprise, and Actors of the same. 1589.	559
The Omissions of Cales Voyage, stated and discussed by the Earl of Essex, from a Manuscript in the possession of the Marquis of Stafford.	591

WI

VOL

THE
DESCRIPTION OF A VOYAGE

MADE BY

CERTAIN SHIPS OF HOLLAND

INTO THE

EAST INDIES,

WITH THEIR ADVENTURES AND SUCCESSE:

TOGETHER

WITH THE DESCRIPTION OF THE COUNTRIES, TOWNES, AND INHABITANTES OF
THE SAME:

WHO SET FORTH ON THE SECOND OF APRILL, 1595, AND RETURNED ON THE 14 OF
AUGUST, 1597.

TRANSLATED OUT OF DUTCH INTO ENGLISH BY W. P.

London:

IMPRINTED BY JOHN WOLFE.

1598.

VOL. V.

B

by
han
me
and
de
thr
Ber
wri
Eng
ton
tho
An
wor
and
whi
and
Wh
mor
by
fauc
hun

TO THE
RIGHT WORSHIPFULL

SIR IAMES SCUDAMORE, KNIGHT.

Right worshipfull, this small treatie (written in Dutch, shewing a late voyage performed by certain Hollanders to the Islandes of Iaua, part of the East Indies) falling into my handes, and in my iudgement deserving no lesse commendation then those of our Countrey-men, (as Captaine Raimonde in the Penelope, Maister Foxcroft in the Marchant Royall, and M. Iames Lancaster in the Edward Bonaenture, vnto the said East Indies, by the Cape de Bona Sperance, in Anno 1591, as also M. Iohn Newbery, and Raphael Fich ouer land through Siria from Aleppo vnto Ormus and Goa, and by the said Raphael Fich himselfe to Bengala, Malocca, Pegu, and other places in Anno 1583. as at large appeareth in a booke written by M. RICHARD HACLUTE a Gentleman very studious therein, and entituled the English voyages) I thought it not vnconuenient to translate the same into our mother tongue, thereby to procure more light and encouragement to such as are desirous to trauell those Countries, for the common wealth and commoditie of this Realme and themselues. And knowing that all men are not like affected, I was so bold to shrowd it vnder your worships protection, as being assured of your good disposition to the fauoring of trauell and trauellers, (and whereby it hath pleased God to aduance you to that honourable title, which at this present you beare) and so not fitter for the protection of any then your selfe: and as a poore friend wishing all happines and prosperity in all your valiant actions. Which if it please your worshippe to like and accept, it may procure the proceeding in a more large and ample discourse of an East Indian voyage, lately performed and set forth by one Iohn Huguen of Linschoten, to your further delight. Wherewith crauing your fauor, and beseeching God to blesse your worship, with my good Ladie your wife, I most humbly take my leaue:

This 16. of Ianuarie.

1597.

Your Worships to commaunde
W. PHILLIP.

the
for
I th
wri
Co
wri
ma
Gre
to
wit
gol
win
len
late
We
lan
pre
lon
any
fau
min
cou
We
thei
act
wit
anc
(ha
are
he
cou
to
tho
par
cei

TO THE

BAYLIEVES, BURGHEMAISTERS, AND COUNSELL

OF THE TOWN OF MIDDELBORGH IN ZEELANDE

IT may well bee thought (Right worshipfull) as many learned men are of opinion, that the actions and adventures of the ancients long since done & performed, haue beene set forth with more show of wonder and strangenesse then they in truth deserued: the reason as I think was, because that in those daies there were many learned and wise men, who in their writings sought by all meanes they could to excell each other, touching the description of Countries & nations: And againe to the contrarie, for want of good Historiographers and writers, many famous actes and trauels of diuers nations and Countries lie hidden, and in a manner buried vnder ground, as wholly forgotten and vnknowne, vnlesse it were such as the Grecians and Romanes for their owne glories and aduantages thought good to declare. But to come to the matter of voyages by sea, it is euident to all the world, what voyage Iason with certaine yong Grecian Princes made to Colchos in the Oriental Countries to winne the golden Fleece, as also the trauels by Hercules performed into Libia in the West partes, to winne the Aurea Mala or golden apples of Hesperides, which notwithstanding neither for length, daunger, nor profite, are any thing comparable to the nauigations and voyages, that of late within the space of one hundreth years haue been performed & made into the East & West Indies, whereby in a manner there is not one haue on the sea coast, nor any point of land in the whole world, but hath in time beene sought and founde out. I will not at this present dispute or make an argument, whether the Countries and nations of late yeares found out and discovered, were knowne to the auncients, but this is most certaine, that not any strange worke or aduenture was, or euer shall be performed, but by the speciall grace, fauour and mightie hand of God, and that such are worthy perpetual memory, as with noble minds haue sought to effect, and be the first enterprisers thereof, and with most valiant courages and wisdomes, haue performed such long and dangerous voyages into the East and West Indies, as also such Kinges and Princes, as with their Princely liberalities haue employed their treasures, shippes, men and munitions to the furtherance and performance of so worthy actes, which notwithstanding in the end turned to their great aduancementes and enriching with great treasures, which by those meanes they haue drawn, & caused in great abundance to be brought from thence, in such manner, that the King of Spaine nowe liuing, (hauing both the Indies in his possession, & reaping the abundant treasures which yearly are brought out of those countries) hath not only (although couertly) sought all the means he could to bring all Christendome vnder his dominion, but also (that which no King or country what-soeuer although of greater might then he hath euer done) hee is not ashamed to vse this posie, Nec spe, nec metu. And although the first founders and discoverers of those Countries haue alwayes sought to hinder and intercept other nations from hauing any part of their glorie, yet hereby all nations, & indifferent persons may well know and perceiue the speciall policie, and valour of these vnited Prouinces, in traueilling into both the
Indies,

Indies, in the faces, and to the great griefe of their many and mighty enemies. Wherby it is to be hoped, that if they continue in their enterprises begun, they will not onely draw the most part of the Indian treasures into these Countries, but thereby disinherit & spoyle the Countrey of Spayne of her principall reuenues, and treasures of marchandise and traffiques, which she continually vseth and receyue out of these countries, and out of Spayne are sent into the Indies, and so put the King of Spaine himselfe in minde of his foolish deuise which hee vseth for a posie touching the new world, which is, Non sufficit orbis, like a second Alexander magnus, desiring to rule ouer all the world, as it is manifestly knowne. And because this discription is fallen into my handes, wherein is containned the first voyage of the Low-country men into the East Indies, with the aduentures happened vnto them, set downe and iustified by such as were present in the voyage, I thought it good to put it in print, with many pictures and cardes, whereby the reader may the easilier perceyue and discerne, the natures, apparels, and fashions of those Countries and people, as also the manner of their shippes, together with the fruitfulnessse and great aboundance of the same, hoping that this my labour will not onely be acceptable vnto all Marchants and Saylers, which hereafter meane to traffique into those Countries, but also pleasant and profitable to all such as are desirous to looke into so newe and strange things, which neuer heretofore were knowne vnto our nation. And againe for that all histories haue their particular commoditie, (specially such as are collected and gathered together) not by common report, from the first, seconde, or thirde man, but by such as haue seene and beene present in the actions, and that are liuing to iustifie and verifie the same: And although eloquence and words well placed in shewing a history, are great ornamentes and beautifynges to the same, yet such reports & declarations are much more worthy credite, & commendabler for the benefit of the commonwealth, which are not set down or disciphered by subtilt eloquence, but showne and performed by simple plaine men, such as by copiousnesse of wordes, or subtiltie do not alter or chaunge the matter from the truth thereof, which at this day is a common and notorious fault in many Historiographers: And thinking with myselfe to whome I were best to dedicate the same, I found it not fitter for any then for the right worshipfull Gouvernours of this famous Towne of Middelborgh, wherein for the space of 19 yeares I haue peaceably continued, specially because your worships do not onely deale with great store of shipping, and matter belonging to nauigation, but are also well pleased to heare, and great furtherers to aduance both shipping and traffiques, wherein consisteth not onely the welfare of all marchants, inhabitants, and citizens of this famous City, but also of all the commonwealth of the vnited Prouinces, hoping your worships will not onely accept this my labour, but protect & warrantise the same against all men: Wherewith I beseech God to blesse you with wisdom, and godly policie, to gouerne the Commonwealt: Middelborgh this 19 of October. 1597.

Your worships seruiant to command

BERNARDT LANGHEZEN.

A BRIEFE

A
BRIEFE DESCRIPTION
OF A
VOYAGE

PERFORMED BY CERTAINE HOLLANDERS, TO AND FROM THE EAST INDIES.

WITH
THEIR ADVENTURES AND SUCSESSE.

The ancient Historiographers and describers of the world haue much commended, and at large with great prayse set downe the diuers and seuerall voyages of many noble & valiant Captains (as of Alexander Magnus, Seleucus, Antiochus, Patrocles, Onesecritus) into the East Indies, which notwithstanding haue not set downe a great part of those countries, as not being as then discovered, whereby it is thought and iudged by some men, that India is the full third part of all the world, because of the great Prouinces, mighty citties and famous Islands (full of costly marchandises, and treasures from thence brought into all partes of the worlde) that are therein: Wherein the auncient writers were very curious, and yet not so much as men in our age: They had some knowledge thereof, but altogether vncertaine, but we at this day are fully certified therein, both touching the countries, townes, streames and hauens, with the trafiques therein vsed and frequented, whereby all the world, so farre distant and seperated from those strange nations, are by trade of marchandises vnited therunto, & therby commonly knowne vnto them: The Portingalles first began to enterprise the voyage, who by art of nauigation (in our time much more experienced & greater then in times past, and therefore easilier performed) discovered those wild Countries of India, therein procuring great honour to their King, making his name famous and bringing a speciall and great profite of all kindes of spices into their Countrie, which thereby is spread throughout all the worlde, yet that sufficed not, for that the Englishmen (not inferiour to any nation in the world for arte of nauigation) haue likewise vndertaken the Indian voyage, and by their said voyages into those Countries, made the same commonly knowne vnto their Country, wherein Sir Frances Drake, and M. Candish are chiefly to bee commended, who not onely sayled into the East Indies, but also rounde about the world, with most prosperous voyages, by which their voyages, ours haue bene furthered and set forwarde, for that the condition of the Indies is, that the more it is sayled into, the more it is discovered, by such as sayle the same, so strange a Countrey it is: So that besides the famous voyages of the Countries aforesaid, in the ende certain people came into Holland (a nation wel known) certifying them, that they might easily prepare certaine shippes to sayle into the East Indies, there to traffique & buy spycs etc. By sayling straight from Hollande, and also from other countries bordering about it,

with

with desire to see strange and rich wares of other Countries, & that should not be brought vnto them by strangers, but by their owne countrey men, which some men would esteeme to be impossible, considering the long voyage and the daungers thereof, together with the vnaccustomed saylinges and little knowledge thereof by such as neuer sayled that way, and rather esteeme it madnesse, then any point of wisdom, and folly rather then good consideration. But notwithstanding wee haue scene foure ships make that voyage, who after many dangers hauing performed their voyage, returned againe and haue brought with them those wares, that would neuer haue bene thought coule haue bene brought into these countries by any Holland ships; but what shoulde I herein most commend eether the willingness and good performance of the parties, or the happinesse of their voyage? whereof that I may giue the reader some knowledge, I will shew what I haue hearde and bene informed of, concerning the description of the Countries, customes, and manners of the nations, by them in this voyage scene & discovered, which is as followeth.

When and how
the ships set sail.

In the yeare of our Lord 1595. vpon the 10. day of the month of March, there departed from Amsterdam three ships and a Pinnace to sayle into the East Indies, set forth by diuers rich Marchantes: The first called Mauritius, of the burthen of 400. tunnes, hauing in her sixe demie canon, fourteene Culuerins, and other peeces, & 4. peeces to shoot stones, and 84. men: the Mayster Iohn Moleuate, the Factor Cornelius Houtman: The second named Hollandia, of the burthen of 400. tunnes, hauing 85. men, seuen brasse peeces, twelue peeces for stones, and 13. iron peeces, the Mayster Iohn Dignums, the Factor Gerrit van Buiningen, the thirde called Amsterdam, of the burthen of 200. tuns, wherein were 59. men, sixe brasse peeces, ten iron peeces, and sixe peeces for stones, the Mayster Iohn Iacobson Schellinger, the Factor Reginer van Hel: The fourth being a Pinnace called the Doue, of the burthen of 50. tunnes, with twenty men, the Mayster Simon Lambertson: Which 4. ships vpon the 21. of the same moneth came vnto the Tassel, where they stayed for the space of 12. daies to take in their lading, and the seconde of Aprill following, they set saile with a North east winde & following on their course the fourth of the same moneth they passed the heades; The sixt they saw Heyssant, the 10. of Aprill they passed by the Barles of Disbon: With an East and North East wind, the 17. of Aprill they discovered two of the Islands of Canaries: The 19. Palm, and Pic, Los Romeros, and Fero: The 25. of Aprill they saw Bona visita, the 16. they ankered vnder Isole de May: The 27. they set sayle againe and held their course South Southeast. The 4. of May, we espied two of the King of Spaines ships, that came from Lisbon, and went for the East Indies, about 1000. or 1200. tunnes each ship, with whom we spake, and told them that we were bound for the straights of Magellanes, but being better of sayle then they wee got presently out of their sight. The 12. of May being vnder fife degrees on this side the Equinoctiall line, we espyed fife ships laden with Sugar, comming from the Island of S. Thomas, and sayled for Lisbon, to whome we gaue certaine letters, which were safely deliuered in Holland. Departing from them and keeping on our course, vpon the fourth of Iune we passed the Equinoctiall line, where the extreame heat of the ayre spoyled all our victuailles: Our flesh and fishe stunke, our Bisket molded, our Beere sowred, our water stunke, and our Butter became as thinne as Oyle, whereby diuers of our men fell sicke, and many of them dyed; but after that we learned what meat and drinke we should carrie with vs that would keepe good. The 28 of Iune wee passed the sandes of Brasill, by the Portingalles called Abrolhos, which are certaine places which men must looke warily vnto, otherwise they are very dangerous.

Their victuailles
stunke and
spoyled.

They passed the
sandes of Bra-
sill.

These sandes lie vnder 18. degrees, and you must passe betweene the coast of Guine and the sandes aforesaid, not going too neer eether of them, otherwise close by the Coast there are great calmes, thunders, raines & lightnings, with great stormes, harde by the sands men are in daunger to be cast away: and so sayling on their course, first East South East, then East and East and by North. Vpon the seconde of Iuly wee passed Tropicus Canceri, vnder 23. degrees, and $\frac{1}{2}$. The 13. of the same Month, we espied many blacke birdes. The 19. great numbers of white birdes, and the 20. a bird as bigge as a Swan, whereof foure or fife together

together is a good signe of being neere the Cape de bona Sperance. These birdes are alwaies about the said Cape, and are good signes of being before it.

The second of August we saw the land of the Cape de bona Sperance, and the fourth of the same Month we entered into a haven called Agne Sambras, where wee ankered, and found good depth at 8. or 9. fadome water, sandy ground.

The 5. day we went on shore to gather fruites, therewith to refresh our sicke men, that were thirty or 33 in one shippe. In this bay lyeth a smal Islande, wherein are many birdes called Pyncuius and sea Volues that are taken with mens handes: we went into the countrey and spake with the inhabitantes, who brought diuers fresh victuailles aborde our shippes, for a knife or small peece of Iron, etc. giuing vs an Oxe, or a sheepe etc. The sheepe in those Countries haue great tayles, and are fat and delicate. Their Oxen are indifferent good, hauing lumps of flesh vpon their backs, that are as fat as any of our good brisket beefe: the inhabitantes are of small stature, well ioyned and boned, they goe naked, couering their members with Foxes and other beastes tayles: they seeme cruell, yet with vs they vsed all kind of friendship, but are very beastly and stinking, in such sort, that you may smell them in the wind at the least a fadome from you: They are appparelled with beastes skinnes made fast about their neckes: some of them, being of the better sort, had their mantles cut & rayzed checkerwise, which is a great ornament with them: They eate raw flesh, as it is new killed, and the entrailes of beastes without washing or making cleane, gnawing it like dogs, vnder their feet they tye peeces of beastes skinnes, in steed of shooes, that they may trauel in the hard wayes: We could not see their habitations, for wee saw no houses they had, neither could wee vnderstande them, for they speake very strangely, much like the children in our Countrey with their pipes, and clocking like Turkey Cockes: At the first wee saw about thirtie of them, with weapons like pikes, with broade heades of Iron, about their armes they ware rings of Elpen bones: There wee coulde finde neyther Oringes nor Lemons, which we purposely sought for.

The 11. of August we hoysed anker, sayling towards the Island of S. Laurence, and the 22. of the same month we had a contrary wind that blew North East: The 25. a West winde, and so held our course East North East: The 28. there blew a South East wind, & the 30. a South West winde, and our course lay North North East to sayle to the Isle of S. Laurence. The first of September wee discovered the point of the Islande of S. Laurence, vnder 16. degrees, and the third day we saw the Island being very desirous to go on land, for that many of our men were sicke, whereby wee coulde hardly rule our shippes, or bring them farther without healing, or refreshing of our men. The 9. of September Iohn Schellinger sent out his boate to rowe to lande, where they founde three Fishermen, of whome for two or three kniues they had great store of fishes. The 13. we entered into a small Bay, but because wee founde no good anker ground, as also being very foule we sayled out againe. The 14. we sayled vnder a small Island about a mile or 2. great, by the Hollanders called their Church yarde, or the dead Island, because many saylers dying in that place, were buried in the African earth, and the 29. of the same Month died Iohn Dignumsz Mayster of the Lyon of Holland, and was buried the next day after.

There Iohn Peters of Delft Sayler of the Hollandia, & Koelken van Maidenblick of the Amsterdam were set on shore vpon the Island of S. Laurence, where they were left, because they had committed certaine notorious crimes.

Meane time the Pinnace was sent out to looke for fresh water, which hauing found, the boat returned to bring vs newes, and therewith the flecte sayled thither, and the 10. of October the shippes ankered before the Riuer, and went on shore, where we found good provision of all necessaries, the inhabitantes being very willing thereunto, bringing vs of al things that we needed, where for a Pewter Spooone wee had an Oxe, or three sheepe. The 11. of October we went on shore with a boat full of sicke men, and the next day we were assayed by a company of wild men, against whom our weapons little preuayled, for they hurt one of our men and tooke all that we had from vs, whereby vpon the thirteenth of the same Month, wee were forced to insonse our selues with peeces of wood, and braunches of trees, making Cabins within our Sconse, for that the 15. of October they came againe, but then we tooke

Tokens of the Cape de bona Sperance.

They entered into Agne Sambras.

With what wind they sailed to S. Laurence.

They had great store of fish for 2 or 3 kniues.

How the wilde men assailed them, and forced them to insonse themselves.

The maner &
custome of the
wild people.

one, and slew another of them. The 19. of Nouember our Pilot Claes Ianson was intrapped and murdered by the wild people, although we vsed all the means we could to helpe him, but they feared no weapons, about ten or twelue dayes after we tooke one of them that paid for his death. The first of December our men hauing for the most part recouered their healthes, were all carryed aborde the ships: in that parte of Madagascar the people are of good condition, and goe naked, onely with a Cotton cloth before their priuie members, and some from their breasts downward: Their ornaments are Copper rings about their armes, but Tin rings are more esteemed with them, and therefore tinne with them is good marchandise. Their Oxen haue great lumps of fat vpon their backs: Their sheepes tayles way at the least twelue pound, being of an elle long, & two and twentie inches thick. They gaue vs six of those sheepe for a tinne Spooone: They dwel in cottages and liue very poorly: they feare the noyse of a peece, for with one Caliuier you shall make an hundred of them runne away: Wee could not perceyue any religion they had, but after wee were informed that they helde the law of Mahomet, for the two boyes that wee tooke from of the land, shewed vs their circumcision: There we found no fruit of Tambaxiumes, but great numbers of Parrats, Medicats, and Turtle Doues, whereof we killed and eat many. The second of December we burned our sconce, and fourteene of our men going further into the Islande brought certaine of the countrey men prisoners, and being aboard our ships taught them what they shoulde doe. The thirteenth of December wee hoysed anker, minding to holde on our course for the Islands of Iaua, & for that by reason of the pleasantnesse of the ayre we had in a manner all recouered our healthes, we set our course East and by North, and East Northeast. The nineteenth of the same Month wee were seperated by foule weather, & the 22. with great ioy we met againe. The tenth of Ianuarie Vechter Willemson dyed, being a verie honest man, and Pilot in Molenaers shippe, for whome we were much grieved, and the same day we determined to put back againe for the Islande of S. Laurence, for as then wee began againe to haue a great scouring among our men, and many of them fell sicke: But presently therevpon we espied the Islande of Saint Mary, and the next day being arriued there, some of the inhabitants came aboard our shippes with a basket of Ryce, Sugar canes, Citrons, Lemons, & Hens, whereof we were very glad, as being phisicke for vs.

The wilde men
brought things
aborde to com-
fort them.

The description
of one of their
kings.

The 13. 14. 15. 16. and 17. dayes we were on land, where we bought Ryce, Hens, Sugar canes, Citrons and Lemons in great abundance, and other kinde of fruites to vs vnkowne, also good fish, and greene Ginger: There we tooke a Fish, which thirteen men could hardly pull into our shippe, and because the Island was little, and we had many men, wee entred into the Bay of the firme land with our Pinnace, where for a string of Beades of small value we had a tunne of Ryce: The King came aboard our Pinnace to see it, & was as blacke as a Deuill, with two hornes made fast vpon his heade, and all his body naked like the rest of the countrey people.

This Island lyeth about a small mile from Madagascar, about 19. degrees Southward from the Equinoctiall line (Madagascar or S. Laurence is an Islande belonging to the Countrey of Africa, and lyeth Southwarde vnder 26 degrees, ending Northwarde vnder 11. degrees by the inhabitants it is called Madagascar, & by the Portingalles the Islande of S. Laurence, because it was discovered on S. Laurence day: The riches of this Island is great, it aboundeth in Ryce, Honnie, Waxe, Cotton, Lemons, Cloues etc. The inhabitants are blacke and go naked, but the haire vpon their heades is not so much curled as those of the Mosambique, & they are not ful so blacke.)

The 23. of Ianuarie we ankered before a Riuer where likewise we had all kind of necessities, and after that we went to lie vnder a small Islande within the same Bay.

The wilde peo-
ple came ou
borde their ships
and seemed very
friendly.

The 25. of Ianuarie there came some of the wild people aborde our ships, making signes to haue vs go on land, which we did, and there we had good Ryce & other fruits in great abundance. On the left side of the entry of the Riuer lyeth one of their Townes, and on the right hand two townes, where we had most of our trafique.

The 26. of Ianuarie wee had interpreters, whom we made to drink wine, wherewith they were as drunk as beastes.

The

The manner & condition of the people inhabiting in the great Bay of Antogil, on this side the Equinoctiall line vnder 16 degrees, on the South side of the Island Madagascar.

IT is a very great Bay, about ten mile broad, behind it lyeth a high Island, and three small Islands: there is good harbour against all windes. The Island is inhabited, and therein groweth all kindes of fruites, it hath a great fall of water that commeth down out of the hilles, where we laded all our water, and halfe a mile from thence within the land, there runneth a great Riuer, wherein likewise there is much water to be had, when you enter into the Riuer about a quarter of a mile inward on the left hand, ther is a smal towne or village, not closed nor fortified, in it there is about 200. houses, & on the right hand where the Riuer diuideth it selfe, there is two other such Townes: They were all compassed with palles, and the houses were placed about two foote aboue the ground, vpon foure or fife palles or stakes of wood, and all the vpper partes of reede and strawe. The cause why their houses are made so high from the ground is to auoide the danger of venomous beastes that are there in great abundance, as Serpents, Snakes, Camelions, and other kindes of beastes. The people are very blacke, but their hayre and bearded are not so much curled as the right Mores, nor their noses nor lippes so great nor flat. They are subtil and strong people, much addicted to drinking, for they will bee as drunke as Swine, with a kind of drinke made of Honie & Ryce. They go naked, onely that about their middles they weare a cloth made of the barke of a tree, drawne in small threedes: they make and vse very fine Mats to sitte vpon: They haue no great store of weapons, for that halfe of them are vnprovided, and that they vse is a speare of nine or ten foote long, with a great wooden Target: They are very fearefull of our Caliuers, for 5. or sixe men with Caliuers will cause great numbers of them to flie away: We taught them what our peeces ment, for wee perceyued that they knew them not, before they had proued them: at the first they thought they could carry no further then their owne lengthes, for they knew not what they were: Their Kinges ornaments were ten or twelue Copper Rings about his armes: if we had had such Ringes with vs, wee might haue sold them at what prices wee would. They likewise vse beades of Glasse, which they weare about their armes and neckes, by them esteemed for great ornaments: for a boxe of beades of small value, we had an Oxe, or three or foure Sheepe; rounde about this Bay are townes and villages, where you may haue of all things to refresh your selues, Lemons and Citrons are there greater and better then in Portingall: Likewise Oringes, Ryce, Hennes, Goats, Honie, and many other sortes of fruites, and to conclude it is the best Bay in all the world to refresh ships. Being on land we were wel entertaigned, and must of force drink with them of their drinke made of Hony and Ryce: There we traffiqued with them, and had sufficient of euery thing, but euery night we went aborde our shippes.

Why their houses stand so high about the earth.

The manner of the wilde men in that country.

The third of February we had so great a storme, that most of our ankers were lost, and we ran vpon the land in great daunger to cast our ships away, but God holpe vs, for the storme ceased, and then we went to hoysse vp our lost ankers, and so againe went to anker vnder the Island, glad that we had so well escaped that daunger. The fift of February we went to seeke for our boats, but the wild men had smitten them in peeces, & taken out the nailles, thinking likewise that our shippes would haue bene cast away vpon the shore, which they still expected: and when we came thither, they stood vpon the shore with their weapons in hand and threw stones at vs, and we perceyuing them in that minde, made towards our shippes, for we desired not to reuenge our selues, nor once to fight with them without commission from our Generall, whom we certified thereof. The eyght of February we rowed into the Riuer to buy cattle, and other things, but they were become our enemies, threatening and casting stones at vs, wherevpon we put out two shalops to run a shore close to the land, and made our Caliuers and other weapons ready.

Wherewith we shot at them, but they feared not our shot, for they knew not what they ment, they thought likewise that the peeces could carrie no further then they were long:

C 2

but

The

but when they sawe eight or nine of their fellowes dead, they fled into the woodes, and wee entering vpon the lande set fire on their houses, whereof we burnt about twentie or thirtie. The 9. of Februarie we sailed on the other side to buy cattle, and other necessaries, but they seemed vnwilling to deale with vs, but we threatning to burne their houses, they brought vs Cattle and fruites inough, with all things else to our desires.

The 12. of Februarie wee hoised anker, and set sayle out of the great Bay of Antongill, being well prouided of all necessaries, we put out with a North wind, the Bay stretching Northeast and Southwest: The 2. of March we had a West winde, our course being East and East & by North towards Iaua. In March and Aprill about the Islande of Brandawe, we found that our Compasses helde two Strikes to farre Northwarde, and we coulde not perceiue the sands that are set downe in the Portingalles sea Cards, but we saw many turnings of streames, and we were much troubled with calmes, but with the new Moone we had winde enough out of the West & North West. The 27. of May we found the water aboard our shippes to bee much lessened, and therefore euery mans portion was but halfe as much as he was wont to haue; so that each man was allowed but foure draughts euery day, which was but a small quantitie. Whereby through the extreame heat we endured great thirst, so that at that time a draught of water aboard our ship was worth a Riall of 8. The first of Iuly we saw the Islande of Engano, whereat we much reioyced, because of the great thirst wee endured in our shippe, and when wee made neerer to it, we perceyued it to be an Islande lying before the straighes of Sonda, vnder 9. degrees on the South side of the line.

The sixt of Iuly we put somewhat nearer to the land, and there we saw sixe or seuen canoes lying vnder the shore, but farre off, and durst not make toward vs: in the end we manned out a shalop & rowed to land, but they made from vs, & when our men were hard by the shore, there we saw about 40. or 50. of them standing vpon the shore with their bowes; wherewith our men durst not land, for they seemed to be a cruell kind of people, and altogether wild, for they went all naked, not hauing any thing before their priuy members. They were of a reddish colour, but when our men saw no aduantage they turned again vnto their shippes.

The seuenth of Iuly we saw the point of the land of Sumatra, which is a verie high land descending downewarde with a long end.

The 11. of the same Month we were close vnder the land, where there lay an Island, and there we ankered.

The manner of
the Governor of
Sumatra coming
aboard.

The 12. of Iuly in the morning we saw certaine ships, whereof one came vnto vs, wee rowed vnto it with a shalop, and spake with it, but we could not vnderstand them, but they shewed vs where we should haue water, which made vs glad, that wee might once againe haue our bellies full of water: it being almost foure Monthes that wee had not seene any land, nor taken in any fresh victuailes. We sent our Pinace to the firme land of Sumatra, there to seeke for some reliefe: for that where we lay there dwelt not any man. The 13. of Iuly the Captain or principall ruler of Sumatra came aboard our ships to see them, which was done with great solemnitic, hee being appparelled after the Turkish manner, with a wreath about his heade, and a fearefull countenance, small eyes, great eye browes, and little beard, for a man might tell all the haire vpon his chinne: he brought vs a present of Betele, which are leaues which they continually chaw, and eat it with chalke.

This Island of Sumatra or Taprobana (as it is saide) is the greatest of all the Orientall Islandes, it is diuided from the firme land of Malacca by a straight and dangerous sea, by reason of many Islandes and cliffes that are within it: Out of this Island as some men are of opinion, Salomon had his Gold wherewith he beautified the Temple, and his owne pallace, and then in the Bible it should be named Orphir, for certainly Sumatra is rich of mynes of Golde, Siluer, and Mettall, and the inhabitants therof are very expert in melting of brasse peeces: Therein is a fountaine of pure Balsame, the Portingalles haue no fortresse therein, yet they traffique in certaine hauens, specially in Pedir and Campar: There is also in this Island a place called Manancabo, where they make poinyardes and daggers, by them calde cryses,

odes, and
twentie or
ecessaries,
uses, they

Antongill,
stretching
East and
dawe, we
e not per-
y turnings
e we had
ater aboard
e as much
ay, which
reat thirst,
he first of
reat thirst
it to be
th side of

en canoes
e manned
e hard by
ir bowes;
ople, and
uy mem-
ned again

high land

land, and

o vs, wee
but they
ce againe
ene any
Sumatra,
The 13.
n, which
r, with a
wes, and
resent of

Oriental
sea, by
men are
e pallace,
mynes of
of brasse
e therein,
o in this
em calde
crysces,

Ships voyage.

TRAFFIQUES, AND DISCOVERIES.

crysces, which are much esteemed in those Countries, and those of Malacca and Iaua, hold them for their best weapons, and with them are very bold.

The same day our Pinnace returned againe vnto vs, bringing vs good newes, that wee were welcome vnto the Countrey people, and brought vs certaine Indian Nattes or Cocus, Melons, Cocombers, Onions, Garlike, and a sample of Peper and other apices, which liked vs well.

The fourteenth of Iune we laded in some fresh water.

Right ouer against Sumatra, on the South side of the Equinoctiall lyeth the Islande of Iaua Maior, or great Iaua, and these two Islandes are deuided by a straight commonly called the straight of Sunda, which lyeth between these two Islands, bearing the name of the principall haue of Iaua called Sunda: In this channel there runneth a great streame, and course of narrow waters, through this straight M. Candish an Englishman passed with his ship, comming out of the South sea from new Spaine. Iaua beginneth vnder seven degrees on the South side, and so stretcheth East and South 150. miles long, it is very fruitfull, specially of Ryce, Catle, Hogges, Sheepe, Hennes, Onions, Garlike, Indian Nattes, and all kinde of spices, as Cloues, Nutmegges, Mace, etc. Which they carrie to Malacca. The chiefe haue in the Islande is Sunda Calapa, there you haue much Pepper, better then that of India, or of Malabar, & there you may yearely lade 4. or 5000. Quintales of Pepper Portingall waight, there likewise you haue great store of frankencense, Camphora, & some Diamants: but they haue no other kinde of money but a certaine peece called Caixa, as bigge as a Hollands Doibt, but not so thicke, with a hole in the middle to hang it vpon a string, in which manner they commonly hange hundrethes or thousandes together, and with them they know how to make their accountes, which is two hundred Caixas make a Sata, and fiue Satas make a thousand Caixas, which is as much as one Crusado of Portingall, or three Carolus Gilderns, Flemish money: Pepper is solde by the sacke, each sacke waying 45. Catten waight of China, each Catte as much as 20. ounces Portingall waight, and each sacke is worth in that Countrey at the least 5000. Caixas, and when it is highest at 6. or 7000. Caixas: Mace, Cloues, Nutmegs, white and blacke Beniamin, Camphora, are sold by the Bhar, each barre waying 330. Catten of China: Mace that is faire & good is commonly worth from 100. to 120. thousande Caixas: Good Cloues accordingly, and foure Cloues called Bastan are worth 70. & 80. thousand Caixas the Bhar: Nutmegs are alwaies worth 20. & 25. thousand Caixas the Bhar: White and blacke Beniamin is worth 150. and 180. thousand Caixas, and sometimes 200. thousand. The wares that are there desired and exchanged for spices, are diuers sortes and colours of Cotton Linnen, which come out of seuerall Provinces; and if our Cambricke or fine Hollande were carryed thither, it would peraduenture bee more esteemed then the Cotton linnen of India.

The 15. of Iune there rowed a scute called a Prawen harde vnder the lande by vs, wee called him, but not against his will, and shewed him siluer, and other wares that liked him well, he bad vs make towards the strand, and told vs of Bantam, saying that there we should haue al kinds of Merchandise. Then we made signs vnto him that if he wold bring vs to Bantam, we wold pay him for his labor, he asked vs 5. rialles of 8. and a red cap, which we graunted vnto, and so one of the men in the scute came on bord the Mauritius, and was our Pilot to Bantam, where we passed by many Islandes.

The nineteenth of Iuly as wee sailed by a towne, many Portingalles borded vs, and brought vs certaine Cocus and Hens to sell, which wee bought for other wares.

The 22. of the same Month wee came before the towne of Bantam, within three miles of it, and there ankered vnder an Island. The same day about euening a scute of Portingals borded vs that were sent by the Gouvernour to see what ships we were, & when we shewed them that wee came thither to traficke with them, they told vs, that there was the right Pepper country, & that there we might haue our lading, that new Pepper was readie to be gathered, and would be ripe within two Monthes after, which pleased vs well, for wee had already beene fifteene Monthes and twelue daies vppon our voyage, hauing endured great daungers, miseries and thirst, many of our men by sicknesse being dead.

The

The 23. of Iune wee hoysed our ankers, and went close to the towne of Bantam, and ankered harde by 4. small Islands, that lie right North from the Towne: the same day the Sabander (who is there one of the greatest officers next the King) came aboard our shippes, asking vs what we would haue, we said we were come to buy Pepper and other spyces, and that wee had readie money, and certaine wares, whereof we shewed him some parte, which hee liked well, saying that there wee might haue lading enough, shewing vs great countenance.

The same day likewise there came a great number of scutes vnto our ships, bringing all kinds of victualles to sel, as Hennes, Egges, Cocus, Bonanas, sugar canes, Cakes of Ryce baked, and many other things. The 24. of Iune there came many men aborde our ships, bringing diuers wares to sell, shewing vs great friendship, and as it seemed were very glad of our arriual there, telling vs that there we might haue Pepper enough, and new Pepper within two Months after, and that Pepper was then as good cheap as it had beene any time within ten yeares before, that wee might buy 5. or 6. sackes for one Catti, (being about 20. Guilderns) which was ordinarily sold but one sacke for that price: euery sacke wayeth 54. pounce Hollandes waight, so that a pounce would be worth about a brasse penie Hollands money.

The same day about noone the Sabander borded vs once againe, willing Cornelis Houtman to go on land to speake with the Gouverneur, for as then there was no King, for about a Month before our arriual there, the King was gone with a great armie before the towne of Palimbam, which hee thought to take, and had almost gotten it, but there he was stricken with a great Pecte by a Renigado of the Portingalles, and so was slaine. His death was much lamented by the straungers that dwelt at Bantam, for he was a good king, being about 25. yeares of age: he left behind him foure wiues, whereof the eldest was not aboue 15. yeares of age, and a yong sonne of three Monthes olde, that was to succeed him in his Kingdome, and they had chosen a Protector or Gouvernor to rule in his minoritie, whom they call Kipate, and when the Kipate by the Sabandar sent to our Sargeant Maior to come vnto him into the towne, he made him answer that he had no such commission, but he desired the Gouvernor first to come aboard his ship, and then he would go on shore, he likewise desired vs to go neerer to the towne with our shippes.

And thereupon wee sayled somewhat neerer to the Island that lay next vnto the towne, within halfe a mile from it, & there we ankered at 4 fadome clay grounde, the towne lying South from vs, where wee had a good roade: The next morning the Gouvernor sent aborde, and the men that came spake not onely good Portingall, but other languages: he let our Sargeant Maior vnderstand that he would come aborde, and desired that hee would with a shalop meet him halfe the way, which was done about noone, and the Gouverneur came aborde with a great company of men, where we shewed him all our wares, which liked him well, desiring vs to come on land, saying that we should be welcome, promising vs much fauour, wherewith he returned to the land with certaine rich presents that we gaue him. The 26. Barent Heijn Factor of the ship called the Mauritius, died very sodainly.

The 27. and 28. great numbers of people borded our shippes bringing all sortes of necessaries & victuals to sell.

The 29. there came an Emperour aborde our shippe, whose father in time past had beene Emperour of all Iaua, and commanded all the Kinges of Iaua, but this man because of his badde life was not much accounted of: he spake good Portingall, for his mother was a Portingall woman borne in Malacca: This Emperour had conspired against vs with the Portingalles, but as then we knew it not.

The 30. of Iune Cornelis Houtman tooke a boate and went into the towne, and there spake with the Gouverneur about certaine affaires, touching a contract to bee made with him.

The first of Iuly Houtman went again into the towne, and when he returned he brought with him a certaine contract made & signed by the Gouvernor himself, who most willingly consented therevnto, & saide vnto him, Go now and buy what you will, you haue free liberty;

The Gouverneur
of Bantam
came aboard
their ships.

The Emperour
came aborde and
secretly conspired
with the
Portingalls
against them.

A contract to
buy & sell in the
towne.

liberty; which done, the said Houtman with his men went to see the towne, apparelled in the best manner they coulde, in velvet, Satin, and silkes, with rapiers by their sides: The Capitaine had a thing borne ouer his head to keep him from the Sun, with a Trumpet before him, which certaine times he caused to bee sounded: There the Emperour bad them to a banquet after the Indian manner: From thence they went to the Portingalles, that made much account of Houtman, and made him a banquet, saying that they had seene him in Lisbon. The 2 of Iuly many Marchants came aboard, profering vs Pepper verie good cheape, but because we were vnskilfull in the waight and other thinges wee tooke respite to answer them.

The 3. of Iuly the Sabander came aboard, and he was our great friend, for that after we found it so, hee tolde vs what waight the sackes of Pepper were, and what prises they bare, counselling vs to buy.

The 7. of Iuly the Gouvernour sent vs a man secretly by night willing vs to looke vnto our selues, and not to trust the Emperour, with whom all the Marchantes conspired, and went to invade our ships, and that hee ment to rob vs, as being very licentious and euill minded.

The 8. of Iuly the Emperour sent vnto our ships, & offered to make them a banquet, bidding all the Capitaines, maisters, Pilots, Gentlemen, Officers, Trumpets, and Gunners to come into the towne to him, and there he woulde make merrie with them: This was done by the Portingalles aduise, thereby to haue all the chiefe and principall men out of our ships, but we perceiued their intent.

The 11. of Iuly the Emperour perceyuing that his deuise would not take place, hee went from Bantam to Iacatra.

The 12. of Iuly wee had a house offered vs within the towne.

The 13. of the same month Reyner van Hel with eyght Gentlemen went into the towne, taking certaine wares with him, of euery thing a little, and laid it in the house appointed for the purpose: there to keep a ware house and to sel our merchandise, and presently both Gentlemen and Marchants came thither to buy and to sell vs Pepper.

The 15. and 16. many Gentlemen, Marchants, Chinars, and Arabians came to our ware-house & into our ships, offering vs Pepper, but our Factor offered them to little a price.

The 25. of Iuly the Gouvernour came againe aborde our shippes, and there looked vpon certaine of our wares, whereof hee bought some, and counselled vs to buy Pepper: About the same time the Portingalles made great sute vnto the Gouvernour, promising him many giftes to deny vs traffike, and to constraene vs to depart from thence, saying we were no marchantes, but that we came to spie the countrie, for they said that they had seene many Fleminges in Lisbon, but none like vs. Among the Portingalles there was one that was borne in Malacca, of the Portingalles race, his name was Pedro Truide, a man well scene in traуayling, and one that had bene in all places of the world: He was our good friend, & euery day came to talke with our Capitaines, saying, you do not well that you make no more haste to take in your lading, you shall haue no better cheape wares, & withall shewed vs many other things: wherevpon the Portingalles hated him, and not long after he was murdered in his bed.

In August we did little, and tooke no great store of lading in seeking to haue Pepper better cheape, which the Portingalles liked not well of, and saide vnto the Gouvernour, that we desired not to buy; which the Gouvernour began to hearken vnto, for they offered him great summes of money that hee shoulde not permit vs traffique, so that in the end hee commaunded that no man shoulde carrie any Ryce aborde our shippes, whereby we were abashed, and thereupon we sent vnto the Gouvernour for our money which hee ought for the wares hee had bought, which moued him.

The 26. of Iuly hee sent one of our Gentlemen with some of his men and nine slaues aborde our ships.

The situation of the Towne of Bantam, the principall towne of traffique in the Island of Iaua, their strength & manner of building, with their traffique,

what

The Emperour ment to fall vpon the ships to rob them.

The hatred of the Portingalles against the.

what people come thither, what wares are there most desired, what nations bring them thither, or come to fetch them, together with their religion, customes, & manner of house keeping.

BAntam lyeth in the Isle of Iaua maior, about 23. miles to sea ward within the Isle, between Sumatra and Iaua: On both sides of the Towne there runneth a Riuer, about 3 foot and a half deep, so that no shippes can enter into them: The Towne is compassed about with a Riuer: The towne is almost as great in compasse as the old towne of Amsterdam: The wals are made with flankers: They haue great numbers of Peeeces therein, but they knowe not how to vse them, for they feare them much: all their Peeeces are of brasse, & they haue many brazen bases. Their walles are not aboue two foote thicke made of bricke: euery flanker hath diuers mastes and peeeces of wood, which they vse when they are besieged by their enemies. The houses are made of straw and reedes, standing vpon 4. wooden postes. The rich haue their chambers all hanged with silken Curtins, or els with cotton linnen: Their houses are most placed vnder Cocus trees, whereof the towne is full: Without the walles are many houses, wherein strangers for the most part haue their dwellings. The towne hath three great market places, wherein dayly there is markets holden, where you may buy all kinds of wares, and where there commeth a great number of people, very strange to beholde: Within the towne there is a great church or muske of wood, wherein they obserue the law of Mahomet: Gentlemen & men of any qualitie haue their owne muskes in their houses. The towne is not built with streetes, nor the houses placed in order, but very foule lying full of filthy water, which men must passe through, or leape ouer, for they haue no bridges: In the towne there is great resort of diuers Countries and nations, as of Malacca, Bengala, Malabar, Guiereters of Pegu, Sani Malicas, Banda, China and of many Kingdomes that haue great traffique for Pepper, that groweth rounde about Bantam, which in August and September is ripe, there you haue Nutmegs, out of the Island of Banda, and Cloues from Moluca, which the Portingalles doe most buy vp: Wee bought Nutmegs there for a blank a pound: All victuailles and necessaries are there in great abundance to be had, as Hennes, Hartes, Fish, and Ryce, and diuers kindes of fruites, as Auanas, Cocus, Bonanas, Manges, Doroyens, Iacca, Pruna, Grapes, Oranges, Lemons, Pomegarnets, Cocombers, Melons, Onions, Garlicke; but breade they haue none, but in steade of it they eate Ryce: Beefe is there the dearest victuaile, for an Oxe in that place is worth 7. 8. or 9. Rialles of 8. The Chinars haue the greatest and most trafficke in that towne. They come thither in the Month of Ianuarie, with 8. or 9. great shippes, bringing all sorts of Porseline, silks, Damaske, gold thread, Iron pannes, and Iauas money called Caixas, whereof 12000. make a Ryall of eyght: They are hanged vpon stringes by two hundred together, for the which they both buy & sel all kinds of marchandises, and there they lade Pepper which they carrie into China: Without the towne they haue a great place wherein they commonly vse to sell their wares, and there they dwell, and haue greater and better houses then any are within the towne, all made of reedes, onely that in euery house they haue a square place made of stone, wherein they put their wares to keepe them from burning, as some riche men in the towne likewise haue: The Chinars are very subtil and industrious people, and will refuse no labour nor paynes to yearne money, there they make much Aqua vite of Ryce and Cocus, and trafficke much therewith, which the Iauars by night come to buy, and drinke it secretly, for by Mahomets law it is forbidden them. The Chinars liue there with free libertie: When they come to remaine there for a yeare or more as they thinke good, they buy themselues a wife or two, or more as they thinke good, and liue together like man and wife, and when they meane to depart, they sell their wiues again, but if they haue children they take them with them & so returne to China: They haue no special religion, but pray vnto the Deuill, that he would not hurt them, for they know that the Deuill is wicked, and that God is good, and hurteth no man, therefore they thinke it needlesse to pray to God. They acknowledge not the resurrection of the dead, but when a man dyeth they thinke he neuer riseth again: In their houses they haue great painted Deuils, before the which they place wax candles, and sing vnto them, praying them not

to

the Isle,
out 3 foot
sed about
sterdam:
but they
brasse, &
of bricke:
y are be-
g vpon 4.
or els with
ne is full:
their dwell-
s holden,
umber of
muske of
y qualitie
, nor the
ust passe
t of diuers
i Malicas,
at growth
Nutmegs,
most buy
ssaries are
ers kinde
Oranges,
haue none,
xe in that
trafficke in
es, bring-
ney called
two hun-
here they
reat place
reater and
ery house
hem from
ubtill and
hey make
y night
em. The
e or more
good, and
ies again,
y haue no
know that
thinke it
ut when a
t painted
them not
to

Ships voyage.

TRAFFIQUES, AND DISCOVERIES.

to hurt them, and the more monstrous that their shapes be, the more they honour them. These people liue very hardly and poorely within Bantam, for there is not any work or labour how filthy soeuer it be, but they will do it to get money, and when they haue gotten something they retorne againe to China. They are verie like Iewes in our countrey, for they neuer goe without a paire of ballances, and all thinges is good wares with them, and are ready to do any seruice. When we came first before Bantam, they came euery day in great companies into our shippes, and there set out their wares to sel, as silkes, sowing silkes, and porcelines, so that our vpper deckes were full of pedlers, that wee could hardly walke vpon the hatches.

The manner, condition, custome, going, standing, apparell, housekeeping, wares, and behaviour of the Iauars in Bantam.

The Iauars and inhabitants of Bantam, are proude and obstinate, with a very stately pace, they hold the law of Mahomet, which they haue not had about 35. yeares, for as yet there are many heathens among them that neuer were made Mores: it is a very lying and theuish kind of people, not in any sort to bee trusted. Their apparell both of rich and poore is a cotton cloth, and some of silke about their middles, which they tie about them with a girdle, the vpper parte and from the knees downewarde all naked: most of them goe bareheaded, but the principallest of them haue a wreath or Turkish roule about their heades, and some little cappes: Their priestes come out of Meca in Arabia, and are yellowe of colour: Their weapon is a poinyard, which they call Crisis: it is made with hilts, and the handle is a Deuil cut out of wood or bone: the sheathes are of wood: with them they are very bolde, and it is accounted for a great shame with them if they haue not such a Dagger, both yong, old, rich & poore, and yong children of fife or sixe yeares olde, and when they go to the warres they haue targets, and some long speares, but most of them such poinyardes: They vse neyther great shotte nor caliuers when they go against their enemies: for a small matter one King wil make warre against another. When we came first before Bantam, we offered to make a contract with the Gouvernor and the counsell of the towne, that they should deliuer vs a certaine quantitie of Pepper, and wee woulde goe with our shippes before Palimbam, and helpe them to reuenge the death of their Kings vpon their enemies, for (as they said) we might goe within a bowe shot of the towne with our shippes, and the Towne is but of wood without walles, so that we would presently haue beaten it downe to the ground. They offered vs some of their principall Gouvernours to be left for pledges in our shippes, and their men woulde sayle in their fustes, such as shoulde go on land, and we should doe nothing els but shoote out of our shippes, but our Captaines would not do it, considering our small number of men. The Iauars take as many wiues as they will, and are able to maintaine; but the common people haue but one, & some two married wiues, and some 10. 20. and 30. concubines: For a small matter they will sende their married wiues home agayne vnto their fathers, when they haue layne fife or sixe dayes with them, saying they like them not, and so their marriage is vndone, when they desire it.

What weapons
they weare.

How many
wiues they haue.

The manner, custome, housholding, childbearing, sporting & cleanlinesse of the women in Bantam.

The women of the towne are well kept from such as are circumcised, whereof the rich men haue many, and from other men or their friendes, for their owne sonnes may not come into the house where the women are. They lie all naked and chaw Betelle, and haue a slauish woman that continually scratcheth their bodies, that is, such as are married women, but such as are concubines are as waiting Gentlewomen to the married women, when they goe out to gue them more maiestie, and those that haue the greatest number are of most estimation: The Concubines haue but fewe children, for the married women poyson their children, and these concubines are bought and solde: by their apparell a man can hardly discerne the riche from the poore, for they goe all with a Cotton cloth about their bodies vp to their breastes, and bounde about their middles with an other cloth, bare footed and their heads vncouered,

their hayre bound right vpon the top of their heads in a heape, but when they are in their pride, they weare crownes vpon their heads, whereof some of them are of pure golde, and rings of golde, and some of siluer about their armes, euery one according to their abilitie. They are very curious about their bodies, for they washe themselves at the least fise or sixe times euery day: they neuer ease themselves nor haue the company of their husbandes, but they presently leape into the water and wash their bodies, and therefore the water that runneth through Bantam is very vnholosome; for euery one washeth themselves in it, as well pockle as other people, whereby wee lost some of our men that drunke of the water: The women are verie idle, for they do nothing all the day but lie downe; the poore slaues must doe all the drudgerie, and the men sit all day vpon a mat, & chaw Betele, hauing ten or twentie women about them, and when they make water, presently one of the women washeth their member, and so they sit playing all the day with their women: Many of them haue slaues that play vpon instrumentes much like our Shakebois, they haue likewise great basons whereon they strike, & therewith know how to make good musick, whereat the women daunce, not leaping much, but winding and drawing their bodies, armes and shoulders, which they vse all night long, so that in the night time they make a great noyse with basons and other instruments, and the man he sitteth and looketh vpon them, euerie one of the women struing to doe her best that she may get her husbands fauour and her secreat pleasure. The Gentlemen, Citizens, and marchantes haue their Gardens, and fieldes without the towne, and slaues for the purpose to labour in them, and bring their maisters all kindes of fruit, Rice and Hennes in the towne, as also the Pepper that groweth there, which runneth vp by an other tree, as Hoppes with vs, and groweth in long bunches like Grapes, so that there is at the least 200. graines in one bunch: it is first greene, and after it becommeth blacke, and is there in great abundance, so that it is the right Pepper country; for when we came thither they said vnto vs, *Aqui ai tanta Pimienta, como terra*, that is, here is as much Pepper as earth, and so we found it, and yet we departed from thence by our owne follies, without our lading of Pepper: Wee staide for new Pepper, meane time the Portingalles sent their letters into euery place seeking to hinder our trade: At the first we might haue sufficient, for there we founde enough both to buy for money or to barter. We likewise had money and wares sufficient: we might easily haue had sixe or eight hundred tunnes, as we were aduertised by some of the country, that we should presently buy, for that the Portingalles sought all the means they could to hinder vs, as after it appeared; and therefore he that thinketh to come soone enough, cometh oftentimes too late, and we used not our time so well as it fell out.

How Pepper
groweth in that
country.

A letter sent by
our men in the
town that were
kept prisoners.

The 29. of August we had a letter sent vs by night from our men that were in the towne, that lay in a maner as prisoners, to will vs to let our pledge go a shore, otherwise they feared they shoulde hardly escape with their liues, and great danger might fall vpon them: this pledge came aborde with the 9. slaues.

The 30. of August we sent the pledge and the rest of our lauers to land, with promise that he would do the best he might to get our men leaue to come aborde: about euening of the same day wee had newes from our men by foure of our saylers that as then they were better vsed, saying they thought they shoulde come aborde when two shippes were gone that ment to saile for Malacca, being laden with Nutmegs and other things.

The first of September, and the 2. 3. and 4. wee sent many letters to the Gouvernour and hee to vs, and likewise to our men that were in the towne, being nine in number, all our best marchants and captains, hauing with them about 6. or 7000. Guildernes in merchandise, and they againe to vs.

They were
neerer to the
towne.

The 5. of September when wee perceyued that delayes were daungerous, wee went close to the towne with all our 4. shippes, and so neere that we had but two fadome muddie grounde, and presently with two of our boates for our securitie wee set vpon three lauan shippes, whereof two were laden with fish and Cocus, wherein wee founde a man of China, being of some account. The third ship was laden with 20. tunnes of Cloues, 6 tunnes of Pepper, and some Benioni, and Piementa da Rano, wherein we founde fise Malabarles slaues to the Portingalles, whom
wee

wee likewise tooke, & they were very willing to goe with vs, thereby to bee eased of the slauery wherevnto the Portugals put them, and perceyuing that the Portugallies went often to and from another shippe that lay not farre from vs, we took our Pinace and made towards it, and being harde by it, the Portugals left it & set it on fire: This ship had the richest wares in it as the Portugallies slaues tolde vs, for it was laden with fiftie tunnes of Cloues, which were burnt in it.

The sixt and seventh of September we hearde no newes, so that wee went close to the Towne agayne, shooting with our great Peeeces into it, slaying diuers of the people (as after we were informed:) They likewise shot with their Peeeces agaynst vs, which the Portugallies did, for that the Iauans haue little or no skill at all therein, and are very fearefull of them, and although they had many peeeces in the towne, yet they did vs no other hurt then onely shot one of Molenares halfe masts in peeeces.

The seventh of September wee had a skirmish, which was in this manner, we perceyuing a Iauan ship vnder sayle, sent our Pinace with sixe and twentie men in her to fetch it in, which the Iauan shippe perceyuing fledde behinde an Islande, where our Pinace followed him so fast that shee fell a grounde, which the townes men perceyuing, made them readie with foure and twentie boates full of men, all armed after their manner, and set forward in good order, being diuided in two companies, seuen on starre bord, & 17. on larde bord of the Pinace, in order like a halfe Moone, threatening vs with their speares, they thought by reason of their great number of men, that they had already taken it, but it fell out otherwise, for they in the Pinace, perceyuing them comming, shotte among them, and they were so near vnto her that we could not shoot at them: and when they were harde by the Pinace, shee gotte a flote, as they thought to take her, hauing cast out an anker in good time, and thereby wounde themselves off the grounde, but for haste they were forced to cutte their Cable, because they had not time enough to winde it vppe, and with all they shotte one of their boates vnder water. The Pinace drawing her boate after her, the Iauans presently leapt into it, and cutte a sunder the rope that helde it, which they immediately stole from vs, thrusting with their Speares in at the loope holes. Seuen of their Boates being round about vs were so sharply payde with the iron peeeces, stone peeeces, and Caliuers, that the 17. others durst not come neere vs: I thinke there were at the least 100. of them that neuer carryed newes how they sped in that skirmish, for euery boate had at the least 60. men in it, and they were so thicke in them, that they could not help themselves, nor did any thing els but shake their speares, and they shot but one base: their arrowes hurt vs not, and so the Pinace returned agayne vnto our shippes, sayling close before the towne, and shooting into it with her ordinance: They shot out of the towne, but it hit her not, because they shot with stone pellets, wherewith you cannot shoote so certainly as with iron bullets.

The 8. 9. and 10. of September we had letters from our men out of Bantam, by the which they willed vs not to shoot any more, for that the Gouvernour threatned to set them vpon stakes: Houtman wrote they were in good hope that they shoulde bee put to ransome, which wee counselled them to doe as well as they might.

The 11. of September we had a letter from Houtman, and one from the Gouvernour, wherein he wrote that he would set our men at libertie, so we would be quiet, but if we desired warre, he woulde once againe come and visite vs in another sort: wee answered him that there he should find vs, that wordes were but wind, & that he should set our men at a reasonable ransome, and thereof send vs an answer the next day.

The 12. and 13. of September wee had no answer out of the towne, and we had want of water, and could get none thereabouts but that which came out of the towne, for that the Gouvernour had taken order that we should get no water about the towne, so that we hoised ankers to go seeke some.

The 17. of September we came before 3. or 4. Islands which Molenare and Shellenger sayled betweene, and for that the streame ranne so strong there, they were forced to goe so nigh the shore, that they might almost leape on lande, whereby they escaped great danger, but the other shippe and the Pinace sayled about the Islands, and so met with the other two, and

A skirmish betweene the Pinace and 24. boats.

The contents of the Gouvernours letter.

casting forth their ankers went on shore, where wee spake with men that saide they would shew vs where wee shoulde haue water, so we would giue them two Caliuers.

The 18. 19. 20. 23. and 24. we stayed to lade water, for it was hard to get, and we were forced to keep good watch, which done hoysing ankers againe, wee sayled towards Bantam, holding our course Eastwarde.

The 27. we sayled Northeast towards the lande of Iaua maior.

The 28. setting sayle agayne, we kept East Northeast along by the coast of Iaua, & about noone because of the great streame that runneth in the straight, wee were forced to anker, and the 30. day wee set sayle againe.

The first of October in the euening wee came to a great Islande, being three miles from the towne, and there we ankered finding good clay ground.

The 2. of October wee had a letter from our men, how they were seperated one from the other, and kept by the Gentlemen of the towne, and their wares parted among them.

The 3. 4. and 5. when wee were againe before the towne, we had other letters, that by our comming they were better vsed, and hoped to bee set at a reasonable ransome, and that they promised that one of our men should come aborde, so he would returne againe into towne, that shoulde by worde of mouth certifie vs what hope they were in, and the cause thereof, that we might the better belieue it.

How the fauers
used our men
being prisoners.

The 6. of October in the night one of our men came aborde, and shewed vs what had past, when we shotte into the towne, how they were seperated and kept close prisoners, and cruelly threatned by the fauers, whereby they still expected when they should bee put to death, and howe they sought all the meanes they coule to make them to deny their faith, and become Mores, but they remayned constant, and saide they woulde rather die, and that they had by force shauen three of our men after the Morish manner, and how the Portingals had sought all the meanes they coule to buy them for slaues, offering money for them that they might sende them to Malacca, how they were set at libertie againe, & might goe where they woulde within the towne, and so they hoped all would be well, and that they shoulde bee set at libertie for some small ransome, and that the Gouvernour asked them 3000. Rialles of 8. but they hoped to bring him to 2000. whereat we much reioyced.

The 8. 9. and 10. of October we passed ouer to make some agreement with them that we might be quiet.

The manner of
their ransome.

The 11. of October they agreede vpon a ransome of 2000. Ryalles of eyght, and were content, that what goodes soeuer we had taken from them, wee shoulde keepe as our owne, and for our goodes that they had stolen, and forcibly taken from our men within the towne, they would keepe them, and so exchange one for the other, they likewise were content to quit vs of all our debts, that we ought within the towne eyther to the Gouvernour or to any other man, and that from thence forwarde we should be free, and traffique in the towne, both to buy and sell when it pleased vs, & with their good willes as we had done, and before we paide our money, the towne was to sende two men aborde our ships, which done, we were to pay the halfe of our ransome, and vpon the payment thereof, they shoulde set halfe of our men at liberty, and that halfe of our men being come aborde, wee were to pay the other halfe of our ransome, which was 1000. Ryalles of eyght; which being performed, their two men, and their other halfe of our men were on both sides to bee deliuered and sette free, and without contradiction it was performed.

The 12. and 13. this agreement being ended, diuers victuailers came aborde our shippes to sell vs Hennes, Egges, and all other kind of victuailles.

The 14. we gaue certaine presentes in signe of good will, to such as had shewed vs fauour when we were in contention with them.

The 15. 16. 17. and 18. some of our Factors went into the towne, where they bought certaine Pepper, & brought it aboard our ships.

The 19. they went again into the towne, & bought a greater quantitie at 5. sakes for one Catti, minding in that sorte euery day to take in our lading, but it fell not out as wee desired, for the Portingalles that coule not brooke our company, made such means to the Gouvernour, that

that he gaue commandement that we should buy no more Pepper, before we had paide 1400. Rialles of 8. which he challenged of vs because we had cast anker within his streame, wherevpon our Marchantes went and agreed with him, which done wee thinking to buy Pepper as we did before, the Gouvernour againe commanded to the contrarie, whereby we perceyued their deceit, in that he wold not hold his word. The countrymen would gladly haue solde their Pepper, as also the Chinars, Arabians, Mahometitians, and secretly some Portingalles, but when we saw wee could not get it out but with great daunger, wee thought it not conuenient to buy: and when we spake vnto the Gouvernour, touching the holding of his worde, he made vs answere, that he had no bones in his tongue, and that therefore he coulde speake that which he ment not to doe: and to say the truth most part of the Iauars are a kind of deceitfull people, for whatsoeuer they say and presently performe, that shall you be sure of and no more.

The 25. of October there came an Ambassador into Bantam sent from Malacca to the Gouvernour with a present of 10000. Rials of 8. desiring him to forbid vs both his towne and streame, that wee might not traffique there. Whereof wee were aduertised by the Sabandar and other of our friendes counselling our men to get them out of the towne, and not to returne againe, otherwise they would be in daunger to be stayed againe, and we hauing sent a man into the towne to saue him from being holden prisoner, our host where we lay being on shore was forced to bring him out couered with certaine mattes; so that vpon the 26. of the same month all our trafficke and friendship with them ceased: but our host being our friende, came secretly aborde our ships, and shewed vs that he and his company had two ships lying before the towne, laden with Nutmegges and Mace that came from Banda, for the which hee agreed with vs at a price, vpon condition that we should seeme to take them by force, that thereby he might colour his dealing with vs: wherevpon the first of Nouember we sailed close to the towne with all our ships, and set vpon the two Iauan shippes, wherein we found to the number of 30. slaues, that knew nothing of their maisters bargaine made with vs, so that they began to resist vs, wherewith we shot among them, and presently slew 4. or 5. of them, the rest leapt aborde our ships, and swanne to land, which done we tooke the two ships, and put their lading into ours: The Portingalles shippe that brought their Ambasadour, lay close vnder the shore, wherevnto we sent two of our boats, but the Portingals that were in her shot so thicke with their peeces vpon our men, that our boates were forced to leaue them with losse of one of our men, but our shippes shot in such sorte with their ordinance vpon the Portingall shippe, that they spoyled and brake it in peeces, wherein their Capitaine was slaine, and the victualiers that stil brought vs victualles to sell, tolde vs that with our peeces we had slain three or foure men within the towne, & that the townes men began to make an armie of ships to set vpon vs.

The 2. of Nouember we espyed a shippe that came toward Bantam, which we ioyned vnto with our boats, and being neere vnto it, they spread their fights, which were of thicke mattes, and began to defend themselves; our men shot among them with stone peeces and Caliuers, and they defended themselves with great courage, hauing halfe pikes wherewith they thrust at vs, & that serued likewise to blow arrowes out of them, for they were like trunks, out of the which trunks they shot so great numbers of arrowes, that they fell as thick as hayle, and loose stayeth in the flesh) when we shot with our Caliuers they ranne behind their fights, but whē they perceiued that their matted fights could not defende them, and that they were killed through them, they entered into their boate, and by strength of oares rowed from vs, leauing their shippe, wherein we founde two dead men, and we slew three more of them as we rowed after their boat, so that in all they lost fise men, as we after heard, and that they were to the number of 40. which done, wee brought their shippe to ours, wherein we found good store of Ryce and dried fish.

Why the Gouvernour forbid vs trafficke.

How they tooke two Iauan ships.

They fought with a Portingall shippe.

They fought with a Iauan shippe.

The

The marchants
follow them
with wares.

The 6. of Nouember, perceuying not any hope of more trafficke for vs with those of Bantam, wee hoised anker and set sayle, setting our course towards the straight of Sunda.

The seuenth of Nouember wee came and ankered before a Riuer of freshe water, about sixe miles from Bantam, where wee tooke in our prouision of water: thither certaine Merchants followed vs with Porseline, telling vs that they were sory for our departure, & that they longed for our returne againe.

The thirteenth of Nouember wee set sayle, and about euening wee came before Iacatra, in time past called Sunda Calapa, which hath beene a rich Towne of marchandise, but vpon some occasions and by reason of their hard vsage the Marchants had withdrawen themselves from thence, therefore at this present there is little or nothing to doe. Iohn Huguen in his booke saith this to be the principal towne of trafficke, but that is long sithence, for now there is not any trade of marchandise.

The fourteenth of Nouember wee sent two of our men into the towne, hauing some of theirs in pawne, who tolde vs that many of the inhabitantes were gone out of the towne with all their goodes, being in great feare of our peeces, and there wee had great store of victuailes, and much more then wee required brought aboard our ships.

The 18. wee set saile from Iacatra, and being about two miles from the towne, our shippe called Amsterdam fell vpon a cliffe, but it got off againe without any hurt, and therewith wee presently made towards the straight.

The 2. of December we passed by 3. townes which we might easily perceiue, we likewise passed by Tubam, and ankered vnder Sidaya. The 3. of December there came men out of the towne, and desired vs to stay, saying that there we might haue Cloues & Nutmegs as many as we woulde, bringing certaine banketting stuffe (as a present from their King) vnto Schelengers ship, because it lay nearest to the land, and they came most aboard it.

The 4. of December they came again into Schelengers ship, bringing certaine presentes with them, and among the rest a certayne birde that coulde swallowe fyre, which is a very strange fowle, and was brought aliae to Amsterdam, which after was giuen to the states of Hollandelying in the Hage, and some good fruites, willing vs to sende a man on shore, to see their spices, whereof they said they had great store: wherevpon we sent a man out of the Amsterdam, and with him an interpreter, one of the Portingalles slaues, they leauing three or foure of their men aborde our shippes, for pawnes till his returne: when our man came to lande hee was well vsed, and there they shewed him fortie or fiftie bals of Cloues; which done they brought him before the King, that promised him great fauor, and told him that the next day he wold himselfe come aborde our ships, and deale with our Captaines, and with that he let our man depart.

The 5. of December we expected the Kinges comming aborde, putting out all our flagges and streamers, and about noone there came 8. or 9. indifferent great shippes full of men from off the shore, wherein wee thought the King to bee, but when they were almost at vs they diuided themselves, three of them rowing to Shellengers ship, and when they borden him, they thinking the King had been there, Reymer van Hel as Factor and the Maister came forth to receyue him, but the lauers entering all at once, Reymer van Hel said, What will all these people do aborde the shippe, for there was at the least two hundred men, who all at one time drewe out their poynyardes, and stabbed our men that neuer suspected them, so that presently they had slaine twelue of the shippe, and two sore wounded, that boldly withstoode them: the rest of our men being vnder hatches presently tooke their pikes, and thrust so fast out at the grates, that the lauers woulde haue forced the middle part of the ship, wherein was two entries, but our men standing at them with their swordes in hande draue them out, not ceasing still to thrust vp with their pikes, meane time they kindled fier, lighted their matches, and shot off their stone peeces that lay about the hatches, wherewith they began presently to flie, most of them leaping ouer bord, and swam to their two boates, that lay harde by our shippes, whereof one with a great peece was presently stricken in peeces: The rest of our ships hearing vs shoote in that manner, entered into their boats, and made towards them,

How the In-
dians betrayed
them.

Ship

ther
shot
min
ene
in a
of th
Pina
her,
hand
in g
small
were
son
lans
two
kind
the
T
serer
T
the
sayin
sell
T
the
T
sayin
to th
had
wher
ship
lade
ouer
twel
vs,
of th
chie
ther
The
Gou
as y
A
small
that
T
win
dista
pen
Clo
long
This
wher

those of Ban-
unda.

water, about
ertain Mer-
ture, & that

re Iacatra, in
, but vppon
n themselves
ghen in his
or now there

uing some of
e towne with
of victuailes,

, our shippe
and therewith

we likewise
e men out of
t Nutmegs as
r King) vnto
t.

ne presentes
nich is a very
the states of
shore, to see
n out of the
uing three or
man came to
which done
that the next
nd with that

ll our flagges
full of men
almost at vs
they borden
Maister came
What will all
, who all at
them, so that
y withstoode
thrust so fast
hip, wherein
ue them out,
lighted their
y began pre-
nat lay harde
The rest of
de towards
them,

Ships voyage.

TRAFFIQUES, AND DISCOVERIES.

23

them, rowing harde to the three Indian fustes, wherein were at the least 100. men, and shotte among them with their peeeces, wherewith they leapt into the water, euery man swimming to shore, and we with two boates after them, hewing and killing them as our deadly enemies, who vnder pretence of friendship sought to murder vs, and wee handled them in such sort, that of two hundred men there got not aboue thirty of them to lande, the rest of their fustes lay farre off and beheld the fight: Three of their fustes thought to rowe to the Pinace to take her, which they might easily haue done, as hauing not aboue 7. or 8. men in her, being busie to set vpp a newe maste, but when they perceyued their men to bee so handeled in the Amsterdam, and that they leapt ouer borde, they turned backe againe, and in great haste rowed to land, so that at that time they got not much by the bargaine, and no small grieffe to vs, for there wee lost 12. men, that were all stabbed with poinyards, their names were Iohn Iacobson Schellenger, maister of the ship, Reymer van Hel Factor, Gielis Giele-son Gentleman, Barent Bonteboter, Arent Cornedrager, Cornelis van Alcmuer, Simon Ianson, Wilschut Ioes the Carpenter, Adrian de Metselar, one of the Portingalles slaues, and two boyes, whereof one was but twelue yeares olde, whereby wee perceyued them to be a kinde of cruell people, for they had giuen the little boy and all the rest of our men at the least 12. stabbes a peece after they were dead.

The names of
their men that
were stabbed.

The same day about euening we hoysed ankers, and set saile, hauing manned the Amsterdam with men out of our other shippes, and so helde our course Eastward.

The 6. of December we came to a great Island called Madura, where we ankered, and in the euening two of their men came aborde our shippes, with message from their Gouvernour, saying that we were welcome, desiring vs to stay there, for he would trafficke with vs, and sell vs some Pepper, as they saide, but wee believed them not.

The 7. of December there came another boat abord, bringing certaine fruites, saying that the next day their Gouvernour would come to see our shippes.

The 8. there came a great fuste and three smal boats, from off the land all full of men, saying their Gouvernour was among them: we willed them not to goe to the Amsterdam, but to the Mauritius, but they woulde not, but made to the Amsterdam, thinking because there had beene so many murdered in her, there was not many men aborde her at that time, and when they were within a pykes length of her, (although they were directed to the other shippes) they remembring their late mischance, shotte off three or foure stone Peeeces full laden, wherewith they slew and hurt many of the Indians, wherevpon they presently leapt ouer bord, & wee with our boates followed after and slew diuers of them, taking ten or twelue, thinking by them to know what their intent was to doe, but they coulde not certifie vs, and therefore we let them go againe onely keeping two boyes, who long after stole out of the shippe, and swamme to lande: They tolde vs that the Gouvernour being a Bishoppe or chiefe instructor of the countrey, was within the boate and slaine among the rest, hee had therein likewise a little boy one of his sonnes who wee likewise tooke, and sent to lande: The Bishoppe was of Meca, and much esteemed of among them, a great Clearke, and Gouvernour ouer all the rest of the Countrey: There was a lewell found about him, which as yet is kept.

About euening we hoysed ankers, & set sayle, & the 11. of December we came to two small Islands, where wee ankered, there wee founde none but poore people and fishermen, that brought vs fish, Hens, and other fruit to sell.

The 13. wee set sayle, and the 14. wee had a West winde, which they call the passage winde, that would haue serued vs well to saile to Moluccas, from whence wee were not distant aboue two hundred miles, and as then it was a good yeare for Cloues, which happeneth euery three yeares: It was told vs that we might there haue a Cabbin laden full of Cloues, wherevpon wee determined to sayle thither, but because wee had already indured a long and troublesome voyage, and but ill manned, wee woulde not, longing to bee at home: This contrary wind holding vppon the foure and twentie of December wee came to an Islande where we had beene before.

How farre they
were from Mo-
luccas.

The

The 25. of December Iohn Molenaer maister of the Mauritius, dyed sodainely, for an hower before hee was well, and in good health.

The 28. 29. 30. and 31. of December wee were busied to take all the wares, sayles, and other thinges out of the Amsterdam, her victuailes and furnitures seruing for our voyage homewarde, & lying vnder that Island, we had victuailes brought vs every day as much as wee needed, both fish, Hens, venison and fruit, and at reasonable price, but there we could get no water.

The Amster-
dam set on fire.

The 11. of Ianuary when we had vnladen the Amsterdam we set her on fier, letting her burne, taking her men into our shippes.

The 12. of Ianuarie we set sayle again, some desiring to sayle Eastward, others Westward, but in fine wee set Westwarde to sayle once againe to Bantam, wherewith the Mauritius sayled Southeastwarde, to gette about the Island of Iaua, and we followed her. The 14. of Ianuary we once againe perceyued the East point of the Island of Madura, and held our course Southward: on that side of Madura there lyeth many small Islandes, through which we sayled.

The Pinace un-
ground.

The 16. in the morning our Pinace fell on grounde vpon the coast of Iaua, not far from Pan-norocan, where she shotte off three peeces, at the which warning wee made thither with our boates, and by the helpe of God got her off againe: There we saw a high hil that burnt, vnder and aboue the fire hauing a great smoake, most strange to behold.

The 18. of Ianuary we entered into the straight that runneth betwene Iaua and Baly, and by reason of the hard & contrary streame that ran therein, we were forced to anker vpon the coast of Iaua, where wee found good anker ground.

The 19. wee set set sayle, and when wee came neere to the coast of Baly, we entered into a rough streame, and our shippes draue backward, as swiftly as an arrow out of a bow, and there we found no anker ground, nor any anker could haue holden vs, but Molenaer got the coast of Iaua and ankered, which in the ende wee likewise did, and ankered at the least three miles from him, and so much we had driuen backe in the space of halfe an houre.

The 20. of Ianuarie wee went and lay by our other ships.

The 21. of Ianuarie there came two barkes to the Mauritius, wherein there was one that coulde speake good Poringall, who tolde vs that the towne of Ballaboam was besieged by a strange King, that had married the King of Ballaboams daughter, and after he had laine with her he caused her to bee slaine, and then came to besiege her father. This towne of Ballaboam lyeth on the East end of the Island of Iaua, and is the same towne where M. Candish was when hee passed that way, and the old King wherof he writeth was as then yet liuing, being at the least 160. years of age. There we saw great numbers of Battes, that flew ouer our shippes, and were as bigge as Crowes, which in that Countrey they vse to eat, as they say: About noone we came before the towne of Ballaboam, so neare vnto it, that we might easily see it, and there we lay behind a high point of lande, thinking to take in water.

The 22. of Ianuarie we tooke our Pinace, and sayled about the shore as neere the land as possible we might, to seeke for fresh water, but we found none, for the Riuer that ran through the towne was paled vp (by them that lay before it) so that no man might passe either out or in, but onely on the lande side, and that with great daunger: The same day there came 2. or 3. men aboard our shippe, that stole out of the towne by night, and came from the King, to desire our help with our great shot, which wee coulde not doe; because that thereabouts it was very shallow, and we might not go neere it with our shippes; they tolde vs they had great want of victuailes within the towne, whereby many of them were already deade for hunger, and much desired our aide, but it was not in vs to doe. Those that besieged the towne were Mores, but they in the towne were heathens, and as yet had not receyued Mahomets lawe, and that (as wee heard after) was the cause of their warre: There wee sawe many Storkes flying and sitting in the fielde: with vs we cannot imagine where the Storkes remaine in winter time, but here wee sawe them in the winter time.

The

The 24. of Ianuarie we sayled from thence, perceyuing nothing for vs to get, and tooke our course right ouer to the Island of Bally.

The 25. we came to Bally, where one of their barks boarded vs, telling vs that there we should find a Riuer of fresh water, and of all thinges els sufficient to serue our necessities, wherevpon wee ankered.

The 26. of Ianuarie our Pinace sent her boat to land, to see the Riuer, and there one of our men was sent on shore, but when he was on land he found nothing, but an armie of ten thousand men, that went to relieue the towne of Ballaboam, and the Riuer was nothing worth to lade water, wherevpon our men came on borde againe: Their Generall thought to haue gotten some great pray out of our shippes.

The 27. of Ianuarie we set sayle to finde a conuenient place to refresh vs with water and other prouision, for wee were informed by a man of Bengala, that of his owne will sayled with vs, and that had beene in Bally, that there wee should finde water and other thinges to serue our necessities, so that by night wee ankered vnder a high pointe of lande on the South West ende of Bally.

The 28. of Ianuary one of their boates boarded vs with sixe or seuen men, saying that their King was desirous to deale with vs for such wares as hee had, and sent to know from whence we came, and we said wee came out of Holland.

The 29. and 30. there came more men aborde our shippes, but as wee suspected that was not the right hauen, for the people came rowing in great haste a far off, and the man of Bengala could not tell what to say, but the King was thereabout, and euery day sent vs some fruit.

The first of February wee had two hogges brought aborde our shippes, that wee bought for two Ryalles of eyght, and we eate them very sauerly.

The 2. of Februarie, we set saile that wee might get aboute the point, where wee thought to finde a better place for freshe water, but by reason the winde was contrary, wee coulde not doe it, but were forced to anker again.

The 3. of February we set saile againe, and then wee had a storme, so that our saile blew euery way, and because of the contrarie winde we could not reach aboute the point, but were constrained to anker, but the Mauritius and the Pinace got past it, although thereby the Mauritius was in no little daunger, but because the Pilot had laid a wager of 6. Rialles of 8. that hee would get aboute it, hee would passe, what daunger soeuer it might be, and sayled close along by the cliffes, whereby wee lay at anker without companie.

The 4. and 5. wee set saile once againe to get aboute the point but could not reach it.

The 6. we had a letter from Rodenburgh, that certified vs how the Mauritius lay at anker at the least 7. or 8. miles beyond the point, and he that brought the letter came with it ouer land; and at the same time there was a man sent on lande with a small present for the King, that we might winne his fauour.

The 7. our man came on borde againe, and brought vs newes how Rodenburgh with one of the Portingalles slaues, being on lande were against their willes led before the King, but the saylors of the Mauritius had gotten men for pledges.

The 8. of Ianuarie, the same man went on land out of our shippe with more presentes of veluet and a caluer, the better to get the Kinges fauour, which liked him well, and desired vs to bring the ship nearer to the towne, saying he would send vs water, and other thinges sufficient to supply our wants.

The 9. we sayled into the cheeke with our shippe, & ankered about a small halfe mile from the land, & being ankered there came at the least 70. boates of the Countrey to see our ship, and the King sent vs word that hee was desirous to heare vs shoote off 5. or 6. of our great peeces, wherevpon wee shot fise of our greatest peeces, and the King stode vpon the shore to see them.

The 10. we had a letter from Cornelis Houtman, to wil vs to come to them, for that there they had founde a good place for water, and of all other necessities, so that about euening wee set sayle, leauing two of our men and a Portingall slaue among the Indians, whome the

King promised should come vnto vs ouer land, yet that night wee could not reach aboute the point, meane time we perceyued our Pinace that came to helpe vs.

The 16. we got by the Mauritius, that had already laden in her water, and hooped her vessels, wherevpon we began presently to do the like, and to visite our vessels that were almost apoyled.

The 17. our men whome wee left with the King came ouer land vnto our shippes, and then we bought great store of cattle and fruit.

The 18. 19. 20. and 21. wee employed our time to lade water, which wee had verie easily, and refreshed our selues with Cattle, Hogges, fruit, and Lemons sufficient. There came one of the Kinges principall officers with our men ouer land, to pleasure vs in all things we desired, he was very desirous to haue some present of vs.

Two of our
men stayed with
the Indians.

The 22. of Ianuarie two of our men that sayled in the Mauritius stayed on lande, but wee knewe not the cause: it should sceme some great promises had beene made vnto them, for as we vnderstood, the King was very desirous to haue all sortes of strange nations about him, but our people were therein much ouerseene, for there they liued among heathens, that neither knewe God nor his commandementes, it appeared that their youtnes and wilde heades did not remember it, one of their names was Emanuel Rodenburgh of Amsterdam, the other Jacob Cuyper of Delft: within a day or two they sent vnto vs for their clothes, but wee sent them not.

The 23. 24. and 25. we made a voyage on land, and fetcht as many Hogges aboard our shippes as we could eate.

The 25. of Februarie we hoysed ankers, minding to set saile & so go homeward, leauing our 2. men aforesaid on land, but because it was calme weather we ankered, and went once againe on lande, and the 26. of the same Month wee set saile and helde our course West South West, but we had a calme.

The situation of the Island of Baly.

How 40 women
burnt them
selues with one
man.

The Island of Baly lying at the East end of Iaua, is a verie fruitfull Islande of Ryce, Hennes, Hogges, that are verie good, and great store of cattle: but they are very drie and leane beastes. They haue many horses: the inhabitantes are heathens, and haue no religion, for some pray to Kine, others to the Sunne, and euerie man as hee thinketh good. When a man dyeth his wife burneth her selfe with him: there were some of their men aborde our shippes, that told vs, that when some man dyeth in that Countrey, that sometimes there are at the least fifty women that will burne themselves with him, and she that doth not so is accounted for a dishonest woman: so that it is a common thing with them: The apparel both of men and women is for the most part like those of Bantam, nothing but a cloth about their middles: Their weapons is, each man a poinyarde at their backes, and a trunke with an iron point like a speare, about a fadom and a halfe long, out of the which they blowe certaine arrowes, whereof they haue a case full; it is an euil weapon for naked men: they are enemies to the Mores and Portingalles. This Island yeeldeth no spice, nor any other costly ware, onely victuailes and clothes which they weare about their bodies, and slaues that are there to be solde. The King went with more state then the King of Bantam: all his garde had pikes with heades of fine gold, and he sate in a wagon that was drawn by two white Buffles.

The first of March we had a calme.

The third we got a good wind that blew Southeast, holding our course West South West.

The situation of
Iaua.

The fourteenth the wind blew stil South East, sometimes more Southwarde, and sometimes Eastward, being vnder 14. degrees, and a good sharpe gale, holding our course West Southwest; There we found that Iaua is not so broad, nor stretcheth it selfe not so much Southwarde, as it is set downe in the Carde: for if it were, we should haue passed clean through the middle of the land.

The 22. of March the winde helde as it did, being vnder 19. degrees, holding our course West South West.

The

The 19. of April our ship had no more bread left, but for our last partition euery man had seuen pound, both good and badde breade, and from that time forwarde our meate was Rice sodden in water, and euery man had a canne of water euery day, with three romers of wine, and weekly each man three romers or glasses of oyle and that very strong, and nothing els.

The 20. we had a calme, the 21. a calme with a Northerne aire.

The 23. a good wind that blew Southwest.

The 24. we saw the firme lande of Ethiopia, being vnder 33. degrees, and as wee gessed, wee were then about an hundred miles from the Cape de bona Sperance, yet we thought we had been at the least three hundred miles from it, so that wee may say, that God wrought wonderfully for vs: for that if wee had fallen by night vpon the land, we had surely runne vpon it: wee had a good winde out of the West, and West Southwest.

The 25. of Aprill in the morning wee had a calme, with a very hollow water, & at euening we had a good winde, that came North and Northeast, and although wee had so good a wind yet our shippe bare but little sayle, although the other two shippes of our company were at the least two mile before vs, for most part of the night wee sayled with our schouer saile, holding our course Southwest & by West.

The 26. of Aprill in the morning we coulde not see our shippes, which pleased not our men, besides that our shippe was very weake, whereby her ribs shoke, and her ioynts with the force of the water opened and shut, so that as then our shippe was very leake, hauing the winde Northwest, holding our course as neere as wee could West Southwest, and then we put out our maine sayles, at noone the winde came West, with a great storme, so that most of our sayles blew in peeces, and so wee draue forward with out sayles.

The 27. of Aprill still driuing without sayle with a West winde, wee were vnder thirty sixe degrees, so that we found that the streame draue vs South & South West.

The 28. of Aprill still driuing without sailes, we had the height of 36. degrees and 20. minutes, and about euening we hoised saile againe, the winde being West Southwest, & we held our course Northwest with very hollow water.

The 29. of April we could not as yet see our shippes, the wind being West.

The 30. of April we had fayre weather with a West and West South West wind, and then we saw many great birdes with white billes, which is a signe not to bee far from the Cape de bona Sperance, we likewise saw certain small birdes, speckled on their backs, and white vpon their breasts.

The first of May wee had a South winde with fayre weather, hauing 34 degrees and a halfe, holding our course West Southwest.

The seconde of May wee were vnder 35. degrees, and $\frac{1}{2}$. holding our course West and West and by North.

The fourth of May we found our selues to be vnder 37. degrees South South East winde, our course being West and by North, and West North West.

The 5. and 6. of May we had all one winde at noone being vnder 35. degrees, wee thought wee had past the Cape, and held our course Northwest, towards Saint Helena, still without sight of our ships.

The 8. of May with a South wind wee helde North West and by West.

The 9. we had a calme with a gray sky, and were vnder 31. degrees and twentie minutes, and then our portion of oyle was increased a glasse more euery weeke, so that euery man had foure glasses.

The 10. we had stil South winds, and were vnder 29. deg.

The 14. of May twice or thrice we saw reedes, called Trombos driuing on the water, being such as driue about the Cape de bona Speranza, which wee thought verie strange, for that the Portingals write, that they are seene but thirtie myles from the Cape, and wee gest our selues to be at the least 200. beyond it.

The 15. we still had a South East wind, & helde our course Northwest.

The 16. of May in the morning we saw two ships, whereat we much reioyced, thinking they

Signes of the
Cape de bonu
Speranza.

had beene our companie, we made to leeward of them, and the smallest of them comming somewhat neere vs, about the length of the shotte of a great peece, shee made presently toward her fellow, whereby we perceived them to bee Frenchmen, yet wee kept to leeward, thinking they would haue come & spoken with vs, but it should seeme they feared vs, and durst not come, but held their course Northeast; at noone we had the height of 22. degrees, and 50. minutes with a Southeast wind, holding our course Northwest.

The 17. of May wee were vnder 21. degrees and a halfe: the 18. the wind being Southerly, we were vnder 19. degrees and a halfe.

The 19. and 20. we had a calme with a Southern are.

The 21. the ayre comming Southwest, we held our course Northwest: and were vnder 17. degrees and 3. partes: There we found the compasse to decline three quarters of a strike or line North eastward, after noone we had a Southeast wind, and our course West Northwest.

The 22. of May we had still a Southeast winde, and were vnder the height of 16. degrees and 40. minutes, holding our course West Northwest.

The 23. of May, by reason of the cloudy sky, about noone we could not take the height of the Sunne, but as we gest we had the height of the Island of S. Helena, and held our course West and by South to keepe vnder that height, for there the compasses decline a whole strike or line: in the euening we found that we were vnder 16. degrees.

The 24. of May in the morning wee discovered a Portingall ship, that stayed for vs, and put out a flagge of truce, and because our flagge of truce was not so readie as theirs, and we hauing the wind of him, therefore he shot two shootes at vs, and put forth a flagge out of his maine top, and we shot 5. or 6. times at him, and so held on our course without speaking to him, hauing a South East winde, holding our course West and by South to find the Island of S. Helena, which the Portingall likewise sought.

The 25. of May we discovered the Island of S. Helena, but we could not see the Portingall ship, still sayling with a stiffe Southeast wind, & about euening we were vnder the Island, which is very high lande, and may be seene at the least 14. or 15. miles off, and as we sayled about the North point, there lay three other great Portingall ships, we being not aboue half a mile from them, wherevpon wee helde in the weather and to seawarde Northeast as much as we might. The Portingalles perceyuing vs, the Admiral of their fleet shot off a peece to call their men that were on land to come aborde, and then wee saw foure of their shippes together, that were worth a great summe of money, at the least 200. tunnes of gold, for they were all laden with spices, precious stones, and other rich wares, and therefore wee durst not anker vnder the Island, but lay all night Northeastwarde, staying for our company.

The 26. of May in the morning wee made towards the Island againe, with a good Southeast winde, and about noone or somewhat past we discried two shippes, and about euening as we made towards them, we knew them to be our company, which made vs to reioice, for we had been asunder the space of a whole Month, & so we helde together and sayled homeward, holding our course Northwest: for as yet our men were well and in good health, and we found a good Southeast winde, and had water enough for foure or five monthes.

The 27. 28. 29. and 30. of May wee had a Southeast winde, with faire weather, and the 27. day we were vnder 14. degrees. The first of Iune we were vnder 6. degrees, with a Southeast wind, holding our course North West, but by means of the Compasse that yielded North eastward, we kept about Northwest & by North. The 6. of Iune wee were vnder one degree on the South side of the line, there wee founde that the streame draue vs fast into the West, and therefore wee helde our course more Northernly and sayled Northwest and by North, with an East and South East wind. The 7. of Iune wee past the Equinoctiall line, with an East winde, holding our course North Northwest.

The 10. of Iune in the euening we were vnder 5. degrees and a halfe on the North side of the line, and then we began again to see the North star, which for the space of 2. years we had not seene, holding our course North Northwest, there we began to haue smal blasts, & some times calmes, but the aire all South and Southeast.

The 11. of Iune we had a calme, and yet a darke sky, that came Southeastwarde.

The

Four Portingall
ships richly
laden.

They past the
Equinoctiall line.

The 12. of Iune wee had a close sky with raine, and the same day about euening our fore top maste fell downe.

The 13. we strake all our sailes and mended our ship.

The 14. we had the wind Northward, holding our course West Northwest as neare as we coulde, but by reason of the thick sky wee could not take height of the Sun. The 15. of Iune we had the wind North, & North Northwest.

The 16. of Iune wee had the height of 9. degrees & 10. minutes, the winde being North-east and North Northeast. The 17. the winde was Northeast with fair weather, & we held Northwest, & Northwest & by North till after noone. The 18. we tooke a great fish called an Aluercoor, which serued vs all for 2. meals, which wee had not tasted of long time before.

They tooke a
great fish.

The 26. we had still a Northeast winde, and sometimes larger, holding our course North Northwest with large saile, and were vnder 17. degrees and $\frac{1}{2}$.

The same day there came much dust flying into our shippe, as if we had past hard by some sandie downe, & we gest the nearest land to vs might be the Island of S. Anthony, and wee were as then at the least 40. or 50. miles from it: The same day likewise there came a flying fish into our shippe, which we eat.

The 28. of Iune wee had the height of 20. degrees, with a East Northeast wind & East and by West, with full sayle, there we saw much Sargosse, driuing on the water. The last of Iune we had the Sun right ouer our heades, and yet we felt no heat, for that by reason of the cold ayre we had a fine coole weather. The same day we passed Tropicus Cancrī, still hauing the winde East Northeast, and in the euening we were vnder 24. degr.

The second of Iuly we still saw Sargosse driuing vpon the water, & had the wind somewhat lower North Northeast with a calme. The thirde of Iuly the winde came againe East Northeast, and wee helde our course North and by West. The 8. of Iuly wee were vnder 33. degrees & $\frac{1}{2}$. with an East wind, holding our course North and by East, and yet we saw much Sargosse driuing, but not so thicke as it did before.

The 10. of Iuly we had a good wind that blew south and South and by East, and hoysted vp our maine tops, that for the space of 26. daies were neuer touched, and held our course North Northeast, there we were in no little feare to fall among the Spanish fleet, which at that time of the yeare keepeth about the Flemmish Islands.

The same day one of our boyes fell ouer bord, and was carried away with a swift streame before the wind, but to his great good fortune, the Pinace saued him, that was at the least a quarter of a mile from vs: this euening we found the height of 36. degrees.

The 12. of Iuly we had a Southwest wind, holding our course Northeast and by North: Our Pilot and the Pilot of the Pinnace differed a degree in the height of the Sunne, for ours had 38. degrees, and theirs but 37. We gest to be about the Islands of Corbo & Flores, but the one held more easterly, and the other more Westerly. The 13. of Iuly wee had still a Southwest winde, and after noone wee thought wee had seene land, but we were not assured thereof, for it was somewhat close. The 14. of Iuly we had a calme, and saw no land, and then our men began to be sicke.

The 17. of Iuly wee had a South Southeast winde, with faire weather, and were vnder 41. degrees, holding our course East Northeast.

The 18. 19. 20. and 21. it was calme. The 22. of Iuly the winde came North, and wee helde our course East Southeast. The 23. of Iuly the wind was North North East and North-east, and we held as near as we could East & East Southeast, the same day our steward found a barrill of stockfish in the roming, which if we had beene at home we would haue cast it on the dunghil, it stunke so filthy, & yet we eat it as sauerly as the best meat in the world.

The 24. we had a West wind, & that with so strong a gale, that wee were forced to set two men at helme, which pleased vs well.

The 25. of Iuly we had a storme that blew West and West Northwest, so that we bare but two sailes, holding our course Northeast and by East.

The first of August we were vnder 45. degrees with a North West wind, holding our course Northeast and by East.

The

The second of August one of our men called Gerrit Cornellson of Spijkenes died, being the first man that dyed in our voyage homeward.

The 4. of August we had a Northwest wind.

The 5. of August in the morning the winde came Southwest, and we were vnder 47. degrees, holding our course Northeast and the North Northeast, and wee gest that wee were not farre from the channell, those dayes aforesaid we had so great colde in our shippes, as if it had bene in the middle of winter: We could not be warme with all the clothes wee had. The same day we saw Sargosse drue vpon the water.

They saw a
shippe with the
Prince of
Oranges flagge.

The 6. of August we had a West wind, in the morning we cast out our lead and found grounde at 80. fadome, and about noone we saw a shippe that bare the Princes flagge, yet durst not come neare vs, although we made signes vnto him, and after noone wee saw the land of Heissant, whereat we all reioyced.

The 7. of August in the morning we saw the land of Fraunce, and held our course North Northeast, and likewise we saw a small shippe, but spake not with it.

The 8. of August in the morning we saw the Kiskas, and had a South wind and somewhat West, holding our course East Northeast.

They saw a
man of war.

The 9. of August we entered the heades, and past them with a Southwest wind, sayling Northeast. After noone we past by a man of warre being a Hollander, that lay at anker, and hee hoysed anker to follow vs, about euening wee spake with him, but because of the wind wee coulde hardly heare what hee said, yet hee sailed on with vs.

The man of war
gaue them vic-
tuales.

The 10. of August the man of warre barded vs with his boat, and brought vs a barrell of Beere, some bread and cheese, shewing vs what news he could touching the state of Holland, and presently wee sawe the land of Holland, & because it blew very stiffe & a great storme, after noone wee ankered about Petten to stay for better weather, and some new Pilots, & that was the first time we had cast anker for the space of 5. monthes together, about euening it beganne to blow so stiffe, that wee lost both an anker and a cable.

They cut down
their maine mast.

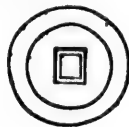
The 11. of August we had still a Southerly winde, & therefore about noone the Mauritius set saile, and wee thought likewise to saile, but our men were so weake that we could not hoysse vp our anker, so that we were constrained to lie still till men came out to helpe vs, about euening the winde came Southwest, and with so great a storme, that we thought to haue run vpon the strand, and were forced to cut downe our maine maste.

The 12. and 13. we had a hard South West wind, & sometimes West, so that no Pilots came aboard our ship, but the 13. day about euening it began to be faire weather.

The 14. of August about breake of day in the morning, there came two boats with Pilots and men aboard our ship, that were sent out by our owners, & brought vs some fresh victuales, which done they hoysed vp our ankers, and about noone we sayled into the Tessel, and ankered in the channell, where we had fresh victuales enough, for we were all very weake.

This was a great noueltie to all the Marchantes and inhabitantes of Hollande, for that wee went out from thence the second of April 1595. and returned home again vpon the 14. of August 1597. there you might haue bought of the Pepper, Nutmegs, Cloues, and Mace, which wee brought with vs. Our saylors were most part sicke, being but 80. men in all, two third partes of their company being dead, & lost by diuers accidentes, and among those forescore such as were sicke, as soone as they were on land and at their ease presently recovered their healthes.

The Copper money of Iaua.



This

THIS Copper money commeth also out of China, & is almost as thicke, great and heavy, as a quarter of a Doller, and somewhat thicker, in the middle having a square hole, 2000. of them are worth a Riall of 8, but of these there are not ouer many, they use to hang them vpon stringes, and pay them without telling, they stand not so narrowly vpon the number, for if they want but 25. or 50. it is nothing.

The leaden money of Iaua.



THIS peece of money (being of bad Leade is very rough) hath in the middle a foure square hole, they are hanged by two hundred vpon a string, they are commonly 10. 11. and 12. thousand to a Riall of 8. as there commeth great quantitie out of China, where they are made, and so as there is plentie or scarcitie they rise and fal,

FINIS.

PRINT

VOL.

A

TRUE REPORT

OF THE

GAINEFULL, PROSPEROUS AND SPEEDY VOIAGE

TO

IAUA

IN THE

EAST INDIES,

PERFORMED BY A FLEETE OF EIGHT SHIPS OF AMSTERDAM:

WHICH

SET FORTH FROM TEXELL IN HOLLAND,

THE FIRST OF MAIE 1598. STILO NOVO.

WHEREOF FOURE RETURNED AGAINE THE 19. OF IULY ANNO, 1599. IN LESSE
THEN 15. MONETHS, THE OTHER FOURE WENT FORWARD FROM IAUA
FOR THE MOLUCCAS.

At London;

PRINTED BY P. S. FOR W. ASPLEY, AND ARE TO BE SOLD AT THE SIGNE OF THE TYGERS
HEAD IN PAULES CHURCH-YARD.

VOL. V.

F

Am
ship
gua
ma
The
two
ship
mis
T
un
Hee
T
wise
Mas
Ioh
T
Mas
T
mas
T
was
T
Cor

A

TRUE REPORT

OF

THE GAINFULL, PROSPEROUS, AND SPEEDY VOIAGE TO IAUA IN THE EAST INDIES,

PERFORMED BY A FLEET OF 8. SHIPS OF AMSTERDAM:

WHICH

SET FORTH FROM TEXELL IN HOLLAND THE FIRST OF MAIE 1598.

STILO NOVO.

WHEREOF FOURE RETURNED AGAINE THE 19. OF IULY ANNO 1599. IN LESSE THEN 15. MONETHS;
THE OTHER FOURE WENT FORWARD FROM IAU A FOR THE MOLUCCAS.

Whereas in the yeare of our Lord 1595. a certaine company of substantial merchants of Amsterdam in Holland did build and set forth for the East Indies four well appointed shippes, whereof three came home An. 1597. with small profit (as already in sundry languages is declared) Yet neuerthelesse the aforesaid company, in hope of better successe, made out the last yeare 1598. for a second voiage, a fleete of eight gallant ships, to wit, The shippe called the Mauritius, lately returned from that former voyage, being of burden ^{1. Mauritius.} two hundreth and thirty last, or foure hundreth and sixty tunnes, or thereabouts. This shippe was Admirall of the fleete. The Master wherof was Godevart Iohnson, the Commissarie or factor Cornelius Heemskerck, and the Pilot Kees Collen.

The second ship called the Amsterdam, was of the burden of four hundreth & sixty ^{2. Amsterdam.} tuns. The Master's name was Claes Iohnson Melcknap; The factor or commissarie Iacob Heemskerck.

The third was named Hollandia, about the burden of sixe hundreth tuns: which had like- ^{3. Hollandia.} wise been in the former voiage. The Master was Symon Lambertson or Mawe, the Factor Mast. Witte Nijn, who died in the voyage before Bantam, and in his roome succeeded Iohn Iohnson Smith.

The name of the fourth ship was Gelderland, of burden about foure hundreth tuns. ^{4. Gelderland.} Master wherof was Iohn Browne, factor or commissarie, Hans Hendrickson.

The fift was called Zeelandia, of the the burden of three hundreth & sixtie tuns. The ^{5. Zeelandia.} Master was Iohn Cornelison, the Commissary or factor N. Brewer.

The sixt ship named Utrecht of the burden of two hundreth & sixtie tuns. The Master ^{6. Utrecht.} was Iohn Martsen, the Factor or commissary Adrian Veen.

The seuenth a pinnas called Frisland, of burden about seuenty tuns. The Master Iacob ^{7. Frisland.} Cornelison, the Factor Walter Willekens.

8. Ouerijsel.

The eighth a pinnas that had been in the former voiage called the Pidgeon, now $\S$ Ouerijsel, of the burden of fifty tuns. The Master Symon Iohnson. The Factor Arent Hermanson.

Of this fleete was Generall and Admirall Master Iacob Neck. Viceadmirall Wybrand van Warwick: and Rercadmirall Iacob Heemskerck.

With this fleet of eight ships we made saile from Texell the first of May 1598. Stilo Nouo, being the 21. of Aprill, after the account of England, and sailed with good speed vnto the Cabo de bona Speranza: as further shal appeare by a Iournal annexed vnto the end of this discourse.

Being past the Cape, the 7. and 8. of August, by a storme of weather five ships were separated from the Admirall, who afterwarde came together againe before Bantam.

They meete
with a ship of
Zeland.

The 26. of August with three shippes wee came within the view of Madagascar, and the 29. wee met with a ship of Zeeland, called the Long-barke, which had put to sea before vs, and now kept aloofe from us, supposing we were enemies: but at length perceiuing by our flagges what we were, they sent their Pinnas aboard vs, reioycing greatly to haue met with vs, because that diuers of their men were sicke, and ten were already dead: and they had in all but seuen men aboard the shippe that were meat-whole, and eleuen mariners to guide the shippe. Wee agreed to relieue them with some supplie of men: but through darke-nesse and great winde wee lost them againe.

The Isle of
Santa Maria.

After this, we the Admiral Mauritius, the Hollandia, & the pinnas Ouerijsel keeping together, came to the Island of Santa Maria, before the great bay of Antogil in Madagascar: where wee got a small quantity of Rice. We tooke the King prisoner, who paide for his ransome a Cow and a fat calfe.

In this Island we found no great commodity: for being the month of September, the season was not for any fruits: the Oranges had but flowers: Lemons were scant: of Sugar-canes and Hens there was some store, but the Inhabitants were not very forward in bringing them out.

Killing of the
Whale.

Heere wee sawe the hunting of the Whale, (a strange pastime) certaine Indians in a Canoa, or boate following a great Whale, and with a harping Iron, which they cast forth, piercing the whals body, which yron was fastned to a long rope made of the barks of trees, and so tied fast to their Canoa. All this while pricking and wounding the Whale so much as they could, they made him furiously to striue too and fro, swiftly swimming in the sea, plucking the canoa after him: sometimes tossing it vp and downe, as lightly as if it had been a strawe. The Indians in the meane time being cunning swimmers taking small care though they were cast ouerboord, tooke fast hold by the boat stil, and so after some continuance of this sport, the whale wearied and waxing faint, and staining the sea red with his blood, they haled him toward the shore, and when they had gotten him so neare shore on the shallowe that the most part of him appeared aboue water, they drew him aland and hewed him in pieces, euery one taking thereof what pleased them, which was to vs a strange sight. It is reported that the Indians of Terra Florida vse the like fishing for the Whale. Our men might haue taken some part thereof, but refused it: the pieces thereof were so like larde or fat bacon.

The Bay of
Antogil.

From thence we made toward the great Bay of Antogil and anchored vnder the Island, where wee tooke in fresh water.

Our Indians that were brought from thence by them of the former voiage (the names of whome were Madagascar the one, and the other Laurence) wee offered to set there on land, but they refused, chusing rather to tarry with vs and to be apparelled, then to go naked in their owne country: working and moyling for a miserable liuing, opposing their bare skins to the vehemeny of the sunne and weather: and their excuse was, that in that place they were strangers and had none acquaintance.

How long their
here continued
good.

Our beere continued good vntill we were passed the Cape de bona speranza: from thence we began to mingle it with water hauing a portion of wine allowed vs twice a day, and this allowance continued vntill our returne into Holland.

We

We went with our boates vp the riuier seeking refreshing: but the Inhabitants gaue vs to vnderstand by signes that wee might returne, for there was nothing to be had. Wee rowed into the riuier about three leagues, and found their report to bee true. The cause was, that the Kings made warre there one against an other, and so all the victuals were in manner destroyed, insomuch that the Inhabitants themselues many of them perished for hunger, and in one of these battailes one of their Kings was lately slaine. Wherefore after fīue daies abode and no longer, we departed, & in Gods name made to sea again, directing our course the sixteenth of September for Iaua. About the nineteenth of Nouember we came within sight of Sumatra, and the 26. of the same moneth 1598. wee in the three shippes aforesaid, to wit, the Mauritius, our Admirall, the Hollandia, and the Ouerissell, arriued before the citty of Bantam in Iaua. Presently vpon this our arriual, our Admirall and Generall Master Iacob van Neck, sought with all friendship to traffique with the people of the saide towne of Bantam, sending Master Cornelis Heemskerck on land to shew them what we were, for they thought vs to be the very same men that had been there the yeare before, and al that while guarded the sea coast, as being assuredly persuaded that we were pirates and sea rōuers. But we, to make them vnderstand the contrary, sent on lande one Abdoll of China, a captiue of theirs, whom we brought from them in our first voyage; by whose meanes we got audience and credite: and so we presented our gifts and presents to the King, which was but a childe: and the chiefe gouernour called Cephat, hauing the kingly authority, most thankfully receiued the same in the name of his King. The said presents were a faire couered cup of siluer and gilt, certaine veluets and clothes of silke, with very fine drinking glasses and excellent looking glasses, and such other gifts more. Likewise we presented our letters sealed very costly with the great seale of the noble & mighty lords the Estates generall of the united Prouinces, and of Prince Mauritz, whome they termed their Prince. Which letters were by them receiued with great reuerence, creeping vpon their knees: and (the same being well perused, read and examined) they found thereby our honest intent and determination for traffike: insomuch that a mutuall league of friendship and alliance was concluded, and we were freely licensed to trade and traffike in such wise, that euen the fourth day of our arriual we began to lade; and within foure or fīue weekes all our foure ships hauing taken in their full freight, were ready to depart.

When our three shippes aforesaid had remained there welnigh a moneth, about Newyears-tide arriued the other fīue shippes of our company before mentioned in very good manner, and well conditioned. And so our whole flecte of eight ships ioyfully met together, and had none or very fewe sicke persons among them, hauing lost by death in the whole flecte but 35. men in all, of which number some perished through their owne negligence. Vpon this happy meeting wee displayed our flags, streamers and ensignes after the brauest manner, honouring and greeting one another with volleies of shot, making good cheere, and (which was no small matter) growing more deeply in fauour with the townsmen of Bantam. Vnto vs were daily brought aboard in Prauwes or Indian boats great quantity of hens, eggs, Cocos, bonanos, sugar-canes, cakes, made of rice, and a certaine kinde of good drinke which is there made by the men of China. Thus the people daily bartered with vs for pewter and other wares, giuing so much victuals for a pewter spoone, as might well suffice one man for an whole weeke. Wee trucked likewise for diuers other things, as for porcellan dishes and such like. Howbeit, that which our Indian Abdoll declared (namely, that more ships were comming besides the three aforesaid, and that others beside them also were sent out of Zeland) little tended to our commodity: for thereupon the Iauans tooke occasion to inhance the price of their pepper, insomuch that we were forced to pay for 55. pounds of pepper first three, and afterward four Reals of eight: neither did they demand or call for any thing so much as for the said Reals of eight. Mercery or haberdashers wares were in no such request as money. Also we much marueiled, how the Iauans should tell vs of more shippes to come, making signes with their foure fingers and thumb, that foure Lyma (which word in their language signififieth shippes) were comming.

And here you are to vnderstand, that our Generall Master Van Neck, together with the commis-

They arriue at
Bantam.

They present
their letters and
gifts.

Trade licensed.

The whole
fleet meet before
Bantam.

The price of
pepper inhanced.

Four ships
laden.

Their departure
from Iava the
13. of January
1599.

Sasemolonke a
notable mar-
chant of Ban-
tam.

The four other
ships sent to the
Moluccas.

A man left on
Land at Saint
Helena.

commissaries or factors, thought good, besides the three forsaide ships that came first, to lade one other, to wit, the greater pinnasse called Frisland, whereof was Master Iacob Cornelison, and factor Walter Willekens. These foure ships hauing receiued their ful freight, and giuen notice on land of their departure (to the end that none of their creditours might bee vnpaid) and also hauing well provided themselves of rice and water, departed the thirteenth of January 1599. and sayled to Sumatra, where they tooke in fresh water; for that the water of Bantam first waxeth white, and afterward crawleth full of magots.

Vpon the land of Sumatra we bartered kniues, spoones, looking-glasses, bels, needles and such like, for sundry fruits, to wit, melons, cucumbers, onions, garlike, and pepper though little in quantity, yet exceeding good.

We had to deale with a notable Merchant of Bantam, named Sasemolonke, whose father was a Castilian, which sold vs not much lesse then an hundreth last of pepper. He was most desirous to haue trauced with vs into Holland: but misdoubting the displeasure and euil will of the king, and fearing least his goods might haue bin confiscated, he durst not aduenture vpon the voiage.

Certaine daies before our departure from Bantam were the other foure shippes dispatched to go for the Moluccas, and ouer them was appointed as Admirall and Generall Master Wybrant van Warwicke in the shippe called Amsterdam, & Iacob Heemskerck Viceadmirall in the shippe Gelderland, the other two shippes in consort with them being Zeland and Vtrecht before mentioned.

These foure made saile towards the Moluccas, and parted from vs the 8. of January in the night, and in taking of our leaues both of vs together, made such a terrible thundering noise with our ordinance, that the townsmen were vp in alarme, vntill they knewe the reason thereof. The people were glad of their departure, hauing some mistrust of vs, remaining there so strong with 8. ships. And they asked daily when wee should depart, making great speed to help vs vnto our lading, and shewing themselves most seruicable vnto vs.

The 11. of January 1599. we in the foure shippes laden with pepper departed from Bantam homeward. The 13. we arriued at Sumatra. The 19. we shaped our course directly for Holland. The 3. of April we had sight of Capo de buona speranza. The 8. of Aprill we doubled the said Cape, proceeding on for the Isle of Saint Helena, whither we came the twenty sixt of the same moneth, and there refreshed our selues for the space of eight daies.

In this Island we found a church with certaine boothes or tents in it, and the image of Saint Helena, as likewise a holy water fat, and a sprinkle to cast or sprinkle y^e holy water: but we left all things in as good order as we found them.

Moreouer here we left behinde vs some remembrances in writing, in token of our being there. At this place died of the bloody flixe, the Pilot of our Admirall Kees Collen of Munickendam, a worthy man, to our great griefe.

This Island (as Iohn Huighen van Linschotten describeth it) is replenished with manifold commodities, as namely with goates, wilde swine, Turkies, partridges, pidgeons, &c. But by reason that those which arriue there vse to discharge their ordinance, and to hunt and pursue the saide beastes and fowles, they are now growen exceeding wilde and hard to be come by. Certaine goates whereat we shotte fled vp to the high cliffes, so that it was impossible to get them. Likewise fishes wee could not catch so many as wee needed; but wee tooke in fresh water enough to serue vs till our arriual in Holland.

Here we left on land as a man banished out of our society, one Peter Gisbrecht the masters mate of the great pinnasse, because hee had stroken the Master.

Very penitent hee was and sorie for his misdemeanour, and all of vs did our best endeavour to obtain his pardon: but (the orders and ordinances whereunto our whole company was sworne being read before vs) we were constrained to surcease our importunate suit, and he for the example of others to vndergo the seuer doome that was allotted him.

There was deliuered vnto him a certaine quantity of bread, oile, and rice, with hookes and instruments to fish withall, as also a hand gun and gunpowder.

Hercupon we bad him generally farewell, beseeching God to keepe and preserue him from

from misfortunes, and hoping that at some one time or other he should finde deliuerance; for that all shippes sailing to the West Indies must there of necessity refresh themselves.

Not far from this place we descried a saile which wee iudged to be some Frenchman, by whom peradventure the saide banished party might bee deliuered.

The fourth of May we set saile from Saint Helena, and the tenth of the same moneth wee passed by the Isle of Ascension. The 17. day wee passed the line. The 21. we sawe the Pole-starre. The 10. and 11. of Iune we had sight of the Canaries. About the Azores wee stood in feare to meeete with some Spanish Armada, because our men were growen faint and feeble by reason of their long voiage. The 27. of Iune we entered the Spanish sea. The 29. we found our selues to be in fortie foure degrees of northerly latitude. The 6. of Iuly our Admirall & Mauritius had two of his mastes blowne ouerboard; for which cause we were constrained to towne him along. The 11. of Iuly wee passed the Sorlings. The 13. we sayled by Falmouth, Dartmouth, and the Quasquets. The 17. we passed by Douer. The 19. meeting with some stormes and rainy weather we arriued at Texell in our owne native country, without any great misfortune, saue that the Mauritius once stroke on ground.

Thus having attained to our wished home, we gaue God thanks for this our so happy and prosperous voiage: because there neuer arriued in Holland any shippes so richly laden.

Of pepper we brought eight hundreth tunnes, of Cloues two hundreth, besides great quantity of Mace, Nutmegs, Cinamom, and other principall commodities. To conclude this voiage was performed in one yeare, two monethes, and nineteene daies.

We were sailing outward from Texell to Bantam seuen moneths, we remained there sixe weekes to take in our lading, and in six moneths we returned from Bantam in Iaua to Holland.

The performance of this long and daungerous voiage in so short time we ascribed to Gods deuine & wonderfull providence, hauing sailed at the least 8000. leagues, that is to say, twenty four thousand English miles.

The ioye of the safe arriual of these shippes in Holland was exceeding great: and postes were dispatched to euery principall towne and city to publish these acceptable newes.

The merchants that were owners of these ships went straight toward Texell for the refreshing of their men, and for other necessary considerations. The Commissary or Factor master: Cornelis Heemskerck together with Cornelis Knick, hied them with all speed towardes the Estates generall and prince Mauritz his excellency, not onely to carry the saide good newes, but withal to present the letters of the King of Iaua importing mutuall alliance, friendship and free intercourse of traffike in consideration of their honourable, liberal, and iust dealings: they brought gifts also from the said King of great price and value.

The 27. of Iuly the Mauritius our Admirall together with the Hollandia came before Amsterdam: where they were ioyfully saluted with the sound of eight trumpettes, with banqueting, with ringing of bells, and with peales of ordinance, the Generall and other men of command being honourably receiued and welcommed by the city.

The merchants that aduentured in these voyages being in number sixteene or seauenteene (notwithstanding the foure shippes gone from Iaua to the Moluccas, as is before mentioned) haue sent this last spring 1599. foure ships more to continue this their traffique so happily begun: intending moreouer the next spring to send a newe supply of other ships. And diuers other Marchants are likewise determined to enter into the same action.

Of them that departed from Zeland these bring no newes, otherwise then is aforesaide. Neither doe they report any thing of the two fleetes or companies, that went from Rotterdam the last sommer 1598. shaping their course for the streites of Magellan.

Wee haue before made mention of an Indian called Abdoll, which was brought from Bantam in the first voiage, and had continued an whole winter, or some eight monethes at Amsterdam in Holland.

Where during that space (being a man of good obseruation and experience, and borne about China) hee was well entreated, cherished, and much made of.

This Abdoll vpon his returne to Iaua being demanded concerning the state of the Netherlands,

The Isle of Ascension.

The particulars of their rich lading.

Friendly letters and presents from the King of Iaua.

A new supply of foure Hollandish ships sent this last spring 1599. to the East Indes.

An intent of the marchants of Amsterdam to send more ships the next spring 1600.

The relation of Abdoll an In-

dian, concerning
the Netherlands.

therlands, made vnto the principall men of Bantam a full declaration thereof, with all the rarities and singularities which he had there seene and obserued.

Which albeit to the greatest part of readers, who haue traauailed those countries may seeme nothing strange, and scarce worthy the relation: yet because the report was made by so meere a stranger, & with the Iauans that heard it wrought so good effect, I thought it not altogether impertinent here in this place to make rehearsall thereof.

First therefore he tolde them (to their great admiration in that hoat climate) That hee had seene aboue a thousand sleds drawen, and great numbers of horsemen riding vpon the frozen water in winter time, and that he had beheld more then two hundreth thousand people traauailing on foote and on horseback vpon the yce, as likewise that the said sleds were by horses drawen so swiftly, that they made more way in three houres than any man could go on foote in tenne. And also that himselfe for pleasure had beene so drawen, the horses being brauely adorned with bells and cymbals.

Howbeit they would hardly be induced to beleue that those countries should be so extremely colde, and the waters so mightely frozen, as to beare such an huge waight.

Hee tolde them moreover, that Holland was a free cuntry, and that euery man there was his owne Master, and that there was not one slaue or captiue in the whole land.

Moreover, that the houses, in regarde of their beautifull and lofty building, resembled stately pallaces, their inward rich furniture being altogether answerable to their outward glorious shew.

Also, that the Churches (which he called Mesquitas) were of such bignes and capacity, as they might receiue the people of any pretie towne.

He affirmed likewise, that the Hollanders with the assistance of their confederates and friendes, maintained warres against the King of Spaine, whose mighty puissance is feared and redoubted of all the potentates of Europa.

And albeit the said warres had continued aboue thirty yeares, yet that during all that time the said Hollanders increased both in might & wealth.

In like sort he informed them of the strange situation of Holland, as being a cuntry driuing vpon the water, the earth or ground whereof, they vse instead of fowell, and that he had oft times warmed himselfe, and had seene meat dressed with fires made of the same earth.

In brieft, that it was a waterish and fenny cuntry, and full of riuers, chanel, and ditches, and that therein was an innumerable multitude of boates and small shippes, as likewise great store of tall and seruiceable ships, wherwith they sailed vnto all quarters of the world, etc.

This man Abdoll wee found to bee a captiue or slaue, and sawe there his wife and children in very poore estate dwelling in a little cottage not so bigge as an hogsty: but by oure meanes he was made free and well rewarded.

Notwithstanding he did but euil recompence vs: for he was charged to be the cause why pepper was solde dearer then ordinary vnto vs by a penny in the pounce: for hee tolde them that certaine shippes of Zeland and of other places were comming thitherwardes.

And here the reader is to vnderstand, that some foure moneths before the said three ships arriued at Bantam, the Portugales came with an Armada of gallies and fustes, being set fourth by the Viceroy of Goa and the gouernour of Molucca, to intercept the traffique of the Hollanders vnto those partes, and to make them loose all their expenses, labour, and time which they had bestowed: and also that their great and rich presentes which they gaue vnto the Iauans the yeare before, to bring them into vtter detestation of the Hollanders, might not be altogether in vaine.

The Generall of them that came from Goa was Don Luis, and of those that came from Molucca Don Emanuell, who brought their Armada before Bantam, intending to surprize the city, vnder pretence that the same preparation was made to resist certaine pirates that came thither out of Holland the last yeare, and were determined this yeare also to come againe. Vnder these colours they sought to take the towne and to fortifie the same, & they

The Portugals
go about to hin-
der the trade of
the Hollanders.

a Vo
they
men
uide
they
Port
gales
like
V
ther
to au
tugal
traffid
Th
comp
other
vnder
name
wicke
twent
Th
as all
reple
very
luory
with.
For
leauin
water.
little
bay,
this p
or Wa
piniay
Wallo
Of
meate,
reason
the sig
Her
enough
Tort
and on
Her
(as it
printe
out of
The
dropp
new p
The
We
of Inha
Vpo
VOL

they built certaine sconces in the countrey, committing great outrages, rauishing the Women, with many other villanies. Hereupon the townsmen of Bantam very secretly provided certaine gallies and fustes in great hast, and sodainly assailed the Portugales before they were well aware of them: for which cause finding but small resistance, they tooke 3. Portugale gallies with certaine shippes, and slewe about 300. of them, taking 150 Portugales prisoners, of which we daily saw some going vp & downe the streetes of Bantam like slaues and captiues. Besides these they tooke about 900. galli-slaues prisoners.

The Portugals
vanquished.

Vpon this hard successe the rest of the Portugals betooke themselves to flight: but whether they bee arriued at Goa or Molucca, or what is become of them since, we are not able to auouch. The foresaid attempt and ouerthrowe, bred greater enmity betwene the Portugales and them of Bantam, and gaue an especiall occasion for the aduancement of our traffique.

The five ships (whereof we haue before signified that foure were dispatched by the whole companie for the Moluccas) being seuered beyonde the Cape of Buona Speranza from the other three of their company, and hauing quite lost them, came all of them shortly after vnder an Island called (as it is thought) by the Portugals Isola de Don Galopes: but they named it the Island of Mauritius. Here they entered into an haven, calling the same Warwickie, after the name of their Viceadmirall, wherein they found very good harborow in twenty degrees of southerly latitude.

The course
which the five
ships tooke after
they were sepa-
rated from their
three comarts
about the Cape
of buona espe-
ranza.

This Island being situate to the East of Madagascar, and containing as much in compasse as all Holland, is a very high, goodly and pleasant land, full of green & fruitfull vallies, and replenished with Palmito-trees, from the which droppeth holesome wine. Likewise here are very many trees of right Ebenwood as black as iet, and as smooth & hard as the very luory: and the quantity of this wood is so exceeding, that many ships may be laden herewith.

The Isle of
Mauritius de-
scribed.

Great store of
Ebenwood.

For to saile into this haven you must bring the two highest mountaines one ouer the other, leauing sixe small Islands on your right hand, and so you may enter in vpon 30. fadomes of water. Lying win the bay, they had 10. 12. & 14. fadoms. On their left had was a litle Island which they named Hemskerk Island, and the bay it selfe they called Warwick bay, as is before mentioned. Here they taried 12. daies to refresh themselves, finding in this place great quantity of foules twice as bigge as swans, which they called Walghstocks or Wallowbirdes being very good meat. But finding also abundance of pidgeons & popiniayes, they disdained any more to eat of those great foules, calling them (as before) Wallowbirds, that is to say, lothsome or fulsome birdes.

Of the said Pidgeons and Popiniayes they found great plenty being very fat and good meate, which they could easily take and kil euen with little stickes: so tame they are by reason the Isle is not inhabited, neither be the liuing creatures therein accustomed to the sight of men.

Here they found rauens also, and such abundance of fish, that two men were able to catch enough for all five ships.

Tortoises they founde so huge, that tenne men might sit and dine in one of their shelles, and one of them would creepe away, while two men stood vpon the backe thereof.

Huge Tortoises.

Here was founde waxe also whiter then any of ours, lying about the strande, bleached (as it is like) by the sunne: and in some of this waxe there were Arabian letters or characters printed: wherby it is probable, that some Arabian ship might bee cast away thereabout, out of which the said waxe might be driuen on land.

They found likewise Corall on this land, and many trees which we call Palmitos, whereout droppeth wine as out of the Coco-tree: which wine being kept hath his operation as our new prest wine, but after some time it commeth vnto the ful vertue and perfection.

Corall.
Palmitos.

The said Palmitos they esteemed to bee a kinde of wilde date-trees.

We sought all the Island ouer for men, but could find none, for that it was wholly destitute of Inhabitants.

Vpon this Island we built an house with a pulpit therein, and left behind vs certaine

writings as a token and remembrance of our being there, and vpon the pulpit we left a Bible and a psalter lying.

A good watering
place.

Thus after 12. daies aboard at this Island, being well refreshed, they tooke in excellent fresh water being easie to get, and very sweet and sauory to drinke, and then set saile, meeting the three other ships their consorts at the time and place before mentioned.

A brieve description of the voiage before handled, in manner of a Iournall.

MAIE.

The first of Maie 1598. with the eight shippes before mentioned, we set saile in the name of God from Texell in Holland.

The third of May we passed along the coast of England, descryng some of her Maiesties ships, and they vs, whom we honoured with discharge of our artillery.

The fourteenth, we had sight of the Isle of Porto Santo lying in thirty two degrees.

The sixteenth, wee came within sight of the Canaries.

The twenty two, we first saw flying fishes.

The twenty three, we passed by the Isle Dell Sall.

The thirty one, we had a great storme, so that we lost sight one of another: but by night we came together againe.

IVNE.

The eighth of Iune wee crossed the Equinoctiall line.

The twenty foure wee sayled by the sholdes of Brasile lying vnder eightene degrees of Southerly Latitude.

IVLIE.

The twenty one of Iuly we got to the height of the Cape of buona esperanza.

From the thirtieth of Iuly till the second of August, we continually sayled in sight of the land of the foresaid Cape.

AVGUST.

The seuenth and eighth of August wee had such foule and stormy weather, that fise ships of our company were separated from vs, whom we saw no more vntill they came to vs before Bantam.

The twenty sixt we descryed the Island of Madagascar.

The twenty nine came by us the ship called the Long barke of Zeland, hauing in her but nine sound men, tenne dead, and the rest all sicke: but the same night we lost the sight of her againe.

SEPTEMBER.

The seauenth of September, we came before the Island of Santa Maria, and afterward wee put into the great bay of Antogill.

The sixteenth of September, wee set saile from thence, directing our course for Iaua.

OCTOBER.

The first of October, wee got to the heighth of Bantam.

The fifteenth, died the first man in our Admirall.

NOVEMBER.

The nineteenth of Nouember, we came within sight of Sumatra.

The twenty ninth, wee road before the city of Bantam: And the thirtieth, we payed our toll to the gouernour.

AND

IANVARIE.

AND vpon Newyeares daie 1599. Stilo Nouo, we began to take in our lading.

Then came vnto vs before Bantam, with great ioie and triumph, our fiue separated shippes, all the people standing vpon the shore gazing, and suspecting some harme intended against them.

The eighth of Ianuary, foure of the said 5. newcome shippes (God send them a prosperous voyage) set saile toward the Moluccas.

Moreouer our foure shippes being well and richly laden at Bantam made saile homewarde the eleuenth of Ianuary, and the thirteenth, wee were shot as farre as the Isles of Sumatra.

The nineteent, we proceeded thence on our voiage, and the same day, to the great griefe of vs all died the Pilot of our Admirall.

APRILL.

THE third of Aprill, we descried the land of Capo de buona esperanza.

The eighth, wee doubled the same Cape, thence shaping our course for the Island of Saint Helena, where the twenty sixt we happily arriued, and departed from thence vpon the fourth of Maie.

MAIE.

THE tenth of Maie, wee sailed by the Isle of Ascension.

The seauenteenth, we passed the Equinoctiall line.

The twenty one, we saw the North starre.

IUNE.

THE ninth and tenth of Iune, we had sight of the Canaries.

The twenty seauen, wee sayled vpon the Spanish Sea.

The twenty nine, we were in fortie four degrees.

IULIE.

THE fourth of Iuly, we saw behind vs two sailes, one before the other, which were the first that we had seene of a long time.

The sixt of Iuly our Admirall had both his foremast and maine-mast blowne ouer board.

The eleuenth, we passed the Sorlings, the thirteenth, Falmouth, Plimmouth and the Quasquets.

The seauenteenth, we came before Douer.

The nineteent, wee had foule and stormy weather, at what time by Gods good blessing wee arriued in our natiue country at Texell in Holland, hauing performed in the short space of one yeare, two moneths and nineteene daies, almost as long a voiage, as if we should haue compassed the globe of the earth, and bringing home with vs our full freight of rich and gainfull Marchandize.

FINIS.

ST

DET

WH
P

NOV

AND

NEWES

FROM THE

EAST INDIES:

OR A

VOYAGE TO BENGALLA,

ONE OF THE GREATEST KINGDOMES UNDER THE HIGH AND MIGHTY PRINCE
PEDESHA SHASSALLEM,

USUALLY CALLED

THE GREAT MOGULL.

WITH THE

STATE AND MAGNIFICENCE OF THE COURT OF MALCANDY, KEPT BY THE NABOB
VICEROY, OR VICE-KING UNDER THE AFORESAYD MONARCH:

ALSO THEIR

DETESTABLE RELIGION, MAD AND FOPPISH RITES, AND CEREMONIES, AND WICKED
SACRIFICES AND IMPIOUS CUSTOMES USED IN THOSE PARTS.

WRITTEN BY WILLIAM BRUTON

NOW RESIDENT IN THE PARISH OF S. SAVIOURS SOUTHWARK,

WHO WAS AN EYE AND EARE WITNESSE OF THESE FOLLOWING DESCRIPTIONS; AND
PUBLISHED AS HE COLLECTED THEM BEING RESIDENT THERE DIVERS YEARES:

AND

NOW LATELY COME HOME IN THE GOOD SHIP CALLED THE HOPEWEL OF LONDON:

WITH

DIVERS MERCHANTS OF GOOD ACCOUNT

WHICH

ARE ABLE TO TESTIFIE THE SAME FOR TRUTH.

IMPRINTED AT LONDON BY I. OKES,

AND ARE TO BE SOLD BY HUMPHREY BLUNDEN AT HIS SHOP IN CORNE-HILL AT THE SIGNE OF THE
CASTLE NEERE THE ROYALL EXCHANGE 1638.

A
with
Ter
Pro
sitic
Tho
Ort
scri
Wil
felo
Rem
gett
and
des
feet
B
still
that
I ha
per
goo
T
from
of 2

A
RARE AND MOST STRANGE RELATION

FROM

BENGALLA IN THE EAST INDIES,

BEING

ONE OF THE GREATEST KINGDOMES UNDER THE GREAT MOGULL,

AND

OF THEIR LAWES, MANNERS, AND CUSTOMES &c.

Although diuers learned, painefull, and skilfull Mathematicians and Geographers haue with great industry spent much profitable Time, in finding out the circumference of the Terrestrial Globe, in describing Empires, Kingdomes, Principalities, Lordships, Regions, Prouinces, Territories, Variations of Climates & Scituations, with the diuersities of Dispositions, of Tongues, Religions, Habits, Manners, Lawes, and Customes of sundry Nations: Though much labour, perill, and Cost hath beene worthily imploy'd by Pliny the Second, Ortellius, Iodoco Hondius; or (to come nearer) to our English Worthies, such as are described in the Booke of Hacklewicks Voyages, namely, Windham, Chancelour, Grinwill Willouby, Drake, Cauendish, Gilbert, Chidly, Frobusher, Clifford, Sidney, Deuoreux, Wingfield; as also the exceeding paines taken by Mr. Samuel Purchase, and the Learned and Renowned Knight Sir Walter Rawleigh in their descriptions of the whole World, not forgetting the perills that Mr. Sands passed in his tedious Trauells, with his exact Relations and Descriptions: With Atlas new Imprinted (a rare Worke) and lastly, William Lithgow deserues a kind Remembrance of his nineteene yeeres sore and dangerous Trauells of his feete & pen, worthy your obseruation and Reading.

But all these Authors and Actors both of History and Trauell, did neuer discouer all, but still (out of their plentifull Haruests of Obseruations) they left some Gleanings for those that came after them to gather. For the manifestation whereof in this following discourse, I haue tyed and bound my selfe to speake onely Truth, though it seeme incredulous or Hyperbolicall; and if I should any way sway or stray from the Truth, there are liuing men of good Fame, Worth and Estimation, who are able & ready to disproue me.

Therefore briefly to the matter in hand; I William Bruton was shipp'd as a Quartermaster, from the Port of London, to serue in the good Ship called the Hope-well, of the Burthen of 240 Tunnes. To relate our long & tedious passage by Sea, and our arriual at euery Port
and

and Hauen were but little to the purpose, & would more tire than delight my Reader: Therefore to begin, that after my Arriual in those parts, & in my seruices and passages there fore the space of 7 yeeres, I obserued many things, and put them in writing; but afterwards I came to know that the same things had beene discover'd and described formerly by more sufficient & able men of Capacity than my selfe, I thought good to keep them to my selfe, and discover nothing but that which before was not so fully or scarce knowne as I shall now decypher them.

The 22. of March, 1632. I being in the Countrey of Cormandell with sixe Englishmen more at a place called Massalupatam, (a great Towne of Merchandize) Master Iohn Noris, the Agent there, was resolved to send two Merchants into Bengalla, for the settling of a Factory there, and these sixe Englishmen (of the which I was one) were to goe with the Merchants, and withall to carry a present from the Agent to the Nabob, (or King) of that Countrey, to obtaine the Promises that formerly hee had granted to the English for Traffick, & to be Custome free in those of his Dominions and Ports. Wherefore a Iunke was hired at Massalupatam to be our Conuoy; the said Iunke did belong vnto those parts & the Names of the Englishmen that were appointed for that Voyage, were Mr. Ralph Cartwright Merchant, Mr. Thomas Colley second, William Bruton, Iohn Dobson, Edward Peteford, Iohn Bassley, Iohn Ward, & William Withall.

Though we hired the aforesaid Iunke, March 22. yet it was the 6. of Aprill following before we could be fitted to depart from Massalupatam, and in much various Weather with many difficulties and dangers, (which to relate here, would be tedious & impertinent to my intended discourse) the 21. of Aprill, being then Easter-day, we were at Anchor in a Bay before a Towne called Harssapoore: It is a place of good strength, with whom our Merchants doe hold commerce with correspondency. This 21. day in the morning, Mr. Ralph Cartwright sent the Moneys a shore to the Gouvernour of Harssapoore, to take it into his safe keeping & protection till such time as he came a shore himselfe. So presently there came a Portugall Friggat fiercely in hostility towards vs, but we made ready for their entertainment, & fitted ourselves & the Vessel for our best defences: but at last they steered off from us, & vpon our command shee came to an Anchor somewhat neare vs, & the Master of her came aboard of vs, who being examined whence he came, & whither he was bound to which demands he answer'd nothing worthy of beleefe, as the sequel shewed; for hee seem'd a friendly Trader, but was indeed a false Inuader, (where opportunity and power might helpe and preuaile) for on the 22. day Mr. Cartwright went a shore to the Gouvernour of Harssapoore, & on the 24. day the said Master of the Frigat (with the Assistance of some of the ribble rabble Rascalls of the Towne) did set vpon Mr. Cartwright and Mr. Colley, where our men (being oprest by multitudes) had like to haue beene all slaine or spoyld, but that (Lucklip) the Rogger (or Vice King there) rescued them with 200. men.

In this fray Mr. Colley was sore hurt in one of his hands, and one of our men much wounded in the legge and head; their Nockado or India Pilot was stab'd in the Groyne twice, and much mischief was done, & more pretended, but by Gods helpe all was pacified.

The 27. of April we three tooke leaue of the Gouvernour, and Towne of Harssapoore, (I meane three of vs) namely, Mr. Cartwright, William Bruton, and Iohn Dobson; leauing Mr. Colley & the other foure men with him, till newes could be sent backe to them from the Nabobs Court, at Cutteke or Malcander, of our successe and proceedings there with our other goods, for he is no wise Merchant, that ventures too much in one bottome, or that is too credulous to trust Mahometanes or Infidels.

And hauing laden our small Boats with the goods (which were Gold, Siluer, Cloth and Spices, of which Spices those parts of India, are wanting, and they almost are as deare there as in England) we passed some two Leagues and halfe by Water, & after that, the said goods was carried by land in Carts, till wee came to a great Towne called Balkkada, but it was more than three houres after Sunne-setting, or late before we came thither.

The 28. of April in the morning, the Gouvernour of this Towne came & saluted our Merchant, & promised him that whatsoever was in his power to doe him any friendly courtesie, he

ader: There-
ges there fore
ut afterwards
erly by more
t to my selfe,
as I shall now

Englishmen
r John Noris,
settling of a
goe with the
(King) of that
for Traffick,
ake was hired
& the Names
wright Mer-
eteford, John

owing before
with many
my intended
Bay before a
ants doe hold
twright sent
keeping &
e Portugall
ent, & fitted
us, & vpon
came aboard
demands he
ndly Trader,
nd preuaile)
e, & on the
bble rabble
men (being
ucklip) the

ch wounded
twice, and
d.
arpoore, (I
on; leauing
them from
re with our
e, or that is

Cloth and
deare there
said goods
it was more

d our Mer-
courtesie,
he

he should command it; and indeed he was euery way as good as his word; for hee lent vs Horses to ride on, and Cowlers (which are Porters) to carry our goods, for at this Towne the Carts did leaue vs, & our goods were carried on Mens shoulders: then we set forwards, being accompanied by the Gouvernour, with his Musicke, which were Shalmes, & Pipes of sundry formes, much after the formes of Waits or Hoboyes, on which they play most delicately out of Tune, Time & Measure. In this manner the Gouvernour, with a great number of People did bring vs about halfe an English Mile out of the Towne, where he courteously tooke his leaue of vs, but yet he sent his seruants with vs as guides, & that they might bring his Horses back to him that he lent vnto vs.

This towne of Balkkada, is a strong & spacious thing, very populous: There are many Weauers in it, & it yeeldeth much of that Countrey fashion Cloath. This day, about the houres of betweene eleuen & twelue of the Clocke it was so extreame hot that we could not trauell, & the winde did blow with such a soultering scalding heat, as if it had come forth of an Ouen or Furnace, such a suffocating fume, did I neuer feele before or since; and here we were forced to stay neare three houres, till the Sunne was declined, we hauing happily got vnder the shadow of the branches of a great Tree all that time. Then we set forward for the Towne of Harharrapoore: which in the space of two houres, or a little more, wee drew neare vnto: so we stay'd awhile till our carriages were come vp together vnto vs; which done, there met vs a man, who told vs that his Master staid our comming, then we speedily prepared our-elues for the meeting of so high esteem'd a person: & when we came to the Townes end, there did meet vs at a great Pogodo or Pagod, which is a famous & sumptuous Temple (or Church) for their Idolatrous seruice & worship there vsed, & iust against that stately & magnificent building, we were entertained & welcomed by one of the Kings greatest Noblemen, & his most deare and chieftest fauourite, who had a Letter from the King his Master, & was sent from him to meete vs & conduct vs to his Court. The Noble mans name was Mersymomeine. He did receiue vs very kindly, & made vs a very great feast or costly colation before supper, which being done we departed for our Sirray, (or Inne) where we lay all night with our goods: but Mersymomeine staid with his followers & seruants in his & their tents at the Pagod.

The 29. day of April wee staid at Harharrapoore, & visited this great man, but the greatest cause of our staying, was by reason that the Nockador (or Pilot) of the Frigget, whose men did affront & hurt some of our men at Harssapoore, for which cause the Frigget was staid there & the Pilot of her came to this great man, thinking by gifts to cleare his Vessell. (the which he thought to make prise of) but he would not be allured by such rewards or promises; but told him that he must appeare before the Nabob, & seeke to cleare himselfe there.

The 30. of April we set forward in the Morning for the City of Coteke (it is a City of seuen miles in compasse, & it standeth a mile from Malcandy, where the Court is kept) but Master Cartwright staid behinde, & came after vs, accompanied with the said Noble man: We went all the day on our journey till the Sun went downe, & then we staid for our Merchant, being eight English Miles from Coteke, & about twelue or one of clocke at night they came where wee were: so we hasted & suddainly got all our things in readinesse, & went along with them, & about the time of three or foure of clocke in the Morning we came to the house of this Mersymomeine at Coteke, being May day.

Here we were very well entertained & had great variety of sundry sorts of meates, drinks, & fruits, such as the Countrey yeelds, euen what we could or would desire fitting for our vse. About eight of the Clocke Mersymomeine went to the Court, & made knowne to the King, that the English Merchant was come to his house, then the King caused a great banquet to be speedily prepared, & to bee sent to the house of Mersymomeine, which banquet was very good & costly. Then, about three or foure of the clocke in the afternoone, wee were sent for to the Court of Malcandy, which is not halfe a mile from Coteke. The magnificence of which Court, with the stately structure & situation of the place, as well as my weak Ap- prehension can enable, I describe as followeth.

The Court of Malcandi in Bengalla.

GOING from the house of Mersymoineine, we passed ouer a long stone Cawsey, of some two foote in breadth, & at the end thereof we entred in at a great gate, & being conducted along further, we came into a Bussar, or very faire Market place, where was sold a great number of all sorts of Fruits, Hearbes, Flesh, Fish, Fowle, Rice, & such like needfull commodities & necessaries as the Countrey yeelded, (which is very fertile.) Hauing passed this place, we did enter in at a second gate, where was a guard of some fifty armed men, & so we came into a place all paved with great stones, or as it may fitter be called, a faire & spacious streete, where Merchants seated on both sides the way, were buying & selling all kind of their own and forraigne wares & merchandizes that was very rich and costly.

Passing this place we entred in at a third Gate, where was another Guard of one hundred men armed: By this gate was a great Pogodo or Pagod, which ioyned to the Southermost part of the King's house. In this streete there were houses but one side of the way, for on that side that the King's house was on, there was no other House but that. Then we came to a fourth Gate, which was very spacious & high, & had two lofty stories one above the other, & vpheld by mighty Pillars of gray Marble, most curiously caru'd & polish'd: At this Gate was a great guard of 150. Men or more, all armed.

Going through this Gate, we entred into a very great broad place or streete, (much of the breadth of the streete betweene Charing Crosse & White-Hall or broader, & no dwelling in it; here we passed the wall of the King's House, or Palace, till we came to the Court Gate.

In this broad street are euery day 1000. Horses in readinesse for the Kings vse; (for he hath alwaies 3000. at an houres warning, in the two Townes of Coteke & Malcandy; whereof 1000. alwaies waiteth at the King's Gate, & so by turnes doe all the rest attend as their places & seruices require.

Ouer against the Gate of the House is a very great house of Timber, whose Chambers are made with Galleries, built & supported with great Arches to vphold the Roofe: In these Galleries there were men that played on all kind of loud Instruments, euery morning they beganne to play at foure of the Clocke, & gaue ouer at eight.

On the North side of the Gate is a small Tower, builded with two hollow Arches, wherein are placed two mighty Images of stone, with great Pipes of Iron placed in their breasts & by deuices in the lower roomes, they doe make fire & water to flash & spout out of those Pipes on Festiuall dayes. On the South side of the Gate there standeth a great Elephant, artificially wrought of gray Marble, but for what vse I know not.

At the entrance into the Pallace Gate, we passed through a Guard of 150. men armed, the Pillars within were all of gray Marble, carued three stories one above the other. The outward Court was paved all with rough hewne Marble. On the South side of the Pallace were houses wherein were men, cunning workers in rich workes, employed onely for the King's vse and seruice.

On the North side (in the Pallace) a faire fabrick builded, wherein was erected two stately Tombes, who were founded by one Backarcaune,—he was Nabob, & predecessour to this Nabob now gouerning: & at the East end of the Pallace there was a faire place made and paved with broad gray Marble, & curiously railed about, the Rayles being foure foote & halfe high from the ground, & a very faire Tanke, which is a square pit paved with gray Marble, with a Pipe in the Midst of it, whose water descended betweene two Walls, with the formes of Fishes of sundry sorts, carued in stone very artificially, as if they had beene swimming or gliding up the Wall against the streame.

At this East end there was also a second Gate where was a guard of 100. men armed; here stood also men that did keepe the time of the day by obseruations of measures of Water, in this manner following: First they take a great Pot of Water of the quantity of three Gallons, & putting therein a little pot of somewhat more than halfe a pinte (this lesser pot hauing a small

or a

small
on a
atroak
makeThe
them
of a
plante
this p
two h
broug
in theof —
was an
was an
flooreThe
80. fo

Thi

nistre

with v

Banke

proce

(or th

Gentle

of the

ming

in the

galla-v

placed

or pre

the Ra

the nu

see to

him.

to the

of a C

his Sa

to kiss

King s

along

thwart

The

pound

maske

frame

presen

cause

to desi

lunkan

confer

Our

might

small hole in the bottome of it) the water issuing into it, hauing filled it, then they strike on a great plate of brasse, or very fine metal, which stroak maketh a very great sound, this stroak or parcell of time they call a Goome, the small being full they call a Gree, 8 Grees make a Par, which Par is three houres by our accompt.

They likewise do begin the day at the houre of sixe in the morning, & it is ended with them at sixe at night: here we entred into the second Pallace, which had in the midst thereof a faire & sumptuous Theatre built & about it was made small bankes, whereon were planted great varieties of fruits & flowers, very sweete to the sent, & pleasing to the sight; this place was also curiously railed in round; Then we entred into a narrow passage betweene two high stone Walls, where there was another Guard of 250. men armed: This passage brought vs to a third Gate, wherein wee entred into a third Pallace or pleasant prospect, for in the midst of it there was a very faire pauement of Marble,——square, of the largenesse of ——yardes euery way, & railed some three foot & a halfe higher then the ground, that was on the out-sides of it: it was likewise delicately rayled about. & in the midst of it there was an ascent of foure steps high, & all the roomes in it were spread or ouer-laid on the floore with rich Carpets exceeding costly.

The space betweene the outward Railes & these Roomes was about 30. foot, & the length 80. foot on the one side, but on the other side was a faire Tanke of water.

This place they called the Derbar (or place of Councell, where Law & Iustice was administered according to the custome of the Countrey, & it was likewise adorned & beautified with very pleasant Trees and Flowers, & Bankes about them with Gutters betweene the Bankes, in which Gutters water passed for the cooling & watering of them, & the water proceeded from the Tanke afore-mentioned. Here we stay'd the space of some two houres (or thereabouts) looking vp & downe, & being looked vpon by Souldiers, & such fashioned Gentlemen as the Court yeilded, (for there were more than 100. men armed, which were of the Nabobs, or Kings Priue Guard). At last the word came forth that the King was coming: then they hastened and ouer-laid the great large pauement with rich Carpets, & placed in the midst against the Railes, one fairer & richer Carpet than the rest, wrought in Bengalla-work: They likewise placed a great round pillow of red veluet on this Carpet; they placed also sixe small Pillars of Gold on the ends & sides of the rich Carpet, to hold it fast, or presse it to the ground, lest it should be raised with the Winde. They also placed vpon the Railes a Pannel of Veluet to leane on: At the last his Maiesty came accompanied with the number of 40. or 50. of his Courtiers, the most part of them were very graue men to see to: Also the Nabobs owne brother (a comely Personage) did beare the Sword before him. Then the Noble-man (Mersimomein) presented our Merchant (Mr. Ralph Cartwright) to the King, who did obedience to him, & the King very affably bended forward (in manner of a Curtsie or respect) and withal leaned his Armes on two mens shoulders, & slipped off his Sandall from his foote (for he was bare-legged) and presented his foot to our Merchant to kisse, which hee twice did refuse to doe, but at the last hee was faine to doe it: then the King sate downe, & caused our Merchant to be placed by his Brother: His Counsell sate all along by the foot-pace of the Roomes before mentioned, his brother & his Faurites sate thwart the place or pauement, euery one sitting in the fashion of a Taylor crosse-legg'd.

The Assembly being set, our Present was presented to the King, which was some twenty pounds of Cloues, twenty pounds of Mace, twenty pounds of Nutmegs, two Bolts of Damaske, halfe a Bale, or fourteene yards of Stammell-cloath, one faire Looking glasse, whose frame was gilded, one fowling piece with two locks, & one double Pistol; this was the present which the King receiud with much acceptation & content, & withall demanded the cause of our comming & our request: To whom our Merchant answered, that he was come to desire his Maiesties fauour & Licence for free Trade in his Countrey, & not to pay any lunkan (or Custome). At this request he seem'd to make a stand (and pausing a little) he conferr'd priuately with his Councell, but gaue vs no answer.

Our Merchant likewise requested that the English Merchants Trading for the East Indies might haue free Licence to come with their shipping small or great, into the Roads & Harbours

bours of his Sea-port Townes or to any Hauens or nauigable Riuers or any such place or places as shall be found fitting for the safeguard, building or repairing of the said Vessels belonging to the honourable company. And likewise to transport their goods either off or on the shoare without the let or hinderance of the Natiues of the Countrey: Likewise to haue his Licence to quoyne Moneys, Gold or Siluer, Countrey-money, & such as is currant with the Merchant.

By this Time that our Merchant had ended the relation of his Suits & cause of his coming, the Kings Minister with a loud voyce called to Prayer. Then the King speedily arose from his Seate, & all his Company went with him, & wee were dismiss till prayer was ended. When the Minister came there was a large couering spread ouer the rich Carpets; the couering was of black & white cloaths, on this they all stood, & when they kneeled, they did kneele with their faces towards the going downe of the Sun, (which is to the West.) Prayer being ended, the Assembly sate again concerning our Propositions, all other businesses were laid aside; being now the shutting in of the Euening, there came a very braue shew of lights in before the King. The foremost that came were sixe Siluer Lanthornes, vshe'd in by a very graue man, hauing in his hand a Staffe ouer-laid with Siluer, & when he came to the steps of the Pauement, he put off his shooes, & came to the Carpets, making obedience: so likewise did those that bore the sixe lanthornes; but all the other lightes, being one hundred & thirty stood round about the Railes. Then the Vsher took the lanthorne that had two lights in it, & (making obedience) lifted his armes aloft, & made an ample Oration, which being ended, they gaue all a great Salame, or kind of Reuerence with a loud voyce, & departed euery one, & placed the lights according as the seuerall offices & places did require. Here we stay'd till it was betweene eight & nine of the Clocke at Night, but nothing accomplished; onely wee had some faire promises of furtherance by some of the Courtiers: Thus wee were dismiss for that time & wee returned for our Lodging at Mersimomeins house at Coteke, accompanied with a great multitude of people, & many Lights, who much admired our kind of habit and fashion.

The second day, wee came in the After-noon againe to the court before the Nabob, which being set, there mette vs at the Derbar (or Councill-house) our old enemy the Nockada of the Frigget, who made a great complaint against vs, that wee had sought to make prize of his Vessell, & to take his goods by force, hee had likewise giuen a great gift to a Nobleman to stand his friend & speake in his behalfe.

Our Merchant pleaded likewise, that all such Vessells as did trade on the coast, & had not a Passe either from the English, Danes, or Dutch, was lawfull Prise. Hee answered that he had a Passe; our Merchant bid him produce the same before the Nabob & hee would cleare him: to which the Nabob & the whole Councill agreed: but he could shew no Passe from any of the afore-named 3. Nations, but he shew'd two Passes from (or of) the Portugals, which they call by the name of Fringes, & thus was he cast, & we had the better of him before the King and Councill.

But then stood vp the Nobleman to whom hee had giuen a reward, (who had also a little knowledge or insight in Sea-affaires) & said, what Stranger seeking a free trade, could make prize of any Vessell within any of the Sounds, Seas, Roads or Harbours of his Maisties Dominions? This he spake not so much for the good of the King, but thinking and hoping that the Vessell by his meanes should haue beene clear'd with all her goods & the Nockado (or Pilot) acquitted, that so by those meanes hee might haue gained the more & greater rewards; but hee was quite deceiued in his vaine expectation. For the Nabob perceiuing that shee belonged to Pyplye, a Port-Towne of the Portugals, whom the Nabob affects not, where the Portugals were resident, & that shee was not bound for any of his Ports, hee made short worke with the matter, & put vs all out of strife presently, for hee confiscated both vessell & goods all to himselfe. Whereby the Nobleman was put by his hopes, who was indeed a Gouverneur of a great Sea-towne, whereto much Shipping did belong, & many ships & other Vessels were builded. Our Merchant seeing that hee could not make prize of the Vessell or the goods, nor haue any satisfaction for the wrongs which he & our men had re-

ceiued,

such place or
said Vessels be-
either off or on
ewise to haue
is currant with

se of his com-
speedily arose
ill prayer was
the rich Car-
& when they
Sun, (which is
our Proposi-
f the Euening,
most that came
is hand a Staffe
off his shooes,
the sixe lan-
out the Railes.
edience) lifted
all a great Sa-
ced the lights
was betweene
had some faire
or that time &
d with a great
and fashion,
the Nabob, which
the Nockada of
make prize of
to a Nobleman

ast, & had not
answered that he
e would cleare
no Passe from
the Portugals,
better of him

ad also a little
de, could make
e Maisties Do-
g and hoping
the Nockada
& greater re-
ob perceiuing
ob affects not,
orts, hee made
nfiscated both
s, who was in-
& many ships
prize of the
men had re-
ceiued,

or a Voyage to Bengalla.

TRAFFIQUES, AND DISCOUERIES.

ceiued, he rose vp in great anger & departed, saying, that if hee could not haue right here, he would haue it in another place, & so went his way, not taking his leaue of the Nabob, nor of any other, at which abrupt departure they all admired.

The third day in the Morning the King sent for our Merchant by the Lord Comptroller of his Court, who went with him accompanied with Mersimomein & others to the Derbar, where there was a very graue Assembly set: Then came the King, who being set, he smiled vpon our Merchant, & (by an Interpreter) demanded the cause why hee went the last euening (or ouer-night) in such an anger? To whom he answer'd boldly, & with a sterne vndaunted countenance, that he had done his Masters of the Honourable Company wrong, & (by his might & power) had taken their rights from them which would not be so endured or put vp. The King hearing this demanded of the Assembly, which were as well Merchants as Nobles, (in the Persian Tongue) of what strength & force our shipping were, their number, burthen & force, where our chief place of residence was for Trading: Hee likewise sent for Persian Merchants, & did diligently enquire of them the same demands & questions: who answer'd that we had great trading on the coast of Cormadell, India and Persia; & likewise in the South-Seas, as Bantam, Iaparo, Iaubee & Macossor: They further told the Nabob, that our Shipping were great, and of great force withall, & likewise if his pleasure was such as to be at ods with vs, there neither could, would or should any Vessel, great or small, that did belong to these parts, stirre out of any Hauens, Ports or Harbours of his Maisties Dominions, but they would take them & make prize of them, for they were not able to withstand their force. At these words the King said but little, but what he thought is beyond my knowledge to tell you.

Then the King turn'd to our Merchant, & told him in Moores language (the which hee could very well vnderstand) that he would grant the English free Trade vpon these Conditions following.

That if the English Ship or Ships should at any time see any ship or ships, Iunke or Iunks, or any other Vessell of the Nabobs, or any of his subiects in distresse either by foule weather, or in danger of Enemies, or in any other extremitie, that we (the English) should helpe, aide, & assist them to our powers, or if it happened they were in want of Cables, Anchors, Water, Victualls, or any other necessities whatsoever that did belong to them, that we the said English should helpe them as we were able. Likewise that we the said English should not make prize of any Vessell belonging to any of the Dominions of the said Nabob, & that we the said English should not make prize of any ship, Vessell or Vessels within the Ports, Riuers, Roads, or Havens of the Nabob, though they were our enemies; but at the Sea wee might make prize of them if we could: to this all our Merchants agreed. Then the King caused Articles on his part to be drawne, & published in this manner following.

Here I the said Nabob, Vice King & Gouvernour of the Countrey of Woodia, vnder the great & mighty Prince Pe Desha Shassalleem, doe giue & grant free licence to the aforesaid Ralph Cartwright Merchant to trade, buy, sell, export & transport by Shipping, either off or vpon the shore, not paying any Iunkeon or Custome, nor any vnder me to cause them to pay any: Likewise, that if they doe conuay Goods by shore betweene Factory & Factory or any other place for their better aduantage of gaine within these his Dominions, I straitly charge & command that no Gouvernour, Custome-gatherer, or other Officer whatsoever, shall make or cause them to pay any Iunkeon or Customes; but shall suffer them to passe free, without let, hinderance, molestation, or interruption of stayage, but shall (I say) helpe & further them in any thing that shall be the furtherance of their businesse. Moreouer, I doe grant to the English Merchants to take ground, & to build houses fitting for their Imployments, & where they shall see conuenient for their best vtility & profits, without let or hinderance of any of my louing Subiects.

And further I doe giue & grant to the English Merchants free Licence to build Shipping, small or great, or any other Vessell which they shall thinke best & fittest for their occasions & vses; they paying no more than the Custome of the Countrey to the Workmen; & likewise to repaire shipping if any occasion be to require it.

Likewise

Likewise I the Nabob doe command that no Gouvernour or Officer whatsoever vnder me shall doe the English any wrong, or cause any to be done vnto them, as they shall answer it at their perills, wheresoeuer they are resident: Neither shall any wrong be done to any seruant of theirs, that doth belong vnto them.

And againe, if any Controuersie should be betwixt the English, & the people of the Countrey, if the matter be of any moment, then the said cause shall be brought before me the Nabob at the Court at Malcandy, & at the Darbar I will decide the matter, because the English may haue no wrong, (behauing themselves as Merchants ought to do.)

This Licence formed & giuen at the Royall Court of Malcandy, the third day of May 1633, but not sealed till the fift day of May following at night.

The fourth day of May the King sent a great banquet to the House of Marsymomeine, to our Merchant, & there came to this feast the great man that did speake on the Nockado's side against vs, at the Darbar, about the frigget aforesaid: He brought with him to our Merchant for a present a bale of Sugar, a Bottle of Wine, & some sweet meates; saying, he was sorry for the things before done & past, but if any thing lay in him to doe the Company & him any good, he & they should be sure of it. This man was Gouvernour of a Towne called Bollasarye, a Sea Towne where shipping was built; (as is afore said) his name was Merrossom, & vnderstanding that the Merchant was minded to trauaile that way, hee promised him to doe him all the courtesies that could be.

The fifth day of May in the afternoone we were before the King againe at the Darbar, at our comming he called for our Perwan, (which was our warrant or licence) & then he added to it the free leaue of coyning of Monies & sealed it with his owne signet himselfe, & so all things were strongly confirm'd & ratified for our free trade in his territories & Dominions.

The sixth day of May the King made a great Feast at the Court where were assembled the most & chiefeest of all his Nobles & Gouvernours that were vnder his command, & being set, he sent the Lord Comptroller of his house for the English Merchant Master Ralph Cartwright to come vnto him, who came with all speede, & when he was in the presence of the King, he caused him to set downe by him, & take part of the Feast (for the King was exceeding merry & pleasant) then the King caused a Vest or Robe to be brought, & with his own hands did put it vpon our Merchant; & thus was he inuested & entertained in the presence of this Royall, Noble & great assembly.

This day the King was in magnificent state & Maiesty, on rich Persian Carpets: (as is before mentioned) But ouer this great Company was a large Canopy of branched Veluet of foure colours, & in the seames betweene the ioynings of it was yellow Taffata, which hung downe like vnto the Vallence of a bed, it was 80. foote in length, & 40. foote in bredth, & it was vpheld with foure small Pillars, ouerlayd with siluer, whose height was twelue foote, & in thicnesse one foote. Here we staid till about the houre of fiue in the afternoone, & then we tooke our leaues of the King & the rest, & departed to Coteke to the house of Mersymomeine.

Thus haue I plainly & truly related the occurrences that hapned at the Court of Malcandy, but although the Palace of the Nabob be so large in extent, & so magnificent in structure, yet he himselfe will not lodge in it, but euery night he lodgeth in Tents with his most trusty Seruants & Guards about him, for it is an abhominaton to the Moguls (which are white men) to rest or sleepe vnder the rooffe of a house that another man hath builded for his owne honour. And therefore hee was building a Palace which he purpos'd should be a Fabricke of a Rest, & future Remembrance of his renowne: He likewise keepeth three hundred Women, who are all of them the daughters of the best & ablest subiects that he hath.

The seuenth day of May we went vp & downe in the Towne of Coteke; it is very populous of people, & hath daily a great Market in it of all sorts of necessaries which the Country affordeth, it is seuen miles in compasse, & hath but two great Gates belonging to it, it is three Miles betweene the one Gate & the other.

Vpon

er vnder me
shall answer
done to any

people of the
ht before me
utter, because
do.)

day of May

arsymoineine,
the Nockado's
th him to our
ates; saying,
m to doe the
Gouernour of
fore said) his
aile that way,

the Darbar, at
) & then he
net himselfe,
itorics & Do-

assembled the
nd, & being
er Ralph Cart-
resence of the
g was exceed-
with his own
the presence

arpets: (as is
hed Veluet of
which hung
te in bredth,
t was twelue
in the after-
Coteke to the

et of Malcan-
cent in struc-
with his most
s (which are
h builded for
should be a
cepeth three
iects that he

t is very po-
es which the
belonging to

Vpon

or a Voyage to Bengalla. **TRAFFIQUES, AND DISCOUERIES.**

55

Vpon the eighth day of May we went to the Court at Malcandy againe to desire of the King a Warrant, or free Passe, for a safe conuoy of Letters, or any other such occasion through his Countreies.

Here we found his Maiesty sitting in the outward Palace of the Court on the Pauement by the Tanke before named, with a very faire Canopy ouer him, made of Damaske, & vp-held by foure small Pillars overlayd with Siluer, with his Nobles by him for this effect & purpose following.

He was by the great Mogul commanded to wage warre with all expedition against the King of Culcandouch (a great Prince neighbouring vpon his confines) which had wrongfully with hostility entred on the Southwest part of his Countrey, & had made some spoyle & hauock on the same. The King, I say, had here called all his Commanders, Leaders & Captaines together giuing them a great charge concerning the good vsage of his men, & their best endeaours in the management & performance of their seruices in those Warres. Hee likewise gaue gifts to the Leaders, & money to the Souldiers to encourage them. The Army consisted of 30000. men, which was 1000. Horse & 2000. foote, armed for the most part with Bowes & Arrows; & some againe with Darts, like our lauelins, but farre more sharpe; & some againe with a kind of Falchon, Semiter, or like a bended Sword by their side; some of which weapons haue cut in sunder two malefactors, which haue been condemned to dye, being bound backe to backe, at one blow giuen backwards by the Executioner. But our Commission being granted, & our businesse ended finally, our Merchant (reuerently) tooke his leaue of the King; & the King (with his Nobles) did the same to him, wishing him all good successe in his affaires in his Countrey; & so we departed.

The ninth of May we gathered together all our things; & at night wee departed from Coteke.

The tenth, at the houre of two in the Afternoone we came to the Towne of Harharra-poor, & hosted in the house of our Interpreter.

The cleuenth day wee went to the Gouernour of the Towne, & shewed him our Permand or Commission from the King; the Gouernour made a great Salame, or courtsie in reuerence vnto it, & promised his best assistance & helpe in any thing that he could doe, & there the said Gouernour had a small Present giuen to him.

The twelfth day of May Master Thomas Colley came to vs at Harharra-poor, & the rest of the Englishmen with him, with all the goods; then wee hired a house for the present, till such time as ours might be builded, for our further occasions to the Companies vse.

This Towne of Harharra-poor is very full of people, & it is in bounds sixe or seuen Miles in compasse; there are many Merchants in it, & great plenty of all things, here is also cloth of all sorts great store, for there doth belong to this Towne at the least 3000. Weauers that are house keepers, besides all other that doe worke, being bound or hired.

The foureteenth day the two Merchants went abroad, & found out a plat of ground fitting to build vpon; then they layd the Kings Deroyn on it, & seaz'd vpon it for the Companies vse, & there was no man that did, or durst gaine say them for doing the same.

The fifteenth day they hired workmen & labourers to measure the Ground, & to square out the foundation of the House, & likewise for the Wall, which was one hundred Conets square, which is fifty yards, euery Conet being halfe a yard, or a foote & a halfe: & it be-houed vs to make haste, for the time of the great Raines was at hand.

The sixteenth day they laid the foundation of the Walls, being nine foote thicke, much haste was made, & many workmen about it; but this our first worke was but labour lost & cast away, for it came to nothing.

For on the eighteenth day the Raines began with such force & violence, that it beate downe all our work to the ground, & wash'd it away, as if there had not bene any thing done, this Storme continued without ceasing, (day and night) more or lesse three weekes compleat.

The sixteenth day of Iune Master Ralph Cartwright tooke his iourney for Ballazary, &

two

two English men with him, who were Edward Peteford & William Withal, & from thence he was minded to traualle further into the countrey of Bengalla; & the eighth of Iuly following wee receiued a letter from Master Cartwright, concerning his proceedings & troublesome passage; for he found not the Countrey according as was reported, by reason of the time of the great raines that fell, yet he was safely arriued in Pipely.

The three & twentieth day of Iuly in the Morning, we had newes that there was an English Ship arriued at Hassarpoore, & had shot of three pieces of Ordnance, & stayed all night, she having not a boat to come from her, she weighed Anchor, & set saile for Ballazary.

The 25. of August in the morning Master Thomas Colley dyed of a violent Feuer at Harharrapoore.

The seuenth day of September I receiued Letters from Master Cartwright from Ballazary, & withall he sent me the name of the Ship, to wit, the good Ship Swan, & Master Edward Austin (or Ostin) commander.

The nineteenth day of September there came two Merchants from Ballazary to Harharrapoore, the one of them his name was Master Robert Littler, the other Master Iohn Powle, Purser of the Ship Swan.

The fourth day of October our Merchant Master Robert Littler, tooke a iourney for Iaggernat, & he returned the sixteenth day to the Factory at Harharrapoore.

A briefe Relation of the great City of Iaggarnat.

The fifth day of Nouember I was sent about the Companies businesse to the great city of Iaggarnat, & I traualled this day to a Towne called Madew, & I lodged all night in a Pagod, or Pogoda.

The sixth day I William Bruton traualled eight course, which is thirty two Miles English, & came to a Towne named Amudpoore, where I found met together, of men, women & children, more than 3000.; & all of them were Trauellers & Raungers of the Countrey, hauing no residence, but are called Ashmen; (because they doe cast Ashes vpon themselves) also they are called Fukeires, which are religious names given to them for their supposed holinesse, but indeed they are very Rogues, such as our Gipsies be here in England, when they see their time & opportunity to put Roguery & Villany in practice: at this Towne I made no great stay, for I had a good charge about me of the Companies.

The seuenth day of Nouember in the Morning about two of the Clocke, I hasted from Amudpoore, ouer a passage, & so for Iaggarnat, which was tenne course betweene, that is forty Miles English, so about the houre of foure in the afternoone, I drew neare to this great City of Iaggarnat, to which I passed ouer a great stone Causey, on either side whereof was a very goodly Tanke to wash in, this Causey was about halfe a mile in length; then as I came to the West end of this City, I entred into a very faire place for Scituation, furnished with exceeding store of pleasant Trees & Groues & on either side of the way Tankes of water & Pagodoes in the midst of them. From thence I passed vp into the High-streete, where I was entertained by a Brammine, (which is one of their Religious Men or Idolatrous Priests) but let his Religion be what it would, into his House I went, & there I lodged all the time of my stay there.

The eighth day of Nouember in the morning after I had gone about the affaires that I was sent to doe, I went to view the City in some part, but especially that mighty Pagodo or Pagod, the mirrour of all wickednesse & Idolatry: Vnto this Pagod, or house of Sathan (as it may rightly be called) doe belong 9000. Brammines or Priests, which doe daily offer Sacrifices vnto their great God Iaggarnat, from which Idoll the City is so called; & when he is but named, then all the people in the Towne & Countrey doe bow & bend their knees to the ground, as the Moabites did to their Idoll Baal-Peor. Here they doe also offer their Children to this Idoll, & make them to passe through the Fire; & also they haue an abhominable custome to cause or make them passe through the water as Sacrifices vnto the said vngodly God.

This

This Idoll is in shape like a great Serpent, with seven Heads, & on the cheekes of each Head it hath the forme of a Wing vpon each cheek, which wings doe open & shut, & flappe, as it is carried in a stately Chariot, & the Idoll in the midd^lst of it: and one of the Moguls sitting behinde it in the Chariot vpon a conuenient place with a Canopy to keepe the Sunne from iniuring of it.

When I (with horro^r) beheld these strange things I called to mind the 13. Chap. of the Revel. & 1. Verse, & likewise the 16. & 17. Verses of the said Chapter, in which places there is a beast, & such Idolatrous worship mentioned, & those sayings in that Text are herein truly accomplished in the 16th. Verse: for the Brammines are all marked in the fore-head, & likewise all that come to worship the Idoll, are marked also in their fore-heads; but those that doe buy & sell, are all marked in the left shoulder; & all such as doe dare or presume to buy & sell, (not being marked) are most seuerely & grievously punished.

They haue builded a great Chariot that goeth on 16. Wheeles of a side, & euery wheele is fve foote in height, & the Chariot itself is about thirty foot high. In this Chariot (on their great Festiuall dayes at night) they doe place their wicked God Jaggarnat, & all the Brammines (being in number 9000.) doe then attend this great Idoll, besides of Ashmen & Fuckeirs some thousands, (or more than a good many). The Chariot is most richly adorned with most rich & costly Ornaments, & the aforesaid wheeles are placed very compleat in a round circuite so artificially, that euery wheele doth doe his proper office without any impediment: For the Chariot is aloft, & in the Center betwixt the Wheeles; they haue also more than 2000. lights with them: And this Chariot with the Idoll is also drawne with the greatest & best men of the Towne, & they are so eager & greedy to draw it, that whosoever by shouldering, crowding, shouing, heauing, thrusting, or any violent way can but come to lay a hand vpon the Ropes, they thinke themselues blessed & happy. And when it is going along the City, there are many that will offer themselves a Sacrifice to this Idoll, & desperately lye downe on the ground, that the Chariot-wheeles may runne ouer them, whereby they are killed outright; some get broken armes, some broken legges, so that many of them are so destroyed, & by this meanes they thinke to merit Heauen.

There is also another Chariot which hath but 12. wheeles, & that is for an Idoll or a Dewill of an inferiour ranke or lower degree: & hee doth not goe abroad or in progresse, but when the Brammines doe please. This Pagodo is scituated by the sea-side, & is to be seen into the Sea at the least 10. or 12. leagues; (for the Ayre & Skye is clear & pure in those parts, that it may be seene farre). It is inclosed with a wall of Stone, much about 22. foot in height, & the inclosure is foure-square, & euery square is 150. Geometricall paces; so the foure squares in the totall are 600. paces or yards about: it standeth due East, West, North & South; & euery square hath a great gate for the entrance into it, but the South & West-gates are barr'd vp till the Festiuall times, & none commonly vsed but the North & East-gates, but especially the North-gate; for it hath all its prospect into the high or chiefe street of this City.

Now in some other parts of this Countrey the people doe adore & worship other creatures for their Gods: some worship the Celestiall, as the Sunne, Moone & Starres: some againe Terrestriall, & they of the Mountaines, Vallies & Woods: some Aquaticall, & those of the Seas, Riuer, & Fountaines: some running after a beast like an Oxe, the Dog, & the Cat, some after the Hawke, some after the sheepe, & some so foolish, that they doted vpon the very hearbs & flowers in their Gardens. For indeed they haue very rare flowers for colour, such as I neuer saw in England, or else-where. Some of this Nation haue erected to themselves a God, in the likeness of Iupiter, & doe chaine him by the legge in their Pagod, to the intent that hee might not leaue them, nor forsake them; & keepe continuall watch & Guard night & day, lest any of their Enemies should come & intice him away by bribery, & so to preuaile with him to come forth of it, & by that meanes their City come to ruine & destruction: so much for their Idolatry.

This City of Bengalla is very great & populous, it hath many Merchants in it, & yeeldeth very rich commodities, as good Cloath in abundance, Sugars, Silkes, Tallataes, Stuffles, Waxe, Gumlacke,

Gumlacke, Butter, Oyle, Rice & Wheate, with many other good commodities vendable. It is likewise famous for its multitude of Rhinoceroes, it hath a beast much like vnto a Vnicorne, & because it hath but one Horne, some doe beleue & take it for the Vnicornes horne for the vertue it hath in it. This City was once free from Taxations, till Ehebar the great Mogull caused it to be vntoed to his Empire. The chieftest Cities which ioyne nearest to it, are Catigan, & Satagan on the bankes of Ganges Eastward: It was once the Seate of the great Bengallian King Malchiram, as Mr. Purchase relates in his Pilgrimage. This City lyes Westward toward Pega, & neere to Cosmin & Aracam, two famous Cities for Traffick & Situation; lying vpon the Riuer, & within some few Leagues of the Gulfe call'd the Bengallian gulfe, which is a very dangerous one; for at some certaine times of the yeere it is very hazardable for vessells to passe without shipwrack: There be many other Lakes & Riuers which I could mention, but for breuity sake I omit them. But there is no strong drinke suffered to be dranke within the City, except a Stranger doe bring it in priuately, & so it is not knowne: & thus much shall suffice for the impious Religion of Iaggarnat & the stately Court of Malcandy.

The most of these people haue no Learning, but doe all things by memory: They weare commonly long haire, & are very strict in their time of Fasting; but afterwards, when the Ceremony is ouer, then they freely commit all kind of wickednesse againe. In some places they haue their Edicts or Lawes written, & in other places vnwritten: They know what belongs to Bonds or bills & they lend without Witnesses, or any sealing of Writings, euen vpon their owne Words: & hee that is found to deny his promise, hath the tops of his fingers cut off. Their habit is various & different, some of them doe goe in linnen or woollen, some are cloathed with beasts skins, or Birds feathers, others goe naked, & doe couer only their secret parts: Their bodies are for the most part blacke, which is not accidentall, but naturally arising from the quality of the seed they are begotten: Most of them are of a large stature; they haue many wiues which they purchase & buy of their Parents: some they keepe to be their Vassals to doe their drudgery; others, which are handsomer, for issue sake & pleasure.

Here are greater store of Beasts than in any other part of the Indies; as Oxen, Camells, Lyons, Dogges, Elephants: they haue Dogges which are as fierce as Lyons, with which they usually hunt & pursue those wild beasts as we doe our bucks, for their delight & pleasure. They ride on goodly horses booted & spurr'd; so likewise doe their Women.

These people are notable ingenious men; let it be in what Art or Science soeuer, & will imitate any workmanship that shall be brought before them: for the most part of them hate idlenesse, & those that doe not study in some Art or other, are counted droanes, & stand for Cynners, & dead men amongst the best & chieftest sort of people: They haue a custome, that alwayes before dinner they do call their children & young people in their houses together, & doe examine how they had spent their time from the sunne-rising, & if they could not giue a good account of it, they were not to be admitted to the Table; & so euery day, & if they did not the next time improve themselves in some knowledge of laudable things, they are most seuerely punished and chastised.

These barbarous & idolatrous people, although they be so ignorant in the true worship of God cannot endure a perjured person, nor a common swearer, nor a common drunkard, but will punish them very seuerely by stripes, or else by forfeiture of their Commodities: A perjured person, say they, is an arch-enemy to their God & them: & it is so hatefull, that if it be committed by their Father, Brother or kindred, they doe presently condemn him, according to the nature of the offence: for though they loue the periury, by reason of the benefit that cometh vnto them by it, yet they hate the person euen vnto death: for, say they, hee which was sometimes periured in their behalfe, may vndoe what he hath done, & speake the truth when time serues: They instance a story of Soleman the great Turke, who loathed & abhorred the Traitor that betrayed Rhodes vnto him, & in stead of his daughter, whom he expected to be giuen him in marriage for a reward, he caused him to be slayed and salted, & told him in derision, that it was not fit for a Christian to marry with a Turk, unless he put off his old skin: likewise they instance Charles the fourth, who rewarded the soldiers

endable. It
vnto a Vni-
e Vnicornes
Ehebar the
oyne nearest
the Seate of
e. This City
for Traffick
se call'd the
of the yeere
her Lakes &
e is no strong
priuately, &
garnat & the

They weare
ds, when the
some places
what belongs
n vpon their
gers cut off.
en, some are
y their secret
nally arising
ature; they
pe to be their
leasure.

en, Camells,
h which they
& pleasure.

euier, & will
of them hate
& stand for
a custome,
ses together,
y could not
uery day, &
able things,

true worship
n drunkard,
ommodities:
atefull, that
ndemn him,
ason of the
th: for, say
th done, &
Turke, who
is daughter,
e flayed and
Turk, unless
d the soul-
diers

diers (that betrayed their Lord & Master Krantius) with counterfeit Coyne; and being desired to deliuer them current money, answered, that counterfeit coyne was the proper wages for counterfeit seruice: Thus a lyar or periured person amongst these Idolatrous people they will not beleue, though he had spoken or sworne the truth: for he that hath been once false, is euer to be suspected in the same kinde of falshood: wherefore iust & vpriight dealing is aptly compared to a glasse, which being once broken, can neuer be repaired; or to opportunity, which once omitted, can neuer be recovered. And so I conclude this relation, wishing all men to preferre knowledge & honesty before wealth & riches; the one soone fadeth, the other abideth for euer: for amongst all the goods of this life, onely wisdom is immortall.

FINIS.



THE
FARDLE OF FACIONS
CONTAINING
THE AUNCIENTE MANERS, CUSTOMES AND LAWES,
OF THE
PEOPLES ENHABITING THE TWO PARTES OF THE EARTH,
CALLED
AFFRICKE AND ASIE.

Printed at London:

BY IHN KINGSTONE, AND HENRY BUTTCH.

1555.

Al
best
wras
my h
my t
my fl
other
wisec
tong
that
aucth
Omni
perce
wras
trans
to wa
pres
full t
in an
had n
Emp
Fren
regar
earst
thing
thank
is de
and I
opini
vpon
warre
prese

TO THE
RIGHTE HONOURABLE
THE ERLE OF ARUNDEL,

KNIGHT OF THE ORDRE,

AND

LORDE STEWARDE OF THE QUIENES MAESTIES MOST
HONOURABLE HOUSEHOLDE.

AFtre what time the barrein traueiles of longe seruice, had driuē me to thinke libertie the best rewarde of my simple life, right honorable Erle and that I had determined to leaue wrastlyng with fortune, and to giue my self wholie to liue vpon my studie, and the labours of my hand: I thought it moste fitting with the dutie that I owe to God and manne, to bestowe my time (if I could) as well to the profite of other, as of myself. Not coueting to make of my floudde, a nother mānes ebbe (the Cancre of all commune wealthes) but rather to sette othe a flote, where I my self strake on groud. Tournig me therefore, to the searche of wisdom and vertue, for whose sake either we tosse, or oughte to tosse so many papers and tongues: although I founde aboute myself, verie litle of that Threasure, yet remembered I that a fewe yeres paste, at the instaunce of a good Citezein, (who might at those daies, by authoritie commaunde me) I had begonne to translate, a litle booke named in the Latine, *Omnium gentium mores*, gathered longe sence by one Iohannes Boemus, a manne as it appereth, of good iudgemente and diligence. But so corrupted in the Printing, that after I had wrastled a space, with sondrie Printes, I rather determined to lose my labour of the quartre translacion, then to be shamed with the hault. And throwing it a side, entended no further to wearie my self therewithall, at the leaste vntill I mighte finde a booke of a better impressiō. In searching whereof at this my retourne to my studie, although I found not at the full that, that I sought for: yet vndrestanding among the booke sellers (as one talke brings in another) that men of good learning and eloquence, bothe in the Frenche and Italien tonge, had not thought skorne to bestowe their time aboute the translacion therof, and that the Emperours Maestie that now is, vouchedsaulfe to receiue the presentacion therof, at the Frenche translatours hande, as well appereth in his booke: it kindled me againe, vpon regard of mine owne profite, and other mennes moe, to bring that to some good point, that earst I had begonne. For (thought I) seing the booke hath in it, much pleasant varietie of thinges, and yet more profite in the pitthe: if it faile to bee otherwise rewarded, yet shal it thankfully of the good be regarded. Wherefore setting vpon it a fresshe, where the booke is deuised according to thaunciente deuision of the earth into thre partes, Affrique, Asie, and Europe: hauing brought to an ende the two firste partes, I found no persone in mine opinio so fitte as your honour, to present them vnto. For seing the whole processe ronnet vpon gouernaunce and Lawes, for thadministracion of commune wealthes, in peace and in warre, of aunciente times tofore our greates graundfathers daies: to whom mighte I better present it, then to a Lorde of verie nobilitie and wisdom, that hath bene highe Mareshalle

in

in the fielde abroad, deputed of the locke and keie of this realme, and a counsaillour at home, of thre worthie princes. Exercised so many waies in the waues of a fickle Commune wealthe: troubled sometime, but neuer disapointed of honourable successe. To your good Lordshippe then I yelde & committe, the firste fruites of my libertie, the firste croppe of my labours, this firste daie of the Newe yere: beseeching the same in as good parte to receiue it, as I humblye offre it, and at your pleasure to vnfolde the Fardle, and conside the stuffe. Whiche euer the farder in, shall sieme I truste the more pleasaunte and fruitesfull. And to conclude, if I shall vndrestāde, that your honour delighteth in this, it shal be a cause sufficiente, to make me go in hande with Europe, that yet remaineth untouched. Almightye God giue vnto your Lordshippe prosperous fortune, in sounde honour and healtche.

Your Lordshippes moste humblye at commaundement,
WILLIAM WATREMAN.

I H
faciōs
be put
the fat
Trogus
Mela,
(which
Naucle
writers
poster
the sto
ticklyn
with th
this kin
labour,
thei wa
as well
differen
thine ex
cious &
haue in
and mar
or what
another
cōmunc
but ech
open h
panion
Sounde
milke of
the soft
full vnw
rampers
the field
VOL.

our at home,
le Commune
se. To your
tic, the firste
e in as good
e Fardle, and
leasaunte and
eth in this, it
et remaineth
ne, in sounde

audemente,

THE

P R E F A C E

OF THE AUTHOUR.

I HAVE sought out at times, as laisure hath serued me, Good reader, the maners and faciōs the Lawes, Customes and Rites, of all suche peoples, as semed notable, and worthy to be put in remembrāce, together with the situatiō & descriptiō of their habitatiōs: which the father of Stories Herodotus the Greke, Diodorus, the Siciliane, Berosus, Strabo, Solinus, Trogus Pompeius, Ptolomeus, Plinius, Cornelius the still, Dionysius the Afriane, Pōponius Mela, Cæsar, Iosephus, and certein of the later writers, as Vincentius, and Aeneas Siluius (whiche asteward made Pope, had to name Pius the seconde) Anthonie Sabellicus, Ihon Nauclerus, Ambrose Calepine, Nicholas Perotte, in his cornu copiæ, and many other famous writers eche one for their parte, as it were skatered, & by piece meale, set furthe to posteritie. Those I saie haue I sought out, gathered together, and acording to the ordre of the storic and tyme, digested into this litle packe. Not for the hongre of gaine, or the ticklyng desire of the peoples vaine brute, and vnskillfulle commendacion: but partly moued with the oportunitie of my laisure, & the wondrefull profite and pleasure, that I conceiued in this kinde of studie my self, and partly that other also delightyng in stories, might with litle labour, finde easely when thei would, the somme of thynges compiled in one Booke, that thei ware wonte with tediousnes to sieke in many. And I haue shocked them vp together, as well those of aunciente tyme, as of later yeres, the lewde, as well as the vertuous indifferentlie, that vsing the as present examples, and paternes of life, thou maiest with all thine endeuour folowe the vertuous and godlie, & with asmuche warenes eschewe the vicious & vngodly. Yea, that thou maiest further, my (reader) learne to discerne, how men haue in these daies amended the rude simplicitie of the first worlde, frō Adam to the floud and many yeres after, when men liued skateryng on the earthe, without knowlege of Money, or what coigne ment, or Merchauntes trade: no maner of exchange, but one good tourne for another. When no man claimed aught for his seueralle, but lande and water ware as cōmune to al, as Ayer and Skie. Whē thei gaped not for honour, ne hunted after riches, but eche man contented with a litle, passed his daies in the wilde field, vnder the open heauen, the courte of some shadowie Tree, or slendre houelle, with suche companion or companiōs as siemed them good, their diere babes and children aboute them. Sounde without careke and in rest full quietnesse, eatyng the fructes of the field, and the milke of the cattle, and drinking the waters of the christalline springes. First clad with the softe barcke of trees, or the faire broade leaues, & in processe with rawe felle and hide full vnworkemanly patched together. Not then enuironed with walles, ne pente vp with rampers, and diches of deapthe, but walking at free skope emōg the wanderyng beastes of the field, and where the night came vpon them, there takyng their lodgyng without feare

VOL. V.

K

of

THE

of murtherer or thief. Mery at the fulle, as without knowledge of the euilles ¶ afre ensued as ¶ worlde waxed elder, through diuers desires, and contrarie endeouours of menne. Who in processe for the insufficiencie of the fruictes of the earthe, (whiche she tho gaue vntilled) and for default of other thynges, ganne falle at disquiete and debate among themselves, and to auoide the inuasion of beastes, and menne of straunge borders, (whom by themselves thei could not repelle) gathered into companies, with commune aide to withstande suche encursions and violence of wrong. And so ioynnyng in confederacie, planted themselves together in a plotte, assigned their boundes, framed vp cotages, one by anothers chieque, diked in theselues, chase officers and gouernours, and deuised lawes, that thei also among themselves might liue in quiete. So beginnyng a rough paterne of townes and of Cities, that afre ware laboured to more curious finesse.

AND now ware thei not contented, with the commodities of the fieldes and cattle alone, but by diuers inuencions of handicraftes and sciēces, and by sondrie labours of this life, thei sought how to winne. Now gan thei attempte the sease with many deuices, to transplante their progenie and ofspring into places vnenhabited, and to enioye the commodities of eche others cuntry, by mutuall traffique. Now came the Oxe to the yoke, the Horse to the draught, the Metalle to the stāpe, the Apparell to handsomnes, the Speache to more finesse, the Behauiour of menne to a more calmenesse, the Fare more deintie, the Buildyng more gorgeous, thenhabitours ouer all becam milder and wittier, shaking of (euen of their owne accorde) the bruteshe outrages and stearne dealinges, ¶ shamefully mought be spoken of. Nowe refrained thei from sleaying one of a nother, fro eatyng of ech others flesh, from rape and open defiling of mother, sister, and daughter indifferētly, and fro many like abhominations to nature and honestie. Thei now marieng reason, with strength: and pollicie, with might: where the earthe was before forgrowen with bushes and wooddes, stuffed with many noisome beastes, drowned with meares, and with marshe, vnfitte to be enhabited, waast and vnhandsome in euery condition: by wittie diligence, and labour, ridde it from encombrance, planed the roughes, digged vp trees by the rootes, dried away the superfluous waters, brought all into leauelle, banished barreine . . . , and vncouered the face of the earth, that it might fully be sene, conuerted the champaine to tillage, the plaines to pasture, the valley to meadow, the hilles thei shadowed with wooddes and with Vines. Then thruste thei in cultre and share, and with wide woundes of the earthe, wan wine and corne plenteously of the ground, that afore scarcely gaue them Akornes and Crabbes. Then enhabited thei more thicke, and spred themselves ouer all, and buylte euery where. Of Townes, thei made cities, and of villages, Townes, Castles vpon the rockes, and in the valleis made thei the temples of the goddes. The goldē graueled springes, thei encurbed with Marble, & with trees right pleasauntlie shadowed them aboute. From them they deriued into cities and Townes, the pure freshe waters, a great distaunce of, by conduite of pipes and troughes, and suche other conueyaunce. Where nature had hidden the waters, out of sighte, thei sancke welles of greate deapth, to supplie their lacks. Riuers, and maigne floudes, whiche afore with vnbrideled violence, oftymes ouerflowed the neighboured aboute, to the destruction of their cattle, their houses, and themselves: thei restrained with banquettes, and kept them in a course. And to the ende thei might not onely be vadable, but passed also with drie foote, thei deuised meanes with piles of Timbre, and arches of stone, maugre the rage of their violent streames, to grounde bridges vpon them. Yea, the rockes of the sea whiche for the daungier of the accesse, thoughte themselves exempte from the dinte of their hande, when thei perceiued by experience, thei ware noyous to sailers, with vnspeakeable labour did thei ouerthrowe & breake into gobettes. Hewed out hauē on euery strand, enlarged crieques, opened rodes, and digged out herborowes, where their shippes mighte ride sauffe fro the storme. Finally thei so laboured, beautified, and perfeighted the earthe, that at this daie compared with the former naturalle forgrowen wastenesse, it might well sieme not to be that, but rather the Paradise of pleasure, out of the whiche, the first paterne of mankind (Adam and Eue) for the transgression of Goddes precept, ware driuen.

MEN also inuented and founde many wittie sciences, and artes, many wondrefull workes, whiche

whiche when by practice of lettres, thei had committed to bookes, and laied vp for posteritie, their successours so wounded at their wisdomes, and so reuerenced their loue and endeouours (whiche thei spied to be meant toward them, and the wealth of those that shuld folow of thē) that thei thought thē not blessed enough, with the estate of men mortalle, but so aduanced their fame, and wondered at their worthinesse, that thei wan them the honour and name of Goddes immortal.

THO gan the Prince of the worlde, when men so gan to delight in thadourning of the worlde, to sowe vpō the good siede, the pestilente Dernel, that as thei multiplied in nombre, so iniquitie might encrease, to disturbe and confounde this blessed state.

FIRST, therefore when he had with all kinde of wickednes belimed y world, he put into their heades, a curious searche of the highest knowledge, and suche as dependeth vpon destenie of thynges. And so practised his pageauntes, by obscure and doubtfully attempted Respōcions, and voices of spirities, that after he had settred the worlde in the trauers of his toies, and launced into their hartes a blinde supersticion, and feare: he trained it whole to a wicked worship of many goddes and Goddesses, that when he ones had wiped cleane out of mynde the knowlege and honour of one God euerlastyng, he might practise vpon manne, some notable mischief. Then sette he vp pilgrimages to deuilles, foreshewers of thynges, that gaue aduertisemente and answeere to demaundes in sondrie wise. In the Isle of Delphos one, in Euboea another, at Nasamone a thirde, and among the Dodonians, the famous okes, whose bowes by the blastes of the winde resounded to the eare, a manner of aduertisemente of deuellishe delusion. To the whiche Idolles and Images of deuilles he stirred vp men to do the honour (Helas) due onely to God. As to Saturne in Italie, to Iupiter in Candie, to Iuno in Samos, to Bacchus in India, & at Thebes: to Iris, and Osiris in Egipte: in old Troie to Vesta: aboute Tritona in Aphrique to Pallas, in Germanie and Fraunce to Mercurie, vnder the name of Theuthe: to Minerua at Athenes and Himetto, to Apollo in Delphos, Rhodes, Chio, Patara, Troade and Tymbra. To Diane in Delos and in Scythia, to Venus in Paphos, Ciprus, Gnydon, and Cithera. To Mars in Thracia, to Priapus in Lampsacho of Hellespontus, to Vulcane in Lypara and Lēnos, and in diuers other places to sondrie other, whose remembraunce was then moste freshe in the memorie of their people, for the benefaictes and merucilous inuencions bestowed among them.

AFTERWARD, also when Iesus Christe the verie sonne of the almightie father, shewyng hymself in the fleshe of our mortalitie, was conuersaunte in the worlde, pointyng to the same, as with his fngre, the waie to immortalitie, & endelesse blessednesse, and bothe with woorde and example, exhorted and allured them to vprightnes of life, to the glorie of his father, sendyng his disciples and scolers into the vniuersall worlde, to condemne Superstition and all error of wickednes, with the moste healthsome woorde: to plante true Religion, and geue newe preceptes, and directions of the life, and had now set the matier in suche forwardnesse and poincte, that the Gospell beyng generally of all nacions receiued, there lacked but continuance to perfecte felicitie: The deuell eftesones retournyng to his naturall malice, desirous to repoesse that, that constrainedly he forsooke, betraypyng again the curious conceipte of man, some he reuersed into their former abuses and errors, and some with newe Heresies he so corrupted, snarled, and blynded, that it had bene muche better for them, neuer almoste to haue known the waie of truthe, then after their entraunce, so rashely and maliciously to haue forsaken it.

AT this daie in Asia the lesse, the Armenians, Arabians, Persians, Siriās, Assirians and Meades: in Aphrique, the Egipcians, Numidians, Libiens, and Moores. In Europe, the whole cōtrie of Grecia, Misia, Thracia, & all Turquie throwyng awaie Christe, are become the folowers and worshippers of Mahomet and his erroneous doctrine. The people of Scythia, whom we now cal Tartares (a greate people and wide spread) parte of them worshippe the Idolle of their Emperour Kamme, parte the Sonne, the Moone, and other Starres, and part according to the Apostles doctrine, one onely God. The people of Inde, & Ethiope, vnder the gouernance of Presbiter Iho perseauer in Christiane godlinesse, howbeit after a sort, muche different frō ours.

The sincere and true faith of Christ, wherewith in time it pleased God to illumine the worlde, remaineth in Germanie, Italy, Fraunce, Spaine, Englande, Scotland, Ireland, Denmarke, Liou, Pruse, Pole, Hungarie, and the Isles of Rhodes, Sicilie, Corsica, Sardinia, with a fewe other. This bitter ennemie of mankind hauyng thus with his subtilties, inueiled our mindes, and disseuered the christiā vnō, by diuersitie of maners and factions of belief, hath brought to passe thorough this damnable wyckednes of Sacrifices, and Rites, that whilest euery people (vndoubtedly with religious entent) endeouour theiū selues to the worshippe of God, and echone taketh vpō him to be the true and best worshipper of him, and whilest echone thinke them selues to treade the streight pathe of euerlastyng blessednes, and contēdeth with eigre mode and bitter dispute, that all other erre and be ledde farre a wrie: and whilest euery man strugglethe and striueth to spread and enlarge his owne secte, and to ouerthrowe others, thei doe so hate and enuie, so persecute and annoy echone an other, that at this daie a man cannot safely trauaill from one cuntry to another: yea, thei that would aduenture saufely or vnsaufely, be almost euery where holdē out. Wherof me thinkes I see it is like to come to passe, that whilest one people scant knoweth the name of another, (and yet almost neighbours) all that shall this daie be written or reported of them, shalbe compted and refused as lyes. And yeat this maner of knowledge and experience, is of it self so pleasant, so profitable & so praise worthy, that sundrie (as it is well knowen) for the onely loue and desire thereof, leauyng their natie cuntry, their father, their mother, their wiues and their children, yea, throwyng at their heles their saultie and welfare, haue with greate troubles, vexations, and turmoilynges taken vpon them for experience sake, to cutte through the wallowyng seas, and many thousande miles, to estraunge theimselues fro their home, yea, and those men not in this age alone, but euen from the firste hatchyng of the worlde haue been reputed and founde of moste wisdomē, authoritie, and good facion, sonest chosen with all mennes consent, bothe in peace & warre, to administre the cōmune wealth as maisters and counsaillours, Iudges and Capitaines. Suche ware thancient sages of Grece and of Italy, Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, Antisthenes, Aristippus, Zeno, & Pythagoras, who through their wisdomes and estimacion for traualles wan them greate nombres of folowers, and brought furthe in ordre the sectes named Socratici, Academici, Peripateci, Cynici, Cyrenaici, Stoici, and Pythagorici, echone chosyng name to glorie in his maister. Suche ware the prudente lawemakers of famous memorie, Minos and Rhadamanthus emōg the Cretenses, Orpheus among the Thraciens, Draco and Solon emōg the Athenienses, Licurgus among the Lacedemoniās, Moses emōg the Iewes, and Zamolxis among the Scythians, & many other in other stedes whiche dreamed not their knowledge in the benchehole at home, but learned of the men in the worlde moste wise, the Chaldeies, the Brachmanni, the Gymnosophites & the priestes of Egipte, with whō thei had for a space bene cōuersant. Like glorie, by like trauaill happened to the worthies of the worlde, as to Iupiter of Crete (reported fīue times to haue surueied the whole worlde) and to his twoo sonnes Dionisiū (otherwise called Bacchus) and Hercules the mightie. Likewise to Theseus and Iason, and the rest of that voiage. To the vnlucky sailer Vlisses, and to the banished Eneas, to Cyrus, Xerxes, and Alexander the Greate, to Hanniballe and Mithridate, kyng of Pontus, reported able to speake fiftie sōdrie languages, to Antiochus, the greate and innumerable Princes of Roome, bothe of the Scipioes, Marii, and Lentuli. To Pompeius the greate, to Iulius Cesar, Octavian, and Augustus, to the Constantines, Charles, Conrades, Hērickses, and Frederickes. Whiche all by their exploites vpon straunge nacions, haue gotten their immortall and euerlastyng renouue. Wherefore, seyng there is in the knowledge of peoples, & of their maners and factions, so greate pleasure and profite, and euery man cannot, yea, fewe men will, go traucile the cuntries theimselues: me thinkes gentill reader, thou oughtest with muche thanke to receyue at my hande these bookes of the maners and factions of peoples most notable and famous, togyther with the places whiche thei enhabite: And with no lesse cherefulness to embrace theim, then if beyng ledde on my hande from cuntry to cuntry, I should poynt the at eye, how euery people liueth, and where they haue dwelte, and at this daye doe. Let it not moue the,

let

let it
vnto
sondr
book
I haue
of my
haue
fully

let it not withdrawe the, if any cankered reprehendour of other mens doynges shall saie vnto the: It is a thyng hath bene written of, many yeares agoe, and that by a thousand sondry menne, and yet he but borowing their woordes, bryngeth it forth for a mayden booke, and nameth it his owne. For if thou well conside my trade, thou shalt fynd, that I haue not only brought thee other mennes olde store, but opened thee also the treasury of myne owne witte and bokes, not euery where to be found, and like a liberall feaster haue set before thee much of myne owne, and many thynges newe. Farewell and thankfully take that, that with labour is brought thee.

V
both
know
might
One
he g
draw
her
saun
The
lyue
cord
bany
the g
that
done
bega
man
pled,

THE
FARDLE OF FACIONS
CONTAINING
THE AUNCIENTE MANNERS, CUSTOMES AND LAWES,
OF THE
PEOPLES ENHABITING THE TWO PARTES OF THE EARTH,
CALLED
AFFRICKE AND ASIE.

AFFRIKE.

¶ The first Chapter.

¶ The true opinion of the deuine, concerning the beginnyng of man.

WHen God had in. V. daies made perfecte the heauens and the earth, and the furniture of bothe: whiche the Latines for the goodlinesse and beautie thereof, call Mundus, and we (I knowe not for what reason) haue named the worlde: the sixth daie, to the entent there mighte be one to enioye, and be Lorde ouer all, he made the moste notable creature Man. One that of all earthly creatures alone, is endowed with a mynde, and spirit from aboue. And he gaue him to name, Adam: accordyng to the colour of the molde he was made of. Then drawyng out of his side the woman, whilest he slept, to thende he should not be alone, knitte her vnto hym, as an vnseparable compaignion, and therewith placed them in the moste pleasant plot of the earth, fostered to flourish with the moisture of floudes on euery parte. The place for the fresshe grienesse and merie shewe, the Greques name Paradisos. There lyued they a while a moste blessed life without blemishe of wo, the earth of the own accord bringing forth all thing. But when they ones had transgressed the precepte, they were bany shed that inhabitaunce of pleasure and driuen to shift the world. And fro thenceforth the graciosnes of the earth was also abated, & the francke fertilitie therof so withdrawn, that labour and wette, now was lesse a greate deale, then ydle loking on before tyme had done. Shortly crente in sickenes, and diseases, and the broyling heate and the nipping cold began to assaile their bodyes. Their first sonne was Cayn, and the seconde Abell, and then many other. And as the world grewe into yeares, and the earth began to waxe thicke peopled, loke as the nombre did encrease, so vices grew on, and their lyuing decayed euer into

woors.

woore. For giltelesse dealyng, wrong came in place, for deuoutenesse, cōtempte of the Goddes, and so farre outraged their wickednes, that God skarely fyndyng one iuste Noha on the earth (whom he saued, with his housholde, to repayre the losse of mankind and replenysse the worlde) sente a floude vniuersall, whiche couering all vnder water, killed all fleshe that bare lyfe vpon earth, excepte a fewe beastes, birdes, and wormes that were preserued in the mysticall arke. In the ende of fūe Monethes afre the floude began, the Arque touched on the mōtēines of Armenia. And within foure Monethes afre, Noas and all his beyng restored to the earth, with Goddes furtheraunce in shorte space repeopled the worlde. And to thende the same myghte euery wheare again be enhabited, he dispersed his yssue and kyndredes into sondrie coastes. After Berosus opynion he sent Cham otherwyse, named Cameses and Chamesenuus with his ofspring, into Egipte. Into Lybia and Cirene, Triton. And into the whole residewe of Affrike the ancient Iapetus called Attalus Priscus, Ganges he sent into Easte Asia with certēine of the sonnes of Comerus Gallus. And into Arabia the fertile, one Sabus, sirnamed Thurifer.ouer Arabia the Waaste he made Arabus gouernour, and Petreus ouer Petrea. He gaue vnto Canaan, all that lyeth frō Damasco to the outemost bordre of Palestine. In Europe he made Tuisco king of Sarmatia. from the floude of Tanais vnto the Rhene. And there were ioyned vnto him all the sonnes of Istrus, and Mesa, with their brethren, from the mounteyne of Adula to Mesemberia pontica. Archadius and Emathius gouerned the Tirianes, Comerus Gallus, had Italie and Fraunce, Samothē, Britaigne and Normandie, and Iubal, Spayne. That spiedie and vnripe puttyng forthe of the children from their progenitours, before they had throughly learned and enured them selues with their facions and maners, was the cause of all the diuersitie that after ensued. For Cham, by the reason of his naughty demeanour towards his father, beyng constrained to departe with his wyfe and hys chyldren, planted him selfe in that parte of Arabia, that after was called by his name. And, lefte no trade of religion to his posteritie, because he none had learned of his father. Wherof it came to passe, that when in processe of tyme they were increased to to many for that londe: beyng sent out as it ware, swarme afre swarme into other habitations and skattered at length into sondry partes of the worlde (for this banysshed progeny grewe aboue measure) some fel into errours wherout thei could neuer vnsmarle themselves. The tongue gan to altre & the knowledge of the true God and all godlie worshippē vanished out of mind. Inso muche that some liued so wildely (as afre thou shalt here) that it ware harde to discerne a difference betwixte them and the beastes of the felde. Thei that flied into Egipt, wonderyng at the beantie and course of the Sonne, & the Moone, as though there had been in them a power deuine, began to worship them as Goddes: callyng the lesse, Isis and the bigger Osiris. To Iupiter also thei Sacrificed, & did honour as to y principall of life. To Vulcan for fire, to Pallas, as Lady of the skie, to Ceres as gouerneresse of the arth, and to sondry other for other sondry considerations. Neyther staied that darkenesse of iniquitie in Egipte alone, but where so euer the progeny of Cham stepte in from the begynnyng, there fell true godlines, all oute of minde and abōdage to the deuell entred his place. And there neuer was countrie, mother of moe swarmes of people, then that part of Arabia, that he, and his, chase to be theirs. So greate a mischief did the vntymely banishment of one manne, bring to the whole. Cotrarily the progenie of Iapheth, and Sem, brought vp to full yeres vndre their elders, and rightly enstructed: contentyng the selues with a litle circuite, straided not so wide as this brother had doen. Whereby it chaunced that the zeale of the truthe, (I meane of good liuyng and true worshippē of one onely God) remained as hidden in one onely people, vntill the tyme of Messias.

¶ The seconde Chapitre.

¶ The false opinion of the Philosophie concerning the begynnyng of man.

BVt the aunciente Philosophers, whiche without knowledge of God, and his truthe, many yeres ago, wrate vpon the natures of thinges, and thistories of times had another opinion of the originall of man. For certain of them, belieued the worlde euer to haue been, and that euer

temple of the
one iuste Noha
unkind and re-
water, killed all
that were pre-
gan, the Arque
oas and all his
led the worlde.
red his yssue
erwyse, named
Cirene, Triton.
cus, Ganges he
to Arabia the
bus gouernour,
o the outemost
oude of Tanais
and Mesa, with
and Emathius
Briteigne and
children from
lues with their
r Cham, by the
eparte with his
was called by
had learned of
er increased to
her habitations
progeny grewe
mselues. The
ippe vanished
that it ware
hei that flited
as though there
t the lesse, Isis
f principall of
neresse of the
at darkenesse
te in from the
uell entred his
then that part
vntymely ba-
lapheth, and
ontentyng the
by it chaunced
ne onely God)

of man.

s truthe, many
her opinion of
been, and that
euer

euer it should be, and man together with it to haue had no beginnyng. Certaine did holde that it had a beginnyng, and an ende it should haue, and a time to haue been, when man was not. For saie thei, the begynner of thynges visible, wrapped vp bothe heauen and earth at one instant, together in one paterne, and so a distinction growyng on betwixte these meynthe bodies, the worlde to haue begon in suche ordre as we see. The aire by nature to be continually mouyng, and the moste drie parte of thesame, for the lightenesse thereof, moste highe to haue climbed. So that sonne and Moone, and the planetes all, participatyng of the nature of that lighter substance: moue so muche the faster, in how muche thei are of the more subtile parte. But that whiche was mixed with waterie moisture, to haue rested in the place, for the heauinesse therof, and of the watery partes, the sea to haue comen: and the matier more compacte to haue passed into a clamminesse firste, and so into earth. This earth then brought by the heate of the sonne into a more fastenesse. And after by the same power puffed and swollen in the vppermoste parte, there gathered manye humours in sondry places, which drawing to ripenesse enclosed them selues in slymes and in filmes, as in the marresses of Egypt, and other stondyng waters we often se happen. And seyinge the heate of thaler sokyngly warmeth the cold grouid and heate meint with moisture is apt to engendre: it came to passe by the gentle moisture of the night aire, and the comforting heate of the daie sonne, that those humours so riped, drawyng vp to the rinde of the earth, as though their tyme of childbirthe ware come, brake out of their filmes, and deliuered vpon the earth all maner of liuyng thinges. Emög whiche those that had in the moste heate, became foules into the aire: those that ware of nature more earthie, became wormes and beastes of sondrie kindes: and where waters surmounted, thei drewe to the elemente of their kinde, and had to name fishes. But afterwarde the earth beyng more parched by the heate of the Sonne, and the drouthe of the windes, ceased to bring furthe any mo greate beastes: and those that ware already brought furthe, (saie thei) maintained, and increased by mutuall engendrure, the varietie, and nombre. And they are of opinion that in the same wise, men ware engendred in the beginning. And as nature putte them forth emong other beastes, so liued they at the first an vnknown lyfe wyldely emong them, vpon the fruites, and the herbes of the fieldes. But the beastes afte a while waxing noysome vnto them, they ware forced in commune for echeothers saultie to drawe into companies to resist their anoyauce, one helping another, and to sieke places to make their abiding in. And where at the firste their speache was confuse, by litle and litle they sayed it drewe to a distinctenesse, and perfeight difference: in sorte that they ware able to gyue name to all thinges. But for that they ware diuersely sparckled in diuers partes of the worlde, they holde also that their speache was as diuers and different. And herof to haue afreward risen the diuersitie of lettres. And as they firste assembled into bandes, so euery bande to haue broughte forthe his nacion. But these men at the firste voide of all helpe and experience of liuyng, ware bittrely pinched with hongre and colde, before thei could learne to reserue the superfluous plenty of the Somer, to supply the lacke of Winters barreinesse, whose bitter blastes, and högrie pinynges, consumed many of them. Whiche thing whē by experience dere bought, thei had learned: thei soughte bothe for Caues to defende them fro colde, and began to hourede fruites. Then happe foud out fire, and reason gaue rule of profite, and disprofite, and necessitie toke in hand to sette witte to schoole. Who gatheryng knowledge, and perceiuyng himself to haue a helpe of his sences, more skilfull then he thought, set hande a worke, and practised connyng, to supplie all defaultes, whiche tōgue and lettres did enlarge and distribute abroad.

THEI that had this opinion of the originall of manne, and ascribed not the same to the prouidence of God, affirmed the Ethiopiens to haue bene the firste of all menne. For thei coniectured that the ground of that countrie lyng nighest the heates of the Sonne muste nedes first of all other waxe warme. And the earth at that tyme beyng but clammye and softe, through the attemperance of that moysture and heate, man there first to haue bene fourmed, and there to haue gladdier enhabited (as natieue and naturall vnto him) then in any other place, whē all places ware as yet straunge, and vnknownen, whiche afte men soughte.

Beginnyng therefore at them, after I haue shewed how the worlde is deuided into thre partes (as also this treatise of myne) and haue spoken a litle of Aphrique, I wyll shewe the situation of Aethiope, and the maners of that people, and so forthe of al other regions and peoples, with suche diligence as we can.

¶ The thirde Chapitre.

¶ The deuision and limites of the Earthe.

Those that haue bene before our daies, (as Orosius writeth) are of opinion, that the ciruite of the earth, bordered about with the Ocean Sea: disroundyng hym self, shooteth out thre corner wise, and is also deuided into thre seuerall partes, Afrike, Asie, and Europe. Afrike is parted from Asie with the floude of Nilus, whiche comyng fro the Southe, ronnyeth through Ethiope into Egipte, where gently sheadyng hymself ouer his bancques, he leaueth in the countrie a merueilous fertilitie, and passeth into the middle earth sea, with seuen armes. From Europe it is separte with the middle earth sea, whiche beginnyng fro the Ocean aforesaid: at the Islande of Gades, and the pileurs of Hercules, passeth not tenne miles ouer. But further entryng in, semeth to haue shooed of the maigne lande on bothe sides, & so to haue won a more largenesse. Asie is deuided from Europe, with Tanais the floude, whiche comyng fro the North, ronnyeth into the marshe of Meotis almoste midwaie, and there sincking himself, leaueth the marshe and Pontus Euxinus, for the rest of the bounde. And to retourne to Afrike again, the same hauyng Nilus as I saied on the Easte, and on all other partes, bounded with the sea, is shorter then Europe, but broader towarde the Ocean, where it riseth into mountaigne. And shoryng towarde the Weste, by litle and litle waxeth more streighte, and cometh at thende to a narowe pointe. As muche as is inhabited therof, is a plentuous soile, but the great parte of it lieth waste, void of enhabitantes, either to whote for menne to abide, or full of noisome and venomous vermine, and beastes, or elles so whelmed in sande & grauell, that there is nothing but mere barrennesse. The sea that lieth on the Northe parte, is called Libicum, that on the Southe Aethiopicum, and the other on the West Atlanticum.

AT the first the whole was possest by fower sondrie peoples. Of the whiche, twaine (as Herodotus writeth) were founde there, tyme out of minde, and the other twaine were alienes and incommes. The two of continuance, were the Pænj, and Ethiopes, whiche dwelte, the one at the Northe of the lande, the other at the South. The Alienes, the Phœnices, the Grekes, the old Ethiopians, and the Aegipcians, if it be true that thei report of theselues. At the beginnyng thei were sterne, and vnruely, and bruteshely liued, with herbes and with fleshe of wilde beastes, without lawe or rule, or faciō of life, roilyng and rowmyng vpon heade, heather and thether without place of abode, where night came vpon them, there laiyng their bodies to reste. Aftrewarde (as thei saie) Hercules passyng the seas out of Spaine, into Libie (a countrie on the Northe shore of Afrike) and bringyng an ouerplus of people thence with hym, somewhat better facioned and manered then thei, trained them to muche more humanitie. And of y troughe thei came ouer in, made themselues cotages, and began to plante in plompes one by another. But of these thinges we shall speake here aftre more at large.

Afrike is not in euery place a like enhabited. For toward the Southe it lieth for the moste part waste, and vnpeopled, for the broilyng heate of that quatre. But the part that lieth ouer against Europe, is verie well enhabited. The frutefulness of the soile is excedyng, and to muche merueillous: as in some places bringyng the siede with a hundred folde encrease. It is straunge to beleue, that is saied of the goodnesse of the soile of the Moores. The stocke of their vines to be more then two menne can sadome, and their clousters of Grapes to be a cubite long. The coronettes of their Pasnepes, and Gardein Thistles (whiche we calle Hortichokes) as also of their Fenelle, to be twelue Cubites compasse. Thei haue Cannes like vnto those of India, whiche may contain in the cōpasse of the knot, or iointe, the measure of ij. bushelles. Ther be sene also Sparagi, of no lesse notable bigguenesse. Toward

the

to three partes
shewe the si-
regions and

, that the cir-
self, shooteth
, and Europe.
outh, ronnet
es, he leaueth
a, with seuen
nyng fro the
eth not tenne
ande on bothe
with Tanais the
mooste midwaie,
the rest of the
on the Easte,
roader towarde
e, by lile and
uche as is en-
side of inhabi-
vermine, and
re barreinesse.
Aethiopicum,

he, twaine (as
waine were ali-
whiche dwelte,
Phoenices, the
rt of theselues.
erbes and with
rowmyng vpon
n them, there
he seas out of
an ouerplus of
ained them to
es cotages, and
ake here afire

n for the mooste
part that lieth
excedyng, and
folde encrease.
The stocke
Grapes to be
hiche we calle
haue Cannes
ointe, the mea-
esse. Toward
the

the mounte Atlas trees bee founde of a wondrefull heighth, smothe, and without knaggue or knotte, vp to the hard toppe, hauyng leaues like the Cypres, but of all other the mooste noble Citrus, wherof the Romaines made greate deintie. Affrike hath also many sondrie beastes, and Dragones that lye in awaite for the beastes, and when thei see time, so be wrappe and wreathe them aboute, that takyng fro theim the vse of their ioyntes, thei wearie them and kille theim. There are Elephantes, Lyons, Bugles, Pardales, Roes, and Apes, in some places beyonde nombre. There are also Chamelopardales and Rhizes, like vnto Bulles. Herodote writeth, that there be founde Asses with hornes, Hienas Porpētines, wilde Rambes, a beast engendered of the Hiene and the Woulfe named Thoas, Pantheres, Storckes, Oistruthes, and many kindes of serpentes, as Cerastes, and Aspides, against whom nature hath matched the Ichneumon (a verie little beast) as a mortall enemye.

¶ The. iiij. Chapitre.

¶ Of Ethiope, and the auncient maners of that nation. Cap. iiii.

Two countreies there ware of that name Ouerlanders, and Netherlanders. The one pertaynyng to Aphrique, the other to Asie. The one whiche at this daie is called Inde, hath on the east the redde sea, and the sea named Barbaricum, on the northe it toucheth vpon Egypte, and vpon that Libie that standeth on the viter border of Affrike toward the sea. On the west it is bounde with the other Libie that stādeth more into the mayne londe. The residue that runneth toward the south, ioyneeth vpon the netherland Ethiope, whiche lyeth more southerly, and is muche greater. It is thought that these Ethiopes toke name of Ethiopeus Vulcanes sonne, that (as Plinie saith) was gouernour there. Or els of the Greke wordes aythoo and ops, whereof the former signifieth to broyle, or to bourne vp with heate, and the other, in the eye or sight. Whiche sheweth in effecte, that the countreie lyeng in the eye of the Sonne, it must nedes be of heate almost importable. As in diede it lyeth in the full course of the sonne, and is in continuall heate. Toward the weast it is hilly, in the middes grauell and sande, and on the easte waste and deserte. There be in it dyuers peoples of sondry phisonomy and shape, monstruous and of hugly shewe. They are thought (as I saied) to haue bene the fyrst of all men, and those whiche of all other maye truelyest be called an homeborne people. Neuer vnder the bondage of any: but euer a free nacion. The first waie of worshippyng God (say thei) was deuised and taught emonge theim: with the maners and ceremonies there to appertinent. They had two kyndes of letters, one, whiche ware knowne onely to their priestes for matters of Religion, whiche they called mysticall, and another for the vse of the people hidden fro none. Yett ware not their Letters facioned to ioyne together in sillables like ours, but Ziphres, and shapen of men and of beastes, of heades, and of armes, and artificers tooles, whiche signified in sondrie wise echone accordyng to his propertie. As by the picture of an hauke swiftenes and spiede, by the shape of a crocodile displeasure or misfortune, by the figure of an eye, good watche or regarde, and so forth of other. Among their priestes, loke whome they sawe starile aboute as haulfe wood, him did they iudge of all other mooste holy, and making him their king, they fall downe and worship him, as though there ware in him a Godhead, or as though at the least he ware by goddes prouidence giuen them. This king for al that, must be gouerned by the lawe, and is bounde to all thinges after thordre of the contry. He his selle maye neither punishe or guerdon any manne. But loke vpon whome he wyl haue execucion done, he sendeth the minister appointed for the purpose, to the person with a token of deathe: whiche when he hath shewed, the officier retourneth, and the persone what soeuer he be, incontinent fordoeth him self. So greatly ware they giuen to thee honour of their kynges, suche a feruencie had they towarde them, that if it fortuneth the king through any mishap, to be maymed or hurte in any parte of his bodye, as many as ware towarde him, namely of householde, voluntarily woulde giue them selues the lyke hurt, thincking it an vnsitting thing the kyng to lacke an eye or the vse of a legge, and his frindes neither to halt, ne yet to lacke parte of

their sight. Thei say it is the manier also, that when the king dieth, his friendes should wilfully dispatche them selues and die with hym, for this comte they glorious and a testimony of very frendship. The moste part of them, for that they lye so vnder the Sonne, go naked: couering their priuities with shiepes tayles. But a fewee of them are clad with the rawe felles of beastes. Some make them brieches of the heares of their heades vp to the waeste. They are comonly brieders and grasiers in commune together. Their shepe be of very small body, and of a harde & roughe coate. Their dogges also are neuer a whitte bigger, but thei are fierce and hardie. They haue good store of gromel and barley, wherof they vse to make drinke. All other graine and fruites thei lacke, excepte it be dates whiche also are very skante. Some of them lyue with herbes and the tender rootes of cannes or Riedes. Other eate flesshe, milke, and chese. Meroe, was in time past the heade cite of the kyngdome, whiche stonde in an Isle of the same name facioned like a shielde, stretching it selfe thre thousand furlong alongest by Nilus. Aboute that Islande do the cattle masters dwelle, and are muche giuen to hunting, and those that be occupied with tilthe of the ground haue also mines of gold. Herodotus writeth that thethiopians named Macrobij, do more estieme latten then thei do golde whiche thei put to nothing that thei copt of any price. In so muche that the Ambassadors of Cambises, when thei came thither, found the prisoners in the gaole fettered and tied with Chaines of golde. Some of them sowe a kinde of graine called Sesamus, and other the delicate Lotho. Thei haue greate plenty of Hebenum, a woode muche like Guaiacum, and of Siliquastrum. Thei hunte Elephantes and kyll them to eate. There be Lions, Rhinocerotes, Basiliskes, Pardales, and Dragones, whiche I said enwrappe thelephautes, and sucke them to death, for their bloude. There be found the precious stones called the Iacinthe, and the Prasne. There is also cinamome gathered. Thei occupie bowes of woode seasoned in the fire, of foure cubites long. Women be also trayned to the warres, and haue for the moste parte a ring of latton hanging through their lippe. Certaine of them worshippe the Sonne at his vprieste, and curse him moste bittrely at his doune gate. Diuers of the throwe their dead into Riuers, other cofer them vp in earthen cofres, some enclose them in glasse, and kepe them in their houses a yeare, and in the meane season worship them deuoutly, and offre vnto them the first of all their encrease. In the naming of a newe king, they giue ther voice chiefly to him that is moste goodly of stature, moste conning in brieding of cattle, and of strengthe and substaunce passing the reast. The lawe hath bene, that the priestes of Memphis shoulde haue the authoritie to sende the Kinge the token of deathe, & to set vp another in the place of the deade, whome they thoughte good. They haue an opinion that ther are two Goddes, one immortall, by whome all thinges haue their beginning, and continuance vnder his gouernement, and another mortall, and he is vncertaine. Their king, and him that best deserueth of the city next vnto him, they honour as Goddes. This was the state of Ethiope from the beginning, and many yeares sence.

BVT at this daye as myne Authour Sabellicus saith y he learned of those that are enhabitantes in y contrey: The king of Ethiope (whome we commonly calle Pretoianes or Presbiter Ihon) is a man of suche power, that he is reported to haue vndre him thre skore and two other kinges. If the heade Bysshoppes of the Realme desire to do, or to haue aughte done, al is referred vnto him. Of him be giuen al benefices, and spiritual promociions, which prerogatiue the Pope hath giuen, to the maiestie of kinges. Yet is he him selfe no priest, ne hath any maner of ordres. There is of Archebisshoppes (that is to say of superiour and head bisshoppes) a great nombre, whiche haue euery one vndre them at the least twenty other. The Princes, Dukes, Earles, and head Bisshoppes, and suche other of like dignitie, when they come abrode, haue a crosse, & a basine of golde filled ful of earthe caried before them: that thome maye put them in remembrance that earth into earth must againe be resolved, and y other renewe the memory of Christes suffering. Their priestes to haue ysue, marry one wyfe, but she ones beyng dead, it is vnlawfull to marry another. The temples & churches ther, are muche larger, much richer, and more gorgeous then ours, for the moste part vaulted fro the floore to the toppe. They haue many ordres of deuout men, moche

like

ciendes should
ous and a testi-
er the Sonne,
are clad with
r heades vp to
Their shepe
neuer a whitte
barly, wherof
e dates whiche
s of cannes or
heade citie of
elde, stretching
cattle masters
h tilthe of the
d Macrobij, do
ei cōpt of any
thether, found
f them sowe a
reate plenty of
Elephantes and
agones, whiche
ade. There be
also cinamome
ites lōg. Wo-
latton hanging
, and curse him
ers, other cofer
n their houses a
n the first of all
y to him that is
gthe and sub-
is shoulde haue
in the place of
re two Goddes,
e vnder his go-
n that best de-
state of Ethiopie

le that are enha-
etoianes or Pres-
hre skore and
to haue aughte
omocions, which
a selfe no priest,
of superiour and
e least twenty
of like dignitie,
he caried before
ust again be re-
es to haue yssue,
The temples &
s, for the moste
ut men, moche
like

like to our ordres of Religious: as the ordre of S. Anthony, Dominique, Calaguritani, Augustines, and Machareanes, whiche are bound to no colour but weare some suche one as Tharchebysshoppe shall allowe. Next vnto the supream and souereigne GOD, and Mary the virgin his mother, they haue moste in honour Thomas sirnamed Didimus. This King, of all other the worthiest, whome they call Gias (a name giuen him of his mightnesse and power) is of the bloud of Dauid, continued from one generation to another (as they are perswaded) by so many yerres of successiō. And he is not as the moste of the Ethiopians are, blacke, but white. Garama the chiefe citie, and as we terme it the chābre of the king, stondesth not by building of masonrie, & carpentrie as ours, but strieted with tentes and pavilions placed in good ordre, of veluet and saten, embrauded with silkes and purples of many diuers sortes. By an auncient ordre of the realme, the king liueth euer in presence and sighte of his people, and neuer sojourneth within the walles aboute two daies. Either for that they iudge it an vncomely thing, and a token of delicate slouthfulness, or elles for that some lawe doth forbid it. His army in the warres is ten hundred thousande men, fise hundred Elephantes, and horses, and Cameles, a wonderfull number, and this is but a meane preparacion. They are throughout the whole nacion certeine houses and stockes, that are pēcionaries at armes, whose issue is as it ware branded with the marcke of the crosse, & skinne beyng pretely slitte. Thei vse in the warres, Bowe, Pique, Habregeon, and helmette. Their highest dignitie is priesthode: & next, thordre of the Sages, whiche thei cal Balsamates, and Tāquates. They attribute moche also to the giltelesse and vprighte dealing man, whiche vertue they esteime as the firste staier toclimbe to & dignitie of the sages. The nobilitie hath the third place of dignitie, and the pēcionaries aforesaid, the fourth. Whē the iudges haue giuen sentence of life, or of death, the sentence is brought to the headborough of the Citie (whom we call the Mayour) and they Licomegia: he supplieth the place of the King. Lawes written they occupy none, but iudge accordyng to reason and cōscience. If any man be conuict of adulterie he forfeiteth the fourtieth parte of his goodes, but thadulteresse is punished at home, according to the discretion of the partie offended. The men giue dowrie to those whom thei mary withal, but not to those & thei purchase besides. Their womens attire is of Golde, (whereof that country hathe plentie) of pearle, and of Sarsenette. Bothe men and women are apparelled in long garmentes downe to the foote, sliued, and close rounde about of al maner of colours, sauig only blacke for that in that contry is proper for morning. They bewaile their dead. xl. daies space. In banquettes of honour, in the place of our fruite (which the latine calleth the seconde boorde) they serue in rawe flesshe very finely minced and spiced, wherpō the gestes fiede very licouricely. They haue no maner of wollen webbe, but are eyther cladde in sarsenettes, or in linnen. One maner of speache serueth not throughout the whole contry, but sondry & diuerse, aswel in phrase as in namig of thinges. Thei haue twice in the yere haruest, and twice in the yere somer. These Ethiopians or Indianes excepted, al the reste of the people of Libia Westward, are worshippers of Mahomet, and liue afre the same sōrte in maner, that & Barbarians do in Egipte at this present, and are called Maures, or Moores, as I thincke of their outleapes and wilde rowming. For that people was no lesse noysome to Lybie in those cursed tymes (when so greate mutacion of thinges happened, when peoples ware so chaunged, suche alteration of seruice, and religion broughte in, and so many newe names giuen vnto contries) then the Sarasens ware.

¶ The. v. Chapter.

¶ Of Aegipte, and the auncient maners of that people.

A Egipte is a Countrey liyng in Affrike, or as some hold opiniō, borderyng thervpō, so named of Aegyptus, Danaus brother, where afore it was called Aeria. This Aegipte (as Pinie recordeth in his fiieth boke) toucheth on the East, vppō the redde Sea, and the land of Palestine. On the West fronteth vpon Cirene, and the residue of Affrike. On the South it stretcheth to Aethiope: And on the Northe is ended with the sea, to whom it giueth name.

The

The notable Cities of that Countrie, ware in tyme past, Thebes, Abydos, Alexandria, Babilon, and Memphis, at this daie called Damiate, alias Chairus or Alkair, and the seate of the Soldā, a citie of notable largenesse. In Aegipt as Plato affirmeth, it was neuer sene rain. But Nilus supplying that defaulte, yerely aboute sainte Barnabies tide, with his ouerflowynges maketh the soile fertile. It is nombred of the moste parte of writers, among the Islandes: For that Nilus so parteth hymself aboute it, that he facioneth it triangle wise.

The Aegiptians firste of all other, deuised the names of the twelue Goddesses, builte vp Altares, and Images, erected Chappelles, and Temples, and graued in stone the similitude of many sondrie beastes. All whiche their doynge, dooe manifestly make, that thei came of the Aethiopes, who (as Diodore the Sicilian saith) ware the firste inuentours of all these. Their women in old tyme, had all the trade of occupieng, and brokage abrode, and reuelled at the Tauerne, and kepte lustie chiere: And the men satte at home spynnyng, and woorkyng of Lace, and suche other thynges as women are wonte. The men bare their burdeins on the heade, the women on the shulder. In the easemente of vrine, the men rowked doune, the women stode vprighte. The easemente of ordure thei used at home, but commonly feasted abrode in the stretes. No woman tooke ordres, either of God, or Goddesses. Their maner of ordres, is not to make seuerally for euery Goddesses and God, a seuerall priest, but al at a shuffe, in generall for all. Emong the whiche, one is an heade, whose sonne enheriteth his rounne by succession. The men children, euen of a custome of that people, did with good wil kepe their fathers and mothers, but the women children (yf they refused it) ware compelled. The moste part of men in solempne burialles, shaued their heades and let theyr beardes growe, but The giptians shaued their beardes and let their heades grow. They wrought their doughe with their fiete, and their claye with their handes. As the Greciens do beleue, this people, and their ofspring, are they that used circumcision. Thei ordre their writyng fro their right hande towards their left, contrary to vs. It was the maner emong them, that the menne should weare two garmentes at ones, the women but one. As the Aethiopes had, so learned they of them, two maner of lettres: the one seuerall to the priestes thother used in commune. Their priestes, euery thirde daye shaued their bodies, that there might be none occasiō of filthinesse whē they shold minstre, or sacrifice. Thei did weare garmentes of linnen, euer cleane washed, and white: and shoes of a certeine kinde of russhes, named Papyrus, whiche afre became stuffe, to geue name to our paper. They neither sette beane their selues, ne ate them where soeuer they grewe: ne the priest may not lōke vpon a beane, for that it is iudged an vnclane puls. They are washed euery daye in colde water thrise, and euery nighte twice. The heades of their sacrifices (for that they used to curse them with many terrible wordes) did they not eate, but either the priestes solde them to such strangiers as had trade emong them, or if there ware no suche ready in time, they threwe them in to Nilus.

All the Egiptians offer in sacrifice, neither cowe, ne cowe calves, because they are hallowed to Isis their goddesses, but bulles, and bulle calves, or oxen, and stieres. For their meate they vse, moche a kynde of pancake made of rye meale. For lacke of grapes they vse wyne made of Barly. They liue also with fishe, either dried in the Sonne and so eaten rawe, or elles kept in pikle. They fiede also vpo birdes, and foules, firste salted, and then eaten rawe. Quails, and mallard, are not but for the richer sorte. At all solempne suppers, when a nombre is gathered, and the tables withdrawn, some one of the company carieth aboute in an open case, the image of death, caruen out of wodde, or drawe with the pencille as nere to the vine as is possible, of a cubite, or two cubites long at the moste. Who shewyng it aboute to euery of the gestes, saith, loke here: drinke, and be mery, for afire thy death, suche shalt thou be. The yonger yf they miete their auncient, or bettre, vpon the waye, giue them place, going somewhat aside: or yf the aunciente fortune to come in place where they are sitting, they arise out of their seate, wherin they agre with the Lacedemoniēs. Whē they miete in the waye, they do reuerence to eche other, bowing their bodies, and letting fal their handes on their knees. They weare longe garmentes of linnen, hemmed about the skirtes beneath, whiche they call Casiliras: ouer the which they throwe on another white

Alexandrie,
the seate of
er sene rain.
erflowynges
he Islandes :

s, builte vp
he similitude
at thei came
s of all these.
and reuelled
nd woorkyng
burdeins on
wked doune,
ut commonly
desse. Their
all priest, but
se sonne en-
that people,
they refused
their heades
heades grow.

As the Gre-
cision. Thei
was the maner
men but one.
ne seuerall to
d their bodies,
sacrifice. Thei
of a certeine
to our paper.
ne the priest
washed euery
sacrifices (for
but either the
ware no suche

y are hallowed
or their meate
they vse wyne
aten rawe, or
d then eaten
pne suppers,
pany carieth
with the pen-
moste. Who
nery, for afre
better, vpon
e to come in
h the Lacede-
their bodies,
nen, hemmed
we on another
white

white garment also. Wollen apparelle thei neither weare to the church, ne bewry any man in.

Nowe for asmoche as they afore time that euer excelled in anye kinde of learning, or durste take vpon them to prescribe lawe, and rule of life vnto other, as Orpheus, Homere, Museus, Melampode, Dedalus, Licurgus, Solon, Plato, Pithagoras, Samolxis, Eudoxus, Democritus, Inopides, and Moses the Hebrue, with manye other, whose names the Egiptians glorie to be cronicled with theim : trauelled first to the Egiptians, to learne emōgest them bothe wisdom, and politike ordre (wherein at those daies they passed all other) me thinketh it pleasaunte and necessarie also, to stande somewhat vpon their maners, ceremonies and Lawes, that it may be known what they, & sondry moe haue borowed of the, and translated vnto other. For (as Philip Beroalde writeth in his commentary vpon Apuleius booke, entituled the Goldē Asse) the moste parte of the deuices that we vse in our Christian religion, were borowed out of the maner of Thegiptians. As surplus and rochet, and suche linnen garments : shauen crownes, tournings at the altare, our masse solemnities, our organes, our knielinges, crouchinges, praiers, and other of that kinde. The kinges of Egipte (saith Diodore the Sicilian in his seconde booke) liued not at rouers as other kinges doe, as thoughte me lusteth were lawe, but bothe in their monie collections, and daily fare and apparell, folowed the bridle of the lawe. They had neither slaue that was homeborne, ne slaue that was forein bought, appointed to attende or awaite vpon them. But the sonnes of those that were priestes of honour, bothe aboute thage of twenty yeres, & also singularly learned. That the king hauing these attendant for the body both by daie and by night, restrained by the reuerence of the company about hym might commit nothing that was vicious, or dishonourable. For men of power are seldome euil, where they lacke ministres for their vnlawfull lustes. There were appointed houres, bothe of the daie and the night, in the whiche the kinge mighte lawfully doe, what the Lawe did permit. In the morning, asone as he was ready, it behoued him to peruse al lettres, supplications, and billes : that knowing what was to be done, he might giue answer in tyme : that all thinges might rightlie, and ordely be done. These being dispatched, whē he had washed his bodie emōg the Pieres of the Realme, he put on some robe of estate, and Sacrificed to the goddes. The maner was, that the Primate, or head of the spirituality (the beastes appointed for the sacrifices being brought harde to the altare, and the Kyng standing by) should with a loude voyce, in the hearing of the people, wysse to the king (that bare him selfe iustlye towardes his subiectes) prosperous health, and good fortune in all. And should further particularly recite the vertues of the king, his deuoutnes and reuerence towardes God, and clemency towardes men. Commende him as chaste, iuste, and vpright : of noble and great courage, sothfast, liberal, and one that well brided al his desires. Punishing thoffendour vnder his desertes, and rewarding the well doer aboute his merites. Making a processe of these, and such other like : in the ende with the rehersalle of the contrary vices, he cursed the wicked & euil. Then absolving the King of his offences, he laied all the faulte vpon the ministres, and attendautes, & should at any time moue the king to any thing vnright, or vnlawfull. These thinges being done, he preached vnto the King the blessednes of the life, led accordyng to the pleasure of the goddes, and exhorted him thervnto : as also to frame his maners & doinges vnto vertue, & not to giue eare to that, that leude mē should counsaile him, but to followe those thynges that led vnto honour and vertue. In thende, when the King had sacrificed a bulle, the priest declared certain preceptes and examples of excellent, & moste worthy men : written in their holy scripture. To thende that the Kyng admonished by the example of them, might ordre his gouernance iustlye, and godly, and not geue hym selfe to couetous cloinyng, and hoarding of tresure. He neither satte to iudge, ne toke his vacation, ne walked abroad, ne washed at home, ne laye with his Quiene, ne finallye did any maner of thing, but vpo the prescripte of the lawe.

Their fare was but simple, nothing but veale, and goose, and their wine by measure appointed. So that thone should nether ouerlade the bealy, ne the other the heade. To conclude, their whole life so bounde vpon temperaunce, that it might be thoughte rather

to haue bene prescribed them by a discrete Phisicen to preserue helthe, then by a politique Lawyer. It seemeth wondrefull that the Egyprians might not rule their owne priuate life, but by the Lawes. But it semeth more wonderfull that their King had no liberty of him selfe, either to sitte in iudgement, to make collections of money, or to punishe any man, vpon wilfulnes, stoute stomacke, angre, displeasure, or anye vniuste cause: But to be holden vnder lawe as a commune subiecte, and yet not to be agreued therewith, but to thincke them selues moste blessed in obeyeng & folowyng the lawe, and other in folowing their lustes most vnhappy. As being led by them into many daungiers, and damages. For suche oftentimes, euen when they know them selues to do euill, either ouercome with malice, and hatred, or some other mischiefe of the minde, are not able to witholde them selues from the euille. But they which by wisdom and discrecion, gouerne their liues, offende in fewe thinges. The kinges vsing suche an equitie, and vprightness towardes their subdites, are so tendred againe of them, that not onely the priestes, but all the Egyprians in generall, haue more care for the health and the welfare of the King, then for their wiues, their childrens, or any other princes.

He that to his death continueth in this goodnesse, him being dead, do they in general lamente. They teare their clothes, they shut vp y^e church doors, they haunte ne place of wonte comune cōcourse, they omytte all solempne holy daies: and girding them selues vnder the pappes with brode Ribbond of Sarsenet, two or thre hundred on a company, men and women together, renewe euery daye twise, thre skore &. xii. daies together, the byrriall bewailing, casting dirte on their heades, and singing in rithme the vertue of the Kinge. They abstaine from al flesshe of beastes, all meates y^e touche fire, all wine and all preparation of seruice at the table. They bathe not, thei smel of no swietes, they goe to no beddes, they pleasure not in women: but as folkes that had buried their beste beloued childe, all that continuance of time they lamente. During these seuentie and two daies (hauyng prepared all thinges necessarie for the funerall pompe: the laste daye of all, the bodie beyng enbaulmed and cofred, is sette before the entrie of the Toombe. Thereafire the custome, one redeth an abridgemente of all the thinges done by the king in his life. And if there be any man disposed to accuse the deade, libertie is giuen him. The priestes are present, & euer giue praise to his well doinges, as they be recited. Ther stondesth also rounde about the Toombe a multitude of the communes, which with their voices allowe asmuiche as is trew, and crie out vpon that, that is false, with vehemēt gainsaienges. Wherby it hath happened, that sondry kynges by the repugnynge of the people haue lien vntoombed: and haue lacked the honoure of bewrillale, that the good are wonte to haue. That feare, hath driuen the kynges of Aegipte, to liue iustly, and vpightly, lesse the people asfre their deaths, might shewe them suche dishonour, and beare them perpetuall hatred. This was the maner specially, of the auncient kynges there.

The whole realme of Egipte was diuided into Shieres: and to euery Shiere was appointed a Presidente, whiche had the gouernaunce of the whole Shiere. The reuenewes of the realme were diuided into. iii. partes: whereof the companie of the priestes had the first parte, whiche were in greate estimation among them, bothe for the administracion of Goddes Seruice, and also for the good learning, wherein thei brought vp many. And this porcion was giuen thein, partly for the administracion of the Sacrifices, & partly for the vse and commoditie of their priuate life. For thei neither thincke it mete, that any parte of the honour of the Goddes should bee omitted, or that thei, whiche are Ministres of the commune counsaill and profecte, should be destitute of necessary commodities of the life. For these menne are alwaie in matters of weighte, called vpon by the nobles, for their wisdom and counsaill: And to shewe (as thei can by their cōyng in the Planettes, and Stames, and by the maner of their Sacrifices) the happe of thinges to come. Thei also declare vnto the, the stories of men of olde tyme, regested in their holy Scripture, to the ende that accordyng to the kynges maie learne what shall profighte, or disprofighte. For the maner is not among them, as it is among the Grecians, that one manne, or one woman, shoulde attende vpon the sacrifices and Ceremonies alone: but thei are many at ones aboute the honour of their

Goddes,

by a politique
the priuate life,
ty of him selfe,
man, vpon wil-
e holden vnder
ke them selues
lustes most vn-
che oftentimes,
and hatred, or
rom the euille.
n fewe thinges.
are so tendred
haue more care
childrens, or any

they in general
unte ne place of
ing them selues
company, men
ther, the buriall
e of the Kinge.
all preparation
no beddes, they
ilde, all that cō-
auyng prepared
odie beyng en-
e custome,
And if there be
are present, &
p rounde about
e asmuche as is
rby it hath hap-
ntoombed: and
That feare, hath
ple afre their
tred. This was

was appointed
es of the realme
the first parte,
Goddess Service,
pricion was giuen
and commoditie
e honour of the
ne counsaill and
ese menne are
and counsaill:
nd by the maner
thē, the stories of
yng to thē the
ut among them,
de vpon the sa-
honour of their
Goddess,

Goddess, and teache the same ordre to their children. This sorte of menne is priuileged, and exempte from all maner of charges, and hath next vnto the kyng, the second place of dignitie and honour.

The second porcion cometh to the king to maintein his owne state, and the charges of the warres: and to shewe liberalitie to men of prowesse according to their worthinesse. So that the Communes are neither burdoned with taxes nor tributes.

The thirde parte do the pencionaries of the warres receiue, and suche other as vpō occasions are mustered to the warres: that vpon the regard of the stipende, thei maie haue the better good wille and courage, to hasarde their bodies in battaile. Their communalitie is deuided into thre sortes of people. Husbände men, Brieders of cattle, and men of occupaciō. The Husbandmen buyng for a litle money a piece of grounde of the Priestes, the king, or the warriour: al daies of their life, euen from their childhode, continually applie that care. Whereby it cometh to passe, that bothe for the skoolyng that thei haue therin at their fathers handes, and the continuall practising fro their youthe, that thei passe all other in Husbandrie.

The Brieders, afre like maner, learnyng the trade of their fathers, occupie their whole life therabout. We see also that all maner of Sciences haue bene muche bettred, yea, brought to the toppe of perfection, among the Egiptians. For the craftes men there, not medlyng with any commune matiers that mighte hindre theim, emploie them selues onely to suche sciences as the lawe doeth permit them, or their father hath taught thē. So that thei neither disdaine to be taughte, nor the hatred of eche other, ne any thing elles withdraweth them frō their crafte.

Their Iudgements and Sentences of lawe, are not giuen there at aduēture, but vpon reason: for thei surely thought that all thinges well done, muste nides be profitable to mannes life. To punishe the offendours, and to helpe the oppressed, thoughte thei the best waie to auoide mischies. But to buye of the punishement for money or fauour, that thought thei to be the very confusion of the commune welfare. Wherefore thei chase out of the chief cities (as Heliopole, Memphis, and Thebes) the worthiest men, to be as Lordes chief Iustice, or Presidentes of Iudgemētes, so that their Iustice benche did sieme to giue place, neither to the Areopagites of the Athenienses, ne yet to the Senate of the Lacedemonians that many a daie after them were instituted. Afre what tyme these chief Iustices were assembled (thirte in nōbre) thei chase out one that was Chauncellour of the whole: and when he failed, the citie appointed another in his place. All these had their liuynges of the kyng: but the Chauncellour more honorably then the rest. He bare alwaie about his necke a tablette, hanging on a chaine of golde, and sette full of sundrie precious stones, whiche thei called Veritie and Truthe. The courte beyng set and begunne, and the tablet of Truthe by the Chauncellour laied furthe, & theight bookes of their lawes (for so many had thei) brought furth into the middes among them: it was the maner for the plaintife to putte into writyng the whole circumstance of his case, and the maner of the wrong doone vnto him, or how muche he esteemed himself to be endamaged thereby. And a time was giuen to the defendand to write answere again to euery point, and either to deny that he did it, or elles to alledge that he rightfully did it, or elles to abate the estimate of the damage or wrōg. Then had thei another daie appointed, to saie finally for thē selues. At the whiche daie whē the parties on bothe sides were herd, and the iudges had conferred their opinions, the Chauncellour of the Iudges gaue sentence by pointyng with the tablet of Veritie, toward the parte y semed to be true. This was y maner of their iudgemētes.

And forasmuche as we are fallen into mencion of their iudgements, it shall not be vn-syttyn with myne enterprise, to write also the aunciente Lawes of the Egiptians, that it maie be knowne how muche they passe, bothe in ordre of thynges, and profite.

Fyrst to be periured was headyng: for thei thought it a double offence. One in regarde of cōsciēce not kept toward God, and an other in gyuyng occasion to destroy credite among men, whiche is the chiefest bonde of their felowship. If any wayfaryng man shuld espy a man sette vpon with thieues, or otherwyse to be wronged, and dyd not to his power succour & ayde hym, he was gyltie of death. If he ware not able to succour and to reskewe hym,

hym, then was he bounde to vtter the thieues, and to prosecute the matter to enditement. And he that so dyd not, was punyshed with a certayne nombre of stripes, and was kept three days without meate. He that shuld accuse any mā wrongfully, if he fortun'd afterward to be broughte into iudgement, he suffered the punishment ordeyned for false accusers. All the Egyptians were compelled to brynge euery man their names to the chiefe Iustices, and the facultie or science wherby they liued. In the which behalfe if any man lyed, or lyued with an illaful meanes, he felle into penaltie of death. If any man willingly had slaine any man free or bond, the lawes condemned hym to die, not regardyng the state of the man, but the malicious pourpose of the diede. Wherby they made men afraide to doe mischief, and death beyng executed for the death of a bondman, the free myght goe in more saultie. For the fathers that slewe their chyldren, there was no punyshement of death appoynted, but an iniunction that they shoulde stande thre daies and thre nyghtes together at the graue of the deade, accompanied with a common warde of the people to see the thyng done. Neyther dyd it seeme them iuste, that he that gaue life to the childe, should lose his life for the childes death, but rather be put to continual sorowe, and to be pyned with the repentance of the diede, that other myght ther by be withdrawn from the like wyckednes. But for the chylde that kyled either father or mother, they deuised this kynd of synguler torment. They thruste hym through with riedes sharpned for the nones, in euery ioynt all ouer his body, and caused hym quicke to be throwen vpon a heape of Thornes, and so to bee burned. Iudgyng that there could not be a greater wickednes among men, then to take awaie the life, from one that had giuen life vnto hym. If any woman with child ware condemned to dye, thei abode the tyme of her deliuerance notwithstanding: for that thei iudged it farre from all equitie, that the gilteles should dye together with the giltye. Or that. ii. should be punished, where but one had offended. Who so had in bataille or warre, withdrawn hymself from his bande, forsaken his place in the arraie, or not obeyed his capitaigne: was not condemned to dye, but suffred for his punishement a notable reproche among the whole armie. As esteemed but a villaine, vntill with his forwardnes and wel doynge, he could weare into estimacion again, & at length be restored to his former estate. And that lawe so grewe into mennes stomacques that thei thought suche kind of reproche, of all punishementes the worst, & more greuous then death. Who so had disclosed any secreete to the ennemie, the Lawe commaunded his tongue to be cutte out of his heade. And who so clipped the coigne or countrefacted it, or chaunged the stāpe or diminissed the weight: or in lettres and writings, shoulde adde any thing, by entrelynyng, or otherwise: or should guelde out any thyng, or bryng a forged euidence, Obligation or Bille, bothe his handes ware cutte of. That suche parte of the bodie as had offended, mighte for euer beare the punishement therof: and the residue takyng warnyng by his ensample, might shonne the like.

There ware also sharpe punishementes constitute, in offences concernyng women. For he that had deflowred a free woman, had his membres cutte of, because in one offence, he had comitted thre no smalle wickednesses. That is to saie, wrong, made the woman an whore, and brought in a doubte the laifulnes of her issue. But thei that ware taken in adulterie, bothe partes byeng agreed, the mā was whipped with a thousande stripes by tale: and the woman had her nose cut of, wherwith beside ſ shame she had, the whole beautie of her face was disgraced, and disfigured.

The Lawes that apperteigned to the trade and occupieng of men, one with another: ware made (as thei saie) by one Bocherides. It is commaunded in them, that if money haue bene lent any manne without wrytyng, vpon credite of his woorde: if the borrower deny it, he should be put to his othe, to the whiche the creditor muste stande. For thei so muche esteemed an othe, that thei thoughte no man so wicked, as wilfully to abuse it. And again, because he that was noted to sweare very ofte, lost vterly his credite, and name: many menne affirme, that for the regard of their honesties, it happened very seldome, that any man came to his othe. Their Lawe maker also, iudgyng that vertue was the engēdrer of credite, thoughte it good by good ordres to accustome men to good luyng and honestie,

vpon

to enditement,
and was kept three
ed afterward to
e accusers. All
efe Iustices, and
h lyed, or lyued
ngly had slaine
the state of the
ayd to doe mis-
ght goe in more
ent of death ap-
ghtes together at
to see the thyng
should lose his
pnyed with the
like wyckednes,
nd of synguler
n euery ioynt all
prnes, and so to
en, then to take
child ware con-
g: for that thei
to the gilty. Or
attaille or warre,
obeyed his ca-
notable reproche
ardnes and wel
is former estate.
nd of reproche,
ad disclosed any
his heade. And
diminisshe the
z, or otherwise
Bille, bothe his
e for euere beare
y, might shonne

g women. For
one offence, he
oman an whore,
en in adulterie,
y tale: and the
beautie of her

another: ware
if money haue
borrower deny
e. For thei so
abuse it. And
lite, and name:
y seldome, that
as the engender
ng and honestie,
vpon

vpon feare to sieme vnworthie of all reputaciō. He thought it also to be against conscience, that he that without an othe had borrowed, should not now for his own, be beleued with an othe. The forfet for non paiement of the lone, mought not bee aboue the double of the somme that was borrowed. And paiement was made onely of the goodes of the borrower, the body was not arrestable. For the Lawemaker thought it conueniente, that onely the gooddes should bee subdite to the debte, and the bodies (whose seruice was required bothe in peace and in warre) subiecte to the cite. It was not thoughte to bee Iustice, that the manne of warre, whiche hasardeth his bodie for the sautie of his cuntry, should for an interest of lone, bee throwen into prisone. The whiche lawe, Solon siemeth to haue translated to the Athenienses, vndre the name of the lawe Sisarea, decreyng that the body of no citezein, should for any maner of interest be emprisoned.

Thegiptians also for thieues, had this lawe alone, and no people els. The lawe commaunded that as many as would steale, should entre their names with the chief Prieste: and what so euere was stolen, incontinent to cary the same vnto hym. Likewise, he that was robbed was bounde to entre with the saied Chiefe Priest, the daie, time and houre, when he was robbed. By this meanes the thefte being easely founde out, he that was robbed, loste the fourthe parte and receiued the residue, the whiche fourthe was giuen to the thiefe. For the Lawe maker (seing it was impossible vtterly to be withoute thieues) thought it moche better by this meanes that men bare the losse of a piece then to be spoiled of the whole.

The ordre of Mariage among the Egiptians is not vniforme, for the priest might marry but one onely wife. All other haue as many as they wille, according to their substaunce. Ther is no child among them, though it be borne of a bought woman slaue, that is compted illegitimate. For they onely compte the father to be the authour of his kynde, and the mother onely but to geue place and nourishemēt to the childe. When their childrē be borne they bring them vp with so lytle coste, as a man would skantly belieue. They fiede them with the rootes of mercurishes, and other rootes, roasted in the embries, and with marhe Caubois, and colewortes which partly they seathe, and partly they roste, and parte giue them rawe. They go for the moste parte withoute hoson or shoes, all naked, the cuntry is so temperate. All the coste that the Parentes bestowe on their children til they be of age to shift for themselves, surmounteth not the somme of a noble.

The priestes bring vp the childrē, both in the doctrine of their holye scriptures, and also in the other kindes of learning necessary for the commune life, and chiefly in Geometry and Arithmetique. As for the roughe exercises of wresteling, ronning, daunsing, playeng at weapons, throwyng f barre or suche like, thei train not their youth in, supposyng that the daily exercise of suche, shoulde be to roughe, and daungerous for them, and that they should be an empeiryng of strēgth. Musique they doe not onely compte vnprofitable, but also hurtful: as making mens courages altogetheer womanlyke. When they are sicke, they heale themselves, eyther with fasting or vomiting: & that eyther euery eche other daye, or euery third daye, or fourthe. For they are of opinion that all diseases growe of superfluite of meate, and that kinde of cure therefore to be beste, that riddeth the grounde of the grieve. Men goyng to the warres, or traueillyng the cuntry, are healed of free cost. For the Phisicēns & Chirurgiens, haue a stipende allowed them of ordenary at the charge of the communes.

In curing, they are bounde to folowe the preceptes of the auncient and allowed writers, registred in their holy scripture. Yf a man folowing the prescripte of the scriptures can not so heale f sicke, he is not blamed for that: But yf he fortune to heale him by any other meanes then is in the scripture appointed, he dieth for it. For the lawe giuer thoughte that it was harde to finde a better waye of curing, then that f which of suche antiquite was by longe practise founde oute and allowed, and deliuered vnto them by suche a continuance. The Egiptians do worship aboue measure certeine beastes, not onely whilst they be onliue, but also when they are dead. As the Catte, the Icnemon the dogge, the hauke, the woulfe, the Cocodrille, and many other like. They are not onely not ashamed to professe the worship of these openly, but setting them selues out in the honouring of them to

the yttermoste: they compute it asmuch praise and glory to them selues, as yf they bestowed the like on the Goddes. And they go about on processio with the propre Images of them, from citie, to citie, and from place, to place; holding them vp and shewing them a farre of vnto other, which fall on their knees, and euery one worship them. When any one of them dieth, they couer it with Sarcenet, and houlng, and crieng, and beating of their breastes they all to bestrawe the carckesse with salte. And after they haue enbalmèd it with the licour of the Cedre and other fragraunt oyntmentes, and oyles, to preserue it the longer: thei bewrye it in holy sepulture. If a man haue slayne any of these beastes willingly: he is condemned to death. But yf he haue slaine a catte or a snyte, willingly or vnwillingly: the people ronnethe vpon him vpon heapes, and withoute all ordre of iustice or lawe, in moste miserable wise torment him to death. Vpon feare of the which daungier who soeuer espieth one of those lyeng dead: standing a farre, he howleth and crieth professing that he is not giltye of § death. These beastes with great attendaunce and chardge are kept vp aboute the cloistres of the Temple, by men of no meane reputation: whiche fede them with floure and otemeale, and diuers deinties, sopped and stieped in milke. And they set euery daie before them goose, bothe soddè and rosted. And before those that delight al in raw meate they sette birdes and rawe foules. Finally as I said they keepe them all with great diligence and coste. They lament their death asmoche as the death of their owne children, & bury them more sumptuously then their substance doth stretch. In so moche that Ptolomeus Lagus reigning in Egypt, when there chaunced a cowe to die in Memphis, for very age: he that had taken charge of the keepyng of her, bestowed vpon the buriall of her (beside a greate some of mony that was giuen him for the keeping) fiftie talentes of siluer, that he borrowed of Ptolome. Peraduenture these thynges will seme vnto some men to wondreful: but he wil wondre asmoche yf he cōsidre what communely is done emonge euery of the Egiptians in the funerall of their deade.

When any man is departed his lyfe, all his niere friendes and kindesfolke, throwing dirte vpo their heades, go wieping and wailing rounde about the citie vntle the Corps be buried. And in the meane season they neyther bathe, ne drinke wine, or eate any meate, but that that is most base & vile, ne weare any apparell that is gorgeous or faire. They haue three sortes of Sepulchres, Sumptuous, meane, and basse. In the firste sorte they bestowe a talentes of siluer. Aboute the seconde, twenty Markes, and aboute the thirde litle or nothing. There be certaine Pheretters, whose facultie it is to sette forth the burialles, whiche learne it of their fathers and teache it their childrē. These when a funeral happeneth, make vnto him that is doer for the deade, an estimate of the exequies in writing, whiche the doer may at his pleasure enlarge or make lesse. When thei are ones fallen at appoynte, the bodye is deliuered to the Pherettr to bee entred accordyng to the rate that they agreed vpon. Then the bodie beyng laied foorth, commeth the Pheretters chiefe cutter, and he appointeth his vndrecutter a place on the side haulfe of the paunche, wher to make incision, and how large. Then he with a sharpe stone (whiche of the country fro whence it cōmeth, they call Ethiopicus) openeth the left side as farre as the lawe permitteth. And streight with all spiede ronnethe his waye fro the company standing by, which curse him and reuile him and throwe many stones afre him. For they thincke there yet remaineth a certeine hatred due vnto him that wōdeth the body of their frinde. Those that are the sea-oners and embalmers of the body (whome they calle poulderers) they haue in greate honour and estimacion, for that they haue familiarite with the priestes, and entre the temples together with them. The bodye nowe comen to their handes, one among all (the reste standing by) vnaceth the entrailes, and draweth them out at the foresaid incision, all sawing the kidneis, and the harte. These entrailes are taken by another at his hande, and washed in wine of the country Phenicea, wherin are enfused many soote odours and drugges. Then enoincte they the whole bodye ouer, firste with Cedre, and then with other oyncet-mētes. xxx. daies & aboue. Then do thei ceare it ouer with Mirrhe & Cinamome and suche other thinges as wil not onely preserue it to cōtinuance, but also make it soote smelling. The Corps thus being trimmed, is deliuered to § kindesfolke of § deade, euery parte of

Africke.

of it
like e
of th
Whic
The n

The
bench
litle b
standi
mann
proue
And
When
the ki
thing
gentle
vp, n
his ius
earthe
which
glory
blesse
purpo
house
entere
vntle
honou

The
deliue
into v
les) m
the ma
deade
ther w
set fur
cernyn
uices,
with th
emong
the god
both p
leau
emong
those l
make t
necessi

OF t
are lik
haue v

they bestowed
images of them,
g them a farre
men any one of
eating of their
balmied it with
it the longer:
willingly: he
or vnwillingly:
ice or lawe, in
ier who soeuer
fessing that he
e are kept vp
he fiede them
And they set
at delight al in
them all with
of their owne
In so moche
e in Memphis,
n the buriall of
talentes of sil-
o some men to
done emonge

throwing dirte
rps be buried.
neate, but that
they haue three
ney bestowe a
le lile or no-
rialles, whiche
ppeneth, make
g, whiche the
at appoynte,
rate that they
chiefe cutter,
wher to make
ry fro whence
mitteth. And
ich curse him
et remaineth a
ie that are the
haue in greate
entre the ten-
mong all (the
id incision, all
is hande, and
s and drugges,
other oyncte-
namome and
it soote smell-
e, euery parte
of

of it kepte so whole (not an heare of his browes or eye liddes being hurte) y it rather lieth like one being in sleepe then like a dead corpse. Before y body be enterred, y kindesfolke of the deade signifie to the iudges, and the friendes of this passed, y day of y buriall. Whiche (according to the maner then vsed) thei terme the deades passaige ouer the mere. The maner wherof is this.

The iudges, aboue. xl. in number, sittinge on the farther side of the mere, on a cōpassed benche wheling haulfe rōude and y people standing about them: The body is put into a litle boate made for the nones, and drawen ouer to the iudges by a chorde. The body then standing before the iudges in the sight of the people, before it be cofred, if ther be any manne that haue aught to saye against the dead, he is permitted by the lawe. Yf any be proued to haue liued euill, the iudges geue sentence that the bodye shall not be buried. And who so is founde vniustelye to haue accused, suffreth greate punyshemente therfore. When no manne wyll accuse, or he that accused is knowen to haue slaundersously done it, the kinsfolke endyng their mournyng: tourne them selues now to the prayse of y dead, nothing afire the maner of the Grecians, for that the Egiptians thinke themselves all to be gentlemen alike. But beginnyng at his childehode, in the whiche thei reherse his bringing vp, nourtering and scholyng, thei passe to his mannes age, their commending his godlines, his iustice, his temperance, & the residewe of his vertues. And calling vpon the vndre earthe, goddes, they beseeche them to place him emonge the godlye and good. To the which wordes all the whole multitude crieth Amen: showtyng oute, and magnifieng the glorie of the deade, as though they shoulde be with the vnder earth goddes, among y blessed for euer. This done euery man burieth his dead, some in Sepulchres made for the purpose, and other that haue no suche preparacion, in their strongest wall at home in their house, setting vp y cofre ther tabernacle wyse. But they that for some offence, or debte of enterest, or suche like, are denied their bewriall, are sette vp at home without any cofre, vntle their successours growyng to abilite canne dischardge their debtes and offēces, and honourably bewrie them.

There is a maner emong them, sometyme to borowe money vpon their parētes corpses, deliueyng the bodies to the creditours in pledge. And who so redemeth them not, ronnethe into vtter infamie, and is at his death, denied his bewriall. A manne (not altogether causeles) mighte merueile, that thei could not be contente to constitute lawes for the framyng of the maners of those that are onliue, but also put ordre for the exequies, and Hearses of the deade. But the cause why thei bent them selues so muche hervnto, was for that thei thought ther was no better waie possible, to driue men to honestie of life. The Grekes, which haue set furthe so many thynges in fained tales, and fables of Poetes (farre aboue credite) concernyng the rewarde of the good, and punishment of the euill: could not with all their deuices, drawe men to vertue, and withdrawe them from vices. But rather cōtrariwise, haue with them that be leudely disposed: br oughte all together in contempte and derision. But emong the Egiptians, the punishemente due vnto the wicked and lewde, and the praise of the godlie and good, not heard by tales of a tubbe, but sene daiely at the eye: putteth both partes in remēbraunce what behoueth in this life, & what fame and opinion thei shall leaue of them selues, to their posteritie. And hervpon it riseth, that euery man gladly emong thē, ensueth good ordre of life. And to make an ende of Thegiptiās, me siemeth those Lawes are of very righte to be compted the beste, whiche regarde not so muche to make the people riche, as to aduance them to honestie and wisdomē, where riches of necessitie must folowe.

¶ The. vj. Chapitre.

¶ Of the Penoi, and thother peoples of Aphrique.

OF the Penois there are many and sondrie naciōs. Adrimachidā lieng toward Egipte, are like of maners to Thegiptiās, but their apparell is like to the other Penois. Their wiues haue vpon eche legge, a houpe of Latton. Thei delight in long heare, and looke what lyce
it

It fortuneth any of them to take aboute them: thei bite them, and throwe them awaie, the whiche propertie, thei onely of all the Poeni haue. As also to present their maidens that are vpon mariage, to the kyng, whiche choosyng among them the maiden that liketh hym beste, sieketh in her lappe, that afire can neuer bee founde. The Nasamones (a greate and a terrible nacion, spoilers of suche Shippes as fortune to bee throwen vpon the Sandes in the streights) towarde Sommer, leauyng their cattle vpon the Sea coaste, goe doune into the plaine cuntry to gather Dates, whiche are there very faire, and in greate plentie. Thei gather the boughes with the fruite, not yet perfectly ripe, and laie them a Sonnyng to ripe. Afterward thei stiepe them in Milke, and make soupinges and potages of them. It is the maner among them, for euery man to haue many wiues: and the felowship of their wiues, that other vse in secrete: thei vse in open sighte, in maner afire the facion that the Massagetes vse. It is also the maner of the Nasamones, when any mā marieth his first wife, to sende her about to euery one of the ghestes, to offer hym her body. And asmany as receiue her into armes, and shewe her the curtesie she comes for, must giue her some gifte, whiche she hath borne with her, home to her house. Their maner of takyng an othe, & foreshewyng of thinges to come, is thus.

Thei sweare by the menne that ware (by reporte) the best and moste iustemen among thē, layeng their handes on their Graues, or Tumbes. But for the fore knowledge of thynges, thei come to the Graues of their kyndrede, and there when thei haue praied their stinte, laye them doune vpon them to slepe: and loke what thei dreame, that doe thei followe. Where in cōfirmyng of our promise, we vse to strike hādes (as we calle it) thei vse to drinke one to another: or elles if thei lacke liquour, to take duste fro the earth, and one to licke parte of that to another. The Garamantes shonne the felowship and the sighte of all other peoples: and neither vse any kinde of weapon, or armour, ne yet dare defende them selues against other that used them. They dwell somewhat aboute the Nasamones, more vp londe. Aboute the sea coaste towarde the weste, ther bordereth vpon them the Maces: whiche shauē their heades in the crowne, and clyppe them rounde by the sides. The Guidanes (nexte neighbours to the Maces) when they giue battayle to the ostruthes, their brideng vnder the grounde, are armed with rawe felles of beastes. Their women ware prety wealtes of leather, euery one a greate manye whiche (as it is sayde) they begge of suche menne as haue lien with them. So that the moe she hath, the more she is esteemed, as a deinty derling beloued of many. The Machlies dwelling aboute the mershe of Tritonides, vse to shauē their foreparte of their heade, and the Anses their hindre parte. The maydens of the Anses, at the yerely feastes of Minerua, in the honoure of the goddesse their cuntry womā: deuiding them selues into two companies, vse to giue battaille, one parte to another with staues, and with stones: sayeng that thei obserue the maner of their cuntry in the honour of her that we calle Minerua. And the maiden that departeth the battayle without wounde, thei holde her for no maide. But before ther battayle be fought, they determine that what mayde so euer beareth her selfe mooste valeaunte in the fieldes, all the other maydens with commune consente shall garnishe her, and arme her, both with the armour of Grecia, and the helmet of Corinthe. And shal sette her in a chariot, & carye her rounde about the mershe. The same menne vsen their women as indifferētly commune, as kyen to the bulle. The children remaine with the women vntil they be of some strengthe. Ones in a quartre the men do assemble wholly together, & then looke with whome the childe fantasieth mooste to abide, him do they compte for his father.

There is a people named Atlantes, of the mounte Athlas, by the whiche they dwell. These giue no names one to another as other peoples do, but echeman is namelesse. When the sonne passeth ouer their heades, they curse him, and reuyle him with all woordes of mischiefe: for that he is so broiling hote, that he destroieth bothe them and ther cuntry.

They eate of no kinde of beaste, neither dreame in their siepe. The Aphres (whiche are all brieders of cattelle) liue with flesshe and milke, and yet absteyne they fro cōwes milke, and all cōwe flesshe, according to the maner of the Egyprians, and therefore kepe they none vp. The women of Cyrene thincke it not lawfull to strike a cōwe, for lais sake that is honoured

Apy

hono

them

Whe

some

fro th

by th

Whe

throw

godde

deade

sitting

shoul

wroug

sorte

their

vaunt

neigh

are a

the Bi

with a

These

fieldes

appar

nor to

plus o

and t

that th

po, an

selues

neithe

nomb

these

throwe

a good

faith.

The

briedin

them,

time so

uerall

cepted

drawe

From

of rain

pasture

marsh

waxeth

do not

cawe.

the fer

called

worshy

maked

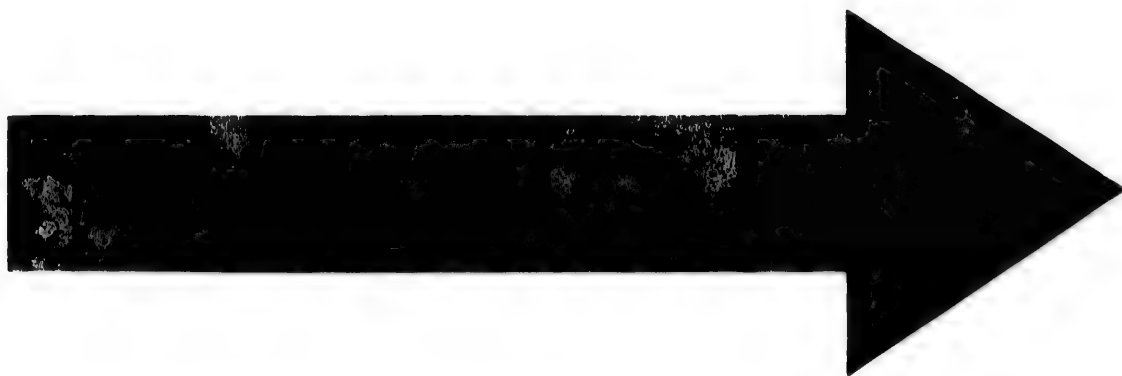
him awaie, the
r maidens that
at liketh hym
(a greates and
the Sandes in
one doune into
greates plentie.
in a Sonnyng
ages of them.
owship of their
faction that the
his first wife,
asmany as re-
mer some gifte,
g an othe, &

stemmen emong
knowledge of
ue praied their
at doe thei fo-
ille it) thei vse
the earth, and
and the sighte
et dare defende
samones, more
m the Maces:
es. The Gni-
struthes, their
r women were
they begge of
he is esteemed,
miershe of Tri-
re parte. The
f the goddessse
e bataille, one
maner of their
t departeth the
ayle be fought,
e in the field,
her, both with
chariot, & carve
ctly commune,
some strengthe.
ome the childe

ey dwell. These
se. When the
wordes of mis-
countrie.
Aphres (whiche
they fro coves
fore kepe they
Isis sake that is
honoured

honoured in Egypt, to whome also they appointe fasting, and feastfull daies, and obserue them solemnly. But the womē of Barcea abstaine bothe frō cowe fleshe and sowe fleshe. When their children are iiii. yeare olde they vse to cauterise them on the coron vaine (and some on the temples also) with a medecine for that purpose, made of woolle as it is plucked fro the shiepe: because thei should not at any time be troubled with rheumes or poses, and by that meanes they may they liue in very good health. Thei sacrifice after this maner. When in the name of their firste frutes they haue cutte of the eare of the beaste, they throwe it ouer the house. That done, they wring the necke on the one side. Of all the goddes they offre sacrifice to no more but Sonne & Mone. All the Aphres burye their deade as the Grecians doe, waing the Nasamones, which bury them as though they were sitting: wayting well when any man lieth in drawing on, to set him on his taile, leaste he should giue vp the ghoste lieng vpright. Their houses are made of wickers, and withes, wrought aboute trees, much like vnto those that we calle frākencēce trees, and in suche sorte that they may tourne them rounde euery waye. The Maries, shaue the lefte side of their heade, and lette the heare growe on the right. They die their bodie in redde, and vaunte that they come of the Troians. The women of the Zabiques (which are the next-neighbours to the Maries) driue the cartes in the warres, in the which the men fight. Ther are a people called Zigantes, wher beside the great plentie of hony that they gather fro the Bies, they haue also certeine men that are makers of honye. They all die them selues with red, and eate apes fleshe, wherof thei that dwel in the mounteines haue great plentie. These al being of the part called Libye, liue for the moste parte a wilde lyfe abroad in the fieldes like beastes, making no household prouision of meate, ne wearing any maner of appareil but gotes felles. The gentlemē, and men of honour emong the, haue neither cities nor townes, but Turrettes builte vpon the waterside, in the which they laye vp the ouerplus of that that they occupy. They sweare their people euery yere to obeye their Prince, and that they that obey in diede, shoulde loue together as felowes and companions: but that the disobediente shoulde be pursued like felons and traitours. Their armour and weapons, are bothe according to the nature of the country and contrimen: for wher thei of themselves are very quicke, and deliure of bodye, and the country champaine, and playne, they neither vse swearde, dagger, ne harnais, but onely cary thre lauelines in their hande, and a nombre of piked and chossen stones, in a case of stiffe leather hāging aboute them. With these they vse bothe to fight and to skirmishe. In his coming towarde the ennemy, he throweth his stone, fetching his ronue, and maketh lightlye a narowe mysse, though it be a good waye of: suche continuall practise they haue of it. They kieve neither lawe no faith.

The Troglodites (whiche are also named of the Grecians pastours, for their sieden and breeding of cattelle) a people of Ethiopie, do lyue in companies, & haue their heade ouer them, whome they call Tiraunte. But not meaninge in him so much tiray in diede, as some time some of our gouernours vndre a fayrer name do execute. None of them hathe any seuerall wife, and therefore no seuerall children, but bothe those in commune, the tiraunte excepted: Who hathe but one wyfe onely. To the which yf any manne do but approche or drawe nigh: he is condempned in a certeine nombre of cattelle to be paid to the Tiraunte. From ʒ beginning of Iuly vntle about middle August (at ʒ which time thei haue great plenty of raine) thei nourishe them selues with milke, and bloude, sodden a litle together. The pasture vplod being, dried away with the heate of the Sonne: They sieke downe to the marshes, & lowe groundes, for the whiche onely they be often at debate. When their cattel waxeth olde or sicke, they kyll them, and eate them, & altogether liue vpon such. They do not giue the childe the name of the father, but name him afre a bull, a rambe or an ewe. And those call thei father (the beastes I meane of the masle kinde) and thother of the femel kynde, they call mother, because ther daily fode is giuen by them. The people called Idiotte, vse for their drinke the iuyce of a whinne named Paliurus. But the men of worship and gentlemen vse the iuce of a certeine floure they haue emonge them, whiche maketh drinke moche like the worste of ʒ Renishe muste. And because thei cary great
droues



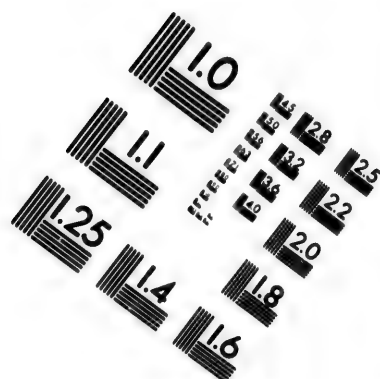
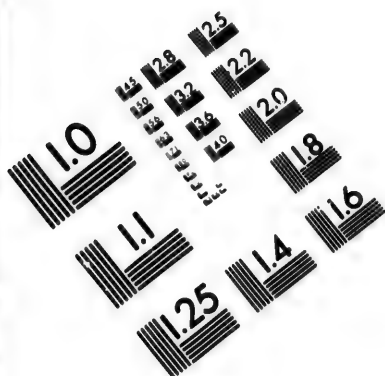
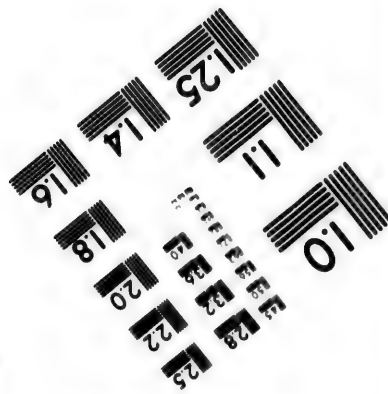
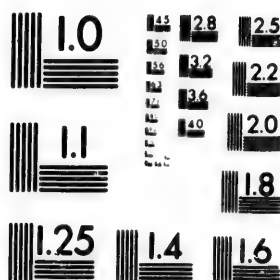


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

0
E E E E E
28
32
25
22
20
18
6

11
10
E E E E E
14
12

droues of cattelle with them, they chaunge their soile often. Their bodies are all naked, sauing their priuities, whiche they hide with felles of beastes. All the Troglodites are circūcised afre the maner of the Egiptians, sauing only the Claudians: which they so terme of claudicacion or limping. They onely, dwellinge from their childehode within the country of the Hesternes, are not touched with rasour or knife. The Troglodites that are called Magaures, carye for theyr armour and weapon, a rounde buckler of a rawe ox hide, and a clubbe shodde with yron. Other haue bowes, & lauelines. As for graues or places of buriall, they passe not. For they binde the heade, and the fiete of the dead together with witthes of Paliurus, & then setting it vp vpon some hilly place, haue a good sporte to all to bethwacke it with stones, vntle they lie heaped ouer the corps. Thē laye they a goates horne on the toppe and departe, biddinge sorrowe go plaie him. They warre one with another, not as the Grieke vpon rancour and Ambicon, but onely for foode sake. In their skirmishes, firste they go to it with stones, as afore ye haue hearde, vntle it fortune some nombre to be hurte. Then occupieng the bowe (wherin they are very sure handed) thei kille one another vpon hepes. Those battayles are attoned by the women of mooste auncient age. For when they be ones comen into the middle emonge them (as they maye do withoute harme, for that is compted abhominacion in any wise to hurte one of them) the battaille sodenly ceaseth. They that are now so siebled with age, that they can no longer folowe the heard: winding the tayle of an ox aboute their throte choke vp & die. But he that differeth to rydde him selfe in this sorte: It is laweful for another (afre a warninge) to doe it. And it is there compted a friendly benefaict. Men also diseased of feures, or anye other incurable malady, they doe in lyke maner dispatche: iudginge it of all griefes the worst, for that manne to liue, that canne now nothinge doe, why he shoulde desyre to lyue. Herodote writeth, that the Troglodites myne them selues caues in the grounde, wherin to dwell. Men not troubled with anye desire of riches, but rather giuing them selues to wilfull poureté. They glory in nothing but in one litle stone, wherin appere thre skore sondry colours: which we therfore calle Exacanthalius. They eate sondry kindes of venemous vermyne. And speake any distincte worde they can not, but sieme rather to busse or thurre betwene the tiethe, then to speake.

There is another people dwelling in that Ethiope that lyeth aboute Egipte, called Ryzophagi, whiche bestowe muche time in digging vp of the rootes of Riedes growing niere aboute them, and in wasching and clensing of the same, whiche afterward they bruse betwixt stones till thei become clāmie, & so make swiete cakes of thē, muche facioned like a brick a hande broad. Those bake thei by the Sonne, and so eate them. And this kinde of meate onely, serueth them all their life tyme plentifully and enough, and neuer waxeth fulsome vnto theim. Thei neuer haue warre one with another, but with Lions, whiche comyng out of the deserte there, partly for shadowe, and partly for to praeie vpon smaller beastes, doe oftymes wourie diuers of the Aethiopes, comyng out of the Fennes. In so muche that that nation had long sences bene vitrely destroyed by the Lions, excepte nature of purpose, had shewed thē her aide. For toward the dogge daies, there come into that coaste, infinite swarmes of Gnattes, without any drifte of winde to enforce them. The men then flieng to the fennes, are not harmed by thē. But thei driue the Lions with their stinging and terrible buszyng, cleane out of that quartre. Next vpon these, bordre the Ilophagi and Spermatophagi, the one liuyng by suche fruites as falleth from the trees, in Sommer, and the residew of the yere by suche herbes as thei picke vp in the shadowed groundes. The other, the Ilophagi, siekyng to the plaines with their wiues and their children, climbe trees, and gather, eate, and cary home: the tendre croppes and buddes of the boughes. And thei haue by continuall practise, suche a nimblenes in climbyng, that (a wondrefull thyng to be spoken) thei wille leape from bough to bough, and tree to tree like Cattes or Squirelles, and by reason of their slendrenes and lightenes, wille mounte vp on braunches and twigges, without daunger or hurte. For though thei fiete slippe, yet hange theifaste by the handes: and if thei bothe fail e them, yet falle thei so light, that thei be harmelesse.

These

Thes
selues th
wheare t
when the
residewe
not very
beyng w
for feare
ther, to
close till
beastes,
thei haue
out vpon
with arm
deuide t
thei thei
by their
them. I
suche as
sokynge
the comp

They
and he t
hogre so

The A
then the
west win
are of ve
tomed w
two hille
and all t
a long th
set al on
slade, bu
ficient v
and so c
any kind
meate si

Of bo
he that
thei drav
colours,
thē their
though
sure, as
beginne
of the di
meane w
lice, tha
broken,
aire, or
Vpon
their nei

VOL.

These folkes go naked, and hold their wiues and childre in commune. Among them selues they fighte for their places without weapon: but against foreiners with stauies. And wheare thei ouercome, there chalenge thei Lordeshippe. Thei communely dye for hongre, when their sight faileth them: whiche was their onely instrumente to finde their foode. The residewe of the countrie there aboute, do those Aethiopians holde, which are named Cynecy, not very many in nombre, but muche differing in life from the rest. For their Countrie beyng wooddie, and wilde, fulle of thicquettes, and skante of watre, thei are forced by night, for feare of wilde beastes, to slepe in trees: and toward the mornynge, all weaponed together, to drawe doune to the waters, wher thei shroude them selues into couert, and so abide close till the heate of the daie. At the whiche tyme the Bugles, Pardales, and other greates beastes, what for the heate, and what for thriste, flocke toguether to the watres. Assone as thei haue druncken, and haue well laden their beallies with watre, the Ethiopes startynge out vpon them with stakes, sharpened and hardened in the fire, and with stones, and with arrowes, and suche like weapon, at this aduantage, slea them vpon heapes, and deuide the carkesses by compaignies to be eaten. And sometyme it happeneth that thei them selues are slaine by some beast of force, howbeit very seldome. For thei euer by their pollicies and traines, doe more damage to the beastes, then the beastes can doe vnto them. If at any time thei lacke the bodies of the beastes, then take thei the rawe hides of suche as thei latest before had slaine, and clensyng them cleane fro the heare, thei sokynglie laie them to a softe fire, and when thei be thoroughly hette, deuide them among the compaignie, whiche very griedely fille them selues of them.

Thei exercise their children whilst thei be boies, to throw the darte at a sette marke, and he that hitteth not the marke receiueh no meate. By the whiche maner of trainyng, hogre so worketh in the boies, that thei become excellent darters.

The Acridophagie (a people bordering vpon the deaserte) are somewhat lower of stature then the residewe, leane, & exceding blacke. In the Spring time, the Weste, and South-west winde, bringeth vnto them out of the Deaserte, an honge nombre of Locustes, whiche are of verie greates bodie, and of wynges very filthily coloured. The Ethiopians well accustomed with their maner of flighte & trade, gather together into a lōg slade betwixte two hilles, a great deale of rubbeshe and mullocke, from places nighe hande, apte for fryng, and all the grasse and wieses there aboute. And laieng it ready in heapes aforehande, a long the slade, whē thei see the Locustes come with the winde like cloudes in the aire, thei set al on fire, and so swelte theim in the passing ouer, that thei bee skante full out of the slade, but thei fall to the grounde in suche plentie, that thei be to all the Acridophagi, a sufficient victuall. For thei poudre them with salte (wherof the countrie hath plētie) and so continually from yere to yere, liue by none other foode. For thei neither haue any kinde of cattelle, ne fishe can haue, beyng so farre fro the sea. And this maner of meate siemeth to theim, verie pleasaunte and fine.

Of bodie thei are very lighte, swifte of foote, and shorte liued, as not passyng xl. yerres, he that liueth lōgest. Their ende is not more incredible, then it is miserable. For whē thei drawe into age, their briedeth a kinde of winghed lice in their bodies, of diuers colours, and very horrible, and filthie to beholde: whiche firste eate out their bealies, and thē their brest, and so the whole body in a litle space. He that hath this disease, first as thoughte he had on hym some tickelyng ytche, all to beskratcheth his bodie with suche pleasure, as is also mingled with some smart. And within a litle while afre, when the lyce beginne to craule, and the bodie beginneth to mattre, enraged with the bittrenes and grief of the disease, he teareth and mangleth his whole bodie with his nailes, putting furth in the meane while many a greuous grone. Then gussheth there out of hym, suche abundance of lice, that a manne would thinke they had bene bared in his body: & that the bare now broken, the swarme plomped out. And by this meanes, whether through the infectious aire, or the corruption of their fieding, thei make a miserable ende.

Vpon the Southe border of Affrike, dwell there menne called of the Grekes Cynnamic, & of their neighbours Sauluages: Bearded, and that with abundance of heare. Thei kieve for the

sauegarde of their liues, greate compaignies of wilde Mastiues: for that from midde Iune, till midde Winter, there entreth into their countrie, an innumerable sorte of Kine of Inde. Whether thei flie thether to saue them selues from other beastes, or come to sieke pasture, or by some instincte of nature vnknown to manne, it is vncertaine. Against these, when the menne of their owne force, are not able to resist: thei defende themselves by the helpe of their dogges, and take many of them. Whereof thei eate parte whilst thei are freshe, and parte reserue thei in pouldre, for their afire niede. Thei eate also many other kindes of beastes, whiche thei hunt with their dogges.

The laste of all the Affriens Southewarde, are the Ichthiophagi. A people borderyng vpon the Troglodites, in the Goulfe called Sinus Arabicus: whiche vnder the shape of man, liue the life of beastes. Thei goe naked all their life time, and make cōpte of their wiues and their children in commune. Thei knowe none other kindes of pleasure, or displeasure, but like vnto beastes, suche as thei fele: neither haue thei any respecte to vertue, or vice, or any discernyng betwixte goode or badde. Thei haue litle Cabanes not farre from the Sea, vpon the cliues sides: where nature hath made greate carfes, diepe into the grounde, and hollowe Guttres, and Crieques into the maighe lande, bowting and compassyng in and out, to & fro, many sondrie waies. Whose entringes thenhabitautes vse to stoppe vp with great heapes of calion and stones, whereby the crieques serue them now in the steade of nettes. For when the sea floweth (which happeneth there twice in the daye, aboute the houres of thre, and of nyne) the water swelleth so highe, that it ouerfloweth into the maygne shore, and filleth those crieques with the sea. And the fishe folowing the tide, and dispersinge them selues abroad in y maighe londe to seeke their foode: at the ebbe when the water withdraweth, retiring together with it alway to the dieper places, and at laste remaining in these gutters & crieques, they are stopped in with the stone heapes, and at the lowe water lye drie. Then come the enhabitautes with wyfe and children, take them, and laye them oute vpon the rocques against the midday sonne, wher, with y broiling heate of the same, they be within a while skorched and parched. Then do they remoue them, and with a litle beating separate the fysshe fro the bones. Then put they the fishe into the hollowes of the rocques, and beate it to pomois, minglinge therewith the siede of the whyne Paliurus. And so facion it into lumpes muche like a bricke, but somewhat longer. And when they haue taken them againe a litle by the sonne, they sitte them downe together, and eate by the bealy.

Of this haue thei alway in store, accordinge to the plenty that Neptune gyueth them. But when by the reaso of tempest the sea ouerfloweth these places aboue his naturall course, and tarieth longer then his wonte, so that they can not haue this benefight of fissingh, and their store is all spent: they gather a kynde of great shelle fysshe, whose shelles they grate open with stones, and eate the fishe rawe, in taste muche like to an oyster. If it fortune this ouerflowing by the reason of the winde, to continue longe, and their shellefysshe to fayle them: then haue they recours to the fysshebones (which they do of purpose reserue together in heapes) and when thei haue gnabeled of the softest and gristely partes with their tieth, of those that are newest and beste, they beate the harder with stones into pieces, and eate the. Thei eate as I haue said in the wilde field together abroad, reioicing with a semblaunte of merinesse, & a maner of singyng full vtuned. That done they falle vpon their women, euen as they come to hande withoute any choyse: vtterly voide of care, by reason they are alwaye sure of meate in good plentye.

Thus foure daies euer continual, busied with this bealy bownsing chiere, the v. daie thei flocke together to go drinke, al on a droue, not vnlike to a heard of kiene to the waters, shouting as they go with an Yrishe whobub. And when they haue dronke till their bealies stonde a strutte, so that they are skāt able to retourne: euerye bodie layes him downe dronckardlike to reste his water bolne bealy, and that daye eateth nothing. The next daye agayne they fall to their fissingh: And so passe they their lyfe continually.

Thei seldome falle into any diseases, for that they are alway of so vniforme diete. Neuerthelesse they are shorter lyued the we are. Their nature not corrupted by any perswasion taken

taken of
for other
vnto the
that dwe
are moue
oute into
gether to
no moyst
as comme
what so e
of such
shonne h
vppon yo
maner of
the heade
sent, are
althoughe
continua
dwell not
Some hau
they migh
For those
caste forth
that open
in those
their natur
tyenge.
And in the
how to hel

Thus ha
onely the
A kinde o
women.
to be trayn
ioyned to
The wome
menne had
them. The
milke, and
brake the
or slue it,
that thei
theim Ama
llonde nan
Tritonis, i
llonde is v
enhabitaun
whose milke
therwith.

Aprike.

taken of other, compteth the satisfieng of hōgre, the greatest pleasure in the world. As for other extraordinary pleasures, they seke them not. This is the maner of liuing proper vnto them that lye within the bosome of the sayde Arabique sea. But the maner of them that dwell without the bosome, is moche more merueilous. For thei neuer drinke ne neuer are moued with any passion of the mynde. These beyng as it ware by fortune thrown oute into the desertes, farre from the partes miete to be enhabited, giue them selues altogether to fyshing, which they eate haulte rawe. Not for to auoyde thirste (for they desire no moyste thynges) but rather of a nature sauuage and wilde, contented with such victualle as cometh to hande. They cōpte it a principal blessednes to be withoute those thynges what so euer they be, that bringe sorowe or grieve to their hauers. Thei are reported to be of such patience, that thoughte a manne strike them with a naked sward, thei wil not shonne him, or flye from him. Beate them, or do theim wronge, and they onely wil looke vpon you, neither shewing token of wrathe, nor countenance of pitie. Thei haue no maner of speache among them: But onely shewe by signes of the hande, and nodding with the heade, what they lacke, and what they would haue. These people with a whole consent, are mayntayners of peace towarde all men, straunger and other. The whiche maner althoughe it be wondrefull, they haue kept time oute of mynde. Whether through longe continuance of custome, or driuen by necessitie, or elles of nature: I cannot saye. They dwell not as the other Icthiophagi doe, all in one maner of cabanes, but sondry in diuers. Some haue their dennes, and their cabanes in them opening to the North: to the ende they might by that meanes be the better shadowed fro the sonne, and haue the colder ayre. For those that are open toward the South, by the reason of the greete heate of the sonne, caste forthe suche a breathe, fornaies like, that a manne can not come niere them. They that open towarde the Northe, builde them preaty Cabanes of the ribbes of whales (whiche in those seas they plentifully find) compassing them aboute by the sides, accordynge to their naturall bendinge, and fasteninge them together at bothe endes with some maner of tyenge. Those do they couer with the woose and the wiedes of the sea tempered together. And in these they shroude them selues fro the sonne: nature by necessitie deuising a way how to helpe and defende her selfe.

Thus haue ye hearde the lyfe of the Icthiophagi, and now remaineth there for Aprique onely the Amazonas to be spoken of, which menne saye in the olde tyme dwelte in Libye. A kinde of warlike women, of greate force, and hardinesse, nothing lyke in lyfe vnto our women. The maner amonge them was to appointe to their maidens a certein space of yeres to be trayned, and exercysed in the feictes of warre. Those beyng expired, they ware ioyned to menne for yssues sake. The women bare all the rule of the commune wealthe. The women ware princes, lordes, and officers, capiteines, and chiefeines of the warres. The menne had nought to doe, but the drudgery at home, and as the women would appointe them. The children assone as thei ware borne, ware deliuered to the men to nouryshe vp with milke, and suche other thynges as their tendrenes required. If it ware a boye, they eyther brake the right arme assone as it was borne, that it mighte neuer be fytted for the warres, or slue it, or sente it oute of the countrye. If a wenche, they streighte ceared f pappe, that thei might not growe to hindre them in the warres. Therefore the Grecians called theim Amazonas, as ye would saie, pappelesse. The opinion is, that thei dwelt in the flonde named Hespera, which lieth in the marsshe, named (of a riuier that runneth into it) Tritonis, ioyning vpon Ethiopie, and the mounte Atlas, the greatest of all that lande. This flonde is very large and greate, hauyng plentie of diuers sortes of fruites, whereby the enhabitauntes liue. Thei haue many flockes of shiepe, and goates, and other smalle catteile, whose milke and flesshe they eate. They haue no maner of graine, ne knowe what to doe therewith.

ASie
tooke
wife of
Maney
Northe
Euxinu
with th
toward
name
ronnyr
parte o
named
broad
and th
Eastwa
are lar
and Eu
heate
hath in
On
region
and ri
writers
the son
The
liuyng
& fork
Thei v
but lo
himself
in the
kindre
theim
the do
alnight
Thei a
point
them.
who se
bancq
two of
man to

OF ASIE,

THE SECONDE PARTE.

¶ The first Chapitre.

¶ Of Asie and the peoples moste famous therin.

ASie, the seconde part of the thre wherin to we haue said that the whole erth is diuided: tooke name as some hold opinion, of the daughter of Oceanus, and Tethis, named Asia, the wife of Iaphetus, and the mother of Prometheus. Or as other affirme, of Asius, the sonne of Maneye the Lidian. And it stretcheth it self from the South, bowtyng by the Easte into the Northe: hauyng on the West parte the two floudes, Nilus and Tanais, and the whole Sea Euxinum, and parte of the middle earth sea. Vpon the other thre quarters, it is lysted in with the Ocean, whiche where he cometh by Easte Asie, is called Eous (as ye would saie toward the dawning) by the South. Indicus (of the countrie named India) and afre the name of the stoure Scythiane, vpon the Northe Scythicus. The greате mounteine Taurus ronnyng East and West, and in a maner equally partying the lande in twaine: leaueth one parte on the Northe side, called by the Grekes the outer Asie: and another on the South, named the inner Asie. This mounteine in many places is foude thre hundred lxxv. miles broade: and of length equalle with the whole countrie. About a fiue hundred thre skore and thre miles. From the coast of the Rhodes, vnto the farthest part of Inde, and Scithia Eastwarde. And it is deuided into many sondrie partes, in sondrie wise named, whereof some are larger, some lesse. This Asie is of suche a sise, as aucthorus holde opinion, that Affrike and Europe ioyned together: are scante able to matche it in greatnes. It is of a temperate heate and a fertile soile, and therefore full of all kindes of beaste, foule, and worme, & it hath in it many countries and Seignouries.

On the other side of the redde Sea, ouer against Egipte in Affrike: lieth the tripartite region, named Arabia, whose partes are, Petrea: boundyng West and Northe vpon Siria: and right at fronte before hym Eastwarde, Deserta: and Arabia Felix by Southe. Certain writers also adioyne to Arabia: Panchaia, and Sabea. It is iudged to haue the name of Arabus, the sonne of Apollo & Babilone.

The Arabiens beyng a greате people, and dwellyng very wide and brode: are in their liuyng very diuers, and as sondrie in religion. Thei vse to go with long heare vnrounded & forked cappes, somewhat mitre like, all afre one sorte, and their beardes partie shauē. Thei vse not as we doe, to learne faculties and sciences one of another by apprētechode, but looke what trade the father occupied, the same doeth the sonne generally applic himself to, and continue in. The mooste aunciente and eldest father that can be founde in the whole Countrie, is made their Lorde and Kyng. Looke what possessions any one kindrede hath, the same be commune to all those of that bloude: Yea one wife serueth them all. Wherefore he that cometh firste into the house, laieth doune his falchiō before the dore, as a token that the place is occupied. The seniour of the stocke enioieth her alnight. Thus be thei all brethren and sistren one to another, throughout the whole people. Thei absteyne fro the embrasings neither of sister ne mother, but all degrees are in that point as indifferent to them, as to beastes of the fieldes. Yet is adulterie death among them. And this is adulterie there: to abandon the body to one of another kindred. And who so is by suche an ouerthwarte begotten: is iudged a bastard, and otherwise not. Thei banquet not lightly together, vndre the nombre of thirtie persones. Alwaie foresene that, two of the same nombre at the leaste, be Musicens. Waiters haue thei none, but one kinsman to minister to another, and one to helpe another. Their townes and cities are wallesee,
for

for thei liue quietly & in peace one with another. Thei haue no kinde of oyle, but that whiche is made of Sesama, but for all other thynges, thei are most blessed with plentie. Thei haue Shiepe greater than Kien, and verie white of woulle. Horses haue thei none, ne none desire, for that their Chamelles in al nides serue the as well. Thei haue siluer and golde plentie, and diuerse kindes of spices, whiche other coutries haue not. Laton, Brasse, Iron, Purple, Safron, the precious rote costus, and all coruen woorkes, are brought into theim by other. Thei bewrie their kyng in a donghille, for other thei wille skante take so muche laboure. There is no people that better kkepeth their promise and couenaunt, then thei doe, & thus thei behight it.

When thei wille make any solempne promise, couenaunte, or league, the two parties commyng together, bryng with them a thirde, who standyng in the middes betwixte theim bothe, draweth bloud of eche of them, in the palme of the hande, along vnder the rote of the fngres, with a sharpe stone: and then pluckyng from eche of their garmentes a litle iagge, he enoynceth with that bloude seuen other stones, lieng ready betwixte theim for that purpose. And whylet he so doeth, he calleth vpon the name of Dionisius and Vrania, whom thei accompte among the nombre of goddes, reuengers of faithlesse faithes. This done, he that was the sequester of the couenaunte, becometh suretie for the parties. And this maner of contracte, he that standeth moste at libertie, thinketh miete to be kepte.

Thei haue no firyng but broken endes & chippes of Myrrhe, whose smoke is so vnwholsome, that excepte thei withstode the malice therof with the perfume of Styra, it would briede in them vncurable diseases. The Cinamome whiche groweth among theim, none gather but the priestes. And not thei neither, before thei haue sacrificed vnto the goddes. And yet further thei obserue, that the gatheryng neither beginne before the Sonne ryng, ne continue afire the goyng doune. He that is lorde and gouernour among them, when the whole gather is brought together, deuידeth out vnto euery man his heape with a lauelines ende, whiche thei haue ordinarily consecrate for that purpose. And amongest other, the Sonne also hath a heape deuידeth out for hym, whiche (if the deuision be iuste) he kindeleth immediatly with his owne beames, and brenneth into ashes. Some of the Arabiens that are pinched with penurie, without all regard of body, life, or helth, doe eate Snakes, and Adders, and suche like vermine, and therefore are called of the Grekes Ophyophagi.

The Arabiens named Nomades, occupie much Chamelles, bothe in warre and burden, and all maner cariage, farre and nighe. The floude that ronnethe alonge their borders, hathe in it as it ware limall of golde in great plentie. Whiche they neuertheles for lacke of knowledge do neuer fine into masse.

Another people of Arabia named Deboe, are for the great parte shepemaisters, and brieders. Parte of the notwithstanding, occupie husbandrie, & tilthe. These haue suche plentie of gold, that oftentimes emög the cloddes in the fieldes thei finde litle peables of gold as bigge as akeornes, whiche thei vse to set finely with stones, and weare for owches aboute their necke & armes, with a very good grace. They sell their golde vnto their borderers for the thirde parte of Laton, or for the halfe parte of siluer. Partly for that they nothing estieme it, and specially for the desire of the thynges that foreiners haue. Nexte vnto them lie the Sabeis, whose riches chiefly consisteth in encence, Myrrhe and Cinamome, howbeit some holde opinion also that Baulme groweth in some places of their borders. Thei haue also many date trees very redolente of smelle, and the roote called Calamus.

There is in that contry a kinde of serpentes lurking in the rootes of trees, of haulfe a foote lengthe, whose biting is for the moste parte death. The plenty of swiete odours, and sauours in those quarters, doeth verely stuffe y smelling. And to avoyde that incommoditie, they oftentimes vse the fume of a stincking göme, and gotes heare chopped together. Ther is no man that hath to do to giue sentence vpon any case but the king. The mooste parte of the Sabeis apply husbandrie. The residewe gatheryng of spices and drugges. They sayle into Ethiope for trade of marchandise, in barks couered with leather. The refuse of their cinamome and Cassian they occupy for firyng. Their chiefe citie is called Saba,

Saba, and of the badde. pherie one fear haue pl fourmes haue als Cielinge stones: And in compass tomlod riches and silue made. Their ca the subat encrease The A of helhou people. into that butin, like seruice.

PAnch miles bro (excepte encence. for the fr redolente whose ha thence th afire the Their c priestes, thirde th The pries tence of The ho the comm pation: iudges o nauncem either ap it with al No ma house, an sectes, a

Saba, and stoneth vpon a hyll. Their kynges succed by discente of bloude, not any one of the kindred certeine, but suche as the people haue in moste honour, be he good be he badde. The king neuer dare be sene oute of his Palace, for that there goeth an olde propheticke among them of a king that shoulde be stoned to deathe of the people. And euery one feareth it shoulde lighte on him selfe. They that are about the king of the Sabeis: haue plate bothe of siluer and golde of all sortes, curiously wrought and entallied. Tables, fourmes, trestles of siluer, and all furniture of household sumptuous aboue measure. They haue also Galeries buylte vpon great pillours, whose coronettes are of golde and of siluer. Cielinges, voutinges, dores and gates couered with siluer and golde, and set with precious stones: garnishinges of yuorie, and other rare thinges whiche among men are of price. And in this bounteous magnificēce haue thei continued many yeres. For why the greedy compassse how to atteyne honoure with the vniuste rapine of other mennes goodes, that hath tumbled downe headeling so many commune wealthes, neuer had place among them. In richesse equal vnto them, are the Garrei, whose implementes of household are all of golde and siluer, and of those and yuorie together, are their portalles, their cielinges, and ropes, made. The Nabatheens of all other Arabiens are the beste husbandes, and thriftiest sparsers. Their caste is wittye in winning of substaunce, but greater in keepinge it. He that appaireth the substaunce that was lefte him, is by a commune lawe punished: and contrariwise he that encreaseh it, muche praysed and honoured.

The Arabiens vse in their warres swerde, bowe, launce, sling, and battle ax. The rable of helhoundes (whom we calle Sarasines) that pestilent murreine of mankinde, came of this people. And as it is to be thoughte, at this daye the great parte of Arabia is degenerate into that name. But thei that dwell towarde Egipte, kepe yet their olde name, & lyue by butin, like prickers of $\frac{1}{2}$ bordre, wherin, the swiftnes of their camelles doeth them good seruice.

¶ The seconde Chapitre.

¶ Of Panchaia, and the maners of the Panqueis.

Panchaia (a countrie of Arabia) is iudged of Diodore the Sicilian to be an islonde of xxv. miles brode. It hath in it thre noble cities Dalida, Hyracida, & Oceanida. The whole contrie (excepte a litle vaine of sandie grauelle) is fertile and plenteous: chiefly of wine and encence. Whiche groweth ther in suche aboundaunce, that it sufficeth the whole worlde for the francke fume offeringe. There groweth also good store of Myrrhe, and diuers other redolente thinges, whiche the Panqueis gather, and selle to the merchautes of Arabia. At whose hande other buienge them againe, transporte them into Egipte, and Sirie. And fro thence they are spred abroad to al other peoples. The Paqueis in their warres vse wagons afre the maner of menne in olde time.

Their commune wealth is deuided into thre sondry degrees. The firste place haue the priestes, to whome are ioyned the artificers. The seconde the housebād men. And the thirde the menne of warre: with whom the catteile maisters or brieders be coupled. The priestes are $\frac{1}{2}$ heades, and chiefe of all the residewe, and haue auctoritie aswell in sentence of lawe, as to put ordre in al ciuile affaires: the sentence of deathe onely excepted.

The housebandemen, tille the grounde, and attende vpon the fruite, and bring all into the commune store. And thei that shalbe founde moste diligente in the labour and occupation: are chosen by the priestes (but not aboue the nombre of ten at one time) to be iudges ouer the distribucio of the fruite. Vpon consideracion that other by their aduancement might be stirred to like diligence. The catteile maisters, yf ther be any thing either appertaining to the sacrifices, or commune affaires, touching nombre, or weight, do it with all diligence.

No man amonge the Panchais hath any thinge that he can call proprely his owne: his house, and his garden excepted. For bothe the customes, & reuenewes, and all other perfectes, are deliuered in to the priestes handes. Who acordinge as they finde necessarie and

and expediente, iustely distribute them. But they themselues are graunted double share. Their garmentes by the reason of the finesse of the wolfe of their shiepe, especially about other, are verie softe and gentle clothe. Bothe menne and women vse ther, to sette oute them selues with luelles of golde, as cheines, braseletes, earringes, tablettes, owches, ringes, Annuletes, buttons, broches, and shoes embrauder, and spangled with golde, of diuers colours. The menne of warre serue onely for the defence of their country.

The priestes about all other, giue them selues vnto plesaunte life, fine, nette and sumptuous. Their garmētes are rochettes of fine linnen, and sometime of the deintiest wollen. Vpon their heades thei weare mitres embrauder, and garnished with golde. They vse a kinde of voided shoes (whiche afterwarde the Grieques toke vp, and called sandalium) very finely made, and of sondry colours. And as the women weare, so do they, all maner of luelles sauing earringes. Their chiefe occupatiō is to attēde vpon goddes seruice, settinge forth the worthie diedes of the goddes, with himnes, and many kindes of commendacion. Yf thei be founde withoute the halowed grounde, it is lawfull for any manne to slea them. They saye that they came of the bloude of Iupiter Manasses, at suche time as he came firste into Panchaia, hauinge the whole worlde vnder his dominion. This countrie is full of golde, siluer, latton, tinne, and yron, of the whiche it is not lawfull to carie any one out of y realme. The giftes both of siluer & golde, whiche in greate nombre of longe time, haue bene offred to their goddes, are kepte in the temple: whose dores are by excellent workmanship garnished with golde, siluer and yuorie. The couche of their God is vi. cubites longe, and foure cubites brode, all of golde, gorgeous of worcke, and goodly to beholde. And by that, is there sette a table of like sorte in euerie pointe: for sise, stuffe, and gorgeousnes. They haue but one temple, all of white stone, builte vpon pilours, grauen, and embossed, thre hundred and xxxviii. taylours yardes square, that is to saye, euen of lengthe and bredthe, euery waye so muche. And somewhat accordinge to the syse of the temple, it is sette full of highe ymages very precious: coruen and grauen. Rounde about the temple haue the priestes their habitacion. And all the grounde aboute them xxv. myle compasse: is halowed to their goddes. The yerely rente of that grounde is bestowed vpon sacrifice.

¶ The iii. Chapitre.

¶ Of Assiria and Babilonia, and the maners of those peoples.

AS saith saint Augustine, the countrie called Assiria, was so named of Assur, the sōne of Sem. And at this daie, to the ende that time might be founde an apparer of al thinges, with the losse of a sillabe is becomen Siria: Hauyng for his bounde, on the East, the countrie called Inde, and part of Media. On the West the floude Tygris, on the Southe Susiana, and on the Northe the maigne mountaigne Caucasus. It is a deintie to haue in Assiria a showre of raine: and therefore are thei constreined for the due moistyng of their lande, to tolle in the riuers by pollicie of trenching and damming: wherwith thei so plentifully their grounde, that thei comunely receiue two hundred busshelles for a busshell, and in some speciall veine, three hundred for one. Their blades of their Wheate and Barlie are foure fingers brode. Their Sesamum, and Milium (Somer cornes) are in groweth like vnto trees. All the whiche thinges Herodotus the historien, thoughte he knoweth the (as he writeth) to be vndoubtedly true, yet would he that men toke aduisement in the reportyng of them: for that thei mighte sieme vnto suche as neuer sawe the like, incredible. Thei haue a tree called Palma, that beareth a kinde of small Dates. This fruite thei fiede muche vpon, and out of the bodie of the tree, thei draw at one time of the yere a liquor or sappe, wherof thei make bothe wine and hony. In their fresh waters thei vse boates facioned round like a buckler, which the Armenians that dwelle aboute them, do make of salowe wickers wrought one within an other, and couered with rawe leather. The appareile of the Asyrians is a shirte downe to the foote, and ouer that a short garment of wollen, and last of al a faire white pleicted cassaque down to the foote agayne. Their shoes are not fastened

fastened
bans d
them v
spring
a ryng
sticke
beare i

Emo
maiden
quette,
hard fa
also for
brought
heard b
wonte t
Whether
more ce
that in
be great
was in t
whose c
or neces
bee laid
as the m
became
in a qua
commun
to bee of
other.
kepte in
ware mar
found the
but beau
side forth
These th
thoughte
tic, yet i
dowrie p
neither c
there a m
in the die
Menne
sickenes
bounden
their vow
the simple
commune
Another
that it imp
among the
any malad
to their co
be punish
VOL. V.

fastened on with lachettes, but like a poulpe close about the foote. Which also the Thebans dydde vse, and but they twayne, no moe. They suffre theyr heares to growe and couer them with pretie forked cappes somewhat mytrelyke. And when they goe abroade, they besprinkle them selues with fragraunt oyles, to be swete at the smelle. They haue euery man a ryng with a signet, and also a sceptre finely wrought: vpon whose toppe thei vse to sticke either an apple, or a rose, or a lillye, or some lyke thyng. For it is a dishonour to beare it bare.

Emongest all the lawes of that people I note this chiefly as worthie memorie. Whē their maidens came to be marriageable, thei ware frō yere to yere, brought forth into the Marquette, for suche as would buye them to be their wiues. And because there ware some so hard fauoured, that menne would not onely be loth to giue money for them, but some menne also for a litle money to take them: the fairest ware first solde, and with the prices of them brought into the commune Tresourie, ware the fowler bestowed. Herodote writeth that he heard by reaporte, that the Heneti (a people on the bordre of Italie towards Illiria) ware wonte to vse this maner. Wherupon Sabellicus takyng an occasion, writeth in this maner. Whether there ware suche a maner used emong that people (saith he) or not, I haue litle more certaintie to laie for my self then Herodote had. But thus muche am I able to saie: that in Venice (a citie of famous worthines, and whose power is well knowen at this daie, to be greate, bothe by Sea and by lande) suche maner as I shall saie, was sometye used. There was in the Citie of Venice, a place dedicate, as ye would saie to our Ladie of Pietie. Before whose doores it happened a child or twaine, begotten by a skape (whiche either for shame or necessitie could finde no mother, or for the nombre of parteners, no one propre father) to bee laide. And when by the good Citezens suche tendrenes had been shewed to two, or thre, as the mothers looked for, and manhode (to saie the truthe) doth require: the dore of pitie became so fruitfull a mother, that she had not now one or two in a yere, but three or fower in a quarter. Whiche thyng when the gouernours of the citie perceiued, thei toke ordre by commune consente, that frō thens forth suche women children onely, as should fortune so to bee offred to Pietie, should bee nourished at the commune charge of the citie, & none other. And for those accordingly, thei ordained a place wher thei ware brought vp, hardly kepte in, and diuersly enstructed acording to their giftes of witte and capacite, vntill thei ware marriage able. At the whiche tyme, she that had beautie and good qualities bothe, found those a sufficient dowrie to purchase her choyse of husbandes. And she that hadde but beautie alone, thoughte her qualities ware not so excellēte, yet for her honestie that beside forth was singular in theim all, founde that beautie and honestie could not be vnmarried. These therefore ware not permitted to euery mannes choise, but graunted to suche as ware thoughte menne worthie of suche women. If there ware any that lacked the grace of beautie, yet if she ware wittie, and endewed with qualities (together with her honestie) a small dowrie purchased her a husband in good time. But if there ware any in whō there happened neither commendation of beautie nor wit, but onely bare honestie: for her bestowyng was there a meane found, by waie of deuotiō, as we terme it whē we signifie a respecte of holines in the diede.

Menne vnmarried beyng in daungier vpon Sea or on Lande, or beyng sore distressed with sickenes, makyng a vowe for the recouerie of healtie, where vnto thei holde them selues bounden in conscience (if it fortuneth them at that tyme to be deliuered) for satisfactiō of their vowe in that case not vprightly perfourmed, used to take for their wiues, suche of the simplest as other had left. So that in processe thei alwaie founde husbandes, and the commune wealtie a diminishing of charge.

Another Lawe of the Babilonians there was, more worthie of memorie a greate deale, for that it imported more weight. And that was this. Thei had frō their beginnyng no Phisicns emong them, but it was enacted by the consente of the Realme, that who so was diseased of any malady, should comon with other that had bene healed of the like afore. And acording to their counsaile, practise vpon himself. But he that used or attempted any other waie, to be punished for it. Other write that the sicke ware brought out into the Marquet place,

where suche as had bene deliuered of the like grief afore: were bounde by the lawe, to go fro persone to persone, and shewe them by what meanes thei had bene remedied.

Thei bewrie their dead in Honie, and obserue the same maner of mournyng that the Egyp- tians do. If any man haue medled with his wife in the nighte, neither of them bothe toucheth any thyng the next mornyng, before thei be washed:

There was in Babilon a Temple dedicate to Venus, & it hath bene the maner in tyme paste, that when their came any straunger to visite this Temple, all the women of Babilon should come vnto him or them, with greatesolemnitie and freshly appaile, euery one hauing a garlande on her heade, with some seuerall knowledge of distinction one fro another, and offre their seruice to the straungier. And looke whom he liked, he must laie doune in her lappe, suche some of money as pleased him. That done thei bothe withdrew themselves fro the temple a greates distance, and laie together. That money was consecrate to Venus.

There ware certein kindredes among them, that liued with none other thyng but fishe dried against the Sonne, and brused in a Mortare, and so laied vp till niede ware. And then did thei mingle it, and kneade it with water into a maner of paste, and so baked it, & ate it. There ware thre sortes of menne that bare rule and office among them. The king, the nobles with the Seniors, and those that had serued in the warres and ware now exempte. Thei had also menne skilfull in the secretes of nature, whiche thei calle Magi, and Chaldei, suche as ware the priestes of Egipte, institute to attende vpon the seruice of their Goddes. These men all their life daies, liued in the loue of wisdom, & were connyng in the cours of the Sterres. And sometye by foretokenyng of birdes flight, and sometye by power of holy verses and nombres, tourned awaie the euilles fro menne, and benefited the with thynges that ware good. Thei could expounde Dreames, and declare the significacions of vncouth wondres. So that men ware certein of suche successe, as thei had foreshewed. Thei wente not into straunge scholes to learne their knowledge, as the Grecians doe, but learned the science of these thynges at their fathers huses, as heirtage from one generacion to another, euen from their childehode at home in their houses. Whereby it came to passe that beyng sokingly learned, it was bothe the more groundedly learned, and also without tediousnes. Thei had one vniforme and constaunt waie of teaching, and one constancies of doctrine, not waueryng and almoste contrary to it self, as the doctrine of the Greekes: where eche Philosopher almoste had his waie, and iudgemente, of the principles and causes of thynges. But these menne agre al in one, that the worlde is eternall and euerlastyng, with out begynnyng and without ende. And that the ordre of the whole, was disposed by the prouidence of the highest. The bodies aboue to haue their course, not at all aduentures and without rule, but by an inuiolable lawe of God, acording to his ordenaunce and will moste certein. Thei haue learned by long markyng and notyng of thynges tyme out of mynde, one afre another: how by the course of the Starres, to prognostique, that is to foreshewe vnto men, many thynges to come. Thei holde that of all other Sterres, the planetes are strongest of Influence, namely Saturnus. To the sonne thei attribute brightnes and vertue of life. Mars, Iupiter, Mercurie, and Venus, thei obserue moste (for that thei haue a course propre by themselves) as interpretours of the mindes of the goddes to foreshigne thynges vnto men. Which opinion is so grounded in them, that they haue called all those foure planetes, by the one name of Mercurius. as ye woulde saye commune curriers or messengers. Thei also do warne menne of many thynges, bothe hurtefull and auailable: by the marking, and knowledge of winde and weather, of raine and droughte, of blasing sterres, of the eclipses of the Sonne and Mone, of earthquakes, and manye suche like.

Furthermore thei ymagine in the firmament other sterres, subiecte in influence vnto these former, wherof some are in the haulte heauen continually in our sighte, and some in the other haulte continually oute of our sight. And as the Egypciens haue feigned them selues xii. goddes, so likewyse haue thei. To euerie of the whiche they referre one moneth, and one signe of the Zodiaque. Thei haue prophesied vnto kinges, many aduentures. As vnto Alexandre victory, when he made his exploite towarde Darius. Likewise to Hirsch-
nour

nour ar
As also
other st
the res
to appe
brought
obserua
thre tho
by the

PALES
Arabia P
and vpo
and the

The B
noured
and rich
broyled
was iudg
promised
Vpon the
wandering
ouercame

This is
is the pe
guage, a
sciences
the certai
ledge, an
wealthe,
sieke life
shal thei

The law
the rule o
them. V
before: a
Philosoph
insight, f
equitie, a
sufficientl
trarie: at
pline, and
lewe, (a
togue, as
gathered,
if I maye
brokes of
annexed t
for the res
neither m

nour and Seleucus, and other the successours of Alexandre, prophesied thei many thinges: As also to the Romaines, which had most sure successe. Thei make compte also of. xxliij. other starres: without, and beside the wale of the zodiaque, xii. towarde the Northe, and the residew towarde the Southe. Of the whiche, so many as appiere in sight, they iudge to apperteigne to the quicke, and the other to the dead. These troublesome mases haue thei broughte into the worlde more then enoughe, beside the accompte that thei make of their obseruacions, and deuinaciōs from their beginnings to Alexandres time: nombringe them thre thousande and fourty yeres (a shamefull lie) excepte thei will entreprete their yeres by the Mone, as the Egiptians doe, comptinge euery monethe for a yere.

¶ The iiii. Chapter.

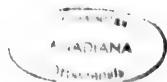
¶ Of Iewry, and of the life, maners, and Lawes of the Iewes.

PAlestina, whiche also is named Iudea, beinge a seuerall prouince of Siria, lieth betwixte Arabia Petrea, and the countrie Cælosiria. So bordering vpon the Egiptian sea on the West, and vpon the floude Iordan on the East, that the one with his waues wassheth his clienes, and the other sometime with his streame ouerfloweth his bankes.

The Bible, and Iosephus by ensample therof calleth this londe Cananea: a countrie renowned for manifolde substaunce. Fertile of soyle, well watered with riuers, and springes, and rich with precious balme. Lienge in the nauelle of the world, that it neither might be broyled with heate, ne frozen with colde. By the reason of the which mildenes of aier, it was iudged by the Israelites or Hebrues, (and rightlye so iudged) to be the country that God promised vnto Abraham, Isaac, and Iacob, flowinge in aboundaunce of milke and honie. Vpon the hope of enjoyinge of this londe, folowed they Moses oute of Egipte fortye yeres wandering in Campe. And before thei ware broughte into Cananea by Iosua, his substitute, ouercame with strong hande, one and thirty kinges.

This is the people that onely of all other may chalenge the honour of auncientie. This is the people alone y mighte haue glorified in the wisdom, and vnmedled puritie of Language, as beinge of all other the firste. This is the people that was mother of letters, and sciences. Amonge these remained the knowledge of the onely and cuerliuinge God, and the certeintie of the religion that was pleasaunte in his eyes. Among these was the knowledge, and foreknowledge of al, sauinge that Helas, they knewe not the visitour of their wealthe, and the ende of their wo, Iesus the sauoure of all that woulde knowe him, and sieke life in his deathe. But him whome thei knew not, when by reason thei should: him shal thei yet ones knowe in time when the father woulde.

The Israelites, the Hebrues or the Iewes (for all in effecte soundeth one people) liue afre the rule of the lawes, whiche Moses their worthy duke, and deuine chiefeine, declared vnto them. Without the whiche also or anye other written, thei liued holily, hundred of yeares before: atteininge to the truthe hidden from other, by a singuler gifte aboue other. That Philosophie of Philosophers, and deuine of deuines, Moses the merucilous, waience in his insight, y no multitude assembled, coulde be gouerned to continuance without ordres of equitie, and lawes: when with rewardes to the good, and reuenge vpon the euill, he had sufficiently exhorted, and trained his people to the desire of vertue, and y hate of the contrarie: at the last beside the two tables receiued in the mounte Sinah, added ordres of discipline, and ciuile gouernance, full of all goodlines and equitie. Whiche Iosephus, the Iewe, (a manne of greate knowledge, and eloquence, aswel in the Hebrewe, his natural tōgue, as in the Grieke, amonge whome he liued in notable fame not a fewe yeres) hath gathered, and framed into one seuerall treatise. Out of the which, because I rather fansie, if I maye with like commoditie, to folowe the fountaines of the first Authours, then the brokes of abredgers, which often bring with them much puddle: I haue here translated, and annexed to the ende of this booke, those ordres of the Iewes commune welthe, sedyng the for the reste to the Bible. And yet notwithstanding, loke what I fōude in this Abredger, neither mencioned in the bible, nor in that treatise, the same thus ordrelly foloweth.



The heathen writers, and the Christianes, do muche diffre concerninge the Iewes, and Moyses their chiefeine. For Cornelius the styll, in his firste booke of his yerely exploictes, called in Latine Annales, dothe not ascribe their departure oute of Egipte to the power and comaundement of God: but vnto necessitie, & cōstrainte, with these wordes:

A great skuruines, and an yche saieth he, beinge risen throughoute Egipte, Bocchoris, the king sekyng remedye in the Temple of Iupiter Hammon, was willed by responce to cleanse his kingdome: And to sende awaye that kinde of people whom the goddes hated (he meaneth the Iewes) into some other cōtre. The whiche when he had done, and they (as the poome of al skuruines, not knowing wher to become) laye cowering vndre hedges, and busshes, in places desert, and many of them dropped away for sorowe and disease: Moyses (whiche also was one of the outecastes saieth he) counseiled them not to sitte ther, awaytinge afre the helpe of God or of man, whiche they were not like to haue: but to folowe him as their capteine, and lodesman, and committe them selues vnto his gouernaunce. And that hervnto thei all agreinge, at wilde adventures, withoute knowing what thei did, tooke their iorney. In the which they ware sore troubled, and harde bestadde, for lacke of water. In this distresse, whē they ware now ready to lye them downe, & die for thirst, Moyses espiege a great heard of wilde Chamelles comming fro their fiedinge, and going into woddie place ther beside, folowed them. And iudginge the place not to be without watre, for that he sawe it fresshe and grene, digged and founde plenty of watre. Wherwith when thei had releued thē selues, thei passed on. vi. daies iourney: and so exploytd that the seuenth daye thei had beaten out all the enhabitauntes of the contry, where thei builde their Citie, & their temple. Moyses then to the entent he might satle the peoples hartes towarde him for euer: deuised them newe ordres, and ceremonies cleane contrary to all other nacions. For (saieth Cornelius) Looke what so euer is holy amonge vs, the same is amonge them the contrary. And what so euer to vs is vnlawfulle, that same is compted lawfull amonge them. The ymage of the beaste that shewed them the waye to the waters, and the ende of their wanderinge: did thei set vp in their chambres, and offre vnto it a rambe, in the despight of Iupiter Hammon, whom we worship in the fourme of a Rambe. And because the Egiptians worshippe their goddessse Apis in the fourme of a cowe, therefore thei vse to slea also in sacrifice a cowe. Swines flesshe thei eate none, for that thei holde opinion that this kynde of beaste, of it selfe beinge disposed to be skoruie, mighte be occasion againe to enfecte them of newe. The seuenth daye thei make holy day. That is to say spende awaie in ydlenes and rest: for that on the seuenth daye, they founde reste of theyr wandering, and misery. And when they had caughte a sauour in this holye daye loytering: it came to passe in processe of tyme, that thei made a longe holydaye also of the whole seuenth yere: But other holde opinion that thei do obserue suche maner of holye daies, in the honour of Saturne the god of fasting and famine: with whose whippe thei are lothe againe to be punisshed. Their breade is vnleauened. These ceremonies and deuises, by what meanes so euer thei ware brought in amonge them, thei do stiffely defende. As thei are naturally giuen, to be stille in beliefe, and depe in loue with their owne although towarde al other thei be most hatellfull enemies. So that thei neither will eate ne drinke with them: no nor lye in the chambre that a straunger of a nother nacion lyeth in. A people altogether giuen vnto leachery, and yet absteyning from the enbrasinges of the straunger. Emonge them selues thei iudge nothinge vnlawfull. Thei deuised to roude of the foreskinne of their yarde (whiche we call circumcision) because thei would haue a notable knowledge betwene thē, and other nacions. And the firste lesson thei teache vnto their children, is to despise the goddes. The soules of those y die in tormentes, or in warre, thei iudge to be immortall. A continuall feare haue thei, & a regard of heauen and helle. And where the Egiptians honour many similitudes and Images of beastes, and other creatures, whiche thei make them selues: the Iewes onely doe honour with their spirite and minde, and conceiue in their vnderstandyng, but one onely Godheade. Iudging all other that worshippe the Images of creatures, or of manne: to bee yngodlie and wicked. These and many other thinges doth Cornelius write, and Trogus also in his. xxxvi. booke.

There ware amonge the Iewes thre seueralle sectes, differinge in life from the rest of the people.

people
solemp
by cert
forehea
ware w
And the
before t
these tw
the Law
stacke t
might p
thynges
that it la
are iust
depende
saied, o
GOD sh
the soule
the daie
euerlasti
disguise
The S
and that
the soule
because
any spir
bookes o
kepyng
Sadduce
The E
companie
but for th
no woma
reported
possessed
and sloue
all was w
euer thei
worldly a
of the ch
together
yng. Th
time thei
dicions.
the waie
sette in a
Thei woul
righte sid
ease natur
mente, th
thei used
used a ver
theim, for

Aste.

people. The Phariseis, the Sadduceis, and the Esseis. The Phariseis used a certaine rough solemnesse of appareille, and a very skante fare: determining the Tradicions of Moyses, by certein ordenaunces and decrees, whiche thei themselves sette vp. Thei caried vpon their foreheades, and on their lefte armes, pretie billetes of Paper, facioned for the place, wherein were written the tenne preceptes of f two Tables. And this did thei for that the Lorde saith: And these shall thou haue (meanyng the commaundementes) as a remembrance hāging before thine eyes, and alwaie ready at thine hande. These were called their Philacteries, of these two woordes Phylaxi and Thorat, wherof the former signifieth to Kiepe, and the other, the Lawe. These menne also hauyng vpon their skirtes muche broder gardes then other, stacke them full of Thornes, whiche beatyng and prickyng them on the hieles as thei wente, might putte them in remembrance of the cōmaundemētes of God. Thei attributed all thynges vnto God, and destenie, whiche thei call Emarmeni. Neuertheles thei graunted, that it laie muche in the free choise of manne: either to doe, or not to doe the thinges that are iust and godlic, but yet destenie to helpe in al cases. Whiche destenie thei thought to depende of the influence of the bodies aboue. Looke what their superiours and Elders had said, or answered to any demaunde, thei neuer woulde contrarie it. Thei believed that GOD should come to Iudge the worlde, and that all soules were euerlastyng. And as for the soules of the good, thei helde opinion, that thei passed from one bodie to another, vntill the daie of the generall resurrection. But the soules of the wicked, to be plunged into euerlasting prison & dōgeō. The name of Pharisei was giuē vnto them for that thei were disguised fro f cōmune maner of other, as ye would saie, Sequestred.

The Sadduceis denied that there was any destenie, but that God was the beholder of all, and that it laie in the choise of manne, to doe well or euill. And as for ioye or sorowe that the soule should suffre afre this life, thei denied. Neither believed thei any resurrection: because thei thoughte the soule died with the bodie. Thei would not belieue that there were any spirites, good or bad. Neither woul'd thei receiue more of the Bible, then the fīue bookes of Moyses. Thei were sterne men, and vncompaignable: not so muche as ones keepyng felowshippe one with another. For the whiche sternes, thei named them selues Sadduceis, that is to saie iuste menne.

The Esseis were in all pointes verie like vnto our cloisterers, abhorryng mariage and the companie of women. Not for that thei condemned Mariage, or the procreation of issue, but for that thei iudged a manne ought to be ware of the intemperauncie of women. And that no woman kept herself true to her husbāde. Oh shameful opinion, and muche better to be reported by the dead, then to be credited of the quicke, bee it neuer so true. Thei possessed all thinges in commune. As for checkes or reuilinges, was to the muske and honie, and slouely vndastinesse, a greate comelinesse. So that thei were alwaie in a white surcote, all was well. Thei had no certein abiding in any one citie: but Celles ouer all, where so euer thei became. Before the rising of the Sonne, thei spake nothing that touched any worldly affaire: but praised the sonne to rise. After whose vprijste thei laboured vntill eleuen of the clocke. And then, washyng firste their whole bodie in water: thei satte doune together to meate, in solemne silence euey manne. Swearing they compted forswear- yng. Thei admitted no manne to their secte, vndre a yere of probation. And afre what time thei had receiued him: yet had thei two yeres more to proue his maners and condicions. Suche as thei tooke with a faulte, thei draue fro their cōpaignie. Enioyned by the waie of penance, to go a grasing like a beast, vntill his dieng daie. When tenne were sette in a companie together, no one of them spake without the consēte of the other nyne. Thei would not spitte within the precincte of the compaignie emong them, ne yeat on their righte side. They kept the Sabboth with suche a precisenesse, that thei would not that daie, ease nature of the belie burden. And whē vpon other daies, nature forced them to that easement, thei caried with them a litle spade of woode, wherewith in place moste secrete, thei used to digge a litle pit, to laie their bealie in. And in the time of doying, thei also used a vreye great circumspection, that their clothes laie close to the grounde rounde aboute them, for offending (saied thei) of the Maiestie of God. Vpon whiche respecte, thei also couered

couered and bewried it, assonne as thei had done that nature required. Thei ware of verie long life, by the reason of the vnifourme diete that thei vsed, alwaie afre one rate of fare: whiche was onely the fruite of their countrie Balm^e. Thei occupied no money. If any manne suffered for wel doying, or as wröfully c^ondempned, that thoughte thei the beste kinde of death. Thei helde opinion that all soules were made in the beginnyng, and put in to bodies from tyme to tyme, as bodies did niede them. And for the good soules beyng ridde of their bodies againe, thei saied there was a place appointed beyond the Weast Occean, where thei take repose. But for the euill, thei appointed places toward the East, as more stormie colde & vnpleasante. Ther ware amöge them that prophecied thinges. Some of them gaue themselves to wedlocke: least if thei should be of the oppinion that men oughte to absteyne vitrely from women, mankind should fade, and in processe be extincte, yeat vsed thei the compaignie of their wiues nothing at riote.

The lande of Siria (whereof we haue named Iewrie a parte) is at this daie enhabited of the Grekes, called Griphones, of the Iacobites, Nestorians, Sarracenes, and of two Christian nations, the Sirians and Marouines. The Sirias vse to saie Masse, afre the maner of the Grekes: and for a space ware subiecte to the churche of Rome.

The Marouines agre in opinion with the Iacobites. Their lettres and tongue are al one with the Arabique. These Christianes dwelle at the Mounte Libanus. The Sarracenes, whiche dwelle aboute Ierusalē (a people valeaūt in warre) delighte muche in housbandrie and tilthe. But contrary wise, thei that enhabite Siria, in that pointe are nothing worth. The Marouines are feawe in nombre, but of all other thei are the hardieste.

¶ The. v. Chapitre.

¶ Of Media, and the maners of the Medes.

MEDIA (a countrie of Asia) as Solinus writeth, toke the name of one Medus, the sonne of Medea & Egeus, kyng of Athenes. Of whō the people ware also called Medes. But Iosephus affirmeth that it was so named of Medius, the sōne of Iapheth. This countrie, as it is sene in Ptolomie, hath on the Northe, the sea named Hircanum, on the West Armenia, and Assiria, on the Southe Persie, and on the east Hircania and Parthia. Sauing that betwixte Parthia and it, there ronneth a mounteigne, that seperateth their frontiers. The feactes that thei mooste exercise, are shootyng and ridyng. Wherein thei be righte experte, & almoeste (for those quartres) without matche or felowe. It hathe bene there a longe continued and aunciente custome, to honour their kynges like goddes. The rounde cappe, whiche thei cal Tiara: and their long slieued garmentes, passed from them to the Persians, together with the Empire. It was a peculier maner vsed of the Kynges of the Medes, to haue many wiues. Which thyng was afrewarde also taken by of the communes: so that at lengthe it was thought vnieste to haue feawer wiues then seuen. It was also a goodlie thyng for a woman to haue many husbendes: and to be without fine at ones, was compted a miserable state. The Medes entre leagues and couenauntes, both afre the maner of the Grekes, and also with drawing bloud vpo some parte of the arme aboute the shouldre, one of another, whiche thei vse to licke eche of others body. All that parte of the cōtrey that lieth towarde the Northe, is barrein and vnfructefulle. Wherefore thei vse to make store of their fruite, and to drie them, and so to worke them into a masse or lumpe for their foode. Of rosted Almondes thei make their breade: and their wine of the rootes of certain herbes. Thei eate great plentie of the fleshe of wilde beastes.

¶ The. vi. Chapitre.

¶ Of Parthia, and the maner of the Parthians.

A Certaine nombre of Outlawes and Banished menne, called Parthie, gaue name to this Countrie: Afre suche time as by train, and stealth thei had gotten it. On the Southe it hath Carmania, on the North Hircanum, on the Weast the Medes, and on the Easte the country

countr
a peop
estime
call the
a nomb
afterwa
had the
but also
warres
reherse
part of
whole b

Afre
Whome
kinges
Capteig
speache
vnlike t
a man m
armour,
slaves at
aucthori
of them
of as de
the darte
ther, ac
horsebac
the Part
nombre
stripes,
skirmish
but a dro
good in
teine the
whottest
newe on
arte thou
laced wit
times pa
chaunge
greuously
by gener
of them.
giue thei
issue. T
horsebac
with thei
priuate a
for the sl
dogges b
couer the
worship
craftie, d

country of Arabia. The countrie is hilly, and full of woddes, and of a barreine soyle. And a people which in the time of the Assiriens, and Medes, ware scante knowne, and litle estiemed. In so moche that when $\S$ highe gouernaunce of the whole (whiche the Grekes call the Monarchie) was yelded into the hâdes of the Persians: thei ware made a butin, as a nombre of raskalles without name. Laste of all thei ware slaues to the Macedonies. But afterward in processe of time, suche was the valeaütens of this people, and such successe had thei: that thei became lordes, not ouer their neighbours onely rounde aboute them, but also helde the Romaines (the conquerours of the worlde) suche tacke, that in sondrie warres they gaue them great ouerthrowes, and notablie endamaged their power. Plinie reherseth. xiiii. kingdomes of the Parthians. Trogus calleth them Emperours of the East part of the worlde. Asthough they, and the Romaines holding the Weste, had deuided the whole betwixe them.

Afre the decaye of the Monarchie of the Macedonians, this people was ruled by kinges. Whome generally by the name of the first king, thei termed Arsaces. Nexte vnto the kinges maiestie, the communitie bare the swaye. Oute of whome they chase bothe their Capteignes for the warres, & their gouernours for the peace time. Their language is a speache mixte of the Scithians, & Medes. Their appareil at the firste, was afre their facion vnlike to all other. But when thei grewe vnto power, louse and large, & so thinne: that a man mighte see thoroughe it, afre the facion of the Medes. Their maner of weapon, & armour, was the same that the Scithians vsed. But their armies ware altogether almoste of slaues and bondemen, contrary to the maner of other peoples. And for that no manne hath auctoritie amonge them to giue fredome vnto anye of this bonde ofspring: The nombre of them by continuance, came vnto a greate multitude. These do thei bringe vp, and make of as deerly, as thei do of their owne children: teachinge them to ride, to shote, to throwe the darte, and suche like feates, with great diligence, and handsomenes. Eche communer, according to his substaunce, findeth a greate nombre of these to serue the kinge on horsebacke, in all warres. So that at what time Anthonie the Romaine made warre vpon the Parthians, wher thei mette him with fyftie thousande horsemen: there ware of the whole nombre but eyghte hundred fre borne. They are not skylfull to fighte it oute at hande stripes, ne yeat in the maner of besieging or assaulting: but all together afre the maner of skirmishe, as thei spie their aduantage. Thei vse no trompet for their warninges or onettes but a dromme: neither are thei able to endure longe in their fighte. For yf they ware so good in continuance, as thei be violente at a brunte: ther ware no multitude able to susteine their force. For the moste parte thei breake of, when the skirmishe is euen at the whottest. And within a while afre thei feigne a flight, wher with thei beginne againe a newe onette. So when thou thinkest thy selfe mooste sure of the honour of the field, the arte thou at the point of the hardest hasarde. Their horsmen vse armour of mayle entelaced with fethers: bothe for their owne defence, & the defence also of their horses. In times passed thei occupied no golde ne siluer, but only in their armour. Vpon regarde of chaunge in their luste, thei mary echeone many wiues, and yet punishe thei none offe so greuously as adultery. For the auoyding whereof, thei doe not onely forbidde their women by generall restraunte from all feastes, and banckettinges of men: but also from the sighte of them. Some neuertheless do wrighte, amonge the whiche Strabo is one, that thei vse to giue their wiues sometime to their friendes, as in $\S$ waye of mariage, that thei maye so haue issue. Thei eate none other fleshe but suche as thei kille at the chace. Thei be euer on horsebacke, whether thei go to the field or the banket, to bye, to selle, to cõmune of aughte with their friende, or to do any thing that is to be done. Yea thei dispatche al commune and priuate affaires, sittinge on horsebacke. And this is to be vnderstonden of the fre borne: for the slaues are alwaies on foote. Their buriall for all menng (sauinge the kinge) is the dogges bealy, and the kytes. But when thei or suche like haue eaten of, the fleshe, thei couer thei the bare bones with earth. Thei haue great regarde vnto their goddes, & the worship due vnto them. Thei are men of a proude nature, busie medlers, and sedicious, craftie, deceitfull, malaparte, and vnshamefaced: for thei holde opinion that it becometh the

the man aswell to be sterne, as the woman to be milde. Thei be euer in some stirre, either with their neighbours, or elles amonge them selues. Men of fewe wordes, and readier to doe, then to saye. And therefore whether it go with them or against the, thei lappe it vp in scilence. Thei obey not their superiours for any reuerence, but for feare. Altogether giuen to lechery, and yet skante in fledinge. No farther trewe of worde or promesse, then semeth them expediente for their owne behoue.

¶ The. vii. Chapter.

¶ Of Persia, and the maners and ordinaunces of the Persians.

Persia (a countrie of the Easte) was so called of Persius the Sonne of Jupiter and Danae. Of whome the chiefe citie of the kingedome also, was named Persepolis, whiche in Englishe soudeth Perseboroughe (or as we corruptly terme it) Perseburie, and the whole naciō Persiens. This countrie as Ptolemie writeth in his flueth booke, hath on the Northe, Media: on the West, Susiana: on the Easte, the two Carmanias: and on the Southe, an inshot of the Sea, called the Bosome of Parthia. The famous cities thereof, were Axiama Persepolis and Diospolis. By the name of Jupiter thei vnderstode the whole heauen. Thei chiefly honour the Sonne, whom thei calle Mitra. Thei worship also the Mone, the planet Venus, the fyre, the earthe, the water, and the windes. Thei neither haue aultare nor temple, nor ymage, but celebrate their deuine seruice vndre the open heauen vpon some highe place for that purpose appoincted. In doinge sacrifice thei haue no farther respect; but to take awaye the life from the beaste. As hauing opinion, that forasmuche as the goddes be spirites, thei delighte in nothinge but the spiritual parte, the soule. Before they slea it, thei set it aparte by them, with a corone vpon the heade, and heape vppon it many bittre bannings and curses. Some of the naciō notwithstandinge, when thei haue slaine the beaste: vse to lay parte of the offalle in the fire.

When thei sacrifice vnto the fire, they timbre vp drie stickes together, cleane without pille or barcke. And after what time thei haue powred on neates tallowe, and oyle, thei kindle it. Not blowing with blaste of blowesse or mouthe: but makinge winde as it ware with a ventile, or trenchour, or suche like thinge. For yf any manne either blowe into it, or caste in any deade thing, or any durte, or puddle, it is deathe to the doer. The Persians beare suche reuerence to their floudes, that thei neither wasshe, pysses, nor throwe deade carcase into them. No not so moche as spitte into the: But very reuerentlye honour their water after this maner. Comminge to lake, mere, floude, ponde, or springe: thei trenche out a litle dicke, and ther cut thei the throte of the sacryfice. Being well ware, that no droppe of blode sprinckle into the water by. As though all water ware polluted and vnhalowed ouer all: yf that should happen. That done their Magi (that is to say men skylful in the secretes of nature) layeng the flesh vppon a heape of Myrtus, or Laurelle, and tymbryng smalle wandes about, sette fyre thereon & brenne yt. And pronouncyng certain curses, they myngle oyle, mylke, and hony together, and sprinkle into the fyre. But these cursinges make they not against the fyre ne water. But against the earthe, a greate whyle togethether: holding in their hande a boudle of smalle myrte wandes. Their kinges reigne by successiō of one kindred or stocke. To whom who so obeyeth not, hath his heade & armes stricken of: and so wythout buriall is throwe out for karreine. Policritus sheweth that euery king of the Persians, buyldeth his howse vpon a greate hille: and ther houndeth vp all the treasure, tribute, & taxe that he receyueth of the people: to be a recorde after his deathe how good a husbonde he hath bene for the cōmune wealthe. Suche of the subiectes as dwelle vpon the sea coast, are taxed to paie money. But those that inhabite toward the mydde londe: suche cōmodities as the quartre beareth or hath wher they dwelle. As apothecary druggues, woolle, coulours, & suche like and catelle accordingly. He is not permitted any one cause, to putte any man to death. Neither is it lawfull for any other of the Persians to execute any thng against any of his house or stock, that maie sieme in any wyse cruelle. Euery one of them marie many wiues: & holde many cōcubines also beside, for the encrease of issue.

The

The
Fiue ye
vased en
if the c
Thei va
grome
mel: a
twentie
tongue
appoin
pretie s
Whiche
to conf
lesson a
yeres,
childho
at the l
is at lea
the less
rowme
The fru
But thei
quette,
whether
bowe,
thei pla
and foul
And the
it maie
reueren
byeng a
a kinde
heades
woorke.
like a c
The ou
Medleis
doe wea
about th
garnish
debate
mined,
one ano
forewar
ouer wi
children
Thus ha
Heroc
thei com
the Gre
so euer
debt wa
their de

Aste.

The king Proclaime the reward vnto him, that within one yere begetteth most children. Fiue yere afte thei are begotten, thei come not in the fathers sight, by a certain ordonnance vsed among them: but are brought vp continually among the women. To the ende that if the childe fortune to dye in the time of his infancie, their fathers grief maie be the lesse. Thei vse not to marie but in one tyme of the yere: toward midde Marche. The bridegrome eateth to his supper, an apple of that countrey, or a litle of the maribone of a Chamel: and so without any farther banquetting goeth to bedde. From fiue yeres olde, to twentie and fowre, thei learne to ride, to throwe the Darte, to shoote, and chiefly to haue a tongue voide of all vntrute. For their nourituryng and trainyng in good maners, thei haue appointed them Masters of greatesobrenes and vertue, that teache them dieties, and pretie songes, conteinyng either the praises of their Goddes, or of some worthy Princes. Whiche sometime thei sing, and sometyme recite without note: that so thei mighte learne to conformance their liues vnto theirs, whose praises thei sieme themselues to allowe. To this lesson assemble thei alwaie together, at the calle of a Trompette. And as thei growe into yeres, an accompt is required of the how well thei haue borne awaie the lessons of their childehode. Thei vse to runne the race, & to course, bothe on horsebacke and on foote: at the leadyng of some noble mannes sonne, chosen for the nones. The field for the race, is at least thre mile and thre quarters longe. And to the ende that heate or colde should the lesse trouble them, thei vse to wade ouer brookes, and swimme ouer riuers, & so to rowme and to hunte the fieldes, and to eate & drinke in their armour, and wette clothes. The fruytes that thei eate are akeornes, wild Peares, and the fruite of the Terebinthine tree. But their daiely foode afte their ronnyng, and other exercises of the bodie: is hard Bisquette, or a like crustie breade, Hortechocques, Gromelle sede, a litle roste flesshe or sodden, whether thei lust: and faire water their drinke. Their maner of Huntynge, is with the bowe, or the Darte on horsebacke. Thei are good also in the slyng. In the forenoone thei plante and graffe, digge vp settes, stubbe vp rootes, make their owne armour, or fissue and foule, with the Angle or nette. Their children are decked with garnishynges of golde. And their chief iuelle is the precious stone Piropus, whiche thei haue in suche price, that it maie come vppon no deade corps. And that honour giue thei also to the fire, for the reuerence thei beare there vnto. From twentie, till fuetie: thei folowe the warres. As for byeng and selleng, or any kinde of Lawe prattle, thei vse not. Thei cary in their warres, a kinde of shildes facioned like a losenge, a quiure with shaftes, & a curtilace. On their heades a copintancke, embatled aboute like a turrette, and a brestplate embossed, of skaled worke. The princes and menne of honour did weare a treble Anaxirides, facioned muche like a coate armour, and a long coate doune to the knees, with hangyng slieues acordyng. The outside colours, but the lining white. In Sommer thei weare purple, and in Wintre Medleis. The abillementes of their heades, are muche like the frontettes that their Magj doe weare. The comune people are double coated doune to the midde Leggue, and haue about their heade a greates rolle of Sendalle. Their beddes and their drinking vessell, are garnished with gold. Whē thei haue matier of moste importance to common of, thei debate and cōclude in the middes of their cuppes: thinkyng it muche surer that is so determined, then afte any other sober sorte. Acquaintaunce mieting of equall degre, griete one another with a kisse. But the inferiour mieting with his bettre, enclineth his bodie foreward with lowe reuerence. Thei bewrie their corpses in the grounde, cearyng them all ouer with waxe. Their Magicens thei leaue vnbewried, for the foules to disspetche. The children there, by an ordonnance no where elles vsed: doe carnally knowe their mothers. Thus haue ye heard what the maners of the Persians ware sometyme.

Herodotus rehereth certaine other, their facions not vtterly vnworthe the tellynge. That thei compted it vilanie to laughe, or to spitte before the kyng. Thei thought it fondenes in the Grekes, worthe to be laughed at, to imagine goddes to be sprong vp of menne. What so euer was dishoneste to be done, that thoughte thei not honest to be spokē. To be in debt was muche dishonour, but of all thinges moste vile for to lie. Thei vse not to bewrie their deade bodies, vntill thei haue bene torne with dogges, or with fowles. And the

VOL. V.

P

parentes

The

parentes brought to niednesse, vse there to make cheuisaunce of their daughters bodies, whiche among no nation elles was euer allowed. Howbeit some holde opinion, that it was also the propertie of the Babilonians. The Persians at this daie, beyng subdued of the Saracenes, and bewitched with Mahometes brainsicke wickednesse, are cleane out of memorie. A people in those daies, whiche through their greate hardnesse and force, ware of long tyme Lordes of the Easte parte of the worlde. But now tumbled cleane from their aunciente renowme, and bewried in dishonour.

¶ The. viij. Chapitre.

¶ Of Ynde, and the vncouth trades and maners of life of the people therein.

YNde, a Countrey also of the Easte, and the cloying vp of Asia toward that quartre: is saied to be of suche a maigne syse, that it maie be copared with the thirde parte of the whole earth. Pomponius writeth, that alöge the shore, it is fowrtie daies sailyng the nighte also comprised therein.

It tooke the name of the floude called Indus, whiche closeth vp the lande on the Weste side. Beginnynng at the Southe sea, it stretcheth to f Sonne risynge: And Northward to the moüt Caucasus. There are in it many greate peoples: and Townes and Cities so thicke, that some haue reported them in nombre fwe thousande. And to saie truthe, it oughte not to sieme greatly straunge vnto folkes, though the coutrie be reported to haue suche a nombre of Townes, or to be so populous: considering that of all other, the Yndiens alone, neuer discharged them selues of any ouerplus of issue, as other haue done: but alwaie kepte their owne offsprynge at home in their owne countrey. Their principall floudes are Ganges, Indus, and Hypanis. But Ganges farre passeth in greatnes the other twaine. This lande by the benefite of the battling breathe of the gëtle Weast winde, reapeth corne twice in the yere. And other Wintre hath it none, but the bittre blastes of Theasterly windes called Etesiae. Thei lacke wine, and yet some men reporte, that in the quartre called Musica, there groweth a good wine grape. In the Southe parte thereof, groweth Nardus, Cinnamon, Peper and Calamus aromaticus: as doeth in Arabia and Aethiope. The woodde Ebenum (whiche some suppose to be our Guayacum) groweth there, and not elles where. Likewise of the Popiniaye and the Vnicorne. As for precious stones, Beralles, Prāsnes, Diamantes, fire Carbuncles and Pearles of all sortes, be found there in greate plentie. Thei haue two Sommer, softe pimpelyng windes, a milde aier, a rancke soile, and abundaunce of watre. Diuerse of them therefore liue an hundred & thirtie yeres. Namely among the Musicanes. And among the Serites, yet somewhat longer.

All the Yndians generally, weare lög heare: died either afre a bright ashe coulour, or elles an Orange tawnie. Their chief ieuelles, are of Pearle and precious stones. Their appareille is verie diuers: and in fewe, one like another. Some go in Mantles of Wollen, some of Linnen some naked, some onely briedhed to couer the priuities, and some wrapped aboute with pilles, and lithe barkes of trees. Thei are all by nature blacke of hewe: eue so died in their mothers wöbe acording to the disposicio of the fathers nature, whose siede also is blacke: as like wise in the Aethiopians. Talle men and strongly made. Thei are very spare fieders, namely when thei are in Campe. Neither delighte thei in muche preasse. Thei are as I saied, greate deckers and trimmers of them selues, haters of theft. Thei liue by lawe, but not written. Thei haue no knowledge of lettres, but administer altogether without booke. And for f thei are voide of guile, and of very sobre diet: all thing prospereth well with the. Thei drinke no wine, but when thei Sacrifie to their goddes. But their drinke is a bruage that thei make sometyme of Rize, sometyme of Barlie. Their meate for the mooste parte is soupynges made also of Rize.

In their lawes, bargaines, and counauntes, their simplicitie and true meanyng well appeareth: for that thei neuer are muche contentious aboute the. Thei haue no Lawes concerning pledges or thynges committed to another mannes keepyng. No witnessynges, no handwrytynges, no scalynges, ne suche like tokēs of trecherie and vntrust. but without all these,

Asie.

these,
their h
vprigh
fantasi
to sup
and ci
mune
whiche

In th
arraien
ne pre
of whic
phanel
bette
togethe
Age
Thei ha
to seru
uerthele
them)

No o
wounde
Least th
He that
that hath
his hand
vpon hi

The k
trimmy
the Kyn
hym: b
Whiche
for the
forced e
abroad
he time
season w
to Sacrifi
ordre as
his garde
(whiche
Tabours
stande pr
vppon an
ganle. S
warres, w
Suche
worshipp
spirites o
feast, an
self most
The co
grees. T

these, thei truste and be trusted, thei belieue and are believed, yea, thei oftentimes leaue their houses wide open without keper. Whiche truly are all greates signes of a iuste and vprighte dealing among them. But this peradventure can not seatle well with euery mannes fantasie: that thei should liue eche manne aparte by himself, and euery body to dine and to suppe when he lust, and not all at an howre determined. For in dede for the felowshippe and ciuilltie, the contrary is more allowable. Thei commede and occupie muche as a commune exercise, to rubbe their bodies: specially with skrapers made for the nones. Afre whiche, thei smothe them selues again with Ebumum, wherof I spake afore.

In their Toumbes, and Bewrialles, very plaine and nothing costlie: But in trimming and arraieng of their bodies; to, to, gaude glorious. For there aboute thei neither pare gold, ne precious stone ne any kinde of silke that thei haue. Thei delighte muche in garments of white Sarcenet. And for that thei sette muche by beautie, thei cary aboute with them phanelles to defende them fro the sonne, and leaue nothyng vndone, that maketh for the better grace of their faces. Thei sette asmuche by trithe alone, as by all other vertues together.

Age hath there no prerogatiue, except thei winne it with their wisdom, and knowledge. Thei haue many wiues, whiche thei vse to buye of their parentes for a yoke of Oxen. Some to serue them as their vndrelynges, and some for pleasure, and issue. Whiche maie neuerthelesse vse buttoke banqueting abrode (for any lawe or custome there is to restraine them) excepte their housebandes by fine force, can compelle them to kepe close.

No one among the Yndians either sacrificeth coroned, ne offreth odours, ne liquours. Thei wounde not their Sacrifice in no maner of wise: but smore hym by stopping the breath. Least thei should offe any mangled thing vnto God, but that that ware in euery parte whole. He that is conuicted of false witnessyng, hath his fingers cutte of by the toppe iointes. He that hath taken a limme from any manne, suffreth not onely the like losse, but loseth also his hande. But if any mā haue taken from an artificer, his hande, or his eye, it lieth hym vpon his heade.

The kyng hath a garde of bought women: who take chardge of his bodie, and haue the trimmyng and orderyng thereof, the residue of the armie, remainyng without the gates. If the Kyng fortune to be droncken, it is not onely lawfull for any one of these women to slea hym: but she shall also as in the waie of rewarde, be coupled in mariage to the nexte king. Whiche (as is saied) is one of his sonnes, that afore enioied the Croune. It is not lawfull for the king to slepe by daie time: and yet in the night tyme to auoide trecherie, he is forced euery houre to chaunge his chambre. When he is not in campe, he ofte tymes cometh abroade: bothe to giue sentence, and to heare matiers dependyng in question. And if it be time of daie to trimme his bodie: he bothe heareth the pleases, & is rubbed in the meane season with the skrapers afore mencioned, by thre of his women. He cometh furthe also to Sacrifices, and to hunting: Where he is accompaigned with a rable of women, in as good ordre as ours ware wonte to be vpon Hocke Mondaie. His waie is ranged with ropes, and his garde of menne abideth without. But if it fortune any to steale in, to the women (whiche is contrary to their ordre & ductie) he loseth his heade for it. There go afore hym Tabours and Belles. When he hunteth in places sensed aboute, two or thre armed women stande preste, for his aide, and defence. But when he hunteth in open place, he is caried vpon an Eliphante: & euen so sitting on his backe shooteth, or throweth the darte at his game. Some of his women ride vpon Horses, some vpon Elephantes. As likewise in the warres, where thei fight with all kinde of weapons skilfully.

Suche menne also as haue gathered thinges into writynges, recorde: that the Yndians worshippe as their goddes the father of raine Iupiter: Ganges their floude, and the familiar spirites of their countrie. And when their kyng washeth his heade, thei make solempne feast, and sende his highnes greates gifts, eche mā enuyenge other, who maye shewe hym self moste riche, and magnificent.

The commune wealthe of the Yndians, was sometyme deuided into seuen states or degrees. The Sages (whiche other calle Philosophers) ware of the first ordre, or state: the

whiche although thei ware in nombre fewer then any of the rest: yet ware thei in honour and dignitie aboute the kyng, farre aboue all other. These menne (priuiledged from all busines) neither be troubled with office, ne be at any mannes commaundement: But receiue of the communes suche thinges as serue for the Sacrifices of their goddes, and are requisite for bewrualles. As though thei ware bothe well acquainted, and beloued in heauē, and knewe muche of the trade in helle. For this cause haue thei bothe giftes and honour largely giuen thē. And in very diede thei do muche good among the people. For in the beginning of ȝ yere, assemblyng together, thei foreshewe of raine, of drouthe, of winde and of sickenesse: and of suche like thynges as maie to profeight be foreknownen. For aswell the kyng as the people, ones vndrestādyng their foresawes, and knowyng the certieintie of their iudgements by former experience: shone the euilles, and are preste to attende vpon that, that is good. But if any of their said Sages shall fortune to erre in his foresight: other punishement hath he none, then for euer after to holde his peace.

The seconde ordre is of housebande menne, whiche beyng more in nombre then any of the other states, and exempte fro the warres, and all other labour: bestowe their tyme onely in housebandrie. No enemie spoileth thē, none troubleth them; but refraineth fro doing them any hurte or hinderance, vpon respect of the profighte that redoundeth to the whole, throughe their trauailles. So that thei, hauyng libertie without all feare to followe their busines, are instrumētēs and meanes of a blessed plenteousnesse. Thei with their wiues and children, dwell alwaie in the countrie, without resortyng to the townes or cite. Thei paie rente to the Kyng (for all the whole Countrie is subiecte to their kyng) neither is it lawefull for any of the communes to occupie and possesse any grounde, without paicyngne rente. And the housebande men beside this rente, yelde vnto the Kynges maiestie, a flueth of their fructes yerely.

The thirde ordre standeth all by brieders and fieders, of all sortes, whiche like wise neither enhabite toun ne village: but with tentes, in the wilde fieldes. And these with hunt- yng and foulyng in sondrie wise, so kiepe vndre the beastes and hurtfull foules: that whear other wise the housebande menne should in siede tyme, and towarde harueste, be muche acloyed and hyndered by the fowles, and theim selues alwaie by the beastes, the countrie is quiete frō al suche annoyāce.

In the fowrthe ordre are Artificers, and handicraftesmen. Whiche are deuided, some into Smithes, some into Armourers, some for one purpose, some for another, as is expediente. These doe not onely liue rente free, but also haue a certaine of graine allowed them at the kinges allowaunce.

In the fiueth ordre are the menne of warre, a greate nombre daiely exercised in armes, bothe on Horsebacke, on Elephantes, and on foote. And all their Elephantes, and horses miete for their warres, are found of the kinges allowaunce.

The sixteth ordre is of Surueiours or Maisters of reporte, whiche haue the ouersight of all thynges that are done in the realme, and the charge to bryng reaporte vnto the kyng.

In the seuenth place, are thei that be Presidētes, and heades of the commune cōsailles, very fewe in nombre, but worthy mē for their nobilitie and wisdomē. Out of these are chosen counsaillours for the kynges Courtes, and officers to administre the commune wealth, and to determine cōtrouersies: yea, capitaines for the warres, and Princes of the realme.

The whole state of Ynde beyng deuided into these ordres or degrees: it is also ordeined, that a man shall not marie out of the ordre, wherin his callyng lieth, ne change his trade. For neither maie the souldiour occupie housebandrie though he woulde: ne the artificers entremdle with the doctrine of the Sages.

There are also amonge the Yndians, persons of honour appointed to be as it ware Tutours of straungiers, to see that no wronge be done them, to put ordre for their keepyng, and Phisicke, if any falle sicke. As also (if it fortune any of thē to die) for the bewrieng of theim, and to deliuer their goodes, and money to their nexte friends.

All causes are broughte afore the iudges, who heare the parties, and punyssh the offenders diligently. Ther is no slavery amonge them. Yea, thei haue a certaine ordinaunce, that

none

Asie.

none

For th

to wrō

pen hy

all, an

But

(as in

vse suc

Of t

dwellin

same al

canes a

ioynct

Thes

of mer

of lace

& make

Thos

fleshe,

As o

friende

fleshe a

self to

him.

woman.

impoter

Ther

builde

accorde

eth in,

some de

to his di

All th

women

Thes

worle

Sophist

Philosop

partes o

and thea

and the

rising,

the head

secretes

At an

while o

greued

Amor

vnto Al

no liker

requyre

suche as

vnransal

Aste.

none shalbe slaue or bonde amonge them, but all fre, and of equalle auctoritie and honour. For thei holde opinion that who so accustometh his selfe neither to be Lorde ouer other, ne to wröge any bodie: y man hath prepared him selfe sautie and ease what so euer shall happen hym by any aduenture. And a fonde thing ware it to make the lawes indifferente for all, and not to make the states of the men indifferente.

But because ther are in Inde manye sondrie contries, diuerse bothe in people and tongue (as in so large a thing muste nedes happen) ye shall vnderstonde that thei do not all alike vse suche trade as I haue described, but in some places somewhat worse.

Of those that lie towardes the Easte, some occupie brieding, and some do not. Other dwellinge in the mershe, and fennes vpon the riuers side: occupie fishing, and liue by the same all rawe. And the better to worcke their seate, thei make them selues boates, of suche canes as growe ther, of a wonderfull biggenes. So, that so muche of the cane as is betwixte ioyncte and ioyncte, is a iuste proportion of timbre for one of their boates.

These of all the other Indians, are appareilled in matte, made of a certayne softe kinde of mere rushes. Which when thei haue gathered out of the floude, and sliced oute in maner of lace: they braude together muche like oure figge fraile, or suche like kinde of mattinge, & make them selues ierkins therof.

Those that be yet by Easte of them, are brieders of cataille: and liue altogether with rawe fleshe, and haue to name Padians. Whose condicions are sayde to be suche.

As often as it fortuneth any of their citezeins to be sicke, yf it be a manne: his nierest friendes, and those that are moste aboute him, kille him by and by, leaste (saye thei) his fleshe shoulde waxe worse. Yea, though he woulde dissemble the matier, and denie him self to be sicke, it boteth not. For withoute pardon, they kille him, and make a feaste with him. If it be a woman, looke how the menne did by the manne, so do the women by a woman. Likewise do thei with bothe sortes, when thei waxe croked for age, or become impotent: where through, what by the one meanes and the other, none of them die for age.

Ther is another sorte of the Indians that kille no liuinge thing, ne plante, nor sowe, nor builde house: but liue with herbes, and a certeine sede whiche groweth there of the owne accorde, much like vnto gromelle, whiche thei gather with the cuppe or shelle that it groweth in, and so seeth it, and eat it. If any of these falle sicke, he wandereth forthe into some deserte place, and ther laieth him downe: no manne taking hede either to hislieng or to his dienge.

All these Yndians that I nowe haue spoken of, in quenching of natures heate, vse their women as secretly as beastes do their females.

These Yndians haue a kinde of sages, that the Grieke call Gimnosophista, whiche as the worlde Sophista soundeth now, might merily be interpreted briechelesse bablers. But as Sophista did signifie then, naked Sages: or to giue one Grieke worde for a nother, naked Philosophres. These (as Petrarche writeth) haunte the outemoste borders, and shadowie partes of that countrie, wädering naked accordinge to their name, vp and downe, heather and theather, studienge, and searching the natures of thinges, the course of the heauens, and the secretes of knowledge. Thei continued sometime al the whole daye from the sonne rising, till his downe goinge: beholdinge the same with stedfaste eye, neuer tournig away the heade (althoughe it be ther moste feruently hote) searching and spienge afre certaine secretes in the body thereof.

At another time thei passe the day likewyse, standing one while on one legge, another while on another in y broilinge sande of that contrie. Froste nor snowe, nor fire heate greued not them.

Amonge these, is ther a people called Brachmanes, whiche (as Didimus their king wrate vnto Alexandre when he wēt aboute to subdue them) liue a pure and simple life, led with no likerous lustes of other mennes vanities. This people lögeth for no more then nature requyeth naturallie. Thei are content with suche foode as commeth to hande, desirig no suche as other menne tourne the worlde almost vpside downe to haue, leauing no elemēt vnransaked to gette a gowbin for their glotenous gorge: but suche as the earth vnploughed,

or

or vndoluē, yeldeth of her self. And because thei acquainte not their table with surfet, in dede thei know not so many kindes of sickeneses, ne so many names of diseases as we doe: but thei better knowe what sounde healthe meaneth, and staid continuance of the same then euer we are like.

Thei haue no niede to craue one anothers helpe and reliefe, wher no manne maketh clayme by (thine) and by (myne) but euery manne taketh what he lusteth and lusteth no more then he niedeth. Enuie cannot dwell ther, ne none of her impes, wher all be equalle, and none aboue other, and all alike poore, maketh all alike riche. Thei haue no officers of Iustice among them, because thei do nothing that ought to be punished. Ther can no lawe appiere, because none offence appeareth.

The whole people hath one onely lawe, to do nothinge against lawe that nature prescribeth. To cherishe labour, to barre out ydlenes, and banishe colle conetysse. That lechery likke not away the vigour of their spirites, and strength: nor lacke throwe menne in desperate doompes. That euery manne hath enough, wher no manne couettes more. That neuer content, is of all other the moste cruell restles plague. For whome she catcheth, she throweth a foote beneth beggery, whilst thei canne finde none ende of their scrattinge, but the more thei haue, the fellier gnaweth their longing.

Thei warme by the Sonne, the deawe is their moisture, & riuer is their drinke, the faire grounde their bedde. Care breaketh not their sleape, Compassing of vanities wearieth not their minde. Pride hath no stroke ouer them, among whom ther is no diuersite. Neither is their any kinde of bonde known among them: but the bondage of the body to the minde whiche thei onely allowe to be iuste.

For the building of their houses, they sende not ouer sea for stone, thei burne no Calion to make lime to tempre their mortre, thei bake no bricke, nor digge no sande. But either make them caues in the earthe, or take suche as thei finde ready made in the sides of the mountaines and hilles. Ther dwel thei without feare of rage or ruine, of weather or of winde. He thincketh him self saussier fenced fro showres with his caue, then with a fewe tiles: and yet hath by it a double commoditie. A house while he liueth, & a graue ready made when he dyeth. Ther is no glittering apparell, no rattelinge in sylkes, no rusteling in veluettes, but a litle brieche of brawdred ruffles, or rather a couering of honeste shamefacednesse.

The women are not sette oute to allure, ne pinched in to please, ne garnished to gaze at. No heare died, no lockes outlaid, no face painted, no skinne slicked, no countrefeicte countenance, nor mynsing of passe. No poticary practise, no ynckhorne termes, nor pithlesse pratling. Finally no colours of hipocrisie, no meanes to set oute more beautie then nature hath giue them. They ioyne not in engedrure for likerous luste, but for the loue of yssewe and succession. Thei kepe no warres, but mainteine peace: not with force, but with peaceable behauour and maners. The father and the mother folowe not the childe to & bewrille. Thei builde no tombes for the deade: more like vnto chirches then graues. Thei bewry not vp their ashes in pottes dashed full of pearle and precious stone. For why thei esteime in these, neither the honour of the quicke, ne the pleasure of the deade: but rather the trouble and paine of bothe. Pestilence or other diseases (as I haue sayd) the Abrahmanes are not annoyed with, for thei enfecte not the ayer with any filthye doinges. But nature alwaye with them, keapeth accorde with the season: and euery elemente his tourne, with oute stoppe or barre. Their Phisique is abstinence, which is able not only to cure the maladie already crepte in: but also to holde oute suche as otherwise mighte entre. Thei couette no sightes, nor shewes of misrule: no disguisings nor entreludes. But when thei be disposed to haue the pleasure of the stage, thei entre into the regeste of their stories, & what thei finde theremoste fit to be laughed at, that do thei lamente & bewaile. Thei delighte not as many do, to heare olde wiues tales, and fantasies of Robin Hoode: but in studious consideration of the wondreful workemanship of the world, & the perfect disposing of thinges in suche ordre of course and degree. Thei crosse no sease for merchaundise, ne learne no colours of Rethorique. Thei haue one kinde of plaine eloquence commune to them

them
ties, w
rience,
manes
tickeli
vse the
nature
thei say
ship vo
propriet
therefor
was the
that we
The
fortune
and the
bande:
that is b
est to h
umpling
lieth re
gether v
chastitie
them sel
Their ch
but certe
infante,
Thei i
beautlic
Certain
that thei
bringe h
noyses o
uereth h
and afte
worthy
Megast
heades,
manne,
Thei th
thei liue
to fayle
as thei fa
vnto thei
Alexandre
We red
eared that
either of
Some oth
is hote, a
largely sh
It is re
children a

them all: tongue, & harte agreeing in trueth. Thei haue neither moote halles, ne vniuersities, whose disagreeable doctrine more leaning to apishie arte, then natural reason and experience, neuer bringeth anye staye, or certeinte of thinges. One part of this people iudgeth mānes perfecteste blessednes to stande in honestie. And a nother in pleasure. Not in the tickelings of the taile, or pamperinges of the bealy, more bittre then pleasaūte as thou maye see them: but to lacke nothing that perfecte nature desireth, ne nothing to do that perfecte nature misliketh. Thei thincke it no honour to God, to slea for him an innocēt beast; yea thei say he accepteth not the sacrifice of men polluted with bloode, but rather loueth a worship voide of all bloodsheade. That is to saye, the humble entreatie of woordes, because that propriety only (to be entreated with woordes) is commune to God and to manne. With this therefore saye they he is pleased, because we somewhat resemble him self therin. And this was the life of y^e vnchristened Brahmanes, wher with we Christians are so farre out of loue, that we are afraid leaste any man should beleue it to be true.

The Yndians called Catheis, haue eche man many wiues. And assone as any one husbunde fortheneth to die, his whole nūber of wiues assemble before the chiefest iudges of the citie, and there eche for her self, sheweth and alledgeth her welle deseruings towarde her housebāde: how derely she loued him, howe muche she tendered & honoured him. And she that is by them iudgeth to haue borne her self beste in that behaulfe, and to haue bene diercest to her husbunde: she in the beste maner and moste gorgeous that she can deuise, triumphing and reioysinge, getteth her vp vpon the funerale pyle wher her housebandes corps lieth ready to be brente, and ther kissinge and enbrasinge the deade body, is burned together with her housebāde. So gladdē is she to haue the victorie in the contention of wiuely chastitie, and honeste behaiour toward her husbunde. And the other that lyue, thincke them selues dishonoured: and escape not without spotte of reproche as long as thei liue. Their childrē in their infancie, are not nourished vp at the libertie and will of the parentes: but certaine ther are appointed to viewe the children: whiche yf thei apie vntowardnes in the infante, deformitie, or lacke of lymmes, commaunde it to be slayne.

Thei ioynē not mariages for nobilitie of birthe, or aboundaunce of substaunce, but for beaultie, and rather vpō regarde of frute, then of luste.

Certaine also amonge the Yndians haue this custome, that yf thei be of suche pouertie that thei be not able to marye oute their daughters: euen in the floure of her age thei bringe her, or them, furthe into the marcate with trompet & drōme, or suche other their noyses of warre: And their, afire the multitude is comen together, the maiden first vncoereth her self wholie vp to the harde shoulders, on the backe haulfe, to be sene starke naked, and afire that likewise on the bealy. Yf the multitude finde no faulte, but allowe her as worthy to please for her bodye, then marieth she to some one ther, whome she beste liketh.

Megasthenes writeth that vpon diuerse mounteines in Ynde, are people with dogges heades, and lōge clawes, cladde in hydes of beastes, speakinge with no voyce like vnto manne, but barking onely, muche like vnto dogges, with mouthes roughe like a grater.

Thei that dwelle aboute the heade of Ganges, haue no nede of anye kinde of meate: for thei liue by the sauour of their frutes. And yf thei fortune to iorney, so that thei thincke to fayle of the sauour when thei would haue it, they cary with them to smelle to, at times as thei fainte. But if it fortune those to smelle any horrible stincke, it is as present deathe vnto them, as poyson to vs. It is recorded in writyng, that certaine of those ware in Alexandres campe.

We rede also that there are in Inde mē with one eye and no mo. And certein so notably eared that thei hange downe to their hieles, with suche a largenesse that thei may lye in either of them as vpon a pallet: and so harde, that thei maye rende vp trees with them. Some other also hauing but one legge, but vpon the same such a foote, that when the sonne is hote, and he lacketh shadowe, lyenge downe vpon his backe, and holdinge vp his fote, he largely shadoweth his whole bodie.

It is riddle that in Clesia certein women haue but ones childe in all their life time: and the children assone as thei are borne, immediatly to become horeheded. Againe, that there is another

another nacion, much lōger liued then we are, whiche in their youth are horeheard: and in their age, their heare waxeth blacke. They affirme also that ther is another sorte of women that conceiue at fyue yerres olde, and liue not aboue the age of. viii. yerres. Ther are also that lacke neckes, & haue their eyes in their shoulders. Ther are also beside these, certeine saluages with dogges heades, & shacke heared on their bodies, that make a very terrible charringe with their mouthes.

But in these and suche like tales of the Indians, and their countrie: for that a manne had nede of a redie beleife that should take them for truthe, one had not niede to bee to large: considerynge specially that menne now a daies, will skante beleue the reporte of other mens writhings, in the thinges that almost lye vndre their noses.

Ther is a place betwixt Gedrosia and the floude Yndus which is called Cathainus of the Cathaiens that enhabyte it. This people were an offspring of y Scithias, muche altered from their naturall condicions, and wonted maners, if that that Aitone the Arminians writeth of them in his storie, be true.

Thei passe (saith he) all other men in quicke smelling. And thei saye of them selues, that though all other menne haue two instrumentes of sight, yet do none se with both two in dede, but thei: all other men in cōparison either to haue no sight, or elles as it ware but with one eye. Their wittnesse is greate, but their boastinge greater. The whole nacion of thē is perswaded, that thei muche passe all other men in knowledge, and the subtilties of sciences. Thei are all of colour shining white, smalle eyed, beardelesse by nature. Their lettres are afre the faciō of the Romaine, all in squares. Thei are diuersely ledde with fonde supersticions, some afre one sorte, and some afre another. But thei are all voyde of the true knowledge which is in Iesus Christe. Some worship the sonne, some y moone. Other, ymages of yoten metalle, manie of them an oxe. And thus to sondry suche other monsters, hath this people in sondry wyse deuided it selfe in supersticion. Thei haue no maner of written lawes, nor knowe not what we meane whē we speake of faithfulnessse or trustinesse. And wher (as I said afore) thei haue in al hādi workes a passing subtiltie of witte, yet in the knowledge of heauenly thinges, thei are altogether to learne: that is to saie, thei are vtterly ignorant. A cowardly people and very fearful of death. Yet exercise thei a maner of warre, but that thei handle rather by witte, and pollicie, then by strength and hardinesse. In their fighte thei vse a kinde of shaftes, and certaine other weapons of flight, vnknown to other countries.

Their money is a piece of square paper, with their Kynges Image vpon it. And because it cannot be durable: ordre is taken, that when it is soiled or dasked muche, with passyng from man to man, thei shall bring it to the coignyng house, and make exchange for newe. All their vtensiles and necessities of house, are of golde, siluer, and other metalles. Oile is so deintie among them, that the kyng onely vseth it, as it ware for a precious ointement. Thus haue we treated of the Yndians, and now to their borderers, the Scithians.

¶ The. ix. Chapitre.

¶ Of Scithia and their sterne maners.

SCithia (a countrie lieng by North) is said of Herodotus, to take the name of Scithia Hercules sonne. Or as Berosus Iudgeth, of an other Scitha, borne of oure greate graundame Araxe, Noahes wife, that dwelt first in that countrie. This people in the beginnyng, pente within narowe boundes, so in processe by litle and litle, through their valeauntnes and force enlarged their limites: that thei became lordes of many coūtries aboute, and grewe into a great gouernaunce and renoume. Thei nestled first vpon the floude Araxis so fewe in nombre and so base: that no manne thought them worthie the troubling or talking of. But getting vnto them a certain king, hardie, of great courage, and notable experience in the warres: thei enlarged their land so, that thei made it stretche on the one parte (whiche is altogether Hille, and Mountaigne) vnto Caucasus, and ouer al the plain vnto the Ocean, & vnto the greate marshe of Meotis, and Tanais the floude. From whēce the countrie of Scithia now stretcheth

Asie.
stre
as th
Scith
beyo
much
honou
Alexa
them
bitte
any o
or cot
cattell
serued
theft.
the op
Hony.
beastes
garmer
This
as thei
maners
entreat
Many
his blou
For wh
whereof
with his
he it by
skinne b
kercher.
he that h
also that
weare th
slaine, s
quiuers.
Many
for the n
thei mak
and gildi
commeth
greate br
Ones e
the whic
those the
tasteth n
thē a gre
Goblettes
The go
vnto Ves
Iupiters
Chapelle,
hundred
and other
VOL. V.

stretcheth all along toward the East. And because the mountaigne Imaus, ronnyng along as the countrie coasteth, deuides it in the middes into two haulues: the one haulfe is called Scithia within Imaus, and the other without (as ye would saie) on this side the Mounte, and beyonde. There neuer medled any power with them, that was able to conquere them: or muche to endamage them. Thei forced Darius, the Kyng of the Persians, with greate dishonour to flic their countrie. Thei slue Cirus with all his armie. Thei made an ende of Alexandre with al his power. The Romaines sente them threates thei would warre with them, but thei proued in fine but wordes. Thei are a people not tameable with any toile, bittre warriours, and of greate strenght of bodie. At the first very rawe, and with out any ordinarie trade of life: neither knowyng what tillage meant, ne yet hauyng any houses or cotages to dwell in. But wandryng vp and doune the wilde fieldes and driuyng their catteille afore them, their wiues and their children ridyng in wagons by them. Thei obserued iustice, without constraint of lawe. Thei compted none offence more heinous, then thefte. As folke that had nothing vndre locke nor keye, barre, nor bolte: but altogether in the open fieldes. Thei nether occupied golde ne siluer. Their chief foode was milke and Hony. Against colde and other stormes, thei wrapped their bodies in felles, and hides of beastes, and Mice skinnes. Thei knewe not what Wollen meante, ne any facion of garmente.

This maner of life was in many of the Scithians, but not in all. A greate nombre of them, as thei muche differed in distaunce of place frō other, so differed thei also from other in maners: and vsed a certeine trade of luyng among them selues, wherof we afteward will entreate, when we haue saied somewhat more of their facions in generall.

Many of the Scithians delight in mīslaughter. And the firste man that he taketh in fight, his bloud drincketh he: and offreth vnto his Kyng the heades of all those ¶ he ther sleaeth. For when he hath so done, he is admitted to be partaker of the butine what so euer it be, whereof he should be otherwise partles. He cutteth of the heade afre this sorte. Firste, with his knife he maketh in it a gashe rōude aboute like a circle, vndre the eares: then taketh he it by the heare of the croune, & striketh it of. That done, he sleaeth it, and taweth the skinne betwixe his handes, vntill it become very souple and soft and kiepeth it for a hande kercher. This wille he hange vpō the reine of his horse, and glorieth not a litle in it. And he that hath moste of suche hādkerchers, is compted the valeauntest manne. There are many also that sowe together these skinnes of menne, as other doe the skinnes of beastes, and weare them for their clothyng. Some of them flea the right hand of their enemies beyng slaine, so that the nailes also remain vpon the fingres, and make couers of them for their quiers.

Many of the flea the whole bodie, and stretche out the skinne vpō certaine stickes fitted for the nones, and so sprede the vpon their Horse. Of the Skulles of the heades thus slaine, thei make measures to drincke in: coueryng them on the outside with rawe Neates leather, and gilding them on the inside, if he be of habilitie. And when any gheste of estimation commeth vnto them, thei offre the drincke in as many as thei haue, and declare for a greate braggue of their valeauntesse, that so many thei haue slaine with their owne hande.

Ones euery yere, all the chief heades of the Scithians, kepe a solempne drinckyng. At the whiche the maner is, out of one of these Skulles, as out of a wassailing boule, to giue all those the wine that haue slaine anemie. But he that hath done no suche notable acte, tasteth not therof, but sitteth aparte in a corner with out honour: which is iudged among the a greate reproche. But thei that haue achieued many slaughters, thei drancke of two Goblettes together, which thei haue for that purpose.

The goddes whom thei worshippe and doe Sacrifice vnto, are these: Firste and chiefly vnto Vesta, then to Iupiter, and the goddesse of the grounde: for that thei take her to be Iupiters wife. Nexte vnto Apollo and Venus, Mars and Hercules. Yet erecte thei no Chapelle, Altare, nor Image to any of these: but onely to Mars: to whom thei offre of euery hundred prisoners that thei take, one for a sacrifice. To the other thei offre bothe horses and other beastes, but specially horses. Swine thei so little estieme, that thei neither offre

them to any of their goddes ne vouchesauf to kiepe them in their Countrie. Looke whom the kyng punissheth with death, his children he also commaundeth to be slain, as many as be males, but the women are pardoned.

With whom the Scithians couenaüt or make League: after this maner thei do it. Thei fille an earthen panne with wine, and of the parties that shall strike the League or couenaunte, thei drawe a quantitie of bloude, whiche thei mingle therewith. Then diepe thei into the panne their Curtlasse, their shaftes, their axe, and their darte. That done thei wishe vnto them selues many terrible curses and mischiefes, if thei holde not the league or couenaunte. And then drinke thei the wine. And not thei onely that strike the couenautes, but also those that are mooste honourable in their compaignie.

The bewriall of their kynges is afre this maner: where the Kyng dieth, those that are of his bloude, rounde his heare, cutte of one of his cares, slice his armes rounde aboute, all to begasse his foreheade & his nose, & shoote him through the lifte hande, in thre or fowre places. Then laie thei the corps in a Carte, and cary it to the Gerrites, where the Sepulchres of all their Kynges are. And thei dwell vpo the floude Boristhenes, about the place wher it becometh first sailable. This people when thei haue receiued it, trenche out a square plotte in the ground very wide and large. And then rippe the bealy of the corps, and bowelle it cleane: clensyng it and drieng it from all filthe, and fille it vp with Siler Montanum, Franckencense, Smallache siede, and Anise siede, beaten together in a Mortre. And when thei haue sowed it vp againe close, thei ceare the whole bodie, and conueighe the same in a Carte, to the nexte people vndre the gouernaunce of the Scithias, whiche with honour receiue it, and conueigh it vnto the nexte of their dominion: and so from one to another, vntile it haue passed rounde aboute, to as many peoples as are of their dominion, and be comen againe to the place of bewriall among the Gerrites, whether it is accompanied with a certain of all the peoples, to whom it hath comen, as thei gathered encrease from place to place. Thei, afre what tyme thei haue laied the corps, cophine and all, vpon a bedde of state, amid the square afore mentioned: sticke doune their iaelines and speares aboute him, and with stickes laied ouer from one to another, frame as it ware a Cielyng. whiche thei couer with a funerale palle. Then in the reste of the voide space, that yet remaines in the Cophine made for the nones: thei bewrie one of his diereft lemmans, a waityng manne, a Cooke, a Horsekeper, a Lacquie, a Butler, and a Horse. Whiche thei at first strangle, and thruste in, together with a portion of all sortes of plate, and of euery suche thyng as appertained to his housholde, or body. And when the yere comes about, then do thei thus. Thei take of those that ware nerest aboute the Kyng (now there are none aboute the king, but thei be Scithians free borne, and suche as his self doth commaunde: for he maie be serued with no bought slaue) of those take thei suetie and as many of his best horses. And whē thei haue strangled bothe the men and the horses, they bowell the Horses, stuffe their bealies againe with Chaffe, and sowe them vp close, and sette the menne vppon their backs. Then make thei a voute ouer roūd about the bordre of the greate square, and so dispose these Horse menne enuiron the same, that thei sieme a farre of, a troupe of liuyng horsemen gardyng the kyng.

The communes haue also a maner of bewrialle afre a like sorte. When one of theim dieth, his nexte neighbours and kindsfolke laie hym in a Carte, and cary hym aboute to euery of his frindes: whiche at the receipte of hym make a feaste, aswell to the kindsmen, as to all the residewe that accompaigie the corps. And when thei haue thus caried hym aboute by the space of fowretene daies, he is bewried. All the braine of his heade beyng first piked out, and the skulle rinsed with water cleane. Aboute the bodie thei sette vp three sparrowes of woodde slopyng, and restyng one vpon another at the toppes. Rounde about these sparrowes, thei straine cappyng woollen, packyng them as close as thei can. And within betwixt the sparrowes, as it ware in the mildest ouer the deade, thei set a traie or shallowe trough, where in to thei caste a kinde of stones, that glistereth by fire light.

The menne emong the Scithians, do not vse to washe the selues. But the women vse to powre water vpon their own bodies, and to rubbe themselves against some roughe stone: and

Aste.

and th
vntill
with c
small,

The
is by
hymse
or not
to the

The
reille a
bothe c
cible in
Their b
nished
reines,
and the
manne
whiche
for the
is carye

When
folke as
as will s
and par
them, a
not: bu
to the f

Thei
suche fis
of Milke
honour

The S
entreme
but thei
thei are
thei sell
price.
trade or
parteth
brought
them.

ences of
And for
ne Pestil
conciue
what Sa
Therefor
bothe co

The T
many as
afre hea
Sacrifice

Asie.

and then with a piece of a Cipresse, Ceadre, or Encence tree, to grate their whole bodie, vntill it be some what bollen or swollen. And then enoint thei bothe that and their face, with certaine medicines for the nones: whereby thei become the nexte daie of a very good smell, and (when the medicine is washed awaie) slicke and smothe.

Their commune othe, and the othe of charge in matiers of controuersie, or iudgemente, is by the kynges clothe of estate: by the whiche if a man shalbe tried to haue forsworne hymself (as their enchauntours haue a maner to trie with salowe roddes whether thei haue or not) by and by without respighte, he loseth his heade, and all his goodes, whiche tourne to the vse of them that haue proued him periured.

The Massagetes, a people of Scithia in Asie, beyond the sea called Caspiū mare in appa- reille and liuyng, muche like to the Scithians, and therefore of some so called: vse to fighte bothe on horsebacke and on fote, with suche actiuitie and force, that thei are almoste inui- cible in bothe. Their weapons are bowe and arrowes, Launces and Armynge swordes. Their beltes aboute their waste, the ornament of their heades, and their pollerone, are gar- nished with golde. Their Horses are barbed on the brest, with barbes of gold. Their reines, bridles, and trappour are all of golde. The heades of their Launces are of Brasse, and their Quiuers armed with Brasse. As for Siluer and Iron thei occupie none. Eche manne marieth one wife, and yet are the wiues of them all, commune one to another, whiche thyng is not vsed among any of the other Scythians. When so euer any man lusteth for the compaignie of his womā, he hangeth vp his quiuer vpon the carte wherein his wife is caryed by him, and there openly without shame coupleth.

When any one of this people waxeth very aged, his friendes, acquaintance, and kindes- folke assēbled together, make a bealy Sacrifice of hym: sleaying as many shiepe besides, as will serue for the fulnesse of the nombre. And when thei haue dressed them, eate parte and parte like, the one with the other. And this kinde of departyng is compted among them, of all other moste blessed. If any fortune to pine awaie of sicknesse, hym eate thei not: but put in a hole, and throwe earthe vpon him. Sory for the losse, that he came not to the feaste.

Thei neither sowe nor mowe, but liue by flesshe of suche beastes as thei haue, and suche fishe as Araxe the floude doeth plētously minister vnto them: and with drinckynge of Milke, wherof thei make no spare. Thei knowe no goddes but the Sonne: In whose honour thei offre vp Horses in Sacrifice, as beyng in swiftenesse moste like vnto the Sonne.

The Seretines are a debonaire people, and suche louers of quietnesse, that thei shōne to entremedle with any other people. Merchātes passe their outmost floude toward them, but thei maie come no nigher. Along the banques there, thei sette oute suche thynges, as thei are disposed to selle. Not the Merchautes, but the indwellers of the Countrie. For thei selle to other, and buie of none. And thei sette them in ordre as thei iudge them in price. The buyer cometh, and as he iudgeth them by his eye to be worthe, without further trade or feloweshippe betwixte them, so laieth he doune. And if thei receiue it, he de- parteth with fy ware. Among them is there neither whore nor thiefe, nor adulteresse broughte to iudgemente. Neither was it euer hearde, that there was a manne slaine among them. For the feare of their Lawes woorketh more strongly with them, then the influ- ences of the Starres. Thei dwelle as it ware in the beginnyng or entryng of the worlde. And for that thei liue afre a chast sort: thei are neither skourged with Blastynges, ne Haile, ne Pestilence, ne suche other euilles. No manne toucheth a woman there, afre she hath conceiued, ne yet in the tyme of her flowres. Thei eate none vncleane beastes, ne knowe what Sacrificysing meaneth. Euery man there is his owne Iudge, acordyng to Iustice. Therefore are thei not chastised with suche corrections as happen vnto other for synne, but bothe continue long in life, and die without grief.

The Tauroschithias (so called for that thei dwell aboute the mountaigne Taurus) offre as many as fortune to make Shipwracke vpon their shore:) to the virgine, whose name ye shall afre heare. And if it fortune any Greke or Grekes, to be driuen thether, him doe thei Sacrifice after this maner.

After what tyme thei haue made prayer after their maner, thei strike of his heade with an hachet. And (as some saie) tumbledowne the carkesse into the Sea, (for this Virgine hath a Chapelle vpon the toppe of a high clieue, hanging ouer the Sea, where this feate is doone) and naile vp the heade vpon a Gibet. In this pointe of nailing vp the heade, all the writers agree, but in tumbledowne the body, not so, for some affirme that the body is bewried. The Virgine Deuille, to whom thei Sacrifice: is saied to be Iphigenia Agamēnons daughter. Their enemies as many as thei take, thus thei handle. Euery manne cutteth of his prisoners head, and carieth it home: and fasteneth it vpon the ende of a long pole, & setteth it vp: some vpon their house toppe some vpō their chimneis as high as thei can. And no merueile though thei set thē so that thei might well see rounde about them: for thei saie: thei are the wardens and keepers of al their whole house. Thei liue by spoile, and by warre.

The Agathirsians are menne verie neate & fine, & greate wearers of golde in their appareill. Thei occupie their women in commune, so that thei seme all of one kindred, and one householde: neuer striuyng nor grudgyng one with another, muche like in body vnto the Thracians.

The Neuriens vse the maners of the Sithians. This people the somer before that Darius set furthe, ware constrained for the greate multitude of Serpentes y ware bredde in their quartres, to chaunge their dwellyng place. Thei verily doe beleue, and wille sweare it: that euery yere ones for a certaine daies, thei become Woulues, and retourne againe into their former shape and state.

The Antropophagites (so called for that thei liue by mannes fleshe) of all menne, are the worste codicioned, without lawe, or officer, appareilled like the Scithiens: but in language like vnto no bodye but them selues.

The Melanchleni do all weare blacke, as their name dothe signifie. And of these also are eaters of mannes fleshe: so manie as folowe the trade of the Scithians.

The Budines are a great nacion, and a populous, graye eyed, & redde headed al. Their heade citie is Gelone, wherof thei are also called Gelonites. Thei kepe euery thirde yere a reuelle in the honour of Bacchus: wherent thei make reuelle in dede, yea, reuell route. Thei ware sometime Grieques, whiche put of fro their countrie, seatled them selues there. And by processe, losing the proprietie of their owne tongue, became in language haulfe Grekes, and haulfe Scithians. Yet are the Gelonites bothe in language and liuinge, different from the Budines. For the Budines being natiue of the place, are brieders of Catteile: The Gelonites, occupieng tilthe: liue by corne, and haue their frute yarden. Neyther lyke in colour ne countenance to the other. All their quartres are verie full, and thicke of trees. It hathe also many meres and greate. In and aboute the whiche thei take Otters, and Beauers, & many other beastes: of whose skinnes they make them pilches, and lerkins.

The Lirceis liue by woodmanship, and huntinge, and afre this maner. Their countrie beinge also very thicke of trees, thei vse to climbe suche as siemeth them beste: and there awaite their game. At the foote of euery mannes tree lieth a dogge, and a horse well taughte to couche flatte on the bealy, as lowe as can bee. When the beaste cometh within daungier, he shoteth. And yf he hitte, he streighte commeth downe, taketh his horse backe, & foloweth with his hōde.

The Argippians dwell vndre the foote of the highe mountaines. Men whiche fro their birthe are balde, bothe the males and the females. Their noses tourne vp like a shoinge horne, and their chinnes be great out of measure. The sounde of their voice vnlike to all other: ther apparell afre the sorte of the Scithians. Thei haue small regarde to brieding: by the reason wherof thei haue smalle store of cattaille. Thei lie vndre trees, which in the wintre thei couer ouer with a white kinde of felte, and in the somer take the same awaye, and lie vndre the open tree. Ther is no manne that wil harne them for that thei are compted holy halowed: neither haue thei anye kinde of armour, or weapō of warre. These men haue the arbitrement of their neighbours controversies rounde aboute. And as thei determine so are thei ended. Who so flieth vnto them, is saufe as in sanctuary.

The

Asie.

The
his ki
funer
And
dead
and w
lempr
dothe
daies.

The
as the
dued
liue al

TAR
where
theorin
on the
neth by
myngle
floodes
Ther is
of the
meate
Thondr
Nowe is
windes
by the
often.

store of
beleue
Ieccha
watre M
thei are

The t
ference
behavou
line, or
very ba
while af
pointed
ware the
prophec
lished a
nacion s
receiued
should b
their wa
the Fren
turiene

The Isædonnes haue this propertie. When so euer any mannes father ther, dieth : all his kinsfolke bringe every man one beast or other to the house of þe sonne that kepeth the funeral. Which whē thei haue killed and minsed : they minse also the body of the deade. And bothe the fleshs beinge mingled together, thei fall to the banket. Then take thei the dead mannes heade, & pike the braine oute cleane, and all other moistures and ragges, and when thei haue guilte it, thei vse it for a representaciō of the partie departed. Solempnisinge euery yere furthe, the memoriall, with newe ceremonies, and mo. This dothe the sonne for the father, and the father for the sonne, as the Grekes kepe their birthe daies.

These are also sayde to be verie iuste dealers, & their wiues to be as valeaunte and hardie as the husbādes. Suche haue the maners of the Scythians bene. But afterwarde being subdued by the Tartares, and wearing by processe into their maners and ordinaunces : thei nowe liue all after one sorte, and vndre one name.

¶ The. x. Chapter.

¶ Of Tartarie, and the maners and power of the Tartarians.

TARTARIA, otherwyse called Mongal : As Vincentius wryteth, is in that parte of the earth where the Easte and the Northe ioyn together. It had vpō the Easte, the londe of the Katherines and Solangores, on the South, the Saracenes : on the Weste the Naymaniens, & on the Northe is enclosed with the ocean. It hath the name of the floude Tartar that runneth by it. A country very hilly, and full of mountaines. And where it is champe in, myngled with sādē and grauēlle. Barreine, except it be in places where it is moysted with floudes, which are very fewe. And therefore it is muche waaste, and thinly enhabited. Ther is not in it one Citie, ne one village beside Cracuris. And wood in the moste parte of the country so skante, that the enhabitaūtes are faine to make their fyre, and dresse their meate with the drie donge of neate and horses. The ayer intemperate and wonderfulle. Thondre, and lightening in somer so terrible, that sondry do presently die for very feare. Nowe is it broiling hote, and by and by bittre colde, and plenty of snowe. Suche stronge windes sometime, that it staieth horse and man, and bloweth of the rider : teareth vp trees by the rootes, and doeth muche harme. In wintre it neuer raineth ther, and in Somer very often. But so slendrely, that the earthe is skante wette with al. And yet is ther great store of Cattaille : as Camelles, neate, &c. And horses and mares, in suche plentie, as I beleue no parte of the earth hath againe. It was first enhabited of foure peoples. Of the Ieccha Mongalles that is to saye, the greate Mongalles. The Sumongalles, that is to saye the watre Mongalles, whiche called them selues Tartares, of the floude Tartar whose neighbours thei are.

The thirde people were called Merchates, and the fourthe Metrites. There was no difference betwixte them eyther in body or lāguage, but al afre one sorte and facion. Their behaour was in the beginning very brute, and farre oute of ordre, without lawe or discipline, or any good facion. Thei liued amonge the Scythians, and kept herdes of cattalle in very base state and condition : and ware tributaries to all their neighbours. But within a while afre, thei deuided them selues as it ware into wardes, to euery of the which was appointed a capitaine : in whose deuises and consentes cōsisted thordre of the whole. Yet ware thei tributaries to the Naimānes (their next neighbours) vntyll Canguista by a certaine prophecie was chosen their kyng. He asone as he had receiued the gouernaunce, abolished all worshippes of deuilles, and commaunded by commune decree that all the whole nacion should honour the highe God euerlasting : by whose prouidence he would seme to haue receiued the kingdome. It was further decreed that as manye as ware of age to beare armour, should be preste, and ready with the king at a certeyne daye. The multitude that serued for their warres, was thus distributed. Their capitaines ouer ten (which by a terme borrowed of the Frenche, we calle Diseners, are at the cōmandement of the Centurians. And the Cēturiane obeyed the Millenarie, that had charge of a thousande. And he againe was subiecte

to

to the grande Coronelle that had charge ouer ten thousande: aboute the which nombre the mounted no degree of capitaines.

This done, to proue the obedience of his subiectes, he commaunded seuen sonnes of the Princes or Dukes which before had gouerned the people: to be slaine by the hâdes of their owne fathers, and mothers. Which thinge although it ware muche againste their hartes, and an horrible diede, yet did thei it. Partely vpon the feare of the residew of the people: and partly vpon conscience of their obediēce. For why, the people thoughte when thei sawe him begyn afire this sorte: thei had had a god amongst them. So that in disobeyinge of his commaundemente, thei thought thei should not haue disobeied a king but God him selfe.

Canguista takinge stomake with this power, firste subdued those Scithians that bordred vpon him, and made them tributaries. And where other afore had bene tributaries also vnto them: now receiued he in that one peoples righte, tribute of many. Then settinge vpon those that ware further off, he had suche prosperous successe that from Scithia to the sonne risinge, and fro thence to the middle earthe sea, and beyonde: he broughte all together vndre his subiection. So that he moughte nowe worthely wryte him selfe highe Gouverneur, and Emperour of the Easte.

The Tartares are very deformed, litle of bodie for the moste parte, hauyng great stiepe eyes: and yet so heary on the eye liddes, that there sheweth but litle in open sight. Platter faced and beardlesse, sauyng vpon the vpper lippe, and a litle about the pointe of the chinne thei haue a fewe heares as it were pricked in with Bodkins. Thei be communely all slendre in the waste. Thei shaue the hindre haulte of the heade, rounde aboute by the croune, from one eare to another: compassyng towarde the nape of the necke after suche a facion, that the polle behind sheweth muche like the face of a bearded manne. On the other parte, thei suffre their heare to growe at lengthe like our women: which thei deuide into two tresses, or braudes, and bryng aboute to fasten behinde their eares. And this maner of shauyng, do thei vse also that dwelle among them, of what nacion so euer thei be. Thei them selues are very light and nimble: good on Horse, but naughte on foote. All from the moste to the leaste, as well the women as the menne: doe ride either vpon Geldynges, or Kien, where so euer thei become. For stoned Horses thei occupie none, ne yet Gelding that is a striker, and lighte of his heles. Their bridelles are trimmed with muche gold, siluer, and precious stones. And it is compted a ioly thyng among them: to haue a great sort of siluer sounded belles, gynglyng aboute their horse neckes. Their speache is very chourlishe and loude. Their singyng is like the bawlyng of Woulues. When thei drincke, thei shake the heade: and drincke thei do very often euen vnto dröckennesse, wherein thei glorie muche. Their dwelling is neither in tounes ne Bourroughes. But in the fieldes abrode, afire the maner of thaunct Scithians in tentes. And the rather so, for that thei are all moste generally catteill mastres. In the wintre time thei are wõt to drawe to the plaines, & in the Sumer season, to the mountaignes & hillie places for the better pasture. Thei make them Tentres, or elles rounde cotages of wickres, or of Felte vnder sette with smothe poles. In the middes thei make a round window that giueth the lighte, & letteth out the smoke. In the middes of the Tër, is their fire, aboute the which thei wife and their children doe sitte. The menne delight muche in dartyng, shootyng, and wrastelyng. Thei are merueilous good hunters, to the which thei go armed at all pieces. And assone as thei espie the beaste, thei come costing together rounde aboute and enclose her. And when euery manne hath throwen his darte, or shotte his arrowe: whilst the beast is troubled & amased with the stripes, thei steppe in to her & slea her. Thei neither vse breade ne bakynge: table clothe ne napkin.

Thei belieue that there is one GOD that made all thynges, bodily & ghostly, sene or vn-sene, and hym thei honour: but not with any maner of Sacrifice or ceremonie. Thei make them selues litle puppettes of silke or of felte, or of thrumme, like vnto menne: which thei sette vp vpon eche side of their Tentres, and do the muche reuerence, beseeching them to take hede to their catteille. To these thei offre the first milke of all their milche catteill, of what kinde so euer thei be. And before thei begin either to eate or drinke aught, thei sette

sette

le nombre de
sonnes of the
hides of their
e their hartes,
of the people:
when thei sawe
disobeyinge of
God him selfe.
t bordred vpon
also vnto them:
ge vpon those
sonne risinge,
vndre his sub-
and Emperour
ng great stiepe
sight. Platter
e of the chinne
ely all slendre
ne croune, from
e a facion, that
nto ther parte, thei
nto two tresses,
of shauyng, do
theim selues are
ne moste to the
Kien, where so
is a striker, and
precious stones.
sounded belles,
d loude. Their
the heade: and
e. Their dwell-
maner of thaun-
ally catteill mas-
er season, to the
p, or elles rounde
des thei make a
ddes of the Tët,
e menne delight
hunters, to the
ei come costing
wen his darte, or
thei steppe in to
tly, sene or vn-
ie. Thei make
menne: whiche
beseching them
milche catteill,
nke aught, thei
sette

sette a porcion thereof before them. Looke what beaste thei kille to be eaten, thei reserue the harte all nighte in some couered cuppe, and the nexte mornyng seath it and eate it.

Thei worshippe also and Sacrifice to the Sonne, Moone, and elementes fowre. To Cham also their Lorde and Kyng, thei do very deuoute honour and Sacrifice: supposyng him to be the sonne of God, and to haue no piere in the whole worlde: neither can thei abide to heare any other manne name hym.

This people so despiseth al other men, and thincke them selues so farre to surmount them in wisdom and goodnes: that thei abhorre to speake to them, or to compaignie with them. Thei calle the Pope and all Christen menne, Doggues and Idolatres: because thei honour stones and blocques. And thei them selues (beyng giuen to deuclishe supersticions) are markers of dreames, & haue dreame readers among them: as well to enterpreate their sweuens, as to aske knoweledge of Idolles. In whom thei are perswaded that God speaketh: and therefore acording to their answeres, frame them selues to do. Thei marke many seasons, and specially haue regarde to the chaunges of the Moone. Yet make thei for no season, ne chaunge, any singular holidai or obseruance: but ilike for them all indifferently. Thei are of so gredie a coueitousnesse, and desire, that if any of them se aughte, that he coueiteth to haue, and cannot obtien with the good wille of the owner: if it apperteigne to no Tartarre, he will haue it by force. And thei thincke (through a certain ordonnance that thei Kyng made) thei offende not therein. For suche a commaundement had thei of Can-guista, and Cham, their firste Kynges: That if it fortune any Tartarre, or Tartarres seruauant, to finde in his waie, horse, man, or womā, without the kinges lettres or his saulfcōduite: he should take it, him, her, or them as his owne for euer.

To suche as lacke money thei lende, but for shamefull gaines: that is to saie, two shillynges of the pounce for euery Monethe. And if it fortune ye to faile to make paiement at the daie: ye shall also be forced to paie the enterest, according to the rate of the Vsurie. That is to saie, of euery tenth penie, one.

Thei do so polle and oppresse their tributaries, with subsidies, taxes and tallages, as neuer did people but thei, that euer manne redde of. It is beyonde belief to saie. Thei euer coueite, and as Lodes of all, do rape, and rende from other, and neuer recompence aught. No, the begger that liueth on almose, getteth not an aguelette of hym. Yet haue thei this one praise worthie propertie, that if he fortune to finde them at meate: thei neither shutte the doore against hym, ne thruste him out, if he be disposed to eate, but charitably bidde them, and parte with them suche as thei haue. But thei fiede the vnclenliet in the worlde, as I haue saied, without tableclothe, napkinne, or towell to couer the borde, or to wipe at meate, or afre. For thei neither washe hande, face, ne body, ne any garmēte that thei weare. Thei nether eate bread, nor make bread, nor sallottes nor potage, nor any kinde of Pultz. But no maner of flesshe cometh to them amisse. Dogges, Cattes, Horses and rattes. Yea, sometime to shewe their crueltie, and to satisfie their vengeance, the bodies of suche their enemies, as thei haue taken, thei vse to roste by a greate fire: and when thei bee assembled a good nombre together, thei teare them of the spittes like Wolues, with their tiethe, and deuoure the. And afteward drinke vp the bloude, whiche thei reserue afore hande for the nones. Otherwise thei vse to drinke Milke. Thei haue no wine of the coutrie it self, but suche as is brought into thei drinke very gredilie. Thei vse to Lowse one anothers heade, and euer as thei take a Lowse to eate her, saie: thus wille I doe to our enemies. It is compted a greate offence among them to suffre drinke, or a piece of meate to be loste. Thei neuer therfore giue the bone to the Dogge, till thei haue eaten out the marrowe. Thei neuer eate beaste (suche vile niggardes thei are) as long as the same is soude & in good likyng: but whe it fortuneth to be hurte, sicke, or febt by age, then bewrie they it in their bealies. Thei are greate sparers, & contente with smalle chaunge, and litle foode. Thei drinke in the mornyng, a goblet full of Milke or twaine, whiche serueth them some-ty me for their whole daies foode.

The men and the women moste communely are appareilled ylike. The men weare vpon their heades shallowe copin tacks, cōmyng out behinde with a taile of a handefull and a hauffe long,

long, and as muche in breadth: whiche thei fasten vnder their chinnes, for falling or blowing of, with a couple of strynges of ribbande lace, as we doe our nighte cappes. Their married women wear on their heades, fine wicke Basquettes of a foote and a halfe long: rounde, and flatte on the toppe like a barrell. Whiche are either garnished with chaügeable silkes, or the gaiest parte of the Pecoockes feathers, and sette with golde and stones of sondrie sortes. As for the residue of their bodie, thei wear according to their abilitie, bothe men and women, Skarlet or Veluet, or other silkes. Thei weare coates of a straunge facion, open on the left side, whiche thei put on accordingly, and fasten with fowre or five Buttons. Their Somer wieses are all cōmunely blacke: and those that thei weare in Winter and foule weather, white: and neuer lower then the knee. Wearing furies (wherein thei muche delight) thei weare not the furre inwarde, as we communely doe: but contrariwise the heare outwarde, that thei maie enioie the pleasure of the shewe.

It is harde to discerne by the appareile the maide, fro the wife, or the woman fro the manne: so like araid do the menne and the womē go. Thei weare breeches, the one and the other. When thei shal go to the skirmishe, or to battaille, some couer their armes (whiche at all other tymes are naked) with plates of iron, buckeled together alonge, in many pieces, that thei may the easelier sturre their armes. Some doe thesame with many foldes of Leather: wherewith thei also arme their head. Thei cannot handle a target: nor but fewe of them a launce or a long sward. Thei haue curtillases of. iii. quarters longe: not double edged but backed. Thei fighte all with a quarter blowe, & neither right downe, ne foyning. Thei be very redy on horsebacke, and very skilful archers. He is counted moste valeaüte, that best obserueth the commaundement and the obedience dewe to his capitaine. Thei haue no wages for their souldie, yet are thei prest and ready in all affaires, and all commaundementes. In battayle, and otherwise wher oughte is to be done, very politike and experte. The princes and capitaines entre not the battle, but standyng aloofe, crye vnto their men, and harten them on: lookinge diligently aboute on euery side what is nedefull to be done. Sometime to make the armye sieme the greater, and the more terrible to the ennemy: thei set vp on horsebacke their wiues and their childreu, yea and men made of cloutes. It is no vilany amonge them to flye: if any thinge maye eyther be sauēd or wonne by it. When thei will shoote, thei vnarme their righte arme, and then let thei flye with suche violence, that it pearceth all kinde of armour. Thei giue the onset flockinge in plumpes, and likewise in plompes they flie. And in the flighte thei so shoote backe warde behinde them, that thei slea many of their enemies pursuinge the chase. And when thei perceiue their enemies dispersed by pursuinge the chase, or not to fighte any thinge wholie together: soudeinly retourninge, thei beginne a newe onset with a hayle of shotte, neither sparing horse ne mā. So that oftentimes thei ouercome when thei are thoughte to be vauquished. When thei come to enuade any quartre or cōtrie, thei deuide their armie, and sette vpon it on euery parte: so that the inhabitours can neither haue laisure to assemble and resiste, ne waye to escape. Thus are thei alway sure of the victory, whiche thei knytte vp with moste proude crueltie. Neither spareinge manne woman ne childe, olde ne younge sauing the artificer onely, whom thei reserue for their own vses. And this slaughter make thei afre this maner. When thei haue all taken them, thei distribute them to their Centurians: who committe them againe to the slaues: to euery one fewer or more accordinge to the multitude. And when the slaues haue all slayne them as bouchers kille hogges: then for a terrour to al other ther about: of euery thousande of y dead thei take one, and hange him vp by the hieles vpon a stake, amydde these deade bodies: and so ordre his heade as though it appiered by his facion or maner of hanginge, that he yet bothe harkened the complainte of his felowes, and lessened them againe. Many of the Tartarres when the bodies lie freshe blindinge on the grounde, laye them downe alonge, and sucke of y bloud a full gloute.

Thei kepe faith to no manne, howe depely so euer thei binde them selues thervnto. Thei deale yet wourse with those that thei ouer come with force. The maidens and younge women thei deflowre, and defile as thei come to hande, neither do thei iudge it any dishonestie. The beautifuller sorte thei lead away with thē: and in extreame misery, constraine them to be their slaues all their lyfe longe. Of all other thei are moste vnbrideled in leachery. For al-

thou, he

Asie.

though
but m
beaste
marie,
So tha

This
yet the
parcial
the bec
têtes ar
bothe t

Thos
Thei bu
prouisio
people l
take fles
leasse b
in reuer
reste vp
touche t
take ther
not one
milke.

self will
necessitie
with all
thre strid
is tied a
these. ii.
women (i
and mumi
greate im
before he
kinge, or
greate th
thei by a
Many oth
slean mā,
of their g
Thei haue
er of wo
any of the
of blacke
no manne

Afre w
the corps
trenches,
the tent m
the which
with one h
and a hors
out a slat
when he d

VOL. V.

though thei marye as many wyues as thei luste, and are able to kepe: no degre prohibited, but mother, daughter, and sister: yet are thei as rācke bouguers with mankinde, and with beastes, as the Saracenes are, and no punishmente for it amonge them. The woman that thei marie, thei heuer take as wife, ne receiue any dowrie with her, vntill she haue borne a childe. So that if she be barren he maye caste her vp, and mary another.

This is a notable meruaile, that though amonge theim manye women haue but one manne: yet thei neuer lightly falle out, ne brawle one with another for him. And yet are the menne parcialle in theyr loue: shewing muche more fauour to one then another, and goynge fro the bedde of the one, streighte to the bedde of an other. The women haue their seuerall tētes and householdes: And yet liue verie chastely, and true to their housebandes. For bothe the manne and the woman taken in adultery, suffre death by the lawe.

Those that are not occupied for fy warres, drinke the catteile a fildie, and there kepe them. Thei hunte, and exercise themselves in wrastlinge, other thing doe thei not. The care of prouision for meate and drinke, appareille and householdes, they betake to the women. This people hath many superstitious toyes. It is a heinous matier with them, to touche fy fier, or take fleshe out of a pottle with a knife. Thei hewe or choppe no maner of thing by the fire, leasse by any maner of meanes, thei might fortune to hurte the thing which alway they haue in reuerence, and iudge to be the clenser, and purifier of al thinges. To laye them downe to reste vpon the whippe that thei stirre theyr horse with (for spurs they vse none) or to touche their shafles therewith, in no wise thei wylle not. Thei neither kille younge birdes, ne take them in the neste or other waies. Thei beate not the horse with the bridle. Thei breake not one bone with another. Thei are ware, not to spill any sponne meate, or drinke, specially milke. No manne pisseth within the compasse of their sojourning place. And if any one of self willed stubbornesse should do it, he ware sure withoute all mercy to die for it. But if necessitie constraine thē to do it (as it often happeneth) then the tente of hym that did it, with all that is in it, muste be clensed and purified after this maner. They make two fires, thre strides one from another. And by eche fire thei pitche downe a laueline. Vpon them is tied a lyne stretching fro the one to the other, and couered ouer with buckrame. Betwene these, ii. lauelins, as through a gate, muste all thinges passe that are to be purified. Two women (to whome this office belongeth) stande, on either side one, sprinckelinge on watre, and mumblinge certaine verses. No straügiar, of what dignitie so euer he be, or of howe greate importance so euer the cause of his comming be: is admitted to the kinges sighte before he be purified. He that treadeth vpon the thressholde of the tente wherein their kinge, or anye of his chiefeines lyeth, dieth for it in the place. If any manne bite a gobet, greater than he is able to swallowe, so that he be constrained to put it out of his mouth againe: thei by and by make a hole vndre the tent, and ther drawe him out, and cruelly slea him. Many other thinges ther are which thei compte for faultes beyonde all forgiuenesse. But to slea mā, to enuade a nother mannes country, cōtrary to all righte and reason, to bereue them of their goodes and possessions, to breake the preceptes of God, thei estieme as nothinge. Thei haue a beliefe that afre this life thei shal liue for euer in another worlde (but what maner of worlde thei cannot telle) & ther receiue rewarde for their well doinges. When anye of the falleth sicke, & lieth at the pointe of deathe, thei sticke vp a laueline with a piece of blacke clothe at the dore of the tēte wher he lieth, that none come in as they passe by. For no manne when he seeth this, dare entre thether vncalled.

Afre what time the sicke is dead, his whole house gather together, and priuely conueighe the corps into some place withoute the tente, chosen for fy purpose. Ther cut they out a trenche, braye and dicpe enoughe to sette vp another lytle tent in: so hat the toppe of the tent maye be well within the grounde. In that thei prepare a table with a banket: at the whiche thei sette the deade bodye in his beste appareille. And so together, as it ware with one häde, couer all with earth againe. Thei bewry with him also some beaste of bourden, and a horse ready saddled and appointed to ride. The gentlemē by their life time, appointe out a slaue (whome thei marke with their brande) to be specially bewried with him when he dieth. And this do thei vpon perswasion of a life in a nother worlde, wher thei

would be loth to lacke these necessaries. Then doe the deades friendes take another horse, and slea him. And when they haue eaten the fleshe, thei stuffe the hide full of haye, and sowe it againe together and sette it vp ouer the graue vpon foure poles, in remembrance of the deade. The bones do the two ordenarie women burne, for the clensing and puriflinge of the soule. But the gentlemen, and thei of higher degree, handle the hide afire another maner. Thei cut it out into very fine thonges, to asmuche lengthe as thei can, and measure oute asmuche grounde about the Sepulchre as the thonge wille stretche vnto. For so muche ground thincke thei shall the deade haue in a nother worlde. At the thirtieth daye thei ende their mourning.

Certaine of the Tartarres, professing the name of Christe, yet farre from his righteousness: when their parentes waxe aged, to haste their death, crame the with gobins of fatte. Whē thei die thei burne them to pouldre, whiche thei reserue as a precious Jewelle, to strawe vpon their meate euery daie. But to declare with what solempnitie and iofulnes thei sette vp their newe Kyng, afre the death of tholde: because it ware to longe a thyng, bothe for the reader & writer to set out at length, I will shewe you in brief theffecte.

Abrode in the fieldes, in a faire plaine ordenary for the purpose: all the Dukes, Eries, Barons, Lordes, and the reste of the nobilitie, together with the people of the whole kyngdome, do assemble. Then take thei hym, to whō the crowne is due, either by succession, or by election. And when thei haue set hym vp in a throne of Golde: thei all fall doune on their knees, and together with one voice crie out a loude, afre this maner. We require the, yea, we will and commaunde the, to take the rule & gouernaunce of vs. He answereth, if ye will haue me doe so, then must ye of necessitie be redy to do whatsoeuer I commaunde ye. To come when I calle ye, to go whether so euer I sende ye, to slea whom so euer I commaunde ye, without staieng or stackering. And to put the whole kingdome and rule in my handes, when thei haue answered, we are content: Saieth he againe, from hencefurthe then the speache of my mouth, shalbe my swearde. To this the people yealde with greateshoutes, and reioisnges. In the meane while the princes and the nobles, taking the king out of his throne, spread abroad on the grounde a peece of felte: vpon the whiche, thei cause hym in simple sorte to sitte doune, and thus saie to hym. Looke vp, and remembre GOD aboute the. And now looke doune also, and behold this felt vndre the. If thou gouerne wel, thou shalte haue all euen as thou wouldest wissh it. But if contrary wise, thou shalt so be broughte doune againe, and so nighe be bereued of all: that thou shalte not haue so muche, as this poore felte left the, whervpon thou sittest. This ones saied, thei sette in to hym, of all his wiues the diereſt derlyng. And lifyng vp the felte alofte, haile hym by the name of Emperour, & her by the name of Emprise. Then come there presētes streight from al countries, and peoples of his dominion: and all the Threasoures that the kyng, his predecessour lefte, are brought him. Of the whiche he giueth giftes to al the princes and high estates: commaundyng the reste to be kepte for himself, and so dissolueth the Parliament as it ware.

In his hande and power is then altogether, no manne can: or though he can, he dare not saie this is myne, or this is his. No man maie dwelle in any parte of the lande, but in that wherevnto he is appointed. The Emperour hymself appointeth the Dukes: the Dukes, the Millenaries: the Millenaries, the Centurians: and thei the Disniers: and the Disniers the residewe. The seale that he vseth hath this superscription. GOD in heauen, and Chutchuth Cham in earth, the force of God, and Emperour of all menne. He hath fīue armies of greates multitude and force: and fīue chieftaines, by whom he subdueth all that stande against hym. He hymself neuer speaketh to any foreine ambassadours, nor admitteth the to his presence, as is aboue saied: excepte bothe thei and their giftes (without the whiche specially thei maie not come) bee purified by the ordenarie women. The Kyng answereth by another mannes mouthe. And the persone by whom he answereth, be he neuer so honourable, for the tyme that he becōmeth the kynges mouthe, kneleth on his knees and giueth so diligent eare, that he swarueth not from the Kyng in one worde. For it is not lawefull for any manne, to chaunge the kynges woordes: ne for any man in any wise, to replie against suche sentēce

Aste.

sentēce
hym,The
on a l

ware t

The
the forstretch
had eigwas to
of Ant

the Lai

of Knig

dered,
of a go

their er

Their
their wi

ware al

differed

Christe

Thei fas

tide. V

ware gr

that vpo

wherin

more the

all mane

and Frid

Through

yet on th

fast. Th

different

steined f

Jewes do

albe or v

or Subde

as the G

ritualtie

Thei r

marie ag

the Biss

gatorie t

in Christ

thirtie po

¶

The la

endelong

are in it

with her

her horse.
maye, and
embraunce
purifienge
re another
d measure
so muche
thei ende

hteousnes :
tte. Whē
, to strawe
es thei sette
yng, bothe

ukes, Erles,
whole kyng-
succession,
fall doune
We require
answereth,
commaunde
euer I com-
rule in my
hencefurthe
with greate
ng the king
whiche, thei
d remembre
hou gouerne
e, thou shalt
e not haue so
ei sette in to
hym by the
etes streight
he kyng, his
princes and
eth the Par-

he dare not
ande, but in
: the Dukes,
the Disniers
nd Chutchuth
nies of greate
against hym.
his presence,
pecially thei
h by another
onourable, for
th so diligent
efull for any
against suche
sentēce

sentēce as he giueth. He neuer drincketh in open presence, but some body first sing to hym, or plaie vpon some instrumente of Musicque.

The gentlemen and menne of honour when thei ride, haue a phannell borne afore them, on a lauelines ende, to kieve awaie the Sonne. And as it is saied, the womē likewise. These ware the maners and facions of the Tartarres, for a two hundred yeres paste.

The Georgiās, whom the Tartarres aboute the same tyme did subdue: ware Christians, afre the fourme of the Greke Church. Thei ware neighbours to the Persians. Their dominiōs stretched out a great length, from Palestine in Iewrie to the mountaignes called Caspij. Thei had eightene Bishopries: and one Catholique: that is to saie, one generall bishoppe, whiche was to them, as our Metropolitane to vs. At the firste thei ware subiecte to the Patriarche of Antioche. Menne of greate courage and hardinesse. Thei all shaued their crounes: the Laietie square, the Clercques rounde. Their women (certeine of theim) had the ordre of Knighthode, and ware trained to the warres. The Georgians when thei ware sette, ordered, and raunged in the fiede, and ware at point to ioine the batteill: vsed to drinke of a gourdfull of strong wine, aboute the bigguenes of a mannes fiste. And to sette vpon their enemies: muche amended in courage.

Their Clercques, whiche we calle the Spiritualtie, mighte vse bothe Simonie and vsurie at their wille. There was continuall hatred betwixte Tharmenians and them. For the Armenians ware also Christians, before the Tartarres had subdued the Georgians and the. But thei differed in many thinges, from the belief and facions of the true Church. Thei knewe no Christemas daie, no vigilles, nor the fowre quartre fastes, whiche we call Embryng daies. Thei fasted not on Easter eue, because (saie thei) that Christ rose that daie aboute euen tide. Vpon euery Saturdaie, betwixte Easter and Whitsontide, thei did eate flesshe. Thei ware greate fasters, and beganne their Lēte thre wekes afore vs: and so streightly fasted it, that vpon the Wedensdaie and Fridaie, thei neither eate any kinde of fieshe, ne aughte wherin was wine, or oile. Belieuing that he that drancke wine on these two daies: synned more then if he had bene at the stewes with a whore. On the Monedaie thei abstained from all maner of meate. On Tewesdaie and Thursdaie, thei did eate but one meale. Wedensdaie and Fridaie, nothyng at al. Saturdaie and Sondaie, thei eate flesshe and made lustie chiere. Throughe their whole Lente, no manne said Masse but on Saturdaies and Sondaies. Nor yet on the Fridaies throughout the whole yere: for thei thought then, that thei brake their fast. Thei admitted to the houseale, aswell children of two monethes olde, as all other indifferently. When thei went to Masse, thei vsed to put no watre in the wine. Thei abstained from Hares flesshe, Beaws flesshe, Crowes, and suche other as the Grekes did, and Iewes do. Their Chalices ware of Glasse, and of Tree. Some said Masse without either albe or vestement, or any maner suche ornamēt. Some onely with thornamētes of Deacon or Subdeacon. Thei ware all busie vsurers, and Simonites: bothe spirituall and Tēporall, as the Georgians ware. Their priestes studied Sothesaieng and Nigromancie. Their Spiritualtie vsed luncckettyng oftener then the Laietie.

Thei married, but afre the death of the wife, it was not lawefull for the housebände to marie againe, nor for the wife, afre the death of the housebände. If the wife ware a whore, the Bisshoppe gaue hym leaue to put her awaie, and marie another. As for the fire of Purgatorie thei knewe nothing of it. Thei denied also verie stifly, that there ware two natures in Christe. The Georgians saied that thei swarued from the truthe of Christes Religion, in thirtie pointes or articles.

¶ The. xi. Chapitre.

¶ Of Turquie, and of the maners, Lawes, and Ordenaunces of the Turcques.

The lande, whiche now is called Turquie: hath on Theaste Armenia the more, & ronnethe endelng to the Sea of the Cilicians: hauyng on the Northe, the Sea named Euxinus. There are in it many coutries contained. As Lichaonia, whose heade citie is Iconium. Cappadocia with her heade citie, named Cesarea. Isauria, whiche hath for the chief citie Seleucia.

Licia, whiche now is called Biquia. Ionia: now called Quisquoun, in the whiche standeth Ephesus, Paphlagonia, and in it Germanopolis. And Leuech: that hath for the heade Citie Trapezus. All this countrie that now is called Turkeie, is not inhabited by one seuerall nation, but there be in it Turques, Grekes, Armenians, Saracenes, Iacobites, Nestorians, Iewes and Christians. Whiche liue for the moste parte, according to the Tradicions and Ordennances, that Mahomet the countrefeict Prophete, gaue vnto the Saracenes (a people of Arabie) the yere of our Lorde and Sauour Iesus Christe. vi. hundred and. xxix. A manne whome I can not telle whether I maye calle an Arabiane or a Persia. For ther be authorities of writers on either behaulfe. His father was an idolastre afire the maner of the heathen. His mother an Ismalite leaning to the lawe of the Iewes. And whilest in his childehode, his mother taught him afire one sorte, & his father afire another: thei printed in hym suche a doubtfull belief, y when he came to age he cleaued to neither. But as a manne of subtile and guilefull witte, afire what time he had bene longe conuersaunte amongst menne of the Christian religion: he draue a drifte, deuised out of both lawes (the olde and the newe) how he mighte notably enfecte the worlde.

He said the Iewes did wickedly to denie Christe to be borne of the virgine Mary, seinge the prophetes (me of great holinesse, & enspired with the holy ghost) had foreshewed the same, & warned me of many yeres passed to looke for him. Contrariwise he said to the Christians thei ware very fonde to beleue that Iesus, so dierly beloved of God, and borne of a virgine, would suffre those vilanies and tormentes of the Iewes.

Martinus Segonius Nouomötanus, in his booke of the Sepulchre of Christe our king, writeth that the Turkes, and Saracenes by an auncient opinion receiued from Machomet: do laughe Christian menne to skorne, that seke thether with so greate reuerence. Sayeng that Christ y prophet of all prophetes endewed with the spirite of God, and voyde of all earthly corruption: had ther no sepulchre in very dirde, for that he being a spirituall body coëciued by the breathe of y holy ghost coulde not suffre, but should come againe to be iudge of the Gentiles. This saith Segonius, and many other things sounding to like effecte: whiche the Mahometeines are wöte to throwe out against the Christians, bothe foolishly and wickedly. When this countrefeict prophet had saused his secte with these wicked opinions: he gaue them his lawe, and sorte of religion. Against the whiche lesse any man of righte iudgemente should afrewarde write or dispute (as against a pestilent and filthie perswasion) he wrote a lawe in his Alcorane that it shoulde be deathe to as many as should reason or dispute vppon it. Wherby he euidentlie declared, that ther was nothing godly or goodly therin. For why shoulde he elles haue so raked it vp in the ashes, and forbidden it to be examined: so that the people coulde neuer come to knowledge what maner of thinge it is that thei beleue in. In the giuing of his lawe, he vsed muche the counselle & helpe of the möcke Sergius: of the wicked secte of the Nestorians. And to the ende it might please the more vniuersally: he patched it vp together with peces of all maner of sectes. He thoughte it good to sette out Christe with the beste, affirminge that he was a manne excelling in all holinesse and vertue. Yea he extolled him to a more heighth then was appliable to the nature of mā, calling him the woorde, the spirite, the soule of GOD, borne out of a virgines wombe, whome he also with many wondrefull praises magnified. He confirmed with his consente, the miracles, and story of the gospel, as farre as it varieth not from his Alcorane.

The Gospelles said he ware corrupte by the disciples of the Apostles. And ther fore it behoued his Alcorane to be made, for to correcte and amende them. Thus fauning into fauour with the Christiās, he would haue bene christened of Sergius. Then to procure, & moue other also to fauour his proceedings: he denied with the Sabellians the Trinitie. With y Manicheis he made two goddes. With Eunomius, he denied that the father and the sonne ware equal. With Macedonius he said that the holy ghoste was a creature, or substance created. With the Nicholaites he allowed the hauinge of many wiues at ones. He allowed also the olde testament. Althoughe said he, it ware in certain places faultie. And these fondnesses did he beswiete with a wondrefull lure of the thinges that menne in this lyfe mooste desire. Lettinge louse to as many as helde of him, the bridle of al lechery
and

and lus
merabl
seduce
great o
städeth
Europe

The S
dwelte
on the
the Nab

When
Goddess
parte to
against
defraude
counsell

Heraclius
selues b
subdued
daily so

able to r
nacion o
came do

Armenia
these the
muche a

into such
hometes
Wherto v

greater d
or the o
a poyson

One b
no matie
ye se, th
braunce.

is to saye
the kinge
wages or

their poss
Asie, and
These ch

to our ad
afore whe
And these

Charippo
of an hor
about him

other kind
and do w
bene at t
when the

and luste. And for that cause doth this contagious euil sprede it self so wide in innumerable contries. So yf a mā at this day compare the nombre of them that are by him seduced, with the other that remaine in the doctrine of faith: he shal easeli perceiue the great oddes, ware it but herin. That wher Europe alone, (and not al that by a great deale) stādeth in the belief of Christe: almoste all Asie, and Aphrique, yea and a greate peece of Europe standeth in the Turkishe belief of Mahomete.

The Saracenes that firste receiued the brainesicke wickednesse of this countrefeicte prophete, dwelte in that parte of Arabia, that is called Petrea: wher it entrecommuneth with Lewry on the one side, and with Egipt on the other. So named of Serracum, a place nere vnto the Nabatheis, or rather as thei woulde haue it them selues, of Sara, Abrahams wife.

Wherupon thei yet sticke faste in this opinion, y thei onely of al mē are the lawfull heires of Goddes behest. Thei gaue them selues to tilthe, and cattle, and to the warres. But the greater parte to the warres. And therefore at what time they were hired of Heraclius in the warres againste the Persians: when he had gotten the victory, and thei perceiued them selues to be defrauded by him: kindled with the angre of the villanye thei had done vnto them, by the counsell and perswasion of Mahomet (who tooke vpon him to be their capitaine) thei forsoke Heraclius. And going into Siria, enuaded Damasco. Wher when thei had encreased them selues bothe in nombre, and purueiaunce necessary for them, thei entred into Egipte. And subdued firste that: then Persia, then Antioche, & then Ierusalem. Thus their power and fame daily so encreaced, and grew: that men muche feared, that any thing afterwarde shoulde be able to resiste them. In the meane season, the Turkes: a ferce and a cruell people, of the nation of the Scythians, driuen out by their neighbours fro the mountaines called Caspij, came downe by the passage of the mouite Caucasus, firste into Asia the lesse, then into Armenia, Media, and Persia. And by stronge hande wanne all as they came. Against these the Saracenes went forth as to defende the bordres of their gouernance. But forasmuche as this newecome power was to harde for them, the Saracenes within a while felle into such despaire of their state: that vpon condicion that the other would receiue Mahometes belief: thei ware content thei shold reigne felowlke together with them, in Persia. Wherto when thei had agreed, it was harde to saye whether of the peoples had receiued the greater dammage. The Saracenes, in yelding to them the hault right of their kingdome: or the other, whiche for coueteousnes therof yelded them selues to so rancke, and wicked a poyson of all vertue and godlynes.

One bonde of belief then so coupled and ioyned them: that for a space it made to them no matier whether ye called them all by one name, Saracenes, or Turkes. But nowe as ye se, the name of the Turkes hath gotten the better hande, & the other is out of remembrance. This people useth moe kindes of horsemē the one. Thei haue Thimarzeni, that is to saye Pencioners, aboute a foure skore thousande. These haue giuen vnto them by the kinge, houses, villages, and Castles euery one as he deserueth, in the steade of his wages or pencion. And thei attende vpon the Sensacho, or capitaine of that quarter, wher their possessions lye. At this daye the Turkes are deuided into two armies: the one for Asie, and the other for Europe. And either hath a chiefeine, at whose leading thei are. These chiefeines in their tongue be called Bassay. Ther are also another sorte muche lyke to our aduenturers, that serue withoute wages, called Aconizie. And these euer are spoiling afore when the campe is yet behynde. The fifteth parte of their butine is due vnto y king. And these are aboute a fourty thousande. Their thirde sorte of horsemen is deuided into Charippos Spahiglauros, & Soluphtaros. The beste, and worthiest of these, are y Charippie: of an honourable ordre of knighthode, as it ware for the kinges body. And those be euer about him, to the nombre of eyght hundred, all Scythians and Persians, and elles of none other kinde of menne. These, when nede is, being in the sighte of the kinge: fight notably, and do wondrefull feates on horsebacke. Spahy, and Soluphtary be those whiche haue bene at the kinges bringing vp fro their childehode, to serue his filthy abhominacion. And when thei are come to mannes state, thei marye at the kynges pleasure: And be enriched bothe

bothe with the dowery of their wife, and a stipende. These for the moste parte serue for embassadours, deputies, lieutenantes and suche other dignities, and are nexte vnto the kinge on bothe sides of him, when he goeth any whether as a garde. They are in nombre a thousande and thre hūdred.

Among the footemen are three sortes, lanizarie, these be chosen all the Empire ouer, of xlii. yerres of age, or there aboute, by certein that haue Commission for the purpose: And are for a space enstructed in the seactes of warre, in commune schooles. And then afterwarde are they chosen into souldie, and haue giuen them a shorter garmente, and a white cappe, with a tarfe tourned vpwarde. Their weapon is a Targette, a Curtillase, and a Bowe. Their office is to fortifie the Campe, and to assaulte cities. They are in nombre aboute twentie thousande.

The seconde sorte are called Asappi, and are all footemen of light harnesse, weaponed with swardes, target, and a kinde of long lauelines, wherwith they slea the horses of their enemies, in the skirmishe and battaile. These, to be knowne fro the lanizaries, weare redde cappes. These are appointed in nombre, accordyng as the case shall require. But they are euer at the leaste fouretie thousande. When the warres are finished, for the whiche they were hired: these are no longer in wages. Tharmie royalle hath about two hundred thousande armed menne, beside a greate rabble of footemen aduenturers, that take no wages, and suche other as be called out of Garrisons. And amonge these, Pioners and Cookes, Carpenters, Armourers, and suche other as they must nedes haue to make the waye, wher the place is combersome: to dresse victualles, to amende harnesse, to make bredges ouer floudes, to trenche aboute their enemies, to plante battries, make Ladders, and suche other thinges necessarie for the siege. They foloweth the armie also, sondrye sortes of money Masters: some for lone, some for exchange, some to buy thinges. And sondrie sortes of occupiers, such as be thought nedefull in such cases.

But there is nothing in all that nacion more to be merueilled at, then their spiedinesse in doeyng of thinges: their constantnes in perilles, and their obedience and precise obseruinge of all commaundemētes. For the least fault, of goeth the heade. They passe ouer raginge floudes, mountaignes and rockes: roughes and plaines, thicke and thinne, if they be commaunded. Not hauing respecte to their lyfe, but to their rulers. No men maie awaie with more watche, no men with more hongre. Among them is no mutinyng, no vproures, no sturres. In theyr fyght they vse no cries, nor shoutes, but a certeine fiercenes of brayeng. They kepe suche precise scillice in the night, through out their campe: that they wil rather suffre such as they haue taken prisoners, to run their waie, then to make any sturre. Of all the peoples at this daie they onely doe warre, according to the ordre of armies. So that no manne nedeth to meruaile how it cometh that no people this two hundred yeare and aboue, haue had like successe vnto them. Yea, it may truly be sayd, that excepte it be by some plague or murreyn, or discorde among them selues, they can not be subdued. The apparail that the souldiours do vse, is most comely and honeste. In their saddles and bridles, there is neither curiositie, ne yet superfluitie. No man among them wearth his Armour, but when niede is to fight. They carry their harnesse behynde theim, at their backes. They vse neither banner, standerde, ne flaggue: but certein lauelins that haue streamynge out fro the toppes, diuers coloured thriedes, by the whiche euery bande knoweth his capiteine. They vse a drome and a tippe, to assemble their Bandes, and to sturre them to the batteile. When the batteile is done, all the armie is presented to the Regestour (whiche is some one of the nobles) bothe that it maye bee knowne who is slain, and what nombre: and that newe may be entred in their places. In all assemblies and meetinges, feaste, or other: they praie for their souldiours, and menne of warre. But specially aboute all other, for those that haue suffred death for the commune quarelle of their cuntrye: calling them happie, fortunate, and blessed, that they yelded not vp their liues at home, amide the lamentacions and bewailynge, of their wiues and children, but loste them abroad, amonge the shoutes of their enemies, & the ratling of the Harneis, and Launces. The victories of their forefathers and

eldres,

Aste.

eldres,
thei th
kindlesThei
them a
the cor
pointe
nesse,
homeli
for the
thei cal
shipper
Thei vs
they cr
the sen
to do.
foundeNo m
stoole,
afre a
sitting
for the
facione
dre, or
it maye
any othe
compe
maner o
either at
course v
cleaneliThe g
that thei
And in
as it is
fortune
them, w
tique.From
And yet
that con
vnslain.
shippe
deuocion
there is
thei all
one God
beloued
faces to
filthe of
armes,
soile wi
lette of

serue for
vnto the
in nombre

e ouer, of
And
then afre-
and a white
and a Bowe.
mbre aboute

weaponed
es of their
eare redde
But thei
whiche thei
dred thou-
wages, and
okes, Car-
e, when the
uer floudes,
ier thinges
ey Masters:
f occupiers,

iednesse in
obseruinge
uer raginge
ei be com-
awaie with
proures, no
of brayeng.
i wil rather
sturre. Of
es. So that
yeare and
pte it be by
duced. The
and bridles,
his Armour,
their backs.
streamynge
his capiteine.
the batteile.
some one of
and that newe
r: thei prae
se that haue
e, fortunate,
ons and be-
utes of their
refathers and
eldres,

eldres, thei put into Balade, and sing them with greate honour and praises: for that thei thinke the courages of the souldiours and menne of warre, be muche quickened, and kindled thereby.

Their dwelling houses are communely of timbre and claie, very fewe of stone: for of them are the noble mennes houses their temples, and Bathes. And yet are there amonge the communes, men able of them self alone, to set furthe an whole armie, furnished at all pointes. But because thei are naturally giuen to sparing and to abhorre all sumptuousnesse, embrasing a lowe and simple state: thei wel beare this volutarie pouertie, and rude homelinessse. For this cause also, doe thei not set by any kinde of Painters Imagerie. As for the other imagerie of coruë grauen, or molten worke, thei do so hate and abhorre: that thei call vs Christians for delighting so muche in them, verie Idolatours and Image worshippers. And do not onely so calle vs, but wil earnestly argue, that we are so in dede. Thei vse no Seales to their Lettres, of what sorte so euer thei be, the kynges or other. But they credite the matier, asone as thei haue red the superscription, or heard the name of the sender. Thei occupie no belles, nor suffre not the Christians that dwelle amög them to do. Thei game not for money, or any valewe elles. And if it fortune that any manne be founde to do, in many südrie wise thei reuile him, and baite him with shames and reproche.

No man among them, of what degree or dignitie so euer he be: requireth forme chaire, stooles, or other kinde of seate to sitte vpon. But foldinge bothe him selfe and his clothes, afre a mooste comely sorte: rucketh downe vpon the grounde, not muche vnlike to the sitting of our gētlewomen ofte times here in Englande. The table wherupon thei eate, is for the mooste parte of a Bullockes hide, or a Hartes skinne. Not dressed, but in the heare, facioned rounde, beyng a foure or fise spanne ouer, and so set rounde about on the bordre, or verge, with ringlettes of iron: that putting a couple of stringes throughe the ringes, it maye be drawn together, and shutte and opened like a purse. House, or Church, or any other place wher thei entende to sitte, no man entreth with his shoes on. For it is compted a very dishonest and an vnmanerly facion, to sitte shoed. Wherefore they vse a manner of slippe shoes, that may lightly be putte of and on. The place where thei sitte, either at home, or at Church, is in some place matted, and in some place ouerspred with course woollen Carpette. And some places also, either for the lowenes, moistenes, or vn-cleanelinesse therof are planked with boorde.

The garmentes aswell of the menne, as the women, are large and longe, and open afore: that thei may the more honestlie and couertly hide all, when nature craueth to be eased. And in doeyng those nides, thei take greate hiede, that their face be not into the Southe, as it is whē thei praye. As also that thei discouer no priuie parte, that any man myghte fortune to see. The menne make water sitting, aswell as the women. For if a man amonges them, ware sene to make water standing: he should be iudged of all, a foole, or an heritique.

From wine (as from a prouoker of al sinne and vnclennesse) thei absteyne by their lawe. And yet eate they the Grapes, & drincke muste. Thei also forbear to eate any thinge, that commeth of the Hogge: or any thinge elles that dieth of sicknesse, or by aduenture vnslain. But any other thinges, being mannes meate, thei refuse not to eate. Thei worshippe the Fridaie, laieng all labour and businesse aparte, with as greate solemnitie and deuocion, as we doe the Sondaie, or as the Iewes doe the Sabboth daie. In euery citie there is one principall or head Church. In the whiche vpon the Fridaie at afre Noone, thei all assemble together. And afre solēpne praiers, heare a sermone. Thei acknowledge one God, to whom thei make no like, nor equalle: and Mahomet to be his trustie and wel-beloued Prophete. All the Saracenes are bound to prae fise times on the daie, with their faces toward the South. And before thei so do, to the ende thei maie be cleane from all filthe of bodie: to washe them selues toppe and taile, heade, eares, eyes, nose, mouthe, armes, handes, bealy, colions, legges and fiete. Specially, if he haue bene late at the soile with a woman or stouped on his taile to vnburden his bealie. Except he haue some lette of iournie, or sicknesse. But if he lacke watre to doe this withall (as that sieldome

or neuer can happen, for that thei haue in all cities, bathes ordenarie for the purpose) thei supplie the defaulte with the moulde of fresshe cleane earthe, wherewith thei rubbe ouer their whole bodies. Who so is polluted in any maner wise: suffreth no man before this clensing, to speake with hym, or to see him, if it be possible. Euery yere for the space of fīue wickes continually together, thei faste al daie as presicely as is possible, bothe frō meate, drinke and women. But afre the sonne is ones doune, till the next daie he riseth, thei neither spare eatyng ne drinckyng, ne pressyng of pappes. In thende of their lente, and againe the sixtieth daie afre: Thei kiepe their passeouer or Easter, in remēbraunce of the Rambe shewed vnto Abraham, to be Sacrificed in the steade of his sonne, and of a certaine nighte in the whiche thei doe beleue that the Alcorane was giuen them from heauen.

Euery yere ones, the Saracenes also are bound of ductie to visite the house of God, in the citie of Mecha: bothe to acknowledge their homage, and to yelde vnto Mahomete his yerely honour at his Sepulchre there. The Saracenes compelle no man to forsake his opinion or belief: ne yet labour so to perswade any cōtrie to do. Although their Alcorane commande them to treade doune and destroie all menne of the contrary belieue yea them & their prophetes. But through this sufferauce, ther are to be founde enhabiting in Turkie, peoples of all opinions, and beleue: euery man vsinge suche kinde of worshippe to his God, as to his religion apperteineth. Their priestes do not muche diffre from the commune people, nor yet their churches from their dwelling houses. Yf thei knowe the Alcorane, and the praiours and ceremonies of their lawe, it suffiseth. Thei are neither giuen to contēplacion ne yet schole study. For why thei are not occupied with any churche seruice or cure of soules. Sacramentes haue thei none, nor reliques, nor halowinges of fontes, Aulters, and other necessaries. But prouidinge for their wiues, their children, and householdes, thei occupie their time in husbōdrie, marchaundise, huntinge, or some other meane to get the penie, and mainteyne their liuing, euen as the temporall men doe. Ther is nothing forbidden them, nothing is for them vnlawfull. Thei be neither burdoned with tillage, ne bondage. Thei be muche honoured of al mē, for that thei are skilfull in the ceremonies of the lawe, teache them to other, and be the gouernours of the churches.

Thei haue many schooles and large, In the which great nombres are taught the lawes there giuen by kinges, for the ciuile gouernaunce and defence of the Realme. Of the whiche some are afterwarde sette fourth to be men of the churche, and some to be temporalle officers. Their spiritualtie is deuided into many and scndry sortes of religions. Of the whiche some liue in the wooddes & wyldernes shonnyng all companye. Some kiepe open hospitalitie in cities, and yet liue by almose them selues. These if they lacke meate to refreshe the niedy straunger and pelligrine, yet at the least waie they giue him herboure and lodgyng. Other, roumyng the cities vp and downe and caryeng alway in bottles faire watre and fresshe, if any man be disposed to drinke, vnasked they willingly proffre it him, and refuse not to take, if he for their gentlenesse offre aught vnto them agayn. Otherwise they craue nothing, but in al their wordes, gesture, behauour, & diedes: shewe them selues aungelles rather then menne. And euery one of these hath one knowledge or other, of differēce from the reaste. The Saracenes or Turkes are very precise executours of iustice. Who so committeth bloudshed: hath in like sorte his owne shedde againe. Taken in adultery, both parties are streight without mercy stoned to deathe. Thei haue also a punisshement for fornicatio, whiche is to the manne taken with the diede, foure score ferkes or lasses with a skourge. A thief for the first and the seconde time, escapeth with so many stripes. But at the thirde time, hath his hāde cut off, and at the fourthe his foote. He that endamageth any manne: as the losse or hinderance shalbe valewed, so muste he of force recompence. In claiming of goodes, or possessions, the claimer muste proue by witnesse that the thing claimed is his: and the denier shalbe tried by his othe. Witnesse thei admitte none, but per-ones of knownen honestie, & suche as mighte be believed withoute an othe. Thei haue also certaine spiefaultes ordinarily appointed (muchē like to our Sompnours) that spie in euery shiere for suche as be negligent, and let slippe suche oraisons, and seruice as thei be boude to. Those if thei fortune to finde them: do thei

punish

Asie.

punish
tailes,
them ge
our Ser
ricd. I
one. M
kepe th
so lawfu
cion in
for one
citie. I
uerall to
againē,
lust to a

Their
attire, n
hangeth
doores,
whole fa

The S
go to th
In the h
looke in
entre: b
houre of

To see
and so v
with his
a wondre
out. Bu
women,
haue thei
them Y
side the
her trou
& his la
ednesse.
delighte
like glist
swiete, r
Tapesser
light the
flowyng
deinties.
Godly ye
softe as
and gold
and redd
and euer
many sy

VOL.

punish after this manner. Thei haue a borde about their neckes, with a great many of foxe tailes, and togginge them vp and downe the stretes: all ouer the citie, thei neuer lette them go vntill they haue compounded by the purse. And in this also nothing vnlike to our Scmpnours. It is lawfull for no manne, beinge come to mannes state, to liue vnmarrried. It is compted amonge them as lawfull to haue. iiii. wiues, as it is amonge vs to haue one. Marie what soeuer is about this nombre (as thei may if thei liste, and be able to kepe them, no degree excepted, but mother and sister, marie a hundred) thei are not iudged so lawfull. The children that thei haue bothe by the one, and the other haue equalle portion in the fathers enheritaunce. Sauing that. ii. women children are compted in porcio but for one man childe. Thei haue not. ii. of their wiues together in one house, ne yet in one citie. For the busines, & disquietings that might happen therby, but euery wife in a seuerall towne. The housebandes haue libertie to put the away thrise, and thrise to take them againe. But yet when he hath ones putte her awaie, if any manne haue taken her, and she lust to abide with hym, she maie.

Their women are moste honestlie appareiled. And vpon their heades doe vse a certeine attire, not muche vnlike the veluet bonette of olde Englande: wherof the one lappe so hangeth vppon whiche side semeth her good: that when she is disposed to go out of the doores, or to come amongst menne within the house, she maie hide therwith by and by her whole face, sauynge her eyes.

The Saracenes woman, neuer dare shewe her self wher ther is a company of menne. To go to the marchate to occupy byeng or sellyng in any wise: is not syttyng for their womē. In the head church they haue a place farre a part fro men: so close that no manne canne looke into them. Into the which notwithstanding it is not lafull for euery mans wyfe to entre: but for the nobilitie onely. Ne yet for them neyther, but on Friday, at the onely houre of noone praier: whiche as I haue aforesayd, is kept amonge them high and holy.

To see a man and a woman talke together ther, in the open strete or abroad: is so straunge, and so vnwonted a thing, that in a whole yere it skäte happeneth ones. For a man to sitte with his wyfe in open sighte, or to ride with any womā behinde him: amongst them ware a wondre. Married couples neuer dally together in the sighte of other, nor chide or falle out. But the menne beare alwaies towarde the women a manly discrete sobrenesse, and the women, towarde them a demure womanlie reuerence. Greate menne, that cannot alwaie haue their wiues in their owne eye, appointe redgelinges, or guelte menne to awaite vppon them. Whiche waite them in diede so narrowlye, that it ware impossible for any man beside the housebande to speake with the wyfe vsene: or the wyfe by any stealthe to false her trouth and honestie. Finally the Saracenes do so full and whole beleue their Mahomete & his lawes: that thei doubt no whitte, but the keepers of them shall haue euerlasting blessednesse. That is to saye, after their opinion, a paradise of pleasure, a gardein plotte of delighte, full of swiete rindles of Christalline watre. In whose botomes growe grauelle, poppleth like glisteryng golde. The ayre alwaie so attempre and pure, that nothyng can be more swiete, more pleasaunte nor healthsome. The grounde couered and garnished with natures Tapesserie, neither lacking any colour that pleasaunte is to the eye, or sauour that maie delight the nose. Birdes syngynge with suche armonie, as neuer mortalle eare heard. Briefly flowynge in all pleasure that any harte can after thincke. Dishes for the mouth, of all deinties. All maner of Silkes, Veluettes, Purples, Skarlettes, and other precious apparelle. Godly younge damoselles, with graie rowlyng eyes, and skinne as white as Whales bone, softe as the Silke, and breathed like the Rose, and all at their becke. Vesselles of siluer and golde. Angelles for their Butlers that shall bryng them Milke in Goblettes of golde, and redde wine in siluer. But contrariwise, thei threaten vnto the breakers of them, helles, and euerlastyng destruccion. This thei also beleue, that be a manne wrapped in neuer so many synnes, yet if at his death, he beleue vpon God, and Machomete, he shalbe saued.

¶ The. xii. Chapitre.

¶ Of the Christians, of their firste commyng vp, their Ceremonies, and ordenaunces.

Christe Iesu, the eternalle and verie sonne of thalmightie father, the seconde persone in the holie inseparable, equalle, and euerlastyng Trinitie: Of a sette purpose, and spirituelle secrete, not reuealed from the beginnyng of tyme, & aboue mannes capacite: was by the meane of the holy ghost, conceiued and borne manne. In Iewrie, of a Virgine, of the stocke of Dauid, a thousande fife hundred, and twentie yeres* gone To sette vs miserable, and vnhappie menne on foote againe, whiche ware in Adam and Eue, by the sinne of disobedience ouerthrowen. And to bryng vs againe, vnto our heauenlie natiue countrie, from the whiche we haue by so many ages, for that presumption bene banished. Finally, to repaire and supplie in heauen againe ones, the ruine and fal of those spirites, whiche a space afore our creacion, ware thurst doune fro thence For the whiche purpose, we chiefly ware made. This Iesus, from thirtie yeres of age, vntill thirtie and fowre (in the whiche, through the maliciousnes of the Iewes, he suffred on the galowe tree) traueillyng all Iewrie ouer: first moued and exhorted the Iewes, and then other peoples, from the olde Lawe of Moses, and their wicked Image worshippe, to his newe ordenaunce and trade. And as many as would folowe, and doe afre hym, he called them his scholers or disciples. Out of the whiche, he gaue vnto. xij. that he had specially chose, Comission afre his death (when he had appered to the on liue again, as he had forewarned the y he would) to go as Legates, or Embassatours into y whole world, & to preache vnto all creatures, what so euer thei had sene or learned of him. Simon Petre (to whom longe afore he had surrendered the gouernance and chiefeinsshippe of his Church, as in reuercion afre him) whē afre the cōmyng of the holy gho-te some wente into one coste, and some into another, euery manne his waie, as thei ware allotted and commaunded: came first vnto Antioche. And there setting vp the first and chief chaire of the Church, keppe a counsaile with the other Apostles, whiche often tymes came to hym. In this Counsaile among other thinges it was decreed, that asmany as should receiue, and cleaue vnto the doctrine, and righte perswasion of Christes godlines: shou d fro thence furth be called Christianes. This Seate of superiortie, beyng afterwarde translated to Rome: bothe he and his Successours, tooke it for their chief charge and businesse, to put the rude and rawe secte of their Christe, and the folowers of the same, in some good ordre and trade of gouernance. Bothe afre the maner of Moses Lawe (whiche Christe came not to breake, but to consummate and finishe) and the state of the Romain gouernance, the Greke, and Egipcian: and also by paterne of the Ceremonies, obseruaunces, lawes, and ordenaunces Ecclesiasticke and Temporalle, of many other peoples: But specially afre the doctrine, of Christe Iesu, and the woorkyng of the holy ghost, to bryng them in to frame and facion. When thei ware entred in the matter: As thei sawe that me not among the Hebrues alone, but emōg other peoples also, ware deuided into Ecclesiasticke and Temporalle, Spirituallie and Laetie: and eche of them in moste goodly wise, into their dignities and degrees (The Romaine Emperour then being gouernour of the whole worlde alone, to haue Consulles, Fathers or Senatours: at whose becke all thinges ware deuied and doone: And in the residewe of the earthe to bee many Kynges, many Dukes, Erles, Presidents, and Deputies of countries, and their Lieutenauntes: Mareshalles of the fiede, and highe Conestables for the cōmunes, Pretours or Proupestes, Standerbearers roialle, Centurians, and Disners, Seriauntes, Conestables, Collectours, Surciours, Porters, Scribes, Listers, and many other persones without office, bothe menne and women. And in the Temples of their Goddes, a Sacrificer roialle, whiche is to saie in effecte, a highe Prieste of the dignitie of a kyng. Archeflamines, Flamines of honour, and other Flamines inferiour and laste in degree their Priestes. And by like ordre among the Hebrues: an highe Bisshoppe, and inferiour Priestes, Leuites, Nazareis, candle quenchers, commanders of Spirites, Church Wardcines, and Syngers, whiche wee calle Chauntours afre the Frenche. And amōg the Grekes: Capiteines, or heades ouer a thousande, ouer an hundred, ouer fuetie, ouer

It appereth by
this phee that
this was written.
xxxv. yeres gone.

Asie.

ouer tēn
and the
Sadduce
the Rom
folowe h
father of
And that
there, w
twaine)
stantinop
the place
three Dul
bishoppes
For as the
bishoppes
an Erle.
denarie in
high con
uoste, the
And for
Prieste, S
Deacon st
stables, c
lectours of
The Chaū
Benet and
All thes
to saie, a
Thereof co
Clergie, w
seuen deg
sone him s
lite, and th
offices, &
To the E
virgines, &
handes vpo
Priestes fro
uocaciōs a
church.
that be nev
to giue it t
more streig
in the crou
their heare
Their liu
voide of all
accordyng
ligetty to p
thinges per
panies or c
canes, Aug
Whiche al

ouer tēne, and ouer flue. And that there ware yet beside these, bothe among the Hebrues, and the Romaines, many couentes, or compaignies of menne and women Religious. As Sadduceis, Esseis, and Phariseis among the Hebrues: Salios, Diales, and Vestalles, among the Romaines: The moste holy Apostles did all consente, that Petre, and thei that should folowe him in the seate of Rome, should for euermore be called Papa. As who would saie, father of fathers, the vniuersalle, Apostolicke, moste holy, and moste highe bisshoppe. And that he should at Rome be Presidente ouer the vniuersalle Church, as the Emperour there, was ruler of the vniuersall worlde. And to matche the Consulles (whiche ware euer twaine) thei appointed foure head Fathers, in the Greke named Patriarches, one at Constantinople, another at Antioche, a thirde at Alexandrie, and the fowrthe at Hierusalem. In the place of the Senatours, thei took the Cardinales. To matche their kynges, whiche had three Dukes at commaundement, thei deuised Primates: To whom ware subiecte thre Archbisshoppes. So that the Archbisshoppe or Metropolitane, standeth in the place of a Duke. For as the Duke had certein Erles or Barones at his commaundement: so haue the Archbisshoppes, other inferiour Bisshoppes at theirs, whiche also by reason muste countreuaile an Erle. The Bisshoppes coadiutour or Suffragane, came into the Presidentes place. Thordenarie into the Deputies, then did the Officialle matche with the Mareshalle. And with the high conestable for the cōmunes, the Bisshoppes Chauncelour. And for the Pretour or Prouoost, thei sette vp an Archdeacon. In stede of the Ceturiane, was a Deane appointed. And for the Disnere, the Persone or Vicare. For the Aduocates, crept in the Parishe Prieste, Soule Prieste, Chaunterie Prieste, Morowe Masse Prieste, and suche other. The Deacon standeth for the Surueiour. The Subdeacon, for the Seriaunte. For the two Conestables, came in the two Cōmaunders of Spirites, called Exorcistas in the Greke. The Collectours office, was matched with the Church wardaines. The Porter became the Sexteine. The Chaütour, Scribe, and Lister, kieve stille their name. The Acholite, whiche we calle Benet and Cholet, occupieth the roume of Candlebearer.

All these by one commune name, thei called Clerj, of the Greke woorde Cleros, that is to saie, a Lotie. For that thei ware firste from among the people, so allotted vnto God. Thereof cometh our terme Clerque, and his cosine Clergie. Neuerthelesse, this name Clergie, was not so commune vnto all: but that it siemed moste propely to reste in the seuen degrees, that the Pope of Rome vsed for his Ministres, when he saied Masse in persone him self. That is to saie, the Bisshoppe, the Priest, the Deacon, & subdeacon, & Acholite, and the Chaütour. Vnto euery of these gaue thei in $\mathfrak{f}$ church their seueralle dignities offices, & appareile.

To the Bisshoppe was giuen auctoritie, to ordeine and make other Clerckes. To *enuelle virgines, & to hallow them. To consecrate their likes, and their superiours also. To laie handes vpon the. To confirme and Bisshoppe childre. To hallowe Churches. To put Priestes from their Priesthode: and to degrade them, when thei deserue it. To kieve Conuocaciōs and Sinodes. To make holy oile: to hallowe the ornaments and vesselles of the church. And to do also other thinges, that the inferiour Priestes doe. To enstructe those that be newly come to the faith. To Christiane, to make the Sacramente of the Altare, and to giue it to other. To absolve the repētaunte of their sinnes, and to fette the stubberne more streighte. To shewe furthe the Gospelle. To enioyne all Priestes to shauē their heades in the croune, like a circle of. iiii. fingers brode, afre the maner of $\mathfrak{f}$ Nazareis. To kepe their heare shorte, to weare no bearde. And to liue chaaste for euer.

Their liuyng onely to rise of the firste fructes, tenthes, and offerings: and vtterly to be voidē of all temporalle and Laiemennes cares and businesse. To be honestlie appareiled, and accordyngly to vse their passe and conuersacion. Onely to serue God and the church. Diligently to plye the reading of holy scripture, & they them selues mighte perfectly knowe all thinges pertaining to Christian religiō, wherein thei are bound to enstructe other. The companies or couētes of religious, aswel men as women: are Benedictines, Preachers, Franciscanes, Augustines, Barnardines, Anthonines, Iohānites, Cisternois, and innumerable other. Whiche al haue their habite, and maner of liuyng by them selfe: acordinge to the rule that

That is to saie,
to make
Nonnet.

echeone priuately prescribed to them selues. And liued for the moste parte a solitary life, professing chastitie, pouertie, and perpetuelle obedience. And for their solitarines the Greke called them Monachi. Some of these haue for their heades Abbotes, some Priours: which are either subiecte to the Pope onely, or to the bishoppes. Al these vsed coules, much afire one faciō, but in colour diuers, & abstained fro fleshe. The bishoppes when they say masse, haue. xv. holy garments, afire ſ maner of Moyses lawe, for ſ perfectiō of thē. His boate-wes, his Amice, an Albe, a Girdle, a Stole, a Maniple, a Tunicle of violette in graine fringed, his gloues, ringe, and chesible or vestimente, a Sudarie, a cope, a mitre and a *crosse staffe. And a chaire at the Aultares ende, wherein he sitteth. Of the whiche. vi. are commune to euery inferiour prieste: the Amice, the Albe, the girdle, the stole, the Maniple, and the vestiment. But ouer, and aboue all these the Pope, by the gifte of Constantine the greate, hath libertie to weare al the ornementes Imperiale. That is to saye a kirtle of skarlet, a robe of Purple, a sceptre, and a close corone. With the whiche afire he hath rauished him selfe in the vestrie, vpon solempne feastes, when he entēdeth to do masse: he commeth forth to the aultare, hauing on the right side a prieste, on the left side a Deacon, a Subdeacon going before him with a booke faste shutte, two candle bearers, and an encensour with the censoure in his hande smoking. When he is comē to the griessinges, the stayers, or foote of the aultare: putting of his mitre, he maketh open *confession of his sinnes together with his company.

The Latine call-
eth it a shiepe
hook.

That is, he
saith, confiteor.

Hora prima,
tertius, sextus,
nona.

That done he goeth vp to the aultare, openeth the booke, lienge vpon the lefte corner of the same, kysseth it, and so procedeth in the Solempniaciō of ſ Masse. The subdeacon readeth the epistle, and the Deacon the godspelle. Priestes of al degrees, are charged to prayse God seuen times a daie, and to praye with ordinarie oraisons. Towarde the eueninge, euensonge: and compline more late. Matines in the morninge, and incontinente prime, and howres, in ordre of tyme, as they stande in *ordre of name. And this humbly before the aultare, if he maye conueniently, with his face towards the Easte. The pater nostre and the Crede said they, onely at the beginnyng of their seruice, as the commune people do nowe a daies also. Saincte Ierome, at the vrgent request of Pope Damasus, parted out the Psalmes according to the daies of the weeke. And appointed for euery houre a porciō of propre psalmes. For the nighte houres on the holy daie. ix. and on the working daie. xii. For laudes in the morning. v. for euensonge as many, and for eche other houre but thre. He also ordeined the Epistles, Godspelles, and other seruice, vsed to be red out of the olde or newe testament, in maner altogether, sauing ſ note. The Anthemes (which Ambrose, Bysshoppe of Millayne wrate, and ended) Damasus put ordre that the quier should sing side afire side, & added to euery psalmes ende. Gloria patri, &c. The lessons and Hymnes that go before eche one of the howres did ſ couceiles of Thoulouse and Agathone authorise. The orisons, the grailes, the tractes, the Alleluya, thoffertorie, the Communions in the Masse, the Anthemes, Versicles, repitions, and other thinges, either songe or redde by nyghte or by daie, to the beautifieng, and praying of God: did Gregory, Gelasius, Ambrose, and many other holy fathers, deuise, and put furthe, not at one time but at sondry. The Masse (so terme they the sacrifice) was firste vsed to be done in suche simple sorte, as yet is accustomed, vpon good Friday, & Easter euen, with certeine lessos before it. But then Pope Celestinus put to the office of the Masse. Thelephorus, Gloria in excelsis: But Hilarius of Pictauiā made the Et in terra. Simachus ordeined it to be songe. The Salutaciōs, which by ſ terme of Dominus vobiscum, he made seuen tymes in a Masse, were taken out of the booke of Ruthe, by Clemente and Anacleto, and put in, in their places. Gelasius made vp all the reste to the Offertory, in the same ordre they be vsed. Excepte the Sequences and the Crede: wherof Nicolas put in the firste, & Damasus the nexte: according to the Sinode of Constantinople. The bidding of the beades, with the collacion that was wonte to be made in the pulpite on Sondaires, and halydaies: rather grew to a custome by the example of Nehemias, and E-dras, then was by any authorised. In this collacion at the firste conning vp therof, when so many as were presēte at the Masse did receiue the communion, according as was ordeyned by a decree: they that were at any discorde were exhorted

to con-
from
fiteor
lawe,
seuer
vertu
Greg
lesse.
sainte
gyue
maud
Greg
Deo
The
to con
Fir
The s
ceiue
suffre
in to
to hau
might
the de
vniue
The e
anoth
The
the Is
haue
or lik
vnder
shalt
holie
no m
steale
thou
nor h
The
our b
Th
callo
requi
nēt to
the fa
vpon
White
watre
euerl
childe
shoul
Pries
noun
Artic

to concorde, & agremente. And that thei should receiue the sacrament of the aluter cleane from the filthe of sinne, vpon the whiche consideracion at this daye it endeth with confiteor, or an open confession. There ware thei wonte to teache the instrumentes of the olde lawe, and the newe. The ten cōmaundementes. The xii. articles of our beleue. The seuen sacramentes, holy folkes liues, and Martirdomes, holy dayes, doctrines, and disciplines: vertues, and vices, and what soeuer are necessary beside forthe, for a Christiane to knowe. Gregory linked on the offertorie. Leo the prefaces. Gelasius the greate Canō, & the lesse. The Sanctus blessed Sixtus. And Gregory y Pater noster out of the Gospell of sainte Mathewe. Martiale the scholer of blessed Peter, deuised that Bysshoppes should gyue their benediction at the Agnus. And as for other infeour priestes, Innocentius commaunded them to giue the paxe, that is to saye peace. Sergius tacked on the Agnus, and Gregory the poste communion. The closing vp of all with Ite missa est, Benedicamus, Deo gratias: was Leoes inuencion.

The xii. articles of our beleue, whiche the blessed Apostles would euery manne not onely to confesse with mouth, but to beleue also in harte, are these.

Firste, that ther is one God in Trinitie, the father almighty maker of heauen and earthe. The seconde, Iesus Christe his onely sonne our Lorde. The thirde the same beinge conceiued of the holye ghoste, to haue bene borne of y Virgine Marie. The fourthe, to haue suffred vnder Ponce Pilate, to haue bene crucified, deade, bewried, and to haue descended in to helle. The fift, to haue risen agayne the thirde daye fro the deade. The sixteth, to haue ascended vp into the heauē, and to sitte on the right hande of God the father almighty. The seuenth, that he shall come fro thence like a triūpher, to iudge the quicke and the deade. The eight, that ther is an holy ghoste. The nineth, y ther is an holy church vniuersalle, the communion of the godly and good. The tenth, forgiuenesse of sinnes. The eleuth, the rising againe of the flesshe. The tweluth, afre our departing, life in another worlde euerlasting.

The tenne commaundementes, whiche God wrate with his owne fingre, and gaue vnto the Israelites by Moses, whiche thapostles willed vs also to kieve. The firste, thou shalte haue none other Goddes but me. The seconde, thou shalte not make the any grauē Image, or likenesse of any thing that is in heauē aboue, in the earthe benethe, or in the water vnder the earthe, thou shalt not bowe doune to them, nor worshippe them. The third, thou shalt not take the name of thy lorde God in vaine. The fowrtie, remembre that thou kieve holie thy Sabbath daie. The fift, honour thy father & mother. The sixteth, thou shalte doe no murdre. The seuenth, thou shalte not commit adulterie. The eight, thou shalte not steale. The nineth, thou shalt beare no false witness against thy neighbour. The tenth, thou shalt not desyre thy neighbours house, his wife, his seruante, his maide, his Oxe, nor his Asse, nor any thing that is thy neighbours.

The seuen Sacramentes of the church, whiche are contained in the fife laste Articles of our beleue, and commaunded vs by the holie fathers to be beleued.

The firste, diepyng into the water, called Baptisyng, afre the Greke. This, by canonicallye decree, in time paste was not wonte to be giuen (excepte greate necessitie soner required it) but to those that had bene scholers a space afore, to learne the thinges appertinent to Christendome. Yea, and that afre thei had bene exceedingly wellearned in the faith: and proufe taken of their profityng, by seuen examinations, whiche ware made vpon seuen seuerall daies in the Lente, and so ware thei Baptised vpon Easter euen, and Whitesondaie euen. Vpon whiche daies, thei ware accustomed to hallowe the christening water, in euery Paroche. But because this specially of all other, is chiefly necessarie vnto euerlasting saluation: leasse any bodie should die without it, thei decreed that asone as the childe was borne, godfathers should be sought for it, as it ware for witnesses or sureties whiche should bryng the childe vnto the Church doore, and there to stande without. And then the Priest should enquire, before the childe be dieped in the Fonte, whether it haue renounced Sathan and all his pompe and pride. If it beleue certainly and wholie, all the Articles of the Christiane faith. And the Godfathers answering, yea: for it, the Priest breathing

breathing thrise vpon his face, exorciseth it, and catechiseth it. Afre that, doeth he seuen thinges to the childe in ordre. Firste, he putteth into the mouth hallowed salt. Secondely, he minglith earthe and his spatle together, and smereth the eyes, eares, & nosethrilles of the childe. Thirdly, giuyng it suche name as it shall euer afre bee called by: he marketh it on the breast and backe with holie oile, afre the facion of a crosse. Fourthly, he dipeth it thrise in the Watre, or besprinkleth it with waire thrise, in maner of a crosse, in the name of the holie Trinitie, the father, the sonne, and holie ghost. In the whiche name also, all thother Sacramentes are ministred. Fiethly, wetting his thumbe in the holie ointement, he maketh therewith a Crosse on the childes foreheade. Sixthly, he putteth a white garment vpon it. Seuenthly, he taketh it in the hãde a Candle brennyng. The Iewes before thei be Christened (by the determinacion of the counsaile holden at Agathone, are catechised, that is to saie, are scholers at the enstruction of our beleue nine monethes. And are bound to fast fourtie daies: to dispossesse them selues of all that euer thei haue, and to make free their bonde men. And looke whiche of their children thei haue Circumcised, according to Moses lawe: hym are thei bounde to banishe their companie. No merueile therefore if thei come so vnwillingly to christedome.

Bishopping, whiche the Latines calle Confirmation, a confirming, a ratifying, establishing, auchthorising, or allowyng of that went before: is the second Sacramente. And is giuẽ of the Bishoppe onely, before the Aultare in the Church, to suche as are of growẽ yeres, and fastyng (if it maie be) afre this maner. As many as shalbe Confirmed, come all together with euery one a godfather. And the Bishoppe afre he hath saied one oracion ouer the all, wetting his thumbe in the holie oile, maketh a crosse vpõ eche of their foreheades: In the name of the father, sonne, and holie ghoste. And giueth hym a blowe on the lefte chiecke, for a remembraunce of the Sacrament, that he come not for it againe. The godfathers, to the ende the enoilyng should not droppe awaie, or by negligence bee wiped awaie, clappe on a faire filette on the foreheade, whiche thei iudge to be unlawfully takẽ awaie, before the seuenth daie. The holie fathers esteemed this Sacrament so highly, that if the name giuen to the childe at his Christendome, siemed not good: the Bishhoppe at the giuyng hereof mighte chaunge it.

The thirde Sacramente is holie Ordres, whiche in the firste Church, was giuen likewise of the Bishoppe, onely in the monethe of Decembre. But now at sixe seueralle tymes of the yere: that is to saie, the fowre Saturdaies in the embre wekes (whiche ware purposely ordeined therefore) vpon the Saturdaie, whiche the Church menne calle Sittientes, because the office of the Masse for that daie appointed, beginneth with that woorde, and vpon Easter euen. This Sacrament was giuen onely to menne: and but to those neither, whose demeanour and life, dispositiõ of bodie, and qualitie of minde, ware sufficiently tried and knowẽ. Afre the opinion of some, there were seuen ordres, or degrees, wherby the holy fathers would vs to beleue that there ware seuẽ speciall influences, as it ware printed in the soule of the receiuer, wherby eche one for eche ordre, was to be compted an hallowed manne. Afre the mindes of other there ware nine. That is to saie, Musicens (whiche encludeth singing and plaieng) Doore kiepers, Reders Exorcistes, Acholites, Subdeacon, Deacon, Prieste and Bishop. And for all this, it is cõpied but one Sacramente, by the reason that all these tende to one ende, that is to saie, to consecrate the Lorde's bodie. To euery one of these did the Counsaile of Toledo in Spaine, appointe their seueralle liuries, and offices in the Church. The Dorekeepers had the office of our Common Sexteine, to opẽ the church dores, to take hede to the church, and to shutte the dores. And had therfore a keie giuen vnto them, when thei ware admitted to this ordre. The Reader, in signe and token of libertie to reade the Bible, and holie stories, had a greate booke giuen him. The Exorcistes, serued to commaunde euill spirites out of menne, and in token therof, had a lesse booke giuen them. The Acholite, had the bearyng and the orderyng of the Tapers, Candelstickes, and Cruettes at the Altare: and therfore had a Candlestick, a Taper, and two emptie Cruettes deliuered hym. The Subdeacon, mighte take the offering, and handle the Chalice, and the Patine, carie them to the Altare, and

and fro
fore the
Cruet ful
preachyn
ministrac
his one sh
praie for
deliuered
shouldres
heard afor
Prime, be
pes, and
the firste
mune Cou
causing th
be conuer
called Pau
auoide the
to decree
ianes of t
or moe, a
haue to r
chaungyn
tongue.
owne ples
and the ho
and helpe
into Conu
that yet co
their lawf
Archebish
the Legate
saile, God
For the
the keies
the woordes
Wine to m
Christe
ciples, and
membraun
to beleue t
Againe the
whitte the
being deu
that thoug
as many cu
not into th
the eater co
heauen, vn
infinite, an
that one, a
places, and
the bread

th he seuen
Secondly,
mostethrilled
ed by: he
Fourthly,
of a crosse,
the whiche
be in the
ly, he put
brennyng.
holden at
our beleue
of all that
ir children
their com-

, establish-
e. And is
e of growe
med, come
one orasion
their fore-
a blowe on
it againe.
igence bee
unlawfully
so highly,
Bisshoppe

likewise of
mes of the
proposely or-
s, because
pon Easter
whose de-
tried and
y the holy
nted in the
n hallowed
s (whiche
Subdeacon,
e, by the
bodye. To
le liueries,
Sexteine,
res. And
dre. The
ad a greate
of menne,
aryng and
erfore had
Subdeacon,
the Altare,
and

and fro the Altare, and giue the Deacon Wine and water, out of the Cruettes. And therefore the Bisshoppe deliuereth hym an emptie Chalice with a Patine, and the Archdeacon one Cruet full of wine, and another full of watre, and a Towelle. To the Deacons, is the preachyng of Goddes Gospelle to the people committed, and to helpe the priest in al holy ministracion. He hath the Gospelle booke deliuered hym, and a towell hanged vpon his one shouldre, like a yoke. The Prieste hath power to consecrate the Lordes bodie, to praye for sinners, and to reconcile the againe to God by Penaunce enioined them. He hath deliuered hym a Chalice with Wine, the Patine, with a singyng cake, a stole vpō bothe shouldres, and a Chesible. What Ornamentes the Bisshoppe hath giuen vnto hym, ye haue heard afore. He maie not be made Bisshoppe, but on the Sondaie about the iii. houre aftr Prime, betwene thoffice of the Masse and the Gospelle: at the whiche tyme twoo Bisshoppes, and a Metropolitane, laie their handes vpon his heade and a booke. The Bisshoppes in the firste Church, did little or nothyng diffire from other Priestes, and ware ruled by the commune Counsailes of the Church, before that dissēcion and deuision entred among the people, causing them in sondrie sortes, to cleaue vnto sondrie names, euery sorte as thei fortunēd to be conuerted and Christened of a sondrie persone. As whom Paule Baptised, thei would be called Paulines. Whom Appollo, Appollonians. Whom Cephas, Cephites, and so of other. To auoide therefore these breaches of concorde, and for an vniformitie, the holy fathers ware driuen to decree and stablish that asmany as should aftrward be baptised, should be called Christians of Christe. And that ouer euery Countie or Shiere, there should be sette one Prieste or moe, acording to the greatnesse of the same, suche as ware best tried. Whiche should haue to name, Ouersears in Englishe: in Greke, Episcopj. Whom we cal Bishopes, by chaungyng of P. into B. and leauing out the E. for shortnes, acording to the nature of our tongue. These mighte not then gouerne their Clergie, and other their Diocesans, at their owne pleasure, as thei did before: but acording to the decrees of the Church of Rome, and the holie Counsailes of the fathers assembled. Then began thei firste (by the suffraunce and helpe of deuoute princes) to deuide all Christendome into Dioceses, and the Diocesse into Conuocacions or Chaptres, and those againe into Paroches, and to set that goodly ordre, that yet continueth, aswell among the clergie as the laietie. That the parishe should obeie their lawfull Person, the Person the Deane: the Deane the Bisshoppe: the Bisshoppe, the Archebisshoppe. The Archebisshoppe, the Primate or Patriarche: the Primate or Patriarche, the Legate: the Legate, the Pope: the Pope the generalle Counsaile: the generalle Counsaile, God alone.

For the fourth Sacramente it is holden, that euery prieste rightly priested, acording to the keyes of the Church, hauing an entente to consecrate, and obseruynge the fourme of the woordes: hathe power, of wheaten breade to make the very bodie of Christe, and of Wine to make his very bloude.

Christe our Lorde hym selfe, the daye before he suffred, kepte it solemply with his disciples, and consecrated, and ordeined it continually to be celebrated, and eaten in the remembraunce of him selfe. And about this mattier a man had nede of a great faythe. Firste to beleue the breade to be chaunged into the body, and the wine into the bloude of Christe. Againē thoughte this be done euery daye that yet Christ for all that should growe neuer a whitte the bigger for y making, nor the lesse for the eatinge. Thirde that the Sacrament being deuoyded into many partes, Christ should yet remaine whole in euery cromme. Fourthly that thoughte the wicked eate it, yet should not it be defiled. Fiuetly that it bringeth to as many euyll as receiue it, death: and to the good euerlasting life. Sixthly that it tourneth not into the nature of the eater to his nourishment as other meate dothe: but turneth the eater contrariwise into the nature of it selfe. And yet being eaten, that it is rapte into heauen, vnhurt or vtouched. Seuently that in so smalle a syse of breade and wine, the infinite, and incomprehensible Christe, God and manne should be comprehended. Then, that one, and the self same bodye of Christe, at one very instaunte, should be in many places, and of many menne receiued at ones, and in sondrye parcelles. Ninethly y thoughte the bread it selfe be chaunged into the very flesshe of Christe, and the wine into his bloude,

that

that yet to all the sences thei remaine breade and wine, and neither flesshe ne bloud. Further that all these comodities cōteined in these verses folowing should happen vnto those that worthely eate it.

It putteth in mynde and kindleth, encreaseh hope, and strengtheneth. Mainteineth, clenseth, restoreth, giues life, and vniteth. Stabliisseth beleue, abates the foode of sinne, and all vnclennes quenchereth.

Finally, to be very profitable for the saluaciō aswell of those liuyng as deade, for whō it is specially offred by the priest in the Masse. And therefore to haue to name Eucharistia communio.

In the beginning of the Christiane faith (and yet amonge certeine schismatiques as thei saye) one whole lofe was consecrated, of suche biggunesse, as whē the Priest had broken it in a platter into smalle pierces, it mighte suffice the whole multitude that ware at the masse to participate of. For in time paste the Christianes came every day to communicate by a speciall commaundemente, and ordenaunce. Aftrewarde but ones in a wicke and that on the Sunday. But whan it began to be skant well kepte vpon the Sunday neither: then was it commaunded that every manne should receiue it thrise in the yere, or ones at the leaste, at every Easter. And that every christian manne, when he stode in any daungier of death, beuyng whole of minde, should receiue it as a waifaring viande, to staye him by the waye: with as good preparation of bodye and soule, as he possibly mighte.

Matrimonie (whiche is the lawefulle coupling of the manne and the woman) broughte in by the lawe of nature, the lawe of God, the lawe of all peoples, and the lawe ciuile, is the fourth Sacrament. The holy fathers woulde haue but one mariage at ones, & that not in secrete but with opē solemnitie eyther in y church, or in the church porche, and so that the priest be called to the matier. Who shold firste examine the man, and then the womanne, whether thei bothe consent to be maried together. Yf thei be agreed (whiche is chiefly in this case requisite) he taking them bothe by the right handes: coupleth them together in the name of the holy and vnseperable trinitie, the father, the sonne, and the holy ghoste. And commaundeth, and exhorteth them that thei alwaye remembering this their coupling of their owne free wille & consent: as longe as thei liue, neuer forsake one another but loue & honour one another, be debonaire and buxome one to another, giuing them selues to procreacion, and not to lecherous luste. And that thei honestly and diligently bringe vp, suche children as God sendeth them of theyr bodies. Afire that he affiaunceth the both with one ringe. And sprinckling holy water vpon them, reacheth them a stole, and leadeth them into the church, where (yf thei ware not blessed afore) he blesseth them knieling before the altare. The woman hath on a redde fillet or frontelette, and ouer that a white veile, withoute the whiche it is not lawfulle for her fro that daye forward, to go oute of doores abrode, or to sitte by any manne. Twelue thinges ther be, whiche the holy fathers woulde haue to barre persons from contracting of matrimonie, and to disseuer them againe, yf thei be contracted. Errour of person, that is to saye, mistaking one for another. A betrowthing vpon a condicion, Cōsanguinitie or kindred, Anopē crime Diuersitie of secte, Force, or cōstrainte. Holy ordres, a Bode or former contracte, Commune or open honestie, Affinitie, and Dishabilitie of engēdrure.

The sixteth Sacramente is penance or repentaunce, giuen of Christe as it ware for a wracke boorde, wherby men are preserued fro drowninge. Eche Christian oughte vndoubtedly to beleue that this consisteth in foure poinctes. To saie, in Repētaunce of our sinnes, Canonically cōfession, Absolucion, and Satisfaction, or amendes. Firste let him sorowe, not with a lighte forthinckinge, but with a moste earnest and bittre repentaunce in the botome of his conscience: for the puritie and innocencie that he had gotten eyther by baptisme or y benefite of former repentaunce, and nowe hathe eftsones loste, and forgone throughe sinne. And let him hope with this repentaunce, to be reconciled to the fauour of God againe. And let him humbly, and truly with his owne mouthe, confesse to a wise prieste, in the steade of God: all those offences wherwith he knoweth him selfe to haue loste his innocencie and clenness, and to haue prouoked the wrathe of GOD againste him selfe. And let him assuredly beleue that the same prieste, hath power giuen him of Christe

(as be
satisfac
and g
is abso
the ab

The

this vs

as the

the ord

laie in

fourme

our fu

stroke,

noseth

beleue,

veniall

feastes

serued

the Ap

and a l

great i

monthe

recorde

howe h

baptis

second

hym int

ing of

halowin

the virg

the ouer

tie daies

braunce

and bon

to celeb

descend

glorious

vpō him

time, b

with the

somtime

pered t

of al na

Christe

holsome

it to be

ing as

heauen

partying

uitie, th

veres of

able, re

vol.

(as beinge his vicare, or deputie on earthe) to absolue him of all his sinnes. Finally for satisfaction or amendes making for the faulte: lette him not with grudginge, but chierfully, and gladly doe, what so euer he shalbe cōmaūded. Beleuig with vndoubted faith, that he is absolved, and quyte of all, as sone as the priest in dewe forme of wordes, hath pronounced the absolucion.

The seuenth, and the laste Sacramēt is the laste enoynting, by an oyle that is made to this vse, by the bishope in euery diocesse, by an yerely custome vpō Maūdy Thursdaie, like as the chri-matory oyle is. And this by the precepte of sainte Iames the Apostle, and by the ordinance of Felix the fourthe Pope after Sainte Peter: was giuen only to them that laie in dyeng, being of full age, and requyring it. Thei vse to enoynte with a prescripte fourme of wordes, and with often inuocacion of saintes: those partes of the bodie, wher our fiue wittes or senses: the hearing, seyng, smelling, tasting and touching, beare moste stroke, & with whiche man is iudged chiefly to sinne. That is, the eares, the eyes, the nosethrilles, the mouth, the handes, and the fete. Wherby the holy fathers would vs to beleue, that there was not onely purchased cleane forgiuenesse of all smaller offences, or venialle sinnes: but also either presente recouerie, or a ripper and gentler deathe. All the feastes and holydaies, throughout the yere, whiche the church hath commaunded to be obserued & kept: beginne at the Aduente, or approche of Christe our Lorde. Whiche Peter the Apostle instituted to be obserued in Decembre, with fasting and praier, thre wikes and a haulfe before Christemas, whē we close vp the last. viii. daies of that moneth, with great ioye and feaste. Thei deuoted the yere into two & fuetic wikes, and. xii. seuerall monethes. The monethes cōmonly into. xxx. daies. The firste daye of Ianuary the church recordeth howe Christe was circumcised acordinge to Moyses lawe. The. iii. daye afre, howe he was worshipped of the thre Sages, with thre sondry presentes: and howe beinge baptised of Iohn in Iordaine the floude, he laide the foundation of the newe Lawe. The seconde of Februarie, how his mother vnsotted, obeyng the maner of her cōtry: brought hym into the temple, and suffred her self to be purified or clensed, whiche we calle churching of childre. In memorie wherof the church vseth that daye, solempne procession, and halowing of candles. The fiue and twentieth of Marche, howe ſ aungel brought woordes to the virgin Marie, that Christ shoulde be borne of her, being conceyued in her wombe, by the ouershadowing of the holy ghoste. At the whiche time they willed vs to faste the fourtie daies that he fasted him selfe, being with vs vpon earth, and to renewe the remembrance of his passion, and deathe, whiche he willingly sustained to deliuer vs fro ſ yoke and bondage of the deuell. The laste day of that faste, which oftentimes falleth in Aprille, to celebrate the highest feaste in al the yere: in remembrance howe he ouercame deathe, descended into helle, vanquished the deuell, and returned againe on liue, and appeared in glorious wyse vnto his scholers, or disciples. In Maye, howe all those his scholers loking vpō him, he by his owne vertue and mighte, stied vp into the heauens. At the whiche time, by thordenaunce of sainte Mamerte, bishophe of Vienne: there be made ganginges with the lesse Letanies from one Church to another, all Christendome ouer. In Iune, and sometime in Maie, how the holy ghoste, promised to the disciples, giuen from aboue, appeared to them like glowing tongues: and gaue them to vndrestande, & to speake the tonges of al naciōs. Theight daie folowing, Trinitie Sondaie. The fuetth daie afre that, how Christe in his laste supper, for a continuall remembrance of himselfe, instituted the moste holosome Sacramēte of his bodie and bloud, vndre the fourme of breade and wine, leauyng it to be sene and eaten of his. The fuetenth of Iuly, how the blessed Apostles, acording as thei ware cōmaūded, the twelueth yere afre the Ascencion of their Master into heauen: wente their waies into the vniuersalle world, to Preache vnto all people. The departyng of Christes mother out of this life, the fuetenth daie of Auguste. And her Natiuitie, theight of Septembre. And thone and twentie of Nouembre, how she from thre yeres of age (at the whiche tyme she was presented to the temple) vntill she was mariage able, remained there seruing God stil a peace. And theight of Decembre, how she was of

her parentes begotten, that longe afore had bene barreine. The second daie of Iulie, how Elisabeth passing the Mounteines, visited her kindeswoman.

There were also certeine holie daies appoincted to the. xii. Apostles. To certeine Martyres, Confessours, and Virgines. As the fowre and twentieth of Februarie to saincte Mattheie. To saincte Marke the Euangeliste, the. xxv. of Aprille. Vpon the whiche daie, Gregorie ordeined the greate Letanies to be songe. The firste of Maie is hallowed for Philippe and Iames the more. The. xxix. of Iune, for Petre and Paule: & the. xxxiii. of thesame, for the Natinitie of S. Ihon Baptiste. The. xxv. of Iuly, for Iames the lesse. For Bartholomewe the fowre & twentie of August. For Mathewe, the one and twentie of Septembre. And the eight and twentie of Octobre, for Simo and Iude. The last of Nouembre, for S. Andrewe. The one and twentie of Decembre, for saincte Thomas. And the. vii. and twentie of thesame moneth for Iho the Euang. iste. The daie before, for Stephin the first Martire. And the daie afre for the Innocentes. The tenth of August for saint Laurence. And the thre & twentie of Aprille, for saincte George. Of all the Confessours, there are no moe that haue holidais appoincted, but S. Martine and saincte Nicholas. The firste, on the eleuenth of Nouembre: and the other the sixteth of Decembre. Katherine the virgine, the five and twentie of Nouembre, and Marie Magdalene the twentie and two of Iuly. There is also vndre the name of saincte Michael alone, the. xxix. of Septembre: a holy daie for all blessed Angelles. And one other in commune for all the saintes, and chosen of GOD, the firste of Nouembre.

Thei would also that euery seuenthe daie, should be hallowed of the Christianes, by the name of Sondaie, as the Iewes doe their Sabbath: resting from all worldly worke, and beyng onely occupied with praising of GOD, and the deuine Seruice in the Church. To learne by the Priestes preachyng, the Gospelle and the commaundementes of our faith. And by what meanes so euer we thinke in our conscience we haue prouoked the wrathe of God against vs all the wicke afore: that, this daie to amende, to sette cliere, and aske pardone for. In time past euery Thursdaie also was kepte as the Sondaie. But because we mighte sieme therein, somewhat to grateie the Heathen (whiche that daie kepte solempne holie daie, to Iupiter their Idolle) it was laied doune againe. More ouer the clerkes and the people, vsed bothe Thursdaie and Sondaie before Masse, to go round aboute the Church a Procession, and the Priestes, to sprinckle the people with holy watre. Agapitus instituted the one, and the other. The Thursdaie, in remembrance of Christes Ascencion, and the Sondaie, of his glorious Resurrection: whiche we celebrate fro Sondaie to Sondaie continually, ones euery eight daies. The night afore euery ordenary holidai or feastfull daie: the whole clergie, and the people, were bounde to kiepe Vigile in euery church. That is to saie, to wake all nighte, in deuine seruice and praier. But vpon consideration of many slaundersous crimes and offences, that ware by diuers naughtie and malicious persones committed, by the oportunitie of the darke: this maner was taken awaie, and ordeined that the daie before the feaste, should be fasted, whiche yet kiepeth stille the name of Vigile. The fathers decreed that the church in the whole yere should renue the memorie of fiue thynges.

Fro the Sondaie called Septuagesima (because there are seuentie daies, betwiene that and the octauaes of Easter) thei would vs to renue the memorie of Christes Fasting, Passion, Death & Bewrillale. The miserable falle also of our first parentes, and those extreme errors of mankind, by the whiche thei ware ledde awaie fro the knowledge and worshippe of one verie GOD: to the wicked supersticion and honour of Idolles and deuelles. And further, the greuous and intollerable bondage that the people of Israel suffred vndre the Phara of Egipte. Vpon whiche consideration, the bookes of Genesis and Exodus be redde in the seruice of the church. Whiche sheweth then in all her demeanour, and appareilyng, heauiesse and sorowe.

From the octauaes of Easter, to the octauaes of Whitsontide, Christes Resurrection, and Ascencion, with the commyng of the holy Ghoste. And together with that, the redemption, reconciliaciō, and atonement of mankind with God the father, through Iesus Christe:
and

Aste.

and the
prefigu
out ofFrom
haue to
woorke
longe r
saluaciō
sideraci
in the t
of book
and theFrom
Messias
phetes,
haue.That the
Birthe d
thens howas now
or place
the Biss
foundaci
stone o
directe i
afore.

shape of

Quiere)

somwhat

that the

with a p

Latine c

this cha

eares.

by night

into the

vtensiles

that hau

fete stre

Vpon wh

the foot

Those

the cross

booke to

painted

and fitte

for the c

be an al

haue the

alwaie to

of the cl

people t

the pries

and the restoring againe of the children of Israell, to the lande of behest. Wherein was prefigured our reconciliacion and redempcion aforesaid. For that cause is all the seruice out of the newe Testamēt, and al thinges done with ioye & gladnes.

From the octaues of Whitsontide, till Aduente, xx. wickes space, and more, thei would haue to bee celebrated the cōseration of Christ here in the worlde, with his miracles and woorkes of wondre. And ouer and beside that, the longe pilgrimage, that mankinde, by longe reuolucion maketh, from one generacion to another, from the tyme of our redempcion, saluacion and sauing, vntill the laste daie of time. Wherefore duryng this while, vpon consideration of the diuerse happe and hasarde, wherwith the Churchē is tossed, like a Shippe in the troubled Seas, she neither greatly reioiceth, ne soroweth, but redeth greate chaunge of booke, oute of the olde and newe Testamente: to the ende she maie walke the warelier, and the better wijnde her self out of the stormes, that are ready to assaile her.

From Aduente to Christemas, to remembre the tyme from Moses, to the commyng of Messias. In the whiche mankinde certefied of saluacion, bothe by the lawe and the Prophetes, awaited with moste earnest desires for his commyng, and the kingdōe that he shold haue. Wherefore thei ordeined that the Prophetes should be redde, and fasting exercised. That the churchē the better enstructed, and abled by these, mighte the worthelier receiue the Birthe daie of Christ her Lorde (whiche euer falleth the fowerth wicke aftre) and from thens holde on with feaste, and continuall gladnesse, vntill Septuagesima. Reioisyn that he was now come: whiche should bee the sauliuour of the worlde. Their oratories Temples, or places of praier (whiche we calle Churches) might not be built without the good will of the Bisshopp of the Diocese. And when the Timbre was redy to be framed, and the foundation digged: it behoued them to sende for the Bisshopp, to hallowe the firste corner stone of the foundaciō, and to make the signe of the crosse thervpon, and to laie it, and directe it iuste Easte and Weste. And then might the Masons sette vpon the reste, but not afore. This Churchē did thei vse to builde, aftre the facion of a crosse, and not vnlike the shape of a manne. The Chauncelle (in the whiche is contained the highe Altare and the Quiere) directe full into the East, representeth the heade. And therefore ought to be made somewhat rounde, and muche shorter then the body of the churchē. And yet vpon respecte that the head is the place for the eyes, it ought to be of more lighte, and to bee separate with a particion, in the steade of a necke, from the body of the Churchē. This particion the Latine calleth Cancelli: and out of that cometh our terme, Chauncelle. On eche side of this chauncelle peraduēture (for so litteth it beste) should stand a Turret, as it ware for two cares. And in these the Belles to be hanged, to calle the people to Seruice, by daie and by night. Vndre one of these Turrettes, is there commonly a voute, whose doore openeth into the quiere. And in this are laid vp, the hallowed vesselles and ornamentes, and other vtensiles of the church. We calle it a vestrie. The other parte oughte so to be fitted, that hauing as it ware on eche side an arme, the reste maye resemble the bodye with the fete stretched in breadthe, and in lengthe. On eche side of the bodye the pillars to stonde. Vpon whose coronettes or heades the voute or rophe of the churchē maye reste. And to the foote beneth, alters to be ioyned.

Those alters to be ordrely alway couered with two alter clothes, and garnished with the crosse of Christe, or some litle cofre of reliques. At eche ende a candelsticke: and a booke toward the myddes. The walles to be parieted without, and within, and diuersly painted. That thei also should haue in every parisshe a faire sounde stone, made holowe and fitte to holde water: in the whiche the water consecrate for baptisme, may be kept for the christening of children. Vpon the right hande of the highe alter, that ther should be an almore, either cutte into the walle, or framed vpon it: in the whiche thei would haue the Sacrament of the Lordes bodye, the holy oyle for the sicke, and the Chrismatorie, alwaie to be locked. Furthermore thei woulde that ther should be a pulpite in the middes of the churchē, wherein the prieste maye stonde vpon Sondaies and holidayes, to teache the people those thinges that it behoueth them to knowe. The Chauncelle to serue onely for the priestes, and clerkes. The rest of the tēporalle multitude to be in the body of the

church. Seperate notwithstanding, the men on the ryghte side, and the women, on the lefte. And eche of them to be sobre and honest in appparelle and behauour. Whatsoeuer is cōtrary to good facion or Christiane religion, with greate diligence to shonne it. It was the maner in the first church, both amonge men and women to lette their heare growe, to shewe out their naked skinne, and very litle or nothing to diffre in appparelle. Sainct Peter put first ordre, that women should couer their heades, and menne rounde their heare, and either of them to go in seueralle and sondrye appparelle. Moreouer that to euery church, shold be laid out a churchyarde, of the grounde adioyning, in the whiche all Christen mennes bodies mighte indifferently be bewried. The same to be consecrate, or halowed by the biashoppe, and to enioye all the priuilegies that the church may enioye.

The funeralle for the deade, thei kepe not in euery place ylike. Some mourne and kiepe dirige and Masse seuen daies continuall together, some ix. some xxx. or fourtye some, suetie, and a hundred, and other a whole yere, wrapped vp in blacke. The cōseile of Toledo ordeined that the corps beinge firste wasshed, and then wrapped vp in a shiete, shoulde be caried forthe with singing by menne of his owne condicion or sorte, clerkes by clerkes, and laye menne of laye menne. And afre what time the priest hath sensed the corps, throwen holy water vppon it, & said certeine prayers, to laye it into the graue with the face vpwarde, and the heade into the Weaste. Then to throwe in the earth again, and in token that ther is a Christiā ther bewried, to sette vp a crosse of wodde, garnished with yvie, cipres, or laurrelle. These be the ordres and facions of the Christiane religion.

FINIS.

Imprinted at London by Iohn Kyngston and Henrie Sutton.

The xxii daye of December. Anno Domini MDLV.

PRINTED

THE CONQUEST

OF THE

GRAND CANARIES,

MADE

THIS LAST SUMMER BY THREESCORE AND THIRTEENE SAILE OF SHIPPES,

SENT FORTH AT THE

COMMAND AND DIRECTION OF THE STATES GENERALL OF THE VNITED PROVINCES,

TO THE

COAST OF SPAINE

AND THE

CANARIE-ISLES:

WITH THE

TAKING OF A TOWNE IN THE ILE OF GOMERA,

AND THE

SUCESSE OF PART OF THE SAIDE FLEETE IN THEIR RETURNE HOMEWARD.

WHICH

SET SAILE FOR SPAINE THE 25 OF MAIE, AND RETURNED HOME

THE 10 OF SEPTEMB. 1599.

At London:

PRINTED BY P. S. FOR W. ASPLEY, DWELLING IN PAULES CHURCH-YARD AT THE SIGNE OF
THE TYGERS HEAD.

1599.

A V

Tuesday
of Rotterdam
before Flushing
fleets of 12

Wednesday

Thursday
two gentle

Friday

sailed from

Southwest.

William D

Doest being

flag of Or

North Hol

ships of the

top the blo

Hollanders

it is to me.

Saturday

for the re

flag, in sig

their boats

fleet, whe

altogether

aboard the

A

TRUE REPORT

OF

A VOYAGE MADE THIS LAST SUMMER, BY A FLEETE OF 73. SHIPPES,

SENT FORTH AT THE

COMMANDE AND DIRECTION OF THE STATES GENERALL OF THE VNITED PROVINCES,

TO THE

COAST OF SPAINE AND THE CANARIE-ISLES.

Tuesday the 25. daie of Maie the wind being Northe and Northe-east, we in the fleete of Rotterdam, being 20. saile of ships, the sunne beeing Southe-west and by West, came before Flushing, and ankered neere vnto Cleiburch; our generall at his comming found the fleetes of North-Holland, and Zealand ready.

Wednesday, the 26. daie wee remained there at anchor.

Thursday the 27. day of Maie, we tooke into our ships (by the Generals commandement) two gentlemen and foure souldiours.

Friday the 28. of May, 1599, the wind being northerly, we waied our anchors, and sailed from the Weelings with 73. ships, hauing faire weather, setting our course West, Southwest. Wee had 3. Admirals in this fleete, whereof the chiefe Admirall was the ship of William Derickson Cloper, wherein was embarked the honourable gentleman Peter Van Doest being generall of the fleete. This ship was called the Orange, carying in her top a flag of Orange colour, vnder whose squadron were certaine Zelanders, with some South and North Hollanders; Ian Geerbrantson caried the white flag, vnder whom the Zelanders and ships of the Maze were appointed. And Cornelius Gheleinsö of Vlyshing wore in his maine top the blew flag, vnder whom were appointed certaine ships of the Maze with some North Hollanders. Thus were wee deuicid into sundry squadrons, but to what ende it was so done, it is to me, and many others vknowne.

Saturday the 29. of Maie, hauing sight of Callis, 5 ships lay to the lee ward, and staid for the reuerward. The Lord generall shot off a peece, and afterward hung out the princes flag, in signe that the captains shold come aboard him, presently al the captains entred into their boates, & rowed aboard the General, at which time were two pinnaces sent out of the fleet, whereof one was the Generals Pinnace, but vnto what place they sailed, wee were altogether ignorant. And when the boates rowed from the Generall, some of them went aboard the victualers, and tooke out of them certaine fire-workes. The sunne Southwest, the

Generall

Generall discharged an other peece of ordinance, and put out the Princes flag, wherevpon presently the capitaines went aboard him, and when our capitaine returned, he had in his hande a letter closed vp, which hee brought from the Generall, and wee imagined that euery capitaine had receiued the like, and then wee sailed altogether toward the hight of Blacknesse, where wee anchored, (which caused vs greatly to wonder, seeing we had so faire a wind,) but we perceiued afterwards, that this was done, to the ende we should there abide the comming of the great new ship of Amsterdam; for the soldiours which were appointed for her, were all with vs in a ship of our company.

Sunday, the 30. of Maie, where lying at anchor al that night, the next morning we set saile altogether hauing the winde at North East, wee set our course West Northwest, the weather being faire. The same morning our captain read vnto vs those very articles which before had bin read vnto vs in the prince Mauritz his Court, and afterwards we altogether, and with one accord were sworne to the keeping of them: At noone wee were neere vnto Beuersier hauing a fine gale out of the East Northeast, the euening was calme, the foremost shippes slackt their sailes, attending the comming in of the hindermost.

Wednesday the ninth of Iune by the breake of daie we were hard vnder the coast of Spaine neere to Viucero, the winde being westerly, we sailed North West and by North, and North Northwest, the sunne Southwest and by West, we were ouer against the cape Ortegael, we sailed North West and by North, to fetch the wind: we were in 44. degrees 20. minuts, at twilight, we had the fore-aid Cape of vs about 5. miles South West and by West.

Ortegall.

Thursday the 10. of Iune, the winde being at East South East, wee directed our course towards the shore, and might certainly discerne that it was the coast of Ortegall, we bore in West Southwest directly with the land, and ordered all things as if we presently should haue had battell, and about noone wee had sight of the Groine, namely the tower which standeth neere the Groine.

Friday, the 11. of Iune, at the breake of day the winde being at North East and by East, sixe of our ships sailed forwarde South Southwest, meaning to enter the Groine, and there to learne how all things stood. The sunne being Southeast, Cape Prior was East from vs, wee bare South, presently after we spied two boates comming out of Veroll to learn what ships we were, the rather because that the day before they had seene our flecte at sea: we sailed by the wind, and lay in the wind to stay for their comming. The one doubting vs would not come neere vs, the other boat also durst not approach neere vs: wee called to one of the Spaniardes, saying wee came from Hamborch laden with cordage & other goods, desiring and praying him to let vs haue a Pilot to bring vs into the Groine, wherewith the boate came aboard vs, so that by our great haste, and policie we got one Spaniard, the other which remained in the boate would not come into our ship, but presently thrust off their boate, making all possible speede to get from vs. Hauing nowe gotten this Spaniard, hee was presently deliuered into the handes of the Generall, who confessed that there were about 4000. souldiours come into the towne, with certaine horsemen, 36. waggons with money, and 300. pipes of wine, to furnish the Spanish flect, that he lay the night past in the Groine, and was the Kings seruant. The sun South South-West, we came with our whole flecte before the Groine, where wee found the great newe ship of Amsterdam vnder the Towne.

The whole flect
came to anchor
before the Groine.

At 12. 13. and 10. fadome we cast east anchor, so that wee might behold much people both on the shore and vpon the wals of the town: from the castle & town both, they shot mightily with their great ordinance into our flect, so that there were about 200. canons shot di-charged, wherewith some of our ships were hit, but not one man lost, and little hurt done otherwise. There lay an other castle East ward from the towne, which shot also most terribly, but altogether vncertainly, for we know not that they touched any one ship more then Moy Lambert, which was greatly to bee wondered at, seeing our flecte lay so thicke together, and so neere vnder the castle. There lay hard vnder the castle 12. great Gallions, with some French ships, which also nowe and then shot among our flecte, but they lay so neere the walles that wee could do them no harne at all. The Lord Generall worthy of al
praise,

and the

praise,
him, th
found
there:
from A
the calm
shot, th
Papists
wee be
to fal v
Satur
noone w
Sunda
bidding
money,
Mund
heare ou
Port a P
Tuesd
we saile
before w
Wedne
ward of
English
before th
with this

Thursd
Friday
ford Gen
Lond wh
the
the
Generall
ships. T
and other
should go
Saturd
victuals b
dams mea
one poun
to the ord
mande on
130. men
Blomme
The 20
Wednes
all the ca
determine
altitude,
Thursd
we sawe
bour and
Friday
VOL. V.

g, wherevpon
he had in his
ed that every
igh of Black-
had so faire a
here abide the
appointed for

orning we set
Northwest, the
articles which
we altogether,
ere neere unto
e, the foremost

r the coast of
by North, and
inist the cape
in 44. degrees
outh West and

ted our course
egall, we bore
esently should
e tower which

st and by East,
ine, and there
st from vs, wee
arn what ships
sea: we sailed
ing vs would
d to one of the
oods, desiring
the boate came
other which re-
boate, making
was pre-ently
000. souldiours
300. pipes of
was the Kings
re the Groine.

d much people
oth, they shot
e 200. cannon
and little hurt
shot also most
one ship were
e lay so thicke
great Gallions.
but they lay s
all worthy of al
praise,

and the Canarie-isles. TRAFFIQUES, AND DISCOVERIES.

praise, wisely be thinking himselfe, caused all his capitaines and counsell to come aboarde him, that they might together conferre vpon this busines, and what meanes might best bee found, to inuade the towne and the enemy, but they concluded not to meddle with the land there: seeing the enemy was there, strong vpon his guard, and that 5. weekes past both from Amsterdam, & by a French man, they had knowledge of our coming; by reason of the calme, wee were constrained to tow out our ships with the boates in dispite of al their shot, thus we parted from the Groyne without profit, or effecting of any thing, leauing the Papists of Groyne as wee founde them, from thence (the winde being at South Southwest) wee bent our course towarde Cape Saint Vincent, meaning to goe to Saint Lucars, hoping to fal vpon them at vnawares, and ere they looked for vs.

Saturday the 12. of Iune, hauing got a fine gale we ran along the coast of Galicia, at noone wee were before the Iland of Cesarian, and set our course towards Cape Finister.

Sunday the 13. of Iune, the lorde Generall gaue sharpe commandement by his letters, forbidding al men aboarde the ships to vse any play, with tables, cards, or dice, either for money, or for pastime, or vpon credit.

Munday the 14. of Iune, the wind blew so harde out of the North, that wee could not beare our topsailes with our forecourse which sailed South, the sunne was southward we had Port a Porte of vs, being in 41. degrees and 20 minuts.

Tuesday the 15. of Iune, as soone as day appeared, we had sight of Cape Roxent, and then we sailed making small way, staying for the coming together of the fleete: the wind as before we sailed South Southwest, and were in 36 degrees.

Wednesday the 16. of Iune, towarde the euening we had sight of two strange ships eastward of our fleete, certain of our ships made towards them and tooke them, the one was an English man of war; the other was a Spanish barke with three missens: at his coming before the Generall, he said, he had already sent 2. prizes into Englande, and would now with this prize returne home: for his victuals were almost spent.

Thursday the 17. of Iune, it was very still and calme weather.

Friday the 18. of Iune, the wind being at North Northeast, we sailed South Southwest. The lorde Generall caused all the Capitaines with the Pilots to come aboard him: demanding of them which of them was best acquainted in the Isles of Canaria: and further, by what means they might conquer and force the said Ilands, and land their people. And about noon the capitaines were chosen and appointed which shoulde commande on lande. The Generall gaue out newe ensignes, to the number of 9. or 10. according to the number of the ships. The lorde Generall appointed to each new capitaine, an Ancient bearer, a Lieutenant, and other officers, with 130. souldiours and mariners, and instructions how euery one of them should gouerne himself on the land.

Saturday the 19. of Iune, the Generall commanded that the capitaines should deliuer out victuals but twice a day, to wit, 6. and 6. to a messe: for 6. men, 5. cans of beere of Roterdams measure every day, 5. pounce of breade and no more, a cheese of 6. l. euery weeke, one pound of butter weekly, likewise pease, beanes, or Otemeale twice a day, according to the order. Capitaine Harman, and capitaine Pije, had each of them commission to commande on the land as capitaines ouer two companies of saylers, each company containing 130. men. Harman Thunesson was appointed Ancient to capitaine Henricke Pije, and de Blomme Ancient to capitaine Hendricke Hertmä. The ancients were deliuered the same day.

The 20. 21. 22. daies, wee sailed South Southwest, the wind being northerly.

Wednesday the 23. of Iune, the wind was North Northeast. The Generall commaunded all the capitaines both for the sea and land to come aboard him, where it was ordained and determined how the battell should be ordered, after they were landed. According to the altitude, we found our selues to be 36. miles from great Canaria.

Thursday the 24. of Iune, we ranne our foresaid course. The sun being West Northwest, we sawe the land East and by South off vs: wee sailed East and by South, and with great labour and diligence bore all that might with the land.

Friday the 25. of Iune, we continued our course to the land for our assured knowledge
VOL. V. U thereof,

The whole Ne-
therlandish fleet
commeth before
the island &
town of Grand
Canaria.

thereof, and perceiued it to be Lancerot; we saw also a small land (which lay between both) called Allegrania, and also $\frac{1}{2}$ Iland Forteuçtura, which is 24. miles great, afterward we sailed Southwest along the coast of Forteuçtura, which is a lande that hath very high hills. The sun Southwest, we were past the Iland Forteuçtura, and were sailed out of sight thereof, running as yet Southwest: about ii. a clocke in the afternoone wee had sight of the Iland of great Canaria, for a while wee kept our way; but when the Generall was assured that it was the grand Canaria, wee all tooke in our sailes, and lay to the lee ward, and so remained vntill it was past midnight, then wee set saile againe and made to the lande, our course westwarde.

Saturday the 26. of Iune, in the morning the whole fleet sailed West directly to the land the winde North and by East, and made all thinges ready to land; being now neere the shore, the whole fleet let fall their anchors harde by the great castle, which lieth North Northwest from the town, from whence they began to shoot mightily against the ships. The lord Generall and the vize Admirall with the other ships that had the greatest ordnance, anchored close vnder the castle, & for a certain time they plied each other with their great shot; $\frac{1}{2}$ Generals main mast, and his missen mast were shot thorow, and his vize Admirall, namely the great new ship of Amsterdam was shot thorow 6. or 7. times; so that some of the souldiours and maryners also were slaine before they entered their long boates to rowe to the shore: But the ships for their parts, had so well bestowed their shot on the castle, that they of the castle began to faint, wherby they discharged not so thicke and often as before. Our men rowed to the land in the long boates, euery one full of souldiours, & the ships which could not discharge their ordnance against the castle, bent them against the shore, (for the enemy had three brasse peeces lying vpon the strand) and many people were there gathered together where our souldiours shoulde land. Nowe as soone as the Generall with the most parte of the long boates were come together, they all at one instant rowed toward the shore, maintaining for a while the fight on both sides with their shot. But the General perceiuing that the enemy woulde not abandon the place, with a valiant courage made to the shore, and altogether leaping into the water vp to the middle, maintained the fight with the enemy. Notwithstanding the enemy no lesse couragious, would not yet leaue the strond, so that some of our souldiours & mariners lost their liues before the enemy would retire: for the place was discommodious, and hard to lande, but most of the enemy were slaine, to the number of 30. or 36. and the Gouvernor his right leg was shot off, sitting on his horse. The lord General Peter von der Doest leaping first on land, was thrust in his leg with a pike, and had in his body 4. wounds more, and was in great danger to haue lost his life but that one of the souldiours slewe the Spaniarde which meant to haue don it; but his wounds were of small moment, and his ancient bearer was slain with a shot, the Lieutenant Generall was shot in his throte, captaine Kruyc in the heade, 4. souldiours were slaine, & 15. hurt in the generals pinnace before they could come to land: But when our people now with one courage all together rushed vpon the enemy, (leauing their ordnance behinde them,) they forsooke the strond, and ran together into the town, carying with them their Gouverneur, whose leg was shot off, & he was a knight of the order of the crosse, and leauing behind them 36. deade carcases on the strond, were presently by our people ransacked, and our dead people buried. Our men now hauing won the strond, put themselves presently in battell ray; the empty boates returned to the ships, but after our people had taken the strond, the castle did neuer shoot shot. After the boates were returned aboard, presently they rowed againe to the shore full of souldiours; our people being all landed, they which for the first time had comendement, set vs in 7. troupes, or battalions, being xxiii. companies strong, of souldiours and Mariners, with twentie foure Auncientes. At which time we marched a little forward twenty one a brest, and standing altogether in battell; suddainly three mariners came running to the Generall, (which had bin at the castle) telling him that the Spaniards desired to deliuer him the castle, so their liues & goods might be saued: the generall with some of the captaines and souldiours went first thither, and presently the castle was deliuered into his possession, hoping on his pity and mercy, and leauing behind them all the great ordnance, namely 9. peeces of brasse, & 6. Iron peeces, & also al their weapōs. In the castle were about

Twenty foure
companies
strong of the
Netherlanders.
The first castl:
taken.

and the

about 8.
the defe
thirty s
shot in t
the road
the castl
General
sently 8
the prin
were fet
nothing
way tow
4. cōpan
way from
the water

Sunda
ing we m
a while i
mightily
the castl
hurt, for
selues be
against t
called fal
of wood,
had they
vp the h
people se
prisoner,
were slai
which we
and the s
play vpp
While th
placed hi
ordnance
sioner, ha
al they w
and so re

The 28
two pecc
and so we
the small
wooll, an
thereby t
to hit the
maruailou
hauing no
the hills. i
the enem
the castle
Generals
with all t

about 80. Spaniards, some cannoniers, some soldiours, and some people of the countrey, for the defence thereof; beside powder, shot and match accordingly, for the artillery, and also thirty small peeces or caliuers. Also wee founde 58. prisoners, the rest were slaine with shot in the fury, and some were run away. The prisoners (which our people had taken in the road with two Barkes, and a ship sunke with our ordnance, as they lay all 3. hard before the castle) were sent altogether aboarde the ships except 3. of the principals which the lord General reserve^d by him, to the end he might the better knowe the state of all things. Presently 80. soldiours were sent into the castle, who tooke down the kings flag, and set vp the princes colours. At the same instant two Negros were brought to y^e General, which were fetched out of the mountains, they said that they had lien there a sleepe, and knew nothing of any matter. But now when it began to wax dark, we marched altogether a great way towards the town, 4. companies of soldiours approched hard vnder the towne, and other 4. cōpanies had the rereward: those of the Maze, with the Amsterdammers remained a pretty way from the town, vnder the hils; and the Zelanders, with the North Hollanders lay neere the waters side, so wee remained al that night in order of battell.

Sunday the 27. of Iune, after we had now stood al night in battel order, early in the morning we marched wth al our 7. troupes hard vnder the town of Canarie, where we remained a while in that order: but because they of the castle (which lieth to the towne) shot so mightily among vs; 2. of the troupes retired vnder a hill, where we were a little freed from the castle: for while our people stood imbattailed before the town, the castle did vs great hurt, for somtimes they shot fiue or sixe men with one shot, ere we could entrench our selues before the castle: but after they perceiued that our people had made a small trench against the shot of the castle, they placed on the hill fiue or sixe small peeces of brasse called falconets (which shoote about a pounce of powder) and sometimes they shot boules of wood, wherewith in the beginning they slew manie of our people: so aduantageously lie had they placed their ordnance to shoot among vs. Ten or twelue of our Souldiours ranne vp the hill, whereof the enemy tooke one, and presently cut him in foure peeces. Our people seeing that they so tyranously deale with them, about the euening tooke a Spaniarde prisoner, and vsed him after the same maner. The lorde Generall perceiuing that many men were slaine with the ordnance, caused fiue peeces of brasse to bee brought from the castle which we had taken the daie before, and toward the euening we beganne to make a battery, and the same euening brought into it three peeces, whereof two were placed presentlie to play vpon the Castle, and the hill; but that euening were but fiue or sixe shotte made. While that our men made the batterie, and planted or placed the ordnance, the enemy placed his ordnance in counter-battery: and before our battery could be finished, and the ordnance placed, many of our men were shot, among whō Peter vanden Eynde commissioner, had his leg shot off, whereof he died within three daies after. After that it was dark, al they which lay there before the towne were againe set in order of battel, 15. on a ranke, and so remained all that night.

The 28. of Iune, early in the morning euery man retired to his quarter, and then were two peeces more brought to the battery, which also were presently placed on the Rampire, and so wee began to shoot against the castle with 4. peeces, and with the fifth we plaid vpon the small ordnance which lay vpon the hils. The enemy in the castle laid manie sackes of wooll, and placed many tonnes or barrells filled with stones vpon the castle walles supposing thereby to make some little defence from our ordnance; but when an Iron bullet chanced to hit the barrells so filled with stones, it did them mightie hurt, for the stones would scatter maruailously abroad, whereby many of them that were in the castle were slaine. Our men hauing now with their shot almost abated the force of the castle, 4. companies marched vp the hils, intending to beate the enemy from thence, which lay there with the ordnance. But the enemy perceiuing himselfe to bee assaulted on all partes, (for most of the ordnance of the castle were dismounted and made vnprofitable, the gate of the towne set one fire by the Generals commandement) about noone they forsooke both the castle, hill, and town, and with all their wiues, children, money and lewels, and all other things that they coulede carry

The second
castle & town
of Grand Ca-
naria taken.

with them, fled into the mountaines. Which when our men perceiued, they put themselves in order of battle xv. in a ranke. The lord Generall seeing the Spaniards shamefullie to flie, caused 2. ladders belonging to the enemies, to be brought out of a church which stood without the towne, whereof the one was too shorte, notwithstanding himselfe with one of the ladders climed vp the walles, one man at once followed, and by this meanes entered the towne ouer the wals. About noone some of our men ran into the castle without any reen-couter: the enemy had vndermined the gate, but as we approached the wall, it tooke fire, but not one of our people was therewith hurt. They had also skattered powder in sundrie places, but our men themselves did fire the same: and as soone as our people were entred the castle, the kinges colours were taken downe, and the prince of Orenses set vp, and we found fise peeces of brasse therein. When wee were all entered into the towne, we put our selues againe into order of battell 15. in a ranke in a low ground within the towne: and the soldiours which entered the towne by the hills side, brought to the Generall a man of Flushing, which they had taken out of prison: as soone as the Generall sawe him, he went presently with him to the prison, accompanied with some of our captaines, where they found 36. prisoners, which presently were discharged. And further they declared, that the Spaniards had taken with them 2. prisoners into the mountaines, which were condemned to be burnt, the one was an English man, the other a Dutchman, which had lien in the holy house. Thus with the helpe of God about noone, wee won the great Iland of Canaria, and the town of Allegona, battered with their owne artillery, and skaled with their owne ladders. Towards the euening wee were quartered in the houses, those wherein the Generall was, were by writing freed, that no man might take out any goods, in the rest euery one might go, and take what pillage he could find: but the Spaniards had caried all the best things with them into the mountaines, and in the euening all our people entered the town. Eucry captaine with his company were seuerallie lodged, but yet we appointed watch on the hills, as well as in the towne, for the enemy shewed himselfe often vpon the hills, whereby we were forced to keep very good watch.

The 29. of Iune, this morning some of the mariners climed vp the hills, but the enemy (to whom the passage were better known, then to our people) suddainly set vpon them, and killed 20. of them. Towards the euening some 300. of our Soldiours marched towards a small castle which lay halfe an houres iourney from the towne: but the enemy seeing our people to approach, forsooke the place and fled into the mountaines, our men being ascended, they founde in the castle three brasse peeces: and after they had appointed a Corporall with certaine soldiours to keepe the watch, the rest returned to the city. The same night the Spaniards tooke one of our soldiours appointed for a forlorne Sentinel, whom they presently put to the sword.

The last of Iune, as soone as day appeared, wee began to cary the pillage aboard belonging to the General, and captaines, as wines and other goods. About noone 3. cheefe men of the Spaniards came to our people, which kept watch on the hills with a flag of truce in their handes, which were straight brought before the Generall, and within a while after, there were 2. more brought vnto him: but after they had bin a while with him they departed again towards the mountaines: and in the euening came other 7. Spaniards to our watch with a flag of truce, desired to speake with the Generall: but they were sente backe againe into the Mountaynes.

The first day of Iuly, 1599. in the morning (our people being on the hills) 2. friers with three other Spaniards came vnto vs, desiring to be brought to the Generall, which our men accomplished: but the General denied to talke with them, wherefore they were presently sent backe againe from whence they came, for we were then labouring to send the goods a shipboard. Also at that instant was a sermon in the great church of great Canaria, made by the preacher of Ysilmund with great deuotion, and giuing thanks vnto God for our great victory, desiring him that it would please him daily to increase the same, to the honour of his name: at which Sermon the Lorde Generall was present with foure hundred persons.

The second of Iuly 1599. wee were forbidden by sounde of the drum that no man should

go beyond the forlorne sentenell placed on the Mountaines: and to sende backe againe into the hilles all such Spaniards which came with a flag of truce, to speake with the Generall, and to put all such to the sworde as came with weapons. One of our Pinnaces tooke a fisherman fishing vnder the llande Forteaentura, wherein were 7. Spaniards, which were brought before the General, and prently committed to prison.

The 3. of Iuly in the morning we began to sende aboard our ships all the bels, ordnance & munition which the enemies had left behinde them, at which time 2000. soldiors were appointed to march to the hils, to seeke the enemy, which lay hid there with their wiues, children & goods, as they were fled out of the towne: and as soone as they approached each other, they began the fight on both sides with great courage, but the enemy was forced to fle, beeing better acquainted with the passages of the mountains then our people were. Our men returned with the losse of some 70. persons: among whom captain Iacques Dierickson with his boatson were slaine: the rest came into the towne againe into their appointed quarters.

The 4. of Iuly, in the morning we began to burn the towne, and with poudre blew v p the castle which lay by the towne, and we burned likewise all the cloisters and churches which were without the towne, lying neere the water side. The town burning, our people were set in battell, and in that order marched out of the towne, vntill they came to Graciosa, the castle, which we first tooke, lying about halfe an houres iourney from the towne, where the long boates received our men, and caried them againe aboarde. Presently after wee were departed out of the towne, the enemy entered, endeuoring by all meanes possible to quench the fire. And while we were shipping our people, the enemy shewed him selfe sometimes 5. or 6. in a company, but they durst not approach vs. The reward of our men being shipped, we put fire to the castle which we tooke first, and blew it vp: This done, captain Quyt imbarcked himselfe also with his soldiours and pillage, which he had taken in the rode, for his ship wherein he was before was ready to sincke.

The 5. of Iuly, lying in the roade, in the morning the Generall discharged two peeces of ordnance, and afterward put out 2. flags of the princes colours, thereby giuing to vnderstand, that all land captaines, and sea captaines also with one of their Pilots should resort to him, whereupon presentlie they all rowed aboarde the Generall; the Pilots which were best acquainted with the coast, were demanded by the Generall which were the weakest Ilands, and where they might most commodiouslie land: Towards the euening captain Quyt his ship was fired, and suffered to driue towarde the strond. At which time a newe captaine was appointed to captaine Iacques Dirriksons ship aforesaide, who was slaine in the mountaines, namely captaine Kloyers Lieutenant. And the Generals Clarke of the band was appointed Lieutenent to captain Kloyer.

The 6. of Iuly, by reason of the contrary winds, and other inconueniences which happened at this present, and also because such ships, which before were sent to sea, and could not returne by reason of the contrary windes; we remained in the road, vnder the castle of Graciosa. About noone 4. Spaniards came out of the towne with a flag of truce to the strond, directly ouer against our ships, whereof 2. were brought aboarde the Generall in one of our long boates, (the other two with their flag of truce were left behinde on the stronde) which remained with the Generall vntill the euening, and then were set on shore, and so the 4. Spaniards returned to the towne.

The 7. day riding in the roade, in the morning 4. Spaniards with a flag of peace, came to the shore from the towne, directly ouer against our ships: the fleet seeing them, sent a long boate to the shore, and brought the said 4. Spaniards aboard the General, these men brought with them the ransom of certaine Spaniards, which had deliuered vp the castle of Graciosa at the Generals pleasure, which were set to ransom, euery one according to his habilitie & office: and thus all the Spaniards which were ransomed, together with the 4. Spaniards which brought the ransoms, were set on shore with a long boat, and departed to the towne.

The 8. day of Iuly, two howers after sun rising, the Generall with all the ships set saile, carying

carying with him all the Spaniards that were not ransomed, sailing along the coast of great Canaria; in which time Ian Cornelesson Zwartekeys departed this worlde, whose leg was shot off at the taking of the Iland of great Canaria. Hauing nowe sailed from 7 hight of the said Iland, which lay southerly from vs, we had sight of capitaine Hertmans ship, and of 3. others which rode there at anchor: who, so soone as they perceiued our fleete, waied their anchors, and sailed along the coast with vs, which were the ships that the Generall had sent to sea. Sailing thus together vntill the sun was in the West, the wind began to rise more and more, so that we coule not keep our direct course, but were forced to put to the Southwest of the great Iland of Canaria, where we anchored: wee had sight of the Iland Teneriffe, and of an other of the Ilands of Canaria, wherein is the hie mountaine called the Pyck. This hil was from vs 14. miles, but by the great hight thereof it seemed to bee within foure or fise miles off vs, but in the daie time when the sun shined wee could not see it.

The 9. of Iuly, lying thus at anchor, in the morning most of the long boates went a shore to fetch fresh water, such as they could there find and caried with them the deade corps of Ian Cornelesson aforesaid, the Constables son of the Admiralty of Roterdā, called Zwertkeys, which was there honorably buried on the high and drie land. This done, we set on fire the woode which lay on the shore piled and heaped in the woods, but in this place we found not any Spaniards.

The tenth of Iuly, the boates being all returned to their ships with their people, euery one wayed their anchors and hoised their sailes, the winde at Northwest: but being vnder saile together, the wind slacked & by reason of the great calme the ships lay a drift for want of wind.

The 11. of Iuly, in the morning it blew a stout gale in our topsailes out of the North-east, but as we approched the Iland of Teneriffa, the winde altered often; sixe or seuen of our shippes, and the rest which were next vnto the shore, had sometimes a gale in their topsailes, and sometimes againe without wind: so that we lay a drift, and could keepe no reckoning either of the wind or course, and were forced to alter our course more than 12. times a day.

A declaration of the taking of Gomera one of the Ilands in Canaria, and how we afterwarde left it.

The 12. day of Iuly sailing thus with great variety of wind, vnder the great Iland Teneriffa, the day appearing, we had the wind more certain, filling our topsailes with a full gale from the Northwest: And when it was faire day light we saw our fleet scattered far one frō another, by meanes of the foresaid mutable windes. Some ships lay driuing by reason of the calme, and other some had a little gale, but the most part of our fleet were West of vs, towards whom with all speed, we with the rest of the ships made. Being al come together, wee endeouored to reach the Ilande Gomera, wherein is a little towne: towards the euening many of our ships were neere the Iland, but the most part were to 7 lea ward; so that before it grew toward the euening none of vs could come neere the towne. Notwithstanding in the twilight and shutting vp of the euening: Ian Garbrantson Admirall of the white flag, his vize Admirall, and a Pinnace following, were come neere the town. Thus the Admirall sayling so neere to the Iland, they of Gomera discharged 2. pieces at him, but touched him not. The saide Admirall seeing this, passed on a little farther with the other ships which were neere him, & then tooke in their sailes, and cast their anchors. The other ships which were behinde, laboured all they might to come also vnder the Iland to them.

The 13. of Iuly, the Admiral of the white flag lying thus at anchor neere to Gomera, the greatest part of the fleete were yet in the morning betwene the Iland of Teneriffa and Gomera, so that parte of the ships were beyonde the towne, and must sometimes cast about to conducte the others in, which were in the lee of vs. When wee had nowe for the most part passed the hight of the Iland, the Generall gaue a signe to all capitaines to come aboarde him, being vnder saile, directing his course to the Iland of Gomera, and the other ships did their endeouor

and the

endeuor
East off
into the
beene a
souldiour
anchors,
all our
certaine
had burn
neere v
without
which th
were lar
enemy f
intercep
plish thi
to set v
which w
ceiuing
their der
compass
Spaniard
2. Lieut
Bynon)
sacred, t
which we
hils, and
of 7 tow
as the S
pipes of
About
Prouest
such pla
nothing
too dark
aforesaid
charge,
The 14
aboarde
for they
nothing
afternoon
growne.
The 15
to hunt
slaine;
of all th
returnd
founde:
The 16
him abo
that were
plained t

endeavour to follow him, and anchored about the necke of the valley, lying North North East off the towne. The ships being all come to anchor, the captaines entered presently into the long boates, and rowed aboarde the Generall to know his minde; and after they had bene a while in the Generals ship, they returned to their ships, and 4. companies of souldiours were chosen out, and landed in the valley. Which done, al the ships waied their anchors, and sailed directly toward the towne, and then came to anchor againe. After that all our ships lay thus together in the road neere the valley, before the town: we discharged certaine peeces against the town, but they made no shewe at all of resistance, for they had buried foure brasse peeces as soone as they had sight of vs, which lay on the strond neere vnto a small castle; the other sixe companies were also set on land in the long boates, without any resistance: for the Spaniardes with their wiues, children, and all their goods which they coule carry with them were fled into the mountains. The first 4. cōpanies that were landed, as they marched along the hils side towards the towne, perceiuing that the enemy fled with all his goods towards the hils, sent out a certaine number of soldiours to intercept them, and to take from them the goods which they caried away. And to accomplish this enterprise, our souldiours descended the hill into the valley, meaning suddainly to set vpon the Spaniardes; but the enemy perceiuing their intent, hid themselues in caues which were neere vnto them, vntill our souldiours were in the valley. The Spaniardes perceiuing that they were strong enough to encounter with our people, suddainly leapt out of their dens, and beset our souldiours on both sides. Our people seeing themselues thus compassed with their enemies, behaued themselues most valiantly, so that many of the Spaniards lost their liues, and 80. of ours were slaine in this valley: among whom were 2. Lieutenants (the one was Meerbecks sonne, and the other was Lieutenant to capitaine Bynon) which had receiued aboue 50. wounds in their bodies, so pittifullie were they massacred, thus were these worthie champions intercepted. The rest of those 4. companies, which were not present at this fury of the Spaniardes, towards the euening, descended the hils, and marched into the towne. Presently after this, watch was appointed in al places of y towne, and some of the soldiours began to dig the ground, to seeke for such goods as the Spaniardes had buried, but at that instant they founde nothing, except only certain pipes of wine.

The towne of
Gomera above-
doned by the
Spaniards.

Eighty Nether-
landers and
diuers Spaniards
slaine.

About the sunne setting was brought in a Spanish prisoner, which was deliuered to the Prouest marshal, by the Generals commandement, to the end he might bring them to all such places in the Ilande, whereas the Spaniardes had hidden their goods. But because nothing could then be effected by reason that the euening approached, and it began to bee too dark, the Spaniard was committed to a keeper vntil the next morning for the purpose aforesaide. But the night being far spent, & the keeper taking small regard to his charge, the Spaniard secretlie stole away and ran to the mountaines.

The 14. of Iuly, in the morning the long boates rowed againe to the shore, and caried aboarde such goods as the enemy had left behind them, which for the most part were wines, for they had caried clean away all other things into the mountains, and had left almost nothing in the towne, but only the wines which they had buried in the earth: In the afternoone our people found 3. bels, which they had buried in the fields, where corne had growne.

The 15. of Iuly in the morning our people running vp to the hils 10. or 12. in a cōpany to hunt & seeke for pillage, were suddainly inuironed by the enemy, and 6. or 8. of them slaine; the rest saued themselues by flight. About noone there was a generall muster taken of all the soldiours, to see how many wee had lost: and such ships as were appointed to returne home, began to deliuer out the victuals. The same day were two copper peeces founde: whereof the one was 16. foot and halfe long, and the other about 14. foot.

The 16. day in the morning the Lord Generall gaue notice to all captaines to resort to him aboard his ship, because some of the captaines had not sent victuals vnto the soldiours that were on land, whereby they suffered hunger, and sundry of the soldiours had complained to the General thereof: At afternoone, the enemy came to the hill which lieth ouer the

the towne, crying and calling vnto our men to come and fetch againe their muskets, and towards the euening many mariners with their weapons landed, and at that instant also all things were ordered to march very early the next morning vp the hils to fetch againe our muskets, caliuers, and other weapons, which the Spaniards before had in mockery, and gibing wise willed vs to fetch from them. But now when all things were ordered for this seruice: the same night arose a strong gale of winde, encreasing more and more, that in the ende it grewe to a mightie tempest, that notwithstanding our fleet did ride vnder the Iland Gomera in the road before the towne, some were forced to way their anchors and to put to sea, to prevent the mischiefe like to happen to the ships, by reason they lay so neere one another. And when those ships were a little way in the Sea, they cast their anchors, and there remained. By this occasion the generals aforesaid enterprise was kept backe: we iudging it as a warning, that the Generall should spare and preserue his people from the bloud-thirsty Spaniards, which had their holes and dens in the hils, and perhaps might haue taken away many of our liues. And heere by the way: by the name of the Iland Canaria, the Spaniards may rightly bee called Canarians or Canes, for Canaria is by interpretation, dogs kinde, for they ran as swift as dogs, and were as tyrannicall and bloud-thirsty as the rauening Wolfe, or any other wild beast, which they sufficiently manifested, for as soon as they could lay handes on any of our people (like vnto mad curs, agreeing with their name Canariās) they would presently weary them.

The 17. this hurtfull night ended, and the tempest ouer passed, and alaid, the couragious soldiours were all in redines, desirous to execute this peece of seruice, expecting & desiring nothing more, then to march vp the hils, and to encounter their idolatrous enemies. But vpon good consideration, this enterprise was staied, and some 300. soldiours sent into the same valley, where 3. daies before our people had beene suddainly compassed, intrapped, and slaine by the Spaniards. Our soldiours being come to the valley aforesaid found no resistance, neither could once see a Spaniard; but found a smal peece of brasse about a fadome long, and two barrells of gunpowder; and when our souldiours perceiued that there was no good to bee done (forbearing to mount the hils, because they had no commission so to do) with such thinges as they had they returned into the towne. The euening now approaching, the Generall commanded to carry aboard the ships, such goods as they had there found, and digged out of the ground, which was accordingly done and accomplished, among which things were three brasse peeeces, some bels and other goods.

Sunday the 18. of Iuly, we remained at anchor in the road of the Iland Gomera.

Munday the 19. of Iuly, remaining yet in the Iland Gomera, and seeing that the Spaniards continued in their secret holes, and dens of the mountaines, wee set fire on the towne, and as neere as we could burnt down all places, as Cloisters churches, hermitages and houses, remaining yet in the towne vntill it was noone. After that all this was accomplished; we the vnited soldiours forsooke the towne, and presently the Lord General, with al his company, went aboard the ships. Thus we left the Iland Gomera burning, which which was neuer before done by any nation. The Spaniards seeing that the soldiours were departed out of the Iland, with all speed possible, in great heapes came running out of their secret caues and holes, to quench the fire, like as they of Alleagona in the Iland of great Canaria before had done.

Wednes-day the 20. of Iuly, we lay stil in the road before Gomera, in this time 2. of our soldiours were put into captain Cloiers ship, and in lew of them, we receiued out of his ship 2. others, which were hurt, with two Spaniards.

The summary or brieue declaration of the Admirals departing towards the West Indies.

After that the Generall had left the Ilands, he giueth order to the fleete, taketh his leaue of all the Capitaines and officers in most honorable sort: he aduanceth the voyage to the West Indies with his Navy: the rest of the ships returne into the low Countries, euery one from whence he came.

After

and the
After
of arme
had cari
houses,
of the fl
ingly, h
good an
with a s
loadsma
success
friendly
(alleadg
faithfull
gentleme
high bor
command
Wednes
the capta
time, too
ouer all t
desiring
him, as to
had not b
brantson
von der D
sunne was
taking lea
this maner
South Sou
with 35. s
Wednes
home, bei
Southwest
comming
them, and
and came
they dwel
ships havi
fence, or c
hides or sh
found two
10. hundre
Arabique.
Thursda
ships, 4 sh
the Maze
wind West
The captai
done in th
Saturday
ther, we f
the winde
East, Lysb
VOL. V.

After that the Iland of great Canaria was by the vnited soldiours taken, and won by force of armes, and the Iland Gomera conquered, for sundry reasons they were forsakē, after they had caried to their ships such things as they found, fired the townes, churches, cloisters, and houses, and rased their Castles. The Lord Generall commanded all Captaines and officers of the fleete to resort vnto him aboard his ship. The same principals being come accordingly, he welcommed them and shewed them al friendship he could, thanking them for their good and faithfull endeouours which they had shewed in this seruice, which he performed with a singular oration, praying Almighty God that he woulde vouchsafe to be his only loadsmā & merciful defender, in all his enterprises, to the honor of his name, and happy successe of the vnited Netherlandish prouinces. After this, the lorde Generall againe in most friendly sort, and kind speeches, perswaded & desired all the saide captaines and officers, (alleading many reasons and examples) to perseuer in their good beginning of true and faithfull seruice for God, and for their good Lords and principall magistrates, the honorable gentlemen and states of the vnited Netherland; & to the good liking of their valiant & high borne gentleman, & gouernour General prince Mauritz, their principal lorde and commander, &c. with these and such like matters the daie was spent.

Wednesday the 21. of Iuly, the wind was northerly: The lord Generall commanded all the captaines and officers to resort vnto him: and in most curteous maner againe the second time, tooke his leaue of them all, ordaining and appointing in his place as Admirall Generall ouer all those shippes which were to returne home, the valiant captaine Ian Gerbrantson, desiring and straightly charging them al there present, to shew all obedience and duty vnto him, as to his owne person, and that they should make his minde knowne to all others which had not bene there present. After these speeches, and leaue taken, the Admirall Ian Gerbrantson put out the princes colours in the maine top: and the honorable gentleman Peter von der Doest presentlie caused the princes flag also to be spread; and as soone as the sunne was Southwest, all the ships at one instant waied their anchors, and hoised their sailes, taking leaue nowe the third time one of another, in most braue and triumphant sort, and in this maner departed the one from the other. The lord General with his fleet, set this course South Southwest, with 36. ships, and the Admirall Ian Gerbrantson ran East by the wind, with 35. ships with intent to returne home.

Wednesday the 18. of August, sixteene ships of our fleet which were sent to returne home, being in company together in the latitude of 36. degrees and 10. minutes, the wind Southwest sailing Northeast, before it was noone, we perceiued 2. strange ships vnder saile comming out of the Northwest, towards whom we made, and at afternoone we ouertooke them, and made them our prizes: they were both Spaniardes, the one was a small Barke, and came from Cape de Blanco in 21. degrees, loaden for Woluis in the Condate where they dwelled. In the same ships was a marchant of Cyuill with 47. men, each of their ships hauing two cast peeeces, and euery man his musket, but they made no shewe of defence, or offending. There was also found laden in the same ships, sixty thousand drie hides or skins, esteemed to bee worth 6000. duckets as they reported, there were also found two bags with mony, in the one was 11. hundred single rials, and in the other 10. hundred & forty single rials, with two Buts of traine oile, and two barrells of gum Arabique.

Thursday the 19. day, we the abouesaid 16. ships were together, beside the two Spanish ships, 4 ships of war of North Holland, 4 ships of Warres of Zeland and one ship of war of the Maze: the captain wherof was Antony Leonardson, al the rest were victualers. The wind West Northwest, we sailed Northeast, and by North in 36. degrees and 45. minutes. The captaines had bene all aboard the Admirall in councill aduising what were best to bee done in this matter of the Spaniards prizes.

Saturday, Sunday, the 21. and 22. of August, our said fleet of 18. ships kept yet together, we found our selues to bee in 39. degrees, 6. minuts. The sun South and by West, the winde blew vp at West Northwest, wee sailed North Northeast, and North and by East, Lysborne was East of vs.

The Netherlandish fleet diuide themselves into two companies, whereof the one returneth homewards, and the other proceedeth for the West Indians.

Two Spanish prizes taken.

Munday the sixt of September, the winde westerly, we ran East, at noone wee sounded, the depth was 50. fadome water, we found small white shels with needles therein, in the hight of 49. degrees 20. minuts, the sun Southwest, wee had sight of Vshant, we ran Northeast and by North.

Tuesday the 7. of September, the sun East South East, wee saw England, a mighty blustering gale of winde from the South Southwest, wee sailed North Northeast. The sunne Southwest, came to lande at Gawstert. Afterwarde wee turned and sailed East Southeast: In the euening it blewe so much winde, that wee were forced to strike our maine top mast, and we ranne the whole night with two courses by the wind.

Wednesday the 8. of September, the foule weather continued, the sunne East and by South, we had sight of the Ile of Wight North Northwest of vs, and ranne the whole day, East Northeast with the foresaile by the wind: as the euening approched we saw Beuersier, in the night and second quarter we passed by Douer.

Thursday the 9. of September, as soone as the daie began to appeare it was calme weather, and darke, the sun Southeast, we lay still before Newport all the ebbe. The wind easterly, in the after noone the wind came Northwest, we set saile againe, running al night by the wind with our foresaile.

Friday the 10. of September 1599, by the break of day wee were before the Maze, the sun Southwest, we arrived by the helpe of Gods mercy and grace before the Brill.

Since then, there is arrived at Texell another ship of war, whereof one Cater of Amsterdam was captain, the wick was seuered from the fleet in this voiage by tempest, and thought to be lost. The said captaine met with some prizes, and in company of two English shippes tooke a Caruell of Aduiso, verie richly laden comming out of India, and hauing more men then the English, shared halfe of the goods with them, and so came home this present month of Octob.

FINIS.

THE HISTORIE

OF THE

WEST INDIES,

CONTAINING THE

ACTES AND ADVENTURES OF THE SPANIARDS,

WHICH

HAVE CONQUERED AND PEOPLED THOSE COUNTRIES,

ENRICHED

WITH VARIETIE OF PLEASANT RELATION OF THE MANNERS, CELEMONIES, LAWES,
GOVERNMENTS, AND WARRES OF THE INDIANS.

PUBLISHED IN LATIN BY MR. HAKLUYT,

AND TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH BY M. LOK. GENT.

In the hands of the Lord are all the corners of the earth. PSAL. XCV.

London :

PRINTED FOR ANDREW HEBB, AND ARE TO BE SOLD AT THE SIGNE OF THE BELL IN
PAULS CHURCH-YARD.

WHos
sooner e
Sea, ther
compare
sayle the
vnskillfull
sayles vn
mine ow
viewe of
rilles, wh
discourse
weary, a
that I ma
the whole
this small
stande, t
intitled th
together
industry,
shippes,
and their
and lastly
to perform
with our
dies doe v
countrey,
dustrious,
purses, to
Besides th
the conqu
lions of p
and the n
chiefe me
Christ. Co
expres-el
tion of th
described
their habi
other des
at large,
more plea

TO THE READER.

WHoso committe themselves vnto the huge, and mayne Ocean, in a small vessell, may sooner expect to be swallowed in that vastity of waters, through the rage and furie of the Sea, then hope to gaine the desired, and intended hauen. And seeing my selfe may well bee compared to that small vessell, being but a litle boate, and no barke of any burthen, to sayle the tempestuous Seas, and spacious Ocean of this History: I will therefore (like the vnskillfull Nauigators of former ages) rather coast it along the shoares, then spreade my sayles vnto the enuious windes in a dangerous Sea, through any arrogant presumption of mine owne strength, hoping therby, to gaine the more securitie, when (still within the viewe of lande) I may safely put into euery harbour, and so, auoide the innumerable perilles, which might otherwise insue. For this History comprehendeth a large, and copious discourse, full of all variety, extending it selfe in that exceeding length, that I might sooner weary, and loose my selfe in the narration, then giue full satisfaction to the Reader. Yet, that I may yeelde them due content, I purpose to giue some small tast of the contents of the whole, and for the rest, referre them to the body, and substance of the booke, whereof this small Epitomy, may iustly bee termed but the shaddowe. You shall therefore vnderstande, that this worke of the Decades (written by Peter Martyr a Millanoise of Angleria, intituled the History of the newe worlde) containeth the first discouery of the West Indies, together with the subiection, and conquest therof. Wherin, we are chiefly to consider, the industry, and trauailes of the Spanyarde, their exceeding charge in furnishing so many shippes, for this intended expedition, their continuall supplies to further their attemptes, and their actiue and vndaunted spirites, in executing matters of that qualitie, and difficultie, and lastly, their constant resolution of Plantation. All whiche, may bee exemplary vnto vs, to performe the like in our Virginea, whiche beeing once thoroughly planted, and inhabited with our people, may returne as greate benefitte to our Nation in another kinde, as the Indies doe vnto the Spanyard: for although it yeeld not golde, yet, is it a fruitfull pleasant cuntry, replenished with all good thinges, necessary for the life of man, if they be industrious, who inhabite it. But wee leaue this to them, who haue authoritie, and good purses, to further a matter of suche important consequence, and returne to our purpose. Besides the first discouery of this cuntrye of the West Indies, this historie likewise declareth the conquest, and subiection of the people, the manner howe, and what myriades of millions of poore naked Indians were slaughtered, and subdued through the conquering sworde, and the number of the Spanyardes, that attempted, and performed the same. Wherein, the chiefe men of note, & principall Commaunders, haue their particular names set down, as Christ. Columbus, Fern. Cortes, Fern. Magaglianus, and the rest, whome the Author hath expressely mentioned, to their aeternall comendation: and for the incitement, and prouocation of the liuing, to the like honourable, and high attemptes. Here also, are the people described, by their seuerall Nations, their particular rites, ceremonies, and customes, by their habite, and attyre, cyther in warre, or peace: also, by their religion, sacrifices, and other demeanure, & gestures whatsoeuer: so that to reade the particulars, discoursed there at large, which I briefly mention heere, will so allure the reader, that nothing may seeme more pleasing, or delightfull: for, as in fashions of apparell, and ordinary diet wee like
extraordinary

extraordinary varietie, and change, though both transgresse the rules of modestie, and sobrietie, yet either of these please the appetite, and vntemperate desires: so doth varietie of historie yeelde more pleasure, and contentment, which (being a thing of more indifferencie, and as strong a motiue in another kinde) cannot but affect the senses, and intellectuall faculties, with farre greater delight. Hereunto he addeth the speciall description of the seuerall countries, with their particular situation, boundes, abutments, and qualitie of the soyle: together with their Mountaines, hilles, riuers, meddowes, pastures, wooddes, forests, valleyes, playnes, and champions: and what goodly citties, and fortified townes are there erected, with the matter, and manner of their architecture, and building, with all the ornament, and elegancie thereof: their huge Pallaces, and houses of pleasure, farre exceeding many Christian Princes courtes: their orchardes, gardens, and other inclosures for wilde beastes and foules of diuers kinds, beautified with wonderful art, and curiositie: their mightie Lakes, (whereof some are little inferiour to the Euxine Sea) abounding with excellent fish, and whatsoeuer else the diuine bountie might bestowe vpon a blessed countrey, to enrich them with all earthly felicitie. And lastly hee largely describeth, what those Mountaynes, hilles, valleyes, and champions, ryuers, and Lakes ingender, and bring forth: what mineralles, as gold, and siluer, and what pearle, and precious stones: what wilde beastes, prodigious and straunge, what foule, and fishe, flyes, and wormes of the earth, & other noysome things, are bredde there: and of the nature, and qualitie of all these. All which, this Historian most learnedly in a more large, and ample maner, discourseth, then this my short narration canne report, whiche least it exceede the iust measure of due limittes, and boundes, I willingly perswade the reader, to haue recourse vnto the Author himselfe, from whence he shall receiue a more perfect satisfaction touching particulars then this generalitie doth include. Thus hoping the courteous, and discreet, will mildly excuse, if not approue, what I haue rudely done, I submit my selfe to euery humor, and expect differing censures answerable to the dissonant opinions, & variable inclination of euerie Reader.

M. Lox.

CERTAINE

A Cer
forcible
and not
of the sa
most par
trauayle,
not only
fortune,
or at the
was called
malice of
the aunci
beginnin
notable
death ma
traded to
gation ch
and Frau
Mina or
before.
Ilande of
them affi
pher Col
vovage in
also of th
Wha

CHRIST
ritory of
of Place
they hat
and othe
whereby

CERTAIN E PREAMBLES HERE FOLLOWE,

GATHERED BY R. EDEN

HERETOFORE,

FOR THE BETTER VNDERSTANDING OF THE WHOLE WORK.

Of the first discovering of the West Indies.

A Certayne Carauell sayling in the West Ocean, about the coastes of Spayne, hadd a forcible and continuall winde from the East, whereby it was driuen to a land vnknowne, and not described in any Map or Carde of the Sea, and was driuen still along by the coaste of the same for the space of many daies, vntill it came to a haven, where in a short time the most part of the mariners, being long before very weake and feble by reason of hunger and traauyle, dyed: so that onely the Pilot, with three or foure other, remained aliue. And not only they that dyed, did not enioy the Indies whiche they first discovered to their misfortune, but the residue also that liued had in maner as litle fruition of the same: not leauing, or at the least not openly publishing any memory thereof, neyther of the place, or what it was called, or in what yeere it was founde: Albeit, the fault was not theirs, but rather the malice of others, or the enuie of that which we cal fortune. I do not therfore marueile, that the auncient histories affirme, that great thinges proceede and increase of small and obscure beginniges, sith we haue seene the same verified in this finding of the Indies, being so notable and newe a thing. We neede not be curious to seeke the name of the Pilot, sith death made a shorte ende of his doinges. Some will, that he came from Andaluzia, and traded to the llandes of Canaria, and the lland of Madera, when this large and mortall nauigation chaunced vnto him. Other say that hee was a Byscanne and traded into Englande and France. Other also, that hee was a Portugall, & that either he went or came from Mina or India: whiche agreeth well with the name of these newe landes, as I haue sayd before. Againe, some there be that say that he brought the Caruell to Portugall, or the llande of Madera, or to some other of the llandes called De los Azores. Yet doe none of them affirme any thing, although they all affirme that the Pilot dyed in the house of Christopher Colon, with whom remayned all suche writings and annotations as he had made of his voyage in the said Carauell, aswell of such thinges as he obserued both by land and sea, as also of the eleuation of the pole in those lands which he had discovered.

The Pilot that
first found the
Indies.

Mina.

What manner of man Christopher Colon (otherwise called Columbus) was, and how he came first to the knowledge of the Indies.

Christopher Colon was borne in Cugureo, or (as some say) in Nerui, a village in the territory of Genua in Italic. Hee descended as some thinke, of the house of the Pelestrelles of Placentia in Lombardie. He beganne of a chylde to bee a maryner: of whose arte they haue great exercyse on the ryuer of Genua. He traded many yeeres into Suria, and other parts of the East. After this, hee became a maister in making cardes for the sea, whereby hee hadde great vantage. Hee came to Portugall to know the reason and descrip-

tion

ie, and so
n varietie of
difference,
lectuall fa-
a of the se-
lie of the
oddes, for-
townes are
with all the
arre exceed-
es for wilde
sitie: their
with excel-
countrey, to
those Moun-
oorth: what
wilde beastes,
rth, & other
All which,
then this my
limittes, and
mselfe, from
is generalitie
not approue,
ing censures

M. Lok.

CERTAIN E

tion of the South coasts of Africa, and the nauigations of the Portugalles, thereby to make his cardes more perfect to bee solde. Hee maryed in Portugalle, as some say: or as many say, in the Iland of Madera, where he dwelt at such time as the saide Carauell arryued there, whose Pilot sojourned in his house, and dyed also there, bequeathing to Colon his carde of the description of such newe landes as he had found, whereby Colon hadde the first knowledge of the Indies. Some haue thought that Colon was well learned in the Latine tongue and the science of Cosmographie: and that he was thereby first moued to seeke the lands of Antipodes, and the rich Iland of Cipango, wherof Marchus Paulus writeth. Also that he had reade what Plato in his dialogues of Timeus and Cricias, writeth of the great Ilande of Atlantide, and of a great lande in the West Ocean vndiscovered, being bigger then Asia and Affrica. Furthermore that he had knowledge what Aristotle and Theophrastus saye in their bookes of Maruayles, where they write that certayne merchauntes of Carthage, sayling from the strayghtes of Gibraltar towarde the West and South, founde after many daies a great Ilande not inhabited, yet replenished with all thinges requisite, and hauing many nauigable ryuers. In deede Colon was not greatly learned: yet of good vnderstanding. And when he had knowledge of the sayde newe landes by the information of the deade Pilotte, made relation thereof to certayne learned menne, with whome he conferred as touching the lyke thinges mentioned of olde authors. Hee communicated this secrete and conferred chiefly with a Fryar, named Iohn Perez of Marchena, that dwelt in the Monastery of Rabida. So that I verily beleeue, that in manner all that hee declared, and manie thinges more that hee left vnspoken, were written by the sayde Spanyshe Pilotte that dyed in his house. For I am perswaded, that if Colon by science attained to the knowledge of the Indies, hee woulde long beefore haue communicated this secrete to his owne countrey-menne the Genuenses, that trauayle all the worlde for gaynes, and not haue come into Spayne for this purpose. But doubtlesse hee neuer thought of any suche thing, beefore hee communicated to bee acquainted with the sayde Pylotte, who founde those landes by fortune, according to the sayinge of Plinie, Quod ars docere non potuit, casus inuenit. That is, That arte coulde not teache, chauce founde. Albeit, the more Christian opinion is, to thinke that GOD of his singular prouidence and infinitte goodnesse, at the length with eyes of compassion as it were looking downe from heauen vpon the Sonnes of Adam, so long kept vnder Sathans captiuitie, intended euen then (for causes to him onelie ynknowne) to rayse those wyndes of mercy whereby that Carauell (herein most lyke vnto the shippe of Noe, whereby the remnant of the whole worlde was saued, as by this Carauell this newe worlde receyued the first hope of their saluation) was driuen to these landes. But wee will now declare what great thinges followed of this small begynnynge, and howe Colon followed this matter, reuealed vnto him not without GODS prouidence.

What labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attempting his first voyage to the Indies.

AFTER the death of the Pilot & marryners of the Spanyshe Carauell that discovered the Indies, Christopher Colon purposed to seeke the same. But in howe much more hee desired this, the lesse was his power to accomplishe his desire. For becside that of himselfe hee was not able to furnishe one shyppe, he lacked also the fauour of a King, vnder whose protection he might so enjoy the riches hee hoped to finde, that none other myght take the same from him, or defeate him there of. And seeing the king of Portugal occupied in the conquest of Affrica, and the Nauigations of the East, which were then first attempted, the King of Castyle likewise no lesse buised in the warres of Granada, hee sent to his brother Bartholomewe Colon, (who was also priue to this secrete) to practise with the King of Englande (Henry the seuenth) being verie rich and without warres, promising to bring him great riches in shorte time, if hee woulde shewe him fauour, and furnishe him with shippes to discover the newe Indies, whereof he had certaine knowledge. But neyther here being able to bring his suite to passe, he caused the matter to be moued to the king of Portugal Don Alonsa, the fifth of that name: at whose hands he found neither fauour nor mony, forasmuch as the Licentiat Calzadilla the bishop of Viseo, and one maister Rodrigo, men of

Colon was not much learned.

Colon conferred with learned men.

King Henry the seuenth.

Bernarde knewe not all this ges.

The att

credite
was nor
reason v
f hope o
at Lisbu
Pinzon,
secretes
and wel
the Sunn
commen
Medina S
of Cerda
nished in
dreame,
like prete
goe to the
affirming
wrote lett
Colon the
liuered v
new Indie
dryue the
already ta
courage
nication w
nor other
eare to his
of Quintar
and hearde
him in the
his enterpr
come to
Alonso of
Don Pero
thority wit
and exami
who also r
at the first
good hope
which they
hope to b
men of th
no thing d
many iudg
thing beyo
bigger the
hot & vrg
seeke the
such other
due vnto t
thing to the
called Sand
same yeere
VOL. V.

credite in the science of Cosmographie, withstoode him, and contended that there neither was nor could any golde or other riches be founde in the West, as Colon affirmed. By reason whereof he was very sad and pensive: but yet was not discouraged, or despaired of hope of his good adventure, which hee afterwarde founde. This done, he tooke shyping at Lisburne, and came to Palos of Moguer, where hee communed with Martin Alonso Pinzon, an experte Pilotte, who offered himselfe vnto him. After this, disclosing the whole secretes of his minde to Iohn Perez of Marchena (a fryar of thorder of saint Frances in Rabida, and wel learned in Cosmography) and declaring vnto him howe by following the course of the Sunne by a temperate voyage, rich and great landes might be founde: the Fryar greatly commended his enterpryse, and gaue him counsaile to breake the matter to the Duke of Medina Sidonia, Don Enrique of Guzman, a great Lorde, and very rich: also to Don Luis of Cerda, the Duke of Medina Celi, who at that time had great prouision of ships well furnished in his hauen of Santa Maria. But whereas both these Dukes tooke the matter for a dreame, and as a thing deuised of an Italian deceiuer, who (as they thought) had before with like pretence deluded the kinges of Englande and Portugall, the Fryar gaue him courage to goe to the courte of the Catholike Princes Don Fernando, and lady Isabell princes of Castile, affirming that they would bee ioyfull of suche newes: And for his better furtherance herein, wrote letters by him to Fryar Ferdinando of Talauera the Queenes confessor. Christopher Colon therefore, repayed to the Court of the Catholike princes, in the yeere 1486. and deliuered vnto their handes the petition of his request, as concerning the discovering of the new Indies. But they being more carefull, and applying all their mynde howe they might dryue the Moores out of the kingdome of Grenada, whiche greate enterprise they had already taken in hande, did little or nothing esteeme the matter. But Colon not thus discouraged, founde the meanes to declare his suite to such as had sometimes priuate communication with the King. Yet because hee was a straunger, and went but in simple apparel, nor otherwise credited then by the letter of a gray fryar they beleueed him not, neyther gaue eare to his wordes, whereby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Onely Alonso of Quintanilla, the Kinges chiefe Auditor, gaue him meate and drinke at his owne charges, and hearde gladly suche thynges as hee declared of the landes not then founde: desiring him in the meane tyme to bee content with that poore entertainment, and not to dispayre of his enterpryse: putting him also in good comforte that he shoulde, at one time or other, come to the speech of the Catholike princes. And thus shortly after, by the meanes of Alonso of Quintanilla, Colon was brought to the presence and audience of the Cardinall Don Pero Gonzales of Mendoza, archbishop of Toledo, a manne of great reuenues and authority with the King and Queene, who brought him before them, after that he well perceiued and examined his entent. And by this meanes was his suite hearde of the Catholike princes, who also reade the booke of his memorials which he presented vnto them. And although at the first they tooke it for vaine & false that he promised, neuerthelesse they put him in good hope that he should bee wel dispatched whē they had finished the wars of Granada, which they had now in hād. With which answer, Colon began to reuiue his spirits, with hope to be better esteemed, & more fauorably to be heard among the gentlemen & noblemen of the courte, who before tooke him onely for a crafty fellow & deceiuer: & was no thing dismaide or discouraged whensoever hee debated the matter with them, although many iudged him phantasticall, as is the maner of ignorāt men, to call all such as attemp any thing beyōd their reach, & the cōpasse of their knowledg, thinking the worlde to be no bigger then the cages wherein they are brought vp and liue. But to returne to Colon. So hot & vrgēt was the siege of Granada, that they presently graunted him his demande to seeke the new lands, & to bring from thence gold, siluer, pearles, precious stones, spices, and such other rich things. They gaue him also the 10. part of all the reuenues and customes due vnto the king, of all such landes as he shoulde discover, not doing preiudice in any thing to the king of Portugall. The particulars of this agreement were made in the towne called Sancta Fe: & the priuilege of the rewarde in Granada the xxx. day of Aprill, the same yeere that citie was won. And whereas the said Catholike princes had not money

VOL. V.

Y

present

The conquest
of Grenada.The archbishop
of Toledo.

present to dispatch Colon, Luis of S. Angel, the Kings Secretary of accomptes, lent them 6. Quentes of Maraz, which in a grosse summe make 16. thousande Ducates.

In the scutcheon of armes giuen to Columbus by Don Ferdinando and queene Isabella, these verses were written.

Por Castella, y por Leon. Nueuo mondo hallo Colon.

For Castile and for Leon.

A newe worlde founde was by Colon.

Why they were called Indies.

The colour of
the East In-
dians.

Some thinke that the people of the new world were called Indians, because they are of the colour of the East Indians. And although (as it seemeth to me) they differ much in colour and fashions, yet it is true, that of India they were called Indians. India is properly called that great Prouince of Asia, in the whiche great Alexander kept his warres, and was so named of the ryuer Indus: & it is diuided into many kingdomes confining with the same. From this great India (called the East India) came great copanies of men, as writeth Herodotus, & inhabited that great parte of Ethiopia that lyeth betweene the sea Bermeia (otherwise called the red sea, or the gulfe of Arabia) and the riuer of Nilus: al which regions y great Christian prince Prester Iohn doth now possesse. The said Indians preuailed so much, that they vterly chaunged the customes and name of that land, & called it India: by reason whereof, Ethiopia also hath of long tyme bin called India. And hereupon it came that Aristotle, Seneca, & certayne other old authors sayd, that India was not farre from Spaine. After this also, of later dayes our West India was so called, of the saide India of Prester Iohn where the Portugalles had their trade: For the Pilot of the Carauell that was first dryuen by forcible winde to an vknowne land in the West Ocean, called the same India, because the Portugalles so called such landes as they had lately discouered Eastwarde. Christopher Colon also, after the said Pilot, called the West landes by the same name: Albeit some that take Colonus for an expert Cosmographer, thinke that he so named them of the East India, as to be the furthest & vknowne end thereof, reaching into the West, vnder the other hemispherie or halfe globe of the earth beneath vs: affirming that whē he first attempted to discouer the Indies, he went chiefly to seeke the rich Iland of Cipango, which falleth on the part of great China or Cathay, as writeth Marcus Paulus Venetus, & other: and that he shoulde sooner come thither by following the course of the Sunne Westwarde, then against the same.

Of the colour of the Indians.

The colour of
the West In-
dians.

ONE of the marueylous things that God vseth in the composition of man, is colour: which doubtlesse cannot bee considered without great admiration, in holding one to be white, and another blacke, being colours vterly contrary: some likewise to be yelow, which is betweene blacke and white: and other of other colours, as it were of diuers liueries. And as these colours are to be marueyled at, euen so is it to be considered, howe they differ one from another, as it were by degrees, forasmuch as some men are white after diuers sorts of whitenesse, yelow after diuers manners of yelow, & blacke after diuers sorts of blackenesse: & howe from white they goe to yelow by discolouring to browne and redde, and to blacke by ashe colour, and murry, somewhat lighter then blacke, and tawny like vnto the West Indians, whiche are altogether in generall either purple or tawny, like vnto sodd Quinces, or of the colour of Chesnuttes or Oliues, whiche colour is to them naturall: and not by their going naked, as manie haue thought: albeit their nakednesse haue somewhat helped thereunto. Therefore in like manner, and with such diuersitie as menne are commonly white in Europe, and blacke in Affrike, euen with like varietie are they tawny in these Indies, with diuers degrees diuersly inclining more or lesse to blacke or white. No lesse marueyle is it to consider, that menne are white in Siuile and blacke at the cape of Buena Speranza, & of Chesnutte coloure at the ryuer of Plata, being all in equall degrees from the Equinoctiall lyne.

Lykewise,

Testimo

Lykewise
Torrida)
Mexico,
Augustin
For in al
when Vas
that such
although
deyned it
to declare
in the nat
contrary c
Another t
hayre is n
they balde
occasions,
nouelties

A

PLATO is
nature &
Iland, in ti
& inhabita
come of th
Critia, who
of the seue
to a certay
the riuer, n
in knowled
things y we
or burning
sayd Iland
flagration a

Things
our predec
al admirac
most antiqu
innumeral
and Asia: v
nauigable:
place the C
and Asia, a
the sayde I
the sea: Y
with out, w
named Athl
dominion o
whereof we
dominatours
vnto the sea
inuaide both
Then (O So

Lykewise, that the men of Affrike and Asia, that lyue vnder the burnt lyne (called Zona Torrida) are blacke: and not they that lyue beneath, or on this side the same lyne, as in Mexico, Iucatan, Quauhtema, Lian, Nicoragua, Panama, Santa Domingo, Paria, Cape Saint Augustine, Lima, Quito, and other landes of Peru, which touch in the same Æquinoctial. For in all the tracte of these coastes, certayne blacke men were founde onely in Quarequa, when Vaschus Nunnez of Balboa discovered the sea of Sur. By reason wherof it may seeme, that such varyety of colours proceedeth of man, & not of the earth: which may well be, although we bee all borne of Adam and Eue, and knowe not the cause why God hath ordeyned it, otherwise then to consider that his diuine maiesty hath don this, as infinite other, to declare his omnipotency and wisdom, in such diuersities of colours, as appeare not onely in the nature of manne, but the like also in beastes, byrdes, and floures, where diuers and contrary colours are seene in one litle feather, or the leaues growing out of one litle stalke. Another thing is also greatly to bee noted, as touching these Indians: and this is, that their hayre is not curld, as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the same clime: neyther are they balde, except very seldome, and that but litle. All which things may giue further occasions, to Philosophers to search the secrets of nature, and complexions of men, with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

Gods wisdom
and power is
seene in his
workes.

A most auncient testimonie of the West Indies, by the writing of the diuine
Philosopher Plato.

PLATO in his famous and diuine Dialogue named Timeus where he treateth of the vniuersal nature & frame of y whole world, taketh for his principle the most auncient hystorie of an Iland, in time of great antiquitie, named Athlantides, making also mention of the king, people, & inhabitats of the same: & that they kept warre against the Atheniens, and were ouercome of them. Plato also there inducing the said historie to be rehearsed by one named Critia, who affirmed that he had often heard it of his Vncle, who was in y time of Solon, one of the seuen sages of the Greekes. This Critia declared, that when Solon went into Egypt to a certayne citty named Saim, situate vpō y riuer of Nilus, where y diuisiō & recurring of the riuer, maketh the Iland Delta, he there spake with certayne learned priestes, very skilfull in knowledge of antiquities of māy worldes past. Insomuch y they made mention of many things y were before the flood of Noe, or Deucalion, & also before the vniuersal conflagratiō or burning of the world in y time of Phaeton, forasmuch as the wars betwene the people of the sayd Iland of Athlantides & the Atheniens was lōg before the general flood, & the cōflagration aforesayd. Plato induceth the priest, speaking to Solon in maner as followeth.

Things most maruelous & true (O Solon) remayne in auncient writyngs & memorie of our predecessours, & old ages long before our times. But aboue all things, one exceedeth al admiration for the greatnesse & singularitie thereof, which is this: It is in our records of most antiquities, that in times past your city of Athens hath oftētimes kept wars against an innumerable multitude of natiōs which came frō the sea Athlantike, in maner into al Europe and Asia: whereas now appeareth no such nation, forasmuch as the sayde sea is now all ouer nauigable: And yet at that time had in the mouth, and as it were in the entrie (where you place the Columnes of Hercules) an Ilande which was sayd to be much greater then all Africa and Asia, and that from thence was passage to many other Ilandes neere thereabout, and from the sayde Ilandes to the continent or firme lande, which was right ouer against it neere vnto the sea: Yet, that within the mouth, there was a litle gulfes, with a porte: the deepe sea with out, was the true sea, and the lande without was the true continent. This Ilande was named Athlantides, and in it was a Kinge of maruellous great power and might, who had the dominion of the sayde Ilande, and many other, and also a great part of the continent lande whereof we haue spoken, and much more towarde our partes also, forasmuch as they were dominatours of the thyrd part of the worlde conteyning Africa, Egypt, and Europe, euen vnto the sea Tirrhenum. The power therefore of them being then so great, they came to inuade both your cuntry and ours, and all other that are within the Columnes of Hercules. Then (O Solon) the vertue of your citty shewed it selfe famous in magnanimitie and feates

of armes, with the assemblance of the other Grecians, in resistynge their great power, vntyl you had driuen them out of our lands, and restored vs to our libertie. But shortly after that this enterprise was atchiued, befel a marueylous great earthquake, and exundation or ouerflowing of the sea, which continued for the space of one day and night: In the which the earth opened it selfe, and inglutted all those valiant and warlike men, and the sayde Ilande Atlantides sunke into the bottome of the sea, which was the occasion that neuer from that tyme forward, any shyp coulde sayle that way, by reason of the great mudde and slyme which remayned of the drowned Ilande.

This is the summe of those things which olde Critia sayde he had vnderstoode of Solon. And certainly these wordes of Plato of the sayd Iland, haue caused great contention among many great Philosophers, which haue written commentaries vpon the sayde Dialogue of Timeus composed by Plato: Insomuch that the same in those dayes being vtterly vnkown, many haue taken this narration of Solon, for an allegoricall fable, and haue interpreted the same in diuers senses and meanynge. But it may now well appeare the true meaning hereof to be this, that Plato intending to wryte of the vniuersal frame of the worlde, the which he knewe to be made an habitation for the diuine best man, and also beholding therein the great ornament and beauty of the heauen and starres, whereby man might knowe his God and creatour, it might seeme to him a thing to farre from reason, that onely two partes thereof should be inhabited, and the other part desolate and deprived of men: and that the Sunne & starres might seeme to shewe their light onely halfe their course without profute, shining only vpon the sea & desolate places, destitute of man & other liuing creatures. And therefore Plato had in great admiration the historye of the sayde Egyptian priest, making mention of an other part of the world beside Asia, Europe, and Africa, and thought it woorthy to be rehearsed in the beginning of his diuine Dialogue aforesayde. We ought therefore certainly to thinke our selues most bound vnto God, that in these our times it hath pleased him to reueale and discouer this secrete in the finding of this new worlde, whereby wee are certaynly assured, that vnder our Pole starre, and vnder the Equinoctiall line, are most goodly and ample regions, as well and commodiously inhabited, as are other partes of the worlde best known vnto vs.

The testimonie of the Poet Seneca in his Tragedie De Medea, whereby the spirite of Poeticall furie, he sayth.

Venient annis
Secula seris, quibus Oceanus
Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens
Pateat tellus, Typhisque nouos
Detegat Orbes,
Nec sit terris, vltima Thyle.

Which may be thus Englished.

In late yeeeres new worldes shalbe founde,
And newe landes shall then appeare on the grounde,
When Tiphis Nauigation new worldes shall finde out,
Then shall not Thyle for last be left out.
For then shall the Ocean dissolue his large bandes,
And shewe forth newe worldes, regions, and landes.

Thyle is an Iland.

To the most noble prince and catholike King, Charles, Peter Martyr of Angleria wisheth perpetuall felicitie.

The largenes of
the Ocean vn-
knowne to this
day.

The diuine prouidence, from the time that he first created $\S$ world, hath reserued vnto this day the knowledge of the great & large Ocean sea. In the which tyme he hath opened $\S$ same chiefly vnto you (most mighty Prince) by $\S$ good fortune & happy successe of your grandfather by your mother side. The same prouidence (I know not by what destinie) hath brought

The
brou
conti
and n
of ob
to the
only,
to As
bee p
was fu
were
chiefe
the fai
finde
and ex
Cardin
worthy
natural
of the
vppe b
was mi
and qu
my leg
drew b
woorth
corde of
to bee d
with the
offence
onely he
mine ow
ing with
two first
derike h
I was vo
of the b
the cala
me to pr
bookes,
mine ad
(most n
fathers l
corner o
of our s
fending
hath bec
what ne
mynes,
The whi
fore mos
derstood
by the f
few exc
most for

brought me out of my native country of Millane, and out of the citie of Rome (where I continued almost. x. yeeres) into Spaine that I might particularly collecte these maruileous and newe things, which shoulde otherwise perhappes haue lien drowned in the whirlepoole of obliuion, forasmuche as the Spanyardes (men worthy great commendation) had only care to the generall inuentions of these things. Notwithstanding, I do not chalenge vnto me only, the thanks of the trauaile bestowed herein, whereas the chiefe rewarde therof is due to Ascanius Vicont Cardinal, who perceyuing that I was willing to depart out of the citty to bee present at the warres of Granatum, dissuaded me from my purpose: But seeing that I was fully resolved to depart, exhorted and required me to write vnto him such newes as were famous in Spaine, & worthy to be noted. I tooke therefore my journey into Spaine chiefly for the desire I hadd to see the expedition which was prepared against the enimies of the faith, forasmuch as in Italye, by reason of the dissention amonge the Princes, I coulde finde nothing wherewith I might feede my witte, being a younge man desirous of knowledge and experience of thinges. I was therefore present at the warres, from whence I write to Cardinall Ascanius, and by sundry Epistles certified him of such thinges as I thought most worthy to bee put in memorie. But when I perceiued that his fortune, was turned from a naturall mother to a stepdame, I ceased from writing. Yet after I sawe, that by ouerthrowe of the enimies of our faith, Spaine was purged of the Moores, as of an euill weede plucked vpp by the rootes, least I should bestowe my slippery yeeres in vnprofitable idlenesse, I was minded to returne to Italie. But the singular benignitie of both the Catholike king and queene now departed: and their large promises toward me vpon my returne from my legacie of Babylon deteyned me from my purpose. Yet doth it not repent me that I drew backe my foot, aswell for that I see in no other place of the worlde at this time the like woorthie thinges to bee done: as also that in manner throughout Italie, by reason of the discord of Christian Princes, I perceiued all thinges to runne headlong into ruine, the countreies to bee destroyed and made fatte with humane blood, the Citties sacked, virgins and matrones with their goods and possessions carryed away as Captiues, and miserable innocents without offence to bee slayne vnarmed within their owne houses. Of the which calamities, I did not onely heare the lamentable outcries, but did also feele the same: For euen the bloude of mine owne kinsfolkes and friendes, was not free from that crueltie. As I was therefore musing with my selfe of these thinges, the Cardinall of Arragone, after that he had seene the two first bookes of my Decades written to Ascanius, required mee in the name of king Frederike his vncke, to put forth the other eyght epistle bookes. In the meane time also, while I was voyde of all cares as touching the matters of the Ocean, the Apostolicall messengers of the bishop of Rome, Leo the tenth (by whose holosome counsayle and authority we trust the calamities of Italie shall bee finished) raysed mee as it were from sleepe, and encouraged me to proceed as I had begun. To his holinesse I write two Decades, comprised in short bookes, after the maner of epistles, and added them to the first, which was printed without mine aduice, as shall further appeare by the preface following. But nowe I returne to you (most noble Prince) from whom I haue somewhat digressed. Therefore wheras your grandfather by your mothers side, haue subdued al Spaine vnder your dominjō, except only one corner of the same, and haue also left you the kingdome of Naples, with the fruitfull Ilandes of our seas, it is surely a great thing and worthy to bee noted in our Cronicles. But not of-fending the reuerence due to our predecessours, whatsoever from the beginning of the world hath bene done or written to this day, to my iudgement seemeth but little, if wee consider what new landes and countreys, what newe seas, what sundry nations and tongues, what golde mynes, what treasuries of pearles they haue left vnto your highnesse, beside other reuenues. The which, what they are, and howe great, these three Decades shall declare. Come therefore most noble Prince elected of God, and enioy that high estate of thinges not yet vnderstood to men. We offer vnto you the Equinoctiall lyne hitherto vnknowne, and burnt by the furious heate of the sunne, and vnhabitable after the opinion of the olde writers, a few excepted: but nowe founde to bee most replenished with people, faire, fruitfull, and most fortunate, with a thousand Ilandes crowned with golde and beautifull pearles, besides that

Cardinal Ascanius.
The warres at Granatum against the Moores.

Italie disquieted with war.
The sequels of warre.

King Frederike.

Spaine subdued from the Moores.
The kingdom of Naples.

The temperatenesse of the Equinoctiall vnknowne to the olde writers.

Continent of
firme land as
bigge as three
Europes.
Riches are the
instruments of
conquestes.

that greate portion of earth supposed to be part of the firme lande, exceeding in quantitie three Europes. Come therfore and embrace this new world, and suffer vs no longer to consume in desire of your presence. From hence, from hence I say (most noble young Prince) shall instrumentes bee prepared you, whereby all the world shall be vnder your obeysance. And thus I bid your Maiestie farewell: to whose tast if I shall perceiue the frutes of this my tyllage to bee delectable, I will hereafter doe my endeuour that you may receiue the same more abundantly. From Madrid, the day before the Calends of October, In the yeere of Christ, 1516.

THe re
by v
were vnk
honour in
with diu
actes and
ance and
and for the
the west O
by your le
man. Tak
Christop
citie of Ge
to find cer
shippes and
ligion mig
precious st
appoynted
the other t
uelas. Th
the yeere o
Spanyardes
Canariae, f
hundreth

Martyr.
quantile
r to con-
g Prince)
obeyance,
es of this
ceiue the
the yeere

THE
FYRST BOOKE
OF THE
DECADES OF THE OCEAN,

WRITTEN BY

PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA MILENOES,

COUNSAYLER TO THE KYNG OF SPAINE,

AND

PROTONOTARIE APOSTOLICALL TO ASCANIUS SPHORCIA, VICOUNT CARDINAL, &c.

THE reuerende and thankfull antiquitie was accustomed to esteeme those menne as Gods, by whose industrie and magnanimitie such landes and regions were discouered, as were vnknowne to their Predecessours. But vnto vs, hauing onely one God, whom wee honour in triplicite of person, this resteth, that albeit we do not worship that kind of men with diuine honour, yet wee doe reuerence them, and worthily marueile at their noble actes and enterprises. Vnto kinges and princes wee giue due obeysance, by whose gouernance and furtherance they haue been ayded to performe their attempts: we commend both and for their iust desertes worthily extoll them. Wherefore, as concerning the Islandes of the west Ocean, lately discouered, and of the authours of the same (which thing you desire by your letters to know) I will begin at the first author thereof least I bee iniurious to any man. Take it therefore as followeth.

The reward of
vertue.

The landes of
the West Ocean.

Christophorus Columbus (otherwise called Columbus) a gentle man of Italie, borne in the citie of Genua, perswaded Fernando and Elizabeth, catholike princes, that he doubted not to find certaine Ilandes of India, neere vnto our Ocean sea, if they woulde furnish him with shippes and other thinges apperteyning: affirming that thereby not onely the Christian religion might be enlarged, but Spaine also enriched by the great plentie of gold, pearles, precious stones, and spices, which might be found there. At the length three shippes were appoynted him at the kinges charges: of the which one was a great caracie with deckes, and the other two were light marchant shippes without deckes, which the Spanyardes call Carauelas. Thus hee departed from the coastes of Spaine about the calendes of September, in the yeere of Christe. 1492. and set forward on his voyage, being accompanied with CC.xx. Spanyardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manie thinke them to be which the Spanyardes call Canarie, found but of late dayes) are distant from the Ilands of Gades a thousande and two hundredth myles, according to their accomptes, for they say they are distant three hundred leagues:

Christophorus
Columus.

India.

The first voyage
of Columbus.

The landes of
Canarie.
Gades, or
Cala mala.

A league, what
it containeth by
sea.
The fortunate
Ilands.

Capo Verde.

The 7. Ilands of
Canarie.
Betanchor a
Frenchman sub-
dued the Ilands
of Canarie, &c.

Alphonus Lugo.

Colonus men
rebelagauithim.

Faire words &
promises.

Hispaniola,
Iohanna.

Nightingales sing
in Nouember.

The Iland of
Ophir.

The Ilands of
Antilia.

leagues: whereas such as are expert sea men, affirme that euery league containeth foure myles, after their supputations. These Ilandes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre which is in them. For neither the coldnesse of winter is sharpe vnto them, nor the heate of sommer intollerable. Yet some men are of opinion, that those were in old time called the fortunate Ilandes, which the Portugales call Capo Verde. Colonus therefore sayled first to the Ilandes of Canarie, to the intent there to refresh his shippes with fresh water and fuell, before he committed himselfe to this so laborous a voiage. And because I haue heare made mention of the Ilandes of Canarie, it shall not be much from my purpose, to declare howe of vnknowne they became knowne, and of sauage and wilde, better mannered: For by the long course of many yeeres they were forgotten, and remained as vnknown.

These seuen Ilandes (therefore) called the Canaries, were found by chaunce by a French man called, Betanchor by the permission of queene Katharine, protectrix of king Iohn her son, while he was yet in his nonage, about the yere of Christ 1405. This Betanchor inuaded two of these Ilandes called Lancelotus & Fortisuentura, which he inhabited and brought to better culture. He being dead, his sonne and heire solde both the sayd Ilandes to certaine Spanyardes.

After this, Farnandus Peraria and his wife, inuaded Ferrea and Gemera. The other three were subdued in our time. Grancanaria, by Petrus de Vera, citizen of the noble citie of Xericium, and Michael of Mexica. Plama and Tenerifen, by Alphonus Lugo, at the kinges charges. Gomera and Ferrea were easily subdued: But the matter went harde with Alphonus Lugo. For that naked and wilde nation, fighting onely with stones and clubbes, droue his armie to flight at the first assault, and slue about foure hundred of his men: But at the length hee ouercame them. And thus all the Ilandes of Canarie were added to the dominion of Spaine. From these Ilandes Colonus directing his voyage towards the West, following the falling of the sunne, but declining somewhat towards the left hand, sayled on forward xxviii. dayes continually, hauing onely the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes which were accompanied with him, beganne first to murmure secretly among themselves, and shortly after with wordes of reproch spake euill of Colonus their gouernour, and consulted with themselves, eyther to rydde him out of the way, or els to cast him into the sea: raging that they were deueined of a stranger, an outlandish man, a Ligurian, a Genues, and brought into such dangerous places, that they might neuer returne againe. And after xxxiii. dayes were past, they furiously cryed out against him, and threatened him that he should passe no further. But hee euer with gentle wordes and large promises, appeased their fury, and prolonged day after day, sometime desiring them to beare with him yet a while, and sometime putting them in remembrance that if they should attempt any thing against him, or otherwise disobey him, it would be reputed for treason. Thus after a few dayes, with chearefull hearts they espied the lande long looked for. In this first nauigation, he discovered vi. Ilandes, whereof two were exceeding great: Of which, the one he called Hispaniola, and the other Iohanna. But at that time hee knewe not perfectly that Iohanna (otherwise called Cuba) was an Ilande. As they coasted along by the shore of certaine of these Ilandes, they hearde Nightingales sing in the thicke woodes in the moneth of Nouember. They found also great riuers of fresshe water, and naturall hauens, of capacitie to harbour great nauiies of shippes. Sayling by the coastes of Iohanna, from the North poynt to the West, hee rode little lesse then eight hundred miles (for they cal it a hundred & fourescore leagues) supposing that it had been the continent or firme land, because hee coule neither find the landes end, nor any token of the end, as farre as he could iudge with his eye: wherefore he determined to turne backe againe, being partly thereto enforced by the roundnesse of the sea, for the sea bankes of the Ilande of Iohanna, by sundr, wyndinges and turninges, bende them selues so much toward the North, that the North North-east wind roughly tossed the shyps by reason of the winter. Turning therfore the stemmes of his shippes towards the East, hee affirmed that he had found the Iland of Ophir, whither Solomons ships sayled for gold. But the description of the Cosmographers well considered, it seemeth that both these, and the other Ilands adioyning, are the Ilands of Antilia. This

Iland

The fir

Iland
keele
cloue
drowne
all the
who per
into the
them, to
and win
multipl
to haue
ming to
pottes,
Thus gro
part of
arrived
zeutium,
largely ap
to prayer
also. An
in all poy
helped th
shippe, a
man for k
only of o
very long
The wilde
mans flesh
ing their c
Ilandes of
in the mid
lesse vex
to seeke t
take, they
them whe
partes, as
for store,
eating of
for increa
They of t
they pere
they vse
of the Ca
ouercome
which the
much like
lucca, wh
sodden, th
and prese
at, that th
causeth p
some, as
called Pau
VOL. V.

neth foure
temperate
m, nor the
old time
fore sayled
n water and
haue heare
e, to declare
nered: For
wen.

by a French
ing Iohn her
etanchor in-
habited and
sayd llandes

e other three
ble citie of
at the kinges
th Alphonsus
re, droue his
at the length
dominion of
following the
ward xxxiii.
hen the Spa-
among them-
ir gouernour
cast him into
ian, a Genues,
e. And after
ed him that he
ises, appeased
ith him yet a
mpt any thing
us after a few
rst nauigation,
one he called
ly that Iohanna
of certaine of
eth of Nouem-
of capacitee
ne North poynt
it a hundred &
l, because hee
ne could iudge
hereto enforced
ma, by sundry
e North North-
re the stemmes
Ophir, whither
well considered,
Antilia. This
land

lland he called Hispaniola, on whose North side as hee approached neere to the lland, the keele or bottome of the biggest vessell ranne vpon a blind rocke couered with water, and cloue in sunder: but the plainenesse of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Making hast therefore with the other two ships to helpe them, they brought away all the men without hurt. Heere comming first aland, they sawe certaine men of the llande, who perceiuing an vnknown nation comming toward them, flocked together, and ranne all into the thicke woodes, as it had bin hares coursed with greyhoundes. Our men pursuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the ships: where filling her with meate and wine, and apparelling her, they let her depart to her companie. Shortly after a great multitude of them came running to the shore to behold this new nation, whom they thought to haue descended from heauen. They cast themselves by heaps into the sea, & came swimming to the shippes, bringing gold with them, which they chaunged with our men for earthen pottes, drinking glasses, poyntes, pinnes, hawkes bels, looking glasses, & such other trifles. Thus growing to further familiaritie, our men were honorably entertained of the king of that part of the lland, whose name was Guacacanarillus: for it hath many kings, as when Aeneas arriued in Italie, he found Latium diuided into many kingdōs and prouinces, as Latium, Mezeutium, Turnum, and Tarchontem, which were separated with narrow bounds, as shall more largely appeare hereafter. At the euen tide about the falling of the Sun, when our men went to prayer, and kneeled on their knees after the maner of the Christians, they did the like also. And after what manner soeuer they sawe them pray to the crosse, they followed them in all poyntes as well as they coule. They shewed much humanitie towards our men, and helped them with their lighters or smal boats (which they call Canoes to vnlade their broken shippes, and that with such celeritie and cheerefulnesse, that no friende for friend, or kinsman for kinsman, in such case moued with pitie, coule doe more. Their boates are made only of one tree, made holow with a certaine sharpe stone (for they haue no yron) and are very long and narrow. Many affirme that they haue seene some of them with fortie ores. The wilde & mischieuous people called Canibales, or Caribes, which were accustomed to eate mans flesh (& called of the olde writers, Anthropophagi) molest them exceedingly, inuading their countrey, taking them captiue, killing & eating them. As our men sayled to the llandes of these meeke and humane people, they left the llandes of the Canibales, in maner in the midst of their voyage towarde the South. They complained that their llands were nolesse vexed with the incursions of these manhunting Canibales when they go forth a rousing to seeke their pray, then are other tame beasts, of Lyons and Tigers. Such children as they take, they geld to make them fat as we doe cocke chickings and young hogges, and eate them when they are wel fedde: of such as they eate, they first eate the intralles and extreme partes, as hands, feet, armes, necke, and head. The other most fleshye partes, they powder for store, as we do pestels of porke, and gammondes of bakon: yet doe they absteyne from eating of women, and count it vile. Therefore such young women as they take, they keepe for increase, as we do hens to leye egges: the olde womanne, they make their drudges. They of the llandes (which we may nowe call ours) both the men and the women, when they perceiue the Canibales cōming, haue none other shift but onely to flee: for although they vse very sharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of small force to repress the fury of the Canibales: for euen they themselves confesse, that ten of the Canibales are able to ouercome a hundred of them if they encounter with them. Their meate is a certaine roote, which they call Ages, much like a nauewe roote in forme and greatnesse, but of sweete tast, much like a greene chestnute. They haue also another kinde of rootes, which they call lucca, whereof they make breade in like manner. They vse Ages more often roasted or sodden, then to make breade thereof. But they neuer eate lucca, except it be first sliced and pressed (for it is full of licoure) and then baked or sodden. But this is to bee marueiled at, that the iuyce of this roote is a poyson as strong as Aconitum, so that if it be drunke, it causeth present death, and yet the bread made of the masse thereof, is of good tast and wholesome, as they all haue proued. They make also another kind of bread of a certaine pulse, called Panicum, much like vnto wheate, whereof is great plentie in the Dukedome of Mil-

A shipwracke.

The people of the lland.

Naked people.

Expert swimmers. Gold for earth and glasse.

Many kings.

Religious and humane people.

Canoes.

Monasyla. They haue no iron. Canibales, or Caribes. Anthropophagi.

The cruelty of the Canibales.

Ages. Rootes in the stead of meat. Lucca. Bread of rootes.

An hearse of strange nature.

Maiaium.

lane, Spaine, and Cranatum. But that of this Countrey is longer by a spanne, somewhat sharpe toward the ende, and as bigge as a mans arme in the brawne: the graine whereof are set in a marueylous order, and are in forme somewhat like a Pease. While they be soure and vnripe, they are white, but when they are ripe they be very blacke, when they are broken they are whiter then snowe: this kinde of graine they call Mazium. Golde is of some estimation among them: for some of them hang certaine small peeces thereof at their eares and nosethrylles. A little beyonde this place our men went a lande for fresh water, where they chaunced vpon a riuer, whose sande was myred with much golde. They found there no kinde of foure footed beastes, except three kinde of little conies. These Ilandes also nourish serpents, but such as are without hurt. Likewise wilde geese, turtle doves, and duckes, much greater then ours, and as white as swannes, with heads of purple colour. Also Popiniayes, of the which some are greene, some yelow, & some like them of India, with yelow rings about their neckes, as Plinie describeth them. Of these they brought fourtie with them, of most liuely and delectable colours, hauing their feathers entermingled with greene, yelow, and purple, which varietie delighteth the sense not a little. Thus much thought I good to speake of Popiniayes (right noble prince) specially to this intent, that albeit the opinion of Christophorus Colonius (who affirmeth these Ilandes to be part of India) doth not in all poyntes agree with the iudgement of auncient writers as touching the bignes of the Sphere and compasse of the Globe, as concerning the nauigable portion of the same being vnder vs, yet the Popiniayes and many other things brought from thence, doe declare that these Ilandes sauour somewhat of India, eyther being neare vnto it, or else of the same nature: for asmuch as Aristotle also, about the ende of his booke de Caelo & Mundo and likewise Seneca, with diuers other authours not ignorant in Cosmographie, do affirme that India is no long tracte by sea, distant from Spaine by the West Ocean, for the soyle of these Ilandes bringeth forth Mastyx, Aloes, and sundry other sweete gummies and spices, as doth India, Cotton also of the Gossampine tree, as in India in the countrey of the people called Seres.

The languages of all the nations of these Ilandes, may well bee written with our Latine letters. For they call heauen Turci. A house, Boa. Golde, Cauni. A good man, Taino. Nothing, Maiani. All other words of their languages, they pronounce as plainly as we doe the Latine tongue. In these Ilandes they found no trees knowne vnto them, but Pine apple trees, and Date trees, and those of marueylous height, and exceeding harde, by reason of the great moistnesse and fatnesse of the ground, with continuall and temperate heate of the Sunne, which endureth so all the whole yeere. They plainly affirme the Iland of Hispaniola to be the most fruitfull lande that the heauen compasseth about, as shall most plainly appeare hereafter in the particular description of the same, which wee intend to set forth when wee shall bee better instructed. Thus making a league of friendship with the king, and leauing with him xxxviii. men to search the Ilande, he departed to Spaine, taking with him tenne of the inhabitantes to learne the Spanish tongue, to the intent to vse them afterward for interpreters. Colonius therefore at his returne was honourably receiued of the King and Queene, who caused him to sit in their presence, which is a token of great loue and honour among the Spanyardes. Hee was also made Admiral of the Ocean, and his brother gouernour of the Iland.

Toward the second voyage he was furnished with xvii. ships whereof three were great carackes of a thousande tunne, xii. were of that sort which the Spanyards call Carauelas, without deckes, and two other of the same sort somewhat bigger, and more apt to beare deckes, by reason of the greatnesse of their mastes. Hee had also a thousande and two hundred armed footemen wel appoynted: among which were many artificers, as smythes, Carpenters, myners, and such other, certaine horsemen also, well armed: Lykewyse mares, sheepe, heighfers, and such other of both kindes for increase: Likewise all kinde of pulse, or grayne and corne, as wheate, barley, rye, beanes, and pease, and such other, aswell for foode as to sow: beside vines, plantes, and seedes, of such trees, fruites, and hearbes, as those countreyes lacke, and (not to bee forgotten) sundry kindes of artyllerie and iron tooles, as bowes,

arrowes,

Golde in estimation.

Gold in the sandes of riuers.

Serpents without venime.

Turtle doves.

Duckes.

Popiniayes.

Plinie.

These Ilandes are part of India.

The Indians are Antipodes to the Spanyardes.

Aristotle.

Seneca.

India not farre from Spaine.

Mastyx.

Aloe.

Gossampine cotton or bombace.

Seres.

The language of these Indians.

Trees & fruits unknowne to vs.

Fat and moist ground.

Heate continuall & temperate.

The fruitfulness of Hispaniola.

The second voyage of Colonius.

Carackes.

Carauelas.

Artificers.

Smythes.

Carpenters.

Myners.

Horsemen.

Lykewyse.

Mares.

Sheepe.

Heighfers.

Pulse.

Grayne.

Corn.

Wheate.

Barley.

Rye.

Beanes.

Pease.

Toowe.

Vines.

Plantes.

Seedes.

Trees.

Fruit.

Herbes.

Countreyes.

Sundry.

Kindes.

Artyllerie.

Iron.

Tooles.

Bowes.

The first

arrowes.

shouell.

they say.

Calend.

the Cal.

other v.

distillet.

a round.

daves a.

well, fr.

The

YOU

haue in

I wrote

hath suc

and is in

about. x

in this y

them th

the gou

matter t

fourescor

and that

sence by

court him

with him

to mee,

October,

Spaine, y

lande, in

the Nort

onely th

beset wi

ground,

no time,

that they

them, an

ther, the

came fra

beast, ex

the coun

Iland, e

mountai

large flo

and is an

them fr

innume

streete i

houses,

They ar

high tre

bending

arrowes, crosbowes, billes, hargabusses, broad swords, large targettes, pykes, mattocks, shouelles, hammers, nayles, sawes, axes, and such other. Thus beeing furnished accordingly, they set forward from the Ilandes of Gades (now called Cales) the seuenth day before the Calendes of October, in the yeere of Christ. 1493. & arriued at the Ilandes of Canariae at the Calendes of October: Of These Ilandes, the last is called Ferrea, in which there is no other water that may be drunke, but onely that is gathered of the deawe, which continually distilleth from one onely tree, growing on the highest-banke of the Iland, and falleth into a rounde trench made with mans hande: wee were enformed of these thinges within fewe daies after his departure: What shall succcede, we will certifie you hereafter. Thus fare ye well, from the courte, at the Ides of Nouember, 1493.

Water dropping
from a tree con-
tinually.

The seconde booke of the first Decade, to Ascanius Sphorcia, Vicount Cardinal. &c.

YOU repeate (right honourable prince) that you are desirous to knowe what newes wee haue in Spaine from the newe worlde, and that those things haue greatly delighted you which I wrote vnto your highnesse of the first Nauigation: You shall now therefore receiue what hath succeeded. Methymna Campi, is a famous towne in high Spayne, in respect from you, and is in that parte of Spayne which is called Castella Vetus, beeing distant from Gades about, xl. myles. Heere the court remained, when about the ix. of the Calendes of Aprill, in this yeere of ninetie and foure, there were postes sent to the king and queene, certifying, them that there were twelue shippes come from the newe Ilands, and arriued at Gades: but the gouernour of the shippes sent word to the king and queene, that hee hadde none other matter to certifie them of by the postes, but onely that the Admirall with fise shippes, and fourescore and ten men remained still in Hispaniola to search the secretes of the Ilande, and that as touching other matters, hee himselfe would shortly make relation in their presence by woordes of mouth: therefore the day before the Nones of Aprill, hee came to the court himselfe. What I learned of him, and other faithfull and credible men, which came with him from the Admirall, I will rehearse vnto you, in such order as they declared the same to mee, when I demanded them: take it therefore as foloweth. The third day of the Ides of October, departing from Ferrea, the last of the Ilandes of Canariae, and from the coastes of Spaine, with a Nauie of seenteene shippes, they sayled xxi. daies before they came to any lande, inclining of purpose more toward the left hande then at the first voyage, following the North Northeast winde, & arriued first at the Ilandes of the Canibales or Caribes, of which onely the fame was knowne to our men. Among these, they chaunced first vpon one, so beset with trees, that they could not see so much as an elle space of bare earth or stonie ground, this they called Dominica, because they found it on the Sunday. They taried here no time, because they saw it to be desert. In the space of these xxi. daies, they thinke that they sayled eight hundred & xx. leagues, the North Northeast winde was so full with them, and so freshly followed the sterne of their ships. After they had sayled a litle further, they espied diuers Ilandes replenished with sundry kindes of trees, from the which came fragrant sauours of spices and sweete gummess: here they sawe neyther manne nor beast, except certaine Lysartes of huge bignesse, as they reported which went a land to view the country. This Iland they called Galana or Galanta: from the cape or poynt of this Iland, espying a mountaine farre of, they sayled thither. About. xxx. myles from this mountaine, they sawe a riuier descending, which seemed to be a token of some great and large flood. This is the first lande which they found inhabited from the Ilands of Canariae, and is an Ilande of the Canibales, as they learned by the interpretours which they tooke with them from Hispaniola into Spaine at their first voyage. Searching the Ilande, they found innumerable villages of xx. houses, or 30. at the most set round about in order, making the streete in compasse like a market place. And forasmuch as I haue made mention of their houses, it shal not be greatly from my purpose to describe in what manner they are builded: They are made round like belles or round pavilions. Their frame is rayased of exceeding high trees, set close together, and fast rampaired in the ground, so standing aslope, and bending inward, that the toppes of the trees ioyne together, and beare one against another,

Methymna
Campi.
Castella Vetus
Gades.

The Iland of
Ferrea.

Ilandes of the
Canibales.

The Iland of
Dominica.

Lysartes.
The Iland of
Galanta.

The Iland of
Guadalupe.

Villages of xx. or
xxx. houses.

The building of
their houses.

having also within the house certain strong and short proppes or posts which susteyne the trees from falling. They couer them with the leaues of date trees, and other trees strongly compact and hardened, wherwith they make them close from winde and weather. At the short posts or proppes within the house, they tie ropes of the cotton of gossampine trees, or other ropes made of certaine long & rough roots, much like vnto the shrubbe called Shartum, wherof in old time they vsed to make bands for vines, and gables and ropes for shippes. These they tye ouerthwart the house from post to post, on these they lay as it were certaine mattresses made of the cotton of gossampine trees, which growe plentifully in these Ilandes. This cotton the Spanyards call Algodon, and the Italians Bombasine: and thus they sleepe in hanging beddes. At the entrance of one of their houses, they sawe two Images of woode like vnto serpentes, which they thought had bene such idoles as they honour: but they learned afterwarde that they were set there onely for comelinesse, for they know none other God then the sunne & moone, although they make certaine images of gossampine cotton to the similitude of such phantasies as they say appeare to them in the night. Our men found in their houses, all kinds of earthen vessels, not much vnlike vnto ours. They found also in their kytchens, mans flesh, duckes flesh, & goose flesh, all in one pot, and other on the spits ready to be layd to the fire. Enteing into their inner lodgings, they founde faggottes of the bones of mens armes and legges, which they reserue to make heades for their Arrowes, because they lacke iron, the other bones they cast away when they haue eaten the flesh. They found likewise the head of a yong man fastened to a post, and yet bleeding. They haue in some villages, one great hall or pallace, about the which their common houses are placed. To this they resort, as often as they come together to play. When they perceiued the comming of our men, they fledde. In their houses they founde also about thirtie children captiues, which were reserued to bee eaten, but our men tooke them away to vse them for interpreters. Searching more diligently the inner parts of the Ilande, they found seuen other riuers, bigger then this which wee spake of before, running through the Ilande, with fruitfull and pleasant bankes, delectable to beholde. This Ilande they called Guadalupea, for the similitude that it hath to the moût Guadalupe in Spayne, where the image of the virgine Marie is religiously honoured, but the inhabitants call it Carucueria, or Queraquiera: It is the chiefe habitatiõ of the Canibales. They brought from this Iland vii. Popiniayes, bigger then Phesantes, much differing from other in colour, hauing their backs, brestes, and bellies of purple colour, and their winges of other variable colours: in all these Ilandes is no lesse plentie of Popiniayes, then with vs of sparrowes or starelins. As wee bring vp capons and hennes to franke and make them fat, so do they these bigger kindes of Popiniayes for the same purpose. After that they had thus searched the Iland, and driuen these Canibales to flight (which ran away at their first approche, as soone as they had espyed them) they called their companie together, and as soone as they hadde broken the Canibales boates or lighters (which they call Canoas) they loosed their ankers the day before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from Guadalupea. Colonus the Admiral, for the desire he had to see his companions, which at his first voyage he left the yeere before in Hispaniola to search the country, let passe many Ilandes both on his right hand, & left hande, and sayled directly thither. By the way there appeared on the North a great Iland, which the captiues that were taken in Hispaniola, called Madanino, or Matinino, affirming it to be inhabited only with women, to whom the Canibales haue accesse at certaine times of the yeere, as in old time the Thracians hadde to the Amazones in the Ilande of Lesbos: the men children they sende to their fathers, but the women they keepe with themselves. They haue great and strong caues or dennes in the grounde, to the which they flee for safegard if any men resorte vnto them at any other time then is appoynted, and there defende themselves with bowes and arrowes, against the violence of such as attempt to inuade them. They could not at this time approche to this Ilande by reason of the North Northeast winde, which blew so vehemently from the same, whereas they nowe followed the East Southeast. After they departed from Madanino, and sayled by the space of xl. myles, they passed not farre from an other Ilande which the captiues sayde to bee very populous,

Gossampine cotton.

Bombase. Hanging beds.

Images.

Fine cookerie.

Arrowheades of hornes.

The mount Guadalupea.

Canucueria.

Popiniayes: bigger then Phesantes.

The Canibales driue to flight.

Matinino an Ilande of women.

The first

and rep
Serratus
bales ar
hunt for
rounde,
called 3.
the thir
West, th
uelous fa
and leau
vpon an
they nam
command
they fou
in shooti
had tari
and as m
menne w
there was
were the
terrible
the more
with all s
they oue
withstand
and three
they fou
queenes
did no m
they perc
but he sh
so terrib
oftentime
age. Pr
the West
west, the
differing
trees, oth
some wer
supposed
roughnes
so, that
therefore
many, at
which de
but the
sea where
forward,
Buchena
from the
pulous
and cont
from the

steyne the
es strongly
er. At the
pine trees,
bbe called
ropes for
y as it were
illy in these
: and thus
sawe two
as they hose,
se, for they
ages of gos-
in the night.
ours. They
and other
they founde
e heades for
they haue
ost, and yet
which their
her to play.
they founde
r men tooke
parts of the
ore, running
This llande
s in Spayne,
antes call it
brought from
her in colour,
other variable
sparrowes or
t, so do they
thus searched
approche, as
soone as they
loosed their
Colonus the
e he left the
n on his right
om the North
or Matino,
cesse at cer-
in the llande
keepe with
ne which they
poynted, and
ch as attempt
e of the North
followed the
of xl. myles,
ry populous,
and

and replenished with all things necessarie for the life of man. This they called Mons Serratus, because it was full of mountaines. The captiues further declared, that the Canibales are wont at sometime to goe from their owne coastes about a thousande myles to hunt for men. The day following they sawe another llande, the which because it was rounde, they called Sancta Maria Rotunda. The next day, they found another, which they called S. Martini, which they let passe also, because they had no leasure to tarry. Likewise the thirde day they espied another, whose Diametral side, extending from the East to the West, they iudged to be a hundred & fiftie myle. They affirme all these llandes to be maruelous faire and fruitfull: This last, they called Sancta Maria Antiqua. Sayling forwarde, and leauing many other llandes, after they had sayled about fortie myles, they chaunced vpon another, much bigger then any of the rest, which the inhabitants call Ay Ay, but they named it Insula crucis: Here they cast anker to fetch fresh water. The Admirall also commanded xxx. men to goe aland out of his owne ship, and to search the llande: Here they found foure dogges on the shore. The inhabitantes are Canibales, and maruelous expert in shooting, aswell women as men, and vse to infect their arrowes with poison. When they had taried there two dayes, they sawe a farre of a Canoa, in the which were eight men, and as manie women, hauing with them bowes and arrowes. They fiercely assayed our menne without all feare, and hurt some of them with their venemous arrowes. Among these there was a certaine woman, to whom the other gaue reuerence, and obeyed as though shee were their queene. Her sonne wayted vpon her, beeing a young man, strongly made, of terrible and frowning countenance, and a Lions face. Our menne, least they should take the more hurt by beeing wounded a farre of, thought it best to ioyne with them. Therefore with all speed, setting forward with their ores the brigadine in which they were set a llande, they ouerturned their Canoa, with a great violence, which being ouerwhelmed, they notwithstanding, as well the women as the men, swimming, cast their darts at our men thicke and threefolde. At the length, gathering themselves vpon a rocke couered with the water, they fought manfully vntill they were overcome and taken, one beeing slayne, and the queenes sonne sore wounded. When they were brought into the Admirals shippe, they did no more put of their fiercenes and cruel countenances, then do the Lions of Lybia when they perceiue themselves to bee bound in chaynes. There is no man able to behold them, but he shall feele his bowels grate with a certayne horror, nature hath endued them with so terrible menacing and cruell aspect. This coniecture I make of my selfe, & others which oftentimes went with me to see them at Methymna Campi: but nowe to returne to the voyage. Proceeding thus further and further, more then fife hundred myles, first towarde the West Southwest, then towarde the Southwest, and at the length towarde the West Northwest, they entred into a maine large sea, hauing in it innumerable llandes, maruelously differing one from another for some of them were very fruitfull, and full of hearbes and trees, other some, very drie, barren and rough, with hie rockye mountaines of stone, whereof some were of bright blew, or asurine colour, and other glistering white: wherefore they supposed them, by good reason, to be the mynes of mettalles & precious stone: but the roughnesse of the sea, and multitude of llandes standing so thicke togeather, hindered them so, that they could cast no anker, least the bigger vesselles should runne vpon the rockes: therefore they deferred the searching of these llandes vntill another time: they were so many, and stooode so thicke, that they coulde not number them, yet the smaller vesselles which drewe no great deapth, entred among them, and numbred fourtie and sixe llandes, but the bigger vessels kept aloofe in the mayne sea, for feare of the rockes. They call the sea where this multitude of llandes are situate, Archipelagus. From this tracte proceeding forward, in the midde way there lyeth an lland which the inhabitants call Burichina, or Buchena: but they named it Insula. S. Iohannis. Diuers of them whome we hadde deliuered from the Canibales, sayde that they were borne in this lland, affirming it to be very populous and fruitfull, hauing also many faire woodes and hauens. There is deadly hatred and continuall battaile betweene them and the Canibales. They haue no boates to passe from their own coastes to the Canibales: but if it bee their chance to overcome them when they

The llandes of Mons Serratus.

Hunting for men.

Sancta Maria Rotunda. Sanctus Martinus.

Sancta Maria Antiqua.

Insula crucis, an lland of the Canibales.

The Canibales are expert Archers.

Arrowes infected with venime.

A Conflict with the Canibales.

The fiercenes and terrible countenance of the Canibales.

Methymna Campi.

Innumerable llandes.

The Mynes of mettals & precious stones.

The sea called Archipelagus.

Insula. S. Iohannis or Buchena.

they make incursion into their countrey to seeke their pray (as it sometime happeneth, the fortune of warre being vncertaine) they serue them like sause, requiring death for death. For one of them mangleth another in pieces, and rost them, and eate them euen before their eyes. They taryed not in this llande: Yet in the West angle thereof, a few of them went a lande for fresh water, and found a great and high house after the manner of their building, hauing. xii. other of their vulgare cotages placed about the same, but were all left desolate, whether it were that they resorted to the mountains by reason of the heate which was that time of the yeere, and to returne to the plaine when the ayre waxeth colder, or else for feare of the Canibales which make incursion into the llande at certaine seasons. In all this llande is onely one king. The South side hereof extendeth about two hundred myles. Shortly after, they came to the llande of Hispaniola, beeing distant from the first llande of the Canibales, five hundred leagues. Here they found all things out of order, and their fellows slaine which they left here at their first voyage. In the beginning of Hispaniola (hauing in it many regions and kingdomes as wee haue sayde) is the region of Xamana, whose king is named Guaccanarillus. This Guaccanarillus ioyned friendship with our men at the first voyage, and made a league with them: but in the absence of the Admirall, he rebelled, and was the cause of our mens destructiō, although he dissimuled the same, and pretended friendship at the Admiralls returne. As our men sayled on yet a little further they espied a long Canoa with many ores, in which was the brother of Guaccanarillus, with onely one man waiting on him. He brought with him two images of golde, which hee gaue the Admirall in the name of his brother, and tolde a tale in his language as concerning the death of our men, as they proued afterwarde, but at this time hadde no regarde to his communication for lacke of interpreters, which were eyther all dead, or escaped and stolne away when they drew neare to the llands. But of the ten, seuen dyed by chaunge of ayre and dyet. The inhabitantes of these llandes haue beene ever so vsed to liue at libertie, in play and pastime, that they canne hardly away with the yoke of seritude, which they attempted to shake off by all meanes they may. And surely if they had receiued our religion I woulde thinke their life most happie of all menne, if they might therewith enioy their auncient libertie. A fewe things content them, hauing no delight in such superfluities, for the which in other places menne take infinite paynes, and commit manie vnlawfull actes, and yet are neuer satisfied, whereas manie haue too much, and none enough. But among these simple soules, a fewe clothes serue the naked: weightes and measures are not needfull to such as cannot skill of craft and deceite, and haue not the vse of pestiferous money, the seed of innumerable mischeiues: so that if we shall not bee ashamed to confesse the trueth, they seeme to liue in that golden worlde of the which olde writers speake so much, wherein menne liued simply and innocently without enforcement of lawes, without quarrelling, iudges, and libelles, content onely to satisfie nature, without further vexation for knowledge of things to come. Yet these naked people also are tormeted with ambition, for the desire they haue to enlarge their dominions: by reaso wherof, they keep war and destroy one another, from the which plague I suppose the golden world was not free. For euen then also Cede non cedam, that is, giue place, and I will not giue place, had entred among men. But nowe to returne to the matter from which wee haue digressed. The Admirall desirous to know further of the death of his men, sent for Guaccanarillus to come to him to his ship, dissimuling that he knew any thing of the matter, after that he came aboard ship, saluting the Admirall and his company, giuing also certaine golde to the captaines and officers, turned him to the women captiues, which not long before our men had deliuered from the Canibales, and earnestly beholding one of them whom our men called Katherine, he spake gently vnto her. And thus when hee had scene and marueled at the horses, and at other things as were in the shippe, vnknewne to them, and had with a good grace and merily asked leaue of the Admirall, he departed. Yet some there were which counsellid the Admirall to keepe him still, that if they might by any meanes prooue that he was consenting to the death of our men, he might be punysshed accordingly. But the Admirall considering that it was yet no time to incense the inhabitantes mindes to wrath, dismissed him.

Death for death.

The mountains are colder than the playnes.

From Dominica to Hispaniola are hundred leagues.

The Spaniards left in the lland are slaine.

King Guaccanarillus rebelleth. Two Images of golde.

Libertie and plensise.

A happie kind of life. Superfluite.

Many haue too much, & none enough.

The golden worlde.

Naked men troubled with ambition.

Giue place.

The Admirall sendeth for the king.

No houses in the llandes.

The first

him. Th
owne na
this Kath
thereto e
dangerou
to the kin
virgins w
backe, th
armes, sv
rough: f
coniectur
the shore
with the c
sengers b
familie an
was conse
three hun
to make c
vesselles
certaine c
the mouth
therefore
bending,
had, or to
mouth of
together c
the winde
riuer, the
and other
riuers of
twene bo
had lyen
ing count
and arrow
who appr
were Tai
signes of
certaine h
of neare
power, a
(being m
about wit
with recd
our men
that regic
supposed
fore a br
rall, to m
Centuria
Hoiedus
towards
one of t
and the

peneth, the
for death
even before
we of them
ner of their
were all left
heate which
lder, or else
ons. In all
dredh myles,
rst llande of
r, and their
of Hispaniola
of Xamana,
th our men
Admirall, he
e same, and
little further
arillus, with
ich hee gaue
s concerning
regarde to his
ed and stolne
punge of ayre
at libertie, in
hich they at
d our religion
n enjoy their
superfluities,
lawfull actes.
But among
e not needfull
s money, the
sse the trueth,
much, wherein
elling, iudges,
knowledge of
for the desire
stroy one ano-
uen then also
ong men. But
al desirous to
n to his ship,
ship, saluting
and officers
ered from the
rine, he spoke
ses, and such
od grace and
ich counsellor
at he was com-
the Admirall
rath, dismissed
him.

him. The next day following, the kinges brother resorting to the shippes, eyther in his owne name or in his brothers, seduced the women. For on the next night about midnight, this Katherine, aswell to recouer her owne libertie, as also her fellowes, being suborned thereto either by the king or his brothers promises, attempted a much more difficult and dangerous aduerture then did Cloelia of Rome, which beeing in hostage with other maydes to the king Porcena, deceiued her keepers, and rode ouer the riuier Tiber, with the other virgins which were pledges with her. For whereas they swamme ouer the riuier on horse-backe, this Katherine with seuen other women, trusting onely to the strength of their owne armes, swam aboue three long myles, and that also at such time as the sea was somewhat rough: for euen so farre off from the shore lay the shippes at rode, as nigh as they coule coniecture. But our men following them with the shipboates, by the same light scene on the shore, wherby the women were ledde, tooke three of them, supposing that Katherine with the other foure, went to Guaccanarillus: for in the spring of the morning, certaine messengers being sent vnto him by the Admirall, had intelligence that hee was fled with all his familie and stuffe, and the women also, which thing ministred further suspition that hee was consenting to the death of our men. Wherefore the Admirall sent foorth an armie of three hundred men, ouer the which he appointed one Melchior to be capitaine, willing him to make diligent search to finde out Guaccanarillus. Melchior therefore with the smallest vessels entering into the countrey by the riuers, and scouring the shores, chaunced into certaine crooked goulfes, defended with fiae litle & steepe hills, supposing that it hadde been the mouth of some great riuier. He founde here also a very commodious and safe hauen, & therefore named it Portus Regalis. They say that the entrance of this is so crooked and bending, that after the ships are once within the same, whether they turne them to the left had, or to the right they can not perceiue where they came in, vntill they returne to the mouth of the riuier, although it be there so broad that three of the biggest vessels may sayle together on a front. The sharpe and high hilles on the one side and on the other, so brake the winde, that they were vncertaine how to rule their sayles. In the middle gulle of the riuier, there is a promontorie or point of the land with a pleasant groue, full of Popiniayes and other birdes, which breede therein & sing very sweetly: They perceiued also that two riuers of no smal largenesse fell into the hauen. While they thus searched the lande betweene both, Melchior espied a high house a farre off, where supposing that Guaccanarillus had lyen hid, hee made towarde it: and as he was going, there met him a man with a frowning countenance, and a grymme looke with a hundred men following him, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and sharpe staues like iauclynnes, made harde at the endes with fire, who approaching towardes our men, spake out aloud with a terrible voyce, saying that they were Taini (that is) noble men, and not Canibales: but when our men had giuen them signes of peace, they left both their weapons and fiercenesse. Thus giuing each of them certaine hawkes bels, they tooke it for so great a rewarde, that they desired to enter bonds of neare friendship with vs, and feared not immediatly to submit themselues vnder our power, and resorted to our shippes with their presentes. They that measured the house (being made in round forme) found it to be from side to side xxxii. great paces, compassed about with xxx. other vulgare houses, hauing in them many beames crosse ouer, & couered with reedes of sundry colours, wretched & as it were weaued with marueilous art. When our men asked some of them where they might find Guaccanarillus? They answered, that that region was none of his, but their kinges, being there present: Yet they sayde they supposed that Guaccanarillus was gone from the playne to the mountaines. Making therefore a brotherly league with this Cacicus (that is to say a king) they returned to the Admirall, to make relation what they hadde scene and heard: whereupon he sent forth diuers other Centurians with their hundredes, to search the countrey yet further: among which were Hoiedus and Gorualnus, noble young gentlemen, and of great courage. And as they went towarde the mountaines to seeke Guaccanarillus, diuiding the mountaines betweene them, one of them found on the one side thereof, foure riuers falling from the same mountaynes, and the other founde three on the other side. In the sands of all these riuers is founde great plentie

A time for all things.

A desperate aduerture of a woman.
Cloelia of Rome.

Guaccanarillus sought.
Melchior.

Popiniayes and birdes.

Taini.

Hawkes bels.

A large house.

Reedes of sundry colours.

Cacicus.

Hoiedus and Gorualnus.

Gold in riuers falling from mountaines.

The manner of
gathering golde.
Graines of golde.

A masse of rude
golde weighing
nine ounces.

Caunabo. g
of the house of
golde.
Holsome water,
and plenty of
fish.
The day and
night of equall
length in De-
cember.
Birds breede
in December.
The eleuation
of the pole.
The starres are
called guardes
of the pole.

The Equinoctial
line.

A chapel and
the house.

M. J. Antea Sy-
rophenicians.

The Cinanome
tree.

X. Isidore, et
al.

plentie of golde, which the inhabitantes of the same llande which were with vs, gathered in this manner: making holes in the sande with their handes a Cubite deepe, and taking vp sande with their left handes from the bottome of the same, they picked out graines of golde with their right handes without any more art or cunning, and so deliuered it to our men, who affirme that many of them thus gathered, were as bigge as tares or fitches. And I my selfe sawe a masse of rude golde (that is to say, such as was neuer moulted) like vnto such stones as are founde in the bottomes of riuers, weighing nine ounces, which Hoieda himselfe founde. Being contented with these signes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie him hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punishment, that they should meddle no further then their commission: which was onely, to search the places with their signes. For the fame went that there was a certaine king of the mountaines from whence those riuers had their fall, whom they cal Cacicus Caunaboa, that is, the Lord of the house of gold, for they call a house Boa, golde, Cauni, and a king or Lorde Cacicus, as we haue sayde before. They affirme that there can no where bee found better fish, nor of more pleasant tast, or more holsome then in these riuers: also the waters of the same to bee most holsome to drinke. Melchior himselfe tolde me, that in the moneth of December, the daies and nights be of equall length among the Canibales: but the sphere or circles of the heauen agreeeth not thereunto, albeit that in the same moneth, some birdes make their nestes, and some haue already hatched their egges by reason of the heate, being rather continuall then extreame. He tolde me also when I questioned with him as concerning the eleuation of the pole from the horizontal line, that all the starres called Plaustrum or Charles wayne, are hid vnder the North pole to the Canibales. And surely there returned none from thence at this voyage, to whom there is more credit to be giuen, than to this man. But if he had bin skilfull in Astronomie, he shoulde haue sayde that the day was almost equal with the night: For in no place towards the stay of the sun (called Solsticium) can the night be equall with the day. And as for them, they neuer came vnder the Equinoctial, forasmuch as they hadde euer the North pole their guide, and euer eleuate in sight about the Horizontal. Thus haue I briefly written vnto your honour, as much as I thought sufficient at this time, and shall shortly hereafter (by Gods fauour) write vnto you more largely of such matters as shall bee daily better knowne. For the Admirall himselfe (whom I vse familiarly as my verie friende) hath promised me by his letters, that he will giue me knowledge of all such things as shall chance. He hath now chosen a strong place where he may build a city, neare vnto a comodious haue, and hath already builded many houses, & a chapel, in the which (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyde of all religion) God is dayly serued with xiii. priestes, according to the manner of our churches. When the time nowe approached that hee promised to sende to the King and Queene, and hauing prosperous winde for that purpose, sent backe the xii. Carauelles, wherof we made mention before: which was no small hinderance and grieve vnto him, especially considering the death of his men whom hee left in the llande at the first voyage, whereby we are yet ignorant of many places and other secretes, wherof wee might otherwise haue had further knowledge: but as time shall reueale them againe, so will I aduertise you of the same. And that you may the better knowe by conference hadde with the Apothecaries and marchaunt strangers Sirophenicians, what this Regions beare, & how hot their ground is, I haue sent you all kindes of graynes, with the barke and inner partes of that tree which they suppose to be the Cinanome tree. And if it bee your pleasure to tast either of the graines, or of the small seedes, the which you should perceiue to haue fallen from these graynes, or of the wood it selfe, touch them first softly, mouing them to your lippes, for although they be not hurtfull, yet for their excesse of heate, they are sharpe, and bite the tongue if they remaine any while thereon: but if the tongue be blistered by tasting of them, the same is taken away by drinking of water. Of the corne also wherof they make their bread, this bringer shall deliuer some graines to your Lordship, both white and blacke, and therewith also a trunke of the tree of Aloes, the which if you cut in peeces, you shall feele a sweete sauour to proceede from the same. Thus fare you hartily well, from the Court of Methymna Campi, the third day before the Calendes of May. Anno Dom. 1491.

The

The thirde booke of the first Decade, to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie, and Ne-
uiewe to the King.

YOU desire that foolish Phaeton should againe rule the chariots of the Sunne, and con-
tende to drawe sweete licours out of the harde flint, whereas you require mee to discribe
vnto you the newe world, found in the West by the good fortune and gouernance of the
Catholique Princes Ferdinandus and Elizabeth, your Vncle and Aunte, shewing me also the
letters of king Frederike your Vncle, written to me in that behalfe: But sith you haue layde
this burden on my backe, in whose power it is to commaunde mee to take vppon mee more
then I am well able, yee both shall receiue this precious stone rudely closed in lead after my
manner of workemanship. Wherefore, when you shall perceiue the learned sort friendly,
the malicious eniously, and the backbiters furiously, to bend their slaunderous dartes against
our faire Nymphes of the Ocean, you shall freely protest in howe short time, and in the mid-
dest of what troubles and calamities you haue enforced me to write of the same. Thus fare
you well, from Granata the ninth day before the Calendes of May.

We haue declared in the booke here before, how the Admiral passed by the coasts of the
Canibals, to the Iland of Hispaniola with his whole nauie: But nowe wee entende further to
shewe what hee found as concerning the nature of this Ilande, after that he had better
searched the secretes of the same: Likewise of the Iland of Cuba neare vnto it, which he
supposed to be the firme lande. Hispaniola therefore (which hee affirmeth to bee Ophir, Ophir, whither
Solomon's ships
sayled for Golde.
whereof wee reade in the thirde booke of the kinges) is of latitude fīue South degrees,
hauing the North pole eleuate on the North side xxvii. degrees, and on the South side (as
they say) xxii. degrees, it reacheth in length from East to West, seuen hundred and foure-
score myles, it is distant from the Ilands of Gades (called Cales) xlix. degrees, and more,
as some say: the fourme of the Ilande resembleth the leafe of a Chesnutte tree. Vpon a
high hill on the North side of the Ilande, hee builded a cittie, because this place was most
apt for that purpose, by reason of a myne of stones which was neare vnto the same, seruing
well both to builde with, and also to make Lyme: at the bottome of this hill, is there a great
playne of threescore myles in length, and in breadth somewhere xii. somewhere xx. myles
where it is broadest, & sixe myles where it is narrowest: through this playne runne diuers
fayre riuers of wholesome waters, but the greatest of them, which is nauigable, falleth into
the haven of the citie for the space of halfe a furlong: how fertile and fruitful this valley is,
you shall vnderstande by these things whiche followe. On the shore of this riuer, they haue
limited and enclosed certaine ground, to make gardens and orchyardes, in the which all
kinde of bigger hearbes, as radishe, letuse, coleworts, borage, & such other, waxe ripe
within xvi. daies after the seed is sowed, likewise Melones, Gourdes, Cucumers, and such
other, within the space of xxxvi. dayes, these garden hearbes they haue fresh and greene
all the whole yeere. Also the roots of the canes or reedes of the licour whereof sugar is
made, growe a cubite high within the space of xv. dayes, but the licour is not yet hardened.
The like they affirme of plantes or shroudes of young vines, and that they haue the seconde
yeere gathered ripe and sweete grapes of the same: but by reason of to much rankenesse
they beare but fewe clusters. Furthermore, a man of the countrey sowed a little Wheate
about the Calendes of Februarie, and brought with him to the citie an handfull of the ripe
cares of the same the third day before the Calends of Aprill, which was that yeere the vigile
of the Resurrection of our Lord. Also, all kindes of pulse, as beanes, peason, fitches, tares,
& such other, are ripe twice in the yeere, as all they which come from thence affirme with
one voyce, yet the ground is not vniuersally apt to beare wheate. In the meane time while
these things were doing, the Admirall sent out a companie of xxx. men to search the Region
of Cipanga, otherwise called Cibana. This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes, and in
the middle backe of the whole Ilande is great plentie of Golde. When they that went to
search the Region were returned, they reported maruelous things as touching the great riches
of this Region. From these mountaines, descend foure great riuers, which by the maruelous
industry of nature, diuideth the whole Iland into foure partes, in maner equal, ouerspredding
& watering

A token of mar-
uelous fruitfulness.

Hearbs greene
all the whole
yeere.
Sugar reedes,
Plantes and
vines.

Corn & graine
ripe twice a
yeere.

The region of
Cipanga, or Ci-
bana.
Golde.

& watering the whole Iland with their branches. Of these foure riuers, the one reacheth toward the East, this the inhabitantes call Iunna: another toward the West, and is called Attibunicus: the thirde toward the North, named Iachem, the last reacheth into the South, and is called Naiba. The day before the Ides of March, the Admirall himselfe, with all his horsemen, and foure hundred footemen, marched directly toward the Southside of the golden Region. Thus passing ouer the riuier, the playne, and the mountaine which enuironed the other side of the playne, hee chaunced vpon another vale, with a riuier much bigger then the first, and many other meane riuers running through. When he had also conueighed his army ouer the riuier, and passed the seconde vale, which was in no part inferior to the first, he made away through the thirde mountaine where was no passage before, and descended into another vale, which was nowe the beginning of Cibana. Through this also runne many floudes and riuers out of euery hill, and in the sandes of them all is founde great plentie of golde. And when hee hadde nowe entred threescore and twelue myles into the golden Region from the cittie, he intended to builde a fortresse vpon the toppe of a hill, standing by the shore of a certaine great riuier, that hee might the better and more safely search the secretes of the inner partes of the Region: this hee called the fortresse of saint Thomas, the which in the meane time, while hee was building, the inhabitantes being desirous of hawkes belles, and other of our thinges, resorted daily thither, to whom the Admirall declared, that if they would bring golde, they should haue whatsoever they woulde aske. Foorthwith turning their backes, and turning to the shore of the next riuier, they returned in a short time, bringing with them their handes full of golde. Amongst all other, there came an olde man, bringing with him two pibble stones of golde, weighing an ounce, desiring them to giue him a bell for the same: who when hee sawe our men marueyle at the bignes thereof, he made signes that they were but small and of no value in respect of some that he had seene, and taking in his hande foure stones, the least whereof was as bigge as a Walnut, and the biggest as bigge as an Orange, hee sayd that there was founde peeces of gold so bigge in his countrey, being but halfe a dayes iourney from thence, and that they had no regarde to the gathering thereof, whereby we perceiued that they passe not much for golde, inasmuch as it is golde only, but so farre esteeme it, as the hande of the Artificer hath fashioned it in any comely fourme. For who doth greatly esteeme rough marble, or vnwrought luorie? but if they be wrought with the cunning hande of Phidias or Praxiteles, and shaped to the similitude of the faire Nymphes or Fairies of the sea (called Nereides) or the Fayries of the woods (called Hamadriades) they shall neuer lacke buyers. Beside this old man, there came also diuers other, bringing with them pybble stones of golde, weighing x. or xii. drammes, & feared not to confesse, that in the place where they gathered that golde, there were found sometime stones of golde as bigge as the head of a child. When he had taried here a few dayes, he sent one Luxanus, a noble yōg gentleman, with a few armed men, to search all the partes of this region: who at his returne, reported that the inhabitantes shewed him greater thinges then we haue spoken of herebefore, but he did openly declare nothing thereof, which they thought was done by the Admirals commandement. They haue woods full of certaine spices, but not such as wee commonly vse: these they gather euen as they doe gold, that is, as much as will serue for their purpose, euery man for himselfe, to exchange the same with the inhabitantes of other countreys adioyning to them, for such thinges as they lacke, as dyshes, potte., stooles, and such other necessities. As Luxanus returned to the Admirall (which was about the Ides of March) hee founde in the woodes certaine wilde vines, ripe, and of pleasant tast, but the inhabitantes passe not on them. This region, though it be full of stones & rockes (and is therefore called Cibana, which is as much to say as a stone) yet it is well replenished with trees and pastures, yea they constantly affirme, that if the grasse of these mountaines be cutte, it groweth againe within the space of foure daies higher then wheate. And forasmuch as many shoures of raine doe fall in this region, whereof the ryuers and floudes haue their encrease, in euery of the which golde is founde mixt with sande in all places, they iudge that the golde is driuen from the mountaines, by the vehement course of the streames which fall from the same, and

The golden region of Cibana.

The vale of Cibana.

Golde for hawkes belles.

Graynes and pibble stones of golde.

They passe not for golde, in that it is golde onely but, &c.

Stones of gold as big as the head of a child.

Spices.

Wilde vines of pleasant tast.

Fruitful mountaynes.

G^d is in the end of riuers falling from the mountaines.

The first

runne in
inhabitan
vp and
full of
Winter.
repared
with his
Cuba or
onely l
Kinges
the new
for the
lands: h
granted
should b
out the
warde, v
thinke to
Portugal
direct th
and the s
Southwar
he made
named th
for he su
and of th
ginning
same: w
limittes
India was
of the be
llande of
named S
from hen
much the
On the S
he affirm
taine, wh
of the ll
of the sa
fruitful a
the inhab
warlike
him, and
friendsh
prospero
so far by
Cherson
for he pl
were vn
touched,
between
onesus.

runne into the riuers. The people of this region are giuen to idlenesse and play, for such as inhabite the mountaines, sit quaking for colde in the Winter season, and had rather to wander vp and downe idly, then take the paynes to make them apparell, whereas they haue woodes full of Gossampine cotton: but such as dwell in the vallies or playnes feeles no colde in Winter. When the Admirall hadde thus searched the beginning of the region of Cibana, he repared to Isabella (for so hee named the citie) where, leauing the gouernance of the Ilande with his Deputies, hee prepared himselfe to search further the limites of the Ilande of Cuba or Iohanna, which hee yet doubted to bee the firme lande, and distant from Hispaniola onely lxx. myles. This did hee with more speedie expedition, calling to remembrance the Kinges commaundement, who willed him first with all celeritie, to ouerrunne the coastes of the new Ilands, least any other Prince should in the meane time attempt to inuade the same, for the King of Portugale affirmed that it pertained only to him to discouer these vnknowne lands: but the bishop of Rome, Alexander the sixt, to auoyde the cause of this dissention, granted to the king of Spaine by the authoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other Prince should bee so bold, as to make any voyages to any of these vnknowne Regions, liing without the precinct of a direct lyne drawn from the North to the South a hundred leagues Westwarde, without the paralels of the Ilandes called Capud Virde, or Cabouerde, which wee thinke to be those which in old tyme were called Hesperides: these pertaine to the King of Portugale, and from these his Pylotes, which doe yeerely search newe coastes and regions, direct their course to the East, sayling euer towarde the left hande by the backe of Aphrike, and the seas of the Ethiopians: neither to this day had the Portugales at any time sayled Southwarde or Westwarde from the Ilandes of Cabouerde. Preparing therefore three shippes, he made hast towarde the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba, whither he came in short space, and named the point thereof, where hee first arriued, Alpha and O, that is, the first and the last: for he supposed that there had bene the ende of our East, because the sunne falleth there, and of the West, because it riseth there. For it is apparant, that Westwarde, it is the beginning of India beyonde the riuier of Ganges, and Eastwarde, the furthest ende of the same: which thing is not contrary to reason, forasmuch as the Cosmographers haue left the limites of India beyond Ganges vndermined, whereas also some were of opinion, that India was not farre from the coastes of Spaine, as we haue said before. Within the prospect of the beginning of Cuba, hee found a commodious hauen in the extreme angle of the Ilande of Hispaniola, for in this parte the Ilande receiueth a great goulfe: this hauen hee named Saint Nicolas porte, being scarcely twentie leagues from Cuba. As hee departed from hence, and sayled Westwarde by the Southside of Cuba, the further that he went, so much the more the sea seemed to be extended in breadth, and to bende towarde the South. On the South side of Cuba, hee founde an Ilande which the inhabitantes call Iamaica, this he affirmeth to be longer & broder then the Iland of Scicile, hauing in it onely one mountaine, which on euery part beginning from the sea, ryseth by litle and litle into the midst of the Ilande, and that so playnely without roughnesse, that such as goe vppe to the toppe of the same, can scarcely perceiue that they ascende: This Ilande hee affirmeth to be very fruitful and full of people, aswell in the inner partes of the same, as by the shore, and that the inhabitants are of quicker witte then the other Ilandes, and more expert Artificers, and warlike men: For in many places where hee would haue arriued, they came armed against him, and forbode him with threatening wordes: but being ouercome, they made a league of friendship with him. Thus departing from La Maica, he sayled toward the West, with a prosperous winde, for the space of threescore and tenne daies thinking that he had passed so far by the compasse of the earth being vnderneath vs, that he had bin neere vnto Aurea Chersonesus (now called Malaccha) in our East India, beyond the beeginning of Persides: for he plainly beleueed that he had left only two of the twelue houres of the sunne, which were vnknown to vs, for the olde writers haue left halfe the course of the sunne vntouched, whereas they haue but only discussed that superficial parte of the earth which lyeth betwene the Ilandes of Gades, and the riuier of Ganges, or at the vttermost, to Aurea Chersonesus. In this Nauigation, he chaunced on manie furious seas, running with a fall as it

Libertie and idleness. The mountaines are colde.

The Iland of Cuba.

Least any other prince, &c.

Dissention betweene the Portugales and Spaniards.

The Ilandes of Cabouerde or Hesperides.

The Portugales voyages.

The end of the East and West.

Note. India not farre from Spaine.

Saint Nicholas porte.

The Iland of Iamaica.

Quicke witted people.

The compassing of the earth.

Aurea Chersonesus, or Malaccha.

A secret of Astronomie.

The riuier of Ganges.

Dangerous
straights by
reason of many
Ilandes.

A large haven.

Rotted fish &
serpents of viii
foote long.

Crocodiles of
Egypt.

The kinges
fishers.

Serpents esteem-
ed for delicate
meate.

Blossomes &
fruits both at
one time.

had beene the streames of floudes, also many whirle-pooles, and shelves, with many other dangers, and straights, by reason of the multitude of Ilandes which lay on euery side. But not regarding all these perilles, hee determined to proceed, vntil he had certaine knowledge whether Cuba were an Ilande, or firme lande. Thus he sayled forward, coasting euer by the shore toward the West for the space of CC.xxii. leagues, that is, about a thousande and three hundred myles, and gaue names to seuen hundred Ilandes by the way, leauing also on the left hande (as he feared not to report) three thousand here and there. But let vs nowe returne to such thinges as hee founde woorthy to be noted in this Nauigation. Sayling therefore by the side of Cuba, and searching the nature of the places, he espyed not farre from Alpha and O a large haven, of capacity to harborowe many shippes, whose entrance is bending, beeing inclosed on both sides with capes or poyntes which receive the water: this haven is large within, and of exceeding depth. Sayling by the shore of this porte, hee sawe not farre from the same, two cottages, couered with reedes, and in many places fire kindled. Here he sent certaine armed men out of the shippes to the cottages, where they found neither man nor woman, but rostmeeat enough, for they found certaine spittes of woode lying at the fire, hauing fishe on them about an hundred pounce weight, and two serpentes of eyght foote long a peece whereat marueiling, and looking about if they could espie anie of the inhabitantes, and that none appeared in sight (for they fledde all to the mountaines at the comming of our men) they fell to their meate, and to the fish taken with other mens trauayle, but they abstained from the serpents, which they asseme to differ nothing from the Crocodiles of Egypt, but only in bignes: for (as Plinie sayth) Crocodiles haue sometimes bin found of xviij. cubits long, but of these the biggest were but of eight foote. Thus beeing wel refreshed, they entred into the next wood where they found many of the same kinde of serpentes, hanging vpon boughes of trees, of the which, some had their mouthes tyed with stringes, and some their teeth taken out. And as they searched the places neere vnto the haven, they sawe about lxx. men in the top of a high rocke, which fled as soone as they had espied our menne: who by signes and tokens of peace calling them againe, there was one which came neere them, and stood on the toppe of a rocke, seeming as though he were yet fearefull: but the Admirall sent one Didacus to him, a man of the same countrey, whom he had at his first voyage taken in the Ilande of Guanahani, being neere vnto Cuba, willing him to come neere, and not to be afraide. When he hearde Didacus speake to him in his owne tongue, he came boldly to him, and shortly after resorted to his companie, perswading them to come without all feare. After this message was done, there descended from the rockes to the shippes, about threescore and ten of the inhabitants, profering friendship and gentlesse to our men: which the Admirall accepted thankfully, and gaue them diuers rewards, & that the rather, for that he had intelligence by Didacus the interpreter, that they were the kinges fishers, sent of their Lorde to take fish against a sole-mne feast which hee prepared for another king. And whereas the Admiralles men had eaten the fish which they left at the fire, they were the gladder thereof, because they had left the serpentes: for there is nothing among their delicate dishes, that they esteeme so much as these serpentes, in so much that it is more lawfull for common people to eate of them, then Peacokes or Pheasantes among vs: as for the fishes, they doubted not to take as many more the same night. Being asked why they first roasted the fish which they intended to beare to the King? they answered, that they might be the fresher and vncorrupted. Thus ioyning handes for a token of further friendship, euery man resorted to his owne. The Admirall went forward as he had appoynted, following the falling of the sunne from the beginning of Cuba, called Alpha and O: the shores or sea bankes euen vnto this haven, albeit they bee full of trees, yet are they rough with mountaines: of these trees, some were full of blossomes and fiores, and other laden with fruites. Beyond the haven, the lande is more fertile and populous, whose inhabitantes are more gentle, and more desirous of our thinges: for as soone as they had espied our shippes, they flocked all to the shore, bringing with them such breade as they are accustomed to eate, and gourdes full of water, offering them vnto our men, and further, desiring them to come alande. In all these Ilandes is a certaine kinde of trees as bigge as

Elmes,

The first

Elmes, whi
and to fete
and the h
top castle
gether, be
the shore
that no m
espying a
slee at the
boates: bu
a newe kin
so doe they
vnknown
parte of th
by the side
may lie clo
sight of the
abundance
her selfe lo
once fasten
drawing the
loose the st
the brimme
letteth goe
water, there
holde fast t
done, they
within the
use to rew
canum, bu
this mean
these fishes
again with
that lande,
Admirall te
(that is) th
goe to him
begunne, r
our men l
the West,
wel inhab
mountaine
wilde soule
from heau
informed h
being on t
comming o
such as cou
plenty of
into so nar
so shalow
straights, f
though me

any other
de. But
knowledge
er by the
and three
o on the
nowe re-
ng there-
arre from
e is bend-
his haue
sawe not
kindled.
ound nei-
de lying
pentes of
e anie of
ntaines at
her mens
from the
ometimes
Thus be-
me kinde
thes tyed
cere vnto
soone as
me, there
though he
country,
into Cuba,
ke to him
nie, per-
aded from
friendship
em diuers
that they
which hee
hich they
for there
tes, in so
Phesantes
t. Being
y answer-
token of
as he had
ded Alpha
s, yet are
res, and
us, whose
y had es-
they are
ther, de-
bigge as
Elmes,

Elmes, which beare gourdes in the steede of fruites, these they vse onely for drinking pottes, and to fetch water in, but not for meate, for the inner substance of them is sower then gall, and the barke as harde as any shell. At the Ides of May, the watchmen looking out of the top castle of the shippe, towards the South, sawe a multitude of Ilandes standing thicke together, being all well replenished with trees, grasse, and hearbes, and well inhabited: in the shore of the continent, hee chaunced into a navigable riuer, whose water was so hot, that no man might endure to abide his hand therein any time. The day following, espying a farre of a Canoa of fishermen of the inhabitantes, fearing least they shoulde flee at the sight of our men, he commanded certaine to assaile them priuily with the ship-boates: but they fearing nothing, taryed the coming of our men. Nowe shall you heare a newe kinde of fishing. Like as wee with Greyhoundes doe hunt Hares in the playne fieldes, so doo they, as it were with a hunting fische, take other fishes: this fish was of shape or fourme vnknown to vs, but the body thereof not much vnlike a great yeele, hauing on the hinder parte of the head a very tough skinne, like vnto a great bagge or purse: this fish is tyed by the side of the boate with a corde, let downe so farre into the water that the fish may lie close hid by the keele or bottome of the same, for shee may in no case abide the sight of the ayre. Thus when they espie any great fish, Tortoyse (whereof there is great abundance, bigger then great targettes) they let the corde at length, but when she feeleth her selfe loosed, she inuadeth the fish or Tortoyse as swiftly as an arrowe, and where she hath once fastened her hold, she casteth the purse of skinne, whereof we spake before, and by drawing the same together, so graspeleth her pray, that no mans strength is sufficient to vnloose the same, except by little and litle drawing the lynne, shee bee lifted somewhat aboue the brimme of the water, for then, as soone as she seeth the brightnesse of the ayre, shee letteth goe her holde. The pray therefore beeing nowe drawen neere to the brimme of the water, there leapeth sodenly out of the boate into the sea, so many fishers as may suffice to holde fast the pray, vntill the rest of the company haue taken it into the boate. Which thing done, they loose so much of the corde, that the hunting fish may againe returne to her place within the water, whereby another corde, they let downe to her a peece of the pray, as we vse to rewarde greyhoundes after they haue killed their game. This fish, they cal Guai-canum, but our men call it Reuersum. They gaue our men foure Tortoysses taken by this meanes, and those of such biggnesse, that they almost filled their fishing boate: for these fishes are esteemed among them for delicate meate. Our men recompenced them againe with other rewarde, and so let them depart. Being asked of the compasse of that lande, they answered that it had no ende Westwarde. Most instantly they desired the Admirall to come a lande, or in his name to send one with them to salute their Cazicus, (that is) their king, affirming that hee woulde giue our men many presentes, if they would goe to him. But the Admirall, least he should be hindered of the voyage which he had begunne, refused to goe with them. Then they desired to knowe his name, and tolde our men likewise the name of their king. Thus sayling on yet further euer towards the West, within fewe dayes he came neere vnto a certaine exceeding high mountaine, wel inhabited by reason of the great fertilitie of the same. The inhabitantes of this mountaine, brought to our ship, bread, gossampine cotton, conies, & sundry kindes of wilde foule, demanding religiously of the interpretores, if this nation descended not from heauen. The king of this people, and diuers other sage men that stood by him, informed him that that land was no land. Shortly after, entering into one of the Ilandes being on the left hande of this land they found no bodie therein, for they fled all at the coming of our men: Yet founde they there foure dogges of maruelous deformed shape, & such as coulde not barke. This kind of dogges, they cate as we doe goates. Here is great plenty of geese, ducks, and hearons. Betwene these Ilandes and the continent, he entered into so narrowe streights, that hee coulde scarcely turne backe the shippes, and these also so shalow, that the keele of the ships sometime rased on the sands. The water of these streights, for the space of fourtie myles, was white and thicke, like vnto mylke, and as though meale had beene sparkled throughout all that sea. And when they hadde at the length escaped

Trees which
beare gourdes.

A multitude of
Ilander.

Hotte water.

A strange kinde
of fishing.

Abundance of
Tortoysses.

Fisher men

The fish
Guai-canum.

Humane peo-
ple.

A Mountaine
fruitfull & wel
inhabited.

Dogges of
strange shape
and dumme.

White and
thicke water.



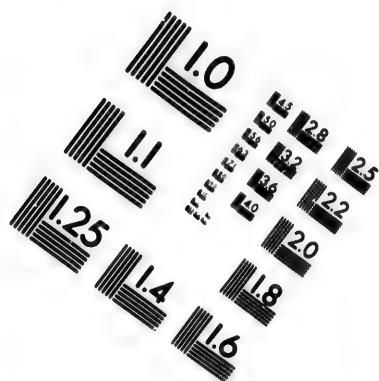
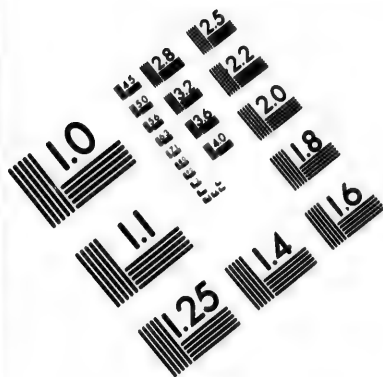
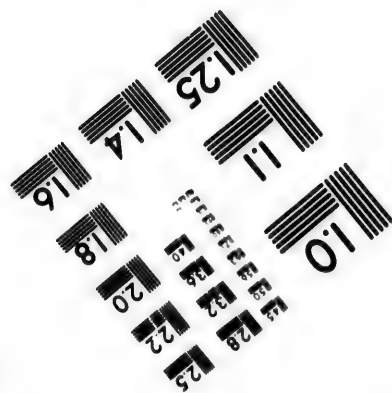
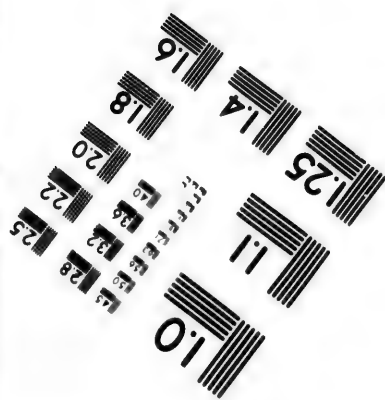
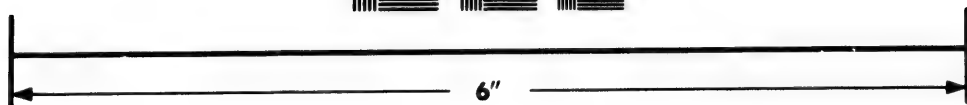
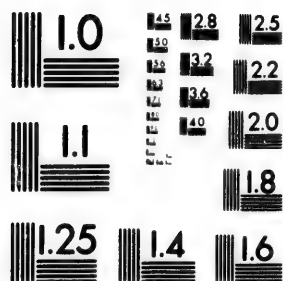


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

4.5 2.8
3.6 3.2
2.5 2.2
2.0 1.8

11 10
0.5 0.4

escaped these straights, & were now come into a maine & large sea, and hadde sayled thereon for the space of fourescore myles, they espied an other exceeding high mountaine, whether the Admirall resorted to store his shippes with fresh water and fuell. Heere among certaine woodes of Date trees, & pyne apple trees of exceeding height, hee founde two nauie springes of fresh water. In the meane time, while the woode was cutting, and the barrellles filling, one of our archers went into the woode to hunt, where he espied a certaine man with a white vesture, so like a fryer of the order of saynt Marie of Mercedis, that at the first sight he supposed it had bin the Admirals priest, which he brought with him, being a man of the same order: but two other followed him immediately out of the same woodes. Shortly after, hee sawe a far of a whole companie of men clothed in apparell, being about xxx. in number. Then turning his backe, and crying out to his fellowes, hee made hast to the shippes with all that he might driue. These apparell men, made signes and tokens to him to tary, and not to be afraid, but that not withstanding he ceased not to flee. The Admirall being aduertised hereof, and not a little reioycing that hee hadde founde a ciuile people, incontinently sent fourth armed menne, with commandement that if neede shoulde so require, they should enter fourtie myles into the llande, vtill they might finde eyther those apparell men, or other inhabitautes of that country. When they had passed ouer the wood, they came into a great plaine ful of grasse and hearbes, in which appeared no token of any pathway. Here attempting to goe through the grasse and hearbes, they were so entangled and bewrapped therein, that they were scarcely able to passe a myle, the grasse beeing there litle lower then our ripe corne: being therefore wearyed, they were enforced to returne agayne, finding no pathway. The day following he sent fourth xxv. armed men another way, commanding them to make diligent search and inquisition what maner of people inhabited the land: Whō departing, when they had found, not farre from the sea side, certaine steps of wilde beastes, of the which they suspected some to be of Lions feete, being stricken with feare, returned backe agayne. As they came, they founde a woode in the which were many natue vines, here and there creeping about high trees, with many other trees bearing aromatical fruites and spices. Of these vines they brought with them into Spayne many clusters of grapes, very ponderous, and full of licour: but of the other fruites they brought none, because they putrified by the way in the ship, & were cast into the sea. They say also that in the landes or medowes of those woodes, they sawe flockes of great Cranes, twice as bigge as ours. As hee went forward, and turned his sayles towarde certaine other mountaines, hee espied two cotages on the shore, in the which he saw onely one man, who being brought to the shippe, signified with head, fingers, and by all other signes that he coulde deuise, that the land which lay beyonde those mountaines was very full of people: and as the Admirall drew neere the shore of the same, there met him certaine Canoes, hauing in them many people of the countrey, who made signes and tokens of peace and friendship. But here Didacus the interpretour, which vnderstoode the language of the inhabitants of the beginning of Cuba, vnderstoode not them one whit, whereby they considered that in sundry prouinces of Cuba, were sundry languages. He had also intelligence, that in the llande of this region was a king of great power, and accustomed to weare apparell: hee sayde that all the tracte of this shore was drowned with water, and ful of mudde, besette with many trees, after the manner of our marishes: Yet whereas in this place they went alande for freshe water, they found many of the shel fishes in the which pearles are gathered. But that coulde not cause the Admirall to tracte the time there, entending at this voyage, only to proue how many lands & seas he coulde discouer according to the kings commandement. As they yet proceeded forwarde, they sawe here and there all the way along by the shore, a great smoake rysing, vtill they came to another mountaine fourescore myles distant, there was no rocke or hill that coulde be seene, but the same was all of a smoake. But whether the fires were made by the inhabitantes for their necessarie businesse, or (as wee are wont to sette beacons on fire when we suspect the approach of our enemies) thereby to giue warning to their neighbours to bee in a readinesse, & gather together, if perhaps our men shoulde attempt any thing against them, or otherwise as (seemeth most vnlikely) to cal them together, as to a wonder,

Woods of date trees.

Men apparell'd like whyte fryers.

Apparell'd men.

Natue vines. Trees bearing spices & sweet fruites.

Diuers languages in the llande of Cuba.

Pearles in shel fishes.

to behol
sometim
sea was
oftentim
sore bru
vitailes
the Adm
Cuba (n
towarde
mayne s
shippes:
wee spa
shore of
well won
with ther
then our
tryches.
proceede
and found
tast: For
qualitie
came tow
grauitie,
wayting
and gaue
ended, h
same wit
leaued to
I haue bi
many lay
all the p
with less
are depa
and cruel
life time
and cons
as hee ha
wordes a
ueiling a
opinion
supposin
knowled
instruct
countreie
specially
defend i
brace ve
or any o
that he v
the olde
Admiral
pose:
and muc

to beholde our shippes, they knowe yet no certainty. In this tracte, the shores bended sometime toward the South, and sometime towarde the West and West Southwest, and the sea was euery where entangled with Ilandes, by reason whereof the keeles of the shippes oftentimes rased the sandes for shalownesse of the water: So that the shippes beeing very sore bruised and appayred, the sayles, cables, and other tackelings, in maner rotten, and the vitales (especially the biskette breade) corrupted by taking water at the ryftes euill closed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe againe: This last poynte where hee touched of Cuba (not yet being known to be an Iland) he called Euangelista. Thus turning his sayles towarde other Ilandes lying not farre from the supposed continent, hee chaunced into a mayne sea, where was such a multitude of great Tortoysses, that sometime they stayed the shippes: Not long after, he entred into a goulfe of white water, like vnto that whereof wee spake before. At the length, fearing the shelves of the Ilandes, hee returned to the shore of Cuba by the same way which he came. Here a multitude of the inhabitantes, as well women as men, resorted to him with cheereful countenances, and with feare, bringing with them poppingayes, bread, water, and conies, but especially stocke doues, much bigger then ours, which he affirmeth in sauour and taste, to bee much more pleasant then our partryches. Wherefore where as in eating of them hee perceiued a certaine sauoure of spice to procede from them, he commanded the crowde to bee opened of such as were newly killed, and founde the same full of sweete spices, which hee argued to bee the cause of their strange tast: For it standeth with good reason, that the flesh of beastes, shoulde drawe the nature and qualitie of their accustomed nourishment. As the Admirall hearde masse on the shore, there came towarde him a certaine gouernour, a man of foure score yeares of age, and of great grauitie, although hee were naked sauing his priuie parts. Hee had a great trayne of men wayting on him. All the while the prieste was at masse he shewed himselfe very humble, and gaue reuerent attendance, with graue and demure countenance. When the masse was ended, hee presented to the Admirall a basket of the fruites of his countrey, deliuering the same with his owne handes. When the Admirall hadde gently entertained him, desiring leaue to speake, he made an oration in the presence of Didacus the interpreter to this effect: I haue bin aduertised (most mighty prince) that you haue of late with great power subdued many lands and Regions, hitherto vnknowne to you, and haue brought no litle feare vpon all the people and inhabitantes of the same: the which your good fortune, you shall beare with lesse insolency, if you remember that the soules of men haue two iourneyes after they are departed from this bodie. The one, foule and dark, prepared for such as are iniurious and cruell to mankind: the other pleasant and delectable, ordeined for them which in their life time loued peace and quietnes. If therfore you acknowledge your selfe to be mortal, and consider that euery man shal receiue condigne rewarde or punishment for such thinges as hee hath done in this life, you will wrongfully hurt no man. When hee had saide these wordes and other like, which were declared to the Admirall by the interpretation, he marueiling at the iudgment of the naked olde man, answered that he was gladd to heare his opinion as touching the sundry iourneies and rewards of soules departed from their bodyes, supposing that neither he, or any other of the inhabitantes of those Regions, had had any knowledge thereof: declaring further, that the chiefe cause of his comming thither, was to instruct them in such godly knowledg and true religion: and that he was sent into those countreies by the Christian king of Spaine (his Lord and master) for the same purpose, and specially to subdue and punish the Canibales, and such other mischieuous people, and to defend innocents against the violence of euill doers, willing him, and all other such as imbrace vertue, in no case to bee afraide, but rather to open his minde vnto him, if eyther he, or any other such quiet men as he was, had sustained any wrong of their neighbours, and that he would see the same reuenged. These comfortable words of the Admirall so pleased the olde man, that notwithstanding his extreme age, he would gladly haue gone with the Admirall, as he had done indeede, if his wife and children had not hindered him of his purpose: but he marueiled not a little, that the Admirall was vnder the dominion of another: and much more when the interpreter tolde him of the glorie, magnificence, pompe, great power,

The sea entangled with Ilandes.

A multitude of great Tortoysses. A goulfe of white water.

The humanity of a reuerende olde gouernour.

An oration of the naked gouernour.

Their opinion of the soule of man.

Desire of gold founde that which religion coule not finde. Virtus post nummos, &c.

power, and furnimentes of warre of our kinges, and of the multitudes of cities and townes, which were vnder their dominions. Intending therefore to haue gone with the Admirall, his wife and children fell prostrate at his feete, with teares desiring him not to forsake them and leaue them desolate at whose pitifull requestes, the worthy olde man beeing moued, remained at home to the comfort of his people and familie, satisfying rather them then himselfe: for not yet ceasing to woonder, and of heauie countenance because he might not depart, hee demaunded oftentimes if that lande was not heauen, which brought forth such a kinde of men? For it is certaine that among them the lande is as common as sunne and water, and that Mine and Thine (the seedes of all mischief) haue no place with them. They are content with so litle, that in so large a cuntry they haue rather superfluitie then scarcenesse: so that (as we haue sayde before) they seeme to liue in the golden worlde without toyle, liuing in open gardens, but intrenched with ditches, diuided with hedges, or defended with walles: they deale truely one with another without lawes, without booke, and without iudges: they take him for an euill and mischieuous man, which taketh pleasure in dooing hurt to other. And albeit that they delight not in superfluities, yet make they provision for the increase of such roots whereof they make their bread, as Maizium, Iucca, and Ages, contented with such simple dyet, whereby health is preserved, and diseases auoided. The Admirall therefore departing from thence, and minding to returne againe shortly after, chaunced to come againe to the llande of Iamaica, being on the South side thereof, and coasted all along by the shore of the same from the West to the East, from whose last corner on the East side, when hee sawe towards the North side on his left hande certaine high mountaines, hee knewe at the length that it was the South side of the llande of Hispaniola, which hee hadde not passed by. Wherefore at the Calendes of September, entring into the haue of the same llande, called saint Nicholas haue, he repayred his shippes, to the intent that he might againe wast and spoyle the llandes of the Canibales, and burne all their Canoas, that those rauening Wolues might no longer persecute and deuoure the innocent sheepe: but he was at this time hindered of his purpose, by reason of a disease which hee had gotten by too much watching. Thus beinge feeble, and weake, hee was ledde of the Mariners to the citty of Isabella, where, with his two bretheren which were there, and other of his familiars, hee recouered his health in shorte space: yet coulde hee not at this time assaile the Canibales, by reason of sedition that was risen of late among the Spanyardes which he had left in Hispaniola, whereof we will speake more hereafter. Thus fare ye well.

The fourth booke of the first Decade, to Lodouike Cardinal of Aragonie.

Colonus the Admirall of the Ocean, returning (as hee supposed) from the continent or firme land of East India, hadde aduertisement that his brother Boilus, and one Peter Margarita, an olde familiar of the Kings, and a noble man, with diuers other of those to whom he had left the gouernment of the lland, were (of corrupted mind against him) departed into Spaine. Wherefore, aswell to purge himselfe of such crimes, as they should lay to his charge, as also to make a supply of other men in the place of them which were returned, and especially to provide for victuals, as wheate, wine, oyle, and such other, which the Spanyardes are accustomed to eate, because they coulde not yet well agree with such meate as they founde in the llandes, determined shortly to take his voyage into Spaine: but what he did before his departure, I wil briefly rehearse.

The kinges of the llandes which had hitherto liued quietly, and content with their litle which they thought abundant, whereas they now perceiued that our men began to fasten foote within their regions, & to beare rule among them, they tooke the matter so grievously, that they thought nothing els but by what meanes they might utterly destroy them, and for euer abolish the memorie of their name, for that kinde of menne (the Spaniardes I meane, which followed the Admirall in the nauigation) were for the most part vnruely, regarding nothing but idlenesse play, and libertie, and woulde by no meanes abstaine from iniuries, rauihing of the women of the llandes beefore the faces of their husbandes, fathers, and bretheren: by which their abhominable misdemeanour, they disquieted the minds of al the inhabitantes, insomuch

The lande as
common as the
sunne and
water.

Simple dyet.

Hispaniola.

The Canibales.

Sicknes of too
much Watch-
ing.

East India.
The Spaniardes
rebell in the
Admirals ab-
sence.

The kinges of
the llande
rebell.
The Spanyardes
misbehaviour.

The first

insomuch
fiercenesse
pacifie th
thence, f
foote of t
the more
to Didacu
interprete
the house
taine Hoie
the space
souldiers
with Caur
perswadin
hadde rath
Admirall,
part, three
Hoieda an
should by
keepe war
bled, as i
the storme
ttee of p
deceyt, to
portunitie
many othe
great a ro
was, to ge
otherwise
wheras by
many faire
immediat
bodies vnr
mined to
inhabitant
daily, as i
and frowa
place in th
of the lla
planting, t
which they
first booke
much as th
cause that
with a ban
throughou
space of x
fruites of
taynes of
victualles,
that our m
bell in lik
betweene

VOL. V.

insomuch that wheresoeuer they found any of our men vnprepared, they slue them with such fiercenesse and gladnes as though they had offered sacrifice to God. Intending therefore to pacifie their troubled mindes, and to punish them that slue his men before he departed from thence, he sent for the king of that vale, which in the booke before we described to be at the foote of the mountayne of the region of Cibana, this kinges name was Guarionexius: who, the more straightly to concile vnto him the friendship of the Admirall, gaue his sister to wife to Didacus, a man from his childe age brought vp with the Admirall, whom he vsed for his interpreter in the prouinces of Cuba. After this, he sent for Caunaboa, called the Lord of the house of golde, that is, of the mountaines of Cibana: For this Caunaboa he sent one capitaine Hoieda, whom the ditionaries of Caunaboa had enforced to keepe his hold, besieging for the space of thirty dayes the fortresse of saint Thomas, in the which Hoieda with his fyftie souldiers stode at their defence, vntil the comming of the Admirall. While Hoieda remained with Caunaboa, manye ambassadours of the Kinges of diuers regions were sent to Caunaboa, perswading him in no condition to permit the Christians to inhabite the llande, except he hadde rather serue then rule. On the other partie, Hoieda aduertised Caunaboa to goe to the Admirall, and to make a league of friendship with him: but the ambassadours on the contrary part, threatened him, that if he woulde so doe, the other kinges woulde inuade his region. But Hoieda answered them againe, that whereas they conspired to mainteyne their libertie, they should by that meanes be brought to scrutitude & destruction, if they intended to resist or keepe war against the Christians. Thus Caunaboa on the one side and the other being troubled, as it were a rocke in the sea beaten with contrary floudes, and much more vexed with the stormes of his guiltie conscience, for that he had priuily slaine xx. of our men vnder pretence of peace, feared to come to the Admirall: but at the length, hauing excogitated his deceyt, to haue slaine the Admirall and his companie, vnder the colour of friendship, if opportunity would so haue serued, he repayed to the Admiral, with his whole family, and so many other waiting on him, armed after their maner. Being demanded why hee brought so great a rout of men with him, he answered, that it was not decent for so great a Prince as hee was, to goe out of his house without such a bande of men: but the thing chaunced much otherwise then he looked for, for he fell into the snares which he had prepared for other, for whereas by the way he began to repent him that he came forth of his house, Hoieda with many faire words and promises brought him to the Admirall, at whose commandement he was immediatly taken and put in pryson, so that the soules of our men were not long from their bodies vnreuenged. Thus Caunaboa with all his familie being taken, the Admirall was determined to runne ouer the llande, but hee was certified that there was such famine among the inhabitautes, that there was already fiftie thousand men dead thereof, and that they dyed yet daily, as it were rotten sheepe, the cause whereof, was well knowne to be their owne obstinacie and frowardnes: for whereas they saw that our men intended to choose them a dwelling place in the llande, supposing that they might haue dryuen them from thence if the victualles of the lland should faile, they determined with themselves, not only to leaue sowing and planting, but also to destroy and plucke vp by the rootes euery man in his own region, that which they had already sowne, of both kindes of breade, whereof wee made mention in the first booke, but especially among the mountaines of Cibana, otherwise called Cipanga, forasmuch as they hadde knowledge that the golde which aboundeth in that region, was the chiefe cause that deteyned our men in the lland. In the meane time, hee sent forth a Captayne with a bande of men, to search the South side of the llande, who at his returne, reported that throughout all the regions that hee trauiayled, there was such scarcenesse of bread, that for the space of xvi. dayes, he ate nothing but the rootes of hearbes, and of young date trees, or the fruites of other wilde trees: but Guarionexius the king of the vale, lying beneath the mountaynes of Cibana, whose kingdome was not so wasted as the other, gaue our menne certaine victualles. Within a fewe dayes after, both that the iourneyes might be the shorter, and also that our men might haue more safe places of refuge, if the inhabitantes shoulde hereafter rebell in like manner, hee builded another fortresse (which hee called the Towre of conception) betweene the citie of Isabella, and Saint Thomas fortresse, in the marches of the kingdome of

A lust reuenge.

Capitayne Hoieda.

Caunaboa conspireth the admirals death.

Famine in the llande of Hispaniola.

The hunger of golde causeth great famine.

The tower of conception.

this Guarionexius, within the precincts of Cibana, vpon the side of a hill, hauing a sayre riuier of wholesome water running harde by the same. Thus when the inhabitantes sawe newe buildinges to bee daily erected, and our shippes lying in the hauen rotten and halfe broken, they began to dispayre of any hope of liberty, and wandred vp and downe with heauie cheare. From the Towre of Conception, searching diligently the inner partes of the mountaynes of Cibana, there was a certaine king which gaue them a masse of rude golde as bigge as a mans fyst, weighing xx. ounces: this golde was not found in the banke of that riuier, but in a heape of dry earth, and was like vnto the stone called Tophus, which is soone resolued into sande. This masse of golde I myselfe sawe in Castile, in the famous Citie of Methymna Campi, where the Court lay all that winter. I sawe also a great peece of pure Electrum, of the which bels, and Apothecaries morters, & many such other vessels and instrumentes may bee made, as were in olde time of copper in the Citie of Corinthus. This peece of Electrum was of such weight, that I was not onely with both my handes vnable to lift it from the ground, but also not of strength to remoue it eyther one way or other: they affirmed that it weied more then three hundred pounde weight, after eight ounces to the pounde, it was founde in the house of a certaine Prince, and left him by his predecessours: and albeit that in the dayes of the inhabitantes yet liuing, Electrum was no where digged, yet knewe they where the myne thereof was, but our men with much adoo coulde hardly cause them to shewe them the place, they bore them such priuie hatred, yet at the length they brought them to the myne, being now ruinate and stopped with stones and rubbishe: it is much easier to digge then is the yron myne, and might be restored againe, if myners and other workmen skillfull therin were appoynted thereto. Not farre from the Towre of Conception, in the same mountaine, is founde great plentie of Amber, and out of certaine rockes of the same, distilleth a substance of the yelow colour which the Paynters vse. Not farre from these mountaynes are many great woodes, in the which are none other trees then Brasile, which the Italians call Verzino. But here perhaps (right noble Prince) you woulde aske, what should be the cause, that where as the Spanyardes haue brought out of these llandes certaine shippes laden with Brasile, somewhat of Gossampine cotton, a quantitie of Amber, a litle golde, & some spices, why haue they not brought such plentie of golde, and such other rich marchaundizes, as the fruitfulnessse of these Regions seeme to promise? To this I answer, that when Colonus the Admirall was likewise demanded the cause hereof, hee made aunswere, that the Spanyardes which hee tooke with him into these regions, were giuen rather to sleepe, play, and idlenesse, then to labour, and were more studious of sedition and newes, then desirous of peace and quietnesse: also, that being giuen to licentiousnesse, they rebelled & forsooke him, finding matter of false accusation against him, because hee went about to repress their outrageousnesse: by reason whereof, hee was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabitants, and freely to possesse the full dominion of the llande, and these hinderances to bee the cause that hitherto the gaynes haue scarcely counteruayled the charges: albeit, euen this yeere while I wrote these thinges at your request, they gathered in two monethes the summe of a thousande and two hundred poundes weight of golde. But because we entende to speake more largely of these thinges in their place, wee will nowe returne from whence we haue digressed. When the inhabitantes perceiued that they coulde by no meanes shake the yoke from their necks, they made humble supplicatiō to the Admirall, that they might stande to their tribute, and apply themselues to increase the fruites of their countrey, beeing now almost wasted. Hee granted them their request, and appoynted such order that euery Region shoulde pay their tribute, with the commodities of their countreies, according to their portion, and at such time as they were agreed vpon: but the violent famine did frustrate all these appoyntments, for all the trauailes of their bodies, were scarcely able to suffice to finde them meate in the woodes, whereby to susteyne their liues, beeing of long time contented with rootes and the fruites of wyld trees: yet many of the kinges with their people, euen in this extreame necessitie, brought parte of their tribute, most humbly desiring the Admirall to haue compassion of their calamities and to beare with them yet a while, vntil the llande were restored to the olde state, promising further, that that which was nowe wanting, shoulde then be

Electrum is a metall naturally mist of one portion of gold, and another of siluer, being of propriety to be away poyson, and was therefore in greater estimation then golde. The mine of Electrum.

An other kinde of Amber is taken out of great whale fishes. Opement or oker.

Woodes of brasile trees.

Licentiousnes of to much libertie.

And this only gathered, and not digged out of the body of the mine.

double re
promise,
that the
whiche d
men of th
heauen,
But nowe
When hee
beene a
deliuered
his domin
to sende
old enem
was waste
brought t
friendes
men as m
Hoieda w
moue war
of Caunab
manner,
fire. He
same on
the distan
euery one
directly a
signes tha
rome fresh
ing it bet
mie, gaue
commodit
threw the
the residu
whence th
they woul
woulde su
taken, the
fortunatel
Caunaboa
springs
in the mo
west, as
the roots
whyrlwi
shippes,
maruayle
times abo
ther into
space of
troubled
(which th
doe often
cuer sawe

double

double recompenced. But fewe of the inhabitantes of the mountaines of Cibana kept their promise, because they were sorer oppressed with famine then anie of the other. They say that the inhabitants of these mountaines differ no lesse in language and manners from them whiche dwell in the playnes, then among vs the rusticalles of the countrey, from the gentlemen of the court: whereas notwithstanding they liue as it were both vnder one portion of heauen, and in many thinges much after one fashion, as in nakednesse, and rude simplicitie. But nowe let vs returne to Caunaboa the king of the house of golde, being in captiuitie. When hee perceiued him selfe to bee cast in pryson, fretting and grating his teeth, as it had bene a Lion of Libia, and dayly and nightly deuising with himselfe howe hee might bee deliuered, beeganne to perswade the Admirall, that forasmuch as he hadde nowe taken vnto his dominion the region of Cipanga or Cibana (wherof he was king) it shoulde be expedient to sende thither a garrison of Christian men, to defend the same from the incursions of his old enemies and borderers: for he sayde, that it was signified vnto him, that the countrey was wasted and spoyled with such incursions. By this craftie deuise, hee thought to haue brought to passe, that his brother which was in that region, and the other his kinsfolkes and friendes with their adherentes, should haue taken, eyther by sleight or force, as many of our men as might haue redeemed him. But the Admirall vnderstanding his craftie meaning, sent Hoieda with suche a companie of men, as might vanquishe the Cibaniens, if they shoulde moue warre againste them. Our menne had scarcelye entred into the region, but the brother of Caunaboa came against them with an armie of fyue thousande naked men, armed after their manner, with clubbes, arrowes tipt with bones, and speares made harde at the endes with fire. He stole vpon our men beeing in one of their houses, and encamped rounde about the same on euery side. This Cibanian, as a man not ignorant in the discipline of warre, about the distance of a furlong from the house, diuided his armie into fyue battayles, appoynting to euery one of them a circuite by equall deuision, and placed the ffront of his owne battayle directly against our men. When he had thus set his battayles in good aray, he gaue certaine signes that the whole army should marche forwarde in order with equall paces, and with a larme freshly assayle their enemies, in such sort that none might escape. But our men iudging it better to encounter with one of the battayles, then to abide the brunt of the whole armie, gaue on esot on the maine battayle aranged in the playne, because that place was most commodious for the horsmen. When the horsmen therefore had giuen the charge, they ouerthrewe them with the brestes of their horses, and slue as many as abode the end of the fight, the residue being stricken with feare, disparcelled, and fled to the mountaines and rockes: from whence they made a pitifull howling to our men, desiring them to spare them, protesting that they woulde neuer more rebell, but doe what so euer they woulde commaunde them, if they woulde suffer them to liue in their owne countrey. Thus the brother of Caunaboa being taken, the Admirall licenced the people to resort euery man to his owne: these thinges thus fortunately atchiued, this Region was pacified. Among these mountaines, the vale which Caunaboa inhabited, is called Magona, and is exceeding fruitfull, hauing in it many goodly springes and riuers, in the sande whereof is founde great plentie of golde. The same yeere in the moneth of Iune, they say there arose such a boystrous tempest of wind from the South-west, as hath not lightly been heard of, the violence wherof was such, that it plucked vp by the roots whatsoever great trees were within the reach of the force thereof. When this whyrlewinde came to the hauen of the citie, it beate downe to the bottome of the sea three shippes, which lay at anker, and broke the cables in sunder, and that (which is the greater maruayle) without any storme or roughnesse of the sea, onely turning them three or foure times about. The inhabitantes also affirme, that the same yeere the sea extended it selfe further into the lande, and rose higher then euer it did beefore by the memorie of man, by the space of a cubite. The people therefore muttered among themselues, that our nation had troubled the elementes, & caused such portentous signes. These tempestes of the ayre (which the Grecians call Tiphones, that is, whirlewindes) they call Furacanes, which they say, doe often times chauce in this Ilande: but that neyther they, nor their great graund-fathers, euer sawe such violent and furious Furacanes, that plucked vp great trees by the rootes, nei-

The nature of the region disposeth the manner of the people.

King Caunaboa in captiuitie.

Caunaboa his brother rebell.

A conflict betwene the Cibaniens & the Spanyardes.

A great tempest in the month of Iune.

Whirlewindes, Furacanes.

The death of
king Caunabo
and his
brother.

The golde mines
of Solomon.

Golde in the
superficiall
partes of the
earth.

The golden
tower.

Lacke of vi-
ctuals.

Victualles
brought from
Spaine.

ther yet such surges and vehemēt motions on the sea, that so wasted the land as in deede it may appeare, forasmuch as wheresoeuer the sea bankes are neere to any plaine, there are in a maner euerie where flourishing medowes reaching euen to the shore: but nowe let vs returne into Caunaboa. As king Caunaboa therefore and his brother should haue been brought into Spaine, they dyed by the way, for very pensiuenesse and anguish of minde. The Admirall whose shippes were drowned in the foresaide tempest, perceiuing himselfe to be now enclosed, commaunded forthwith two other shippes (which the Spaniards call Carauelas) to bee made: for hee had with him all manner of Artificers perteyning thereunto. While these thinges were dooing, hee sent forth Bartholomeus Colonus his brother, beeing Lieutenant of the llande, with an armie of men to search the golde mynes, beeing distant threescore leagues from the citie of Isabella, which were founde by the conduct of certaine people of the land, before the mines of Cipanga or Cibana were knowne. In these mynes they found certaine deepe pits, which had bene digged in old time, out of these pittes, the Admirall (who affirmeth this land of Hispaniola to be Ophir, as we sayde before) supposeth that Solomon the king of Hierusalem had his great riches of gold, whereof we read in the olde Testament, and that his ships sayled to this Ophir by the goulfe of Persia, called Sinus Persicus. But whether it be so or not, it lieth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is far of. As the myners digged the superficiall or vppermost part of the earth of the mynes, during for the space of sixe myles, and in diuers places sifted the same on the drie land, they found such plentie of golde, that euery hyred labourer could easily finde euerie day the weight of three drammes. These mines beeing thus searched and found, the Lieutenant certified the Admirall heereof by his letters, the which when he had receiued, the fift day of the Ides of March, Anno. 1495. he entred into his new ships, and tooke his voyage directly to Spaine, to aduertise the king of all his affaires, leauing the whole regiment of the lland with his brother the Lieutenant.

The fift booke of the first Decade, to Lodouike Cardinal of Aragonie.

AFTER the Admirals departing into Spayne his brother the Lieutenant builded a fortresse in the golde mynes, as hee hadde commaunded him: this hee called the golden towre, beecause the labourers founde golde in the earth, and stone whereof they made the walles of the fortresse. Hee consumed three monethes in making the instrumentes wherewith the golde shoulde bee gathered, washed, tryed, and moulen: yet was hee at this time, by reason of wante of victualles, enforced to leaue all thinges imperfecte, and to goe seeke for meate. Thus as he, with a bande of armed menne, hadde entred threescore myles further within the land, the people of the country here and there resorting to him, gaue him a certaine portion of their breade, in exchange for other of our thinges: but hee coulde not long tary here, because they lacked meate in the fortresse, whither hee hasted with such as he had now gotten. Leauing therefore in the fortresse a garrison of ten men, with that portion of the llande breade which yet remained, leauing also with them a Hounde to take those kindes of little beastes which they call Vsias, not much vnlike our Conies, hee returned to the fortresse of Conception. This also was the moneth wherein the king Guarionexius, and also Manicau-texius borderer vnto him, shoulde haue brought in their tributes. Remaining there the whole moneth of Iune, he exacted the whole tribute of the two kinges, and victualles necessary for him and such as he brought with him, which were aboute foure hundred in number. Shortly after, about the Calendes of Iuly, there came three Carauelas from Spayne, bringing with them sundry kindes of victualles, as wheate, oyle, wine, bakon, & Martelmas beefe, which were diuided to euery man according as neede required, some also was lost in the caryage for lack of good looking to. At the arriuall of these shippes, the Lieutenant receiued commaundement from the King and the Admirall his brother, that he with his men should remoue their habitation to the South side of the llande, because it was neerer to the golde mynes: Also that hee shoulde make diligent search for those Kinges which had slayne the Christian men, and to sende them with their confederates bound into Spaine. At the next voyage therefore he sent three hundred captiues, with three Kinges, and when hee had diligently searched the coastes of the South side, he transported his habitation, and builded a fortresse there, vpon the

The first

the topp
tower. In
good fish
it runne
groues o
they say
and fruite
also that
In Isabell
poynted t
saint Don
xx. men,
partes of
xxx. leagu
ryuer Nai
the South
panie of
captaines
great woo
entred int
Each of th
to bee res
directing
Naiba, fou
inhabitant
many othe
Xaragua, a
xxx. leagu
ditionaries
vterly wi
men, layin
certaine w
haue. Th
the name
of me, wh
that there
he suppose
bidde tha
beare, or
your regio
whereof v
chearefull
dismissing
nant, and
this tracte
Of the wh
shippes th
so euery
the length
palace, a
ably (afte
which he
howe they

the toppe of an hill, neare vnto a sure hauen: this fortresse hee called saint Dominickes tower. Into this hauen runneth a riuier of wholesome water, replenished with sundry kindes of good fishes: they affirme this riuier to haue many benefites of nature, for where so euer it runneth, all thinges are exceeding pleasaunt and fruitefull, hauing on euery side groues of Date trees, and diuers other of the llande frutes so plentifully, that as they sayled along by the shore, oftentimes the braunches thereof, laden with flowres and frutes, hong so ouer their heades, that they might plucke them with their handes: also that the fruitfulness of this ground, is eyther equall with the soyle of Isabella, or better. In Isabella hee left onely certaine sicke men, and shippe wrightes, whome hee had appointed to make certaine carauels, the residue of his men, hee conueighed to the South, to saint Dominickes tower. After hee had builded this fortresse, leauing therein a garrison of xx. men, hee with the remnant of his souldiers, prepared themselues to search the inner partes of the West side of the llande, hitherto knowne onely by name. Therefore about xxx. leagues, (that is) fourescore and tenne myles from the fortresse, hee chaunced on the ryuer Naiba, which wee sayde to descende from the mountaines of Cibana, right towarde the South, by the midst of the llande. When he had ouerpassed this riuier with a companie of armed menne diuided into xxv. decursions, that is, tenne in a companie, with their capitaines, he sent two decursions to the regions of those Kinges in whose landes were the great woodes of brasile tree. Inclining towarde the left hande, they founde the woodes, entred into them, and felled the high and precious trees, which were to that day vntouched. Each of the decursions filled certaine of the llande houses with the trunks of brasile, there to bee reserued vntill the shippes came which should cary them away. But the Lieutenant directing his journey towarde the right hande, not farre from the bankes of the riuier of Naiba, found a certain king whose name was Beuchius Anacauchoa, encamped against the inhabitants of the prouince of Naiba, to subdue them vnder his dominion, as he had don many other kinges of the lland, borderers vnto him. The palace of this great king, is called Xaragua, and is situate towarde the West end of the llande, distant from the riuier of Naiba, xxx. leagues. All the princes which dwell betweene the West ende & his palace, are ditionaries vnto him. All that region from Naiba, to the furthest marches of the West, is vtterly without golde, although it be full of mountaines. When the king had espied our men, laying apart his weapons, and giuing signes of peace, he spake gentlyly to them (vncertaine whether it were of humanitie or feare) and demanded of them what they woulde haue. The Lieutenant answered, That hee should pay tribute to the Admirall his brother, in the name of the Christian King of Spayne. To whom he sayde, How can you require that of me, whereas neuer a region vnder my dominion bringeth forth golde? For he had heard, that there was a strange nation entred into the lland, which made great search for gold: But he supposed that they desired some other thing. The lieutenant answered againe, God forbidde that wee shoulde enioyne any manne to pay such tribute as he might not easily forbear, or such as were not engendered or growing in the region but wee vnderstande that your regions bring forth great plenty of Gossampine cotton, and hempe, with such other, whereof wee desire you to giue vs parte. When he heard these woordes, he promised with chearefull countenance, to giue him as much of these thinges as hee woulde require. Thus dismissing his army, and sending messengers before, he himselfe accompanied the Lieutenant, and brought him to his palace, being distant (as we haue sayde) xxx. leagues. In all this tracte, they passed through the iurisdiction of other princes, being vnder his dominion: Of the which, some gaue them hempe, of no lesse goodnesse to make tackelings for shippes then our woode: Other some brought breade, and some Gossampine cotton. And so euery of them payde tribute with such commodities as their countries brought forth. At the length they came to the kinges mansion place of Xaragua. Before they entred into the palace, a great multitude of the kinges seruantes and subiectes resorted to the court, honorably (after their maner) to receiue their king Beuchius Anacauchoa, with the strangers which he brought with him to see the magnificence of his court. But now shall you heare howe they were entertained. Among other triumphes & sightes, two are especially to bee noted:

Saint Dominickes tower.

Isabella.

The riuier of Naiba.

Woodes of Brasile trees.

Mountaines without golde.

The kinges
wiues.

Well fauoured
women.

Dryades.

Appetie pastime.

Four men
playe in sport.

Prouision for
diseased men.

The castels or
towers of His-
paniola.

The golden
mountaines of
Cibana.

noted : First, there mette them a companie of xxx. women, beeing all the kinges wiues and concubines, bearing in their handes branches of date trees, singing and daunsing: they were all naked, sauing that their priuile partes were couered with breeches of Gossampine cotton: but the virgins, hauing their haire hanging downe about their shoulders, tyed about the foreheads with a fillet, were vtterly naked. They affirme, that their faces, breasts, pappes, hands, and other parts of their bodies, were exceedinge smooth, and well proportioned, but somewhat inclining to a lovely broune. They supposed that they had seene those most beutifull Dryades, or the natieue nymphes or fayries of the fountaines whereof the antiques spake so much. The branches of date trees which they bore in their right handes when they daunced, they deliuered to the Lieutenant, with lowlie courtesie and smiling countenance. Thus entring into the kinges house, they founde a delicate supper prepared for them, after their manner. When they were well refreshed with meate, the nyght drawing on, they were brought by the kinges officers, euery man to his lodging, according to his degree, in certaine of their houses about the pallace, where they rested them in hanging beds, after the maner of the countrey, whereof we haue spoken more largely in another place.

The day following, they brought our men to their common hall, into the which they come together as often as they make any notable games or triumphes, as we haue sayde before. Heere after many daunsynges, singinges, maskinges, runninges, wrestlinges, and other tryng of mastryes, sodainly there appeared in a large plaine neere vnto the hal, two great armies of men of warre, which the king for his pastime had caused to bee prepared, as the Spaniards vse this play with reedes, which they call *luga de Canias*. As the armies drewe neere together, they assayed the one the other as fiercely, as if mortall enemies with their banners spleade, should fight for their goods, their landes, their liues, their libertie, their countrey, their wiues and their children, so that within the moment of an houre, foure men were slayne, and many wounded. The battayle also shoulde haue continued longer, if the king had not, at the request of our men caused them to cease. The thirde day, the Lieutenant counsayling the King to sowe more plentie of gossampine vpon the bankes neere vnto the waters side, that they might the better paye their tribute priuately, according to the multitude of their houses, hee prepared to visite the sicke menne which hee hadde left there, and also to see howe his woorkes went forward. In the time of his absence, xxx. of his menne were consumed with diuerse diseases. Wherefore beeing sore troubled in his minde, and in manner at his wittes ende, what he were best to doe, for as much as hee wanted all thinges necessarie, as well to restore them to health which were yet acrated, as also vitayles to maintaine the whole multitude, where as there was yet no shippe come from Spayne: at the length, hee determined to sende abroade the sicke men here and there to sundry Regions of the Ilande, and to the castelles which they had erected in the same. For directly from the citie of Isabella to saint Dominickes tower, that is, from the North to the South, through the Ilande, they had builded thus many Castles. First xxxvi. myles distant from Isabella, they builded the Castell of Sperantia. From Sperantia xxv. miles, was the Castell of Saint Katharine. From Saint Katharines xx. miles, was Saint Iames tower. Other xx. myles from Saint Iames tower, was a stronger fortresse then any of the other, which they called the towre of Conceptio, which he made the stronger, because it was situate at the rootes of the golden mountaynes of Cibana, in the great and large playne, so fruitfull and well inhabited as we haue beefore described. Hee builded also another in the mydde way betwene the tower of Conception, & saint Dominickes tower, the which also was stronger then the tower of Conception, because it was within the lymittes of a great King, hauing vnder his dominion fise thousand men, whose chiefe citie and heade of the Realme, being called Bonauum, he willed that the Castel should also be called after the same name. Therefore leauing the sicke men in these Castels, and other of the Iland houses neere vnto the same, hee himselfe repayred to Saint Dominickes, exacting trybutes of all the kinges which were in his way. When hee had taryed there a fewe dayes, there was a rumour spreade, that all the kinges about the borders of the towre of Conception, hadde conspired

The first

conspired
was certifi
eyther by
weariet v
king Guan
that hee w
tions: the
the power
with xv. t
warre. H
diere of w
houses, be
Centurion
inuade the
tered here
not fortifie
bound the
Lieutenant
sonage, w
houre app
ception.
authors of
the same,
which thin
seeds and
and the ot
the numbe
of their ki
outcry.
with rewar
rionexius
toward off
myndes, a
the Christi
into furthe
on their s
Region wa
and downe
whereas x
they coul
coulede wi
of the We
to the Lie
and such
upon the
his sister,
gouernaur
wise wom
ther, by t
called An
had broug
also, besi
plenty of

conspired with desperate myndes to rebell against the Spanyardes. When the Lieutenant was certified hereof, hee tooke his iourney towards them immediately, not being discouraged eyther by the length of the way, or feebleness of his souldiers, beeing in manner forced with trauaile. As hee drew neere vnto them, he hadde aduertysment that king Guarionexius was chosen by other Princes to bee the Capitayne of this rebellion, and that hee was enforced thereto halfe vnwilling, beeing seduced by perswasions and prouocations: the which is more likely to be true, for that hee hadde before hadde experience of the power and policie of our men. They came to geather at a day appoynted, accompanied with xv. thousande men, armed after their manner, once againe to proue the fortune of warre. Heere the Lieutenant, consulting with the Captaine of the fortresse and the other souldiers of whom he had the conduct, determined to sette vpon them vnwares in their owne houses, before they coulde prepare their armie. He sent forth therefore to euery king a Centurion, that is, a captayne of a hundred, which were commanded vpon a sudden to inuade their houses in the night, and to take them sleeping, before the people (being scattered here and there) might assemble together. Thus secretly entering into their villages, not fortified with walles, trenches, or bulwarkes, they brooke in vpon them, tooke them, bound them, and led away euery man his prisoner according as they were commanded. The Lieutenant himselfe with his hundred men, assayed king Guarionexius as the worthier personage, whom he tooke prysoner, as did the other captaines their kings, and at the same houre appoynted. Foureteene of them were brought the same night to the tower of Conception. Shortly after, when he had put to death two of the Kinges whiche were the chiefe authors of this new reuolte, and had suborned Guarionexius and the other kings to attempt the same, least the people for sorowe of their kinges shoulde neglect or forsake their cuntry, which thing might haue bin great incommodie to our men, who by the increase of their seedes and fruites were often times ayded, he freely pardoned and dismissed Guarionexius and the other kinges, the people in the meane time flocking together about the tower, to the number of foue thousande without weapons, with pitifull houlung for the deliuerance of their kinges. The ayre thundered, & the earth trembled through the vehemencie of their outcry. The Lieutenant warned Guarionexius and the other kinges, with threatninges, with rewardes, and with promises, neuer hereafter to attempt any such thing. Then Guarionexius made an oration to the people, of the great power of our men, of their clemencie toward offenders, & liberalitie to suche as remaine faithfull, desiring them to quiet their myndes, and from thenceforth neither indeed nor thought to enterprise any thing against the Christians, but to obey and serue them, except they woulde dayly bring themselves into further calamities. When the oration was finished, they tooke him vppe, and set him on their shoulders, and so caryed him home to his owne pallace: and by this meanes, this Region was pacified for a while. But our menne, with heauie countenance wandered vp and downe, as desolate in a strange cuntry, lacking victailes, and worne out of apparell, whereas xv. monethes were nowe passed since the Admiralls departure, duryng which time, they coulde heare nothing out of Spayne. The Lieutenant comforted them all that hee coulde with fayre words and promises. In the meane time, Beuchius Anacaucoa (the king of the West partes of the Region of Xaragua (of whome wee spake before) sent messengers to the Lieutenant, to signifie vnto him, that hee had in a readines the gossampine cotton, and such other things as he willed him to prepare for the payment of his trybute. Whereupon the Lieutenant tooke his iourney thither, and was honorably receiued of the king and his sister, sometime the wife of Caunaboa the king of Cibana, bearing no lesse rule in the gouernance of her brothers kingdome, then he himselfe: For they affirmed her to bee a wise woman, of good maners, & pleasant in companie. She earnestly perswaded her brother, by the example of her husband, to loue & obey the Christians. This woman was called Anacaona. Hee founde in the palace of Beuchius Anacaucoa. xxxii. kinges, which had brought their tributes with them, and abode his comming. They brought with them also, beside their tribute assigned them further to demerite the fauour of our men, great plenty of vitails, as both kindes of bread, conies, and fishes, already dried, because they should

The kinges
rebell.

An armie of
xv. thousand
Spaniards.

The kinges are
taken prysoners.

King Guarionexius
is pardoned.

Lacke of victailes.

xxxii. kinges.

Serpentes eaten. should not putrifie: Serpentes also of that kinde which wee sayde to be esteemed among them as most delicate meat, & like vnto Crocodiles sauing in bignesse. These Serpents they cal Iuannas, which our men learned (somwhat too late) to haue bin engendered in the Ilande: For vnto that day, none of them durst aduegture to tast of them, by reason of their horrible deformity and lothsomnes. Yet the Lieutenant, being entised by the pleasantnes of the kinges sister, determined to tast of the Serpentes. But when hee felt the fleshe thereof to bee so delicate to his tongue, hee fel to amaine without all feare: the which thing his companions perceiuing, were not behinde him in greedynesse insomuch that they had now none other talke, then of the sweetnesse of these serpentes, which they affirme to be of more pleasaunte taste, then eyther our Phesantes or Partridges: but they loose their taste, except they be prepared after a certaine fashion, as doe Peacockes and Phesantes, except they be enterlarded before they be roasted. They prepare them therefore after this manner: First, taking out their bowelles, euen from the throte to the thyghes, they washe and rubbe their bodies verie cleane both within & without, then rolling them together on a circle, inuolued after the maner of a sleeping snake, they thrust them into a pot, of no bigger capacitie then to hold them only this done, putting a little water vnto them, with a portion of the Ilande Pepper, they seethe them with a soft fire of sweete wood, and such as maketh no great smoake: Of the fat of them being thus sodde, is made an exceeding pleasant broth or pottage. They say also, that there is no meate to be compared to the egges of these serpentes, which they vse to seethe by themselves they are good to bee eaten as soone as they are sodde, and may also be reserued many dayes after. But hauing sayde thus much of their entertaynement and dayntie fare, let vs nowe speak of other matters. When the Lieutenant had filled one of the Ilande houses with the Gossampine cotton which he had receiued for tribute, the kinges promised furthermore to giue him as much of their bread as he would demaunde: he gaue them hartie thanks, & gently accepted their friendly proffer. In the meane time, whyle this bread was a gathering in sundry regions, to be brought to the palace of Beuchius Anacauchoa king of Xaragua, he sent messengers to Isabella, for one of the two Carauelles whiche were lately made there, intending to sende the same thither againe laden with bread. The Mariners glad of these tydings, sayled about the Ilande, and in shorte space brought the shippe to the coastes of Xaragua. The sister of king Beuchius Anacauchoa, that wise and pleasaunt woman Anacaona (the wife sometime of Caunaboa the king of the golden house of the mountaynes of Cibana, whose husband died in the way when he shoulde haue bene caryed into Spayne) when she heard say that our shyppe was arriued on the shore of her natiue country, perawaded the king her brother, that they both myght goe together to see it; for the place where the shyppe lay was not paste. vi. myles distant from Xaragua. They rested all night in the midway, in a certaine village in the which was the treasure or iewel house of Anacaona. Her treasure was neither golde, siluer, or pretious stones, but only thinges necessary to be vsed, as chayres, stooles, settels, dishes, potingers, pottes, pannes, basons, treyes, and such other housholde stuffe and instrumentes, workemanly made of a certaine blacke and harde shyning wood, which that excellent learned phisition Iohn baptist Elisius, affirmeth to be Hebene. Whatsoeuer portion of wit nature hath giuen to the inhabitantes of these Ilandes the same doth moste appeare in these kinde of workes, in which they shewe great art and cunnyng, but those which this woman had were made in the Iland of Guanabba, situate in the mouth of the West side of Hispaniola: In these they graue the liuely images of such phantasies as they suppose they see walke by night, which the antiques called Lemures: Also the images of men, serpents, beastes & what so euer other thing they haue once scene. What would you thinke (moste noble prince) that they could do, if they had the vse of Iron and steele? For they onely first make these soft in the fire, & afterwarde make them holowe and carue them with a certayne stone which they find in the riuers. Of stooles and chayres, shee gaue the Lieutenaut fourteene, and of vesselles pertaining to the table and kitchen, shee gaue him threescore, some of wood, and some of earth, also gossampine cotton readie spunne foure great bottomes of exceeding weight. The day following when they came to the

The dressing of
Serpentes to be
eaten.

Serpentes egges
eaten.

Gossampine cot-
ton.

Queene An-
acaona.

The treasure of
Queene Ana-
caona.

Hebene wood.

The Ilande of
Guanabba.

Cunnyng Arti-
ficers.

A stone in the
reede of Ibea.

the sea
shippe b
after the
Anacaon
with the
pieces of
ayre with
had been
chearefull
ship, and
astonied a
ship and
tacklynges
were both
While beh
command
ther aston
ores: & w
would hau
moue some
sometime
were at th
laden with
things, he
all their se
selfe tooke
advertised
he had pre
in causes o
against his
nexus (wh
to obey the
him, so acc
abominabil
he, with his
being distar
sea. These
Ciguaios,
Maibanexi
and such as
corners reac
a great play
ple are very
descende fr
cate all suc
taynes, gaue
declaring ho
he could no
by stoutnes
desiring his
nexus heer
he might.
as soone as
VOL. V.

the sea side where was an other village of the kinges, the Lieutenant commanded the shippe boat to be brought to the shore. The king also had prepared two Canoes, painted after their maner one for himselfe and certayne of his gentelmen, an other for his sister Anacaona and her wayting women: but Anacaona desired to be caried in the shippe boate with the Lieutenant. When they nowe approched neare vnto the shippe, certaine great peeces of ordnance were discharged of purpose, the sea was filled with thunder, and the ayre with smoke, they trembled and quaked for feare, supposing that the frame of the world had bene in danger of falling, but when they sawe the Lieutenant laugh, and looke chearefully on them, they called againe their spirites, and when they yet drewe nearer to the ship, and heard the noises of the fluites, shalmes, and drummes, they were wonderfully astonied at the sweete harmony thereof. Entryng into the shippe, and beholding the fore-ship and the sterne, the toppe castel, the mast, the hatches, the cubbins, the keele, and the tacklynges, the brother fixing his eyes on the sister, and the sister on the brother, they were both as it were dumme and amased and wiste not what to say for too much wondering. While beholding these things, they wandered vp and downe the shippe, the Lieutenant commanded the ankers to be loosed, and the sayles to be hoysed vp. Then were they further astonied, when they sawe so great a mole to moue as it were by it selfe, without ores: & without the force of man: for there arose from the earth such a wynd, as a man would haue wished for of purpose: Yet furthermore, when they perceiued the shippe to moue sometime forwarde, and sometime backwarde, sometime toward the right hand, and sometime towarde the left, and that with one winde and in manner at one instant, they were at their wittes end for to much admiration. These thinges finished, and the shippes laden with bread, and such other rewardes, they beeing also recompenced with other of our thinges, he dismissed not onely the king Beuchius Anacauchoa and his sister, but likewise all their seruantes and women, replenished with ioy and wondering. After this, he himselfe tooke his iourney by foote with his souldiers to the citie of Isabella, where hee was aduertised that one Roldanus Ximenus, a naughty fellow (whom before, being his seruant, he had preferred to bee capitayne of the miners and labourers, and after made him a Iudge in causes of controuersie) had vsed himselfe outrageously, and was maliciously mynded against him, and further, the cause of much mischief in his absence. For king Guarionexius (who a while beefore was pardoned of his former rebellion, & perswaded the people to obey the Spaniardes) was by his naughty vsage, and such other as were confedered with him, so accensed to reuenge the iniuries whiche they susteyned at his handes, beside the abhominable actes which they, following onely the law of nature, abhorred to admit, that he, with his famylie, familiers, and ditionaries, of desperate minde fledde to the mountaynes, being distant from Isabella onely tenne leagues westwarde, towarde the North side of the sea. These mountaynes, and also the inhabitauntes of the same, they call by one name, Ciguaios. The great king of all the kinges and Regions of these mountaines is called Maiobanexius, and his court or palace is named Capronus: the mountaynes are rough, high, and such as no manne can passe to the toppes thereof, they are also bending, and haue their corners reaching downe to the sea. Betweene both the corners of the mountaynes, is there a great playne, by the whiche many riuers fall from the mountaynes into the sea, the people are very fierce and warlike men, hauing their originall of the Canibales: for when they descende from the mountaines to the playnes, to keepe warre with their borderers, they eate all such as they kill. Guarionexius therefore, fleeing to the king of these mountaynes, gaue him many presentes of such thinges as are wanting in his country, therewith declaring how vilely, villanously, and violently hee had bene vsed of our men, with whom he could nothing preuayle, neither by faire meanes, nor by foule, neither by humility, nor by stoutnesse, and that to be the cause of his resorting to him at that time, most humbly desiring him to be his defence against the oppressions of such mischieuous people. Maiobanexius heereupon, made him promise to ayde and helpe him against the Christians all that he might. The Lieutenant therefore made hast to the fortress of Conception, whither, as soone as hee was come, hee sent for Roldanus Xeminus, who with such as followed him,

VOL. V.

C c

lay

Musicall insti-
ments.Ignorance &
couseth admira-
tion.The intempe-
rancy & malice
of a cruell wit
aduauced.

Ciguaios.

Licentiousnes
in libertie.

Hercules pyl-
lers.

A violent per-
suasion.

The furie of
Guarionexius.

The third voyage
of Colonus the
Admirall.

Frenchmen
pyrates.

The Iland of
Madera.

Healing of the
leaper.

lay in certaine of the Iland villages, xii. myles distant from the fortresse. At his coming, the Lieuetenant asked him what all these stirres and tumultes meant? Hee answered without abashment, Your brother the Admirall hath to do therewith, and shall aunswere for the same before the king, for we perceiue that the king hath so put him in trust, that he hath no regarde to vs: here wee perish for hunger, while wee followe you, and are dryuen to seeke our unhappie food in the desertes: Your brother also assigned mee assaunt with you in gouerning the Ilande. Wherefore sith you haue no more respect vnto vs, we are determined no longer to bee vnder your obedience. When Roldanus had spoken these wordes, and such other, the Lieuetenant woulde haue layde handes on him, but he escaped his fingers, and fledde to the West partes of the region of Xaragua, hauing with him a trayne of threescore and ten men, which were of his confederacie. Here this filthy sinke of rebelles thus conspired, playde their vages, and liued with loose bridles in all kinde of mischief, robbing the people, spoyling the countrey, and rauishing both wyues and virgins. Whye these thinges were doing in the Ilande, the Admirall had eight shippes appoynted him by the king, of the which hee sent two laden with victualles, from Cales or Gades of Hercules pyllers, directly to the Lieuetenant his brother. These shippes by chauce arriued first on the side of the Ilande where Roldanus Ximenus ranged with his companions. Roldanus in shorte time hadde seduced them, promising them in the steede of mattockes, wenches pappes: for labour, pleasure: for hunger, abundance: and for wearynesse and watching, sleepe & quietnesse. Guarionexius in the meane time assembled a power of his friendes and confederates, & came oftentimes downe into the plaine, and slue as manie of the Christian men as hee coulde meete conueniently, and also of the Ilande menne which were their friendes, wasting their grounde, destroying their seedes, and spoyling their vyllages. But Roldanus and his adherents, albeit they had knowledge that the Admirall woulde shortly come, yet feared they no thing, because they had seduced the newe men which came in the first shippes. While the Lieuetenant was thus tossed in the myddest of these stormes, in the meane time his brother the Admirall set forward from the coastes of Spayne: but not directly to Hispaniola, for he turned more towarde the South. In the which voyage, what he did, what coastes both of the lande and sea he compassed, and what newe regions he discovered, wee will first declare: for to what ende and conclusion the sayd tumultes and seditions came, we will expresse in the ende of the booke following. Thus fare ye well.

The sixt booke of the first Decade, to Lodouike Cardinal of Aragonie.

Colonus the Admirall, the thirde day of the Calendes of Iune, in the yeare of Christe 1498. hoysed vp his sayles in the hauen of the towne Barramedabas, not farre distant from Cales, & set forward on his voyage with eight ships laden with victualles and other necessities. He diuered from his accustomed race, which was by the Ilandes of Canarie, by reason of certaine Frenchmen pyrates and rousers on the sea, which lay in the right way to meete with him. In the way from Cales to the Ilands of Canarie, about fourescore and tenne myles toward the left hand, is the Iland of Madera, more southward then the city of Ciuile by foure degrees, for the pole Artike is eleuate to Ciuile xxxvi. degrees, but to this Ilande (as the Mariners say) onely xxxii. He sayled therefore first to Madera, and sending from thence directly to Hispaniola the residue of the shippes laden with victualles and other necessities, he himselfe with one shippe with deckes, and two Marchant Carauelles, coasted toward the South to come to the Equinoctiall lyne, and so forth to followe the tracte of the same toward the West, to the intent to search the natures of such places as he coulde finde vnder or near vnto the same, leauing Hispaniola on the North side on his right hande. In the middle of this race, lye xiii. Ilandes of the Portugales, whiche were in olde time called Hesperides, and are now called Caput Viride, or Cabouerde, these are situate in the sea, right ouer against the inner partes of Ethiope, Westwarde two dayes sayling. One of these the Portugales call Bonauista. With the Snailles, or rather the Tortoysses of this Ilande, many leprous men are healed and clensed of their leprosie. Departing sodainly from hence, by reason of the contagiousnesse of the aire, he sayled CCClxxx. myles toward the West Southwest,

Southwest, w
vexed with m
set on fire:
the men also
North pole w
in the which
clowdy and r
not a litle, th
continual day
to his sayles.
that paralel p
me. And the
pleasaut aye
some ayre, ho
warde heauen
day before the
ship, cried ou
fellows to be
sorrowfull, as
also that their
by extreame h
at their first a
shore, yet se
habited, and w
trees and hear
sweete sauoure
to harborowe
he found at the
prouision of fu
neere vnto the
they founde on
a farre of, hau
all armed with
and cutte on th
couered with fy
ouer naked. I
and nature of t
regions of the
maryshes, how
deepe vales. I
paralels of Eth
of the soyles of
ple and regions
same clime, ha
blacke, hauing
of Puta (being
of yelow colour
by the dispositi
the mountaynes
wee knowe like
the North, are
to him with gen
hawkes belles, a

Southwest, whiche is in the middest betweene the West and the South. There was he so vexed with maladies and heate (for it was in the moneth of Iune) that his ships were almost set on fire: The hoopses of his barrells cracked and brake, and the fresh water ranne out: the men also complained that they were not able to abide that extremitie of heat. Here the North pole was eleuate onely. v. degrees from the Horizontall. For the space of viii. dayes, in the which he suffered these extremities, onely the first day was fayre, but all the other, clowdy and raynye, yet neuerthelesse feruent hotte: Wherefore it oftentimes repented him not a litle, that euer he tooke that way. Being tossed in these dangers and vexations eyght continuall dayes, at the length an Eastsoutheast wynde arose, and gaue a prosperous blaste to his sayles. Which wynde following directly towarde the West, he founde the starres ouer that paralel placed in other order, and other kinde of ayre, as the Admirall himselfe tolde me. And they all affirme, that within three dayes sayling, they founde most temperate and plesasunt ayre. The Admirall also affirmeth, that from the clime of the great heat & vnhol-some ayre, hee euer ascended by the backe of the sea, as it were by a high mountayne to-ward the heauen, yet in all this tyme, coulde he not once see any land: But at the length, the day before the Calendes of Iuly, the watchman looking forth of the top castell of the greatest ship, cried out aloude for ioy that he espied three exceeding high mountaines, exhorting his fellows to be of good cheare, & to put away all pensiuenes: for they were very heauie and sorrowfull, aswel for the grieffe which they susteyned by reason of the intollerable heate, as also that their fresh water fayled them, which ranne out at the ryftes of the barrells, caused by extreame heate, as we haue said. Thus being well comforted, they drew to the land, but at their first approach they could not arryue by reason of the shalownes of the sea neere the shore, yet seeing out of their shippes, they might well perceiue that the region was in-habited, and well cultured, for they sawe very faire gardens, and pleasant medowes: from the trees and hearbes whereof, when the morning dewes beeganne to rise, there proceeded manie sweete sauours. Twentie myles distant from hence, they chaunced into a hauen, very apte to harborowe shippes but it had no ryuer running into it. Sayling on yet somewhat further, he found at the length a commodious hauen, wherein he might repayre his shippes, and make prouision of freshe water and fuel. Arenalis calleth this land Puta. They found no houses neere vnto the hauen, but innumerable steppes of certaine wild beastes feete, of the which they founde one deade, much like a goate. The day following, they sawe a Canoa comming a farre of, hauing in it foure and twenty young men of goodly corporature and high stature, all armed with targets, bowes and arrowes: the hayre of their heades was long and playne, and cutte on the forehead much after the manner of the Spanyardes, their priuie partes were couered with fyllets of Gossampine cotton, of sundry colours enterlaced, & were beside all ouer naked. Here the Admirall, considering with himselfe the corporature of this people, and nature of the land, he beleeued the same to be so much the neerer heauen, then other regions of the same paralel, & further remoued from the grosse vapours of the vales, & maryshes, howe much the highest toppes of the biggest mountaynes are distant from the deepe vales. For he earnestly affirmeth, that in all that nauigation, he neuer went out of the paralels of Ethiope: So great difference is there betweene the nature of the inhabitantes, and of the soyles of diuers regions, all vnder one clime or paralel, as is to see betweene the people and regions beeing in the firme lande of Ethiope, and them of the llandes vnder the same clime, hauing the pole starre eleuate in the same degree. For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauing their hayre curled, more like wool then haire: but these people of the lland of Puta (being as I haue sayde vnder the clime of Ethiope) are whyte, with long hayre, and of yelow colour. Wherefore it is apparant, the cause of this so great difference, to be rather by the dispositiō of the earth, then constitution of heauen. For wee knowe that yee falleth on the mountaynes of the Equinoctiall, or burnt lynce, and the same to endure there continually: wee knowe likewise, that the inhabitantes of the regions farre distant from that line toward the North, are molested with great heate. The Admirall, that he might allure the young men to him with gentleness, shewed them looking glasses, fayre and bright vessels of copper, hawkes belles, and such other thinges vnkowne to them. But the more they were called, so

Contagious syre
and extreme
heate.The lland of
Puta.People of comly
corporature and
long haire neere
the Equinoctiall.The higher, the
colder.

Musical instru-
mentes.

The violent
course of the
water from the
East to the
West.

The gulfe called
Os Draconis.

A sea of fresh
water.

Marmasets,
Monkeyes.

The fayre and
large region of
Paria.

Humane people.

much the more they suspected craft and deceyt, and fledde backward: Yet did they with their great admiration behold our menne and their thinges, but still hauing their ores in their handes ready to flee. When the Admirall sawe that he could by no meanes allure them by giftes, hee thought to proue what hee coulde doe with muscalle instrumentes, and therefore commaunded that they which were in the greatest ship, should play on their drummes and shawlnes. But the young men supposing this to be a token of battayle, left their ores, & in the twinkling of an eye hadde their arrowes in their bowes, and their targets on their armes: and thus directing their arrowes towarde our men, stooode in expectation to know what this noyse might meane. Our menne likewise preparing their bowes and arrowes, approached towarde them by litle and litle. But they departing from the Admirals shippe, and trusting to the dexteritie of their ores, came so neere one of the lesse shippes, that one of them plucked the cloke from the gouernour of the shippe, and as well as they coulde by signes required him to come alande, promising faith that they woulde commune with him of peace. But when they sawe him goe to the Admirals ship, whither hee went to aske leaue that he might cōmune with them, suspecting heereby some further deceit, they leapt immediatly into the Canoa, and fledde as swift as the winde, so that to conclude, they could by no meanes be allured to familiarity: Wherefore the Admirall thought it not conuenient to bestow any long time there at this voyage. No great space from this llande, euer towarde the West, the Admirall saith he found so outrageous a fal of water, running with such a violence from the East to the West, that it was nothing inferiour to a mightie streame falling from high mountaynes. Hee also confessed, that since the first day that euer hee knewe what the sea meant, hee was neuer in such feare. Proceeding yet somewhat further in this dangerous voyage, hee founde certaine goulfes of eight myles, as it had bin the entraunce of some great hauen, into the which the sayde violent streames did fall. These goulfes or streightes hee called Os Draconis, that is, the Dragones mouth: and the lland directly ouer against the same, hee called Margarita. Out of these strayghtes, issued no lesse force of freshe water, whiche encountering with the salt, dyd striue to passe soorth, so that beetweene both the waters, was no small conflict: But entering into the goulfe, at the length hee founde the water thereof very fresh and good to drinke. The Admirall himselfe, and they which were his companions in this voyage, beeing men of good credite, and perceiuing my diligence in searching for these matters, tolde mee yet of a greater thing, that is, that for the space of xxvi. leagues, amountyng to a hundreth and foure myles, hee sayled euer by fresh water, insomuch that the further he proceeded, especially towarde the West, hee affirmed the water to bee the fresher. After this, hee came to a high mountaine inhabited onely with Monkeyes or Marmasets, on that parte towarde the East: For that side was rough with rockie and stonie mountaynes, and therefore not inhabited with men. Yet they that went alande to searche the cōuntry, founde neere vnto the sea, manie fayre fieldes, well tilled and sowed, but no people, nor yet houses or cotages: Perhappes they were gone further into the cōuntry, to sowe their corne and applye their husbandrie, as we often see our husbandemen to leaue their stations and villages for the same purpose. In the West side of that mountaine, they espyed a large playne, whither they made hast, and cast anker in the broad riuer. As soone as the inhabitantes had knowledge that a strange nation was arryued in their coastes, they came flocking without all feare to see our men. Wee vnderstoode by their signes and poyntinges, that this Region was called Paria, and that it was very large: insomuch that the further it reacheth toward the West, to bee so much the better inhabited and replenished with people. The Admirall therefore, taking into his ship foure of the men of that lande, searched the West partes of the same. By the temperatenes of the aire, the pleasantnes of the ground, and the multitude of people which they saw daily more & more as they sayled, they coniectured that these thinges portended some great matter: as indeede their opinion failed them not, as we will further declare in his place. The sunne not yet risen, but beginning euen now to rise, being one day allured by the pleasantnesse of the place, and sweete sauours which breathed from the lande to the shippes, they went alande: Here they found a greater multitude of people, then in any other place. As our men approached towarde them, there came

The first

came ce
Admiral
and all t
and mad
shippes,
and bras
playes ar
landes, c
them, th
scorneful
teemed p
bee filled
laden to
to deferre
laden wit
and so so
entertayn
holde son
whome th
thinke it
luted and
vnto the v
a certaine
were sette
with wyne
knowne to
of dyuers
mans hous
great com
They are v
They are a
partes wit
was fewe,
and many
taines, see
ting their
to the mo
meant by
exceeding
When the
at afterno
loosed the
in good or
rewarde of
the sea, &
shippe as
places and
sounding,
uince of I
Manacapa
When he
& doubting
into a ryue

came certaine messengers from their Cacici, that is, the kings of the countrey, to desire the Admirall in the name of their Princes to come to their palaces without feare, and that they and all theirs shoulde be at his commaundement. When the Admirall hadde thanked them, and made his excuse for that time, there came innumerable people with their boates to the shippes, hauyng for the most parte cheynes about their neckes, garlandes on their heades, and braselettes on their armes of pearle of India, and that so commonly, that our women in playes and triumphes, haue not greater plentie of stones of glasse and crystall in their garlandes, crownes, girdels, and such other tyrements. Beeing asked where they gathered them, they pointed to the next shore by the sea bankes. They signified also, by certayne scornefull gestures which they made with their mouthes and handes, that they nothing esteemed pearles. Taking also baskettes in their handes they made signes that the same might bee filled with them in shorte space. But because the corne wherewith his shippes were laden to be caryed into Hispaniola, had taken hurt by reaso of the salt water, he determined to deferre this marte to a more conuenient time: Yet he sent to land two of the ship boates laden with men, to the intent to fetch some garlands of pearles for exchange of our thinges, and so somewhat to search the nature of the Region, and disposition of the people. They entertaigned our men gently, and came flocking to them by heapes, as it had beene to beholde some strange monsters. First there came to meete our men, two men of grauitie, whome the multitude followed: One of these was well in age, and the other but young. They thinke it was the father, with his sonne which shoulde succeed him. When the one had saluted and embraced the other, they brought our menne into a certaine round house, neere vnto the whiche was a great court. Hither were brought many chayers and stools made of a certaine blacke wood, and very cunningly wrought. After that our men and their Princes were sette, their wayting men came in laden, some with sundry delicate dyshes, and some with wyne: But their meate, was onely fruites, and those of diuers kindes, and vtterly vnknowne to vs. Their wine was both white and redde, not made of grapes, but of the lycour of dyuers fruites, and very pleasaunte in drinking. After this banquette made in the olde mans house, the young man brought them to his tabernacle or mantion place, where was a great companie both of men and women, but they stood disseuered the one from the other. They are white, euen as our men are, sauing such as are much conuersant in the sunne. They are also very gentle, and full of humanitie toward strangers. They couer their priue partes with Gossampine cotton, wrought with sundry colours, and are beside all naked. There was fewe, or none, that had not eyther a collar, a chayne, or a bracelet of golde and pearles, and many had all. Beeing asked where they had that golde, they poynted to certaine mountaines, seeming with their countenance to dissuade our menne from going thither: For putting their armes in their mouthes, and grynning as though they bytte the same, still poynting to the mountaines, they seemed to insinuate that menne were eaten there: but whether they meant by the Canibales, or wilde beastes, our men coulde not well perceiue. They tooke it exceeding grieuously, that they coulde neither vnderstande our men, nor our men them. When they whiche were sent to lande, were returned to the shippes about three of the clocke at afternoone the same day, bringing with them certaine garlandes, and collers of pearles, they loosed their ankers to departe, minding to come againe shortly, when all thinges were sette in good order in Hispaniola: but hee was preuented by another, which defeated him of the rewarde of his traualle. Hee was also hindered at this time by reason of the shalownesse of the sea, & violent course of the water, which with continuall tossing, bruised the greatest shippe as often as any great gale of wind arose. To auoyde the daungers of suche shalowe places and shelles, hee euer sent one of the smallest Carauelles beefore to try the way with sounding, and the biggest shippes followed beehinde. The Regions being in the large prouince of Paria, for the space of CCxxx. myles, are called of the inhabitants, Cumana, & Manacapana: from these regions distant. xl. leagues, is there an other region called Curiana. When he had thus passed ouer this long tract of sea, supposing still that it had bin an Island, & doubting that he might passe by the West to the North directly to Hispaniola, he chaunced into a ryuer of xxx. cubites depth, and of such breadth as hath not lightly beene heard of.

Chayers and
stools of He
bene.

White men
neere the Equi
noctiall.

Shalownesse of
the sea.

The vse of Ca
rauelles or Bri
gandines.

A ryuer of mut
tueylous depth
and breadth.

For

For hee affirmeth it to bee xxviii. leagues. A little further towarde the West, yet some what more southwarde, as the bendyng of the shore requyred, he entered into a sea full of herbes or weedes. The seede of the herbes which swymme on the water, are much like the berries of the tree called Lentiscus, which beareth the sweete gumme called Mastix: they grewe so thicke, that they sometimes in maner stayed the shippes. The Admirall reported, that here there is not one day throughout all the yeere much longer or shorter then an other, and that the North pole is here eleuate onely five degrees as at Paria, in whose tracte all these coastes lye. He also declared certayne thinges as concerning the varietie of the North pole: the which because they seeme contrarye to th'opinions of all the Astronomers, I will touche them but with a drye foote, as sayth the prouerbe. But it is well knowen (most noble prince) that which wee call the pole starre, or North starre (called of the Italians Tramontana) is not the very poynt of the pole Artyke, vpon the which the axes or extremities of heauens are turned about. The which thing may well be proued, if when the starres first appeare, you behold the pole starre through any narowe hole: For so; applying your instrument therto in the morning, somewhat before the day spring haue blemished their light, if then you looke through the same hole, you shall perceiue it to be moued from the place where you sawe it first. But how it cometh to passe, that at the beginning of the euening twilight, it is eleuate in that Region onely five degrees in the moneth of Iune, and in the morning twilight to be eleuate. xv. degrees by the same quadrant, I doe not vnderstand, nor yet doe the reasons which hee bryngeth, in any poynt satisfie me. For he sayeth that he hereby coniectured, that the earth is not perfectly round, but that when it was created, there was a certayne heape rayed thereon, much higher then the other partes of the same. So that (as he sayth) it is not rounde after the forme of an apple or a bal (as other thinke) but rather like a pear as it hangeth on the tree, and that Paria is the Region which possesseth the superminient or highest port thereof nearest vnto heauen: In so much that he earnestly contendeth the earthly Paradise to be sytuate in the toppes of those three hilles, which we sayde before, that the watchman saw out of the toppe castel of the shippe, and that the outrageous streames of the freshe waters which so violently issue out of the sayd gulfes, and striue so with the salt water, fall headlong from the tops of the said mountaines: But of this matter, it shall suffice to haue said thus much. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the hystorie from which wee haue digressed. When he perceiued himselfe to be thus inwrapped in so great a gulfes beyond his expectation, so that he had now no hope to finde any passage toward the North, whereby he might sayle directly to Hispaniola, he was enformed to turne backe the same way by the which hee came, and directed his voiage to Hispaniola by the North of that land lying toward the East. They which afterwards searched this land more curiously, will it to bee parte of the continent or firme land of India, and not of Cuba as the Admirall supposed: For there are many which affirme that they haue sayled round about Cuba. But whether it be so or not, or whether enuying the good fortune of this man, they seeke occasion of quarrelling against him, I can not iudge: But time shall speake, which in time appointed, reuealeth both truth & falsehood. But whether Paria be continent or not, the Admirall doth not much contende, but hee supposeth it to bee continent: He also affirmeth that Paria is more southward then Hispaniola by eyght hundred fourescore and two myles. At the length he came to Hispaniola (to see his souldiers which he left with his brethren) the third day of the calendes of September, in the yeare. 1498, but (as often times chaunceth in humane thinges) among his so many prosperous, pleasant, and luckie affayres, fortune mingled some seedes of wormewood, and corrupted his pure corne with the malicious weedes of cockle.

¶ The seauenth booke of the first decade, to the same Lodouike Cardinall, &c.

When the Admirall was now come to the Iland of Hispaniola, hee founde all thinges confounded and out of order. For Roldanus (of whom wee spake before) refused in his absence to obey his brother, trusting to the multitude of such as were confedered with him, and not onely behaued himselfe proudly against the Admiralles brother and Lieutenenant, sometime his maister, but also sent letters to his reproch to the Kyng of Spayne therein accusyng both

The eleuation of
the Pole at
Paria.

Note a secreete
as concerning
the Pole starre.

An experience.

A marueylous
secrete.

Time reuealeth
all thinges.

The Spaniards
rebell in the
Admiralles absence.

The first D

both the br
messengers
grace to sen
nes, and pu
to be vniust
vppon euery
tooke pleasu
beastes reioy
ceiued their
(they sayde
permit none
mirall on the
anouched the
fellows, ab
uishers of w
sons, or fled
wherein they
like maner a
and sleepe,
would not no
like vnto the
miserable Ila
tinue from sh
now & then
with his swor
with moste
from the bod
nourable. T
before the ki
tenant with
thousande of
people of Ci
mischiefe to
conducted his
wee sayde be
found two sec
selfe headlon
companions:
there lay in
by. Wherefo
his whole arm
they came ru
like vnto the
all paynted a
they make of
iuyce whereof
their hayre (v
and rolled af
newly broke
the ryuer, the
light of the s
thereof with th
being wounde

both the brethren, laying haynous matters to their charge. But the Admirall agayne sent messengers to the King, whiche might informe him of their rebellion, instantly desiring his grace to sende hym a newe supplye of menne, whereby he might suppress their licentiousnes, and punish them for their mischieuous actes. They accuse the Admiral and his brother to be vniust menne, cruell enemies, and shedders of the Spanyshe bloode, declaring that vppon euery light occasion they would racke them, hang them, and head them, and that they tooke pleasure therein, and that they departed from them as from cruell tyrantes and wilde beastes reioycing in bloode, also the kinges enemies: affirming likewise, that they well perceived their entent to be none other then to vsurpe the empire of the llands, which thing (they sayde) they suspected by a thousande coniectures, and especially in that they would permit none to resort to the golde mynes, but onely such as were their familiars. The Admirall on the contrary part, when hee desired ayde of the king to infringe their insolencie, auouched that all those his accusers, which had aduised such lyes against him, were noughtie fellows, abhominable knaues and vilands, theecues, and baudes, ruffians, adulterers, & rauishers of women, false peiriured vagaboundes, and such as had bin eyther conuict in prysons, or fledde for feare of iudgement: so escaping punishment, but not leauing vice, wherein they still contynued, and brought the same with them to the lland, liuing there in like maner as before, in theft, lechery, & all kindes of mischief, and so giuen to idleness and sleepe, that whereas they were brought thither for mysters, labourers, & scullians, they would not now goe one furlong from their houses, except they were borne on mens backs, like vnto them which in olde time were called Ediles Curules: For, to this office they put the miserable lland men whom they handled most cruelly. For least their hands shoulde continue from shedding of blood, and the better to try their strength and manhood, they vsed now & then for their pastime, to striue among themselves, & proue who could most cleanelly with his sworde at one stroke strike of the heade of an innocent: So that hee which coule with moste agilitie make the head of one of those poore wretches to flee quite and cleane from the body to the grounde at one stroke, hee was the best man, and counted most honourable. These thinges, and many such other, the one of them laid to the others charge before the king. While these thinges were doing, the Admirall sent his brother the Lieutenant with an armie of fourescore and tenne footemen, and a fewe horsemen (with three thousande of the llande men which were mortall enemies to the Ciguauians) to meete the people of Ciguana, with King Guarionexius their graunde capitayne, who hadde doone much mischief to our menne, and such as fauoured them. Therefore when the Lieutenaut had conducted his army to the bankes of a certaine great ryuer running by the playne, which wee sayde before to lye betweene the corners of the mountaynes of Ciguana and the sea, he found two scoutes of his enemies lurking in certeyne bushes, whereof the one, casting himselfe headlong into the sea, escaped, and by the mouth of the riuer swamme ouer to his companions: the other being taken, declared that in the woode on the other side the riuer, there lay in campe sixe thousande Ciguauians ready, vnwares to assaile our men passing by. Wherefore the Lieutenaut finding a shalow place where he might passe cuer, he with his whole armie entred into the ryuer, the which thing when the Ciguauians had espyed, they came runnyng out of the woodes with a terrible cry, and most horrible aspect, much like vnto the people called Agathyrsi, of whom the poet Virgil speaketh: For they were all paynted and spotted with sundry colours, and especially with blacke and red, which they make of certaine fruits norished for the same purpose in their gardens, with the iuyce whereof they paynt themselves from the forehead, euen to the knees, hauing their hayre (which by art they make long and blacke, if nature denye it them) wreathed and rolled after a thousande fashions, a man would thinke them to be deuilles incarnat newly broke out of hell, they are so like vnto helhounds. As our men waded ouer the ryuer, they shotte at them, and hurled dartes so thicke, that it almost tooke the light of the sunne from our men: insomuch that if they hadde not borne of the force thereof with their targettes, the matter had gone wrong with them. Yet at the length, many being wounded, they passed ouer the ryuer: which thing when the enimies sawe, they fled whom

The Spaniards
accuse the Ad-
miral.

The Admirall
answers.

These had the
custodies of the
temples.

A cruell &
deuillish pas-
time.

Hayre made
long & blacke by
arte.

King Maiobanexius.

An army of eight thousand Ciguauians.

King Guarionexius.

Naturall hatred of vyce.

The Lieutenantes gentle-ness toward Maiobanexius.

whom our men pursuing, slue some in the chase, but not many, by reason of their swiftnesse of foote. Thus being in the wooddes, they shotte at our men more safely, for they being accustomed to the wooddes, and naked without any let passed through the bushes and shrubbes, as it had bin wild bores or Hartes, whereas our men were hindred by reason of their apparell, targets, long iauelins & ignorance of the place. Wherefore, when he had rested there all that night in vaine & the day folowing he sawe no stirring in the wooddes, he went (by the counsel and conduct of the other llande men which were in his army) immediately fro thence to the mountaines in the which king Maiobanexius had his cheefe mansion place, in the village called Capronum, by the which name also the kings place was called, being in the same village. Thus marching forward with his armie, about twelue myles of, he encamped in the village of another king, which the inhabitants had forsaken for feare of our men: Yet making diligent search, they found two, by whom they had knowledg that there was tenne kinges with Maiobanexius in his palace of Capronum, with an armie of eight thousand Ciguauians. At the Lieutenants first approach, he durst not giue them battayle, vntill he had somewhat better searched the regions: yet did he in the meane time skirmish with them twice. The next nyght about midnight, hee sent forth scoutes, and with them guides of the llande men which knew the country. Whome the Ciguauians espying fro the mountaines prepared themselues to the battayle, with a terrible cry or alarum after their maner, but yet durst not come out of the woods supposing that the Lieutenant with his mayne army had bin euen at hand. The day folowing, when he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping out of the wooddes they twice attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely assaying our men with a mayne force: and wounding many before they coulde couer them with their targettes: Yet our men put them to flight, slue many, tooke many, the residue fled to the wooddes, where they kept them still as in their most safe holde. Of them which were taken, he sent one, and with him another of the lland men, which was of his part, to Maiobanexius, with commaundement in this effect. The Lieutenant brought not hither his army (O Maiobanexius) to keepe warre either against you, or your people, for he greatly desireth your friendship: but his intent is, that Guarionexius, who hath perswaded you to be his ayde against him, to the great destruction of your people, and vndoing of your country, may haue due correction, as wel for his disobedience toward him, as also for raying tumultes among the people: Wherefore he requireth you, and exhorteth you to deliuer Guarionexius into their hands the which thing if you shall performe, the Admiral his brother will not only gladly admit you to his friendship, but also enlarge and defend your dominion. And if herein you refuse to accomplys his request, it will followe, that you shall shortly repente you thereof: For your kingdome shalbe wasted with sworde and fire, and shall abide the fortune of warre, whereof you haue had experience with fauour, as you shall further know heereafter to your payne, if with stubbernesse you prouoke him to shewe the vttermoste of his power. When the messenger had thus done his arant, Maiobanexius answered, that Guarionexius was a good man, indued with many vertues as al men knewe, and therefore he thought him worthy his ayde, especially in as much as he fled to him for succoure, and that he had made him such promise, whom also he had proued to be his faithful friend: againe, that they were naughty men, violent, and cruell, desiring other mens goodes, and such as spared not to shed innocents blood: in fine, that hee would not haue to doe with such mischieuous men, nor yet enter into friendshippe with them. When these thinges came to the Lieutenantes eare, he commanded the village to be burnt where he himselfe encamped, with many other villages there about: and when he drew nere to the place where Maiobanexius lay, he sent messengers to him againe, to commune the matter with him, & to will him to send some one of his most faithfull friendes to entreate with him of peace. Wherevpon the king sent vnto him one of his cheefe gentlemen, and with him two other to wayte on him. When he came to the Lieutenantes presence, he friendly required him to perswade his lord and maister in his name, and earnestly to admonishe him, not to suffer his flourishing kingdome to be spoyled, or himselfe to abide the sardes of warre for Guarionexius sake: and further to exhort him to deliuer him, excepte he would

The first

would p
messeng
was don
that eue
them, th
princely
thing he
or agayn
abide all
reporte
dimissin
promisin
much tha
poynted
the inten
way, & a
the Lieue
man, of
Lieutenan
deade in
deale wi
chiefe pa
euery ma
fledde to
him, for
in time t
Whereas
labour, an
leau to
He gaue
with him
that dur
whereof
beastes
Their dri
time mu
had, was
and in c
the Lieue
place fir
his men
chanced
make pr
the sam
enterpri
stratage
his wyf
tenant.
denne.
The Lie
to lye i
and the
brough
vol.

would procure the destruction both of himselfe, his people, and his country. When the messenger was returned, Maiobanexius assembled the people, declaring vnto them what was done: but they cryed out on him to deliuer Guarionexius, and began to curse the day that euer they had receiued him, thus to disturbe their quietnesse. Maiobanexius answered them, that Guarionexius was a good man, & had well deserued of him, giuing him many princely presentes, and had also taught both his wife and him to sing and dance, which thing he did not little esteeme, and was therefore fully resolu'd in no case to forsake him, or agaynst all humanitie to betray his friend, which fled to him for succour, but rather to abide all extremities with him, then to minister occasion of obloquy to slaundersers, to reporte that he had betrayed his ghest, whom he tooke into his house with warranties. Thus dismissing the people, sighing and with sorrowfull harts, he called Guarionexius before him, promising him agayne, that he would be partaker of his fortune, while life lasted: in so much that he thought it not best to send any further woorde to the Lieutenant, but appoynted him whom beefore he sent to him, to keepe the way with a garrison of men, to the intent, that if any messengers shoulde be sent from the Lieutenaut to stay them by the way, & admit none to communication, or further entreatie of peace. In the meane time, the Lieutenaut sent two, whereof the one was a captiue Ciguauian, and the other an llande man, of them which were friendes to our men: and they were both taken and slayne. The Lieutenant followed them onely with ten footmen & foure horsemen, finding his messengers deade in the way, hee was further prouoked to wrath, and determined more extreemely to deale with Maiobanexius, & therefore went forward incontinently with his whole army to his chiefe pallace of Capronum, where he yet lay in campe. At his approach, all the kings fled, euery man his way, & forsooke their capitaine Maiobanexius, who also with all his family, fledde to the rough mountaynes. Some of the Ciguauians sought for Guarionexius to slay him, for that hee was the cause of all these troubles: but his feete saued his life, for he fledde in time to the mountaynes, where he lurked in maner alone among the desolate rockes. Whereas now the Lieutenantes souldiers were forewearyed with longe warre, with watching, labour, and hunger (for it was nowe three moneths since the warres began) many desired leaue to depart to the tower of Conception, where they had granges, & exercised tillage. He gaue them their passeports with allowance of victayles, and so that onely thirtie remained with him. These three monethes warre, they continued verie painefull and miserably: So that during all that time, they had none other meate but only Cazibi, that is, such roots whereof they make their bread, and that but seldome to their fill: also Vsias, that is, little beastes like Conies, if by chaunce nowe and then they tooke some with their hounds. Their drinke was none other then water, suche as they founde, sometime sweet and sometime muddy, sauouring of the maryshes. Among these delicats, that little sleepe that they had, was euer for the most part abroad vnder the firmament, and that not without watchmen, and in continuall remouing as the nature of warre requireth. With these fewe therefore, the Lieutenant determin'd to search the mountaynes, dennes, and caues, if he could in any place finde the steppes of Maiobanexius or Guarionexius. In the meane time certaine of his men (whome hunger enforced to goe a hunting, to proue if they could take any conies) chanced vpon two of Maiobanexius familiars, which were sent to certaine villages of his, to make prouision of bread. These he enforced to declare where their lord lay hid, & vsed the same also for guides, to bring our men to the place. Twelue of our men tooke this enterpryse in hand, painting themselves after the maner of the Ciguauians: So that by this stratageme or policie, they came sodenly vpon Maiobanexius, and tooke him prysoner, with his wyfe, children and family, and conueighed them to the towre of Conception to the Lieutenant. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled Guarionexius to come out of the denne, whome certaine of the people fearing the Lieutenant, beewrayed to our hunters. The Lieutenant being certified hereof, sent forth a bande of foote men, commanding them to lye in ambush vntill such time as Guarionexius went from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then sodenly to entrappe him. They went as they were commaunded, tooke him, and brought him away with them, and by this meanes were all the regions neare about pacified

A rare faithful-
nesse in a bar-
barous king.

The Lieute-
nantes messen-
gers are slaine.

The Spanyards
are painfull
in the wars.

A desperate ad-
uenture with
thirtie men.

A policie

A beautifull
woman.

The kinges sub-
mit themselves
to the Lieute-
nant.

A new gou-
ernour of the
Ilande.

The Ocean sea
heretofore vn-
knowne.

The nauigation
of Petrus Al-
phonsus.

and quieted. A certayne noble woman of neere kinred to Malobanexius, and wife to another king, whose dominion was yet vntouched, followed him in all these aduersities. They affirme this woman to bee the sayrest and most beautifull, that euer nature brought forth in the Iland: Whom, when the king her husbande, who loued her most ardently (as her beautie deserved) hearde say that she was taken prisoner, hee wandred vp and downe the desertes like a man out of his witte, not knowing what to doe or say. But at the length, he came to the Lieutenant, promising most faithfully, that hee woulde submit himselfe and all that he coulde make, vnder his power, so that hee woulde restore him his wife. The Lieutenant accepted the condition, & restored him his wife, with certain other rulers and gentlemen which he had taken prisoners before: charging them, and binding them with an othe, to be ready at his commaundement. Shortly after, this king of his owne free motion, came agayne to the Lieutenant, bringing with him siue thousande men without weapons, sauing onely such instrumentes as they vse in tillage of their ground. He brought with him also seedes to sow, wherewith at his owne charge, hee caused such plentie of their corne and fruites to grow in sundry places of the large vale, whereof we spake before, that shortly after were scene many sayre and fruitfull fieldes that came thereof and for his gentlenesse beeing rewarded of the Lieutenaut with certaine of our thinges, hee departed ioyfully. When the report hereof came to the Cignauians, it moued the minds of the kinges to hope of clemencie, whereupon they came together to the Lieutenant with humble submission and faithfull promise, euer after to bee vnder his obedience, desiring him to restore vnto them their king with his familie. At their request, the Kinges wife and his householde was sette at libertie, but the king kept still as a prisoner. These thinges did the Lieutenaut in the Ilande, not yet knowing what his aduersaries and accusers hadde layde to his charge before the king of Spayne: who being disquieted with their quarrellinges and accusations, and especially for that by reason of their dissention, of so great abundance of golde and other thinges, there was as yet but little brought into Spayne, appointed a newe gouernour, which shoulde see a redresse in these thinges: and eyther to punishe such as were faultie, or else to sende them to him. What was founde against the Admirall and his brother, or against his aduersaries which accused him, I doe not well knowe. But this I am sure of, that both the brethren are taken, brought, & caste in pryson, with their goods confiscate. But as soone as the king vnderstood that they were brought bound to Cales, he sent messengers in post, with commaundement that they should be loosed and come freely to his presence: wherby he declared that he tooke their troubles grieuously. It is also said, that the new gouernour sent letters to the king, written with the Admiralles hande in straunge and vknowne sypheringes, to his brother the Lieutenaut being absent, willing him to bee in a readines with a power of armed men to come and aid him, if the Gouernour shoulde proffer him any violence. Whereof the gouernour hauing knowledge (as hee sayth) beeing also aduertised that the Lieutenaut was gone to his brother before the menne which hee had prepared there in a readines, apprehended them both vnwares, before the multitude came together. What will followe, tyme, the most true and prudent iudge will declare. Thus fare ye well.

¶ The eight booke of the first Decade, to Cardinal Lodouike.

THE great, rich, and plentifull Ocean sea, heretofore vknowne, and now found by Christophorus Colonus the Admiral, by the authoritie & furtherance of the Catholike king, I haue presētēd vnto your honor (right noble prince) like a golden chaine vnworkmanly wrought: but you shal now receiue a precious iewel to be appendant therto. Therefore among such as were pylots or gouernors vnder the Admiral, & had diligētly marked the courses & differēces of the windes, many had lycences granted them of the king to seeke further at their own charges, vpon cōditiō to pay him faithfully his portion, which is the fift part. But because amonge all other, one Petrus Alphonsus, called Nignus by his surname, sayled toward the South with more prosperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it best first to speake somewhat of his voyage. He therefore with only one ship, wel furnished

at

at his owne
coat anke
first to E
landes, a
the same
of Cuman
where he
which Et
drew ne
space of
there me
desired A
belles, p
and glass
chaunged
Then the
should th
and the d
a great m
when he
had only
gaue the
Canoas:
whole pe
these the
with them
marchau
conuersat
wood, co
fishes in
also great
coloure a
they nori
groue, bu
the henr
so that t
sumed co
peacock,
stocke d
glasse.
as it had
shoulde
declaring
out of t
for their
lodging
beastes i
the beas
a hunting
hath bec
them to
They la
Ilandes.

at his owne charges, after that he had his passeporte, with commaundement in no case to cast anker past fiftie leagues distant from any place where the Admirall had touched, sayled first to Paria, where the Admirall found both the men and women so laden with cheines garlandes, and braselettes of pearles, as we haue saide before. Coasting therefore along by the same shore, according to the kings commaundement (yet leauing behind him the regions of Cumana and Manacapana he came to the regions which thinhabitantia therof cal Curiana, where he found a hauen (as he saith) much like the porte of Gades or Cales: into the which etering he sawe a farre of certayne houses on the shore, and perceiued, when hee drewe neere, that it was a village of onely eight houses. Proceeding yet further for the space of three myles, he espied an other village well replenyshed with people, where there met him fiftie naked men on a company, hauing with them a certaine ruler, who desired Alphonsus to come to their coastes. He brought with him at this time, many haukes belles, pynnes, needels, braselettes, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges, with counterfet stones and glasses, and such other trifelles, the which within the moment of an houre, he had exchanged for fiftene ounces of their pearles, which they wore aboute their neckes and armes. Pearles for trythes. Then they yet more earnestly desired him to sayle to their coastes, promising him that he should there haue as many pearles as he would desire. Hee condescended to their request: Great plenty of pearles. and the day folowing, came to the place where they appoynted him: Lying there at anker, a great multitude of people resorted to him, instantly requyring him to come a land. But when he considered the innumerable multitude of people which was there assembled, and he had only. xxxiii. men in his company, he durst not commit him selfe to their haundes, but gaue them to vnderstand by signes and tokens, that they should come to the ship with their Canoas: for their boates (which the men of the Iland cal Canoas) are made only of one whole peece of wood as in the Ilands, yet more rude, and not so artificially as theirs are: these they call Gallitas. These swarmed therefore to the ship as faste as they might, bringing with them great plenty of pearles (which they cal Tenoras) exchanging the same for our marchaundies. He found this people to bee of gentle nature, simple, and innocent, being conuersant with them in their houses, for the space of xx. dayes. Their houses are made of wood, couered with the leaues of date trees. Their meate for the most parte, is the shel fishes in the which the pearles are engendered, wherof their sea coastes are full. They haue also great plenty of wild beastes, as harts, wild bores, and connies like vnto hares, both in coloure and bignesse, stocke doues also, and turtle doues: likewise geese and duckes, which they norishe in their houses as we doe. Peacockes flie aboute in maner in euery wood and groue, but they are not distinct with sundry colours as ours are: for the cockes are like vnto the hennes. These people of Curiana are craftie hunters, & exceeding cunning archers, so that they will not lightly misse any beaste or birde that they shoote at. Our men consumed certaine daies heere very pleasantly: during which time, whosoouer brought them a peacock, had for the same foure pinnes: he that brought a pheasaunte, had two, and for a stocke doue, or turtle doue, one, and for a goose, a smale looking glasse, or a little stoe of glasse. Thus they bought and sold with profering and bidding, denying and refusing, as it had bin in a great market. When pinnes were profered them, they asked what they shoulde doe with them, being naked: But our men satisfied them with a craftie answer, declaring by tokes that they were very necessary, to picke their teeth, and to pull thornes out of their fleshe. But aboute all thinges, haukes belles were most esteemed among them, for their sound & faire colour, & would therefore giue much for one of them. Our men, lodging in their houses, heard in the night season horrible noise & roringes of the wylde beastes in the woodes which are full of exceding great and high trees of sundrie kindes: but the beastes of these woodes, are not noysome to men, for the people of the countrey goe daylye a hunting naked, with their bowes and arrowes, yet hath it not bene heard of, that any man hath bene slayne of any wild beaste. As many hartes and wild bores as our men would desire them to bring, they would kill in the woods with their arrowes, and not fayle to bring them. They lacke kyne, goates and sheepe. Their bread is made of rootes, as is theirs of the Ilandes. This nation, hath blacke hayre, grosse and somewhat curld, yet long also. They

The vse of pynnes. Haukes belles in great estimation. Roring of wylde beastes. Hartes and wilde bores.

Cunning artificers.
Base golde.

Tokens of the
continent or
firme lande.

The golden re-
gion of Can-
chieta.

The Equinoctial
line.

Gossampine
trees.

Canibales in the
gulfes of Paria.

keepe their teeth very white, and for that purpose vse to cary a certaine hearbe betweene their lypes for the most part of the day, and to wash their mouthes when they cast it away. The women doe all their busines at home in their houses, and haue also the cure of tyllage of the ground: but the men apply themselves to the warres and hunting, to play, synging and daunsyng. They haue sundry kindes of water pottes iugges, and drinking cuppes made of earth in other places about them, and brought thither for exchange of other things. For they vse sayres and markettes for the same purpose, and are greatly desirous of such thinges, as are not brought soorth or made in their countrey, as nature hath giuen a disposition to all men, to desire and be delighted with new and strange thinges. Many of them had hanging at their pearles the images of certeine beastes and birdes, very artificiously made of gold, but not pure: these also are brought them from other places for exchāg of other thinges. The gold whereof they are made, is natieue and of much like finenes to that whereof the florens are coyned. The menne of this country, enclose their priue members in a gourd, cut after the fashiō of a codde peice, or els couer the same with the shell of a tortoise, tyed about their loynes with laces of gossampine cotton: In other places of that tract, they thrust the sinew within the sheath thereof, and binde the skinne fast with a string. The great wild beastes whereof we spake before, and many other thinges which are not found in any of the llandes, testifie that this region is part of the continent or firme lande. But the chiefest coniecture whereby they argue the same, is, that by the coastes of that lande, from Paria toward the West, they sayled about three M. myles, finding no signe or token of any end. These people of Curiana (which some call Curtana) being demanded where they had such plenty of golde, signified that it was brought them from a region called Canchieta, or Cauchieta, being distant from them sixe sunnes, that is, sixe dayes iourney westward: and that their images of golde were made in the same region. Whereupon our men directed their voyage thither immediatly, and arryued there at the Calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of CHRIST a thousand and fife hundred. The people of the country resorted to them without feare, bringing with them of the golde which we sayd to bee natieue in that region. This people hadde also collers of pearles about their neckes, which were brought them from Curiana for exchange of their marchandises. None of them would exchange any of those thinges which they hadde out of other countreyes: as neyther the Curians golde, nor the Canchietans pearles: yet among the Canchietans they found but litle gold ready gathered: They tooke with them from thence certain very fayre Marmasets or Munkeyes, and many Popingayes of sundry coloures. In the moneth of Nouember, the ayre was there most temperate, and nothing colde. The guardens of the North pole were out of sight to both these people, they are so neare the Equinoctial. Of the degrees of the pole, they can giue none other accompt. These people are well disposed men, of honest conditions, and nothing suspitious, for almost all the night long they resorted to the shippe with their boates, and went aboarde shippe without feare, as did the Curians. They call pearles, Corixas. They are somewhat iealous, for when any straungers come among them, they euer place their women beehind them. In this region of Canchieta, the gossampine trees growe of themselves commonly in many places, as doe with vs Elmes, Willowes, and Sallowes: and therefore they vse to make breeches of cotton, wherewith they couer their priue partes in many other Regions thereabout. When they had yet sayled on forward by the same coastes, there came forth against them about two thousand men, armed after their manner, forbydding them to come a land. These people were so rude and sauage, that our men could by no meanes allure them to familiaritie. Our men therefore, cōtented only with their pearles, returned backe the same way they came, where they remayned with the Curians continually for the space of xx. dayes, and filled their bellies wel with good meate. And here it semeth to me not farre from my purpose, to declare what chaunced vnto them in their returne when they came now within the sight of the coast of Paria. They happened therefore in the way, at Os Draconis, and the gulfes of Paria (wherof we spake before) to meete with a nauy of xviii. Canoas of Canibals, which went a routing to hunt for men who assoone as they had espied our men, assailed their ship fiercely, & without feare enclosed the same,

disturbing

disturbing
gunnes,
one of
another
handes,
and eate
following
Then wi
foote, g
ly reuer
When ho
he answ
clubbes
themsel
Curiana
certaine
the enin
plentie
of the w
when th
most pu
sorte the
it to sin
whence
springes
greatly
also wor
change
bodies
much li
consumi
dried c
myliar
thus dri
Februar
vnces to
to the v
iourney
of the
it back
euery
phonst
pearles
nando
they at
detyrn
as orie
son th
honora
they
surely
had n
twent

disturbing our men on euery side with their arrowes: but our men so feared thē with their gunnes, that they fled immediatly, whom our men following with the shipp boate, tooke one of their Canoes, and in it only one Canibal (for the other had escaped) and with him another man bounde, who with teares running downe his cheekes, and with gesture of his handes, eyes, and head, signified that sixe of his companions had bin cruelly cut in peeces, and eate of that mischeiuous nation, and that he should haue bin likewise handled the day folowing: wherefore they gaue him power ouer the Canibal, to do with him what he would. Then with the Canibals owne clubbe, he laide on him all that he might driue with hand and foote, grinning and fretting as it had ben a wild bore, thinking that he had not yet sufficiently reuenged the death of his companions, when he had beaten out his braynes and guttes. When he was demanded after what sort the Canibales were wont to inuade other countries, he answered, that they euer vsed to carye with them in their Canoes, a great multitude of clubbes, the which, wheresoeuer they doe land they pitch in the grounde, and encampe themselves within the compasse of the same, to lie the more safely in the night season. In Curiana they found the head of a captaine of the Canibales, nayled ouer the doore of a certaine gouernour for a token of victorie, as it had bin the standard or helmet taken from the enemie in bataille. In these coastes of Paria is a region called Haraia, in the which great plentie of salt is gathered after a strange sorte: for the sea being there tossed with the power of the wyndes, dyueth the salt waters into a large plaine by the sea side, where, afterwarde when the sea waxeth calme, and the sunne beginneth to shine, the water is congealed into most pure and white salte, wherewith innumerable shippes might bee laden, if men did resorte thether for the same before there fall any rayne: For the rayne melteth it, and causeth it to sinke into the sand, and so by the poares of the earth to returne to the place from whence it was dryuen. Other say, that the playne is not filled from the sea, but of certaine springes whose water is more sharpe and salt then the water of the sea. Thinhabitantes doe greatly esteeme this bay of sault, which they vse, not onely for their owne commoditie, but also working the same into a square forme like vnto bricke, they sell it to strangers for exchange of other things which they lacke. In this Region, they stretch and drie the dead bodies of their kinges and noble men, laying the same vpon a certayne frame of wood, much like vnto a hurdle or grediron, with a gentell fire vnder the same, by litle and litle consuming the flesh, and keeping the skinn hole with the bones inclosed therein. These dried carcasses, they haue in great reuerence, and honour them for their houshold and famylar gods. They say that in this place they sawe a man, & in an other place a women, thus dried and reserued. When they departed from Curiana, the .viii. day of the Ides of February, to returne to Spayne, they had threescore and .xvi. poundes weight (after .viii. vnces to the pound) of pearles, which they bought for exchange of our things, amounting to the value of fise shillings. Departing therefore, they consumed threescore dayes in their iourney (although it were shorter then from Hispaniola) by reason of the continual course of the sea in the West, which did not only greatly stay the shippe, also but sometimes driue it backe. But at the length they came home so laden with pearles, that they were with euery mariner, in maner as common as chaffe. But the master of the shippe Petrus Alphonsus, being accused of his companions that he had stollen a great multitude of pretious pearles, and defrauded the king of his portion which was the fiftth parte, was taken of Fernando de Vega a man of great learning and experience, & gouernour of Gallecia, where they aryued, and was there kept in prison a long time. But hee still denieth that euer he deteyned any part of the pearles. Many of these pearles were as bigge as hasell nuttes and as oriente (as we call it) as they be of the East partes: Yet not of so great price, by reason that the holes thereof are not so perfecte. When I my selfe was present with the right honorable duke of Methyna, and was biddē to dynner with him, in the citie of Ciuille, they brought to him aboue a hundred and twentie ounces of pearles to bee solde, which surely dyd greatly delight me with their fairenes and brightnes. Some say, that Alphonsus had not these pearles in Curiana, being distant from Os Draconis more then a hundred & twentie leagues, but that they had them in the regions of Cumana and Manacapana, nere

Death for death.

How the Canibales fortifie their campe.

Haraia.

Springes of salt waters.

The bodies of prynces dried and reserued.

Orient pearles as bigge as Hasell nutts.

vnto

The Ilands of
Margarita.

vnto Os Draconis and the Iland of Margarita: for they deny that there is any pearles founde in Curiana. But sith the matter is yet in controuersie, we will passe to other matters. Thus much you haue, whereby you may coniecture, what commoditie in time to come may be looked for from these newe landes of the West Ocean, whereas at the first discovering, they shewe such tokens of great riches. Thus fare ye well.

¶ The. ix. booke of the first Decade to Cardinall Lodouike.

The nauigation
of Vincentius
and Arles Pinzonus.

Vincentiagnes Pinzonus, and also Arles Pinzonus, his newlew by his brothers syde, which accompanied the Admirall Colonus in his first voyage, & were by him appoynted to bee maisters of two of the small shippes which the Spaniards call Carauelas, being moued by the great ryches & amplitude of the new landes, furnished of their owne charges foure Carauelas, in the hauen of their owne country, which the Spaniards call Palos, bordering on the West Ocean. Hauing therefore the kings licence & passeport to depart, they loosed from the hauen, about the Calendes of December, in the yeece. 1499. This hauen of Palos, is threescore & twelue myles distante from Gades, cōmonly called Cales, and lxiii. miles from Ciuite. All thinhabitantes of this towne, not one excepted, are greatly giuē to searching of the sea, and continually exercised in sayling. They also directed their viage first to the Iland of Canarie by the Ilands of Hesperides, now called Cabouerde, which some call Gorgodes Meducias. Sayling therefore directly toward the South from that Iland of Hesperides which the Portugales (being possessors of the same call Sancti Iacobi, and departing from thence at the Ides of Ianuary, they followed the Southwest winde, being in the middest betwene the South and the West. When they supposed that they had sayled about three hundred leagues by the same winde, they say that they lost the sight of the North starre: and were shortly after tossed with exceeding tempestes both of wind, and sea, and vexed with intollerable heate: Yet sayled they on further (not without great daunger) for the space of two hundred & fortie leagues folowing yet the same wind by the lost pole. Wherefore, whether habitable regions be vnder the Equinoctiall line or not, let these men and the oulde wryters, aswell Philosophers as poetes and cosmographers discusse. For these men affirme it to be habitable and meruelously replenished with people: and they, that it is vnhabitable by reason of the sunne beames depending perpendicularly or directly ouer the same. Yet were there many of the old writers, which attempted to proue it habitable. These maryners being demaunded, if they saw the South pole, they answered that they knew no star there like vnto this pole, that might be decerned about the poynt: but that they sawe an other order of starres, and a certeine thick myst rysing from the horizontal lyne, which greatly hindered their sight. They contende also, that there is a great heape or rising in the middest of the earth, which taketh away the sight of the South pole, vntill they haue vterly passed ouer the same: but they vterly belecue that they sawe other images of starres, much differing from the situation of the starres of our hemispherie, or halfe circle of heauen. How so euer the matter be, as they informe vs, we certifie you. At the length, the seuenth day of the Calendes of February, they espied lande a farre of, and seeing the water of the sea to be troubleous, sounding with their plummet, they founde it to be xvi. fathames deepe. Going aland, and tarying there for the space of two dayes, they departed, because they sawe no people stirring, although they found certeyne steppes of men by the sea side. Thus grauing on the trees & the stones neere vnto the shore, the kinges name and theirs, and the time of their comming thither, they departed. Not farre from this station, following the fiers on the land by night, they founde a nation lying vnder the open firmament, after the manner of warre. Our men thought it not best to trouble them vntill the morning: Therefore, at the rysing of the sunne, fortie of our men well armed went towards them: against whom came forth. xxxii. of them with bowes, slinges and dartes, euen ready to fight. The other company followed them, armed after the same maner. Our men affirme that they were of higher stature then either the Almaynes or Pannonians. They behelde our men with frowning and threatening countenance: but our men thought it not good to fall to bickering with them, vncertayne whether it were for feare, or because they would not drue them to flight.

Wherefore

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Cabouerde.

S. James Ilands.

The northpole
out of sight.

Habitable re-
gions vnder the
Equinoctiall
lyne.

People of high
stature.

The first L

Wherefore the kinde of gold and tokens they came, left the places bound and places, liuing them. Such of their fees further, they sent therefore. They espyed whom our change. A golde a cubey carried him paines: for and dartes shippe boats on the boat sheepe, by from our n slayne with like people heartes for chanced in with. Seascended with there lyeth that the ingers, yet li golde, or sell for slau of that ry whereof, the riuier direct the sight of we said be great abun with Os D Cauchieta, India beyo mit that it may be ca North pole of Paria th which the antiques where it d and that t fishe: the weigh an moutnes

Wherefore they went about to allure them by faire meanes & rewardes but they refused all kinde of gentleness, and stood euer in a readinesse to fight, declaring the same by signes and tokens. Thus our men resorted to their shippes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further busines. The same night about midnight, they fledde, & left the place voyde where they lay in the campe. Our men suppose them to be a vagabound and wandering nation, like vnto the Scythians, without houses or certaine dwelling places, liuing onely with the fruites of the earth, hauing their wiues and children following them. Suche as measured their footesteppes in the sande, affirme with great othes, that one of their fecte is almost as long as two fecte of our men of the meane sorte. Sayling on yet further, they found an other riuier, but not of depth sufficient to beare the Carauels: they sent therefore the foure shippe boates to lande, full of armed men to search the country. They espyed vppon a high hill neere vnto the sea side, a great multitude of people, to whom our companie sent forth one man with certayne of our thinges to allure them to exchange. And when he had cast a hawkes bel towarde them, they cast downe a wedge of golde a cubit longe: the whiche as hee stouped to take vp, they sodenly inclosed him and caryed him away. But hee was shortly after rescued by his companions, to some of their paines: for they slue eight of our men, & wounded many a farre of, with their arrowes, and dartes made of wood, hardened at the endes with fire. After this they encompassed our shippe boates within the riuier, and came rashly within the reach of our menne, laying holde on the boates sides, where they were thrust through, and hewen in peeces as it had bin sheepe, by reason they were naked. Yet woulde they not for all this glue ouer, but tooke from our men one of their boats hauing no men in it: for the gouernour thereof beeing slayne with an arrowe, the other fledde and escaped. And thus they left this fierce and warlike people, sayling towarde the Northwest, along by the same coastes, with sorrowfull heartes for the death of their companions. When they had sayled about xl. leagues, they chaunced into a sea of freshe water, that they filled their barrells and hoggesheades therewith. Searching the cause heereof, they vnderstoode that a vehement course of riuers descended with great violence from the toppes of certaine great hilles. They say also that there lyeth within the sea, manie fortunate and fruitfull llandes, and well inhabited, and that the inhabitantes of this tract are men of meeke nature, and such as doe not refuse straungers, yet little profitable to them, because they haue no marchandyes for their purpose, as golde, or precious stones: for lacke whereof, they brought from thence thirtie captiues to sell for slaues. The inhabitantes call this region Mariatambal. The region of the East parte of that ryuer, is called Camomorus, and that of the West part Paricora, in the midlande whereof, the inhabitantes signified that there is great plentie of golde: For, following this riuier directly toward the North (as the bending of the shore required) they recouered againe the sight of the North pole. All the coaste of this tract, pertaineth to Paria, the which (as we said before) was first found by Colonius himselfe, and hath in manner in euery place great abudaunce of pearles. They say that these coastes are adioyning vnto, and all one with Or Draconis, and also bordering vppon the regions of Cumana, Manacapana, Curiana, Cauchieta, and Cuchibachoa. Wherefore they thought it to be part of the firme land of India beyond the riuier of Ganges. For the great & large compasse therof, doth not permit that it should be an llande, albeit the whole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, may be called an llande. From the poynt of that land where they lost the sight of the North pole, sayling by a continuall tracte about three hundred leagues towarde the West side of Paria they say that (almost in the midway) they chaunced into a riuier called Maragnonum, which they affirme to bee of such exceeding breadth, that it might seeme incredible, if the antiques did not make mention of the like. Being demanded of me if it were not salt water where it diueded the lande, they answered that the water therof was very freshe and sweete, and that the further it ranne, to be so much the fresher: also full of llandes and wholsome fishe: they dare auouch the breadth therof to be more then thirtie leagues. Yet if we well weigh and consider the largenesse and widenesse of Boriostomea and Spiriosstomea, the mouthes of the famous riuier of Ister (now called Danubius) and howe farre they violate or corrupt

A vagabound
kinde of men.

Giants.

Desperate bold-
ness.A sea of fresh
water.Many fruitfull
llandes.

Humane people.

Regions of
Paria.

Gold & pearles.

The commodities of the regions & Ilands about Paria. Brasile.

Canibales.

Trees of Cassia fistula.

A monstrous beast.

Extreme remedy in a desperate case.

Cinamome and Ginger.

Topases.

corrupt the salt water with their freshnesse, we shall cease to manueyle, although this other riuer be greater: for who can diminish the power of nature, but that it may make this bigger then the other, and another bygger then this? And I suppose this to bee the ryuer whereof Colonus the Admirall made mention in the description of his voyage in these coastes. But we shall hereafter haue further knowledge hereof: let vs nowe therefore returne to the comodities of these regions. They found in many Ilands about Paria: great woodes of Brasile trees, and brought away with them three thousande poundes weighte thereof. They say that the Brasile of Hispaniola, is much better then this to dye cloth with a more faire and durable colour. From hence, folowing the windes (which the Spaniardes cal Northeast, and the Italians Græco) they passed by many Ilandes very fruitfull, yet left desolate and wasted by reason of the crueltie of the Canibales: for they went alande in many places, they found the ruines of many destroyed houses: yet in some places, they found men, but those exceeding fearefull, flieing to the mountaines, rockes, and woodes at the sight of euery straunger or shippe, & wandering without house or certaine abyding places, for feare of the Canibales laying waite and hunting after them. Here they found those great trees which of them selues in diuers places bring forth that fruite or spice, which the Apothecaries cal Cassia Phistula, and that of no lesse goodnesse, then that which the phisitions minister to such as be diseased with the ague, but it was not ripe at their being there. They affirme that there are trees of such bygnesse, that. xvi. men ioyning handes together, and standing in compasse, can scarcely embrace some of them. Among these trees is found that monstrous beaste with a snout like a foxe, a tayle like a marmasette, eares like a bat, handes like a man, and feete like an ape, bearing her whelpes aboute with her in an outward bellie much like vnto a greate bagge or purse. The dead carkasse of this beast, you sawe with mee, and turned it ouer and ouer with your owne handes, manueyling at that new belly, and wonderful prouision of nature. They say it is knowne by experience, that shee neuer letteth her whelpes goe out of that purse, except it be either to play, or to sucke vntill such time that they bee able to gette their liuing by themselves. They tooke this beaste with her whelpes: But the whelpes died shortly after in the shippes. Yet the damme liued certaine monethes: but at the length, not being able to abide so great alteration of ayre, and change of meat, she died also in the way. But of this beaste, wee haue said enough. Let vs now therefore returne to the aucthours of these things. These two Pinzoni, the vncke and the neuiew, sustained many greate troubles & horrible tempestes and perilles in this navigation. For when they had now sailed by the coastes of Paria about sixe hūdred leagues, & (as they supposed) beyond the citie of Cathay and the costes of East India beyond the riuer of Ganges, there rose sodenly so fierce a tempest in the month of Iuly, that of the foure Carauels which they had with them, two were drowned euen before their eyes: and the third lying at anker, with like sodennes caried out of their sight through the violence of the tempest: the fourth also lying at anker, was so shaken and broosed, that all the seames thereof were almost loosed: Yet came they to land out of this last shyp, but vtterly despairing of the ship. Wherefore consulting with themselves what was best to bee done in so extreeme a case, and how to prouide them a safe dwelling place in those Regions, being out of all hope how to depart from thence, they determined to stay all the inhabytauntes of the country neere about them, least they with the other should conspire together to kill them, but their fortune was better: For the Carauel which the tempest had caried away, was come to them againe. This had in it. xviii. men: And the other that remained, was saued and repaired. With these two therefore, they tooke their voyage directly to Spayne and thus being tossed with tempestes, & vexed with aduersities they returned to their natiue countrey of Palos, to their wyues and children, the day before the Calendes of October, with the losse of many of their deere frieds & neighbours. They brought with them Cinamome and ginger: but not very good, because they were not there fully seasoned with the heate of the sunne, before they brought them from thence. They brought also certayne precious stones, which Baptista Elysus that excellent philosopher, and your Lordshippes Phisition, affirmeth to be true Topases. After these mens returne, other of their neighbours being moued thereto by a certayne emulation, to proue if their fortune would

would be
tune of t
vndoing,
of Paria,
They also
callet of
reumes,
newes th
this book
plishe the
therfore v
the errour
nature, c
ons vpō
his worde
turall dar
Our men
thereof h
but when
guage, dr
perstitution
by one R
to instruct
other thin
images wh
seasons, c
foolish err
their man
the pictur
but forasm
fie vnto th
deuilles, f
Zemes, w
foreheade
those strit
raine bee
tours and
without e
he honour
as their
names: t
what they
gion calle
taine: a
caue, and
are, they
Amaiauna
the mout
chochael
what thin
was turne
in the nig
rising of
VOL. V.

would be any better, like men of good corage, being no thing discomforted by the harde fortune of their neighbours, knowing that it oftentimes chaunceth, that that whiche is one mans vndoing, is another mans making, attempted a new voiage toward the South by the coastes of Paria, following the steps of Colonus the Admirall, who hadde first discovered the same. They also brought with them great plentie of Cassia fistula, and found that precious medicine callet of the Spaniards Animæ album, whose perfume is of most excellent effect to heale the reumes, murras, and heauines of the head. As touching this viage, as yet I know no other newes that I thought worthy to certifie you of, wherefore, I will now make an end of this book, because you put me so often in remembrance of your departure: Yet to accomplishe the Decade, I will declare somewhat of the superstitions of Hispaniola. You shal now therfore vnderstand the illusions wherewith the people of the Ilande haue beene seduced after the errors of the old gentilitie, and wandered in the ignorance and blindness of humane nature, corrupted of the disobedience of our first parentes, which hath remayned in all nations vpo the face of the earth, except where it hath pleased God by the light of his spirite by his worde, to powre vpon his elect the grace of renouation, by the light whereof the naturall darknes receiueeth some clearnesse as in a glasse, vntil imperfection shall be abolished. Our men therefore were long in the Iland of Hispaniola, before they knew that the people thereof honoured any other thing then the lightes of heauen, or hadde any other religion: but when they hadde beene longe conuersaunt with them, and by vnderstanding their language, drew to a further familiaritie, they had knowledge that they vsed diuers rites and superstitions: I haue therefore gathered these fewe things following, out of a booke written by one Ramonus an Heremite, whome Colonus hadde left with certayne kinges of the Ilande to instruct them in the Christian faith. And because in maner their whole religion is none other thing then idolatrie, I will beegin at their idolles. It is therefore apparant by the images which they honour openly and commonly, that there appeare vnto them in the night seasons, certayne phantasies and illusions of euil spirites, seducing them into many fonde and foolish errors for they make certaine images of Gossampine cotton, folded or wreathed after their manner, and hard stopped within. These images they make sitting, muche like vnto the pictures of spirits and deuilles which our paynters are accustomed to paynt vpon walles: but forasmuch as I my selfe sent you foure of these Images, you may better presently signify vnto the king your vncle, what manner of thinges they are, and howe like vnto paynted deuilles, then I can expresse the same by writing. These images, the inhabitants call Zemes, whereof the leaste, made to the likenesse of young deuilles, they binde to their foreheades when they goe to the warres against their enemies, and for that purpose haue they those strings hanging at them which you see. Of these, they beleue to obteyne rayne, if raine bee lacking, likewise sayre weather: for they think that these Zemes are the mediatours and messengers of the great God, whom they acknowledge to be onely one, eternall, without end, omnipotent, and inuisible. Thus euery king hath his particular Zemes, which he honoureth. They call the eternall god by these two names, Iocauna and Guamaonocon, as their predecessours taught them, affirming that hee hath a father called by these five names: that is, Attabeira, Mamona, Guacarapita, Liella, Guimazoa. Nowe shall you heare what they fable on the earth as touching the originall of man. There is in the lande, a region called Caunana, where they faine that mankinde came first out of two caues of a mountaine: and that the biggest sorte of men came forth of the mouth of the biggest caue, and the least sort out of the least caue. The rocke in the which tense caues are, they call Cauta. The greatest denne, they name Cazibaxagua, and the lesse Amaiauna. They say, that before it was lawfull for men to come forth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was kept and watched nightly by a man whose name was Machochael: this Machochael, departing somewhat farre from the caue, to the intent to see what thinges were abroad, was sodenly taken of the sunne, (whose sight he was forbidden) & was turned into a stone. They sayne the like of diuers other, that whereas they went forth in the night season a fishing so farre from the caue, that they could not returne before the rising of the sunne (the which it was not lawfull for them to behold) they were transformed

VOL. V.

E e

into

Men of n. courage. Another voyage.

Animæ album.

The superstitions of Hispaniola. The errors of the olde gentilitie.

Idolatrie and idolles.

Illusions of euil spirites. Images of gossampine cotton.

Young deuill.

Fables muche like Quide transformations.

The Nightyn-
gale.

The Ilande of
Mathinino.

Children turned
into frogs.

A special grace.

Holy reliques.

A holy caue.

The originall
of the sunne
and moone.

Walkyng
spirites.

A remedie a-
gainst walking
spirites.

Priestes and
diuine Phi-
sitions.

into Myrobalane trees, which of themselves grow plentifully in the Iland. They say further-
more, that a certayne ruler called Vagoniona, sent one forth of the caue to goe a fishing,
who by like chance was turned into a Nightingale, because the sunne was risen beefore hee
came agayne to the caue: and that yeerely about the same time that he was turned into a
bridge, he doth in the night with a mourning song bewayle his misfortune, and call for the
helpe of his maister Vagoniona: And this they thinke to bee the cause why that bird singeth
in the night season. But Vagoniona, being sore troubled in his mind for the losse of his fa-
miliar frie whom he loued so entirely, leauing the men in the caue, brought forth onely the
women with their sucking children, leauing the women in one of the Ilandes of that tract,
called Mathinino, and caryed the children away with him: which poore wretches oppressed
with famine, faynted and remayned on the banke of a certayne ryuer, where they were turned
into frogges, and cryed toa, toa, that is, mamma, mamma, as children are woont to crye, for
the mothers pappe. And heereof they say it commeth that frogges vse to cry so pitifully in
the spring time of the yeare: And that men were scattered abroad in the caues of Hispani-
niola without the companie of women. They say also, that wheras Vagoniona himselfe was
accustomed to wander in diuers places, and yet by a speciall grace neuer transformed, de-
scended to a certayne faire woman whom he sawe in the bottome of the sea, & receiued of
her certayne pibble stones of marble (which they called Gibas) and also certayne yellowe
and bright plates of lattin which they call Guaninos. These thinges to this day are had in
great estimation among the kinges, as goodly iewelless, and most holy reliques. But nowe
(most noble prince) you shall heare a more pleasaunt fable. There is a certayne caue called
Iouanaboia, in the territorie of a certayne king whose name is Machinnech: This caue they
honour more religiously then did the Greekes in time paste, Corinth, Cyrrha, or Nysa, and
haue adourned it with pictures of a thousand fashions. In the intrâce of this caue they haue
two grauen Zemes, whereof the one is called Binthaitel, and the other Marohu. Being de-
manded why they had this caue in so great reuerence, they answered earnestly, because the
sunne and the moone came first out of the same to giue light to the world: they haue religi-
ous concourse to these caues, as we are accustomed to goe on Pylgrimage to Rome, or Vati-
cane, Compostella, or Hierusalem, as most holy & head places of our religion. They are also
subject to another kind of superstition: for they thinke that dead folks walke in the night,
and eate the fruite called Guannaba, vnknowne vnto vs, & somewhat like vnto a Quince:
affirming also that they are cōuersant with liuing people: euen in their beddes, and to de-
ceiue women in taking vpon them the shape of men, shewing themselves as though they
would haue to doe with them: but when the matter commeth to actual deede, sodainly they
vanishe away. If any do suspect that a dead body lyeth by him, whē he feeleth any strāg
thing in the bed, they say he shall bee out of doubt by feeling of the bellie thereof: affirm-
ing that the spirites of dead men may take vpon them all the members of mans body, sau-
ing onely the nauel. If therefore by the lacke of the nauel he doe perceiue that a dead body
lyeth by him, the feeling is immediately resolved. They beleue verily, that in the night,
and oftentimes in ther iourneies, and especially in common and high wayes, dead men doe
meete with the liuing: Against whom, if any man bee stout and out of feare, the fantasie
vanisheth incontinently: but if anie feare, the fantasie or vision dooth so assaulte him and
strike him with further feare, that many are thereby astonysed, and haue the lymmes of
their bodies taken. The inhabitauntes beeing demanded of whom they had those vaine su-
perstitions, they aunswered, that they were left them of their forefathers, as by discent of in-
heritance, and that they haue had the same before the memorie of man, composed in certaine
rimes and songes, which it was lawfull for none to learne, but onely the kinges sonnes, who
committed the same to memorye because they had neuer any knowledge of letters. These
they sing before the people on certaine solemne and festiuall dayes as most religious ceremonies:
while in the meane time they play on a certaine instrument made of onewhole peece
of wood somewhat holowe like a timbrel. Their priestes and diuines (whom they call Boities)
instructe them in these superstitions: These priestes are also phisitions, deuising a thousand
craftes and subtilties howe to deceiue the simple people which haue them in great reuerence:
for

The fir

for they
things
they ob
outward
prince,
into a f
Then p
come to
it shall
greatly
ing, and
drawe t
about th
holding
and shak
shall sh
ueigheth
man, sa
taken th
him that
noured
that the
he died
should h
tion be
cary in t
ing them
them as
shions:
vnto the
make the
appeare
bread, as
those roo
dryades,
springes,
bitants of
inuocation
their wa
the hous
pouder of
they say
their hee
soone as
his head.
head, as o
fumbleth
gentlemen
teries) wi
speech of
doateth th
reuelation
or whatsoe

y further-
a fishing,
efore hee
ned into a
all for the
rd singeth
of his fa-
only the
that tract,
oppressed
ere turned
o crye, for
pitifully in
of Hispa-
mselfe was
rmed, de-
recciued of
ne yellowe
are had in
But nowe
caue called
s caue they
Nysa, and
they haue
Being de-
because the
haue religi-
e, or Vati-
they are also
in the night,
a Quinse:
and to de-
ough they
dainly they
n any strag-
of: affirma-
body, sau-
a dead body
the night,
ad men doe
the fantasie
te him and
lymmes of
e vaine su-
scent of in-
in certaine
sonnes, who
ers. These
us ceremo-
hole peece
all Boitios)
a thousand
reuerence:
for

for they perawade them that the Zemes vse to speak with them familiarly, and tel them of things to come. And if any haue ben sicke, and are recouered they make the beleue that they obtained their health of the Zemes. These Boitii bind themselves to much fasting, & outward cleanlinesse, and purginges, especially when they take vpon them the cure of any prince, for then they drinke the powder of a certaine herbe by whose qualitie they are driuen into a fury, at which time (as they say) they learne many thinges by reuelation of the Zemes. Then putting secretly in their mouthes, eyther a stone, or a bone, or a peece of flesh, they come to the sick persō commanding al to depart out of that place except one or two whom it shall please the sicke man to appoynt: this done, they goe about him three or foure times, greatly deforming their faces, lipps, and nostrils with sundry filthy gestures, blowing, breathing, and sucking the forehead, temples, and necke of the patient, wherby (they say) they drawe the euil ayre from him, and sucke the disease out of the vaynes: then rubbing him, about the shoulders, thighes and legges, and drawing downe their handes close by his feete, holding them yet faste together, they runne to the doore being open, where they vnclose and shake their hands, affirming that they haue driuen away the disease, and that the patient shall shortly be perfectly restored to health. After this comming behinde him, hee conueigheth a peece of fleshe out of his owne mouth like a iuggeler, and sheweth it to the sicke man, saying, Behold, you haue eaten to much, you shall nowe bee whole, because I haue taken this from you. But if he entend yet further to deceiue the patient, hee perswadeth him that his Zemes is angry, eyther because he hath not builded him a chappell, or not honoured him religiously, or not dedicated vnto him a groue or garden. And if it so chauce that the sicke person die, his kinsfolks, by witchcrafte, enforce the dead to confesse whether he died by naturall destey, or by the negligēce of the Boitius, in that he had not fasted as he should haue done, or not ministred a cōuenient medicine for the disease: so that if this phisition be found faultie, they take reuenge of him. Of these stones or bones which these Boitii cary in their mouthes, if the women can come by them, they keepe them religiously, beleeuing them to be greatly effectuell to helpe women traueling with childe, and therefore honour them as they do their Zemes. For diuers of the inhabitantes honour Zemes of diuers fashions: some make them of wood, as they were admonished by certaine visions appearing vnto them in the woods: Other, which haue receiued answer of them among the rockes, make them of stone and marble. Some they make of rootes, to the similitude of such as appeare to them when they are gathering the rootes called Ages, whereof they make their bread, as we haue said before. These Zemes they beleue to send plentie & fruitfulness of those rootes, as the antiquitie beleued such fayries or spirits as they called Dryades, Hamadryades, Satvros, Panes, and Nereides, to haue the cure & prouidence of the sea, woods, springes, and fountaines, assigning to euery thing their peculiar goddes: Euen so doe thinhabitants of this Iland attribute a Zemes to euery thing, supposing the same to giue eare to their inuocations. Wherefore, as often as the kings aske counsell of their Zemes as concerning their warres, increase of fruites or scarcenes, or health & sicknesse, they enter into the house dedicate to their Zemes, where, snuffing vp into their nostryles the powder of the herbe called Cohobba (wherwith the Boitii are dryuen into a furie) they say that immediatly they see the houses turned topsie turuie, and men to walke with their heeles vpward, of such force is this powder, vtterly to take away al sence. As soone as this madnesse ceaseth, he embraceth his knees with his armes, holding downe his head. And when he hath remayned thus awhile astonysed, hee listeth vp his head, as one that came newe out of sleepe: and thus looking vp toward heauen, first he fumbleth certaine confounded wordes with himselfe, then certayne of the nobilitie or chiefe gentlemen that are about him (for none of the common people are admitted to these mysteries) with loude voyces giue tokens of reioicing that hee is returned to them from the speech of the Zemes, demanding of him what he hath seene. Then hee opening his mouth, doateth that the Zemes spake to him during the time of his trance, declaring that he had reuelations either cōcerning victorie or destruction, famine or plentie, health or sicknesse or whatsoeuer happeneth first on his tongue. Now (most noble Prince) what neede you

ignorance is
nourished with
superstition.

A powder of
marcurious
effect.

A strange man-
ner of furing.

Angry gods.

They make the
dead to speake.

Fayries or spi-
rites of the gen-
tiles, much like
to the papistes.

The powder of
the herbe Co-
hobba.

Secrete mis-
teries.

Reuelations.

The spirit of
Apollo.
The Sibylles.

Children with
two crownes.

Wandering
images.

A woman Zemes
of great power.
Medistours.

A marueylous
illusion of the
deuill.

The idollas
abolished.

hereafter to marueyle of the spirite of Apollo so shaking his Sibylles with extreame furie: you hadde thought that the superstitious antiquitie hadde perished. But nowe whereas I haue declared thus much of the Zemes in general, I thought it not good to let passe what is sayde of them in particular. They say therefore that a certaine king called Guamaretus, had a Zemes whose name was Corochotum, who (they say) was oftentimes wont to descend from the highest place of the house where Guamaretus kept him close bound. They affirme that the cause of this his breaking of his bandes and departure, was eyther to hide himselfe, or to goe seeke for meate, or else for the acte of generation: and that sometimes beeing offended that the king Guamaretus had bin negligent and slacke in honouring him, he was wont to lie hid for certaine dayes. They say also, that in the kinges village there are sometime children borne hauing two crownes, which they suppose to be the children of Corochotum the Zemes. They faine likewise, that Guamaretus being overcome of his enemies in battayle, and his village with the palace consumed with fire, Corochotus brake his bandes, and was afterwarde founde a furlong of, safe and without hurte. He hath also another Zemes called Epileguanita, made of woode, in shape like a foure footed beast: who also is sayde oftentimes to haue gone from the place where hee is honoured, into the woodes. As soone as they perceiue him to bee gone, a great multitude of them gather together to seeke him with deuout prayers: and when they haue founde him, bring him home religiously on their shoulders to the chappell dedicated vnto him. But they complaine, that since the comming of the Christian men into the llande, he fled for altogether, and coulde neuer since be founde, whereby they diuined the destruction of their country. They honoured another Zemes in the likenesse of a woman, on whom waited two other like men, as they were ministers to her. One of these, executed the office of a mediatur to the other Zemes, which are vnder the power and commaundement of this woman, to raise wyndes, cloudes, and rayne. The other is also at her commaundement a messenger to the other Zemes, which are ioyned with her in gouernance, to gather together the waters which fall from the high hils to the valleies, that beeing loosed, they may with force burst out into great floudes, and ouerflowe the countrey, if the people do not giue due honour to her Image. There remaineth yet one thing worthy to be noted, wherewith we will make an end of this booke. It is a thing well knowne, and yet freshe in memorie among the inhabitants of the lland, that there was sometime two kings (of the which one was the father of Guarionexius, of whom wee made mention before) whiche were woont to abstaine fide daies together continually from meate & drinke, to know somewhat of their Zemes of thinges to come, and that for this fasting being acceptable to their Zemes, they receiued answere of them, that within few yeeres there shoulde come to the lland a nation of men couered with apparell, which shoulde destroy all the customes and ceremonies of the lland, and either slay all their children, or bring them into seruitude. The common sort of the people vnderstoode this oracle to be ment of the Canibales, & therefore when they had any knowledge of their comming, they euer fled, and were fully determined neuer more to aduenture the battayle with them. But when they sawe that the Spanyardes hadde entred into the llande, consulting among themselves of the matter, they concluded that this was the nation whiche was ment by the oracle. Wherein, their opinion deceiued them not, for they are nowe all subject to the Christians all such beeing slayne as stubernely resisted: Nor yet remayneth there anie memorie of their Zemes, for they are all brought into Spayne, that wee might bee certyfyed of their illusions of euill spirites and Idollas, the which you your selfe (most noble Prince) haue seene and felt when I was present with you. I let passe many thinges because you put me in remembrance that to morowe you take your iorney toward your country, to bring home the queene your aunt, whom you accompanied hither at the commaundement of king Frederike your vncl. Wherefore I bid you farewell for this time, desiring you to remember your Martir, whom you haue compelled in the name of the king your vncl, to gather these few thinges out of a large felde of histories.

The

AT th
pryse to
of my fr
whisper
nations
thereof,
Ascanius
would n
first bo
shortly:
frō pow
slackd
Court re
of Arago
Parthen
he exhor
write to
to card
the burd
thinges,
large wr
haue end
the same
briefe re
hundred,
largely o
selfe of
plished t
a perpen
may kni
fill vp th
wryte ou
But now
coastes d
rasing co
land or c
the East,
they bro
sence wh
thinges,
they bee
ing fierc
with fire
ours, var
and Cro
the lland
hurte, ex
There are
are equal

The tenth and last booke of the first Decade, is a conclusion of the former bookes:
written to Inacus Iopez Mendocius, Countie of Tendilla, & viceroy of
Granata.

AT the first beginning and newe attempte, when Colonus had taken vpon him the enter-
pryse to searche the Ocean sea, I was earnestly moued and required by the letters of certaine
of my frendes and noble men of Rome, to wryte those thinges as should happen. For they
whispered with great admiration, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and
nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they could heare no certainty
thereof, beeing greatly desirous of the same. In this meane time had fortune ouerthrowne
Ascanius (his brother Lodouike beeing cast out of Millane by the Frenchmen) whose auctoritie
would not suffer me to be idle, but euer to haue my pen in hand. To him I wrote the two
first bookes of this decade, beside many other of my hid cōmentaries which you shal see
shortly: but fortune did no lesse withdraw my mind from writing, then disturb Ascanius
frō power. As he was tossed with contrary stormes, and ceased to perswade mee: euen so
slackd my seruēttesse to enquire any further, vntil the yere of Christ 1500, when the
Court remained at Granata where you are viceroy: At which time, Lodouike the Cardinal
of Aragonie, neuiew to king Frederike by his brothers side (being at Granata with the queene
Parthenopea the sister of our Catholique king) brought me king Frederikes letters, whereby
he exhorted me to finishe the other bookes which folowed the two epistel bookes, which I
wrote to Ascanius: For they both acknowledged that they had the copie of all that I wrote
to cardinall Ascanius. And albeit that euen then I was sicke (as you knowe) yet tooke I
the burden vpon me, and applied my selfe to wryting, I haue therefore chosen these fewe
thinges, out of a great heape of such as seemed to me must worthy to be noted among the
large wrytinges of the authoures and searchers of the same. Wherefore, forasmuch as you
haue endeouored to wrest out of my hands the whole example of all my woorkes, to adde
the same to the innumerable volumes of your librarie, I thought it good nowe to make a
briefe rehearsall of those thinges which were done from that yere of a thousand and fife
hundred, euen vnto this yere which is the tenth from that: For I intend to write more
largely of these thinges hereafter, if God graunt me life. I had written a whole booke by it
selfe of the superstytions of the people of the Iland, supposing therewith to haue accom-
plished the whole Decade consisting of ten bookes. But I haue added this to the tenth as
a perpendicular lyne, and as it were a backe guide or rereward to the other: So that you
may knitte the first tenth to the nynt, & impute this to occupye the place of the tenth to
fill vp the Decade. This order I haue appointed, lest I should be compelled often times to
wryte ouer the whole worke, or send you the same defaced with blottes and interlining.
But nowe let vs come to our purpose. The ship maisters and mariners ran ouer many
coastes during these ten yeres: But euer folowed such as were first found by Colonus. For
rasing continually alonge by the trace of Paria, which they belecue to be part of the firme
land or continent of East India, some of them chaunced vpon certaine naw landes towarde
the East, and some toward the West, in which they found both gold and frankensence. For
they brought from thence many iewels and ouches of gold, and great plentie of franken-
sence which they had of the people of those countreyes, partly for exchange of some of our
thinges, and partly by force, ouer comming them by warre. Yet in some places, although
they bee naked, they ouercame our men, and slewe whole armyes. For they are exceed-
ing fierce, and vse venomous arrowes, and long staues like iauelens, made hard at the ende
with fire. They found many beastes, both creepynge and foure footed much differing from
ours, varyable and of sundrye shapes innumerable: yet not hurtfull, except Lions, Tigers,
and Crocodiles. This I meane in sundry regions of that great lande of Paria, but not in
the Ilandes: no not so much as one, for all the beastes of the Ilandes, are meeke and without
hurte, except men, which (as wee haue sayde) are in many Ilandes deuourers of mens fleshe.
There are also diuers kindes of foules. And in many places battes of such bignes, that they
are equall withall turtle doues. These battes, haue oftentimes assaulted men in the night in
their

Millane in the
hands of the
Frenchmen.

The history fol-
lowing, con-
teyneth the
actes of ten
yeres.

Paria part of
the firme land
of East India.
Golde & Frank-
ensence.

The fiercenes of
the naked people.

their sleepe, and so bitten them with their venomous teeth, that they haue ben thereby almost driuen to madnes, in so much that they haue ben compelled to flee from such places, from rauinous Harpies. In an other place, where certaine of them slept in the night season on the sands by the seaside a monster comming out of the sea, came vpon one of them secretlye, and caryed him away by the middest out of the sight of his fellowes, to whom he cried in vaine for helpe, vntill the beast leapt into the sea with her pray. It was the kinges pleasure that they should remaine in these landes, and builde townes and fortresses: whereunto they were so well willing that diuers profered them selues to take vpon them the subduing of the land, making great suite to the king that they might bee appointed thereto. The coast of this tracte is exceeding great and large, and the regions and landes therof extende marueilous farre, so that they affirme the continent of these regions with the Ilands about the same, to be thrise as bigge as al Europe, beside those landes that the Portugales haue found southward, which are also exceeding large. Therefore doubtlesse Spayne hath deserued great prayse in these our dayes, in that it hath made knowne vnto vs so many thousandes of Antipodes which lay hid before, and vnknowne to our forefathers: and hath thereby ministred so large matter to wryte of, to such learned wittes as are desirous to set foorth knowledge to the commoditie of men to whom I opened a way when I gathered these things rudely together as you see: the which, neuerthelesse I truste you will take in good part, aswell for that I can not adourne my rudenesse with better vesture, as also that I neuer tooke pen in hand to write like an historiographer, but onely by epistles scribede in haste, to satisfie them, from whose commaundementes I might not drawe backe my foote. But nowe I haue digressed enough, let vs now therefore returne to Hispaniola. Our men haue found by experience, that the bread of the Iland is of smal strength to such as haue bin vsed to our bread made of wheat, and that their strengthes were much decayed by vsing of the same: wherefore the king hath of late commaunded that the wheate should be sowne there in diuers places, & at sundry times of the yeere: It groweth into holow reedes, with few eares, but those very bygge and fruitfull. They find the like softnesse and delicatenesse to be in hearbes, which growe there to the height of corne. Neat or cattel, become of bigger stature and exceeding fat, but their fleshe is more vnsauorie, and their bones (as they say) either without marow, or the same to be very waterishe: but of hogges and swyne, they affirme the contrary that they are more wholesome, & of better taste, by reason of certaine wilde fruites which they eate, being of much better nourishment then maste. There is almost none other kind of fleshe commonly sold in the market. The multitude of hogges are exceedingly encreased, and become wilde as soone as they are out of the swine heardees keeping. They haue such plentie of beastes and foules, that they shall hereafter haue no neede to haue any brought from other places. The increase of all beastes grow bigger then the brood they came of, by reason of the ranknes of the pasture, although their feeding be only of grasse, with out eyther barly or other graine. But we haue saide enough of Hispaniola. They haue now found that Cuba (which of long time they thought to haue bin firme land, for the greate length thereof) is an Iland: yet is it no maruaile that the inhabitants themselves told our men when they searched the length therof, that it was without ende. For this nation being naked, and content with a little, and with the limittes of their owne country, is not greatly curious to knowe what their neighbours doe, or the largenesse of their dominion, nor yet knewe they if their were any other thing vnder heauen, beside that which they walked on with their feete, Cuba is from the East into the West, much longer then Hispaniola, and in breadth from the North to the South, much lesse then they supposed at the first: for it is very narrowe in respect of the length, and is for the most part verie fruitfull and pleasaunt. Eastwarde, not farre from Hispaniola, there lyeth an Ilande lesse then Hispaniola more then by the halfe, whiche our men called Sancti Iohannis, beeing in manner square, in this they founde exceeding riche golde mynes: but being nowe occupied in the golde mynes of Hispaniola, they haue not yet sent labourers into the Ilande. But the plentie and reueneue of golde of all other regions, giue place to Hispaniola, where they giue themselves in manner to none other thing then to gather golde, of which worke this

A man deuoured
of a monster of
the sea.

Note the
largenes of the
new Ilandes.

Antipodes.

The nature of
the place altereth
the forms and
qualities of
thynges.

Plentie of beastes
and foules.

Cuba is an Ilande.

The descriptiō
of Cuba.

The Ilande of
Burcheana, of
S. Iohannis.
Golde mynes.

this order
ueyour of
their subi
times of
where the
with his n
departe fr
certaine o
a ierkin,
these thin
helpe and
mynes, as
tude with
yet the ki
they are s
of their ki
of them s
tent for th
are docible
belecue go
Their king
letters and
their coun
be dead, th
in loue an
swasions, t
from the
beeing dis
haue call
here and th
the stones,
some place
three hund
weight, th
the gouern
drowned b
men, albei
gold. And
summe of
pound, wh
Castellan
Regale, is
are ready
kinges por
hee gotte v
the region
In these tw
If any man
not made t
them often
Iland doe
whose sent
returne to

this order is appoynted. To euery such wittie and skilful man as is put in trust to be a sur-ueyour or ouerseer of these workes, there is assigned one or more kings of the Iland, with their subiectes. These kings according to their league, come with their people at certayne times of the yeere, and resorte euery of them to the gold mines to the which hee is assigned, where they haue all manner of digging or mining tooles deliuered them, and euery king with his menne, haue a certaine rewarde alowed them for their labour. For when they departe from the mynes to sowing of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addict at Tyllage. certaine other tymes, least their foode should faile them) they receiue for their labour, one a ierkin, or a dublet, another a shirt, another a cloke or a cap for they now take pleasure in these thinges, and goe no more naked as they were wont to doe. And thus they vse the helpe and labour of the inhabitantes, both for the tyllage of their ground and in their golde mynes, as though they were their seruantes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of seruitude with an euill will, but yet they beare it: they call these hired labourers, Anaborias: yet the king doth not suffer that they should bee vsed as bondemen, and onely at his pleasure, they are set at libertie, or appoynted to worke. At suche time as they are called together of their kinges to worke (as souldiers or pyoners are assembled of their centurions) many of them steale away to the mountaynes and woodes, where they lye lurking, beeing content for that time to liue with the wilde fruites, rather then take the paynes to labour. They are docible and apte to learne, and haue nowe vtterly forgotten their old superstitions. They beleue godly, and beare well in memory such thinges as they haue learned of our faith. Their kings children are brought vp with the chiefest of our men, and are instructed in letters and good maners. When they are growen to mans age, they sende them home to their countryes to be example to other, and especially to gouerne the people, if their fathers be dead, that they may the better set forth the Christian Religion, and keepe their subiectes in loue and obedience. By reason whereof, they come now by faire meanes & gentle perswasions, to the mynes which lye in two regions of the Ilande, about thirtie myles distaunte from the citie of Dominica, wherof the one is called Sancti Christophori: and the other beeing distaunt aboute fourscore and ten myles, is called Cibana, not farre from the chiefe hauen called Portus Regalis. These regions are very large, in the whiche in many places here and there, are found sometime euen in the vpper crust of the earth, and sometime among the stones, certaine rounde pieces or plates of golde, sometime of small quantytie, and in some places of great weight: in so much that there hath beene founde round pieces of three hundred pounce weight and one of three thousande, three hundred and tenne pounce weight, the whiche (as you hearde) was sent whole to the King in that ship in the whiche the gouernour Roadilla was commyng home into Spaine, the ship with all the men beeing drowned by the way, by reason it was ouer laden with the weight of gold and multitude of men, albeit, there were mo then a thousand persons which saw and handled the piece of gold. And whereas here I speake of a pounce, I doe not meane the common pound, but the summe of the ducate of golde, with the coyne called Triens, which is the third part of a pound, which they call Pesus. The summe of the weight heereof, the Spanyardes call Castelanum Aureum. All the gold that is digged in the mountaines of Cibana and Port Regale, is caryed to the tower of Conception, where shoppes with all things apperteyning are ready furnished to fine it, melt it, and cast it into wedges. That doone, they take the kinges portion thereof, which is the fiftie part, and so restore to euery man his owne whiche hee gotte with his labour. But the golde which is founde in saint Christophorus myne and the regions there about, is caryed to the shoppes which are in the village called Bonauentura. In these two shoppes, is moulten yeerely about three hundred thousand pound weight of gold. If any man bee knowne deceitfully to keepe backe any portion of golde, whereof he hath not made the kinges officers priuie, he forfeiteth the same for fine. There chaunceth among them oftentimes many contentions & controuersies, the which vnlesse the magistrates of the Iland doe finishe, the case is remoued by appellation to the high counsel of the court, from whose sentence it is not lawfull to appeale in all the dominions of Castile. But let vs nowe returne to the newe landes, from whence wee haue digressed. They are innumerable, diuers, and

They abhorre labour. They are docible.

The kynges chyldren.

The two chief golde mines of Hispaniola.

A costly shipwracke.

Pesus.

The fynyng and distributing of gold.

Three hundred thousand weight of gold moulten yeerely in Hispaniola.

The newe landes.

by almost
aces, from
ason on the
secretlye,
ne cried in
es pleasure
whereunto
e subduing
The coast
tende mar-
about the
haue found
deserued
usandes of
hereby mi-
set fourth
ered these
ke in good
that I neuer
ed in haste,
foote. But
men haue
s haue bin
ysing of the
owen there
s, with few
elicatenesse
ome of big-
es (as they
and swyne,
y reason of
hen maste,
multitude of
f the swine
ll hereafter
eastes grow
ough their
ide enough
ght to haue
ile that the
t was with-
limittes of
the large-
der heauen,
the West,
n lesse then
or the most
re lyeth an
ti Iohannis,
eing nowe
the Ilande,
iola, where
hich worke
this

Enlarging of the
Christian religion.
The original of
true nobility.

The Ilands of
Guanassa.

The Voyage of
Iohannes Diaz.

and exceeding fortunate. Wherefore the Spaniards in these our dayes, and their noble enterprises, doe not giue place either to the factes of Saturnus, or Hercules, or any other of the ancient princes of famous memory, which were canonized among the goddesses, called Heroes, for their searching of new landes and regions, and bringing the same to better culture and ciuilitie. O God, how large & farre shal our posteritie see the Christian region extended? how large a campe haue they now to wander in, which by the true nobilitie that is in them, or moued by vertue, will attempt eyether to deserue like prayse among men or reputation of well doing before God? What I conceiue in my minde of these thinges, I am not able to expresse with penne or tongue. I wil now therefore so make an end of this perpendicular conclusion of the whole Decade, as minding hereafter to search and geather euery thing particularly, that I may at further leasure write the same more at large. For Colonus the Admiral, with foure ships, and a hundred, threescore, and ten men, appointed by the king, discovered in the yeere of Christ. 1520. the land ouer against the West corner of Cuba, distant from the same about a hundred and thirtie leagues, in the midst of which tract, lieth an Iland called Guanassa. From hence hee directed his voyage backward toward the East, by the shore of that coast, supposing that he should haue found the coastes of Paria, but it chaunced otherwise. It is sayd also that Vincencius Agnes (of whom we haue spoken before) and one Iohannes Daiz (with diuers other, of whose voyages I haue as yet no certaine knowledge) haue ouerrunne those coastes: but if God graunt me life, I trust to knowe the truth hereof, and to aduerise you of the same. Thus fare ye well.

The ende of the first Decade.

The first Chapter of the seconde Decade, to Leo Bishop of Rome, the tenth of that name, of the supposed continent or firme lande.

West Antipodes.

The increase
of the Christian
congregation.

Of Ilandes distant
from the Equi-
noctiall, from

Since the time that Galeatius Butrigarius of Bononie, and Iohannes Cursius of Florence (most holy father) came to the Catholique king of Spayne, the one of your holinesse ambassage, and the other for the assayres of his common wealth, I was cuer for the moste part in their company, and for their vertues and wisdom had them in great reuerence. And whereas they were greatly giuen to studie, and continuall resoluing of diuers auctours, they chaunced vpon certayne bookes negligently let slyppe out of my handes entreating of the large landes and regions hitherto lying hid, and almost West Antipodes, found of late by the Spanyardes. Yet being allured & delighted with the newnesse and straungenesse of the matter although rudely adourned, they commended the same, therewith earnestly desiring me in their owne names, and requiring me in the name of your holinesse, to adde herunto al such thinges as were found after that time, and to giue them a copie thereof, to send to your holinesse, that you might thereby vnderstand, both how great commodities is chaunced to the progenie of mankind, as also increase of the militant congregation in these our dayes, by the fortunate enterpryses of the kings of Spayne. For like as rased and vnprinted tables, are apte to receiue what fourmes soeuer are first drawne thereon by the hande of the painter, euen so these naked and simple people, doe soone receiue the customes of our religion, and by conuersation of our men, shake of their fierce and natie barbarousnesse. I haue thought it good therefore to satisfie the request of these wise men, especially vsing the authoritie of your name, whereunto not to haue obeyed, I should esteeme my selfe to haue committed a haynous offence. Wherefore I will nowe briefly rehearse in order, what hid coastes the Spanyardes ouerran, who were the authours thereof, where they rested, what further hope they brought, and finally what greate thinges those tractes of lands doe promise in time to come. In the declaration of my decade of the Ocean, which is now printed and dispersed throughout Christendome vnwares to mee, I described howe Christophorus Colonus founde those Ilandes whereof we haue spoken, and that turning from thence toward the left hand southward, he chaunced into great regions of landes, and large seas distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, onely from fife degrees to tenne: where he founde broad riuers and exceeding high

mountaynes

The second

mountainous
dious a
began
crease
take the
was Al
with th
Spania
he came
because
largnes
Carthag
their ha
affirme
their ha
women
great ple
Espesial
their hea
agayne
the porte
themselu
entred in
and scat
they had
mitte the
quantitie
weare for
tiues, wh
from the
Here he
shields,
with fire,
ceiued, a
holding
and chik
the whic
tayne, a
fiftie sou
tayne he
shippes,
for the la
Hispanio
fue ship
souldiers
the capi
But espe
poynted
fore, at t
first to r
they mai
stealing
where th
VOL.

mountaynes couered with snowe, and harde by the sea bankes, where were many commodious and quiet hauens. But Colonus being nowe departed out of this life, the King beganne to take care, how those lands might be inhabited with Christian men, to the increase of our faith: Whereupon hee gaue lycence by his letters patentes to all such as would take the matter in hand, and especially to two, whereof Diego Nicuesa was one, & the other was Alphonsus Fogeda. Wherefore about the Ides of December, Alphonsus departing first with three hundred souldiers from the Ilande of Hispaniola (in the which wee said the Spaniardes had builded a city, & planted their habitation) & sayling in maner full South he came to one of the hauens found before, which Colonus named Portus Carthaginis, both because of the Iland stāding against the course of the streame, and also that by reason of the largnes of the place and bending sides, it is much like to the hauen of Spayne called Carthago. The inhabitants call the Ilande Codego, as the Spaniardes call the Ilande of their hauen Scombria. This region is called of the inhabitantes Caramairi, in the which they affirme both the menne and women to bee of goodly stature, but naked. The menne haue their hayre cutte rounde by their eares, but the women weare it long, both the men and women are very good archers. Our men found certayne trees in this prouince, which beare great plentie of sweete apples, but hurtfull, for they turne into woormes when they are eaten. Especially the shadowe of the tree is contagious, for such as sleepe vnder it any time, haue their heads swolne, and loose their sight: but if they sleepe but awhile, their sight commeth agayne after a fewe dayes. This porte is distant foure hundred, fiftie & sixe myles from the porte of Hispaniola whiche the Spaniardes call Beata, in the whiche also they furnishe themselves when they prepare any voyage to seeke other newe landes. When Fogeda had entred into the hauen, hee enuaded, slue, and spoyled the people, whom hee founde naked and scattered: for they were giuen him for a pray by the Kinges letters patentes, because they had bin before time cruell against the Christians, and coule neuer bee allured to permitte them quietly to come within their dominions. Here they found golde, but in no great quantitie, nor yet that pure: they make of it certaine brest plates and brooches whiche they weare for comelynesse. But Fogeda not content with these spoyle, vsyng certayne captiues, whiche hee hadde taken before, for guides, entred into a village twelue myles distant from the sea side further into the lande, into the which they were fled when he first inuaded. Here he found a naked people, but apte to warre: for they were armed with targettes, shildes, long swordes made of woode, and bowes with arrowes typt with bone, or hardened with fire. As soone as they had espied our men, they with their ghestes whō they had receiued, assayed them with desperate myndes, being thereto more earnestly prouoked, beholding the calamitie of these which fled vnto them, by the violence done to their women and children in the spoyle and slaughter. In this conflict our men had the ouerthrowe: in the which, one Iohannes de Lacosa (being in authoritie next vnto Fogeda the captayne, and also the first that gathered golde in the sandes of Vraba) was slaine with fiftie souldiers: for these people infecte their arrowes with the deadly poyson of a certayne herbe. The other with their captaine Fogeda, being discomforted, fledde to the shippes. While they remained thus in the hauen of Carthago, sorrowful and pensieue for the losse of their companions, the other captayne Diego Nicuesa, (whom they left in Hispaniola, preparing himselfe towards the voyage in the hauen Beata) came to them with fise shippes, and seuen hundred fourscore and fiftene men. For the greater number of souldiers followed Nicuesa, both beecause free libertie was giuen to them to choose which of the capitaines they list, and also that by reason of his age, hee was of greater authoritie: But especially beecause the rumoure was that Beragua being by the kinges commission appointed to Nicuesa, was richer in golde then Vraba assigned to Alphonsus Fogeda. Therefore, at the arriual of Nicuesa, they consulted what was best to bee doone: and determined first to reuenge the death of their fellows. Whereupon, setting their battayle in arraye, they marched in the night towards them whiche slue Cossa with his companions. Thus stealing on them vnuares in the laste watch of the night, and encompassing the village where they lay, consisting of a hundred houses and more, hauing also in it thrise as many of

vol. v.

F f

their

fyue degrees to
ten.
The death of
Colonus.

A general
lycence.

The nauigation
of Alphonsus
Fogeda.

The region of
Caramairi.

Apples which
turne into
woormes.
A tree whose
shadowe is
hurtful.

Warlike peo-
ple.

Arrowes in-
fected with
poyson.

The nauigation
of Diego
Nicuesa.

The regions of
Vraba and
Beragua.

The Spaniards
reuenge the
death of their
companions.

A greates
slaughter.

Canibales.
The hunger
of golde.

The Ilande
Fortis.

Wrought gold.

Nicuesa.

The gulfes
Coiba.

Bernardino de
Calauera.

their neighbours as of themselves, they set it on fire, with diligent watche that none might escape. And thus in short time they brought them and their houses to ashes, and made them paye the ransome of bloude with bloud: for of a great multitude of men and women, they spared onely sixe children, all other being destroyed with fire or swoorde, except fewe whiche escaped priuily, they learned by these reserued children, that Cossa and his fellowes were cut in peeces, and eaten of them that slue them. By reason whereof, they suppose that these people of Camairi tooke their original of the Caribes, otherwise called Canibales. Here they founde some golde among the ashes. For the hunger of golde did no lesse incourage our men to aduenture these perilles and labours, then did the possessing of the landes. These things thus finished, and the death of Cossa and his fellowes reuenged, they returned to the hauen. After this, Fogeda whiche came first, first likewise departing with his armie to seeke Vraha, committed to his gouernance, sayled by an Ilande called Fortis, lying in the midway betweene Vraha and the hauen of Carthago: into the which descending, he found it to bee an Ilande of the Canibales, bringing with him from thence two men and seuen women, for the residue escaped. Here hee founde in the cotages of them that fledde, a hundred, fourescore, and tenne drammes of golde, caste and wrought in diuers formes. Sayling forward from hence, hee came to the East coastes of Vraha, whiche the inhabitants call Caribana, from whence the Caribes or Canibales of the Ilandes are sayd to haue their names and originall. Here he began to build a fortresse, and a village neere vnto the same, therein intending to place their first habitation. Shortly after, beeing instructed by certayne captiues, that there was about twelue myles further within the lande, a certaine village called Tirufi, hauing in it a riche golde myne, he determined to destroy the village, to the which when he came, he found the inhabitantes ready to defend their right, and that so stoutly, that encountering with them, he was repulsd with shame and damage: for these people also vse bowes and venomous arrowes. Within a fewe dayes after, being enforced for lacke of victualles to inuade another village, hee himselfe was strycken in the thygh with an arrowe. Some of his fellowes say, that he was thus wounded of one of the inhabitantes, whose wife he had ledde away captiue beefore. They say also that he had first friendly communed with Fogeda for redeeming of his wife, and had appoynted a day to bring a portiõ of golde for her ransome, and that hee came at the day assigned, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and arrowes, with eight other confederate with him which had beene before partakers of the iniuries done to them first at the hauen of Carthago, and afterward at the burning of the village, in reuenge whereof, they had desperately consecrated themselves to death: But the matter being knowne, the captayne of this conspiracie was slayne of Fogeda his companions, and his wife detained in captiuitie. Fogeda also through the maliciousnesse of the venime, consumed and was dried vp by litle and litle. While these things chaunced thus, they espied Nicuesa the other captaine, to whom Beragua the region of the West side of Vraha was assigned to inhabite. He gaue wind to his sayles to take his voyage towarde Beragua, the day after that Fogeda departed out of the hauen of Carthago. He with his armie that he brought with him, coasted euer along by the shore, vntill he came to the gulfes Coiba, whose kinges name is Careta. Here hee founde their language to bee in manner nothing like vnto that of Hispaniola, or of the hauen of Carthago: whereby hee perceiued that in this tracte, there are many languages differing from their owne borderers. Nicuesa departing from Coliba, went to the prouince or Lieuetenauntship of Fogeda his companion. Within a few dayes after, hee himselfe entring into one of those marchaunt shippes which the Spaniardes call Carauelas, commaunded that the bigger vessels should folow farre behind. He tooke with him two smal shippes commonly called Bergandines or Brigandines. I haue thought it good in al the discourse of these bookes, to vse the common names of thinges, because I had rather bee plaine then curious, especially forasmuch as there doe daily arise many new thinges vnknown to the antiquitie, whereof they haue left no true names. After the departure of Nicuesa, there came a shippe from Hispaniola to Fogeda, the captaine whereof, was one Bernardino de Calauera, who had stolne the same from Hispaniola with threescore men, without leaue or aduice of the Admiral & the other gouernours. With the victualles

victualles which this shippe brought, they refreshed them selues, and some that recovered
 their strengthes, much weakened for lacke of meat. Fogeda his companion chafed and
 muttered against him daily more and more, that he fedde them forth with hope: for
 he had told them that he left Anciscus in Hispaniola (when hee chose by the Kings com-
 mission to be a iudge in causes, because hee was learned in the law) to come shortly after
 him with a ship laden with victualles, and that hee imagined that hee was not come many
 dayes since. And herein he said nothing but trueth for when he departed, he left Anciscus
 halfe readie to folowe him. But his felowes supposing that all that he had saide of Anciscus
 had ben fained, some of them determined priuily to steale away the two Brigandines frō
 Fogeda, & to returne to Hispaniola. But Fogeda hauing knowledge thereof, preuented their
 deuice: for leauing the custody of the fortresse with a certaine noble gentleman called
 Francisco Pizarro, he himselfe thus wounded, with a fewe other in his company, entered into
 the shippe whereof we spake before, and sayled directly to Hispaniola, both to heale the
 wounde of his thigh, if any remedie might be found, and also to knowe what was the cause
 of Anciscus tarying: leauing hope with his felowes (which were now brought from three
 hundred to three score, partly by famine, and partly by warre) that he would returne within
 the space of xv. dayes, prescribing also a condition to Pizarro & his companions, that it
 should not be imputed to them for treason, to depart from thence if hee came not agayne at
 the day appointed, with victuales, and a new supply of men. These xv. dayes being nowe
 past, whereas they coulde yet heare nothing of Fogeda, and were daily more and more
 oppressed with sharpe hunger, they entred into the two Brigandines which were left, and
 departed from that land. And as they were nowe sayling on the mayne sea toward His-
 paniola, a tempest sodainely arysing, swallowed one of the Brigandines with all that were
 therein. Some of their felowes imagined that they plainly sawe a fishe of huge greatnesse,
 swimming about the Brigandine (for those seas bring forth great monsters) and that with a
 stroke of her tayle, shee broke the rudder of the ship in peeces, which sayling, the Brigandine
 being driuen about by force of the tēpest, was drowned not farre from the lland called
 Fortis, lyng betwene the coastes of the hauen Carthago and Vraba. As they of the other
 Brigandine would haue landed in the llande, they were driuen backe with the bowes and
 arrowes of the fierce barbarians. Proceeding therefore on their voyage, they mette by
 chaunce with Ascanius, betwene the hauen of Carthago, and the region of Cuchibacoa in the
 mouth of the riuier which the Spaniards called Boium gatti, that is, the house of the catte,
 because they sawe a catte first in that place Boium, in the tongue of Hispaniola, is a house.
 Anciscus came with a shippe laden with all things necessarie, both for meate, and drinke, and
 apparell, brynging also with him another Brigandine. This is hee for whose commyng the
 captaine Fogeda looked for so long. He loosed anker from Hispaniola in the ldes of Sep-
 tember: & the fourth day after his departure, hee espied certaine high mountaynes the
 which for the abundāce of snow which lieth there cōtinually in the tops therof the Spaniards
 called it Serra Neuata, whē Colonius the first finder of those regions passed by the same. The
 fifth day he sayled by Os Draconis. They which were in the Brigandine, tolde Anciscus that
 Fogeda was returned to Hispaniola: but Anciscus supposing that they had fained that tale,
 commanded them by thauthority of his commission to turne backe againe. The Brigand-
 iners obeyed & folowed him: yet made they humble suite vnto him that hee woulde graunt
 them that with his fauour they might eyther goe agayne to Hispaniola, or that he himselfe
 would bring them to Nicuesa: and that they woulde for his gentlenesse declared towarde
 them in this behalfe, rewarde him with two thousand drammes of golde: for they were rich
 in golde, but poore in bread. But Anciscus assented to neither of their requestes, affirming
 that he might by no meanes goe any other way, then to Vraba the prouince assigned to
 Fogeda. Whereupon, by their conduct he tooke his voyage directly towarde Vraba. But
 nowe let it not seeme tedious to your holynesse, to heare of one thing worthy to be remem-
 bred, which chaunced to this Lieutenaut Anciscus as he came thither: for he also cast anker
 in the coasts of the region of Caramairi which we sayde to be famous, by reason of the
 hauen of Carthago, and of the goodly stature, strength and beauty both of men and women

Fogeda return-
 eth to Hispan-
 iola.

Famine.

A Brigandine
 drowned with
 the stroke of a
 fishe.

The region of
 Cuchibacoa.

Serra Neuata.
 Os Draconis.

Riche in golde
 and poore in
 bread.

being in the same. Here he sent certaine to goe aland on the shore both to fetch fresh water and also to repaire the ship boate which was sore bruised. In this meane time, a great multitude of the people of the countrey, armed after their maner, came about our men, as they were occupied about their businesse, and stood in a readinesse to fight, for the space of three dayes continually, during whiche time, neyther durst they set vpō our men, nor our men assaile them. Thus both parties keeping their array, stode still three whole dayes, the one gasing on the other. Yet all this time our men applied their worke, placing the shipwrights in the midst of their armie. As they stode thus amazed, two of our company went to fill their water pottes at the mouth of the riuer, neere vnto them both, where suddenly there came forth against them a captayne of the barbarians with tenne armed men, which inclosed them, and with terrible countenance bent their arrowes against them, but shotte them not of. One of our men fledde, but the other remained, calling his fellowe againe, and rebuking him for his fearefulness. Then he spake to the barbarians in their owne language, which he had learned being conuersant with the captiues that were caryed from thence along before. They marueyling to heare a stranger speake in their native tongue, put of their fiercenesse, and fell to friendly communication, demanding who were the captaynes of that company whiche were arryued in their lande. Hee answered that they were strangers passing by, and that he marueiled why they would attempt to driue them from their coastes, and disturbe their ships arguing them of folly and crueltie, and further threatening their ruine and destruction, except they would vse themselues more friendly towarde them. For hee aduertised them that there would shortly come into their lande armed men, in number like vnto the sands of the sea, and that to their vtter destruction, not onely if they resisted them not, but also except they receiued them, and entertayned them honourably. In the meane time, Anciscus was enfourmed that his men were deteyned: wherefore suspecting some deceite, hee brought forth all his target men, for feare of their venomous arrowes, and setting them in battel array, hee marched forward towardes them whiche stayed his men. But hee whiche communed with the barbarians, giuing him a signe with his hande to proceed no further, he stayed, and calling to him the other, he knewe that all was safe: for the barbarians profered him peace, because they were not they whom they suspected them to haue bin, meaning by Fogeda & Nicuesa, who had spoyled the village standing there by the sea side, and caryed away many captiues, and also burnt another village further within the lande. And therefore (as they sayde) the cause of their coming thither, was to reuenge those iniuries, if by any meanes they coule, yet that they would not exercise their weapons against the innocent: for they sayde, it was vngodly to fight against any, not being prouoked. Laying a part therefore their bowes and arrowes, they entertained our men gentlyly and gaue them great plenty of salted fishe, and bread of their countrey, and filled their vessels with Sider made of their countrey fruites and seedes, not inferior to wine in goodnesse. Thus Anciscus hauing entred into friendship, & made a league of peace with the inhabitants of Caramairi, which were before sore prouoked by other captaynes, he lanchd from that land, and directed his course to Vraba by the llande of Fortis, hauing in his ship a hundred and fiftie fresh menne, which were substituted in the place of suche as were dead: also twelue Mares, and manie swine, and other beastes both males and females for encrease. Lykewise, fystie peces of ordinaunce, with great multitude of targettes, swordes, ianelins, and such other weapons for the warres, but all this with euill speede, and in an euill houre: for as they were euen now entring into the haven, the gouernour of the shippe which sate at the helme, stroke the shippe vpon the sandes, where it was so fast enclosed and beaten with the waues of the sea, that it opened in the midst, and all lost that was therein, a thing surely miserable to beholde: for of all the victualles that they had, they saued only twelue barrells of meale, with fewe cheeses, and a little bisket bread, for all the beastes were drowned, and they themselues escaped hardly and halfe naked, by helpe of the Brigandine and ship boate, carying with them onely a fewe weapons. Thus they fell from one calamitie into another, being nowe more carefull for their liues then for golde. Yet being brought aliue and in health to that land which they

The use of targetts against venomous arrowes.

The barbarians haue respect to iustice.

Salted fishe.

Wine of fruits and seedes.

Artillery.

Anciscus ship- wracke.

so greatly desired, they could do no lesse then to prouide for the susteyning of their bodies, because they could not liue onely by ayre: and whereas their owne failed they must needes liue by other mens. Yet among these so many aduersities, one good chaunce offered itselfe vnto the: for they founde, not farre from the sea side, a groue of Date trees, among the which, and also among the reeke or weedes of the marishes, they espied a multitude of wilde bores, with whose fleshe they fed theselues wel certaine dayes. These they say to be lesse then ours, and with so short tayles that they thought they had ben cut of. They differ also from ours in their feete: for their hinder feete are whole vndiuided, and also without any hoofe. But they affirme that they haue proued by experience, their fleshe to be of better taste and more wholesome then ours. During this time they fed also of Dates, & the rootes of young Date trees, which they ate likewise in Ciuite and Granata, where they call the Palmitos, of the leaues wherof they make beemes in Rome. Sometimes also they ate of the apples of that region, which haue the taste of prunes, and haue also stones in them, and are but little and of redde colour: I suppose them to be of that kind wherof I ate in the cite of Alexandria in Egypt, in the month of Aprill, the trees wherof, the Iewes that dwelle there, being learned in the lawe of Moses, affirme to bee the Cedars of Libanus, which beare old fruites and newe all the yeere, as doth the orange tree. These apples are good to be eaten, and haue a certaine sweetnesse mixte with gentill sharpnesse, as haue the fruites called Sorbes. Th' inhabitantes plant these trees in their orchardes and gardenes, and norishe them with greate diligence as we doe cherries, peaches, and quinces. This tree in leaues, height, and trunke, is very like vnto the tree that beareth the fruit called Zizipha, which the Apothecaries call Iuiuba. But whereas now the wilde bores began to faile them, they were againe enforced to consult and prouide for the time to come: Wherevpon with their whole armye, they entered further into the land. The Canibales of this prouince, are most expert archers. Ascanius had in his companye, a hundred men. They mette by the way with only three men of thinhabitates, naked, and armed with bowes & venomous arrowes, who without all feare, assayed our men fiercely, wounded manye, and slue manye, and when they emptyed their quiers, fledde, as swiftly as the winde: For (as we haue said) they are exceeding swifte of foote by reason of their loose going from their childes age, they affirme that they lette slip no arrowe out of their bowes in vaine. Our men therefore returned the same way that they came, much more vnfortunate then they were before, and consulted among themselves to leaue the lãd, especially because the inhabitantes had ouerthrowne the fortresse which Fogeda builded, and had burnt thirtie houses of the village, as soone as Pizarus and his company left of Fogeda, and forsaked the land. By this occasion therefore, being driuen to seeke further, they had intelligence that the West side of that goulfe of Vraba, was more fruitful & better to inhabite. Wherefore, they sent the one halfe of their men thither with the brigandine, and left the other neere to the sea side on the East part. This gulf, is fourteene miles in breadth, and howe much the further it entereth into the firme land, it is so much the narrower. Into the gulf of Vraba, there fall many riuers, but one (as they say) more fortunate then the riuier of Nilus in Egypt. This riuier is called Darien, vpon the bankes wherof, being very fruitfull of trees and grasse, they intended to plante their newe colonye or habitation. But the inhabitantes marueyling at the brigandine being bigger then their canoas, and specially at the sayles thereof, first sent away their children and weakest sort of their people with their baggage and houshold stuffe, and assembled all such together both men and women, as were meete for the warres. Thus being armed with weapons and desperate mindes they stoode in a readynesse to fight, and taryed the comming of our men vpon a little hill, as it were to take the aduantage of the ground: our men iudged them to be about fife hundred in number. Then Ancisus the captayne of our men, and Lieutenaut in the steede of Fogeda, setting his men in order of battayle aray, and with his whole company kneeling on his knees, they all made humble prayers to GOD for the victorie, and a vowe to the image of the blessed virgin which is honoured in Ciuite, by the name of Sancta Maria Antiqua, promising to sende her many golden gyftes, and a straunger of that country also, to name

A groue of date trees.

Wilde bores.

Apples of a strange kinde.

Cedars of Libanus.

Men of desperate boldnes.

The gulf of Vraba.

The great riuier of Darien.

The souldiers
make an othe.

The barbarians
are driuen to
fright.

The riuier of
Darien, but vii.
degrees from the
Equinoctiall line.

Golde founde in
a thicket of
reedes.
Brest plates of
golde.

The golden
regions are for
the most part
barren.

the village Sancta Maria Antiqua after her name: likewise to erecte a temple called by the same name, or at the least to dedicate the king of that prouince his pallace to that vse, if it should please her to assist them in this dangerous enterprise. This done, al the souldiers toke an oth, that no man shuld turae his backe to his enemies. Thē the capitaine commanding them to be in a readinesse with their targets and iauelyns, and the trumpet to blowe the battayle, they fiercely assailed their enimies with a larome: but the naked barbarians, not long able to abide the force of our men, were put to flight, with their king and captayne Cemaccus. Our men entred into the village, where they found plentie of meate, such as the people of the countrey vse, sufficient to assuage their present hunger, as bread made of rootes, with certayne fruites vnlike vnto ours, which they reserue for store, as we doe Chestnuttles. Of these people, the men are vtterly naked, but the women, from the nauel downewarde are couered with a fine cloth made of gossampine cotton. This region is vtterly without any sharpnesse of wynter for the mouth of this riuier of Darien, is onely eight degrees distant from the Equinoctiall line, so that the common sorte of our men, scarcely perceiue any difference in length betweene the day and night all the whole yeere: but because they are ignorant in astronomie, they can perceiue no small difference. Therefore wee neede not much passe if the degree differ somewhat from their opinion, forasmuch as the difference cannot bee great. The day after that they arriued at the lande, they sayled along by the riuier, where they found a great thycket of reedes, continuing for the space of a myle in length, supposing (as it chaunced in deede) that the borderers thereabout which had fled, had either lien lurking there, or els to haue hid their stuffe among those reedes: Whereupon, arming themselves with their targets, for feare of the people lying in ambushe, they searched the thicket diligently, and found it without men, but replenished with housholde stuffe and golde. They founde also a great multitude of shetes, made of the silke or cottō of the gossampine tree: likewise diuers kindes of vessels and tooles made of wood, and many of earth: also many brest plates of gold, and ouches wrought after their manner, to the summe of a hundred & two pound weight: for they also take pleasure in the beautie of golde, and worke it very artificially, though it bee not the price of things among them as with vs. They haue it out of other regions, for exchange of such things as their country bringeth forth: for such regions as haue plentie of bread and gossampine lacke golde, and such as bring forth golde are for the most part rough with mountains and rockes, and therefore barren: and thus they exercise marchandies without the vse of money. Reioycing therefore with double gladnesse, aswell in that they say great likenesse of golde, as also that fortune had offered them so fayre and fruitefull a country, they sent for their felowes whom they had left before in the East side of the gulfes of Vraba. Yet some say, that the ayre is there vnwholsome because that part of the region lieth in a lowe valley, enuironed with mountaynes and maryshes.

The second Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

Lupus Olanus.

I Haue described to your holynesse where Fogeda with his company (to whom the large tractes of Vraba was assigned to inhabite) entended to fasten their foote. Let vs now therefore leaue them of Vraba for a while, and returne agayne to Nicuesa, to whom the gouernance and Lieutenauntship of the most large prouince of Beragua (being the West side of the gulfes of Vraba) was appoynted. Wee haue declared howe Nicuesa, departing with one Carauel and two Brigandines, from Vraba the iurisdiction of his friend & companion Fogeda, directed his course westwarde to Beragua, leauing the bigger shippes somewhat behinde him, to followe him a farre of, but hee tooke this deuice in an euill houre, for he both lost his fellowes in the night, and went past the mouth of the ryuer Beragua, which hee chiefly sought. One Lupus Olanus a Cantabrian, and gouernour of one of the great shippes, had the conduct of one of the Brigandines: hee comming behinde, learned of the inhabitants, whiche was the way Eastwarde to the gulfes of Beragua, ouerpassed and left behinde Nicuesa. Olanus therefore directing his course towarde the East, met with the other Brigandine, which hadde also wandered out of the way by reason of the darknes of the night.

night. The gouernour of this Brigandine, was one Petrus de Vmbria. Thus both being glad of their meeting, they consulted what was best to bee done, and which way they could coniecture their gouernour had taken his voyage. After deliberation, they iudged that Nicuesa coulde no more lacke some to put him in remembrance of Beragua, then they themselues were mindfull hereof, hoping also to finde him there. They sayled therefore towarde Beragua, where they found within xvi. myles distant a riuier whiche Colonus named Lagartos, because it nourisheth great Lysards, which in the Spanishe tongue are called Lagartos. These Lysards are hurtful both vnto man and beast, and in shape much like vnto the Crocodiles of the riuier Nilus in Egypt. In this ryuer they founde their companions and fellowes of their errour, lying at anker with the great shyppes, whiche followed behinde by the gouernours commandement. Here the whole assembly being carefull and disquieted by reason of the gouernours errour after consultation, by the aduice of the captaynes of the Brigandines, who had rased neere vnto the coastes of Beragua, they sailed directly thither. Beragua, in the language of the inhabitants of the same prouince, is as much to say, as the golden ryuer. The Region it selfe is also called by the same name, taking name of the ryuer. In the mouth of this ryuer, the greatest vesselles cast anker, and conueighed all their victualles and other necessaries to lande with their ship boates, and elected Lupus Olanus to bee the gouernour in steade of Nicuesa whom they had loste. By that aduice therefore of Olanus and the other vnder captaynes that all hope of departure might bee taken from the souldiers which they had now brought thither, & to make them the more willing to inhabite the lande, they vtterly forsooke and caste of those shyppes beeing nowe rotten for age, and suffered them to bee shaken and broosed of the surges of the sea. Yet of their soundest planks, with other newe, made of the trees of that Region (whiche they say to bee exceeding bigge and high) they framed a newe carauell shortly after, which they might vse to serue for their necessitie. But Beragua was founde by the vnfortunate destenye of Petrus de Vmbria. For hee, beeing a man of prompt wit and apt forwardnesse to attempte things (in whiche sometime fortune will beare a stroke notwithstanding our prouidence) tooke vpon him that aduenture to search the shore, to the intent to finde a way for his fellowes where they might best come a land. For this purpose, he choose him xii. maryners, and went aboarde the ship boate which serued the greatest shyppes. The flowing of the sea, raged and roared there, with a horryble whurling, as we reade of the daungerous place of Scylla in the sea of Cicilie, by reason of the huge & ragged rockes reaching into the sea, from which the waues rebounding with violence, make a great noyse and roughnesse on the water, which roughnesse or reflowing, the Spanyardes call Resacca. In these daungers wretched Vmbria wresteled a while, but in shorte space, a waue of the sea almost as bygge as a mountayne, rebounding from the rockes, ouerwhelmed the boate, & deuoured the same with the men, euen in the sight of their fellowes: So that of them all, onely one escaped by reason he was expert in swimming. For getting holde of the corner of a rocke, and susteyning the rage of the sea vntill the next day when it waxed calme, and the shore was drye by the fall of the water, he escaped and resorted to his companie. But Vmbria with the other eleuen, were vtterly cast away. The residue of the companie, durst not committe themselues to the shyppe boate, but went alande with their brygantines. Where remayning a fewe dayes, and sayling along by the riuier, they found certaine villages of the inhabitautes, which they call Mumu. Here they began to build a fortresse, and to sowe seedes after the manner of their cuntry, in a certaine vale of fruitefull ground, because in other places the region is barren. As these things were thus doing in Beragua, one of their company standing vpon the top of a high rocke of especiall, and lifting his eyes towarde the West, began to crye, Lynnen sayles, lynnen sayles. And the neerer it drew towards him, he perceiued it to be a ship boate, comming, with a little sayle: yet receiued they it with much reioycing, for it was the fisher boate of Nicuesa his Carauell, and of capacitie to cary only foue men, and had now but three in it, which had stolne it from Nicuesa, because he refused to giue credit to them that he had passed Beragua, and left it behind him Eastwarde. For they seeing Nicuesa and his fellowes

Petrus de
Vmbria.

The ryuer
Lagartos.

The golden
ryuer of Beragua.

The enterpryse
and death of
Petrus de
Vmbria.

The daungerous
place of Scylla in
the sea of Cicilie.

to

The miserable
case of Nicuesa.

The river of S.
Matthei.

The rigorous-
ness of Nicuesa.

Corn waxeth
ripe every fourth
moneth.

The commenda-
tion of a young
man brought vp
with Colonus.
Portus Bellus.

Weakenesse of
hunger.

Cape Narmor.

Nomen Dei.

to consume daylye by famine, thought that they would proue fortune with that boate if their chance might be to finde Beragua, as in deede it was. Debating therefore with their felowes of these matters, they declared how Nicuesa erred and lost the Carauel by tempest, & that hee was now wandering among the marishes of vnknowen coastes, full of miserie and in extreme penurie of all thinges, hauing nowe liued for the space of threescore and tenne dayes, onely with herbes & rootes, & seldome with fruites of the countrey, contented to drinke water, and yet that oftentimes failing, because he was instant to trauallye Westwarde by foote, supposing by that meanes to come to Beragua. Colonus the first finder of this mayne land, had coasted along by this tracte, and named it Gracia Dei, but thinhabitanes cal it Cerabaro. Through this region, there runneth a ryuer, which our men named Sancti Matthei, distant from the West side of Beragua about an hundred and thirtie myles. Here I let passe the name of this riuier, and of many other places by the names which the inhabitants vse, because our men are ignorant thereof. Thus Lupus Olanus the conductor of one of the ships of Nicuesa and now also vice Lieuutenant in his steede, after that he had receiued this information of the Maryners, sent thither a Brigandine vnder their guiding. These Mariners therefore, which came in the fisher boate, founde Nicuesa, and brought him to the place where Olanus lay, whome at his coming he cast in prison, & accused him of treason, because he vsurped the authority of the Lieuutenantship, and that for the desire he had to beare rule and be in authoritie, he tooke no care of his errors: also that he behaued himselfe negligently, demanding furthermore of him, what was the cause of his long delay. Likewise hee spake to all the vnder officers sharply, & with a troubled mind, and within fewe dayes after, commaunded them to trusse vp their packes, and make ready to depart. They desired him to quiet himselfe, and to forbear them a while, vntill they had reaped the corne that they had sowed, which would shortly bee ripe: for all kinde of corne waxeth ripe there every fourth moneth after it is sowed. But hee vterly denied to tarie any whyt: but that hee would fourthwith depart from that vnfortunate lande, and plucked vp by the rootes all that euer was brought into the gulfe of Beragua, and commaunded them to direct their course towardes the East. After they had sayled about the space of sixteene myles, a certaine yong man, whose name was Gregorie, a Genues borne, and of a child brought vp with Colonus, called to remembrance that there was a hauen not farre from thence: and to prooue his sayings true, hee gaue his felowes these tokens, that is that they should finde vpon the shore, an anker of a lost shippe halfe couered with sand, and vnder a tree next vnto the hauen a spring of cleare water. They came to the lande, found the anker and the spring, and commended the witte and memorie of the yong man, that he only among many of the Maryners which had searched those coastes with Colonus, bore the thing so well in minde. This hauen Colonus called Portus Bellus. Where as in this voyage for lacke of victuals, they were sometimes enforced to goe aland, they were euil entreated of thinhabitanes: by reason whereof their strengthes were so weakened with hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre against naked men, or scarcely to beare their harnesse on their backs: and therefore our men lost twentie of their companions, which were slayne with venomous arrowes. They consulted to leaue the one halfe of their felowes in the hauen of Portus Bellus, & the other part Nicuesa toke with him toward the East, where about twentie and eight miles from Portus Bellus, he intended to builde a fortresse harde by the sea side, vpon the poynt or cape, which in time past Colonus named Marmor, but they were so feeble by reason of long hunger, that their strength serued them not to susteyne suche labour, yet he erected a little towre, able to resist the first assaulte of the inhabitantes: this towre he called Nomen Dei. From the time that he left Beragua, what in the iourney among the sandie playnes then also for hūger, while he builded the towre, of the few which remayned alyue, hee lost two hundred. And thus by litle and litle, the multitude of seuen hundred, fourescore, and fife men was brought nowe to scarcely one hundred. Whye Nicuesa lyued with these fewe miserable men, there arose a contention among them of Vraha, as concerning the Lieuutenantshippe: for one Vaschus Nunnez, by the iudgement of all men, trusting more to his strength then wit, stirred vp certayne light fellows agaynst Anci-us, saying that Anci-us had

net

not the
authority
tenaunt
sayle at
that For
venem
The wis
chus Ne
coastes
of the
it were
quiet in
aliue on
not be
lyued,
auouche
they we
two gre
and app
He then
furnish
in the
Paria, f
this voy
fered m
certayn
his cou
the whi
that by
grees d
boate,
hauing
our me
should
reaching
nysh th
and she
to the
Also th
enforced
wayte
seuen h
naked:
boate,
rowes,
their ta
they d
as they
hearbe
rowes
water,
till nig
thence
vol.

ate if their
their fellows
est, & that
erie and in
and tenne
ontented to
Westwarde
nder of this
nhabitantes
med Sancti
es. Here I
the inhabit
ctor of one
he had reir
guiding.
rought him
used him of
he desire he
he behaued
long delay.
within fewe
part. They
d the corne
h ripe there
t: but that
he rootes all
their course
ertaine yong
ith Colonus,
oue his say-
the shore, an
uen a spring
commended
yners which
is hauen Co-
were some-
son whereof
keepe warre
herefore our
owes. They
& the other
es from Por-
ynt or cape,
of long hun-
ed a little
Nomen Dei.
es then also
ost two hun-
re, and flue
these fewe
the Lieute-
more to his
Ancius had
net

not the kinges letters patentes for that office, and that it was not sufficient that hee was authorised by Fogeda, and therefore forbode that he should execute the office of the Lieutenants, and willed them to choose certayne of their owne company, by whose counsayle and authoritie they might be gouerned. Thus beeing diuided into factions, by reason that Fogeda their captaine came not agayne, whom they supposed to be nowe dead of his venomous wound, they contended whether it were best to substitute Nicuesa in his place. The wisest sorte, such as were familiar with Nicuesa, & could not beare the insolency of Vaschus Nunnez, thought it good that Nicuesa shoulde be sought out throughout al those coastes: for they had knowledge that he departed from Beragua, because of the barrennesse of the ground, and that by the example of Ancius, and such other as had made shipwracke, it were possible that hee might wander in some secrete place, and that they coulde not be quiet in their mindes, vntill they knewe the certaintie whether hee with his fellowes were alieue or dead. But Vaschus Nunnez, fearing least at the coming of Nicuesa, hee shoulde not be had in authoritie among his fellowes, sayde they were mad men to thinke that Nicuesa lyued, and although hee were alieue, yet that they hadde no neede of his helpe: for hee auouched that there was none of his fellowes, that were not as meete to rule as Nicuesa. While they were thus reasoning to and fro, one Rodericus Colmenaris arryued in those coasts with two great shippes, hauing in them threescore freshe men, with great plentie of victualles and apparell. Of the nauigation of this Colmenaris, I intend to speake somewhat more. He therfore departed from the hauen of Hispaniola, called Beata (where they prepare and furnishe themselves whiche make any voyage into these landes) about the Ides of October, in the yeare. 1510. and landed the 9. of Nouember in a region in the large prouince of Paria, founde by Colonus betweene the hauen Carthago, & the region of Cuchibachoa. In this voyage, what by the roughnesse of the sea, and fiercenesse of the barbarians, he suffered many incommodities; for when his freshe water failed, he sayled to the mouth of a certayn riuer which the inhabitantes call Gaira, being apt to receiue shippes. This riuer had his course from the toppe of an exceeding high mountayne couered with snowe, higher then the which, all the companions of this captayne Rodericus say, that they neuer sawe: And that by good reason, if it were couered with snowe in that region, which is not past ten degrees distant from the Equinoctial lyne. As they beegan to draw water out of their ship boate, a certaine king made toward them, appparelled with vestures of Gossampine cotton, hauing twentie noble men in his company appparelled also; which thing seemed straunge to our men, and not seene before in those parties. The kinges apparell hong loose from his shoulders to his elbowes, and from the girdle downewarde, it was much lyke a womans kirtle, reaching euen to his heeles. As hee drewe neere toward our men, he seemed friendly to admoynish them to take none of the water of that ryuer, affirming it to be vnwholesome for men, and shewed them that not farre from thence, there was a ryuer, of good water. They came to the ryuer, and endeououring to come neere the shore, they were dryuen backe by tempest. Also the burbling of the sand, declared the sea to be but shalow ther. They were therefore enforced to returne to the first ryuer where they might safely cast anker. This king layde wayte for our men: for as they were filling their barrells, hee sette on them with about seuen hundred menne (as our men iudged) armed after their manner, although they were naked: for onely the king and his nobled men were appparelled. They tooke away the ship boate, and broke it in manner to chips: so fiercely assaying our men with their venomous arrows, that they slue of them fourtie and seuen, before they coulde couer themselves with their targets. For that poyson is of such force, that albeit the wounds were not great, yet they dyed thereof immediately, for they yet knewe no remedie against this kinde of poyson, as they after learned of the Inhabitantes of Hispaniola: for this llande bringeth forth an hearbe which quencheth & mortifieth the violent poyson of the hearbe, wherewith their arrows are infected, so that it be ministred in time. Yet of our companie whiche went for water, seuen escaped that conflycte and hydde themselves in a hollowe tree, lurking there vntill night, yet escaped they not the hands of their enemies: for the shyppe departed from thence in the night season, and left them there, supposing that they had beene slayne. Thus

The nauigation
of Rodericus
Colmenaris.

An exceeding
high mountayne
couered with
snowe.

Appareled men.

Spanyarden
slayne with ve-
nomous arrowes.

A remedie
against venen-
ous arrowes.

The haven of
Vraba.

by manye such perilles and dangers (which I lightly ouerpasse, beecause I will not bee tedious to your holynesse) hee arryued at the length at the haven of Vraba, and cast anker at the East side thereof, from whence not long before our men departed to the West side, by reason of the barrennesse of that soyle. When he had continued a while in the haven, and saw no man stirring, marueyled at the silence of the places (for hee supposed there to haue found his fellowes) he could not coniecture what this shuld meane: and thereupon began to suspect that eyther they were dead, or that they had changed the place of their habitation. To knowe the certaintie hereof, he commaunded all the great ordinaunce, and other small gunnes which he hadde in his shyppes, to be charged, and fiers to be made in the night vpon the toppes of the rockes. Thus the fiers being kindled, hee commanded all the gunnes to be shot of at one instant, by the horrible noise whereof, the gulfe of Vraba was shaken, although it were xxliii. myles distant, for so broad is the gulfe. This noyse was hearde of their fellowes in Dariena, and they answered them agayne with mutuall fyers. Wherefore, by the following of these fiers, Colmenaris brought his shyppes to the West side. Here those wretched and miserable men of Dariena, whiche nowe through famyne and feeblenesse, helde their wearie soules in their teeth, ready to depart from their bodies, by reason of the calamities which befell vnto them after Ancisus shipwracke, lifting vp their handes to heauen, with the teares running downe their cheekes both for ioy and sorow, embraced Rodericus & his fellowes with such kinde of reioycing, as their present necessitie seemed to require: for whereas they were before his comming, without vycuals, and almost naked, he brought them abundance of meat, drinke and apparel. It resteth now (most holy father) to declare what came of the dissenion among them of Vraba, as concerning the gouernance after the losse of their captaynes.

The thirde Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

All the chiefe officers in Beragua, and such as were most politike in counsaile, determined that Nicuesa shoulde bee sought out, if by any meanes he could be found. Whereupon they tooke from Ancisus the gouernour, refusing the comming of Nicuesa, a Brigandine which he made of his owne charges: and agreed, against both the will of Ancisus, and the master of fence Vaschus Nunnez, that Nicuesa shuld be sought forth to take away the strife as touching the gouernment. They elected therfore Colminaris (of whom we spake before) to take this matter in hand, willing him to make diligēt search for Nicuesa in those coasts where they supposed he erred: for they heard that he had forsaken Beragua, the region of an vnfruitfull ground. They gaue him therefore commandement to bring Nicuesa with him, and further declare vnto him that hee should do right good seruice to come thither, in taking away the occasion of their seditions. Colminaris tooke the thing vpō him the more gladly, because Nicuesa was his very friend, supposyng his comming with vycualles shoulde bee no lesse thankfull to Nicuesa and his company, then it was to them of Vraba. Furnishyng therfore one of his owne shippes which he brought with him, and also the Brigandine taken from Ancisus, he frayghted the same with part of the vycualles & other necessities which he brought with him before from Hispaniola to Vraba. Thus coursing along by al the coastes and gulfes neere thereabout, at the length, at the poynt called Marmor, he found Nicuesa, of al lyuing men most infortunate, in manner dried vp with extreme hunger, filthy and horrible to behold, with only threescore men in his company, left aliue of seven hundred. They al seemed to him so miserable, that he no lesse lamented their case, then if he had found them dead. But Colminaris cōforted his friend Nicuesa, and embracing him with teares and cheerefull words, relieued his spirites, and further encouraged him with great hope of better fortune, declaring also that his comming was looked for, and greatly desired of all the good men of Vraba, for that they hoped that by his auctoritie, their discord and contention should be finished. Nicuesa thanked his friend Colminaris after such sort as his calamitie required. Thus they tooke ship together, and sailed directly to Vraba. But so variable and vnconstant is the nature of man, that he soone groweth out of vse, becommeth insolent and vnmyndful of benefites after to much felicitie: for Nicuesa after thus many teares and weepings, after diuers bewailings of his infortunate destinye, after so many thanksgiuings,

Nicuesa is
founde in a
miserable case.

Insolencie of to
much felicitie.

The s
thank
men
him &
gold,
of his
them
Vasch
threes
please
chus N
This w
which
remain
to goe
done t
was ne
therein
his life
consum
forced
fines.
geather
players
and rer
Colmer
a region
with cr
whom th
tualles.
oftentim
was now
from his
and his
these ex
with his
found th
seeke B
at anker
who en
were the
of the
they en
enforce
desired
towards
from the
their pre
beeing l
but this
Ancisus
prison,
had his
and not

thanksgivings, yea after that he had fallen downe to the ground and kissed the feet of Colmenaris his saviour, he began to quarel with him before he came yet at Vraba, reproving him & them al for the alteration of the state of thinges in Vraba, and for the gathering of gold, affirming that none of them ought to haue laide hand of any golde without the aduice of him or Fogeda his companion. When these sayings and such like, came to the eares of them of Vraba, they so stirred vp the mindes of Anciscus Lieuetenant for Fogeda, and also of Vaschus Nunnez of the contrary part, against Nicuesa, that shortly after his ariuill with his threescore men, they commaunded him with threatening to depart from thence: but this pleased not the better sort: Yet fearing lest tumult should be among the people, whom Vaschus Nunnez had stirred to factions, the best part was faine to giue place to the greatest. This wretched man therefore Nicuesa thus drowned in miseries, was thrust into the Brigadine which hee himselfe brought, and with him onely seenteene men, of his threescore which remained alyue. He tooke shippe in the Calendes of March, in the yeere. 1511. intending to goe to Hispaniola to complayne of the rashnesse of Vaschus Nunnez, and of the violence done to him by Anciscus: But he entred into the Brigandine in an vnfortunate houre, for he was neuer seene after. They supposed that the Brigandine was drowned with all the men therein. And thus vnhappie Nicuesa fallyng headlong out of one misery into another, ended his life more miserably thē he liued. Nicuesa being thus vilely reiected, and their victuals consumed which Colmenaris brought the, falling in manner mad for hunger, they were enforced like rauening woulues seeking their pray, to invade suche as dwelt about their confines. Vaschus Nunnez therefore, their new capitaine of their owne election assembling together a hundred and thirtie men, and setting them in order of battayle after his sword-players fashion, puffed vp with pride, placed his souldiers as pleased him, in the foreward and rereward, and some, as partizans, about his owne person. Thus associating with him Colmenaris hee went to spoyle the kinges which were borderers thereabout, & came first to a region about that coast called Coiba (wherof we made mention before) imperiously and with cruell countenance commaunding the kinge of the region whose name was Careta (of whom they were neuer troubled as often as they passed by his dominions) to giue them victualles. But Careta denied that he could giue them any at that time, alleagying that he had oftentimes aided the Christians as they passed by those coastes, by reason whereof, his store was now consumed: also that by the meanes of the continuall warre which hee kept euer from his childes ages with a king whose name was Poncha, bordering vpon his dominion, he and his familie were in great scarcenesse of all thinges. But Vaschus would admit none of these excuses and thereupon tooke Careta prisoner, spoyled his village, and brought him bounde with his two wiues and children, and all his familie to Dariena. With this king Careta, they found three of the felowes of Nicuesa, the which whē Nicuesa passed by those coastes to seeke Beragua, fearing punishment for their euil desertes, stole away from the shippes lying at anker: And when the naue departed, committed themselues to the mercie of Careta, who entertheyned them very friendly. They had now bin there eightene monethes, and were therefore as viterly naked as the people of the countrey. During this time, the meate of the inhabitantes seemed vnto them delicate dishes & princely fare, especially because they enioyed the same without any strife for mine and thine, which two thinges mooue and enforce men to such harde shifts and miseries, that in liuing they seeme not to lyue. Yet desired they to returne to their olde cares, of such force is education and naturall affection towards them with whom wee haue bin brought vp. The victuals which Vaschus brought from the village of Careta, to his fellowes left in Dariena, was rather somewhat to asswage their present hunger, then viterly to take away their necessitie. But as touching Anciscus, beeing Lieuetenant for Fogeda, whether it were before these things, or after, I knowe not: but this I am sure of, that after the reiecting of Nicuesa, many occasions were sought against Anciscus by Vaschus and his factionaries. Howsoeuer it was, Anciscus was taken, and cast in prison, and his goodes confiscate: the cause hereof was (as Vaschus alleadged) that Anciscus had his commission of the Lieutenantship of Fogeda onely, whom they said to be now dead, and not of the king, saying that hee woulde not obey any manne that was not put in office

The death of
Nicuesa.

Famine enforzeth the to fall
to spoyling.
Careta king of
Coiba.

King Careta is
taken and
spoyled.

Mine and thine
the seedes of all
mischiefe.

Anciscus, Lieu-
tenant for Fo-
geda, is cast in
pryson.

Anciscus taketh
his Voyage to
Hispaniola.

The reuenge of
God.

The inconueni-
ences of dis-
corde.

King Poncha.

Swords of wood.

King Careta con-
spireth with the
Spaniards against
king Poncha.

The region of
Comogra, dis-
tant from Dari-
ena: xxx
leagues.

King Comogrus.

by the king himselfe by his letters patentes. Yet at the request of the grauest sort, he was somewhat pacified, and dealt more gently with him, hauing some compassion on his calamities, and thereupon commanded him to be loosed. Anciscus being at libertie, tooke shippe to departe from thence to Hispaniola: but before he had hoysed vp his saile all the wisest sort resorted to him, humbly desiring him to returne againe, promising that they woulde doe their diligence, that Vascus being reconciled, hee might be restored to his full authoritie of the Lieutenantsship: but Anciscus refused to consent to their request, and so departed. Yet some there were that murmured that God and his angels shewed this reuenge vpon Anciscus, because Nicuesa was reiected through his counsaile. Howe so euer it be, the searchers of the newe landes fall headlong into ruine by their owne follie, consuming themselues with ciuile discorde, not weighing so great a matter, nor employing their best endeouour about the same, as the woorthynesse of the thing requireth. In this meane time, they determined all with one agreement, to sende messengers into Hispaniola to the yong Admirall and viceroy, sonne and heyre to Christophorus Colonus the finder of these landes, and to the other gouernours of the llande (from whom the newe landes receiue their ayde and lawes) to signifie vnto them what state they stode in, and in what necessitie they liued, also what they had found, and in what hope they were of greater things, if they were furnished with plentie of victualles and other necessities. For this purpose they elected, at the assignement of Vascus, one Valdiuia, being one of his faction, and instructed by him against Anciscus and to bee assistant with him. They appoynted one Zamudius, a Cantabrian, so that commaundement was giuen to Valdiuia to returne from Hispaniola with victuals, & Zamudius was appoynted to take his voyage into Spaine to the king. They tooke ship both together with Anciscus, hauing in mind to certifie the king howe things were handled there, much otherwise then Zamudius information. I my selfe spake with both Anciscus & Zamudius at their comming to the court. While they were occupied about these matters, those wretched men of Dariena loosed Careta the king of Coiba, vpon condition that he should aide them in their warres against his enemie and theirs, king Poncha, bordering vpon his dominions. Careta made a league with them, promising that as they passed by his kingdome, hee woulde giue them all things necessarie, & meete them with an army of men, to goe forward with them to the battaile against Poncha. Their weapons are neyther bowes nor venomed arrowes, as we saide the inhabitants to haue, which dwell eastward beyond the gulfes. They fight therefore at hande with long swoordes (whiche they call Macanas) made of woode, because they haue no Iron. They vse also long staues lyke iaculyns, hardened at the endes with fire, or typt with bone, also certaine sylnges and darts. Thus after the league made with Careta, both he and our men had certaine dayes appoynted them to tyll their grounde and sowe their seedes. This done, by the ayde of Careta, and by his conduction, they marched towarde the palace of Poncha, who fledde at their comming. They spoyled his village, and mitigated their hunger with such victualles as they founde there: yet could they not helpe their fellows therewith, by reason of the farre distace of the place, although they had great plentie: for the village of Poncha, was more then a hundred miles distant from Dariena, whereas was also none other remedie, but that the same shoulde haue bin caryed on mens backs to the sea side, being farre of, where they left their shippes in the which they came to the village of Careta. Here they found certaine poundes weight of gold, grauen and wrought into sundry ouches. After the sacking of this village, they resorted toward the ships, intending to leaue the kinges of the inland vntouched at this time, and to inuade only them which dwelt by the coastes. Not farre from Coiba, in the same tracte, there is a region named Comogra, & the king thereof called Comogrus, after the same name. To this king they came first next after the subuersion of Poncha, and found his pallace situate in a fruitefull playne of xii. leagues in breadth, at the rootes of the further side of the next mountaines. Comogrus had in his court a certaine noble man of neere cōsanguinitie to king Careta, which had fled to Comogrus by reason of certayne dissention which was betweene Careta & him, these noblemen, they cal Iura. This Iura therefore of Coiba, met our men by the way, and conciled Comogrus to them, because he

was wel known to our men, from the time that Nicuesa passed first by those coastes. Our men therfore went quietly to the pallace of Comogrus, being distant from Dariena thirtie leagues by a plaine way about the mountaynes. The king Comogrus had seven sonnes, yong men, of comely fourme & stature, which he had by sundry wyues. His pallace was framed of postes or proppes made of trees fastened together after a strange sort, and of so strong building, that it is of no lesse strength then wallis of stone. They which measured the length of the floore thereof, found it to be a hundred and fiftie paces, and in breadth, fourescore foote, being roofed and paved with maruelous arte. They founde his storehouse furnished with abundaunce of delicate victuals after the manner of their country, and his wine seller replenished with great vesselles of earth and also of wood, filled with their kinde of wine and sider, for they haue no grapes: but like as they make their bread of those three kindes of rootes called Iucca, Agis and Maizium (whereof we spake in the first Decade) so make they their wine of the fruites of Date trees, and Sider of other fruites and seedes as do the Almaynes, Fleminges, English men, and our Spaniards which inhabite the mountaynes, as the Vascons and Asturias: likewise in the mountaine of the Alpes, the Noricians, Sweians, and Heluecians, make certayne drinckes of barley, wheate, hoppes, and apples. They say also that with Comogrus they drunke wines of sundry tastes, both white and black. But nowe you shall heare of a thing more monstrous to beholde. Entering therfore into the inner partes of the pallace, they were brought into a chamber hanged about with the carcasses of men, tyed with ropes of gossampine cotton. Being demaunded what they ment by that superstition, they answered that those were the carcasses of the father, graund father, & great graundfather, with other the auncetours of their king Comogrus, declaring that they had the same in great reuerence, and that they tooke it for a godly thing to honour them religiously, and therefore apparelled euery of the same sumptuously with gold and precious stones, according vnto their estate. After this sorte did the antiquitie honour their Penates, which they thought had the gouernance of their liues. How they drie these carcasses vpon certain instruments made of wood, like vnto hurdells, with a soft fire vnder the same, so that onely the skinne remaineth to hold the bones together, we haue described in the former Decade. Of Comogrus his seven sonnes, the eldest had an excellent naturall wit. He therfore thought it good to flatter and please this wanderyng kinde of men (our men I meane) liuing only by shiftes & spoyle, lest being offended, and seeking occasions against him & his familie, they should handle him as they did other which sought no meanes how to gratifie them: Wherefore he gaue Vaschus and Colmenaris foure thousand ounces of golde artificially wrought, and also fiftie slaues, which hee had taken in the warres: for such, either they sell for exchange of their thinges, or otherwise vse them as them listeth, for they haue not the vse of money. This golde with as much more which they had in another place, our men weighed in the porch of Comogrus his palace, to separate the fift parte thereof, which portion is due to the kinges Exchequer for it is decreed, that the fift part of both goide, pearles, and pretious stones, should bee assigned to the kinges treasurers, and the residue to be diuided among themselves by composition. Here as brabbling and contention arose among our men about the diuiding of gold, this eldest sonne of king Comogrus being present, whom we prayed for his wisdom, comming somewhat with an angry countenance toward him which helde the ballaunces, he stroke them with his fiste, and scattered all the gold that was therein about the porche, sharpely rebuking them with wordes in this effecte. What is the matter, you Christian men, that you so greatly esteeme so little portion of gold more then your owne quietnesse, which neuerthelesse you entend to deface from these fayre ouches, and to melt the same in a rude masse. If your hunger of gold, bee so insatiable, that onely for the desire you haue thereto, you disquiet so many nations, and you your selues also susteyne so many calamities, and incommidities, lyuing like banished men out of your owne cuntry, I will shewe you a region flowing with golde, where you may satisfie your rauening appetites: But you must attempt the thing with a greater power, for it standeth you in hand by force of armes to ouercome kinges of great puissaunce, and rigorous defendours of their dominions. For beside other the

The kinges
pallace.

Wine & sider,

Blacked wine.

The carcasses of
men dried.The distribution
of golde.Young Comogrus
his oration.The hunger of
golde.A region flowing
with gold.

great

King Tumanama.

Canibales.

The golde mines of the mountaynes.
Vnwrought golde not estemed.

Abundance of golde.

Household stuffe of golde.

Naked people tormented with ambition.

A vehement contention.

great king Tumanama will come forth against you, whose kingdome is most riche with golde, and distant from hence only sixe sunnes, that is, sixe dayes: for they number the dayes by the sunne. Furthermore, or euer you can come thither, you muste passe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell Canibales, a fierce kinde of men, deuourers of mans fleshe, lyuing without lawes, wandering, and without Empire: for they also being desirous of golde, haue subdued them vnder their dominion, which before inhabited the golde mynes of the mountaynes, and vse them like bonde men, vsing their labour in digging and working their golde in plates and sundry images, like vnto these which you see here: for we doe no more esteeme rude gold vnwrought, then wee doe cloddes of earth, before it be fourmed by the hande of the workemen to the similitude either of some vessel necessarie for our vse, or some ouche beautifull to be worne. These things doe wee receyue of them for exchange of other of our things, as of prisoners taken in warre, which they buie to eate, or for sheetes and other things pertaining to the furniture of household, such as they lacke which inhabite the mountaynes, and especially for victualls, whereof they stand in great neede, by reason of the barrennes of the mountaines. This iourney therefore must be made open by force of men, & when you are passing ouer these mountaines (poynting with his finger toward the South mountaines) you shall see another sea, where they sayle with shippes as bigge as yours (meaning the Carauels) vsing both sayles and ores as you doe, although the men be naked as wee are: all the way that the water runneth from the mountaines, and all that side lying toward the South, bringeth forth golde abundantly. As hee said these wordes, he pointed to the vesselles in which they vse to serue their meate, affirming that king Tumanama, and all the other kings beyond the mountaines, had such & al other their household stuffe of golde, and that there was no lesse plentie of gold among those people of the South, then of Iron with vs: for he knewe by relation of our men, whereof our swordes and other weapons were made. Our capitaine maruelling at the oration of the naked yong man (for they had for interpreters those three men which had ben before a yeere and a halfe conuersant in the courte of king Careta) pondered in their mindes and earnestly considered his sayings, so that his rashnesse in scattering the gold out of the ballaunces, they turned to mirth and vrbaneitie, commending his doing and saying therein. Then they asked him friendly, vpon what certaine knowledge he spake those things, or what he thought best herein to be done, if they should bring a greater supply of men? To this young Comogrus staying a while with himselfe, as it were an Oratour preparing himselfe to speake of some graue matter, and disposing his body to a gesture meete to perswade, spake thus in his mother tongue Giue eare vnto me, O you Christians. Albeit that the greedie hunger of gold hath not yet vexed vs naked men, yet do we destroy one another by reason of ambition and desire to rule. Hereof springeth mortal hatred among vs, & hereof cometh our destruction. Our predecessours kept warres, and so did Comogrus my father, with princes being borderers about him. In the whiche warres, as we haue ouercome, so haue wee bene ouercome, as doth appeare by the number of bondmen among vs, whiche wee tooke by the ouerthrowe of our enemies, of the which I haue giuen you fiftie. Likewise at another time, our aduersaries hauing the vpper hand against vs, led away many of vs captiue, for such is the chaunce of war. Also, among our familiars (whereof a great number haue bene captiues with them) behold here is one which of long time led a painefull life in bondage vnder the yoke of that king beyonde the mountaynes, in whose kingdome is such abundance of gold. Of him, and such other innumerable, and likewise by the resort of free men on their side comming to vs, and againe of our men resorting to them by safe conduct, these things haue bene euer as well knowne vnto vs, as our own possessions: but that you may be the better assured here of, & be out of all suspicion that you shall not be deceived, make me the guide of this voyage, binding me fast, and keeping me in safe custodie to bee hanged on the next tree, if you finde my savings in any poynt untrue. Followe my counsaile therefore, and sende for a thousand Christian men apt for the warres, by whose power we may, with also the men of warre of Comogrus my father armed after our manner, inuade the dominions of our enemies: where both you may be satisfied with

The sec

with go
selues a
petuall
peace, i
downe t

After
familie,
to their
his sonn
into the
returned
because
sent them
Admirall,
that hithe
the Lieut
from hence
at this pr
of necess
to mitigat
dayes after
muche as
thunder a
partly car
the monet
seeds whic
make thei
gions are
Equinoctia
bread mad
countreys
colde is w
partes and
trate of the
and golde,
gouernour
learned of
tion there
myght by
not bring
ing with
hundred po
to the king
in weight
pounde Pe
peeses of
of the bar
pounde: a
braselets,
nosethrills.
and returne

with golde, and we for our conducting and ayding you in this enterprise, shall thinke our selues abundantly rewarded, in that you shall helpe to deliuer vs from the iniuries and perpetuall feare of our enemies. After these words, this prudent young Comogrus held his peace, and our men moued with great hope and hunger of golde, began agayne to swallowe downe their spittle.

A token of hunger.

The fourth Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

After that they hadde taryed heere a fewe dayes, and baptised Comogrus, with all his familie, and named him by the name of Charles, after the King of Spayne, they returned to their fellowes in Dariena, leauing with him the hope of the thousande souldiers, whiche his sonne required to passe ouer those mountaynes towarde the South sea. Thus entrying into the village which they had chosen to inhabite, they had knowledge that Valdiuia was returned within sixe monethes after his departure, but with no great plentie of victualles, because hee brought but a small shippe: yet with hope that shortly after, there should be sent them abundance of victualles, and a newe supply of men. For young Colonus the Admirall, and viceroy of Hispaniola, and the other gouernours of the Ilande, acknowledged that hitherto they had no respect to them of Dariena, because they supposed that Anciscus the Lieutenant had safely arriued there with his ship laden with victualles: willing them from henceforth to be of good cheare, and that they should lacke nothing hereafter, but that at this present time they had no bigger ship whereby they might send them greater plenty of necessaries by Valdiuia. The victuals therefore which he brought, serued rather somewhat to mitigate their present necessitie, then to satisfie their lacke. Wherefore within a fewe dayes after Valdiuia his returne, they fell agayne into like scarcenesse: especially forasmuche as a great storme and tempest which came from the hygh mountaynes, with horrible thunder and lightning in the moneth of Nouember, brought with it suche a floude, that it partly caryed away, and partly drowned all the corne and seeds which they had sown in the moneth of September, in a fruitfull grounde before they went to king Comogrus. The seeds whiche they of Hispaniola call Maizium, and they of Vraba call Hobba, whereof they make their bread, whiche also we sayde to be rype thrise euery yeere, because those regions are not bytten with the sharpnesse of winter by reason of their neerenesse to the Equinotiall lyne. It is also agreeable to the principles of naturall philosophie, that this bread made of Maizus or Hobba, shoulde be more wholesome for the inhabitants of those countreys then breade made of wheate, by reason that it is of easier digestion: for whereas colde is wanting, the naturall heate is not driuen from the outwarde partes into the inwarde partes and precordialles, whereby digestion is muche strengthened. Being therefore thus frustrated of the increase of their seedes, and the kinges neere about them, spoyled of both victualles and golde, they were enforced to seeke their meate further of and therewith to signifie to the gouernours of Hispaniola with what great necessitie they were oppressed, and what they had learned of Comogrus as concerning the regions towarde the South, willing them in consideration thereof, to aduertise the king to sende them a thousande souldiers, by whose helpe they myght by force make way through the mountaynes, diuiding the sea on both sides, if they coulde not bring the same to passe quietly. The same Valdiuia was also sent on this message, carying with him to the kinges treasurers (hauing their office of receipt in Hispaniola) three hundred poundes weight of golde, after eyght ounces to the pounce, for the fift portion due to the kinges exchequer. This pound of eight ounces, the Spanyardes call Marcha, whiche in weight amounteth to fiftie pecies of golde called Castellani, but the Castilians call a pounce Pesum. Wee conclude therefore, that the summe hereof, was xv. thousand of those peccees of gold called Castellani. And thus is it apparent by this accompt, that they receiued of the barbarous kinges a thousande and fyue hundred poundes, of eight ounces to the pounce: all the whiche they founde readie wrought in sundry kindes of ouches, as cheynes, bracelets, tabletes, and plates, both to hang before their brestes, and also at their eares, and nosethrils. Valdiuia therefore tooke shyping in the same Carauell in the which he came last, and returned also before the third day of the Ides of Ianuary, in the yeere of CHRIST. 1411.

King Comogrus is baptised with his familie.

Horrible thunder and lightning in the moneth of Nouember.

What

What chaunced to him in this voyage, we will declare in place conuenient. But let vs now returne to them whiche remayned in Vraba. After the dismissing of Valdiula, being pricked forward with outrageous hunger, they determined to searche the inner partes of that gulfe in sundry places. The extreame angle or poynt of the same gulfe is distant from the entrance thereof, about fourescore myles. This angle or corner, the Spanyardes call Culata. Vaschus himselfe came to this poynt with a hundred men, coasting along by the gulfe with one brigandine and certayne of the boates of those regions, whiche the Vrabians call Vru, like them whiche the inhabitauntes of Hispaniola call Canoas. From this poynt, there falleth a ryuer from the East into the gulfe, ten times bigger then the riuer of Dariena, which also falleth into the same. Sayling along by the riuer about the space of thirtie myles (for they call it nine leagues) and somewhat enclining toward the right hande Southwarde, they founde certayne villages of the inhabitantes, the king whereof was called Dabaiba. Our men also were certified before, that Cemacchus the king of Dariena, whom they put to flight in the battayle, fledde to this Dabaiba, but at the comming of our men, Dabaiba also fledde. It is thought that he was admonished by Cemacchus, that he shoulde not abide the brunt of our men. He followed his counsaile, forsooke his villages, and left all thinges desolate: yet our men founde heapes of bowes and arrowes, also much housholde stuffe, and many fishing boates. But those maryshe groundes were neyther apt for sowing of seedes, or planting of trees, by reason whereof, they founde there fewe such thinges as they desired, that is, plentie of victualles: for the inhabitantes of this region haue no breade, but such as they gette in other countryes neere about them by exchanging for their fishe, onely to serue their owne necessitie: yet found they in the houses of those whiche fledde, golde wrought and grauen, amounting to the sum of seuen thousande of those peeces, which wee sayde to bee called Castellani: also certayne Canoas, of the whiche they brought away two with them, and great plentie of their houshold stuffe, with certaine bundels of bowes & arrowes. They say, that from the maryshe of that riuer, there came certaine battes in the night season, as bigge as turtle doudes, inuadyng men, and byting them with a deadly wounde, as some of them testifie which haue been bitten of the same. I my selfe communing with Anciscus the Lieutenant whom they reiected, and among other things asking him of the venomous byting of these battes, hee tolde me that he himselfe was bitten by one of them on the heele, his foote lying vncovered in the night, by reason of the heate in Sommer season, but that it hurt him no more, then if he had bin bitten by any other beast not venomous. Other say, that the biting of some of them is venomous: yet that the same is healed incontinently, if it bee washed with water of the sea. Anciscus tolde mee also, that the venomous wounds made by the Canibales arrowes infected with poyson, are healed by washing with water of the sea, and also by cauterising with whot irons, and that he had experience thereof in the region of Caribana, where many of his men were so wounded. They departed therefore from the poynt of the gulfe of Vraba not wel contented, because they were not laden with victualles. In this their returne, there arose so great a tempest in that wide goulfe, that they were enforced to caste into the sea all the housholde stuffe, which they tooke from the poore wretches which lyued onely by fishing. The sea also swallowed vp the two boates that they tooke from them, wherewith the men were likewise drowned. The same time that Vaschus Nunnez attempted to search the poynt of the gulfe toward the South, euen then by agreement did Rodericus Colminaris take his voyage toward the mountains by the East, with threescore men, by the riuer of the other gulfe. About fourtie myles distant from the mouth of the other riuer, (for they call it twelue leagues) he founde certaine villages situate vpon the bankes of the ryuer, whose Chiui (that is) king, they call Turui. With this king did Colminaris yet remayne, when Vaschus after his returne to Dariena, sayling by the same riuer, came to him. Here refreshing their whole companie with the victualles of this Turui, they departed from thence together. Other fourtie myles from hence, the riuer encompasseth an lland inhabited with fisher men. In this, because they sawe great plentie of trees whiche beare Cassia fistula, they named the llande Cannafistula. They found in it xl. villages of ten cotages apiece. On the right side of the llande there runneth another riuer, whose chanel is of deapth suffici-

Maryshe
ground.

Anciscus bitten
of a Batte.

A tempest.

King Turui.

The llande of
Cannafistula.

cient

cient to
about xv
king, was
mens con
them wit
swords of
neyther k
The poor
followed
A commo
cutte of h
taynes.
fiftie: the
ryuer agai
Hispaniola
llande of
hand and
by the cor
purpose.
called Abi
the toppe
bringeth f
large hous
Ocean sea
trees, and
ing, is to l
upon to ra
that they h
whiche oft
strength o
therefore d
in some pl
water, and
by iudgem
then it is
them to be
with their
their celle
fore. For
houses, or
what from
All other
of the no
cellers by
ritie to ru
vpon the
table. O
called him
to come d
suffer him
except he
else set it
VOL. V

cient to beare Brigandines. This riuer they called Riuum Nigrum, from the mouth wherof, about xv. myles distant, they founde a towne of flue C. houses seuered whose Chebi (that is) king, was called Abenamachei. They all forsooke their houses, as soone as they heard of our mens coming: but when they saw that our men pursued the, they turned againe & ran vpon them with desperate minds, as men driuē from their owne possessions. Their weapons are swords of wood, and long stauels like iavelins, hardened at the end with fire: but they vse neyther bowes nor arrowes, nor any other of the inhabitants of the West side of the gulfe. The poore naked wretches were easily dryuen to flight with our weapons. As our menne followed them in the chase, they tooke the king Abenamachei, and certayne of his noble men. A commō souldier of ours whom the king had wounded, comming to him when he was taken; cutte of his arme at one stroke with his swoorde: but this was doone vnwares to the captaynes. The number of the Christian men whiche were here, was about an hundred and fiftie: the one halfe whereof the captaynes left here, and they with the residue rowed vp the ryuer agayne, with twelue of the boats of those regions, which they call Vru, as they of Hispaniola call them Canoas as we haue sayde. From the riuer of Riuus Niger, and the llande of Cannastula, for the space of threescore and ten miles leauing both on the right hand and on the left, many riuers falling into it bigger then it selfe, they entred into one, by the conducting of one of the naked inhabitants, beeing appoynted a guide for that purpose. Vpon the banke of this riuer next vnto the mouth of the same, there was a king called Abibeiba, who because the region was full of maryshes, hadde his pallace builded in the toppe of a hygh tree, a new kind of building, and seldome seene: but that lande bringeth forth trees of such exceeding height, that among their branches a man may frame large houses: as wee reade the like in diuers authors, howe in manie regions where the Ocean sea riseth and ouerfloweth the lande, the people were accustomed to flee to the hygh trees, and after the fall of the water, to take the fishe left on the land. This maner of building, is to lay beames crosse ouer the branches of the trees, fast bounde together, and thereupon to rayse their frame strongly made agaynst winde and weather. Our menne suppose that they builde their houses in trees, by reason of the great flouds and ouerflowing of riuers, whiche oftentimes chaunce in those regions. These trees are of suche heyght, that the strength of no mans arme, is able to hurle a stone to the houses builded therein. And therefore doe I giue the better credit to Plinie, and other authors, whiche write that the trees in some places in India are so high by reason of the fruitfulness of the ground abundance of water, and heate of the region, that no man is able to shoote ouer them with an arrowe: and by iudgement of all men, it is thought that there is no fruitfuller grounde vnder the sunne, then it is whereof wee nowe intreate. Our menne measuring manie of these trees, found them to bee of suche bignesse, that seuen men, yea sometime eight, holding hande in hande with their armes stretched fourth, were scarcely able to fathame them about: yet haue they their cellers in the grounde, well replenished with such wines whereof wee haue spoken before. For albeit that the vehemencie of the winde is not of power to cast downe those houses, or breake the braunches of the trees, yet are they tossed therewith, and awaye somewhat from side to side, by reason whereof, the wine shoulde bee much troubled with moouing. All other necessarie things they haue with them in the trees. When the king or any other of the noble men, dine or suppe in these trees, their wyues are brought them from the cellers by their seruantes, whiche by meanes of exercise, are accustomed with no lesse celeritie to runne vp and downe the staires adherente to the tree, then do our wayting boyes vpon the playne grounde fetch vs what wee call for from the cobbarde beside our dyning table. Our men therefore came to the tree of king Abebeiba, and by the interpretours called him forth to communication, giuing him signes of peace, and thereupon willing him to come downe. But hee denyed that hee woulde come out of his house, desiring them to suffer him to lyue after his fashion: but our men fell from sayre wordes to threatening, that except he woulde descende with all his familie, they woulde eyther ouerthrowe the tree, or else set it on fire. When he hadde denied them agayne, they fell to hewing the tree with

VOL. V.

H h

their

King Abibeiba dwelleth in a tree.

The rising of the Ocean sea.

Trees of marvellous height. Plinie.

Fruitfull grounde.

Abibeiba, the king of the tree, yielded to Vasquez.

their axes. Abebeiba seeing the chippes fall from the tree on euery side, chaunged his purpose, and came downe with onely two of his sonnes. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they communed of gathering of golde. Abebeiba answered that he had no golde, and that hee neuer had any neede thereof, nor yet regarded it any more then stones. But when they were instante vppon him, hee sayde vnto them, if you so greatly desire golde, I will seeke for some in the next mountaynes, and bring it vnto you: for it is plentifully engendered in those mountaynes. Then he appoynted a day when he woulde bring this golde. But Abebeiba came neither at the day nor after the day appointed. They departed therefore from thence well refreshed with his victualles and wine, but not with golde as they hoped: yet were they enformed the like by Abebeiba and his ditionaries as concerning the gold mines and the Canibals, as they heard before of king Comogrus. Sayling yet further about thirtie myles, they chaunced vpon certayne cotages of the Canibales, but vtterly voyde without men or stuffe: for when they had knowledge that our men wandered in the prouinces neere about them, they resorted to the mountaines, carying all their goods and stuffe with them.

Gold no more
esteemed then
stones.

Canibales.

The fift Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

IN the meane time while these thinges were done along by the shores or bankes of the riuier, a certaine Decurian, that is, a captaine ouer ten, of the company of those which Vaschus and Colminaris had left for a garryson in Riua Nigro, in the dominion of king Abinamachei, whether it were that he was compelled through hunger, or that his fatal day was now come, he attempted with his souldiers to search the countries thereabout, and entred into the village of a king called Abraiba. This captaynes name was Raia, whom Abraiba slue with two of his fellowes, but the residue fled. Within a fewe dayes after, Abraiba hauing compassion on the calamitie of his kinsman and neighbour Abenamacheius, beeing dryuen from his owne possessions (whose arme also we sayd before that one of the souldiers cut of at the riuier of Riua Nigro) and now remaining with Abraiba, to whom he fled by stealth after hee was taken, went to Abibeiba the inhabitour of the tree, who had now likewise forsaken his country for feare of our men, and wandered in the desolate mountaines and woodes. When he had therefore founde him, hee spake to him in this effect. What thing is this, oh vnfortunate Abibeiba; or what nation is this that so tormenteth vs, that we cannot enioy our quiet libertie; howe long, howe long I say, shall we suffer their crueltie; were it not much better for vs to die, then to abide such iniuries and oppressions as you, as Abinamacheius our kinsman, as Cemacchus, as Careta, as Poncha, as I and other princes of our order doe susteyne? Canne anie thing bee more intollerable, then to see our wiues, our children, and our subiectes, to be ledde away captiues: and our goodes to be spoyled euen before our faces: I take the gods to wnesse, that I speake not so much for mine owne part as I do for you, whose case I lament: for albeit they haue not yet touched me: neuertheles by the xaple of other, I ought to thinke that my destruction is not far of. Let vs therefore (if we be men) trie our strength, & proue our fortune agaynst them which haue dealt thus cruelly with Abenamacheius, and driuen him out of his country, let vs set on them with al our power, and vtterly destroy them. And if we can not slay them al, yet shal we make the afraide either to assaile vs againe, or at the least diminishe their power: for whatsoeuer shal befall, nothing can chaunce worse vnto vs then that which we nowe suffer. When Abibeiba heard these words & such other like, he condescended to do in al things as Abraiba woulde require: whereupon they appoynted day to bring their conspiracie to passe, but the thing chaunced not according to their desire: for of those whiche we saide to haue passed to the Canibals, there returned by chaunce to Riua Nigro the night before the day appointed to worke their feate, thirtie men, to the aide of them whiche were left there, if any sedition should rise as they suspected. Therefore at the dawning of the day the confederate Kings, with fife hundreth of their ditionaries armed after their maner, besieged the village with a terrible alarome, knowing nothing of the new men whiche came thither the same night. Here our target men came forth against them, and first assailed them a farre of with their

Men good enough if they had iron.

The second

arrows,
celuing
flight, as
many, as
labourers
since qu
vnder the
Nigro, wh
captiues,
they rowe
four grea
come by,
drowned
on the wa
by them
being no
bin in Ri
hadde com
sulting the
they had
and Cemac
Abenamac
the gulfe
struction a
wise hinde
vnworthily
And becau
therefore,
a maister
sometime fa
taken capti
brother oft
with whom
nication w
My deare
whiche I
peritie of
haue dryue
determined
kings (wh
thousand
sufficient t
diuided an
the day ap
be slayne
any that co
ter, hee do
serue mor
Vaschus, f
and all the
matter vnt
clared to h

arrows, then with their pykes and last with their swordes: but the naked seely soules, perceiving a greater number of their adversaries then they looked for, were soone driven to flight, and slaine for the most parte like scattering sheepe. The kings escaped, they slue many, and tooke many captives, which were sent to Dariena, where they used them for labourers to till and sowe their groundes. These thinges thus happily achiued, and that province quieted, they returned by the river to Dariena, leaving their thirtie men for a garrison, vnder the gouernance of one Furatado a capitaine. This Furatado therefore, sent from Riou Nigro, where he was appointed gouernour. xx. of his felowes, and one woman, with xliiii. captives, to Vachus and his companie, in one of the biggest Canoas of that province. As they rowed downe the ryuer, there came forth sodenly ouerthwart the ryuer against them foure great Canoas, which ouerthrewe their boate, and slue as many of them as they could come by, because they were vnprepared, suspecting no such thing. Our men were all drowned and slaine, except two, which hid themselves among certaine fagottes that swamme on the water, in the which they lay lurking, and so escaped to their fellowes in Dariena: who by them being advertised hereof, beganne to cast their wittes what this thing might meane, being no lesse sollicitate for them selues, then meditating in what daunger their fellowes had bin in Riou Nigro, except by good fortune, those thirtie newe men which were sent to them, hadde come to the village the night before the conspiracie should haue bene wrought. Consulting therefore what was best to bee doone herein, at the length with diligent searching, they had intelligence that siue kinges, that is to witte, Abebeiba the inhabitour of the tree, and Cemacchus dryuen from his village which our men nowe possessed, Abraiba also and Abenamacheius, kinsmen, with Dabaiba the king of the fisher men, inhabiting the corner of the gulfe whiche wee called Culata, where all assembled to conspire the Christian mens destruction at a day assigned: which thing had surely come to passe if it had not bene otherwise hindered by Gods providence. It is therefore ascribed to a miracle, and truely not vnworthily, if wee waye howe chaunce detected and bewrayed the counsaile of these kinges. And because it is worthy to be hearde, I will declare it in fewe wordes. Vachus Nunnez, therefore, who rather by power then by election, vsurped the gouernance in Dariena, being a maister of fence, and rather a rashe royster then a politike capitaine (although fortune sometime fauoreth fooles) among many women which in diuers of these regions he hadde taken captiue, had one, which in fauour and beauty excelled al other. To this woman her brother often times resorted, who was also driven out of his country with king Cemacchus, with whome he was very familiar, and one of his chiefe gentlemen. Among other communication which he hadde with his sister whom hee loued entirely, he vttered these wordes, My deare and welbeloued sister, giue eare to my sayinges, and keepe most secretly that whiche I will declare vnto you, if you desire your owne wealth and mine, and the prosperitie of our country and kinsfolkes. The insolencie and crueltie of these men whiche haue dryuen vs out of our possessions, is so intollerable, that the princes of the lande are determined no longer to susteyne their oppressions. By the conducting therefore of fyue kinges (whiche he named in order) they haue prepared a hundred great Canoas with fyue thousande men of warre by lande and by sea, with victuals also in the village of Tichiri, sufficient to maintayne such an armie: declaring further, that the kinges by agreement, had diuided among them the goodes and heads of our menne, and therefore admonished her, at the day appoynted by some occasion to conueigh her selfe out of the way, least she should be slayne in the confusion of the battayle: For the souldier victourer, is not wont to spare any that commeth in his race. And thus shewing his sister the day assigned to the slaughter, hee departed. But the young woman (for it is the sword that women feare, and obserue more then the granitie of Cato) whether it were for the loue or feare that she had to Vachus, forgetting her parentes, her kinsfolkes, her country, and all her friendes, yea and all the kinges into whose throates Vachus had thruste his sword, she opened all the matter vnto him and concealed none of those thinges which her vndiscret brother had declared to her. When Vachus therefore had heard the matter, he caused Fulua, (for so had

A garrison of
thirtie men.

Eightene
Spaniards
slaine and
drowned.

The kinges
which conspired
the death of the
Christians.

A strange
chaunce.

Women can
keepe no coun-
saile.

An armie of
an hundred
Canoas, and
fyue. M. men.

Triumph be-
fore victorie.

Affection cor-
rupteth true
iudgement.

The conspiracie
of the kyngs is
detected.

Kyng Cemacchus
conspireth
the death of
Vaschus.

Vaschus pursueth
the kyngs
with threescore
and ten men

Colminaris
sacketh the vyl-
lage of Tichiri.

Fyue rulers
hanged & shot
through with
arrowes.

Iohan. Quicedus
is sent to
Spayne.

they named her) to sende for her brother, who came to her immediatly, was taken, & enforced to tel the whole circūstances of the matter: wherupon he plainly confessed, that king Cemacchus his Lord and maister, sent those foure Canoas to the destruction of our men, and that these new conspiracies were attempted by his counsaile: likewise that Cemacchus caught the destruction of Vaschus himselfe, when he sent him xl. men, vnder pretence of friendship, to till and sowe his grounde, after the maner of the countrey, giuing them in commandement to slay Vaschus at Marris, whither he resorted to comfort his labourers, as the maner is of al good husbandes, yet durst they at no time execute their Lordes commandement vpon him, because Vaschus came neuer among them a foote or vnarmed, but was accustomed to ryde to them in harnesse with a iuelin in his hand, and a swoorde by his side. Wherefore Cemacchus being frustrate of his particular counsaile, tooke this last thing in hande, to his owne destruction and his neighbours: for the conspiracie being detected, Vaschus called threescore and tenne souldiers, commanding them to follow him, but declared nothing vnto them whither he went, or what he intended to doe. He went forward therefore first toward Cemacchus, which lay from him onely ten myles: but he had knowledge that he was fledde to Dabaiba, the king of the maryshes of Culata. Yet searching his village, hee founde a noble man, a ruler vnder him, and also his kinsman whom he tooke prysoner, with many other of his familiars and friendes both men and women. The same houre that he set forwarde to seeke for Cemacchus, Rodericus Colminaris rowed vp the ryuer with foure of their biggest Canoas, and threescore men, by the conduction of the maydes brother, who brought him to the village of Tichiri, in the which we said all their victuals to remain which were prepared for their armie. Colminaris therfore sacked the village, and possessed all their victuals, and wine of sundry coloures, likewise tooke the gouernour thereof prysoner, and hanged him on the tree in which he dwelt himselfe, commanding him to bee shot through with arrowes in the sight of the inhabitantes, and with him foure other rulers to be hanged on gibbets to the example of other rebels. This punishment thus executed vpon the conspiratours, stroke the hearts of all the inhabitantes of the prouince with such feare, that there is not now a man that dare stirre his finger against the wrath of our men. They liue now therefore quietly, and the other kyngs by their example doe the gladlier liue in subiectiō, with lesse offence bearing the yoke which they can by no meanes shake of.

The sixt Chapter of the second Decade, of the supposed continent.

These thinges thus finished, assembling all their company together, they determined with one consent, that a messenger shoulde forthwith bee sent to Hispaniola (from whence they haue their lawes and ayde) to declare the whole order of all these affaires, first to the Admiral and gouernour of the Iland, and afterward to the King of Spayne, and to perswade him to sende those thousande men which young Comogrus sayd to be expedient to passe ouer the mountaines, lying betwene them and the golden regions towards the South. Vaschus hymselfe dyd greatly affect this embassage: but neither would the residue of his felowes cleete him thereto, nor his factionaries suffer him to departe, aswell for that therby they thought they should be left desolate as also that they murmured, that if Vaschus should once go from them, he woulde neuer returne to suche turmoyles and calamities, by the example of Valdiuia and Zamudius, who had bin now absent since the moneth of Ianuary, in so much that they thought they would neuer come agayne: but the matter was otherwise then they tooke it, as I will shew in this place, for they were perished. At the length after many scrutines, they elected one Iohn Quicedus, a graue man, well in yeeres, and treasurer of the kyngs Exchequer in those prouinces: they had conceiued a good opinion of this Quicedus, that all thinges should bee well brought to passe by his meanes, aswell for his wisdom, as also that they were in good hope of his returne, because he hadde brought his wife with him to those regions, whom hee left with his fellows for a pledge of his coming agayne. When they had thus elected Quicedus, they were againe of diuers opinions whom they might ioyne with him for assistance, affirming that it were a dangerous thing to committe so weightie a

matter

matter
fraile,
accusto
returne
appoynt
remain
both.
experie
ouer al
the Fre
and had
much g
in Dari
haue be
rememb
would
distant
Calend
sundry
that lan
land.
parted
prouce
to arriu
oh you
your m
yee kno
left the
the sho
felowes
drowne
hunt fo
knowle
the sa
had ge
they fo
the cru
mined
with m
South
arriued
vexed
felowes
much
wound
Lieute
tolde
thinha
name y
to be
niola,
called
therefo

matter to one mans hands, not that they mistrusted Quicedus but because the life of man is fraile, & the change of the ayre perillous, especially to them, hauing now of long time bin accustomed to the temperature neere vnto the Equinoctial, if they should be compelled to returne to the North, with alteration of ayre and diet. They thought it therfore good to appoynt a companion to Quicedus, that if by chance the one should faile, the other might remain, & that if they both escaped, the king should giue the better credite to the relatiō of both. After long cōsultation therfore, they chose Rodericus Colminaris, a man of good experiēce, of whom we haue oftentimes made mention, for from his youth he had trauailed ouer all Europe by lande & by sea, & was present at the doings of al things in Italy against the Frēchmen, of whose return also, they had no small hope, because he had many farmes, and had tilled and sowne much grounde in Dariena, by the increase wherof, he might get much gold by selling the same to his felowes. He left therfore the charge of al his affayres in Dariena with his partner Alphonsus Nunnez, a iudge of the lawe, who also was like to haue ben chosen procuratour of this voyage before Colmenaris if one had not put the in remembrance that he had a wife at Matritis, fearing lest being overcome with her teares, he would no more returne. Colmenaris therefore, a freeman & at libertie, being associate assistant with Quicedus, they tooke shipping together in a Brigandine, the fourth daye of the Calendes of Nouember in the yeare of Christ. 1512. In this voyage, being tossed with sundry tempestes, they were by the violence of the winde cast vp on the West coastes of that large Iland, which in the first Decade we call Cuba supposed to haue ben firme land. They were sore oppressed with hunger, for it was now three monethes since they departed from their fellowes: by reason whereof, they were enforced to take land, to prooue what ayde they could get among the inhabitantes. Their chaunce therefore was to arriue in that part of the Iland, where Valdiuia was driuen aland by tempest. But oh you wretched men of Dariena, tary for Valdiuia, whom you sent to prouide to helpe your necessities, prouide for your selues rather, and trust not to them whose fortune yee know not. For when he arriued in Cuba the inhabitantes slue him with his felowes, and left the Carauel wherein they were caryed, torne in peeces, and halfe couered with sand on the shore, where Quicedus and Colmenaris finding the fragmentes thereof, bewayled their felowes misfortune: but they found none of their carcasses, supposing that they were either drowned, or deuoured of the Canibals, which oftentimes make incursion into the Iland to hunt for men. But at the length, by two of the Iland men which they had taken, they had knowledge of Valdiuia his destruction, and that the inhabitantes the more greedily attēpted the same, for that they had heard by the babbling of one of his felowes, that hee had great plentie of golde: for they also take pleasure in the beautie of golde, which they fourme artificially into sundry ouches. Thus our men stricken with pensiuenesse for the cruell destinie of their fellowes, and in vaine seeking reueng for their iniuries, determined to for sake that vnfortunate lande, departing from those couetous naked barbarians, with more sorowe and necessitie then they were in before. Or euer they had passed the South side of Cuba, they fel into a thousande misfortunes, and had intelligence that Fogeda arriued therabout, leading a miserable life, tossed and turmoiled with tempestes, and vexed with a thousande perplexities: so that departing from thence almost alone, his felowes being for the most part al consumed with maladies and famine he came with much difficultie to Hispaniola, where he died by force of the poison of his venomous wounde which he had receiued in Vraba as we haue saide before. But Anciscus elected Lieutenant, sailed by al those coastes with much better fortune: for as he him selfe tolde me, he founde prosperous windes in those parties, and was wel entertained of thinhabitanes of Cuba, but this specially in the dominion of a certaine king whose name was Commendator: for wheras he desired of the Christian men whiche passed by, to be baptised, demanding the name of the gouernour of the Iland next vnto Hispaniola, being a noble man, and a knight of the order of Calatraua, of whiche order, al are called Commendatores this kings desire was to be named after him. King Commendator therfore friendly receiued Anciscus, & gaue him great abundance of al things necessarie. But

A wife is a hinderance.

The death of Valdiuia.

Hurt of lauish-
ness of the
tongue.

The calamities
and death of
Fogeda.

Maladies and
famine.

The prosperous
voyage of An-
ciscus.

A king of
Cuba baptised
by the name of
Commendator

what

A marueilous
historic howe
God wrought
miracles by the
simple faith of
a Mariner.

Be not rash in
iudgement.

A Chapell
builded to the
picture of the
virgin Marie.

One supersti-
tious religion
turned into
another, holdeth
ful many
thinges of the
fyrst.

Zeale without
knowledge is
neuer godly.

Marke this
blindnes.

This ignorance
is to bee la-
mented.

The deuil dis-
sembleth to
keepe his in-
blindnes still.

A notable lie
of a papistall
reciter.

what Anciscus learned of their religion during the time of his remayning there, I haue thought good to aduertise your holinesse. You shal therefore vnderstande, that certaine of our men sailing by the coastes of Cuba, left with king Commendator a certaine poore Mariner being diseased, who in short space recouering his health, and hauing now somewhat learned their language, began to growe into great estimation with the king and his subiectes, insomuche that he was oftentimes the kinges Lieuutenant in his warres against other princes his borderers. This mans fortune was so good, that al thinges prospered well that he tooke in hande: and albeit that he were not learned, yet was he a vertuous and well meaning man, according to his knowledge, and did religiouslie honour the blessed virgin, bearing euer about with him her picture faire painted vpon paper, and sowed in his apparel neere vnto his breast, signifying vnto the king, that this holines was the cause of al his victories: perswading him to doe the like, and to cast away all his Zemes, which were none other then the similitudes of euill spirits most cruel enimies and deuourers of our soules, and to take vnto him the holy virgin and mother of God to be his patronesse, if he desired all his affaires aswel in warre as in peace to succcede prosperously: also that the blessed virgin woulde at no time faile him, but be euer readie to helpe him and his, if they woulde with deuout hartes call vpon her name. The mariner had soone perswaded the naked nation, and thereuppon gaue the king (who demanded the same) his picture of the virgin, to whom he builded and dedicated a chapell and an alter, euer after contemning and reiecting his Zemes. Of these Zemes made of Gossampine cotton, to the similitudes of spirites walking in the night, which they oftentimes see, and speake with them familiarly, we haue spoken sufficiently in the ninth chapter of the first Decade. Furthermore, according to the institution of this mariner, when the sunne draweth towards the fall, this king Commendator with al his familie, both men and women, resort dailie to the saide chapell of the virgin Marie, where kneeling on their knees, and reuerently bowing downe their heades, holding their handes ioined together, they salute the image of the virgin with these wordes, Aue Marie Aue Marie, for fewe of them can rehearse any more wordes of this praiser. At Anciscus his being there, they tooke him and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioicing, saying that they woulde shewe them marueilous thinges. When they were entered, they pointed with their fingers to the Image of the virgin, al to be set and hanged about with ouches and iewels, and many earthen pottes filled some with barley meates, and some with water, rounde about all the tabernacle: for these thinges they offered to the image in the steede of sacrifice, according to their olde superstition towards their Zemes. Being demanded why they did thus, they answered, Lest the image should lacke meate, if perhaps it should be ahungred: for they most certainly belecue that images may hunger, and that they do eate & drinke. But what aide and help they confesse that they haue had of the godly power of this image, that is of the blessed virgin, it is a thing woorthy to bee hearde, and most assuredly to bee taken for a trueth: for by the report of our men, there is such feruent godly loue & zeale in these simple men toward the holy virgin, that to them beeing in daunger of warre against their enemies, they doe in manner (if I may so terme it) compell her to descend from heauen to helpe them in their necessities. For such is the goodness of God, that he hath left vnto men in maner a pryce whereby we might purchase him with his holy angels and saints that is to witte, burning loue, charitie, and zeale. Howe therefore can the blessed virgin at any time be absent from the which call for her helpe with pure faith and feruent loue: Commendator himselfe, with all his noble men and gentlemen, do testifie with one voyce, that in a fought battayle in the which this maryner was capitaine, bearing with him this picture of the virgin Marie, the Zemes of their enemies turned their backe, and trembled in the presence of the virgins image, & in the sight of them all: for euery of them bring their Zemes to the battayle, hoping by their helpe to obtaine the victorie. Yea they say further that during the time of the battaile, they saw not only an Image, but a liuely woman clothed in fayre and white apparell, ayding them against their enemies: which thing also the enemies themselues acknowledged, confessing that on the contrary part, she appeared to them shaking a scepter in her hande with threatening countenance, which caused their hartes

to

to shake a
into a shy
with all his
tion with
matter gre
attempts
battayle, a
his enemies
they assai
Maryners
Marie hel
left these v
thus on bo
to hande b
Romanes a
young mer
them in th
better, whi
his religion
the sight o
called first
who imme
defence of
Maria adiu
in white, a
rod in her
mendator,
about the
him double
thing was c
And thereu
graue and
of them al
Oh pure si
& his fami
the disease
to walke o
bounde in
sight of b
appeared i
horns, res
dator hono
blessed vir
& with he
tyed about
Commenda
confessed
whereof, t
continual
those coast
whom they
that preser
time enem

to shake and faint for feare: but after that this maryner departed from them, being taken into a shyppe of certayne Christians passing by these coastes, Commendator declared that he with all his subiectes, continually obserued his institutions: insomuch that being at contention with another prince, whiche of their Zemes were most holy and of greatest power, the matter grewe to such extremity that they tried it with hande strokes: and that in all these attempts, the blessed virgin neuer fayled him, but was euer present in the brunte of the battayle, and gaue him easie victorie with a small power of men, against a maine armie of his enemies. Being demaunded with what woordes they cryed vpon the virgin Mary when they assailed their enemies, they answered that they had learned no other words of the Maryners doctrine but Sancta Maria adiuua nos. Sancta Maria adiuua nos. That is, holy Marie helpe vs, holy Marie helpe vs, and this also in the Spanishe tongue: for he had left these words in the mouthes of all men. While they murthered and destroyed themselves thus on both sides, they fell to entreatie of peace, and agreed to trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certayne chosen for both parties, as the manner was among the Romanes and diuers other nations in the olde time, or by any sleight or policy but that two young men should be chosen, for each partie one, with their handes bounde fast behinde them in the plaine field, both parties beeing sworne to acknowledge that Zemes to be the better, which first loosed the bandes of the yong man whiche stode bounde for the triall of his religion. Thus diuiding themselves, and placing the sayd young men before them in the sight of them all, with their handes fast bounde by their enemies, the contrary parte called first on their Zemes (that is the deuill, to whose similitude their Images are made) who immediately appeared in his likeness about the young manne that stode bounde in the defence of Sathans Kingdome. But as soone as Commendator with his companie cryed Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos, forthwith there appeared a fayre virgin clothed in white, at whose presence the deuill vanquished immediatly. But the virgin hauing a long rod in her hand, and putting the same on the bandes of the yong man that stood for Commendator, his handes were loosed immediatly in the sight of them all, and his bandes found about the handes of him that stood for the other party, insomuch that they themselves founde him double bounde. But for all this, were not the enemies satisfied, quarrelling that this thing was done by some sleight or deuise of man, & not by the power of the better Zemes. And thereupon required, for the auoyding of all suspicion, that there might bee eight graue and sage men appoynted, for eche side foure, which should binde the men in the sight of them all, and also giue iudgement whether the thing were done without craft or guile. Oh pure simplicitie and constant fayth: oh golden and blessed confidence. Commendator & his familiars doubted not to graunt their enemies their request, with like fayth wiewerwith the diseased woman obtayneth health of the fluxe of her bloud, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the sea at the sight of his maister Christ. These young men therefore were bounde in the presence of these eight graue men, and were placed within their listes in the sight of both parties. Thus vpon a signe giuen, when they called vpon their Zemes, there appeared in the sight of them all, a deuill with a long taile, a wide mouth, great teeth, and hornes, resembling the similitude of the image whiche the king being enemy to Commendator honored for his Zemes. As the deuill attempted to loose the bands of his client, the blessed virgin was immediatly present as before at the call of Commendator & his subiects, & with her rod loosed the bandes of her suppliant, whiche were agayne likewise founde fast tyed about the handes of him that stode for the contrary part. The enemies therfore of Commendator, being stricken with great feare, and amazed by reason of this great miracle, confessed that the Zemes of the virgin was better ther their Zemes: for the better prooue whereof, these pagans being borderers to Commendator, which had euer before bene at continual warre & enmitie with him, when they had knowledge that Anciscus was arryued in those coastes, they sent Ambassadors vnto him, to desire him to sende them priestes, of whom they might be baptised: wherupon hee sent them two which he had there with him at that present. They baptised in one day an hundred and thirty of the inhabitants, sometime enemies to Commendator, but now his friends, and ioyned vnto him in alliance. All

One blasphemie
vpon another.

The deuill
appeareth in his
likenesse.
What likeness.

A strange mi-
racle not to be
credited.

Another my-
racle.

Wise men.

Math. xiii.
This is another
matter.

The deuill ap-
peareth againe.

The virgin
Mary in her
owne person
ouercommeth
the deuill.

such

The priestes
rewarde.

Why name
you Capons?

Anciscus voyege
to Spaine.

Anciscus com-
playneth of
Vaschus.

Marke to who
this saynd my
raculous storie
was written.

The procura-
tors of Dariena
are honourably
receiued at the
court.

such as came to bee baptised, gaue the priestes of their owne liberalitie, eyther a cocke or a henne, but no capons, for they cannot yet skil howe to carue their cocke chickens to make them capons. Also certaine salted fishes, and newe fine cakes made of their bread: likewise certayne foules franked and made fatte. When the priestes resorted to the shypes, sixe of these newe baptised men accompanied them laden with victualles, wherewith they ledde a ioyfull Easter: for on the Sunday, two dayes before saint Lazarus day, they departed from Dariena, and touched at that tyme onely the cape or angle of Cuba, neere vnto the East side of Hispaniola. At the request of Commendator, Anciscus left with him one of his companie, to the intent to teach him and his subiectes, with other his borderers, the salutation of the angell, whiche we call the Aue Marie: for they thinke themselues to be so much the more beloued of the blessed virgin, as they can rehearse the more woordes of that prayer. Thus Anciscus taking his leaue of king Commendator, directed his course to Hispaniola, from whiche he was not farre. Shortly after, he tooke his voyage to Spayne, and came to Valla-doleto to the king, to whom he made grieuous complaynt of the insolencie of Vaschus Nunnez, insomuch that by his procurement the king gaue sentence agaynst him. Thus muche haue I thought good (most holy father) whereof to aduertise your holynesse, as concerning the religion of these nations, not onely as I haue bin enstructed of Anciscus (with whom I was dayly conuersant in the Court, and vsed him familiarly) but also as I was enfourmed of diuers other men of great authoritie, to the intent that your excellencie may vnderstande howe docible this kinde of men are, and with what facilitie they may be allured to embrace our religion: but this cannot be done sodenly, yet we haue great cause to hope that in short time they will be al drawne by litle and litle, to the Euangelicall law of Christ to the great encrease of his flocke. But let vs now returne to the messengers or procuratours as concerning the affaires of Dariena.

The seventh Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

FROM Dariena to Hispaniola, is eight dayes sailing, & somtimes lesse with a prosperous wind: yet Quicedus and Colminaris the procuratours of Dariena, by reason of tempestes & contrary windes, could scarcely sayle it in a hundred dayes. When they had taried a fewe dayes in Hispaniola, & had declared the cause of the comming to the Admirall and the other gouernours, they tooke shiping in two marchant ships, being ready furnished, which were also accustomed to sayle to and fro betweene Spayne and the lland of Hispaniola. They departed from Dariena (as we said before) the fourth day of the Calends of Nouëber, in the yeere of Christ 1512. & came not to the court beefore the Calendes of May in the yeere following being the yeere of Christ. 1513. At their comming to the court, Iohannes Fonseta (to whom at the beginning the charge of these affaires was committed, whome also for his faithfull seruice towarde the king, your holynesse created general Commissarie in the warres against the Moores) receiued them honourably, as men comming from the newe worlde, from naked nations, and landes vnknowne to other men. By the preferment therfore of the Bishop of Burges, Quicedus and Colmenaris were brought before the king, and declared their legacie in his presence. Suche newes and presentes as they brought, were delectable to the king and his noble men, for the newnesse and strangenesse thereof. They all sojourned with me oftentimes. Their countenauces do declare the intemperatnesse of the aire and region of Dariena, for they are yelow, like vnto them that haue the yelow fau-
dies, and also swolne: but they ascribe the cause hereof, to the hunger whiche they sustined in times past. I haue ben aduertised of the affaires of this newe worlde, not only by these procuratours of Dariena, and Anciscus, and Zamudius, but also by conference with Baccia the lawyer, who ran ouer a great part of those coastes: likewise by relation of Vincentius Annez, the patrone of the ships, and Alphonsus Nignus, both being men of great experience, and wel trauiled in those parties, besides many other, of whom we haue made mention in other places, for there came neuer any from thence to the court, but tooke great pleasure to certifie me of all thinges, either by word of mouth or by writing. Of many thinges therfore whiche I learned of them, I haue gathered such as to my iudgment seeme

most

The se
most w
lowed
there v
and Fo
patente
chaunce
discord
simple
conside
should
vsurped
this offi
but who
was, an
handed
mission
to the k
(most c
uice, ha
hope of
tiously
may ple
office, a
in tyme
selfe, as
you to c
selfe bot
otherway
beene bi
fore, to
a Comm
office at
nesse, w
should o
the Bish
ample m
souldiers
him mor
and auth
of his so
in the y
with pe
and othe
a house,
from the
as what
lift part
the hous
men wh
men, o
the king
least vic
creed th
VOL.

cocke or a
ns to make
: likewise
es, sixe of
y ledde a
arted from
e East side
o companie
ion of the
h the more
yer. Thus
aniola, from
ne to Valla
aschus Nun
Thus muche
concerning
with whom I
fourmed of
vnderstande
to embrace
that in short
to the great
purs as con-

nt.
a prosperous
tempestes &
taried a few
and the other
which were
a. They de
ueber, in the
y in the yeere
ohannes Pon
nome also for
issarie in the
om the newe
erment there
the king, and
ght, were de
eof. They all
atnesse of the
yelowc ioun
they sust.ined
only by these
e with Bacia
of Vincentius
f great expe
ue made men
ntooke great
ng. Of many
dgment seeme
most

most worthy to satisfie them that take delight in histories. But let vs now declare what followed after the comming of the procuratours of Dariena. Therefore, before their arriual, there was a rumor spread in the court, that the cheefe gouernours and Lieutenantes Nicuesa and Fogeda, also Iohannes de la Cossa (a man of much reputation that by the kinges letters patentes hee was named the great maister of the kinges shippes) were al perished by mischance: and that those fewe whiche yet remained aliue in Dariena, were at contention and discorde among them selues, so that they neither endeouored their diligence to allure those simple nations to our faith, nor yet had regarde to searche the natures of those regions. In consideration whereof, the king was determined to send a newe captayne thither, which should restore and set all things in good order, and put them out of authority whiche had vsurped the Empire of those prouinces without the kinges speciall commaundement. To this office, was one Petrus Arias assigned, a man of great prowesse, and a citizen of Segouia, but when the procuratours of Dariena had published in the courte howe great a matter it was, and of what moment many laboured earnestly to the king, to take the office out of his handes: but the Bishop of Burges, being the kings chiefe chaplayne, and one of the commissioners appoynted by him in these matters, being aduertised hereof, came immediately to the king and spake to him in this effect: May it please your highnesse to vnderstande (most catholique prince) that whereas Petrus Arias, a man of valiant courage and great seruice, hath offered himselfe to aduenture his life in your maiesties affaires, vnder vncertayne hope of gaine, and most certayne perils, yet that notwithstanding, some other haue ambitiously maliced his felicitie and preferment, labouring for the office wherto he is elected. I may please your grace herein, so to shew him your fauour, and permit him to enioy his sayde office, as your maiestie doe knowe him to bee a woorthy and meete man for the same, hauing in tyme past had great experience of his prowesse and valyantesse, aswell in behauing himselfe, as ordering his souldiers, as your highnesse may the better consider, if it shall please you to call to remembrance his dooinges in the warres of Aphryca, where he shewed himselfe both a wise capitaine, and a valiant souldier. As concerning his manners and vsages otherwayes, they are not vnknowne to your maiestie, vnder whose wing he hath of a childe bene brought vp in the Court, and euer founde faithfull towarde your highnesse. Wherefore, to declare my opinion, vnder your graces fauour (whom it hath pleased to appoynt me a Commissioner in these affaires) I thinke it were vngodly that he shoulde be put from his office at the suite of any other, especially being thereto mooued by ambition and couetousnesse, who perchance would proue themselves to be the same men in the office, if they should obtaine it, as they now shew themselves in the ambitious desiring of the same. When the Bishop had sayde these wordes, the king confirmed the election of Petrus Arias, in more ample manner then before, willing the bishop to appoint him a thousande and two hundred souldiers at his charges, making him a warrant to the officers of his Exchequer, to deliuer him money in prest for the same purpose. Petrus Arias therfore beeing thus put in office, and authorised by the kinges letters patentes vnder his broad seale, chose a great number of his souldiers in the court, and so departed from Valladoleta, about the Calends of October, in the yeere 1413. and sayled first to Ciuille beeing a very rich citie, and well replenished with people, where by the kings magistrates, hee was furnished with menne and vycualles, and other necessities perteyning to so great a matter: for the king hath in this citie erected a house, seruing onely for the affaires of the Ocean, to the which all they that goe or come from the newe landes and llandes, resorte to giue accomptes, aswell what they cary thither, as what they bring from thence that the king may bee truely answered of his custome of the fift part, both of golde and other things, as we haue sayde beefore. This house they call the house of the Contractes of India. Petrus Arias found in Ciuille about two thousand yong men which made great suite to goe with him, likewise no small number of couetous old men, of the which, many offered themselves to goe with him of their owne charges without the kings stipende. But least the ships should be pestered with too great a multitude or least vycualles shoulde fayle them, the libertie of free passage was restraint. It was also decreed that no straunger might passe without the Kinges licence. Wherefore I doe not a little

The great
maister of the
kinges ships.

Petrus Arias is
elected gouern-
our of Dariena.

The oration of
the Bishop of
Burges, in the
defence of Pe-
trus Arias.

The warres of
Aphryca.

A house in Ci-
uille appoynted
to the affaires of
India.

Penultima.

maruayle at Aloisius Cadamustus a Venetian, and writer of the Portugales voyages, that hee was not ashamed to wryte thus of the Spanyardes nauigations: wee went, wee sawe, wee did: whereas he neuer went, nor any Venetian sawe, but he stole certaine annotations out of the three first chapters of my first Decade written to Cardinal Ascanius & Arcimbolus, supposing that I would neuer haue published the same. It might also happen that hee came by the copie thereof at the hand of some ambassador of Venice, for I haue graunted the copie to many of them, & was not daungerous to forbid them to communicate the same to other. Howe so euer it bee, this honest man Aloisius Cadamustus feared not to challenge

The Portugales
inventions.

vnto him the fruit of another mans labour. Of the inuentions of the Portugales (whiche surely are woonderfull) whether he haue written that which he hath seene (as he saith) or likewise bereaued other men of the iust commendations of their trauiayles, I will not iudge, but am content to let him liue after his manner. Among the company of these souldiers, there were none embarked but such as were licēced by the king, except a few Italians, Genues, who by friendship and snite were admitted for the Admirals sake young Colonus, sonne and heyre to Christophorus Colonus, the first finder of those landes. Petrus Arias therefore tooke shipping in the ryuer Betis (now called Guadalqueuir) running by the citie of Ciuile, about the beginning of the yeere of Christ 1514. But he loosed anker in an euill houre, for

The nauigation
of Petrus
Arias.

A shipwracke.

such a tempest followed shortly after his departure, that it rēt in peeces two of his ships, and so tossed the other, that they were enforced to heaue ouerboorde part of their victualles to lighten them. All suche as escaped, sayled backe againe to the coastes of Spayne, where, being newly furnished and refreshed by the kinges officers, they went forward on their voyage. The maister Pylotte of the gouernours shippe, was Iohannes Vesputius a Florentine, the newew of Americus Vesputius, who left him as it were by discent of inheritance, the experience of the mariners facultie and knowledge of the sea, carde and compasse. But wee were aduertised of late by certayne whiche came from Hispaniola, that they had passed the Ocean with more prosperous wind: for this marchant shippe coming from Hispaniola, founde them landing at certayne llands neere therabout. But in the meane time, while my importunate callers on, Galeaceus Butrigarius, and Iohannes Cursius, men studious by al meanes to gratifie your holynesse, ceased not to put me in remembrance that they had one in a readines to depart into Italy, & taried only to cary with him vnto your holines these, my faire Nereides, although rudely decked least I should bestow much time in vayne, I haue let passe many things, & wil rehearse only such as seeme in my iudgement most worthy memory, although somewhat disordered, as occasio hath serued. So it is therefore, that this Petrus Arias

Americus Ves-
putius.

A notable ex-
ample of a va-
liant woman.

hath a wife named Helisabetha Boadilla, being niece by the brother side to the marques of Boadilla, whiche rendred the citie of Segouia to Fernando and Helisabeth Princes of Spayne, at such time as the Portugales inuaded the kingdome of Castile, by reason wherof they were encouraged first to resist, and then with open warre to assaile and expulse the Portugales, for the great treasure whiche King Henry brother to Queene Elizabeth hadde geathered together there. This marquesse, while she liued, did euer shewe a manly and stout mynde, both in peace and warre, so that by her counsayle, many noble things were brought to good effect in Castile: vnto this noble woman the wife of Petrus Arias was niece by her brother side. She, following the magnanimitie of her aunt, perceiuing her husbände nowe furnishing himselfe to departe to the vnknowne coastes of the newe worlde, and those large tractes of lande and

The wife of Pe-
trus Arias.

sea, spake these wordes vnto him: My most deare and welbeloued husbände, we ought not now to forget that from our young yeeres we haue beene ioyned together with the yoke of holy matrimonie, to the intent that we shoulde so liue together, and not a sunder, during the time of our naturall life: wherefore for my parte, to declare my affection herein, you shall vnderstande, that whither soeuer your fatall destinie shall driue you, eyther by the furious waues of the great Ocean, or by the manifolde and horrible daungers of the lande, I wil surely beare you companie: there canne no perill chaunce to me so terrible, nor any kinde of death so cruell, that shall not be much easier for mee to abide, then to liue so farre separate from you. It were much better for mee to die, and eyther to be cast into the sea, to be deuoured of the fishes, or on the land to the Canibales, then with continual mourning and bewayling,

to

to liue in
then for
conceiue
uisement
your swo
hath giue
daughters
as we ha
worshipfu
manly ve
wife, and
petition,
quest, S
ing loose
being dea
pature, t
ourage st
of the m
much here
Therefore,
ye shal vn
age, and a
the first ye
coastes fro
sayled rou
to haue bir
like. Vinc
on further
touched.
towards the
mouthes of
in the first
water, whi
famous by
from Curia
mana and
gions of th
best pearle
as they of
certayne s
and what t
they call C
to beholde
small ones
fore about
are made o
shyppes, a
with stone
them, they
selues to fl
many, &
of the loss
fearing the

to liue in death, and dye liuing, while I consume in looking rather for my husbandes letters, then for himselfe. This is my full determination, not rashly, nor presently excogitate, nor conceiued by the light phantasie of womans brayne, but with long deliberation and good aduisement. Nowe therefore choose to whether of these two you will assent, eyther to thruste your sworde in my throat, or to graunt me my request. As for the children which God hath giuen vs as pledges of our inseparable loue (for they had foure sonnes, and as many daughters) shall not stay me a moment: let vs leaue vnto them such goodes and possessions as we haue beene left vs by our parentes and friends whereby they may liue among the worshipfull of their order: for other thinges I take no care. When this noble matrone of manly vertue had finished these woordes, her husbande seeing the constant mynde of his wife, and her in a readinesse to do according to her wordes, had no heart to denye her louing petition, but embracing her in his armes, commended her intent, and consented to her request. She followed him therefore, as did Ipsicratea her Mithridates, with her hayre hanging loose about her shoulders: for she loued her husbande, as did Halicarnassea of Caria hers, being dead, as did Artemisia her Mausolus. Wee haue also had aduertisement since their departure, that she (being brought vp as it were among soft fethers) hath with no les stout courage sustained the roarings and rages of the Ocean, then did eyther her husband, or any of the maryners brought vp euen among the sources of the sea. But to haue sayde thus much hereof, this shall suffice: let vs nowe speake of other thinges no lesse worthie memorie. Therefore, wheras in the first decade we haue made mention of Vincentius Annez Pinzonus, ye shal vnderstand that hee accompanied Christophorus Colonus the Admirall in his first voyage, and afterwarde made an other voyage of his owne charges with onely one ship. Againe, the first yeere after the departing of the Captaynes Nicuesa and Fogeda, he ran ouer those coastes from Hispaniola, and searched the South side of Cuba, from the East to the West, and sayled rounde about that Iland, which to that day, for the great length thereof, was thought to haue bin part of the continent or firme lande, although some other say that they did the like. Vincentius Annez, therefore, knowing now by experience that Cuba was an Iland, sailed on further and founde other lands Westwarde from Cuba, but such as the Admirall had first touched. Wherefore, being in maner encompassed with this newe lande, turning his course towarde the left hande, and rasing the coastes of that lande by the East, ouerpassing also the mouthes of the gulfes of Beragua Vraha, and Cuchibachoa, he arryued at the region whiche in the first Decade wee called Paria and Os Draconis, and entred into the great gulfes of freshe water, which Colonus discovered, beeing replenished with great abundance of fishe, and famous by reason of the multitude of Ilandes lying in the same, beeing distaunt Eastwarde from Curiana about an hundred and thirtie myles, in the which tract are the regions of Cumana and Manacapana, whiche also in the sixt chapter of the first Decade we said to be regions of the large prouince of Paria, where many affirme to be the greatest plentie of the best pearles, and not in Curiana. The kinges of these regions (whom they call Chiacones, as they of Hispaniola call them Cacici) being certified of the comming of our men, sent certayne spies to enquire what newe nation was arriued in their coastes, what they brought, and what they would haue, and in the meane time furnished a number of their Canoas (whiche they call Chichos) with men armed after their manner: for they were not a litle astonysed to beholde our shippes with the sayles spreade, whereas they vse no sayles, nor can vse but small ones if they would, by reason of the narrownesse of their Canoas. Swarming therefore about the shyppe with their Canoas (whiche we may well call Monoxyla, because they are made of one whole tree) they feared not to shoote at our men, being yet within their shippes, and keeping themselues vnder the hatches, as safely as if they had beene defended with stone walles. But when our men had shotte of certayne peeces of ordinance agaynst them, they were so discomfited with the noyse and slaughter thereof, that they droue themselves to flight. Being thus disparcelled, our men chased them with the ship boate, tooke many, & slue many. When the kinges heard the noyse of the gunnes, and were certified of the losse of their men, they sent ambassadours to Vincentius Agnes to entreate of peace, fearing the spoyle of their goodes, and destruction of their people, if our men should come

Plentie of
pearles.

The vse of
gunnes.

Great abound-
ance of gold and
frankencense.
Olibanum.

Sabea is a coun-
trei in Arabia
which bringeth
forth Frankenc-
cense.

Rulers for one
yeere.

The great gulfe
of Paria.

The great liand
Atlantike.

Contention be-
tweene the Cas-
tilians & Portu-
gales for the
newe landes.

alande in their wrath and furie. They desired peace therefore as coulde bee coniectured by their signes and poyntinges: for our men vnderstode not one word of their language. And for the better prooffe that they desired peace, they presented our men with three thousande of those weightes of golde that the Spanyardes call Castellum Aureum, whiche they commonly call Pesum. Also a great barrel of wood ful of most excellent masculine Frankencense, weighing about two thousande and sixe hundred poundes weight, after eight ounces to the pounde: whereby they knewe that that lande brought forth great plentie of Frankencense, for there is no intercourse of marchandyes betweene the inhabitants of Paria and the Sabeans, being so farre distant, whereas also they of Paria knewe nothing without their owne coastes. With the golde and Frankencense whiche they presented to our men, they gaue them also a great multitude of their peacocks, both cockes and hennes, dead and aliue, aswell to satisfie their present necessitie, as also to cary with them into Spayne for encrease, likewise certaine carpettes, couerlettes, table clothes, and hanginges, made of Gossampine silke, finely wrought after a strange deuice, with pleasant and variable colours, hauing golden belles, and such other spangles and pendautes, as the Italians call Sonaglios, and the Spanyardes Cascaules, hanging at the purfles thereof. They gaue them furthermore speaking poppyngayes of sundry colours, as many as they woulde aske: for in Paria there is no lesse plentie of popingayes, then with vs of doves or sparrows. The inhabitants of these regions, both men & women, are apparelled with vestures made of gossampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women to the calfe of the legge. The fashion of their apparell is simple & playne, much like vnto the Turkes: but the mens is double, and quilted, like that which the Turkes vse in the warres. The princes of Paria are rulers but for one yeere: but their authoritie is no lesse among the people both in peace and warre, then is the authoritie of other kings in those regions. Their villages are builded in compasse, along by the banks of al that great gulfe. Fyue of their princes came to our menne with their presentes, whose names I thought worthy to bee put in this historie, in remembrance of so notable a thing, Chiaconus Chiauaccha (that is, the prince of Chiauaccha, for they cal princes or kings Chiaconus) Chiaconus Pintiguanus, Chiaconus Chamailaba, Chiaconus Polomus, and Chiaconus Potto. The gulfe being first found of the Admirall Colonus, they cal Baia Natiuitatis, because he entred into the same in the day of the natiuitie of Christ, but at that time he only passed by it without any further searching, and Baia in the Spanishe tong, signifieth a gulfe. When Vincentius had thus made a league with these princes, following his appoynted course, hee founde many regions towardes the East, desolate by reason of diuerse flouds and ouerflowings of waters: also many standing pooles in diuers places, and those of exceeding largnesse. He ceased not to followe this tract, vntill he came to the poynt or cape of that most long land. This poynt seemeth as though it would inuade the mount Atlas in Aphrica: for it prospecteth towardes that part of Aphrike, which the Portugales call Caput bonæ Sperantie. The poyntes or capes of the mount Atlas are rough & sauage, nere vnto the sea. The cape of Bona Speranza, gathereth thirtie and foure degrees of the Southe pole, called the pole Antartike, but that poynt onely seuen degrees. I suppose this lande to be that whiche I finde in olde writers of Cosmographie to bee called the great liande Atlantike, without any further declaring eyther of the situation, or of the nature thereof.

The eight Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

When Iohn the king of Portugale liued, which was predecessour to him that nowe reigneth, there arose a great contention betweene the Castilians and the Portugales, as concerning the dominion of these newe found lands. The Portugales, because they were the first that durst attempt to search the Ocean sea since the memorie of man affirmed that al the nauigations of the Ocean, ought to pertaine to them onely. The Castilians argued on the contrary part that whatsoever God by the ministration of nature hath created on the earth, was at the beginning common among men, & that it is therefore lawfull to euery man to possesse such landes as are voyd of Christian inhabitours. While the matter was thus vncertainly debated, both parties agreed that the cōtrouersie shuld be decided by the bysshop of Rome, and

plighted

plighted faith to stande to his arbitrement. The kingdome Castile was at that tyme governed by that great queene Helisabeth with her husband: for the Realme of Castile was her dowrie. She also and the King of Portogale, were cosyn germanes of two sisters, by reason whereof, the dissention was more easily pacified. By the assent therefore of both parties, Alexander the bishop of Rome, the 6. of that name, by the authority of his leaden bull, drew a right line from the North to the South, an hundred leagues westwarde, without the paralels of those Ilandes which are called Caput Viride, or Cabouerde, within the compasse of this lyne (although some denie it) falleth the poynt of this lande whereof wee haue spoken, which they call Caput Sancti Augustini, otherwise called Promontorium Sancti Augustini, that is, saint Augustines cape or poynt: and therefore it is not lawfull for the Castilians to fasten foote in the beginning of that land. Vincentius Annez therefore departed from thence, being advertised of the inhabitants, that on the other side of the hygh mountaynes towarde the South, lying before his eyes, there was a region called Ciamba, whiche brought forth great plentie of gold. Of certaine captiues whiche hee tooke in the gulfes of Paria (whiche certainly pertaineth to the dominion of Castile) he brought some with him to Hispaniola, and left them with the young Admirall to learne our language: but he himselfe repayed to the court, to make earnest suite to the king, that by his fauour he might be gouernour of the Iland of Sancti Iohannis (otherwise called Burichena, being distant from Hispaniola onely xxv. leagues) because he was the first finder of golde in that Ilande. Before Vincentius made suite for this office, one Don Christopher, a Portogale, the sonne of the countie of Camigna, was gouernour of the Iland, whom the Canibales of the other Ilands slue, with all the Christian men that were in the same, except the Bishop and his familiars, whiche fled and shifted for themselves, forsaking the church and all the ornaments therof: for your holynesse hath consecrated fise bishops in these Ilands, at the request of the most catholique king. In Sancto Dominico the chiefe citie of Hispaniola, Garcia de Padilla, a regular Fryer of the order of saint Francis, is bysshop. In the towne of Conception, doctor Petrus Xuares of Deza, and in the Ilande of saint Iohn or Burichena, Alphonsus Mansus a licenciante, being both obseruants of the institution of saint Peter. The fourth is Fryer Barnarde de Mesa, a man of noble parentage, borne in Toledo, a preacher, & Bishop of the Ilande of Cuba. The fift is Iohannes Cabedus, a Fryer preacher, whom your holynesse annoynted minister of Christe, to teach the Christian faith among the inhabitantes of Dariena. The Canibales shall shortly repent them, and the bloude of our men shall be reuenged, and that the sooner, because that shortly after they hadde committed this abhominable slaughter of our men, they came againe from their owne Ilande of Sancta Crux (otherwise called Ay Ay) to the Ilande of Sancti Iohannis, and slue a king whiche was a friende to our men, and ate him, and al his familie, vtterly subuerting his village, vpon this occasion, that violating the law of hostage, hee hadde slayne seuen Canibales whiche were left with him by composition to make certayne Canoas, because the Iland of Sancti Iohannis beareth greater trees, and apter for that purpose, then doth the Iland of Sancti Crux, the chiefe habitatio of the Canibales. These Canibales yet remaining in the Iland, certayne of our men sayling from Hispaniola, chaunced vpon them. The thing being vnderstoode by the interpretours, our men quarelling with them, & calling them to account for that mischeuous deede, they immediately directed their bowes and venomous arrowes against them, and with cruell countenances threatned them to be quiet, least it shoulde repent them of their comming thither. Our men fearing their venomous arrowes (for they were not prepared to fyght) gaue them signes of peace. Beeing demaunded why they destroyed the village, and where the king was with his familie, they answered, that they rased the village, and cut the king with his familie in peeces, and ate them in the reuenge of their seuen workemen: and that they had made faggottes of their bones, to cary them to the wiues and children of their slayne workemen, in witness that the bodies of their husbandes and parentes lay not vnreunged, and therewith shewed the faggottes of bones to our men, who beeing astonished at their fiercenesse and crueltie, were enforced to dissemble the matter, and holde their peace, quarrelling no further with them at that time. These and suche other thinges doe dayly chaunce, the which I doe let passe, least

The bishop of Rome diuideth the Iland.

The golden region of Ciamba.

The Ilande of S. Iohannis.

Fise Bishops of the Iland made by the Bishop of Rome.

The Canibals of the Iland of Sancta Crux.

The rivers of
Vraba.

least I should offend the eares of your holynesse with such blouddie narrations. Thus haue we sufficiently digressed from the regions of Beragua and Vraba, being the chiefeest foundations of our purpose. We will now therefore entreate somewhat of the largenesse and deapth of the ryuers of Vraba: also declare both what they and the lands which they runne through do bring forth: likewise of the greatnesse of the lande from the East to the West, and of the breadth therof from the South to the North, and what their opinion and hope is of things yet vnknowne in the same. We will therefore beginne at the newe names, wherewith the Spanyardes haue named these prouinces, since they were vnder the dominions of the Christians.

The ninth Chapter of the second Decade, of the supposed continent.

The fruitfulness
of Vraba.

The fruitfulness
of Dariena.

Swines fleshe of
better taste &
more wholesome
then mutton.

Fruites putrified
on the sea.

Betatas.

BERagua therefore they called Castella Aurea, that is, golde Castile, & Vraba they named Andalusia noua, that is, new Andalusia. And like as of many llāds which they subdued, they chose Hispaniola for the chiefe place of their habitation: so in the large tract of Paria, they appoynted their colonie or biding place in the two regions of Vraba and Beragua, that all suche as attempt any voyages in those coastes, may resort to them, as to safe portes to be refreshed when they are wearie or driuen to necessitie. All our seedes and plants do now marueilously encrease in Vraba, likewise blades, sets, slips, gaffes, suger canes, and such other as are brought from other places to those regions, as also beastes and foules, as wee haue sayd before: O marueilous fruitfulness. Twentie dayes after the seede is sowne, they gathered rype cucumbers, and such like: but Colwoortes, Beetes, Lettuse, Borage, are rype within the space of ten dayes. Gourdes, Melones, and Pompions within the space of xxviii. dayes. Dariena hath many natie trees and fruites, of diuers Kindes, with sundry tastes, & holsome for the vse of men, of the which I haue thought it good to describe certain of the best. They nourshe a tree which they call Guaiana, that beareth a fruit much resembling the kinde of Citrones which are commonly called Limones, of tast somewhat sharpe, myxt with sweetness. They haue also abundance of nuts of pine trees, and great plentie of Date trees, which beare fruites bigger then the Dates that are knowne to vs, but they are not apt to be eatē for their too much sowrenesse. Wilde & barren Date trees grow of themselves in sundry places, the branches wherof they vse to becsomes, and eate also the buds of the same. Guarauana, beeing higher and bigger then the orange tree, bringeth forth a great fruit as bigge as pome Citrons. There is another tree much like to a chestnut tree, whose fruit is like to the bigger sorte of figs, being holsome and of pleasant taste. Mameis, is another tree that bringeth forth fruit as bigge as an orange, in taste nothing inferior to the best Kindes of Melones. Guanana, beareth a fruit lesse then any of the other, but of sweete sauour like spice and of delectable tast. Houos is another tree, whose fruit both in shape and taste is much like to prunes, but some what bigger: they are surely perswaded that this is the Myrobalane tree. These growe so abundantly in Hispaniola, that the hogges are fedde with the fruit therof, as with mast among vs. The hogges like this kinde of feeding so wel, that when these fruites waxe ripe the swine heards can by no meanes keepe them out of the woods of these trees, by reason whereof, a great multitude of them are become wilde. They also affirme, that in Hispaniola swines fleshe is of much better taste and more wholesome then mutton: for it is not to be doubted, but that diuers Kindes of meates doe engender sundry tastes and qualities in such as are nourished therewith. The most puissant prince Ferdinandus, declared that he had eaten of another fruit brought from those landes, being full of scales, with keies, much like a pineapple in fourme and colour, but in tendernes equal to melow pepons, and in taste exceeding al garden fruites: for it is no tree, but an hearbe, much like vnto an artichoke, or Acantho: The king him selfe gaue the chiefeest commendation to this. I haue eaten none of these fruites: for of a great number which they brought from thence, only one remained vncorrupted, the other being putrified by reasō of the long voiage. Al suche as haue eaten of them newly gathered in their natie soile, do marueilously commende their sweetness and pleasant taste. They digge also out of the ground certain rootes growing of them selues, whiche they call Betatas, much like vnto the

The second

the nau
they be
sant ter
earthie
as we
rawe ch
and frui
tures of
Tigers,
thours i
endeuou
like an
hoofe of
open no
the beas
known
to haue
of the fl
with a
runneth
the gull
breadth
falling i
Vraba, l
Pontike
whiche a
of Nilus
riuer of
ment of
many les
ture hat
out of th
tains of
and the
Egypt th
called N
among th
affirme
channel o
time, the
gales cal
the North
herein.
them als
hard as
Shall we
taynes o
haue the
of Melin
spring o
from the
world in
fourth C

Thus haue
chiefest foun-
genesse and
they runne
to the West,
n and hope
ewe names,
he dominions

t.
they named
ubdued, they
of Paria, they
agua, that all
portes to be
ants do now
es, and such
oules, as wee
ede is sowen,
e, Borage, are
the space of
undry tastes,
ertain of the
h resembling
sharpe, myxt
eat plentie of
they are not
row of them-
also the buds
ingeth forth
chestnut tree,
te. Mameis,
ng inferior to
other, but of
se fruite both
ely perswaded
at the hogges
de of feeding
epe them out
become wilde.
ore wholesome
oe engender
issant prince
landes, being
ndernes equal
ut an hearbe,
st commenda-
they brought
y reaso of the
soile, do mar-
so out of the
che like vnto
the

the nauie rootes of Millane, or the great puffes or mushromes of the earth. Howsoever they be dressed, eyther fried or sodde, they giue place to no suche kinde of meate in pleasant tendernes. The skinne is somewhat tougher then either the nauies or mushromes, of earthie colour, but the inner meate therof is very white: These are nourished in gardens, as we saide of Iucca in the first Decade. They are also eaten rawe, and haue the taste of rawe chestnuts, but are somewhat sweeter. We haue spoken sufficiently of trees, hearbes, and frutes, we will nowe therefore entreate of things sensitiue. The landes and desolate pas-
tures of these regions, are inhabited and deuoured of wilde and terrible beastes, as Lions, ^{Lions and Ti-}
^{gers.} Tigers, and suche other monsters as we nowe knowe, and haue ben described of olde au-
thours in time past. But there is specially one beast engendred here, in which nature hath
endeuoured to shew her cunning: This beast is as bigge as an Oxe, armed with a long snoute
like an Elephant, and yet no Elephant, of the colour of an oxe, and yet no oxe, with the
hoofe of a horse, & yet no horse, with eares also muche like vnto an Elephant, but not so
open nor so much hanging downe, yet muche wider then the eare: of any other beast. Of
the beast which beareth her whelpes about with her in her second belly as in a purse (being
known to none of the olde writers) I haue spoken in the first Decade, which I doubt not
to haue come to the handes of your holinesse. Let vs nowe therefore declare what resteth
of the flooddes and riuers of Vraba. The riuier of Dariena falleth into the gulfes of Vraba,
with a narrow chanel, scarcely able to beare the Canoas or Lighters of that prouince, &
runneth by the village where they chose their dwelling place, but the riuier in the corner of
the gulfes which we saide that Vachus passed by, they founde to be: xxiiii. furlongs in
brendth (which they call a league) and of exceeding deapth, as of two hundred cubits,
falling into the gulfes by diuers mouthes. They say that this riuier falleth into the gulfes of
Vraba, like as the riuier Ister (otherwise called Danubius, and Danowe) falleth into the sea
Pontike: and Nilus into the sea of Egypt, wherefore they named it Grandis, that is, great:
whiche also they affirme to nourishe many and great Crocodiles, as the old writers testifie
of Nilus, and especially as I haue learned by experience, hauing sailed vp and downe the
riuier of Nilus, when I was sent Ambassadour to the Souldane of Alcair, at the commande-
ment of the most catholique king. What I may therefore geather out of the writinges of so
many learned authours as concerning the riuier of Nilus, I knowe not: for they say that na-
ture hath giuen two riuers of that name to water the lande, whether they wil them to spring
out of the mountaines of the moone or the sunne, or out of the tops of the rough moun-
tains of Ethiopia, affirming one of the same to fall into the gulfes of Egypt towardes the North,
and the other into the South Ocean sea. What shall wee say in this place; Of that Nilus in
Egypt there is no doubt. The Portugales also which saile by the coastes of the Ethiopians
called Nigritæ, and by the kingdome of Melinda, passing vnder the Equinoctiall lyne,
among their marueylous inuentions haue found another toward the South, and earnestly
affirme the same to bee also deriued from the mountains of the moone, & that it is another
chanel of Nilus, because it bringeth forth Crocodiles, whereas it hath not bin read before
time, that any other ryuer nourished Crocodiles sauing onely Nilus. This riuier the Portu-
gales call Senega. It runneth through the region of the Nigritas, being very fruitefull toward
the North shore, but on the South side sandie and rough. Crocodiles are also engendred
herein. What shall we then say of this thirde; yea I may well say the fourth: for I suppose
them also to bee Crocodiles, which Colonus with his company founde, armed with scales as
hard as shelles, in the ryuer called Delagartos, whereof wee haue made mention before.
Shall we say that these ryuers of Dariena also & Vraba, haue their originall from the moun-
taynes of the moone, wheras they spring out of the next mountains, & can by no meanes
haue the same originall with Nilus in Egypt, or that in Nigrita, or els that in the kingdome
of Melinda, from whence so euer they are deriued, whereas these other (as we haue sayd)
spring out of the next mountaynes, which diuide another South sea, with no great distance
from the North Ocean. Wherefore, it appeareth by experience of such as haue trauailed the
world in our time, that the waters becside the riuier of Nilus in Egypt, may likewise bring
forth Crocodiles. In the maryshes also and fennes of the regions of Dariena, are founde

A strange beast.

The riuers of Vraba.

A league is xxiiii. furlongs.

Danubius.

A Crocodile is muche like a Neute, but of exceeding bignesse.

The Portugales navigations.

great

grent plentie of Pheasants and Pescookes (but not of variable coloures) with many other kindes of birdes and foules vnyke vnto ours, aswel apt to be eaten, as also to delight the eares of menne with pleasaunt noyse. But our Spanyardes, because they are ignorant in fowling, take but fewe. Also innumerable poppingayes of sundry kindes are founde chattering in the groues of those fennie places. Of these there are some equall to Capones in bignesse, and some as litle as sparowes. But of the diuersitie of poppingayes, we haue spoken sufficiently in the first Decade: for in the rase of this large lande, Colonius him selfe brought and sent to the courte a great number of euery kinde, the whiche it was lawfull for all the people to beholde, and are yet daily brought in like manner. There remaineth yet one thing mooste worthy to be put in historie, the whiche, I had rather to haue chaunced into the hands of Cicero or Liule, then in to mine: for the thing is so marueylous in my estimation, that I finde my witte more entangled in the description hereof, then is saide of the henne when she seeth her young chicken inwrapped in towre or flaxe. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the South sea, is only sixe daies iourney, by relation of the inhabitants. The multitude ther fore and greatnesse of the riuers on the one side, and on the other side the narrownesse of the lande, bring me into suche doubt howe it can come to passe, that in so litle a place of three daies iourney, measuring from the high toppes of those mountaines, I doe not vnderstande howe so many and so great riuers may haue recourse vnto this North sea: for it is to be thought, that as many doe flow toward thinhabitants of the South. These riuers of Vraha are but small, in comparison of many other in those coastes: for the Spanyards say, that in the time of Colonius, they found and passed by an other riuier after this, whose gulfe falling into the sea, they affirme to be litle lesse then a hundred miles in the first coastes of Paria, as we haue saide else where: for they say, that it falleth from the toppes of highe mountaines with so swift and furious a course, that by the violence and greatnesse thereof, it driueth backe the sea, although it be rough & enforced with a cōtrarie wind. They al affirme likewise, that in al the large tracte therof, they felt no sowre or salt water, but that all the water was freshe, sweete and apt to be drunke. Thinhabitantes call this riuier Maragnonum, and the regions adiacent to the same, Mariatambal, Camamorus, and Paricora: beside those riuers whiche I haue named before, as Darien, Grandius Dabaiba, Beragua, Sancti Mathei, Boius gatti, Delagartos, & Gaira, they which of late haue searched those coastes, haue founde many other. Deliberating therefore with my selfe, from whence these mountaines, being so narrowe and nere vnto the sea on both sides, haue suche great holowe caues or dens of such capacitee, and from whence they are filled, to cast forth such abundance of water: hereof also asking them the opinions of the inhabitantes, they affirme them to be of diuers iudgements herein, alleading first the greatnes of the mountaines to be the cause, whiche they say to be very hygh, which thing also Colonius the first finder thereof affirmeth to be true, adding thereunto that the paradise of pleasure is in the tops of those mountaynes whiche appeare from the gulfe of Paria & Os Draconis, as he is fully perswaded. They agree therefore that there are great caues within these mountaynes, but it resteth to consider from whence they are fylled. If therefore al the riuers of freshe water, by the opinion of many, doe so flow out of the sea, as driuen and compelled through the passages or pores of the earth, by the ponderous weight of the sea it selfe, as wee see them breake forth of the springes, and direct their course to the sea agayne, then the thing it selfe to bee marueyled at here, then in other places: for wee haue not read that in any other place, two such seas haue enuironed any lande with so narrowe lymittes: for it hath on the right side the great Ocean, where the sunne goeth downe on the left hande, and another on the other side where the sunne riseth, nothing inferiour to the first in greatnesse, for they suppose it to bee myxte and ioyned as all one with the sea of East India. This land therefore beeing burdened with so great a weyght on the one side, & on the other (if this opinion be of any value) is enforced to swallowe vp suche deuoured waters, and againe to cast forth the same in open springes and streames. But if wee shall denye that the earth draweth humoures of the sea, and agree that all the fountaynes or springes are engendered of the conuersion or turning of ayre into water, distilling within the holow places of the mountaynes (as the most part thinke) we wil

A philosophical
discourse as con-
cerning the origi-
nal of springes
and riuers.

The breadth of
the lande at
Vraha, from
the North Ocean
to the South sea.

The sea.

The land en-
closed with two
seas.

Conuersion of
ayre into water
in the caues of
mountaynes.

giue p
is satis
water i
in Span
this ma
suche t
suche o
the Car
whereof
not rem
from th
(by the
shooting
shops de
for we
founde
rayne, t
ryuer, a
mous tow
furlong
conuers
and riu
great flo
ment: w
time wh
perceiue
whereas
winter, o
be ful of
sent that
needs be
enuirone
but giue
can no le
not know
sible. V
least on
studious
vndiscret
force and
wee haue
whiche b
And foras
of the wa
sion of th
marueyle
this man
his Erida
like; as
that fresh
with this
of the G
Germanic
VOL. V

giue place rather to the authoritie of them which stick to those reasons, then that our wence is satisfied of the full truth thereof. Yet do I not repugne, that in some caues of mountaynes, water is turned into ayre: for I my selfe haue seene, howe in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in manner showres of rayne doe fall continually and that the water gathered by this meanes, dooth send forth certayne riuers by the sides of the mountaynes, wherewith all suche trees as are planted on the steepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, oliue trees, and suche other, are watered, and this especially in one place: as the right honourable Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie, most obsequious to your holinesse, and two other bishops of Italy, whereof the one is Siluius Pandonus, and the other an Archbishop (whose name and title I do not remember) can beare me witnesse: for when wee were together at Granata, lately deliuered from the dominion of the Moores, & walked for our pastyme to certayne pleasant hilles (by the which there ranne a sayre ryuer) while Cardinall Lodouike occupied himselfe in shooting at birdes which were in the bushes neere vnto the riuer, I and the other two bishops determined to climbe the mountaynes, to search the originall and spring of the ryuer: for we were not farre from the tops thereof. Following therefore the course of the riuer, wee founde a great caue, in which was a continuall fall of water, as it had bene a showre of rayne, the water whereof, falling into a trenche made with mans hande, encreaseth to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the sides of the mountaynes. The like is also seene in this famous towne of Vallad'eto (where we nowe sojourne) in a certayne greene close, not past a furlong distant from the wallee of the towne. I graunt therefore, that in certayne places, by conuersion of the ayre into liue water within the caues of suche mountaynes, many springes and riuers are engendered: but I suppose that nature was not sollicitate to bring forth such great floudes by this so small industrie. Two reasons therefore do sound best to my iudgement: whereof the one is, the often fall of rayne: the other, the continual autumnne or spring time which is in those regions, being so neere vnto the Equinoctiall, that the common people can perceiue no difference betweene the length of the day and the night through out all the yeere, whereas these two seasons are more apt to engender abundance of rayne, then eyther extreame winter, or feruent sommer. An other reason in effect much like vnto the first is this: If the sea be full of pores, and that by the pores thereof, being opened by the South wyndes, we shall consent that vapours are lyfted vp, whereof the watery floudes are engendered, this lande must needs bee drenched with moe showres then anye other, if it bee as narrowe as they say, and enuironed with two mayne seas collaterally beating on the same: how soeuer it bee, I cannot but giue credite to the reporte of such worthy men as haue recourse to those regions, and can no lesse then declare the same, albeit it may seeme incredible to some ignorant persons, not knowing the power of nature, to whome, Plinie was perswaded, that nothing was impossible. We haue therefore thought it good to make this discourse by the way of argument, least on the one side, menne of good learning and iudgement, and on the other side, such as are studious to finde occasions of quarrelling in other mens writings, shoulde iudge vs to bee so vndiscrete, lightly to giue credite to eacry tale, not being consonant to reason: but of the force and great violence of those fresh waters, which repulsing the sea, make so great a gulf (as wee haue sayde) I thinke the cause thereof to bee the great multitude of floudes and riuers, whiche beeing gathered together, make so great a pool, and not one ryuer as they suppose. And forasmuch as the mountaynes are exceeding high and steepe, I thinke the violence of the fall of the waters to be of such force, that this conflict betweene the waters, is caused by the impulsion of the peeple, that the salt water cannot enter into the gulf. But here perhaps some will marueyle at mee, why I should marueille so much hereat, speaking vnto me scornefully, after this maner: Why doth hee so marueille at the great riuers of those regions? Hath not Italie his Eridanus, named the King of riuers of the olde writers; Haue not other regions also the like; as wee read of Tanais, Ganges, and Danubius, which are sayd so to ouercome the sea, that freshe water may bee drawne fourtie myles within the same. These men I would satisfie with this answer. The famous ryuer of Padus in Italie (whiche they nowe call Po, and was of the Greekes called Eridanus) hath the great mountaynes called Alpes, diuiding Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie, from Italie, lying at the banke there, as it were bulwarkes agger,

The often fall
of rayne and
continuall
spring time.
The Equinoec-
tiall.

The pores of
the sea, & the
South wind.

The floud
Eridanus

full of moisture, and with a long tracte receiuing Ticinum, with innumerable other great ryuers, falleth into the sea Adriatike. The like is also to bee vnderstoode of the other. But these riuers (as our menne were enformed by the kinges) fall into the Ocean sea with larger and fuller channels neere hande, and some there are which affirme this lande to be very large in other places, although it be but narrowe here. There commeth also to my remembrance another cause, the whiche although it be of no great force, yet doe I entende to write it. Perhaps therefore the length of the lande reaching farre from the East to the West, if it be narrowe, may be a helpe hereunto: for as wee reade, that the ryuer Alpheus passeth through the holowe places vnder the sea, from the cite of Elis in Peloponeso, and breaketh forth at the fountaine or spring Arethusa in the Ilande of Sicilla so is it possible that these mountaines may haue such long caues perteyning vnto them, that they may bee the receptacles of the water passing through the landes beeing farre distant, and that the same waters comming by so long a tracte, may in the way bee greatly increased, by the conuersion of ayre into water, as we haue sayde. Thus much haue I spoken freely, permitting both to them which do friendlyly interpret other mens dooings and also the malicious scornors, to take the thing euen as them lysteth, for hitherto I can make no further declaration hereof but when the trueth shalbe better knowne, I wil do my diligence to commit the same to writing. Nowe therefore, forasmuch as we haue spoken thus much of the breadth of this lande, we entende to describe the length and fourme of the same.

The tenth Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

THAT land reacheth forth into the sea, euen as doth Italy, although not like the leg of a man, as it doth. But nowe I compare a Pigmean or a dwarfle, to a Giant: for that part thereof which the Spaniards haue ouerrunne, from the said East poynt whiche reacheth toward the sea Atlantike, (the end not being yet founde toward the West) is more then eight times longer then Italie. And by what reason I am moued to say eight times, your holiness shall vnderstande. From the time therefore that I first determined to obey their requestes, who willed mee first in your name to write these things in the Latine tongue, I did my endeour that all things might come forth with due tryall and experience: wherupon I repayed to the Byshop of Burges, being the chiefe refuge of this nauigation. As we were therefore secretly together in one chamber, we had many instrumentes pertaining to these affaires, as globes, and many of those maps which are commonly called the shipmans cardes, or cardes of the sea. Of the which, one was drawne by the Portugales, whereunto Americus Vesputius is sayd to haue put to his hand, beeing a manne most expert in this facultie, and a Florentine borne, who also vnder the stipend of the Portugales, had sayled toward the South pole manie degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall. In this carde we found the first front of this lande to bee broader then the kinges of Vraba had perswaded our men of their mountaynes. To another, Colonius the Admiral, while he yet liued, and searched those places, had giuen the beginning with his owne handes: whereunto Bartholomeus Colonius his brother and Lieuutenant had added his iudgement, for he also had sayled about those coastes. Of the Spaniards likewise, as many as thought themselves to haue anie knowledge what perteyned to measure the land and the sea, drew certayne cardes in parchment as concerning these nauigations. Of all other, they most esteeme them which Iohannes de la Cossa the companion of Fogeda (whom we sayde to be slayne of the people of Caramairi in the hauen of Carthago) & another expert pylote called Andreus Moralis, had set forth. And this aswel for the great experiece which they both had (to whom these tractes were aswel knowne as the chambers of their owne houses) as also that they were thought to be cunninger in that part of Cosmographie, which teacheth the description & measuring of the sea. Conferring therefore al these cardes together, in euery of the which was drawne a lyne, expressing not the myles, but leagues, after the manner of the Spaniards, wee tooke our compasses, & began to measure the sea coastes after his order. From that poynt or front whiche we sayde to bee included within the lyne perteyning to the Portugales iurisdiction, beeing drawn by the paralleles of the Ilandes of Cabouerde, but a hundred leagues further toward the West (which they haue nowe also

searched

The riuer
Alpheus.

Long caues in
the moun-
taynes.

The length
and forme of
the Iland.

Cardes of the
sea.
The carde of
Americus
Vesputius.

The carde of
Colonius.

The carde of
Iohannes de
la Cossa.

The Carde of
Andreus Mo-
ralis.

The manner of
measuring the
cardes.

The se

searche
ragnoni
the des
will tha
the capi
measure
poynt o
some ca
the Ilan
the villa
tion, on
of Berag
decreed,
sayd of
wandere
Yet man
leagues
as Abure
combusta
whiche g
of the in
shall find
to fise th
num perc
one Astur
eth fourth
coasts an
therefore
right lyne
lande, bu
speake so
therefore,
the poynt
tendeth b
heereof,
poynt, an
lifted vp
therefore
station an
founde th
warde th
cules pyl
of Hispan
niola, as
a continu
drunke, p
testation
spread th
many of
true: but
power to
searche th
except w

searched on euery side) wee founde three hundred leagues to the entrance of the riuer Magragnonum: and from thence to Os Draconis, seuen hundred leagues, but somewhat lesse by the description of some, for they doe not agree in all poyntes exquisitely. The Spanyardes will that a league conteyne foure myles by sea, and but three by land. From Os Draconis, to the cape or poynt of Cuchibacoa, which being passed, there is a gulfie on the left hande, we measured three hundred leagues in one Carde, & much therabout in another. From this poynt of Cuchibacoa, to the region of Caramairi, in whiche is the hauen Carthago (whiche some cal Carthagera) we found about a hundred & seuentie leagues. From Caramairi to the Iland Fortis, fyftie leagues. From thence to the gulfes of Vraba, among the whiche is the village called Sancta Maria Antiqua, where the Spaniardes haue appoynted their habitation, only xxxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of Vraba in the prouince of Dariena, to the ryuer of Beragua, where Nicuesa had intended to haue fastened his foote, if God had not otherwise decreed, we measured a hundred and thirtie leagues. From Beragua to that ryuer, which we sayd of Colonus to bee called Sancti Matthei, in the which also Nicuesa loosing his Carauell, wandered in great calamities, we found in our Cardes only a hundred & fourtie leagues: Yet many other which of late time haue come from these partes, haue described many mo leagues in this tract from the ryuer of Sancti Matthei, in whiche also they place diuers riuers, as Aburema, with the Iland called Scutum Cateba, lying before it, whose kings name is Facies combusta. Likewise another riuer called Zobraba, after that, Vraba, and then Duraba, in the whiche golde is founde. Furthermore, many goodly hauens, as Cerabaro and Hiebra, so called of the inhabitantes. And thus if your holynesse will conferre these numbers together, you shall finde in this accompt, a thousand, fye hundred, twentie and fye leagues, which amount to fye thousand & seuen hundred miles from the poynt of Sancti Matthei, which they call Sinum perditorum, that is, the gulfie of the lost men. But we may not leaue here: for after this, one Astur Ouetensis otherwise named Iohannes Dias de Solis, borne in Nebrissa (which bringeth forth many learned men) sayling from this riuer towarde the West, ouerranne many coasts and leagues, but the middest of that shore bendeth towarde the North, and is not therefore directly placed in order with the other, yet may wee gather by a diameter or right lyne, about three hundred leagues. Heereby may you gather what is the length of this lande, but of the breadth, perhaps we shal here after haue further knowledge. Let vs nowe speake somewhat of the varietie of the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starres. This lande therefore, although it reache forth from the East into the West, yet it is crooked, and hath the poynt bending so towarde the South, that it looseth the sight of the North pole, and extendeth beyond the Equinoctial lyne seuen degrees towarde the South pole: but the poynt heereof, perteyneth to the iurisdiction of the Portugales, as wee haue sayde. Leauing this poynt, and sayling towarde Paria, the North starre is seene againe, & is so much the more lifted vp, in how much the region enclineth more towarde the West. The Spanyardes therefore haue diuerse degrees of eleuation, vntil they come to Dariena being their chiefe station and dwelling place in those landes: for they haue forsaken Beragua, where they founde the North pole eleuate viii. degrees, but from hence, the land doth so much bend towarde the North, that it is there in manner equal with the degrees of the strayghtes of Hercules pyllers, especially if wee measure certaine lands founde by them towarde the North side of Hispaniola, among the which there is an Ilande about three C. & xxv. leagues from Hispaniola, as they say which haue searched the same, named Boiuca or Agnaneo, in the which is a continuall spring of running water, of such marueilous vertue, that the water thereof being drunke, perhaps with some diet, maketh olde men young again. And here must I make protestation to your holynesse, not to thinke this to bee sayde lightly or rashly, for they haue so spread this rumour for a trueth throughout all the court, that not onely all the people, but also many of them whom wisdom or fortune hath diuided from the common sort, thinke it to be true: but if you shal aske my opinion herein, I will answer, that I will not attribute so great power to nature, but that God hath no lesse reserued this prerogatiue to himselfe, then to seache the heartes of menne, or to giue substance to priuation, (that is) beeing, to no being, except wee shall beleue the fable of Colchis of Eson renouate, to bee as true as the writings

A league.

The nauigation
of Iohannes
Dias.The eleuation
of the pole.The iurisdiction
of the Portu-
gales.Hercules pyl-
lers.The Ilande
Boiuca or
Agnaneo.
The renouation
of age.
A water of mar-
ueilous vertue.

The accidents
of age may be
hidden.

Extream
hunger.

This was at
the siege of Je-
rusalem.

Many dogges
eaten.

A mangie dog
drece solide.

Broth of a
mangie dogge
skinne.
'Toades eaten.

A dead man
eaten.

Note.

Petrus Arias
whom the Spa-
nyardes call
Pedrarias.

of Sibylla Erythrea. Albeit perhappes the schoole of Phisitions and natural philosophers, will not muche stick to affirme, that by the vse of certaine secrete medicines and diet, the accidentes of age (as they call them) may be long hidden & deferred, which they will to bee vnderstoode by the renouation of age. And to haue sayd thus much of the length and breadth of these regions, and of the rough and hugious mountaines, with their watery caues, also of the diuers degrees of that lande, I thinke it sufficient. But I thought it not good to let passe what chaunced to these miserable men among their generall calamities. I remember that when I was a childe, mee thought my bowelles grated, and that my spirites were marueilously troubled for very pitie, when I reade in the poet Virgil, howe Achemenides was left of Vlysses vpon the sea bankes among the gigantes called Cyclopes, where for the space of manie dayes from the departing of Vlysses, vntil the comming of Æneas, he ate none other meat but only berries and hawes. But our vnfortunate Spanyardes, which followed Nicuesa to inhabite Beragua, would haue esteemed hawes and berries for great delicates. What should I heere speake of the head of an asse bought for a great price, & of such other extreamities as menne haue suffered in townes besieged? After that Nicuesa had determined to leaue Beragua for the barrennesse of the soyle, he attempted to search Portum Bellum, and then the coastes of the poynt called Marmor, if he might there finde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this meane time, so grieuous famine oppressed his souldiers, that they neither abstained from eating of mangie dogges, which they had with the, aswel for their defence as for hunting (for in the warre agaynst the naked people, dogges stoode them in great steade) nor yet somtime from the slayne inhabitants: for they found not there any fruitfull trees, or plentie of foules, as in Dariena, but a barren ground, and not meete to be inhabited. Here certaine of the souldiers made a bargaine with one of their fellowes for the pryce of a leane dogge, who also was almost dead for hunger: they gaue the owner of the dogge many of those peeces of gold which they cal Pesos, or golden Castellans. Thus agreeing of the price, they flayed the dogge to be eaten, and cast his mangie skinne with the bones of the heade hanging thereto, among the bushes. The day following, a certayne footeman of their companie, chaunced to finde the skinne beeing now full of maggottes and stynking. He brought it home with him, sodde it, and ate it. Many resorted to him with their dishes for the broth of the sod skinne profferring him for euery dishfull a peece of golde. An other founde two toades, and sodde them, which a sicke man bought of him for two fine shurtes, curiously wrought of linnen intermyxed with golde. Certayne other wandering about to seeke for victualles, founde in a pathway in the myddest of a field, a dead man, of the inhabitants, which hadde beene slaine of his owne companie, and was now rotten and stynking. They drewe him aside, dismembred him secretly, roasted him, and ate him, therewith asswaging their hunger, as if they had beene fed with pheasantes. One also, whiche departing from his companions in the night season, went a fishing among the reedes of the maryshes, liued onely with slyme or mudde for the space of certayne dayes, vntill at the length creeping, and almost dead, he founde the waye to his felowes. And thus these miserable men of Beragua, vexed with these and suche other afflictions, were brought from the number of seuen hundred, threescore and ten souldiers, scarcely to fourtie, being now also added to the companie of them in Dariena. Fewe were slayne of the inhabitants, but the residue consumed with famine, breathed out their very soules, opening a way to the newe landes for such as shall come after them, appeasing the fury of the barbarous nations, with the price of their blood. Considering therefore, after these stormes, with what ease other men shall ouerrunne and inhabite these landes, in respect to the calamities that these men haue suffered, they shall seeme to goe to bride feastes, where all thinges are ready prepared against their comming. But where Petrus Arias arryued with the kinges naue, and new supply of men, to this houre I knowe no certaynty. What shall chaunce hereafter, I will make diligent inquisition, if I shall vnderstand this to be acceptable to your holinesse. Thus I bid you farewell: from the courte of the most catholyke king, the day before the nones of December, in the yeere of Christ. 1514.

The

I Was
posing
newe le
hand: f
from Va
rates, to
Lieut (e
passed o
the Scut
preensis
thought
did not
uourable
many ho
to enclir
passe in
onely w
hundred
were the
vnoccup
gouernor
king hac
ture vpp
grus tho
Arias wa
olde sou
the fame
men. T
him, he
call Can
Coiba, a
deuoute
warde th
his come
certayne
many of
our men
ship wit
to stand
other, t
pounded
greater
said.
as count
glasses,
for such
certayne
and all
to cutte
instrum
Vaschus

The first Chapter of the third Decade, to the Bishop of Rome Leo the tenth.

I Was determined (most holy father) to haue closed vp the gates to this newe worlde, supposing that I had wandered farre enough in the coastes thereof, while in the meane time newe letters were brought me from thence, whiche caused me againe to take my pen in hand: for I receiued letters not onely from certaine of mine acquaintance there, but also from Vaschus Nunnez, whom we sayde by the confidence of his owne power with his confederates, to haue vsurped the gouernance of Dariena, after the reiecting of Nicuesa & Ancisus, Lieutenantes. By his letter, written after his warlike maner, we vnderstand that he hath passed ouer the mountaines diuiding the Ocean, knowne to vs, from the other mayne sea on the South side of this lande, hitherto vnknowne. His Epistle is greater then that called Capreensis de Seiano. But we haue gathered out of that and other, onely such things as we thought most worthy to bee noted. Vaschus so beehaued himselfe in these affaires, that he did not onely pacifie the kinges displeasure conceiued against him, but also made him so fauourable and gracious good lord towards him, that he rewarded him and his companions with many honourable gifts and priuiledges for their attēpts. Wherefore, I desire your holynes to encline your attentue eares, & to consider with a ioyfull mind what they haue brought to passe in these great enterprises: for this valiaunt nation (the Spanyardes I meane) haue not onely with great paines and innumerable daungers subdued, to the Christian empire, infinite hundredes and legions, but also myriades of men. Vaschus Nunnez therefore, whether it were that he was impatient of idlenesse, (for a valiant mind cannot rest in one place, or be vnoccupied) or least any other shoulde preuent him in so great a matter (suspecting the newe gouernour Petrus Arias) or beeing moued by both these causes, and especially for that the king had taken displeasure with him for such things as he had done before, tooke the aduenture vpon him, with a fewe menne to bring that to passe, whiche the sonne of king Comogrus thought could hardly haue bin done with the ayde of a thousand men, whereof Petrus Arias was appoynted captaine for the same purpose. Assembling therefore certaine of the olde souldiers of Dariena, and many of those which came lately from Hispaniola, allured by the fame of greater plentie of golde, hee gathered an armie of a hundred fourescore and tenne men. Thus being furnished, and ready to take his voyage by sea, while the winde serued him, hee departed from Dariena with one Brigandine, and tenne of their boats whiche they call Canoas, as we haue sayde. First therefore arriuing in the dominion of Careta king of Coiba, and friend to the Christians, and leauing his shyppe and boates there, hee made his deuoute prayers to almighty God, and therewith went forward on his iourney by lande towards the mountaynes. Here he first entred into the region of king Poncha, who fledde at his comming, as he had done before. But Vaschus sent messengers to him by the conduct of certayne of Careta his men, promising him friendship, & defence against his enemies, with many other benefites. Poncha thus entised with fayre speech and friendly profers, both of our men, & of the Caretans, came to our men glad and willingly, making a league of friendship with them. Vaschus enterteyned him very friendly, and perswaded him neuer thereafter to stande in feare. Thus they ioyned handes, embraced, and gaue great giftes the one to the other, to knitte vp the knotte of continuall amitie. Poncha gaue Vaschus a hundred & ten poundes weight of golde, of that pound whiche the Spanyardes call Pesum. Hee hadde no greater plentie of golde at this time, by reason he was spoyled the yeare before, as we haue sayd. Vaschus to recompence one benefite with another, gaue him certayne of our thinges, as counterfayte rynges, Christall stones, copper chaynes, & braselets, hawkes belles, looking glasses, and such other fine stuffe. These thinges they set much by, and greatly esteeme: for such thinges as are straunge, are euery where counted precious. He gaue also to Poncha certayne axes to fell trees, which he accepted as a princely gift, because they lacke Iron, and all other metalls except golde: by reason whereof, they are enforced with great labour to cutte their trees to builde their houses, and specially to make their boates holowe, without instrumēttes of Iron, with certayne sharpe stones, which they finde in the ryuers. Thus Vaschus, leauing all thinges in safetie behinde him, marched forward with his armie toward

Vaschus Nunnez, gouernour of Dariena.

The new South Ocean.

Commendation of the Spanyardes.

A valiant mind cannot be idle.

Vaschus his voyage toward the golden mountaynes.

Careta king of Coiba.

King Poncha.

Strange thinges are counted precious.

Lacke of iron.

A stone in the stead of Iron.

Superfluities
hinder liberty.

Carpenters.

Bridges.

The region of
Quarequa.

King Quare-
qua is dryasa
to fight.
Hargabusies.
Crosse bowes.

vi. C. Barbari-
ans are slaine.

The vse of
dogges in the
warres against
the naked
Barbarians.

Naturall ha-
tred of vnna-
turall sunne.

I woulde all
men were of
this opinion.

the mountaynes, by the conduct of certayne guides and labourers which Poncha had giuen him, aswel to leade him the way, as also to cary his baggages, and open the strayghtes through the desolate places and craggie rocks full of the dennes of wilde beastes: for there is seldome any entercourse of buying and selling betweene these naked people, because they stand in neede of fewe thinges, and haue not the vse of money: but if at any time they exercise any barter, they doe it but neere hande, exchanging golde for household stuffe, with their cofines which sôwhat esteeme the same for ornament when it is wrought. Other superfluities they vtterly contemne, as hinderaunces of their sweete libertie, forasmuch as they are giuen onely to play and idlenesse. And for this cause the high wayes which lye betweene their regions, are not much worne with many iourneyes, yet haue their scouts certaine priuie markes, whereby they know the way the one to inuade the others dominions, and spoyle and infest themselues on both sides with mutuall incursions priuily in the night season. By the helpe therefore of their guides and laborers, with our Carpenters he passed ouer the horrible mountaynes, and many great riuers lying in the way, ouer the which he made bridges, either with pyles or trunks of trees. And here doe I let passe many thinges which they suffered for lacke of necessities, being also in maner ouercome with extreame labor, least I should bee tedious in rehearsing thinges of small value. But I have thought it good not to omit suche doings as hee had with the kinges by the way. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the high mountaynes, he entred into a region called Quarequa, and mette with the king thereof called by the same name, with a great bande of menne armed after ther manner, as with bowes and arrowes, long and broad two handed swordes made of wood, long staues hardened at the endes with fire, darts also and slynges. Hee came proudly and cruelly against our men, and sent messengers to them to bydde them stande and proceede no further, demanding whyther they went, and what they hadde to doe; Here with hee came forth and shewed himselfe, being apparelled with all his nobilitie, but the other were all naked. The approaching toward our men, he threatned thẽ, with a Lions countenance, to depart from thence, except they would be slayne euery mothers sonne. When our men denied that they would goe backe, he assailed them fiercely, but the battayle was soone finished, for assoone as they hearde the noyse of the hargabusies, they beleued that our men caryed thunder and lightning about with them. Many also being slayne and sore wounded with quarrels of crossebowes, they turned their backs and fledde. Our men following them in the chase, hewed them in peeces, as the Butchers doe fleshe in the shambles, from one an arme, from another a legge, from him a buttocke, from another a shoulder, and from some the necke from the bodie at one stroke. Thus, sixe hundred of them, with their king, were slayne like brute beastes. Vachus founde the house of this king infected with most abominable and vnnaturall lechery: for he founde the kinges brother, and many other young men in womens apparell, smooth and effeminately decked, whiche by the report of such as dwelt about him, hee abused with preposterous Venus. Of these about the number of fourtie, he commanded to be giuen for a pray to his dogges: for (as we haue sayde) the Spanyardes vse the helpe of dogges in their warres agaynst the naked people, whom they inuade as fiercely and rauenyngly. as if they were wild bores or Hartes: insomuch that our Spanyardes haue founde their dogges no lesse faithfull to them in all danger and enterpryses, then did the Colephonians or Castabalcenes, whiche instituted whole armies of dogges, so made to serue in the warres, that being accustomed to place them in the forefront of the battayles, they neuer shronke or gaue backe. When the people had hearde of the seuer punishment whiche our menne had executed vpon that filthie kinde of men, they resorted to them, as it had bin to Hercules for refuge, by violence bringing with them all such as they knewe to be infected with that pestilence, spytyng in their faces, and crying out to our men to take reuenge of them, and rydde them out of the worlde from among men, as contagious beastes. This stinking abomination hadde not yet entred among the people, but was exercised onely by the noble men and gentlemen. But the people lifting vp their handes & eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that God was grieuously offended with suche vyle deedes, affirming this to be the cause of their so many thunderinges, lyghtninges, & tempestes, wherewith they

they are
fruite,
though
doth bot
easie to
there is
may be v
warlyke
not fortu
mountay
and gentl
of nature
they foun
in tyme
shippewa
tantes of
chus leau
tomed to
of the Q
king Pon
neuerthel
victualles
day of th
mountayn
other sea
Approchi
and went
falling pr
of the CK
his face t
before al
maiestie,
a man bu
had thus
nions, to
tantes of E
almighty
cesse to s
All his co
with no l
promonto
lande eue
them a fu
had sayde
steed of a
least such
king of C
on the le
of the ne
him with
through
array, an
esteem

they are so often troubled, and of their overflowing of waters which drowne their sets and fruites, whereof famine and diuers diseases ensue, as they simply and faithfully beleue, although they know none other GOD then the sunne whom onely they honour, thinking that it doth both giue and take away, as it is pleased or offended: Yet they are very docible, and easie to be allured to our customes and religion, if they had any teacher. In their language there is nothing vnpleasaunt to the eare, or harde to be pronounced, but that all their wordes may be written with Latine letters, as wee sayde of the inhabitautes of Hispaniola. It is a warlyke nation, and hath beene euer hitherto molestous to their borders: but the region is not fortunate with fruitfull grounde, or plentie of gold. Yet it is full of great barren mountaynes, being somewhat colde by reason of their height and therefore the noble menne and gentlemen are apparelled, but the common people liue content onely with the benefites of nature. There is a region not past two dayes Iourney distant from Quarequa, in which they found only blacke Moores, and those exceeding fierce and cruell. They suppose that in tyme past certayne blacke Moores sayled thither out of Ethiopia to robbe, and that by shippwrecke or some other chauce, they were dryuen to those mountaynes. The inhabitants of Quarequa liue in continuall warre and debate with these blacke men. Heere Vaschus leauing in Quarequa many of his souldiers (whiche by reason they were not yet accustomed to such trauailes & hunger, fell into diuers diseases) tooke with him certayne guides of the Quarequatans, to conduct him to the toppes of the mountaynes. From the pallace of king Poncha, to the prospect of the other South sea, is only sixe daies Iourney, the which neuerthelesse, by reason of many hinderances & chaüces, and especially for lacke of victualles, he could accomplish in no lesse then xxv. dayes. But at the length, the seuenth day of the Calendes of October, hee beehelde with woondering eyes the toppes of the high mountaynes, shewed vnto him by the guides of Quarequa, from the which he might see the other sea so long looked for, and neuer seene before of any man comming out of our worlde. Approching therefore to the toppes of the mountaynes, he commaunded his armie to stay, and went himselfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take the first possession thereof. Where, falling prostrate vpon the grounde, and raying himselfe againe vpon his knees, as the manner of the Christians is to pray, lyfting vp his eyes and handes toward heauen, and directing his face toward the newe founde South sea, he powred forth his humble and deuout prayers before almightie God, as a spirituall sacrifice with thanks giuing, that it pleased his diuine maiestie, to reserue vnto that day the victorie & prayse of so great a thing vnto him, beeing a man but of small wit and knowledge, of litle experience, and base parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike maner, hee beckned with his hande to his companions, to come to him, shewing the great maine sea heretofore vnkowne to the inhabitants of Europe, Aphrike, and Asia. Here agayne hee fell to his prayers as before, desiring almighty God (and the blessed virgin) to fauour his beginniges, and to giue him good successe to subdue those landes, to the glory of his holy name, and encrease of his true religion. All his companions did likewise, and prayed God with loude voyces for ioy. Then Vaschus, with no lesse manly corage then Hanniball of Carthage shewed his souldiers Italy, and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft vp their hearts, and to beholde the lande euen nowe vnder their feete, and the sea beefore their eyes, which shoulde bee vnto them a full and iust rewarde of their great laboures & trauayles nowe ouerpassed. When he had sayde these wordes, hee commanded them to raise certayne heapes of stones, in the steed of altars, for a token of possession. They descending from the toppes of the mountaynes, least such as might come after him shoulde argue him of lying or falshood, hee wrote the king of Castels name here and there, on the barkes of the trees, both on the right hand and on the left, & rayed heapes of stones all the way that he went, vntill he came to the region of the next king toward the South, whose name was Chiapes. This king came forth agaynst him with a great multitude of menne, threatning and forbydding him not onely to passe through his dominions, but also to goe no further. Hereupon Vaschus set his battayle in array, and exhorted his men (being nowe but fewe) fiersly to assaile their enemies, and to esteeme them no better then dogges meate, as they shoulde bee shortly. Placing therefore

The harvest is
great, and the
workemen
but fewe.

Warlike geo-
ple.

The higher,
the colder.

A region of
black Moores.

Diseases of
change of ayre
and dyet.
The South sea.

Prayer.

God rayseth
the poore from
the dounghill.

Hanniball of
Carthage.

King Chiapes.
A battayle.

Chiapes is dri-
uen to flight.

Vaschus send-
eth for king
Chiapes.

Chiapes sub-
mitteth him-
selfe to Vas-
chus.

A gulfe of three
score myles.
Saint Michaels
gulfe.
The many cou-
rige and godly
state of Vaschus.

the hargabusiers and masties in the forefront, they saluted king Chiapes and his men with suche alarome, that when they heard the noyse of the gunnes, sawe the flames of fire, and smelt the saour of brimstone (for the wynde blew toward them) they droue themselves to flight, with such feare least thunderbolts and lyghtnynges followed them, that many fell downe to the ground, whom our men pursuing, first keeping their order, and after breaking their aray, slue but fewe, and tooke many captiue: For they determined to vse no extremitie, but to pacifie those regions as quietly as they might. Entering therefore into the pallace of king Chiapes, Vaschus commaunded many of the captiues to bee loosed, willing them to search out their king, and to exhorte him to come thither: and that in so doing, he woulde be his friende, and profer him peace, beeside many other benefits. But if he refused to come it shuld turne to the destruction of him and his, and viter subuersion of his countrey. And that they might the more assuredly do this message to Chiapes, he sent with them certayne of the guides which came with him from Quarequa. Thus Vaschus, beeing perswaded aswel by the Quarequans, who coulde coniecture to what end the matter would come, by the experience which they had seene in themselves and their king, as also by the reasons of his owne men, to whom Vaschus had made suche friendly promises in his behalfe, came forth of the caues in the which hee lurked, and submitted himselfe to Vaschus, who accepted him friendly. They ioyned hands, embraced the one the other, made a perpetuall league of friendshippe, and gaue great rewardes on both sides. Chiapes gaue Vaschus foure hundred poundes weyght of wrought golde, of those poundes which they call Pesos, and Vaschus recompenced him agayne with certayne of our thinges. Thus being made friendes, they remained together a fewe dayes, vntil Vaschus souldiers were come, which he left behind him in Quarequa. Then calling vnto him the guides and labourers whiche came with him from thence, hee rewarded them liberally, and dismissed them with thanks. Shortly after, by the conduct of Chiapes himselfe, and certayne of his men departing from the toppes of the mountaines, hee came in the space of foure dayes to the bankes of the newe sea: where assembling all his menne together, with the kinges scribes and notaries, they addicted a'l that mayne sea with all the landes adiacent thereunto, to the dominion and Empire of Castile. Here hee left parte of his souldiers with Chiapes, that he myght the easelyer search those coastes. And taking with him niene of their lyghters made of one whole tree (which they call Culchas, as the inhabitants of Hispaniola call them Canoas) & also a bande of fourescore men, with certaine of Chiapes men, he passed ouer a great riuer, and came to the region of a certaine king whose name was Coquera. He attempted to resist our men as did the other, and with like successe: for he was ouercome and put to flight. But Vaschus, who entended to winne him with gentlenesse, sent certayne Chiapeans to him, to declare the great power of our men, howe inuincible they were, howe mercifull to such as submit themselves, also cruell and seure to such as obstinately withstand them: Promising him furthermore, that by the friendship of our me, he might be wel assured by the example of other not only to liue in peace and quietnes himselfe, but also to be reuenged of the iniuries of his enemies: Wylling him in conclusion so to weigh the matter, that if he refused this gentlenesse profered vnto him by so great a victourer, he should or it were long learne by feeling, to repent him too late of that perill which hee might haue auoyded by hearing. Coquera with these words and examples, shaken with great feare, came gladly with the messengers, bringing with him. 650. Pesos of wrought golde, which hee gaue vnto our men. Vaschus rewarded him likewise, as we sayde before of Poncha. Coquera being thus pacified, they returned to the pallace of Chiapes, where, visityng their companions, and resting there a while, Vaschus determined to searche the next great gulfe, the whiche, from the furthest reaching thereof into the lande of their countreyes, from the entrance of the mayne sea, they say to be three myles. This they named Saint Michaels gulfe, which they say to bee ful of inhabited llandes and hugious rockes. Entering therefore into the nine boates of Culchas, wherewith hee passed ouer the ryuer beefore, hauing also with the same companie of fourescore whole men, he went forward on his purpose, although hee were greatly dissuaded by Chiapes, who earnestly desired him not to attempt

The thir

attempt
moneth
many C
patien
saintes
and the
necessar
mies of
perswade
any thin
soeuer h
lace, bu
assoon
agaynst
Thus be
full coun
eyes see
they esca
there tha
say also,
it doth c
But on th
scarcely
the lland
nowe dry
whelmed
son their
of the ba
ping the
enforced
consumed
inhabita
those lland
in the wh
coniectur
moone, c
nowe Oc
by one v
the regio
our men,
and many
sent cert
coule be
were inst
tion of h
with ther
him man
nificence
this gent
with him
hee sent
byggest
at the by
VOL.

attempt that voyage at that time, affirming the gulfe to bee so tempestious and stormie three monethes in the yeere, that the sea was there by no meanes nauigable, and that he had scene many Culchas deuoured of whirlepooles, euen before his eyes. But inuincible Vaschus, impatient of idlenesse, and voyde of all feare in Gods causes, answered that God and his holy saintes would prosper his enterpryses in this case, forasmuche as the matter touched God, and the defence of the Christian religion, for the mayntenance whereof, it shoulde bee necessarie to haue abundance of riches and treasure, as the sinewes of warre against the enemies of our faith. Thus vsing also the office both of an oratour and preacher, and hauing perswaded his companions, hee lanced from the lande. But Chiapes, least Vaschus should any thing doubt of his faithfulness towarde him, proffered himselfe to goe with him whyther soeuer hee went, and woulde by no meanes assent that Vaschus shoulde departe from his palace, but that he woulde bring him on the way, and take parte of his fortune. Therefore, assoone as they were now entred into the maine sea, such sources & conflictes of water arose against them, that they were at their wittes ende, whither to turne them, or where to rest. Thus being tossed and amased with feare, the one looked on the other with pale & vnchearefull countenances, but especially Chiapes and his company, who had before time with their eyes seene the experience of those ieopardies, were greatly discomforted (yet as God woulde) they escaped all, and landed at the next llande, where, making fast their boates, they rested there that night. Here the water so encreased, that it almost ouerflowed the llande. They say also, that the South sea doth so in maner boyle and swel, that when it is at the hyghest, it doth couer many great rockes, which at the fall thereof are seene farre about the water. But on the contrary parte, all such as inhabite the North sea, affirme with one voyce, that it scarcely ryseth at any tyme a cubite about the banks, as they also confesse whiche inhabite the llande of Hispaniola, and other llandes situate in the same. The llande therefore being nowe drye by the fall of the water, they resorted to their boates, which they found all ouerwhelmed, and ful of sande, & some sore bruised with great ryftes, and almost lost by reason their cables were broken: such as were bruised, they tyed fast with their girdles, with slippes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and long stalkes of certayne hearbes of the sea, stopping the ryftes or chinkes with grasse, according to the present necessitie. Thus were they enforced to returne backe agayne, like vnto men that came from shipwracke, being almost consumed with hunger, because their victualles were vterly destroyed by tempest. The inhabitants declared that there is hearde all the yeere horrible roing of the sea among those llandes, as often as it riseth or falleth, but this most especially in those three monethes in the whiche it is most boystrous, as Chiapes told Vaschus before, meaning (as they could coniecture by his words) October, Nouember, and December: for hee signified the present moone, & the two moones following, counting the monethes by the moone, whereas it was nowe October. Heere therefore refreshing himselfe and his souldiers a while, and passing by one vnprofitable king, he came to another, whose name was Tumaccus, after the name of the region, beeing situate on that side of the gulfe. This Tumaccus came forth agaynst our men, as did the other, and with like fortune: for he was ouercome, dryuen to flight, and many of his men slaine. He himselfe was also sore wounded, but yet escaped. Vaschus sent certayne messengers of the Chiapians to him, to returne, and not to be afraide: but he coulde be nothing moued, neyther by promises, nor threatninges: yet when the messengers were instant, and ceased not to threaten death to him and his familie, with the vtter desolation of his kingdome, if he persisted in that obstinacie, at the length hee sent his sonne with them, whom Vaschus honourably entreteining, apparelling him gorgeously, and giuing him many giftes, sent him to his father, willing him to perswade him of the puissance, munificence, liberalitie, humanitie, and clemencie of our men. Tumaccus beeing moued by this gentleness declared towarde his sonne, came with him the thirde day, bringing nothing with him at that time. But after that hee knewe that our menne desired golde and pearles, hee sent for sixe hundred and fourteene Pesos of golde, and two hundred and fourtie of the byggest and fayrest pearles, beside a great number of the small sort. Our menne marueyled at the byggenes and fayrenes of these pearles, although they were not perfectly white, because

Riches are the
sinewes of warre.
The faithfulness
of king Chiapes.

A tempest on
the sea.

The increasing
of the South sea.

The North
Ocean.

Hard shift in
necessitie.

The region
Tumacca.

King Tumaccus
is driuen to
flight.

Golde and
pearles.

Muscles of the
sea.

Fishing for
pearles.

The thirste of
golde.

Ambition
among naked
men.

A king of
greate power.

Big pearles.

Cleopatra,
queene of Egypt,
desolued a pearle
in vineger and
drunke it.
Price here thou-
sande pounde of
our money.

cause they take them not out of the sea muscles, except they first rost them, that they may the easelyer open them selfe, and also that the fishe may haue the better tast, whiche they esteeme for a delicate and Princely dishe, and set more thereby, then by the pearles themselves. Of these things I was enfourmed of one Arbolantius, being one of Vaschus companions, whom hee sent to the king with many pearles, and certayne of those sea muscles. But when Tumaccus sawe that our men so greatly regarded the beautie of the pearles, he commanded certayne of his men to prepare themselves to goe a fishing for pearles: Who departing, came agayne within foure dayes, bringing with them twelue pounde weight of orient pearles, after eight ounces to the pounde. Thus reioycing on both parties they embrased, and made a league of continuall friendship. Tumaccus thought himselfe happie that he had presented our men with such thankfull gyftes, and was admitted to their friendship, and our men thinking themselves happie and blessed that they hadde found such tokens of great riches, swallowed downe their spittle for thirst. At all these dooinges, king Chiapes was present, as a witnesse and companion. He also reioyced not a little aswell that by his conducting he sawe that our men shoulde bee satisfied of their desire, as also that by this meanes hee hadde declared to the next king his borderer and enemy, what friends hee hadde of our men, by whose ayde hee might liue in quietnes and bee reuenged of his aduersarie, if neede shoulde so require. For (as wee haue sayde) these naked kinges infest themselves with grieuous warres, onely for ambition and desire to rule. Vaschus boasteth in his epistle, that he learned certayne maruelous secretes of Tumaccus himselfe, as concerning the great riches of this lande, whereof (as he sayth) he would viter nothing at this present, forasmuche as Tumaccus tolde it him in his care. But he was enfourmed of both the kinges, that there is an Ilande in that gulf, greater then any of the other, hauing in it but onely one king, and him of so great power, that at suche times of the yeere as the sea is calme, he inuadeth their dominions with a great naue of Culchas, spoiling and carying away for a prairie all that he meeteth. This Ilande is distant from these coastes, only twentie miles: So that the promontories or pointes thereof, reaching into the sea, may be seene from the hilles of this continent. In the sea neere about this Ilande sea muscles are engendred, of such quantitie, that many of them are as brode as bucklers. In these are pearles founde (being the hartes of those shell fishes) oftentimes as bigge as beanes, sometimes bigger then Oliues, and suche as sumptuous Cleopatra might haue desired. Although this Iland be so neere to the shore of this firme lande, yet is the beginning thereof in the maine sea, without the mouth of the gulf. Vaschus being ioyful and mery with this rich communication, fantasizing nowe in maner nothing but princes treasures, beganne to speak fierce and cruell wordes against the tirant of that Iland, meaning hereby to winne the mindes of the other kinges, and binde them to him with a neerer bonde of friendship. Yet therefore railing further on him with spitefull and opprobrious wordes, he swore great othes, that he woulde forthwith inuade the Ilande, spoiling, destroying, burning, drowning, and hanging, sparing neither swoorde nor fire, vntill he had reuenged their iniuries: and there with commaunded his Culchas to be in a readines. But the two kinges, Chiapes and Tumaccus, exhorted him friendly to defer this enterprise, vntill a more quiet season, because that sea was not nauigable without great danger, being nowe the beginning of Nouember: Wherein the kinges seemed to saie true. For as Vaschus him selfe writeth, great roing of the sea was heard among the Ilands of the gulf, by reason of the raging and conflict of the water. Great riuers also, descending from the toppes of the mountaines the same time of the yeere, and ouerflowing their bankes, driuing downe with their violence greate rockes and trees, make, a maruelous noise. Likewise the furie of the South and Northeast windes associate with thunder and lightning at the same season, did greatly molest them. While the weather was faire, they were vexed in the night with colde, and in the day time the heate of the sunne troubled them, whereof it is no maruaile, for asmuch as they were neere vnto the Equinoctial lyne, although they make no mention of the elevation of the pole, for in such regions, in the night the Moone and other colde planettes, but in the day the Sunne and other hotte planettes, doe chiefly exercise their influence, although the antiquitie were of another opinion, supposing the Equinoctial circle

The thirde

circle to
perpendi-
culation
yearly to
Hyperbore-
named A-
and grea-
to feete.
even the
Neuerthe-
South pro-
heauen a-
vnto the
way. T-
whiche t-
tana, and
the Sun-
them, as
towards
therefore
wynter v-
therefore

Vaschus
the sayd
to accom-
chus had
that sea
which pe-
exercised
times wh-
are wont
bottōe:
likewise
To them
height, a-
onely to
ment ten
the shore
are but l-
port: B-
Whether
of their
der by c-
one pear-
whereun-
when the
shell, or
the true
shall bee
him by
poyntes.

circle to bee vnhabitable and desolate, by reason of the heate of the sunne, hauing his course perpendicularly or directly ouer the same, except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whose assertions the Portugales haue at these dayes by experience prouoed to be true: for they sayle yearly to the inhabitants of the South pole, being in maner Antipodes to the people called Hyperborei vnder the North pole, and exercise marchandize with them. And here haue I named Antipodes, forasmuch as I am not ignorant that there hath bin men of singular witte and great learning, which haue denyed that there is Antipodes, that is, such as walke feete to feete. But it is certayne, that it is not giuen to any one manne to knowe all thinges, for euen they also were men, whose propertie is to erre, and be deceived in many thinges. Neuerthelesse, the Portugales of our time, haue sayled to the fiftie and fyftie degree of the South pole: where, compassing about the poynt thereof, they might see throughout all the heauen about the same, certeine shining white cloudes here and there among the starres, like vnto them which are seene in the tract of heauen called Lactea via, that is, the mylke white way. They say, there is no notable starre neere about that pole, like vnto this of ours, whiche the common people thinke to bee the pole of it selfe (called of the Italians Tramontana, and of the Spanyardes Nortes) but that the same falleth beneath the Ocean. When the Sun descendeth from the myddest of the axiltree of the worlde from vs, it ryseth to them, as a payre of ballances, whose weyght enclining from the equall poyse in the myddest towarde eyther of the sides, causeth the one end to ryse as much as the other falleth. When therefore it is Autumne with vs, it is spring time with them, and sommer with vs, when it is wynter with them. But it sufficeth to haue sayde thus much of strange matters. Let vs now therfore returne to the historie, and to our men.

The starres
about the South
pole.

A similitude de-
claring Anti-
podes.

The seconde Chapter of the third Decade.

VAschus by the aduice of king Chiapes & Tumaccus, determined to defer his voyage to the sayd Ilande, vntill the next spring or sommer, at which time, Chiapes offered himselfe to accompany our men, and ayde them therein all that he might. In this meane time, VAschus hadde knowledge that these kings had nettes and fishing places in certaine stations of that sea neere vnto the shore where they were accustomed to fishe for sea muscles, in the which pearles are engendered, and that for this purpose they had certaine dyuers or fishers, exercised from their youth in swimming vnder the water. But they doe this onely at certaine times when the sea is calme, that they may the easier come to the place wher these shel fishes are wont to lie: for the bigger that they are, so much lye they the deeper & neerer to the bottome: but the lesser, as it were daughters to the other, are neerer the brimme of the water: likewise the least of all, as it were their nieces, are yet neerer to the superficiall part thereof. To them of the biggest sorte which lie lowest, the fishers discend the depth of three mens height, & sometime foure, but to the daughters or nieces, as their succession, they discend onely to the midde thygh. Sometimes also, after that the sea hath bin disquieted with vehement tempestes, they find a great multitude of these fishes on the sandes, being dryuen to the shore by the vyolence of the water. The pearles of these, which are found on the sande, are but litle, the fish it selfe, is more pleasant in eating, then are our oysters, as our men report: But perhaps hunger, the sweete sause of all meates, caused our men so to thinke. Whether pearles be the hartes of sea muscles (as Aristotle supposed) or the byrth or spawne of their intrals (as Plinie thought) or whether they cleaue continually to the rockes, or wander by companyes in the sea by the guiding of the eldest, whether euery fish bring forth one pearle or more, at one birth, or at dyuers: also whether they be filled from the rockes whereunto they cleaue, or may bee easely pulled away, or otherwise fall of by themselves when they are come to their full growth: Lykewise whether pearles bee harde within the shell, or soft, our men haue as yet no certaine experience, but I trust or it bee long to know the truth hereof: for our men are euen now in hande with the matter. Also, as soone as I shall bee aduertised of the arryual of Petrus Arias the captayne of our menne, I will desire him by my letters to make diligent search for these thinges, and certifie me thereof in all poyntes. I knowe that hee will not be slacke or omit any thing herein, for hee is my verie

The manner of
fishing for
pearles.

Petrus Arias.

Wanton and superfluous pleasures.

The fishing place of king Chiapes.

Gold in maner in euery house. The rich treasury of nature.

The golde mines of Dariena.

King Teaocha enterteineth Vaschus friendly.

Twenty-pound weight of wrought gold.

Desertes full of wilde beastes. Dried fishe.

King Pacra a tyrant.

friende, and one that taketh great pleasure in considering the works of nature. And surely it seemeth vnto mee vndeceit, that we shoulde with silence ouerslyppe so great a thing, which aswell in the olde time, as in our dayes, hath and yet doth, drawe both men and women to the immoderate desire of superfluous pleasure. Spayne therefore shall bee able hereafter with pearles to satisfie the greedie appetite of such as in wanton pleasures are like vnto Cleopatra and Asopus: So that from henceforth wee shall neyther enuie nor reuerence the nice fruitfulnessse of Stoidum, or Taprobana, or the red sea. But let vs now returne to our purpose. Vaschus therefore determined with the fishers of Chiapes, to proue what might bee done in his fishe poole or stations of sea muscles. Chiapes to shewe himselfe obedient to Vaschus his request, although the sea were boysterous, commanded thirtie of his fishers to prepare themselves, and to resort to the fishing places. Vaschus sent onely sixe of his menne with them, to beholde them from the sea bankes, but not to committe themselves to the daunger of the sea. The fishing place was distaunt from the pallace of Chiapes about tenne myles. They durst not aduenture to dyue to the bottome, by reason of the furie of the sea: Yet of the muscles whiche lye hyghest, and of suche as were dryuen to the shore by the violence of the water, they brought sixe great fardelles in the space of a fewe dayes. The pearles of these were but little, about the byggenesse of small fytches: yet verie fayre and beautifull by reason that they were taken newly out of the fishe, beeing yet rawe. And that they shoulde not be reprovod of lying, as concerning the bignesse of these sea muscles, they sent many of them into Spaine to the king, with the pearles, the fishe being taken out: We thinke verily that there may in no place bigger be founde. These shel fishes therefore being thus founde here in so many places in that sea, and gold in maner in euery house, doe argue the riche treasury of nature to be hidde in those coastes, forasmuche as great riches haue ben founde, as it were in the litle finger of a giants hands. What then may we thinke of the whole hande of the giant (for hitherto they haue onlie benne in hande with the confines of Vraba) when they shall haue throughlie searched all the coastes and secretes of the inner partes of all that large lande: But Vaschus contented with these signes, and ioyfull of his good successe in these enterprises determined by another way to returne to his felowes in Dariena, where also they haue golde mines, about tenne miles from the village. He gaue therefore king Chiapes leaue to depart, and to folowe him no further, counsailling him to continue faithfull vnto the Christian king his lorde & maister. Thus embracing the one the other, & ioyning handes, Chiapes departed with teares, declaring the good minde which he bore to our men. Vaschus leauing his sick men with Chiapes went forward on his iourney with the residue, hauing also with him for guides three of Chiapes Mariners. He conueighed his armie ouer a great riuier, in to the dominion of a certaine king called Teaocha, who being aduertised of the comming of our men, of whose famous actes he had hearde muche before, was very glad thereof, and entertained them honourably, so that for a token of his friendly affection towards them, he gaue Vaschus twentie pounds waight of wrought golde, after eight ounces to the pounce: also two hundred bigge pearles, but not faire, by reason they were taken out of the muscles after they had ben sodden. After they had ioyned handes, Vaschus recompensed him with certaine of our thinges: likewise rewarding his guides the seruantes of Chiapes, he dismissed them with commendations to their lord. King Teaocha, at the departure of our men from his pallace, did not only appoint them guides to conduct them in the way, but also gaue them certaine slaues, in the steede of beastes to cary their victuals, because they should passe through many desertes, barren and rough mountaines and terrible woods full of Tigers and Lions. He sent also one of his sonnes with these slaues, lading them with salted and dried fishe, & bread of those regions, made of the rootes of Maizium and Iucca. He also commaunded his sonne not to depart from our men, vntil he were licensed by Vaschus. By their conducting therfore, Vaschus came to the dominion of an other king, whose name was Pacra, a cruel tyrant, fearefull to the other kinges his borderers, and of greater power then any of them. This tyrant, whether it were that his guiltie conscience, for his mischeiuous actes, put him in feare that our men would reuenge the same,

And surely
reat a thing,
men and wo-
all bee able
ures are like
or reuerence
w returne to
e what might
lfe obedient
of his fishers
y sixe of his
hemselues to
hiapes about
f the furie of
the shore by
fewe dayes,
s: yet verie
e, beeing yet
bignes of
the pearles,
er be founde,
that sea, and
be hidde in
he litle finger
er gĩaunt (for
ey shall haue
large lande:
in these en-
here also they
king Chiapes
thful vnto the
oyning handes,
or men. Vas-
residue, hau-
armie ouer a
aduertised of
fore, was very
ndly affection
r eight ounces
ey were taken
s, Vaschus re-
the seruantes
cha, at the de-
nduct them in
their victuals,
es and terrible
slauies, lading
es of Maizium
ntil he were li-
ominion of an
ea his border-
that his guiltie
e reuenge the
same,

same, or that he thought himselfe inferiour to resist them, fled at their comming. Vaschus writeth, that in these regions in the month of Nouember, he was sore afflicted with great heate and intollerable thirst, by reason that side of the mountaines hath little water: Inso- much that they were in daunger to haue perished, but that certaine of thinhabitantes shewed them of a spring, which was in the secret place of a wood, whither Vaschus with all speede sent two quicke & strong young men of his companions, with their gourdes, and such wa- ter vessels as Teaocha his men brought with them. Of thinhabitantes, there durst none de- part from their company, because the wild beasts do soone inuade naked men: For in those mountaines, and especially in the woods neare vnto the spring, they say that they are som- times taken out of their houses in the night, except they take good heede that the doores be well sparde. It shal not be from my purpose heere to declare a perticular chauce, be- fore I enter any further in this matter. They say therfore, that the last yeere the region of Dariena was no lesse infested and troubled with a fierce Tiger, then was Calidonia in time past with a wild Boore, and Nemea with a horrible Lion. For they affirme that for the space of sixe whole monethes, there passed not one night without some hurt done: so that it killed nightly either a Bullocke, a Mare, a Dogge, or a Hogge, and sometimes euen in the high waies of the village: For our men haue nowe great heardes of cattel in those regions. They say also, that when this Tiger had whelpes, no man might safelie goe forth of his doores, because shee spared not men, if shee mette firste with them. But at the length, necessitie enforced them to inuent a policie how they myght be reuenged of suche bloodshed. Search- ing therfore diligently her foote steppes, and following the pathe whereby shee was accus- tomed in the night season to wander out of her denne to seeke her praye, they made a great trenche or pyt in her walke, couering the same with hurdels, whereupon they cast part of the earth, and dispersed the residue. The dogge Tyger chaunced first into this pit- fall, and fel vpon the poynts of sharpe stakes, and such other engins as were of purpose fixyd in the bottome of the trench. Being thus wounded, he rored so terribly, that it grated the bowelles of such as hearde him, and the woodes and mountaynes neare about re- bounded the noyse of the horrible cry. When they perceiued that he was layd fast, they resorted to the trenche, and slue him with stones, dartes and pykes. With his teethe and clawes hee brake the dartes into a thousande chyppes. Beeing yet dead, hee was fearefull to all such as behelde him: what then thinke you he would haue doone beeing alyue and loose? One Iohannes Ledisma of Ciuile, a neere friend to Vaschus, and one of the com- panions of his trauayles, tolde mee that hee himselfe did eate of the flesh of that Tyger, and that it was nothing inferiour to beefe in goodnesse. Being demanded howe they knewe it to bee a Tyger, forasmuch as none of them had euer seene a Tyger: they answered that they knewe it by the spottes, fiercenesse, agilitie, and such other markes and tokens where- by auncient writers haue described the Tyger. For some of them had before time seene other spotted wilde beasts, as Libardes and Panthers. The dogge Tyger being thus killed, they following the trase of his steppes towarde the mountaynes, came to the denne where the bitche remayned with her two young sucking whelpes. But shee was not in the denne at their comming. They firste caryed awaie the whelpes with them. But afterwarde, fear- ing least they shoulde dye because they were young, entending when they were bigger to send them into Spayne, they put cheynes of iron about their neckes, and caryed them agayne to their denne: whither returning within a fewe dayes after, they founde the denne emptye, and their cheynes not remoued from their place. They supposed that the damme in her furie tore them in peeces, and caryed them away, least any should haue the fruition of them. For they playnely affirme, that it was not possible that they shoulde bee loosed from the chaynes aliue. The skinne of the dead Tyger stuffed with drie hearbes and strawe, they sent to Hispaniola, to the Admirall, and other of the chiefe rulers, from whome the newe landes receiue their lawes and succour. It shal at this time suffice to haue written thus muche of the Tygers, as I haue learned by report of them which both sustainede damage by their rauening, and also handled the skinne of that which was slayne. Let vs nowe there- fore returne to king Pacra, from whom we haue digressed. When Vaschus had entred into

Great hate in
the month of
Nouember.

Hurt by wilde
beastes.

A Tiger.
Calidonia is a
forrest in Scot-
lande.
Nemea is a
wood in Greece.

Tigers whelpes.

Thus the Egip-
tians take Cro-
codiles.

The dogge
Tyger taken.

The roring of
the tyger.

Tygers flesh
eaten.

The bitche
Tyger.

Tygers whelpes.

A strange thing.

King Pacra,
the

Naturall hatred
of vice.

Four kinges de-
uoured of dogges.
The vse of
dogges in the
warre against
naked men.

The Canibales
are expert arch-
ers.

Swordes of
wood.

Fiftie pound
weight of gold.

King Bononi-
ama, frield to the
Christians.
Wrought gold.

The oration of
king Bononiama.

The sparke of
the lawe of na-
ture, is the lawe
written in the
hartes of men.

the houses forsaken of Pacra, he sent messengers to recōcile him as he had done the other kinges. At the first he refused to come but after threatninges he came, with three other kinges in his company. Vaschus writeth, that he neuer sawe a more monstrous & deformed creature, and that nature hath only giuen him humane shape, and otherwise to bee worse then a brute beast, with manners according to the liniamentes of his bodie. Hee abused, with most abhominable lechery, the daughters of foure kinges his borderers, from whom he hadde taken them by violence. Of the filthie beehauour of Pacra, of his crueltie, and iniuries done by him, many of the other kinges made grieuous complayntes to Vaschus, as vnto a hygh Iudge, and iust reuenger, most humbly beseeching him to see suche thinges punished, forasmuche as they tooke him for a man sent of God for that purpose. Heereupon Vaschus, aswell to winne their good willes, as also to shewe an example of terrour to suche as vsed like fashions, commaunded that this monstrous beast, with the other three kinges whiche were subiecte to him, and of like conditions, shoulde bee giuen for a pray to his fighting dogges, and their torne carcases to bee burned. Of these dogges whiche they vse in the warres, they tell maruelous thinges for they say, that they runne vpon the inhabitauntes armed after their manner, with no lesse fiercenesse, then if they were Hartes or wilde bores, if the Spanyardes doe but onely poynt towards them with their fingers: insomuche that oftentimes they haue hadde no neede to driue their enemies to flight with swordes or arrowes, but haue doone the same only with dogges, placed in the forefront of their battaile, and letting them slippe with their watche woorde and priuie token: whereupon the barbarians stricken with feare, by reason of the cruell countenances of their masties, with their desperate boldenesse, and vnaccustomed howling and barking, haue disparckled at the first onsette and brake their array. Yet it chaunceth otherwise when they haue any conflict against the Canibales, and the people of Caramairi: for these are fiercer and more warlike men, also so expert archers, that they can moste certainly direct their venomous arrowes against the dogges, with suche celeritie as if they were thunderboltes, by reason whereof, they sometimes kill many of them. Thinhabitauntes of these mountaines doo not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes, but vse only Macanis, that is, certaine long and brode swordes made of wood, also slinges, long pikes, and dartes, hardened at the endes with fire. While king Pacra yet liued, no man coulde knowe of him, neither by faire meanes nor by fowle, where he had the golde whiche was founde in his house: for our men founde in his iewell house fiftie poundes waight of golde. Being therfore demanded where he had it, he answered, that they which gathered the same in those mountaines in his fathers daies, were all dead, and that since he was a childe, he neuer esteemed golde more then stones: More then this they coulde not get of him. By this seuer punishment executed vpon Pacra, Vaschus conciled vnto him the mindes of all the other kinges of that prouince, and by this meanes it came to passe, that when he sent for the sicke men whiche he left behinde him with king Chiapes, another king whiche was in the midde way, (whose name was Bononiama) entertained them gently, and gaue them twentie pounde weight of pure wrought golde, beside great plentie of victualles. And not this onely, but also accompanied them him selfe, vntill he had brought them safely from his pallace, into the dominion of Pacra, where taking each of them by the right handes he deliuered them to Vaschus him selfe, as a faithfull pledge committed to his charge, and therewith spake to Vaschus in this effecte: Moste mightie and valiaunt victourer, behoulde, I heere deliuer vnto you, your companions in such plight as I receiued them: wishing that I had ben aswell able to giue them health, as they were hartily welcome to suche poore entertainment as I was able to shewe them. For the fauoure and gentlenesse whiche I haue founde both in you and them, he shall rewarde you whiche sendeth thundering and lightning to the destruction of mischeuous men, and of his clemencie giueth vnto good men plentie of Iucca and Maizium in due season. As he spake these woordes, he lifted vp his handes and eies towards the Sunne whom they honour as God. Then he spake further to Vaschus, saying, In that you haue destroyed and slaine our violent and proude enemies, you haue brought peace and quietnesse to vs and our families, and bounde vs for euer to loue and obey you. You haue so ouercome and tamed wilde monsters, that we thinke you to bee sent

from

from h
protect
with m
vnto v
had saic
declared
like ger
ing the
thereof
Hiperbo
hereby
his hope
houses,
ouches,
therfore
moued
maine
their ho
a triuēt,
innume
regions
tauntes
they saw
linesse,
by wo
them, s
nister la
the gold
brought
fouresc
men be
fell into
such cal
without
vnwhole
souldier
heate,
obserue
the spa
and the
all thes
before.
& Foy
these th

WH
him the
departe
the ry
he fou
bee ca
neere

from heauen, for the punishement of euill men, and defence of innocentes, that vnder the protection of your mightie swoorde, we may hereafter leade our liues without feare, and with more quietnesse giue thanks to the giuer of all good thinges, for his mercie shewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When the interpretour hadde tolde Vaschus that the king Bononiana had saide these woordes, and suche like, Vaschus rendered him like thanks for his humanitie declared towards our men, and rewarded him as he had doone other in whom he founde like gentlenesse. Vaschus writeth, that he learned manie thinges of this kinge as concerning the great riches of these regions, but that he woulde at this present speake nothing thereof, and rehearse the same, as thinges like to haue good successe. What this implicate Hiperbole, or aduancement meaneth, I do not well vnderstand, but he plainly seemeth hereby to promise many great thinges. And surely it is to be thought, that according to his hope, great riches may be looked for. For they came in manner into none of the inhabitants houses, but that they founde in them either brestplates or culettes of golde, or else golden ouches, iewels, or garlandes to weare about their heades, neckes, or armes. I coniecture therefore thus by a similitude of our houses: If amonge vs any men of great power were moued with the desire to haue great plentie of Iron, and woulde enter into Italie with a maine force, as did the Gothes in time past, what abundance of Iron shoulde he haue in their houses, whereas hee shoulde finde in one place a fryingpan, in another a caldron, here a triuet, and there a spitte, and these in manner in euery poore mans house, with suche other innumerable? whereby any man may coniecture, that Iron is plentifully engendred in suche regions where they haue so great vse thereof. Our men also perceiued, that the inhabitants of these regions do no more esteeme gold then we do Iron, nor yet so much, after they saw to what vse Iron serued vs. Thus much haue I thought good to write to your holinesse, of suche thinges as I haue gathered out of the letters of Vaschus Nunnez, and learned by woordes of mouth of suche as were his companions in these affayres. As we receiue them, so wee giue them vnto you. Time, whiche reuealeth all secretes, shall hereafter minister larger argument of writing. They coulde at this time doe no great thing in searching the golde mynes, forasmuche as of a hundred, fourescore, and tenne men, which Vaschus brought with him from Dariena, there remained only threescore and ten, or at the most fourescore, whose ayd he now vsed in these dangerous aduentures, leauing euer the crased men beehinde him in the kinges houses all the way that hee went, but they most especially fell into sundry diseases, which came lately from Hispaniola, for they were not able to abide such calamities, as to liue onely contented with the bread of those regions, and wilde hearbes, without salt, drinking none other then ryuer water, and that oftentimes eyther lacking, or vnwholesome whereas before their stomackes had bin vsed to good meates. But the olde souldiers of Dariena, were hardened to abide all sorrowes, & exceeding tollerable of labour, heate, hunger, & watching, insomuch that merily they make their boast, that they haue obserued a longer & sharper Lent then euer your holinesse enioyned: for they say, that for the space of foure whole yeers they ate none other then hearbes and fruites, except now and then perhappes fysh, and very seldome fleshe: yea, and that sometime for lacke of all these, they haue not abhorred from mangie dogges and filthie toades, as wee haue sayde before. The olde souldiers of Dariena, I call those which first followed the capitaines Nicuesa & Fogeda, to inhabit the land, of the which now fewe were liuing. But let vs nowe omit these thinges, and returne to Vaschus, the victour of the mountaynes.

The thirde Chapter of the thirde Decade.

When Vaschus had remained thirtie daies in the pallace of king Pacra, conciling vnto him the mindes of the inhabitants, & providing things necessary for his companions. As he departed from thence, by the conduct of king Teaocha his men, and came to the banke of the ryuer Connegrus, whereof the region and king thereof, are named by the same name, he founde the sides of the mountaynes so rude and barren, that there was nothing apt to bee eaten, but wyld rootes, and certayne vnpleasant fruites of trees. The kinges being neere of bloude, inhabited this vnfortunate region, which Vaschus ouerpassed with all speede,

Great plenty of golde.

A similitude for the proofe of plentie of golde.

Change of dyet is dangerous.

Old souldiers.

A long lent.

Connegrus.

Two poore kinges.

for

Desartes.

Vessels of golde.

King Chiorius
endeth Vaschus
vix. dishes of
pure golde.Axes of Iron
more esteemed
then any golde.

for feare of hunger. One of these poore kinges was named Cotochus, and the other Ciurizis: He tooke them both with him, to guide him the way, and dismissed Teaocha his men with victuals & rewardes. Thus for the space of three dayes, he wandered through many desert woods, craggy mountaynes, and muddie marishes, full of such quamyres, that men are oftentimes swallowed vp in them, if they looke not the more warily to their feete: also through places not frequented with resort of men, and such as nature hadde not yet opened to their vse, forasmuche as the inhabitauntes haue seldome entercourse betweene them, but onely by sundry incursions, the one to spoyle and destroy the other: being otherwise contented to liue onely after the law of nature, without all worldly toyle for superfluous pleasures. Thus entryng at the length into the territorie of another king, whose name was Bechebuea, they founde all things voyde and in silence: for the king and his subiectes were all fledde to the woodes. When Vaschus sent messengers to fetch him, hee did not onely at the first submit himselfe, but also promise his aide, with all that he might make: Protesting furthermore, that he fledde not for feare that our men woulde doo them iniurie, but that he hid him selfe for verie shame and grieve of minde, for that he was not able to receiue them honorable, according vnto their dignitie, because his store of vitales was consumed. Yet in a token of obedience and friendshipp, he sent our men many vesselles of golde, desiring them to accepte them as the gifte of a friende whose good will wanted not in greater things, if his abilitie were greater. By whiche wordes, the poore man seemed to insinuate that he had ben robbed, and otherwise cruelly handled of his borderers, by reason whereof, our men were enforced to departe from thence more hungerly then they came. As they went forward there, they espied certaine naked men comming downe from a hill toward them. Vaschus commaunded his armie to stay, and sent his interpreters to them, to knowe what they woulde haue. Then one of them, to whome the other seemed to giue reuerence, spake in this effect. Our lord and king Chiorius, greeteth you well, willing vs to declare that he hearde of your puissance, and verue, whereby you haue subdued euill men, & reuenged the wronges doone to innocentes: For the whiche your noble factes and iustice, as he doth honour your fame, so woulde he thinke him selfe most happie, if he might receiue you into his palace. But, forasmuch as his fortune hath ben so euill (as he imputeth it) that being out of your way, you haue ouerpassed him, he hath sent you this golde, in token of his good will and friendshipp toward you. And with these wordes he deliuered to Vaschus thirtie dishes of pure golde, adding hereunto, that when so euer it shoulde please him to take the paines to come to their king, he shoulde receiue greater giftes. He declared further, that a king whiche was their borderer and mortall enimie, was very riche in golde and that in subduing of him, they shoulde both obtaine great riches, and also deliuer them from daily vexations: whiche thing might easily be doone by their helpe, because they knewe the countrey. Vaschus put them in good comfort, and gaue them for rewarde certaine Iron axes, whiche they more esteemed then great heaps of golde. For they haue little neede of golde, hauing not the vse of pestiferous money: but he that may gette but one axe or hatchet thinketh himselfe richer then euer was Crassus. For euen these naked men, doe perceiue that an axe is necessarie for a thousand vses, and confesse that golde is desired onely for certayne vaine and effeminate pleasures, as a thing whiche the life of manne may lacke without any inconuenience: for our gluttony and superfluous sumptuousnesse hath not yet corrupted them. By reason whereof, they take it for no shame to lacke cobards of plate, whereas the pride and wantonnesse of our time doth in manner impute it to vs for ignominie, to bee without that, whereof by nature wee haue no neede. But their contentation with the benefites of nature, doth playnely declare, that men may leade a free and happye life without tables, tables clothes, carpettes, napkins, and towels, with suche other innumerable, whereof they haue no vse, except perhaps the kinges furnishe their tables with a fewe golden vessels. But the common people dryue away hunger with a peece of their breade in the one hand, and a peece of broyled fische, or some kinde of fruite in the other hand: for they eate flesh but seldome. When their fingers are imbrued with any vinctuous

meates,

The thir

meates,
sometim
do they
with go
of king
filled th
sent for
mitted h
and a fe
mynded
tayne ki
declared
of Comm
power by
to the po
about 'T
yet so ric
ing, whic
mortall e
therefore
his most
spoken p
haunde of
him vnwa
ture, prom
fore to go
comming
as they ha
invaded t
nothing le
score won
of his gen
For their
with veh
caused by
in maner
Equinoct
after their
Tumanan
Eyther of
paces, as
his ment
captiue, y
being no
reioyced
troubleso
taynes,
entended
Thou sh
Thou sh
threaten
as thou
first feel
VOL. V

other Ciuri-
na his men
ough many
y, that men
feete: also
yet opened
zene them,
being other-
y toyle for
another king,
ce: for the
ent messen-
er also pro-
at he fledde
him selfe for
an honorable,
et in a token
desiring them
water things,
insinuate that
whereof, our
As they went
hill towarde
em, to knowe
ue reuerence,
vs to declare
ll men, & re-
nd iustice, as
might receiue
puteth it) that
s, in token of
deliuered to
should please
He declared
riche in golde
o deliuer them
because they
or rewarde cer-
they haue little
gette but one
se naked men,
golde is desired
of manne may
rounesse hath
cke cobards of
te it to vs for
their contenta-
ade a free and
h suche other
ne their tables
with a peece of
uite in the other
h any vniuious
meates,

meates, they wype them eyther on the soles of their feete, or on their thyghes, yea and sometimes on the skins of their priue members, in the steade of a napkin: and for this cause do they oftentimes wash themselves in the riuers. Our menne therefore went forward laden with golde, but sore afflicted with hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of king Pocchorrosa, who fled at their comming. Here for the space of thirtie dayes, they filled their emptie bellies with breade of the rootes of Maizium. In the meane time, Vaschus sent for Pocchorrosa, who beeing allured with promises and fayre woordes, came and submitted himselfe, bringing with him for a present fyfteene poundes weyght of wrought golde, and a fewe slaues: Vaschus rewarded him as he hadde done other before. When hee was mynded to depart, he was aduertised, that he should passe through the dominion of a certayne king, whose name was Tumanama. This is hee whome the sonne of king Comogrus declared to be of so great power, and fearefull to all his borderers, and with whom many of Commogrus familiars had bin captiue, but our men now perceiued that they measured his power by their owne: For their kinges are but gnatte (compared to Elephantes) in respect to the power and policie of our men. Our men were also enfourmed by such as dwelt neare about Tumanama, that his region was not beyonde the mountaynes as they supposed, nor yet so rich in golde as young Commogrus had declared: Yet consulted they of his subduing, whiche they thought they might the easilier bring to passe, because Pocchorrosa was his mortall enemy, who most gladly promised them his aduice and ayde herein. Vaschus therefore, leauing his sicke men in the village of Pocchorrosa, tooke with him threescore of his most valiant souldiers, and declared vnto them, how king Tumanama had often times spoken proude and threatening woordes agaynst them: Likewise that it nowe stode them in hande of necessitie to passe through his dominion, and that hee thought it best to set vpon him vnwares. The souldiers consented to his aduice, and exhorted him to giue the aduerture, promising that they would follow him whither soeuer he went. They determined therefore to goe two dayes journey in one day, that Tumanama, not knowing of their sodayne comming, might haue no leysure to assemble an armie: and the thing came to passe euen as they had deuised. For in the first watch of the night, our menne, with the Pocchorrosians, invaded the village and pallace of Tumanama, where they tooke him prysoner, suspecting nothing lesse. He had with him two young men, which hee abused vnnaturally, also foure-score women, which he hadde taken violently from diuers kinges: likewise, a great number of his gentlemen and subiectes were taken stragling in other villages neere about his pallace. For their houses are not adherent together as ours bee, because they are oftentimes troubled with veheraent whirlwindes, by reason of the sodayne changes and motions of the ayre, caused by the influence of the planettes, in the equalitie of the day and night, being there in maner both of one length throughout all the yeere, forasmuch as they are neere vnto the Equinoctiall lyne, as we haue sayde before. Their houses are made of trees, couered, and after their manner thatched with the stalkes of certayne rough hearbes. To the pallace of Tumanama, was onely one house adherent, and that euen as bygge as the pallace it selfe. Eyther of these houses were in length a hundred and twentie paces, and in breadth fiftie paces, as our men measured them. In these two houses the king was accustomed to muster his menne, as often as he prepared an armie. When Tumanama therefore was thus taken captiue, with all his Sardanapanicall familie, the Pocchorrosians bragged and threatened him, being nowe bounde, that he should shortly be hanged: the other kinges also his borderers, reioyced at his misfortune. Whereby our menne perceiued that Tumanama was no lesse troublesome to his neighbours, then was Pacra to the kinges of the South side of the mountaynes. Vaschus also the better to please them, threatned him grievously, but in deede entended no euill towards him. He spake therfore sharply vnto him with these woordes: Thou shalt nowe suffer punishment thou cruell tyrant, for thy pride and abominations. Thou shalt know of what power the Christians are, whom thou hast so contemned, and threatened to drawe by the hayre of their heads to the next ryuer, & there to drowne them, as thou hast oftentimes made thy vaunt among thy naked slaues: But thou thy selfe shalt first feele that, which thou hast prepared for others. And herewith commaunded him to bee

Plenty of gold
and scarcenes of
meate.

A good policie.

The cause of
vehement winds
neere the Equi-
noctiall.

Vaschus his
woordes to King
Tumanama.

Oderūt quem
metuunt.

xxx. pounce
weight of
wrought gold.

Threescore
poundes weight
of golde.

They abhorre
labour.

The colour of
the golden earth,
and a trull of
the same.

taken vppe: Neuerthelesse giuing a priuie token of pardon to them whiche layde handes on him. Thus vnhappy Tumanama, fearing and beleeuing that Vaschus, hadde ment in earnest as he commanded, fell prostrate at his feete, and with teares desired pardon: Protesting that hee neuer spake any such wordes, but that perhaps his noble menne in their drunkennesse hadde so abused their tongues, whiche hee coulde not rule: For their wines, although they be not made of grapes, yet they are of force to make men drunken. Hee declared furthermore, that the other Kinges his borderers had of malice surmised such lyes of him, enuying his fortune, because he was of greater power then they, most humbly desiring Vaschus, that as hee tooke him to bee a iust victourer, so to giue no credite vnto their vniust and malicious complayntes: Adding heereunto, that if it woulde please him to pardon him, not hauing offended, he woulde bring him great plentie of golde. Thus laying his right hande on his breast, he swore by the Sunne, that he euer loued and feared the Christians since hee first hearde of their fame and victories: especially when hee hearde say, that they had Michanas, that is swordes sharper than theirs, and suche as cutte in peeces all things that come in their wayes. Then directing his eyes toward Vaschus, who had his sworde in his hande, he spake thus, Who (except he were out of his witte) dare lift vp his hande agaynst this sworde of yours, wherewith you are able with one stroake to cleaue a manne from the head to the nauell? Let no manne therefore perswade you (O most mightie victourer) that euer suche woordes proceeded out of my mouth. As Tumanama with trembling spake these woordes, therewith swallowing downe the knotte of death, Vaschus seemed by his teares to be moued to compassion, and speaking to him with chearefull countenance, commaunded him to bee loosed. This doone hee sent immediately to his pallace for thirtie poundes weight of pure golde, artificially wrought into sundry ouches, which his wyues and concubines vsed to weare. Also the thirde day following, his noble men & gentlemen, sent threescore poundes weight of golde for their fine and raunsome. Tumanama being demaunded where they had that golde: he answered, that it was not gathered in his dominions, but that it was brought his ancestours from the riuer Comogrus towarde the South. But the Pocchorrosians and other his enemies sayde that he lyed, affirming that his kingdome was riche in golde. Tumanama on the contrary parte, instantly protested that he neuer knew any golde myne in all his dominions, yet denied not but that there hath sometimes beene founde certayne small graines of gold, to the gathering whereof, he neuer hadde any regard, because they could not get it without great & long labour. While these things were doing, the sicke men which Vaschus had left in the village of Pocchorrosa, came to him the viii. day of the Calendes of Ianuary, in the yeere of CHRIST. 1413. bringing with them certayne labourers from the Kinges of the South, with sundry instruments to digge the grounde, and gather golde. Thus passing ouer the day of the natiuitie of CHRIST without bodily labour, vpon Saint Stephens day hee brought certayne myners to the side of a hill, not farre distant from the pallace of Tumanama, where (as he sayth) hee perceiued by the colour of the earth, that it was like to bring forth golde. When they had digged a pit, not past a hand breadth and a halfe, and sifted the earth thereof, they founde certayne small graines of golde, no bygger then lintell seede, amounting to the weight of twelue graynes, as they proued with their balances of assaie, before a notarie and witnesse, that the better credite might bee giuen thereto. Whereby they argued, that the richenesse of that land was agreeable to the report of the borderers, although Vaschus coulde by no meanes cause Tumanama to confesse the same. They suppose that he nothing esteemed so small a portion: but other say, that hee denied his country to be fruitfull of golde, least by reason thereof, the desire of golde might intice our menne to inhabite his kingdome, as indeed the seely king was a prophet in so thinking. For they chose that and the region of Pocchorrosa to inhabite, and determined to buylde townes in them both, if it should so please the king of Castile: aswell that they may bee bayting places and vittailyn houses for such as should iourney towarde the South, as also that both the regions were fruitfull, and of good grounde to beare fruites and trees. Intending nowe therefore to depart from thence, hee tryed the earth by chance in an other place, where the colour of the ground, with certayne

The th
certayn
digger
peece
Pesus
Tuman
defende
Hee als
nama hi
Vaschus
might h
our men
at this t
ing, and
mens ba
were so
helpe of
some of
sicke, v
great fri
comming
prayed
Charles.
tured, h
This play
diuide th
the ryue
receiuing
sea: It is
our men
Christian
of pleas
wrought
as axes,
wrought
God amo
grus, and
if they d
gently a
(that is)
their pos
daunce o
to the p
Damen,
victualle
soldiers,
followe
The date
letter, th
his men
thanked
perils.
God and
and from

certayne shining stones, seemed to be a token of golde, where causing a small pitte to be digged, litle beneath the vpper crust of the earth, hee founde so much gold as weyghed the peece of golde whiche the Spanyardes call Castellatum Aureum, and is commonly called *Pesus*, but not in one grayne. Reioycing at these tokens, in hope of great riches, hee bad Tumanama to bee of good comfort, promising him that hee woulde bee his friende and defender, so that hee troubled not any of the kinges, whiche were friendes to the Christians: Hee also perswaded him to gather plentie of golde. Some say that he ledde away all Tumanama his women, and spoyled him, least he shoulde rebell. Yet hee deliuered his sonne to Vaschus, to be brought vp with our menne, to learne their language and religion, that hee might hereafter the better vse his helpe aswel in all thinges that he should haue to doe with our menne as also more politikelie rule, and obtayne the loue of his owne subiectes. Vaschus at this tyme fell into a vehement feuer, by reason of excesse of labour, immoderate watching, and hunger, insomuche that departing from thence, hee was fayne to bee borne vpon mens backs in sheetes of Gossampine cotton: likewise also many of his souldiers, whiche were so weake, that they coulde neyther goe nor stande. To this purpose they vsed the helpe of the inhabitantes, who shewed themselves in all thinges willing and obedient. Also some of them which were somewhat feeble and not able to trauallye, although not grievously sicke, were ledde by the armes, vntill they came to the dominion of king Comogrus, a great friende to the Christians, of whom we haue largely made mention before. At Vaschus comming thither, hee founde that the olde king was dead and his Sonne (whome wee so prayed for his wisdom) to raygne in his steade, and that he was baptized by the name of Charles. The pallace of this Commogrus, is situate at the foote of a steepe hyll well cultured, hauing towarde the South a plaine of twelue leagues in breadth, and very fruitfull. This playne they call Zauana. Beyond this, are the great and high mountaynes, whiche diuide the two seas, whereof wee haue spoken before. Out of the steepe hilles, springeth the ryuer Commogrus whiche runneth through the sayde playne to the hygh mountaynes, receiuing into his channell by their valleyes, all other ryuers, and so falleth into the South sea: It is distant from Dariena, about threescore and tenne leagues towarde the West. As our men therfore came to these parties, king Commogrus (otherwise called Charles by his Christian name) met them ioyfully, and entertayned them honourably, giuing them their fyll of pleasaunt meates and drinckes: Hee gaue also to Vaschus twentie pounce weight of wrought golde. Vaschus recompenced him with thinges whiche hee esteemed muche more, as axes, and sundry kindes of carpenters tooles: also a souldiers cloake, and fayre shurt, wrought with needle worke. By these giftes Comogrus thought himselfe to bee halfe a God among his borderers. Vaschus at his departing from hence, earnestly charged Comogrus, and the other kinges, to remayne faithfull and obedient to the Christian king of Castile, if they desired to liue in peace and quietnesse, and that they shoulde hereafter more diligently applie themselves to the geathering of golde, to bee sent to the great Christian Tiba (that is) king: Declaring further, that by this meanes, they shoulde both gette them and their posteritie a patrone and defender against their enemies, and also obtayne great abundance of our thinges. These affayres thus happily atchieued, hee went forward on his voyage to the pallace of king Poncha, where he founde foure yong men, which were come from Dariena, to certifie him that there were certayne shippes come from Hispaniola laden with victualles, and other necessities. Wherefore taking with him twentie of his most lustie soldiers, he made hast to Dariena, with long iorneyes: leauing the residue behind him, to followe at their leysure. He writeth, that he came to Dariena the xiii. Ca. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his letter is: From Dariena, the iiii. day of March. He writeth in the same letter, that he had many sore conflictes & that he was neyther yet wounded, or lost any of his men in the battayle: and therefore in all his large letter, there is not one leafe without thanks giuing to almighty God for his deliury, and preservation from so many imminent perils. He attempted no enterpryse, or tooke in hand any voyage, without thinnocation of God and his holy saintes. Thus was Vaschus Balboa of a violent Goliah, turned into Heliseus, and from Anteus to Hercules, the conqueror of monsters. Being therefore thus turned from

M m 2

a rashe

Tokens of great plenty of golde.

Feeblenesse of hunger and watching.

The river Comogrus.

Vaschus returneth to Dariena.

The good fortune of Vaschus.

O flatterynge
fortune, looke
his death in the
booke of the
Iland lately
found.

The earth is
our general
mother.

The court of
infernal Pluto.

Marchantes.

The fiercenesse
of the Canibales.

Our duty to
God, and na-
tural love to
mankind.

The office of
Christian
rulers.
The harvest is
great.

The fourth
nauigation of
Colonus the
Admirall.

a rashe royster, to a politike and descret capytayne, he was iudged worthy to bee aduanced to great honour: By reason whereof, hee was both receiued into the Kinges fauour, and thereupon created the generall or Lieutenaunt of the Kinges armie in those Regions. Thus muche haue I gathered both by the letters of certayne my faithfull friends being in Dariena, and also by worde of mouth of such as came lately from thence. If your holynessee desire to knowe what I thinke herein, surely by such thinges as I haue seene, I beleeue these thinges to be true: euen so the order and agreeing of Vaschus and his companions warrelike letters, seeme to confirme the same. The Spanyarde therefore shall not neede hereafter, with vndermining the earth with intollerable labour, to break the bones of our mother, and enter many myles into her bowell-s, and with innumerable daungers cut in sunder whole mountaynes to make away to the court of infernall Pluto, to bring from thence wicked golde, the seed of innumerable mischieues, without the whiche, notwithstanding wee may nowe scarcely leade a happie lyfe, sith iniquitie hath so preuailed, and made vs slaues to that, wherof we are Lordes by nature: The Spanyardes (I say) shall not neede with such trauayles and difficultie, to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but shall finde it plentifully, in maner in the vpper crust of the earth or in the sandes of ryuers dried vp by the heate of sommer, onely washing the earth softly from the same, and shall with like facilitie gather plentie of pearles. Certaynly the reuerent antiquitie (by all the Cosmographers assent) obtained not so great a benefite of nature, nor yet aspired to the knowledge hereof, because there came neuer a man before out of our knowne world, to these vnknowne nations, at the least with a power of men by force of armes, in manner of conquest: whereas likewise nothing can bee gotten here, forasmuch as these nations are for the most part seuered defenders of their patrimonies, and cruel to straungers, in no conditiō admitting them otherwise than by conquest especially the fierce Canibales or Caribes. For these wylie hunters of men, giue themselves to none other kinde of exercise, but onely to manhunting, and tyllage, after their maner. At the comming therefore of our menne into their regions, they looke as surely to haue them fall into their snares, as if they were hartes or wilde bores: and with no lesse confidence, licke their lippes secretly, in hope of their praye. If they gette the vpper hande, they eat them greedily: if they mystrust themselves to be the weaker parte, they trust to their feete, and flee swifter then the winde. Agayne, if the matter be tryed on the water, aswell the women as the men can dyue and swimme, as though they had bene euer brought vp and fedde in the water. It is no maruayle therefore, if the large tract of these regions haue bin hitherto vnknowne. But nowe sith it hath pleased God to discover the same in our time, it shall become vs to shewe our naturall loue to mankind, and dutie to God, to endeauour our selues to bring to them ciuilitie and true religion, to the increase of Christes flocke, to the confusion of Infidels and the Deuill their father, who delighteth in our destruction, as hee hath done from the beginning. By the good successe of these first fruites, our hope is that the Christian religion shall stretch forth her armes very farre, whiche thing shoulde the sooner come to passe, if all men to their power, especially Christian princes (to whom it chiefly perteyneth) woulde putte their handes to the plough of the Lordes vineyarde: The haruest surely is great, but the workemen are but fewe. As wee haue sayde at the beeginning, your holynessee shal hereafter nourish many myriades of broodes of chykens vnder your winges. But let vs nowe returne to speake of Beragua, being the West side of Vraba, and first found by Colonus the Admirall, then vnfortunatly gouerned by Diego Nicuesa, and now left in maner desolate, with the other large regions of those prouinces, brought from their wilde and beastly rudenesse, to ciuilitie and true religion.

The fourth Chapter of the thirde Decade.

I Was determined (most holy father) to haue proceeded no further herin, but that one fiery sparke, yet remaining in my mind, would not suffer me to cease. Whereas I haue therefore declared how Beragua was first found by Colonus, me thinke I should comit a hainous crime if I shoulde defraud the man of the due commendations of his trauayles, of his cares and troubles, and finally of the dangers & perils which he susteyned in that nauigation.

uigation. Therefore in the yeere of Christ 1502. in the 6. day of the Ides of May, he hoysed vp his sayles, and departed from the Ilands of Gades, with foure ships, of fiftie or threescore tunne a peece, with a hundred, threescore, and ten men, and came with prosperous winde to the Ilandes of Canarie, within fve dayes following. From thence arryuing the 16. day at the Ilande of Dominica, beeing the chiefe habitation of the Canibales, he sayled from Dominica to Hispaniola in fve other dayes. Thus within the space of 26. dayes, with prosperous winde, and by the swift fall of the Ocean from the East to the West, hee sayled from Spayne to Hispaniola, whiche course is counted of the mariners, to be no lesse then a thousand and two hundred leagues. Hee taryed but a while in Hispaniola, whether it were willingly, or that hee were so admonysht of the Vice Roy. Directing therefore his voyage from thence toward the West, leauing the Ilandes of Cuba and Iamaica on his right hande toward the North, he writeth that he chaunced vppon an Ilande more southwarde then Iamaica, which the inhabitantes call Guanassa, so flourishing and fruitefull, that it might seeme an earthly Paradyse. Coasting along by the shores of this Ilande, hee mette two of the Canoes, or boates of those prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked slaues against the streame. In these boates was carryed a ruler of the Ilande, with his wife and children, all naked. The slaues seeing our men alande, made signes to them with proud countenance in their maisters name, to stand out of the way, and threatned them, if they woulde not giue place. Their simpless is such, that they neyther feared the multitude, or power of our men, or the greatnesse and straungenesse of our shypes. They thought that our men woulde haue honoured their maister with like reuerence as they did. Our menne hadde intelligence at the length, that this ruler was a great marchant, which came to the marte from other coastes of the Iland: for they exercise buying and selling by exchange with their confines. Hee had also with him good store of such ware as they stande in neede of, or take pleasure in; as laton belles, rasers, kniues, and hatchettes made of a certayne sharpe yellowe bright stone, with handles of a strong kinde of wood: also many other necessarie instruments with kytchen stuffe, and vesselles for all necessarie vses: likewise sheetes of Gossampine cotton, wrought of sundry colours. Our men tooke him prysoner, with all his familie, but Colonus commaunded him to be loosed shortly after, and the greatest parte of his goods to be restored, to winne his friendshyppe. Beeing heere instructed of a lande lying further towarde the South, hee tooke his voyage thither. Therefore little more then ten myles distant from hence, he found a large land, which the inhabitants called Quiriquetana, but he named it Ciamba. When he went alande, and commaunded his chaplaine to say masse on the sea bankes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitants flocked thither, simple and without feare, bringing with them plentie of meate and freshe water, marueling at our menne, as they had beene some straunge myracle. When they had presented their giftes, they went somewhat backwarde, and made lowe curtesie after their manner, bowing their heades and bodies reuerently. He recompenced their gentlenesse, rewarding them with other of our thinges, as counters, braslettes, and garlandes of glasse, and counterfeit stones, looking glasses, needelles, and pynnes, with such other trashe, whiche seemed vnto them precious marchandize. In this great tracte, there are two regions, whereof the one is called Tuia, and the other Maia. Hee writeth, that all that lande is very faire and wholesome, by reason of the excellent temperatnesse of the ayre: And that it is inferiour to no lande in fruitefull grounde, beeing partly full of mountaynes, and partly large playnes: also replenished with many goodly trees, wholesome hearbes, continuing greene, and flourishing all the whole yeere. It beareth also very many holly trees, and pyneapple trees. Also vii. kindes of date trees, whereof some are fruitefull, and some barren. It bringeth forth likewise of it selfe Pelgoras, and wild vines, laden with grapes, euen in the woodes among other trees. He sayth furthermore, that there is such abundaunce of other pleasant and profitable frutes that they passe not of vines. Of one of those kindes of date trees they make certaine long and broade swordes, and dartes. These regions beare also Gossampine trees here and there commonly in the woodes. Likewise Mirobalanes of sundry kyndes, as those which the phisitians call Emblicos, and Chebulos: Maizium also, Iucca, Ages, and Battatas,

From Spayne
to Hispaniola
a thousand &
two hundred
leagues.

Simple people.

A great
marchant.

Gentle people.

The region of
Tuia & Maia.

Seven kindes
of date trees.
Wild vines.

Mirobalanes.

Birdes and
foules.

People of
goodly stature.

They paynt
their bodies.

The swift
course of the
sea from the
East to the
West.

Fresh water in
the sea.

Fayre ryuers.
Great reeds.
Great Tortoises.

Quatuor
temperata.

The region of
Quicuris.

Battatas, like vnto those which we haue said before to be founde in other regions in these coastes. The same nourisheth also Lions, Tygers, Hartes, Roes, Goates, and dyuers other beastes. Lykewise sundry kindes of byrdes and foules: among the whiche they keepe onely them to franke and feede, which are in colour, biggenesse, and tast, much like vnto our Pehennes. He sayth that the inhabitantes are of hygh and goodly stature, well lymmed and portioned, both men and women, couering their priuie partes with syne breeches of gossampine cotton, wrought with diuers colours. And that they may seeme the more comely and beautifull (as they take it) they paynt their bodies redde and blacke, with the iuyce of certayne apples, whiche they plant in their gardens for the same purpose. Some of them paynt their whole bodies, some but parte, and other some drawe the portitures of hearbes, floures, and knottes, euery one as seemeth best to his owne phantasie. Their language differeth vterly from theirs of the llandes neere about them. From these regions, the waters of the sea ran with as full a course towards the West, as if it had bene the fall of a swift ryuer. Neuerthelesse he determined to searche the East partes of this lande, reuoluing in his minde that the regions of Paria & Os Draconis with other coasts founde before towards the East, should bee neere there about, as indeede they were. Departing therefore from the large region of Quiriquetana, the xiii. day of the Calendes of September when he had sayled thirtie leagues, he founde a ryuer, within the mouth whereof he drewe fresh water in the sea: where also the shore was so cleane without rockes, that hee founde grounde euery where, where he might aptly cast anker. He writeth that the swift course of the Ocean was so vehement & contrary, that in the space of fourtie dayes, he coulede scarcely sayle threescore and tenne leagues, and that with much difficultie, with many fetches and compassinges, finding himselfe to bee sometymes repulsed and driuen farre backe by the violent course of the sea, when hee woulde haue taken lande towards the euening, least perhappes wanderyng in vnkowne coastes in the darknesse of the night, he might be in danger of shippewracke. Hee wryteth, that in the space of eight leagues, he found three great and fayre ryuers, vppon the bankes whereof there grewe reedes bygger then a mannes thygh. In these ryuers was also great plentie of fishe, and great Tortoysses: Lykewise in many places, multitudes of Crocodiles lying in the sande, and yaning to take the heate of the sunne: beside, diuers other kindes of beastes, whereunto he gaue no names. He sayeth also that the soyle of that lande is verie diuers and variable, being somewhere stonie and full of rough and craggie promontories, or poyntes reaching into the sea, and in other places, as fruitfull as may bee. They haue also diuers Kinges and rulers. In some places they call a King Caciuc: in other places they call him Quebi, and somewhere Tiba. Such as haue beehauned themselves valyantly in the warres agaynste their enemies, and haue their faces full of scarres, they call Cupras, and honour them as the antiquitie did the gods which they called Heroes, supposed to bee the soules of such menne, as in their life time excelled in vertue and noble actes. The common people they call Chiui, and a manne, they call Homem. When they say in their language, take manne, they say Hoppa home. After this, hee came to another ryuer apt to beare great shippes, before the mouth whereof, lye foure small llandes, full of flourishing and fruitfull trees: these llandes he named Quatuor temperata. From hence, sayling towards the East for the space of xiii. leagues, still agaynst the violent course of the water, he found twelue other small llandes, in the which, because he founde a new kind of fruits, much like vnto our Lemonds, he called them Limonares. Wanderyng yet further the same way for the space of xii. leagues, hee founde a great haue entring into the lande, after the manner of a gulf, the space of three leagues, and in maner as broad, into the which fell a great ryuer. Here was Nicuesa lost afterwarde, when he sought Beragua, by reason wherof, they called it Rio de los perdidos, that is, the ryuer of the lost men. Thus Colonius the Admirall yet further continuing his course agaynst the furie of the sea, founde manie hygh mountaines, and horrible valleyes, with dyuers ryuers and hauens, from all the which (as he sayth) proceeded sweete sauours, greatly recreatyng and comforting nature: insomuche that in all this long tract, there was not one of his men diseased, vntill he came to a region which the inhabitants call Quicuris, in the which is the haue called

called Can
the region
habitan
condition
purpose,
When our
and desire
shippe, g
thereby, l
stode not
shore, and
esteeme i
being virg
might take
of their co
a certayne
cutte their
the fore p
rowles, as
he decked
likewise a
refused th
that by le
considered
or ouerflo
euen as th
haue lately
about. H
euen in th
their brau
spring ou
cessiue,
of vines,
booke of
lande, bu
the coaste
before: a
beast is o
lyueth in
vpon the
to and fr
though sl
wounded
in so m
cutting o
where vi
certayne
sea side:
In this
selues, t
brystels,
The Mo
arme, re

ions in these
dyuers other
y keepe onely
like vnto our
lymmed and
nes of gossam-
re comely and
the iuyce of
Some of them
s of hearbes,
their language
regions, the
ne the fall of a
nde, reuoluing
de before to-
ting therefore
mber when he
we fresh water
unde grounde
course of the
oulde scarcely
y fetches and
backe by the
ing, least per-
t be in danger
three great and
mannes thygh
wise in many
e heate of the
s. He sayeth
re stonie and
n other places
places they call
Such as haue
ue their faces
ods which they
ne excelled in
me, they call
e. After this
rof, lye foure
Quatuor tem-
ill agaynst the
h, because he
n Limonares,
a great haue
and in maner
arde, when he
e ryuer of the
st the furie of
rs and hauens,
ng and com-
men diseased,
is the haue
called

called Cariai, named Mirobalanus by the Admirall, because the Mirobalane trees are native in the regions thereof. In this haue of Cariai, there came about two hundred of the inhabitants to the sea side, with euerie of them three or foure darts in their handes, yet of condition gentle enough, and not refusing straungers. Their comming was for none other purpose, then to knowe what this newe nation meant, or what they brought with them. When our menne hadde giuen them signes of peace, they came swimming to the shyppes, and desired to barter with them by exchange. The Admirall, to allure them to friendship, gaue them many of our thinges: But they refused them, suspecting some desceit thereby, because hee would not receiue theirs. They wrought all by signes: for one vnderstoode not a woorde of the others language. Such giftes as were sent them, they left on the shore, and would take no part thereof. They are of suche ciuilitie and humanitie, that they esteeme it more honorable to giue, then to take. They sent our men two young women, being virgines, of commendable fauour, and goodly stature, signifying vnto them, that they might take them away with them, if it were their pleasure. These women, after the manner of their country, were couered from their ancles somewhat about their priuie partes, with a certayne cloth made of gossampine cotton, but the men are al naked. The women vse to cutte their hayre: but the men let it growe on the hinder part of their head, and cutte it on the fore part. Their long hayre, they binde vppe with fylletes, and winde it in sundry rowles, as our maydes are accustomed to doe. The Virgins which were sent to the Admirall, he decked in fayre apparell, and gaue them many giftes, and sent them home agayne. But likewise all these rewardes and apparell they left vppon the shore, because our men had refused their giftes. Yet tooke hee two men away with him (and those verie willingly) that by learning the Spanishe tongue, hee might afterwarde vse them for interpretours. He considered that the tractes of these coastes were not greatly troubled with vehement motions, or ouerflowinges of the sea, forasmuche as trees growe in the sea not farre from the shore, euen as they doe vpon the bankes of ryuers: the whiche thing also other do affirme, which haue latelier searched these coastes, declaring that the sea ryseth and falleth but litle thereof. He sayth furthermore, that in the prospect of this land, there are trees engendred euen in the sea, which after that they are growen to any height, bend downe the toppes of their branches into the grounde: whiche embracing them, causeth other branches to spring out of the same and take roote in the earth, bringing forth trees in their kinde successiuelly, as did the first root from whence they hadde their originall, as doe also the settes of vines, when onely both the endes thereof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth booke of his naturall hystorie maketh mention of suche trees describing them to bee on the lande, but not in the sea. The Admirall writeth also, that the like beastes are engendred in the coastes of Cariai, as in other prouinces of these regions, and such as we haue spoken of before: Yet that there is one founde here in nature muche differyng from the other. This beast is of the bygnesse of a great Monkey, but with a tayle much longer and bigger, it lyueth in the woodes, and remoueth from tree to tree in this manner: Hanging by the tayle vpon the branche of a tree, and gathering strength by swaying her body twyse or thryse to and fro, shee casteth her selfe from branch to branche, and so from tree to tree, as though shee flew. An archer of ours hurt one of them, who, perceiuing her selfe to bee wounded, leapt downe from the tree, and fiercely set on him whiche gaue her the wounde, in so much that he was faine to defend himselfe with his swoorde. And thus by chauce, cutting of one of her armes, he tooke her, and with much a do brought her to the shyppes, where within a while shee waxed tame. While she was thus kept and bounde with cheynes, certayne other of our hunters had chased a wilde Bore out of the maryshes neere vnto the sea side: for hunger and desire of flesh, caused them to take double pleasure in hunting. In this meane time other which remayned in the shyppes, going a lande to recreate themselves, tooke this Monkie with them, who assoone as she had espied the Bore, set vppe her brystels, and made towarde him. The Bore likewise shooke his bristels, and whet his teeth. The Monkie furiously invaded the Bore, wrapping her tayle about his body, & with her arme, reserued of her victourer, held him so fast about the throte, that he was sulli-

The haue of Cariai or Mirobalanus.

Ciuile and humane people.

Trees growing in the sea after a strange sort.

Plinie.

A strange kind of Monkeys.

A Monkey fighteth with a man.

A conflict betweene a Monkey and a wilde Bore.

cate.

The bodies of
kings dried and
reserued.

cate. These people of Cariai, use to drie the dead bodies of their princes vpon
hurdels, and so reserue them inuolued in the leaues of trees. As he went forward,
about twentie leagues from Cariai, he found a gulfe of suche largenesse, that it con-
tayned xii. leagues in compasse, in the mouth of this gulfe was foure litle llandes,
so neere together, that they made a safe haven to enter into the gulfe: This gulfe
is the haven which wee sayde before to bee called Cerabaro of the inhabitants. But
they haue nowe learned, that only the land of the one side therof, lying on the right hand
at the enterieng of the gulfe, is called by that name, but that on the left side, is called
Aburema. Hee sayth that all this gulfe is full of fruitfull llandes, well replenished with
goodly trees, and the grounde of the sea to bee very cleane without rockes, and commodious
to cast anker: likewise the sea of the gulfe to haue great abundance of fische, and the lande
on both the sides to bee inferiour to none in fruitfulnessse. At his first arryuing, he espied
two of the inhabitants, hauing cheynes about their neckes, made of ouches (whiche they
call Guauines) of base golde, artificially wrought in the formes of Eagles, and Lions, with
diuers other beastes, and fowles. Of the two Cariaians whiche he brought with him from
Cariai, he was enformed that the regions of Cerabaro and Aburema were rich in gold, and
that the people of Cariai haue al their gold from thence for exchange of other of their things.
They tolde him also, that in the same regions there are fise villages, not farre from the sea
side, whose inhabitants applie themselves onely to the gathering of gold. The names of
these villages are these, Chirara, Puren, Chitaza, Iureche, Atamea. All the men of the
prouince of Cerabaro, go naked, & are painted with diuers colours. They take great plea-
sure in wearyng garlandes of floures, and crownes made of the clawes of Lions & Tygers.
The women couer onely their priuie partes with a fyllet of gossampine cotton. Departing
from hence, & coasting still by the same shore for the space of xviii. leagues, he came to
another riuer, where he espied about three hundred naked men in a company. When they
saw the shippes drawe neare about the land, they cryed out aloud, with cruell countenances,
shaking their wooden swoordes, and hurling darts, taking also water in their mouthes, and
spouting the same against our men: whereby they seemed to insinuate, that they would
receiue no condition of peace, or haue ought to doe with them. Here he commaunded cer-
tayne pieces of ordinaunce to be shot of towarde them, yet so to ouershoote them, that none
might bee hurt thereby: For hee euer determined to deale quietly & peaceably with these
newe nations. At the noyse therefore of the gunnes, and sight of the fire, they fell downe
to the grounde, and desired peace. Thus enterieng into further friendshippe, they ex-
chaunged cheynes and ouches of golde, for glasses, and hawkes belles, and such other mar-
chandies. They vse drummes or tymbrels made of the shelles of certayne sea fishes, where-
with they encourage themselues in the warres. In this tracte are these seuen ryuers, Acateba,
Quareba, Zobroba, Aiaguitin, Vrida, Duribha, Beragua, in all the whiche, golde is founde.
They defende themselues agaynst rayne and heate with certayne great leaues of trees, in
the steade of clokes. Departing from hence, he searched the coastes of Ebetere, and Embigar,
into the whiche fall the goodly ryuers of Zohoran and Cubigar: And here ceaseth the
plentie and fruitfulnessse of golde, in the tract of fiftie leagues, or there about. From
hence, onely 3. leagues distant, is the rocke which in the vnfortunate discourse of Nicuesa
we sayd was called of our men Pignonem, but of the inhabitants the Region is called Vibba.
In this tract also, about syxe leagues from thence, is the haven whiche Colonius called Portus
Bellus (wherof we haue spoken before) in the regiõ which the inhabitants call Xaguaguara.
This region is very populous but they goe all naked. The king is paynted with blacke
coloures, but all the people with redde. The king and seuen of his noblemen, had euery
of them a litle plate of gold hanging at their nosethrylles, downe vnto their ltypes: and
this they take for a comely ornament. The men inclose their priuy members in a shell, and
the women couer theirs with a fyllet of gossampine cotton, tyed about their loynes. In the
gardens they nourishe a fruite much like the nut of a pine tree, the which (as wee haue sayde
in another place) groweth on a shrubbe, much like vnto an hartichoke, but the fruite is much
softer, and meate for a king: also certayne trees whiche beare gourdes, whereof wee haue
spoken

Crownes of
beasts clawes.

Spightfull peo-
ple.

Guns make
peace.

Seuen golden
ryuers.

Note where the
plenty of gold
endeth.

The th

spoken
Croco
very
ambas
Egypt
Crocod
with th
of necr
trarie a
putrifie
of the v
wormes
Egypt,
somewh
callet
sea cou
the sea
Hiebra
harbor
because
Beragu
let vs
Hiebra
shyp be
Region
with a
also sig
men, co
and tha
ryuer,
The kin
for our
of the l
foote, f
to be r
that lar
among
ground
out the
inhabit
uenien
straung
cries a
were s
proach
fought
A man
our me
whiche
conter
moste
shotte
they r
vot

spoken before : this tree they call Hibueru. In these coastes they mette sometimes with Crocodiles lying on the sandes, the whiche when they fledde, or tooke the water, they left a very sweete sauoure beehinde them, sweeter then muske or Castoreum. When I was sent ambassadour for the Catholike King of Castile, to the Soltane of Babylon, or Alcayre in Egypt, the inhabitantes neere vnto the riuier of Nilus tolde mee the like of their female Crocodiles, affirming furthermore, that the fat or shewet of them, is equall in sweetnesse with the pleasaunt gummes of Arabie. But the Admirall was nowe at the length enforced of necessitie to depart from hence, aswell for that he was no longer able to abide the contrarye and violent course of the water, as also that his shyppes were dayly more and more putrified, and eaten through with certaine wormes, which are engendred of the warmenesse of the water in all those tractes, neere vnto the Equinoctiall lyne. The Venetians call these wormes Bissas. The same are also engendred in two hauens of the citie of Alexandria in Egypt, and destroy the shyppes if they lye long at anker. They are a cubite in length, and somewhat more, not passing the quantitie of a finger in bignes. The Spanish maryner calleth this pestilence Broma. Colonus therefore, whom before the great monsters of the sea could not feare, now fearing this Broma, being also sore vexed with the contrary fal of the sea, directed his course with the Ocean toward the West, and came first to the ryuer Hiebra, distant onely two leagues from the ryuer of Beragua, because that was comodious to harborowe great ships. This region is named after the ryuer and is called Beragua the lesse, because both the riuers are in the dominion of the king whiche inhabiteth the region of Beragua. But what chaunced vnto him in this voyage on the right hande and on the left, let vs nowe declare. While therfore Colonus the Admirall remained yet in the ryuer Hiebra, he sent Bartholomeus Colonus his brother, and Lieutenaut of Hispaniola, with the shyp boates, and threescore and eyght men, to the riuier of Beragua, where the king of the Region, beeing naked, and paynted after the manner of the countrey, came towardes them, with a great multitude of men waiting on him, but all vnarmed and without weapons, giuing also signes of peace. When hee approached neerer, and entred communication with our men, certayne of his gentlemen, neerest about his person, remembering the maiestie of a king, and that it stoode not with his honour to bargayne standing, tooke a great stone out of the ryuer, washing and rubbing it very decently, and so put it vnder him with humble reuerence. The king thus sitting, seemed with signes and tokens, to insinuate that it should be lawfull for our men to search and viewe all the riuers within his dominion. Wherefore the sixt day of the Ides of February, leauing his boates with certayne of his company, he went by lande on foote, from the bankes of Beragua, vntill he came to the ryuer of Duraba, which he affirmeth to be richer in golde then either Hiebra or Beragua: For golde is engendred in all ryuers of that land, insomuch that among the rootes of trees growing by the bankes of the ryuers, and among the stones left of the water, and also wheresoeuer they dygged a hole or pyt in the grounde, not past the depth of a handefull and a halfe, they founde the earth, being taken out thereof, myxte with golde: whereupon he determined to fasten his foote there, and to inhabite. Which thing the people of the countrey perceiuing, and smelling what inconuenience and mischief might thereof ensue to their countrey, if they should permitte straungers to plant their inhabitations there, assembled a great armie, and with horrible out-cries assailed our menne (who had now begun to build houses) so desperately, that they were scarcely able for to abide the first brunte. These naked Barbarians at their first approache, vsed onely slynges and dartes: but when they came neerer to hande strokes, they fought with their wooden swordes, whiche they call Michanas, as we haue sayde before. A man woulde not thinke what great malice and wrath was kindled in their heartes agaynst our men, and with what desperate myndes they fought for the defence of their libertie, whiche they more esteeme then life or riches: For they were nowe so void of all feare, and contemning death, that they neyther feared long bowes or crosse bowes, nor yet (which is moste to be marueyled) were any thing discouraged at the terrible noyse of the gunnes, shotte of from the shyppes. They retyred once: but shortly after encreasing their number, they returned more fiercely then at the first. They would haue bin contented to haue

Crocodiles of
sweete sauour.
Alcayre or Ba-
bylon in Egypt.

Shyppes eaten
with wormes.

Alexandria in
Egypt.

How the king
of Beragua en-
tertaineth the
Lieutenant.

Their reuerence
to their king.

Slynges and
dartes.

Libertie more
esteemed then
riches.

The Spaniards
are driven to
flight.

A miserable
cave.

Necessitie hath
no laws.

Howe farre life is
to be esteemed.

Sanctus Domi-
nicus.

Landes found
by Colonus.

Temperat re-
gions and hol-
some aire.

Expert miners.

A godly nature
in golde.

received our men friendly as strangers, but not as inhabitants. The more instant that our men were to remayne, so much the greater multitude of borderers flocked together daily, disturbing them both night & day, sometimes on the one side, and sometimes on the other. The shippes lying at anker neare vnto the shore, warded them on the backe halfe: but at the length they were fayne to forsake this lande, and returne backe the same way by the whiche they came. Thus with much difficulty & daunger they came to the Iland of Iamaica, lying on the South side of Hispaniola & Cuba, with their shippes as full of holes as sieues, and holes so eaten with wormes, as though they had been bored through with wimbles. The water entred so fast at the riftes and holes, that yf they had not with the painful labour of their handes emptied the same as fast, they were like to haue perished: where as yet by this meanes they arriued at Iamaica, although in manner halfe dead. But their calamitie ceased not heere: For as fast as their shippes leaked, their strength diminished, so that they were no longer able to keepe them from sinking. By reason whereof, falling into the handes of the Barbarians, and inclosed without hope of departure, they led their liues for the space of tenne monethes among the naked people, more miserable then euer did Achemenides among the Giautes, called Ciclopes, rather liuing, then being either contented or satisfied with the strange meates of that Ilande, and that onely at suche times as pleased the Barbarians to giue them part of theirs. The deadly enmitie and malice whiche these barbarous kinges beare one against another, made greatly with our men: For at suche times as they attempted warre against their borderers, they woulde sometimes giue our men part of their bread, to aide them. But how miserable and wretched a thing it is to liue onely with bread gotten by begging, your holinesse maye easily coniecture: especially where al other accustomed foode is lacking, as wine, oile, fleshe, butter, cheese, and milke, wherewith the stomackes of our people of Europe haue euer been nourished, euen from their cradels. Therefore as necessitie is subiect to no law: so doth it enforce men to attempt desperate aduentures, and those the sooner, which by a certaine nobilitie of nature do no further esteeme life then it is ioined with some felicitie. Bartholomeus Colonus therfore, intending rather to proue what God woulde do with him and his companions in these extremities, then any longer to abide the same, commaunded Diegus Mendez his stewarde, with two guides of that Ilande, whome he had hired with promises of great rewardes at their returne, to enter into one of their Canoaes, and take their voiage to Hispaniola. Being thus tossed on the sea to and fro from rocke to rocke, by reason of the shortnesse and narrownesse of the Canoa, they arriued at the length at the last corner of Hispaniola, being distant from Iamaica fourtie leagues. Here his guides departing from him, returned againe to Colonus, for the rewardes whiche he had promised them: but Diegus Mendez went on forward on foote, vntill he came to the citie called Sanctus Dominicus, being the chiefe & head citie of the Ilande. The officers and rulers of Hispaniola, being enfourmed of the matter, appointed him two shippes, wherewith he returned to his maister and companions. As he founde them, so came they to Hispaniola, very feeble, and in maner naked. What chanced of them afterwarde, I knowe not as yet. Let vs now therefore leaue these particulars, and speake somewhat more of generals. In al those tracts, whiche we saide here before to haue been founde by Colonus the Admiral, both he him selfe writeth, and all his companions of that voiage confesse, that the trees, hearbes, and fruites, are flourishing and greene all the whole yeere, and the aire so temperate & wholesome, that of al his companie there neuer fel one man sicke, nor yet were vexed either with extreme colde or heate, for the space of fiftie leagues, from the great hauen of Cerabaro, to the riuers of Hiebra and Beragua. Thinhabitantes of Cerabaro, and the nations whiche are betwixt that & the saide riuers, applie not them selues to the geathering of golde, but only at certaine times of the yeere, and are very expert and cunning herein, as are our miners of siluer and iron. They knowe by long experience in what places golde is most abundantly engendred: as by the colour of the water of the riuers, and such as fall from the mountaines, and also by the colour of the earth and stones. They beleue a certaine godly nature to be in golde, forasmuche as they neuer geather it, except they vse certaine religious expiations or purging, as to abstaine

The third

absteine
during a
and die
to the Su
situation
high mo
East into
spoken b
they shou
Adriatic
they saile
tugales,
and to th
both nee
place sm
rough, fu
and also
The ridge
the moun
cloudes,
tude of th
these regi
miles in h
taines the
Genoa, or
Ianus. F
it taketh
wee see th
and Scithi
there with
within th
Euzinus,
on the let
riuer of G
sea, beyo
that South
in the co
passe the
Tanais wi
opinion,
said two
firme lan
muche of
same. V
our Ocea
which fir
Europe a
nature, th
with nar
passe fro
Beragua
region, w
shall gra

absteine from women, and all kindes of pleasures, and delicate meates and drinke, during all the time that their golden harvest lasteth. They suppose that men do naturally live and die as other beastes do, and therefore honour none other thing as God: Yet do they pray to the Sunne, and honour it when it riseth. But let vs now speake of the mountaines, and situation of these landes. From all the sea bankes of these regions, exceeding great and high mountaines are seene towarde the South, yet reaching by a continual tract from the East into the West, by reason wherof, I suppose that the two great seas (wherof I haue spoken largely before) are deuided with these mountaines, as it were with bulwarkes, least they shoulde ioine and repugne, as Italie diuideth the sea called Tirrhenum, from the sea Adriatique, whiche is nowe commonly called the gulfes of Venice. For whiche way so euer they sailed from the point called Promontorium, S. Augustini (whiche pertaineth to the Portugales, and prospecteth against the sea Atlantike) euen vnto Vraba and the hauen Cerabaro, and to the furthest landes founde hitherto westward, they had euer great mountaines in sight, both neere hande, and also farre of, in all that long rase. These mountaines where in some place smooth, pleasant, and fruitfull, full of goodly trees and hearbes, and somewhere high, rough, full of rockes, & barren, as chaunceth in the famous mountaines of Taurus in Asia, and also in diuers coastes of our mountaines of Apennini, and such other of like bignes. The ridges also of these mountaines are diuided with goodly and faire vallies. That part of the mountaines which includeth the limites of Beragua, is thought to be higher then the cloudes, insomuch that (as they say) the tops of them can seldome bee seene for the multitude of thicke cloudes whiche are beneath the same. Colonius the Admiral, the first finder of these regions, affirmeth that the toppes of the mountaines of Beragua, are more then fiftie miles in height. He saith furthermore, that in the same region at the rootes of the mountaines the way is open to the South sea, & compareth it as it were betwene Venice and Genua, or Ianua, as the Genues will haue it called, whiche fable that their citie was builded of Ianus. He affirmeth also, that this land reacheth forth toward the South, and that from hence it taketh the beginning of breadth: like as from the Alpes, out of the narrowe thigh of Italie, wee see the large and maine landes of Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie, to the Samaritans and Scythians, euen vnto the mountaines and rockes of Riphea, and the frozen sea, & embrace there with, as with a continuall bonde, al Thracia, and Grecia, with all that is included within the promontorie or point of Malea, and Hellespontus south ward, and the sea Euzinus, and the marishes of Meotis in Scithia northward. The Admiral supposeth, that on the left hande, in sailing towarde the West, this lande is ioined to India, beyonde the riuer of Ganges, and that on the right hande towarde the North, it is extended to the frozen sea, beyonde the Hiperboreans and the North pole. So that both the sea (that is to meane that South sea which we said to bee founde by Vachus and our Ocean) shoulde ioine and meete in the corners of that lande, and that the waters of these seas do not onely inclose and compass the same without diuision, as Europe is inclosed with the seas of Hellespontus and Tanais with the frozen Ocean, and our sea of Tyrrhenum with the Spanishe seas: But in my opinion, the vehement course of the Ocean toward the West, doth signifie the let that the said two seas shoulde not so ioine together, but rather that that lande is adherent to the firme landes towarde the North, as we haue saide before. It shall suffice to haue saide thus muche of the length hereof: Let vs now therefore speake somewhat of the breadth of the same. We haue made mention before howe the South sea is diuided by narrowe limites from our Ocean, as it was proued by the experience of Vachus Nunnez and his companions, which first made open the way thither. But as diuersly the mountaines of our Alpes in Europe are somewhere narrowe and in some place brode: euen so, by the like prouidence of nature, this land in some part thereof reacheth farre in breadth, and is in other places coarcted with narrowe limites from sea to sea, with vallies also in some places, whereby men may passe from the one side to the other. Where we haue described the regions of Vraba and Beragua to be situate, these seas are diuided by small distaunce: Yet ought we to thinke the region, whiche the greates riuer of Maragnonus runneth through, to be very large, if we shall graunt Maragnonum to be a riuer and no sea, as the freshe waters of the same ought

Golden harvest.

Higher than
mountaines.

Tirrhenum is
nowe called
Tuscanes.

The mountaines
of Beragua
higher then the
cloudes.

Mountaines of
fiftie miles
height.

Ianus otherwise
called Iaphet the
son of Noe.

By this conie-
ture, the way
shoulde open to
Cathay or the
Hiperboreans.

Looks the nau-
igation of Ca-
bote, Decade. iii
lib. vi.

The great riuer
Maragnonus.



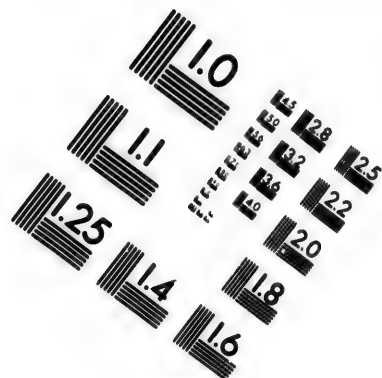
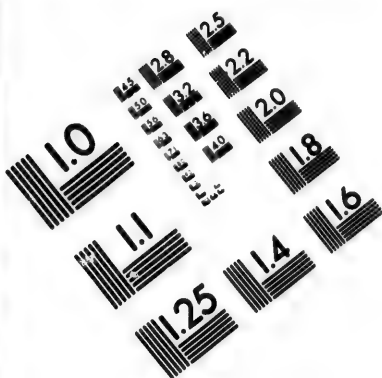
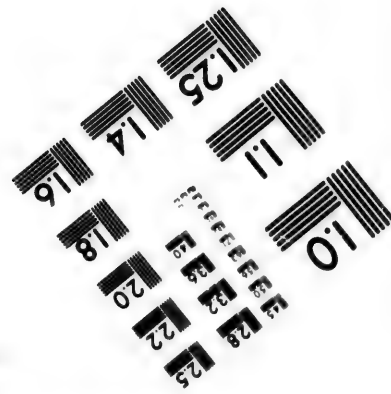
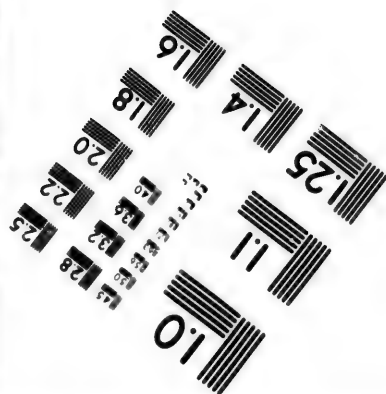
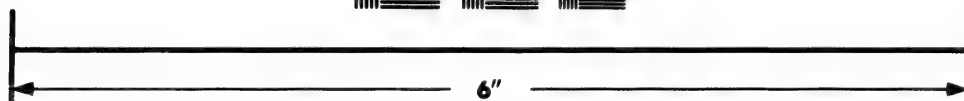
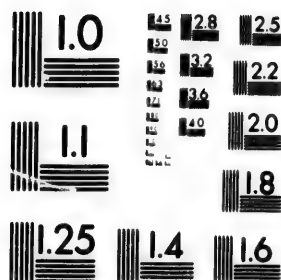


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

0
16
18
20
22
25
28
32
36

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20

The great riuer
Dabaiba, or
sancti Iohannis.

The ryuers haue
their increase
from the springs
of the moun-
taynes.
The ryuer of
Nilus in Egypt.
Maryshes and
desolate waies.

A superstitious
opinion of the
original of the
mountaynes of
Dabaiba.

Dragons and
Crocodiles in
the maryshes.

The hauen Ce-
rabaro.

Twentie golden
ryuers.

Precious stones.

A precious Dia-
mond of exceed-
ing bigenes.

Topasia.

to perswade vs. For in suche narrowe caues of the earth, there can be no swallowing gulfes of suche bignesse as to receiue or nourishe so great abundance of water. The like is also to be supposed of the great riuer of Dabaiba, whiche we saide to be from the corner of the gulfe of Vraba, in some place of fortie fathomes depth, & som wher fiftie: also three miles in breadth, and so to fall in to the sea. We must needes graunt, that the earth is brode there, by the which the riuer passeth from the high moutaines of Dabaiba from the East, and not from the West. They say that this ryuer consisteth and taketh his encrease of foure other ryuers, falling from the mountaynes of Dabaiba. Our men call this riuer Flumen S. Iohannis. They say also that from hence it falleth into the gulfe of Vraba by seuen mouthes, as doth the ryuer of Nilus into the sea of Egypt: Likewise that in the same region of Vraba, there are in some places narrowe streyghts, not passing fyfene leagues, and the same to bee sauage, and without any passage, by reason of diuers maryshes and desolate wayes, which the Latines call Lamas, but the Spanyardes according to their varietie call them Tremedales, Trampales, Cenegales Sumideros, and Zabondaderos. But before wee passe any further, it shall not bee greatly from our purpose to declare from whence these mountaynes of Dabaiba haue their name, according vnto the antiquities of the inhabitants. They sayde that Dabaiba was a womanne, of great magnanimitie and wisdom among their predecessours in olde time, whome in her life all the inhabitants of those prouinces did greatly reuerence, and beeing dead, gaue her diuine honour, and named the region after her name, beleueing that shee sendeth thunder and lightning, to destroy the fruites of the earth if shee bee angred, and to send plentie if shee be well pleased. This superstition hath bene perswaded them by a craftie kinde of men, vnder pretence of religion, to the intent that they might enioy suche giftes and offeringes as were brought to the place where shee was honoured. This is sufficient for this purpose. They say furthermore, that the maryshes of the narrow land, whereof we haue spoken, bring forth great plentie of Crocodiles, Dragons, Battes, and Gnats, being very hurtfull. Therefore whensoever they take any iourney toward the South, they goe out of the way toward the mountaynes, and eschewe the regions neere vnto those peryllous fennes or maryshes. Some thinke that there is a valley lying that way that the ryuer runneth, which our men call Rio de los Perdidos, that is, the ryuer of the lost men (so named by the misfortune which there befell to Nicuesa and his company) and not farre distaunt from the hauen Cerabaro, whiche diuideth those mountaynes toward the South. But let vs nowe finish this booke with a fewe other thinges worthie to be noted. They say therefore, that on the right hand and left hand from Dariena there are twentie ryuers, in all the whiche great plentie of golde is founde. Beeing demaunded what was the cause why they brought no greater abundance of golde from thence: they answered, that they lacked myners, and that the men which they tooke with them from Spayne thither, were not accustomed to labour, but for the most part brought vp in the warres. This land seemeth also to promise many precious stones: For beside those which I sayde to be founde neere vnto Cariai and Sancta Martha, one Andreas Morales, a pilot (who had trauayled those coastes with Iohannes de la Cossa while hee yet liued) hadde a precious Diamonde, which hee bought of a naked young man in the region of Cumana, in the prouince of Paria. This stone was as long as two ioyntes of a mans middle finger, and as bigge as the first ioynt of the thumbe, beeing also paynted on euery side, consisting of eight squares, perfectly fourmed by nature. They say that with this they made scarres in anylles and hammers, and brake the teeth of fyles, the stone remayning vnperished. The young man of Cumana, wore this stone about his necke among other ouches, & solde it to Andreas Moralis for fyue of our counterfeit stones, made of glasse of diuers colours, wherewith the ignorant young man was greatly delighted: They found also certaine Topases on the shore. But the estimation of golde was so farre entred into the heades of our men, that they had no regard to stones. Also the most parte of the Spanyardes, doe laugh them to scorne which vse to weare many stones, specially such as are common, iudging it to be an effeminate thing, & more meet for women then men. The noble men only, when they celebrate solemne marriages, or set forth any triumphes, weare cheynes of golde, beset with precious stones, & vse fayre appa-
rell

rell of silke, embrodered with golde, intermyxte with pearles and precious stones, and not at other times. They thinke it no lesse effeminate for men to smel of the sweete sauours of Arabie, and iudge him to be infected with some kinde of fylthy lechery, in whome they smell the sauour of muske or Castoreum. But like as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceiue the tree to be fruitfull, and by one fyshe taken in a ryuer, wee may knowe that fishe is engendred in the same: euen so, by a litle gold, and by one stone wee ought to consider that this land bringeth forth great plentie of golde, and precious stones. What they haue found in the porte of Sancta Martha, in the region of Cariai, when the whole nauie passed thereby vnder the gouernance of Petrus Arias, and his company, with certayne other of the kinges officers, I haue sufficiently declared in his place. To bee short therefore all thinges doe so flourish, growe, encrease, and prosper, that the last are euer better then the first. And surely to declare my opinion herein, whatsoever hath heretofore bin discouraged by the famous trauayles of Saturnus and Hercules, with such other whom the antiquitie for their heroical factes honoured as gods, seemeth but litle and obscure, if it be compared to the Spanyards victorious labours. Thus I bid your holinesse farewell, desiring you to certifye me howe you like these first fruites of the Ocean, that being encouraged with your exhortations, I may the gladlier, and with lesse tediousnesse, write such thinges as shall chauce hereafter.

The fifth Chapter of the thirde Decade.

ALL such liuing creatures, as vnder the circle of the moone bring forth any thing, are accustomed by the instinct of nature, as soone as they are deliuered of their birth, either to close vp y^e matrice, or at the least to be quiet for a space: But our most fruitiful Ocean and new world, engendreth & bringeth forth daily new birthes, whereby men of great wit, and especially suche as are studious of newe and marueylous thinges, may haue somewhat at hand wherewith to feed their mindes. Yf your holinesse doe aske to what purpose is all this: ye shall vnderstand, that I had scarcely finished the historie of such thinges as chaunced to Vaschus Nunnez and his companie in their voyage to the South sea, when sodenly there came newe letters from Petrus Arias the newe gouernour, whom the king had appoynted the yeere beefore with an armie of men and a nauie of ships to sayle to these newe landes. He signified by his letters, that hee with his nauie and company arryued all safely. Furthermore, Iohannes Cabedus (whom your holinesse at the request of the most catholike king hadde created Bishop of that prouince of Dariena) & three other of the chiefe officers ioyned in commission to be his assistantes, as Alphonsus de Ponte, Diegus Marques, and Iohannes de Taura, confirmed the same letters, and subscribed them with their names. The nauigation therefore of Petrus Arias, was in this maner. The day before the Ides of April, in the yeere of Christe. 1514. he hoysed vp his sailes, in the towne of saint Lucar de Barrameda, situate in the mouth of the ryuer Betis, which the Spanyardes nowe call Guadalchebir. The seven llandes of Canaria are about foure hundred myles distant from the place where this riuier falleth into the sea. Some thinke that these are the llandes whiche the olde wryters did call the fortunate llandes: but other thinke the contrary. The name of these llandes are these. The two that appeare first in sight, are named Lanzelota and Fortisuentura. On the backhalfe of these, lyeth Magna Canaria or Grancanaria, beyond that is Tenerife and Gomera somewhat towarde the North from that. Palma and Ferrea lye behinde, as it were a bulwarke to all the other. Petrus Arias therefore, arryued at Gomera the eight day after his departure, with a nauie of seuentene ships, & a thousand and fife hundred men, although there were onely a thousande and two hundred assigned him by the kinges letters. It is sayd furthermore, that hee left behinde him more then two thousande very pensieue and sighing that they also myght not bee receiued, profering themselves to goe at their owne charges. Hee taryed xvi. dayes in Gomera, to the intent to make prouision of fuel and freshe water, but chiefly to repayre his shypes, beeing sore broosed with tempestes, and especially the gouernours shyppe, which had lost the rudder: For these llandes are commodious resting place for all such as intende to attempt any nauigations in that maine sea. Departing from hence in the

The nauigation
of Petrus Arias.

The llande of
Canarie.

Prouision of
fresh water and
fuel.

Nones

Nones of May, he sawe no more lande vntill the third day of Iune, at the which hee arryued at Dominica an Ilande of the Canibales, beeing distaunt from Gomera about eight hundred leagues. Here hee remayned foure dayes, making newe prouision of fresh water and fuell, duryng which tyme, hee sawe no man, nor yet any steppes of men, but founde plentie of sea Crabbes and great Lisarts. From hence he sayled by the Ilandes of Matinina (otherwise called Madanino) Guadalupea and Galanta (otherwise called Galana) of all whiche wee haue spoken in the first Decade. Hee passed also through the sea of hearbes or weedes, continuing a long tract: Yet neyther he, nor Colonus the Admirall (who first found these Ilandes, and sayled through this sea of weedes) haue declared any reason how these weedes should come. Some thinke the sea to bee verie muddie there, and that these weedes are engendred in the bottome thereof, and so beeing loosed, to ascende to the vppermost part of the water, as wee see oftentimes chaunce in certayne standing pooles, and sometymes also in great riuers. Other suppose that they are not engendred there, but to bee beaten from certayne rockes by the violence of the waters in tempestes: And thus they leaue the matter in doubt. Neyther haue they yet any certayne experience whether they sticke fast or giue place to the shypes, or wander loose vpon the water: But it is to be thought, that they are engendred there, for otherwise they should bee dryuen together one heapes, by the impulsion of the shypa, euen as a beasome gathereth the sweepings of a house, and should also let the course of the shippes. The fourth day after that he departed from Dominica, the hygh mountaynes couered with snowe, (whereof we haue spoken in the seconde Decade) appeared vnto him. They say that there the seas runne as swiftly toward the West, as it were a ryuer falling from the toppes of hygh mountaynes, although they sayled not directly toward the West, but inclined somewhat to the South. From these mountaynes falleth the ryuer of Gaira, famous by the slaughter of our men, at such time as Rodericus Colmenares passed by those coastes, as we haue sayde before: Likewise many other sayre ryuers haue their originall from the same mountaynes. This prouince (in the which is also the region of Caramairi) hath in it two notable hauens, of the which our men named the one Carthago or Carthagena, & the other Sancta Martha, the region wherof the inhabitats call Saturma. The port of Sancta Martha, is neerer to the mountaynes couered with snowe, called Montes Niuales, for it is at the roots of the same mountains, but the haven of Carthago is more westward, about fytie leagues. Hee wryteth marueilous thinges of the haven of Sancta Martha, whiche they also confirme that came lately from thence: Of the which young Vesputius is one, to whom Americus Vesputius his vncler (being a Florentine borne) left the exact knowledge of the Mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death, for hee was a very expert maister in the knowledge of his carde, his compasse, and the eleuation of the pole starre, with all that pertayneth thereto. This young Vesputius was assigned by the king to bee one of the maisters of the gouernours shippes, because hee was cunning in iudging the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starre by the quadrant: For the charge of gouerning the rudder, was chiefly committed to one Iohannes Serranus a Spanyard, who hadde oftentimes ouerrunne those coastes. Vesputius is my very familiar friend, and a wittie young man, in whose company I take great pleasure, and therefore vse him oftentimes for my ghest. He hath also made many voyages into these coastes, and diligently noted suche thinges as hath seene. Petrus Arias therefore wryteth, and he confirmeth the same, that the inhabitantes of these regions tooke their originall of the Carribbes or Canibales, as appeared by the desperate fiercenesse & cruelty which they oftentimes shewed to our men when they passed by their coastes. Suche stoutnesse and fortitude of mynde is naturally engendred in these naked Barbarians, that they feared not to assaile our whole nauie, and to forbidde them to haue a lande. They fight with venomous arrowes, as wee haue sayde beefore. Perceiuing that our menne condemned their threatninges, they ranne furiously into the sea, euen vp to the breastes, nothing fearing eyther the byggenesse or multitudes of our shippes, but ceased not continually beeing thus in the water, to cast darts, and to shoote their venomous arrowes as thicke as hayle: Insomuch that our men had bin in great danger, if they had not bin defended by the cages or pauisses of the shippes, and their targettes: Yet were two of them

The sea of
hearbes.

These moun-
taynes are called
Montes Niuales,
or Serra Neutas,
Deca. 4. li. lib. i.
and ii.

Mountaynes co-
uered with
snowe.

The stoutnes of
the Barbarians.

The Canibals
fight in the
water.

The thir

them we
length of
shoote:
and sh
and fled
with the
same to
sophers
and sawe
whether
ward, an
the vene
with a dr
reputed
fore, sha
boats.
lesse the
so cleare
likewise,
be meete
able thin
of the fy
here man
or weede
the peop
fish to th
thus chas
they assa
spoyling
great rec
afterward
and the v
wrought
bers were
by the w
the winde
goodly of
cially on
office, wh
then any
then the
founde m
peesces of
houses of
golde, at
houses.
plentie o
the shore
more, the
Eastward
antes, th
trees apt
fishes, S

them wounded, which died shortly after. But this conflict continued so sharpe, that at the length our men were enforced to shoote of their greatest peeces of ordinaunce with hayle-shoote: at the slaughter and terrible noyse whereof, the Barbarians beeing sore discomfited and shaken with feare, thinking the same to bee thunder and lightning, turned their backs, and fledde amayne. They greatly feare thunder, because these regions are oftentimes vexed with thunder and lyghnynges, by reason of the hygh mountaynes, and nearenesse of the same to the region of the ayre, wherein such fiery tempests are engendred, which the philosophers call Meteora. And albeit that our men hadde nowe dryuen their enemies to flight, and sawe them disparced and out of order, yet doubted they, and were of diuers opinions, whether they shoulde pursue them, or not. On the one partie shame pricked them forward, and on the other side, feare caused them to cast many peryle, especially considering the venomous arrowes whiche these Barbarians can direct so certainly. To depart from them with a drye foote (as sayth the prouerbe) with so great a naue, and such an armie, they reputed it as a thing greatly sounding to their reproach and dishonour. At the length therefore, shame ouercomming feare, they perswaded them, & came to land with their ship boates. The gouernour of the naue, and also Vesputius doe write, that the hauen is no lesse then three leagues in compasse, being also safe without rockes, and the water thereof so cleare, that a man may see pybble stones in the bottome twentie cubits deepe. They say likewise, that there falleth two fayre ryuers of freshe water into the hauen: but the same to be meeter to beare the Canoas of these prouinces, then any bygger vessels. It is a delectable thing to heare what they tel of the plentie and varietie, and also of the pleasaunt tast of the fyshes, aswell of these riuers, as of the sea there about: By reason wherof they found here manie fysher boates and nettes woonderfully wrought of the stalkes of certayne hearbes or weedes, dried and tawed, and wreathed with cords of spunne gossampine cotton. For the people of Caramairi, Gaira, and Saturma, are verie cunning in fishing, and vse to sell fish to their borderers, for exchange of such thinges as they lacke. When our men hadde thus chased the Barbarians from the sea coastes, and had nowe entred into their houses, they assayed them with newe skirmishes, especially when they sawe them fall to sacking and spoyling, and their wyues and children taken captiue. Their household stuffe was made of great reedes, which growe on the sea bankes, and the stalkes of certayne hearbes beaten, and afterwarde made harde. The floores thereof were strewed, with hearbes of sundrie colours, and the walles hanged with a kinde of tapstry, artificialy made of gossampine cotton, and wrought with pictures of Lions, Tigers, and Eagles. The doores of their houses and chambers were full of diuers kindes of shelles, hanging loose by small cordes, that being shaken by the winde, they might make a certaine ratteling, and also a whisteling noise, by gathering the winde in their holowe places: for herein they haue great delight, and impute this for a goodly ornament. Diuers haue shewed me many wonderfull thinges of these regions, especially one Conzalus Fernandus Ouiedus, being one of the magistrates appointed in that office, which the Spaniards call Veedor, who haue also hitherto entred further into the land then any other. He affirmeth, that he chaunced vpon the fragment of a Saphire, bigger then the egge of a goose, and that in certayne hilles where he trauailed with thirtie men, he founde many of the pretious stones called Smaragdes, Calcidones, and laspers, beside great peeces of Amber of the mountaynes. He also, with diuers others do affirme that in the houses of som of the Canibales of these regions, they found the like precious stones, set in golde, and inclosed in tapstry or arras (if it may be so called) wherewith they hang their houses. The same lande bringeth forth also many woodes of brasile trees, and great plentie of gold, in so much that in maner in al places they found on the sea bankes, & on the shores, certayne marchasites in token of goide. Fernandus Ouiedus declareth furthermore, that in a certaine region called Zenu, lying fourescore and tenne miles from Dariena Eastwarde, they exercise a straunge kinde of marchandize: For in the houses of the inhabitants, they founde great chests and baskets, made of the twigges and leaues of certayne trees apte for that purpose, being all ful of Grassehoppers, Grilles, Crabbes, or Cre-fishes, Snailles also, and Locustes, which destroye the fieldes of corne, all well dried and salted.

The vse of
gunnes.

The generation
of thunder and
lightning.

Plentie of fish.

Cunning fishers.

Tapistrie.

This is he
whom Cardanus
praiseth.

Precious stones.
The Smaragde
is the true He-
metode.

Another kinde
of Amber is
founde in
whales.

Golde and Bra-
sile.

Marchasites are
flowres of met-
tals, by the
colours whereof,
the kindes of
mettals are
knowne.

These Locustes
burne the corne
with touching,
and deuoure the

residue. They
are in India of
three foote
length.

Gardens.

Inshres are
nowe called
Lumbardies, and
Heturi,
Tuscana.

One myriade is
ten thousande.

The manner of
planting the
roote lucca.

Earth turned
into rootes.

How bread is
made of rootes.

salted. Being demanded why they reserued such a multitude of these beastes: they answered, that they kept them to be sould to the borderers, whiche dwell further within the lande, and that for the exchange of these pretious birdes, and salted fishes, they receiued of them certayne straunge thinges, wherein partly they take pleasure, and partly vse them for their necessarie affaires. These people dwell not together, but scattered heere and there. The inhabitantes of Caramairi, seeme to dwell in an earthly Paradise, their region is fayre and fruitfull, without outragious heate, or sharpe colde, with litle difference of the length of day and night throughout all the yeere. After that our men hadde thus dryuen the Barbarians to flight, they entred into a valley, of two leagues in breadth, and three in length, extending to certayne fruitfull mountaynes, full of grasse, hearbes, and trees, at the rootes whereof, lye two other vallies towarde the ryght hande and the left, through eyther of the whiche runneth a fayre ryuer, whereof the ryuer of Caira is one, but vnto the other they haue yet giuen no name. In these vallies they found many fayre gardens, and pleasaunt fieldes, watered with trenches, distributed in marueilous order, with no lesse art then our Insubrians and Heturians vse to water their fieldes. Their common meate, is Ages, Lucca, Maizium, Battata, with such other rootes and fruites of trees, and also such fysh as they vse in the llandes and other regions of those prouinces. They ate mannes fleshe but seldome, because they meete not oftentimes with straungers, except they goe forth of their owne dominions with a mayne armie, of purpose to hunt for menne, when their rauenyng appetite pricketh them forwarde: For they abstayne from themselves, and ate none but suche as they take in the warres, or otherwise by chaunce. But surely it is a miserable thing to heare howe many myriades of men these filthy and vnnaturall deuourers of mens flesh haue consumed, and left thousandes of most fayre and fruitfull llandes and regions desolate without menne: by reason whereof, our menne found so many llandes, whiche for their fayrenesse and fruitfulnessse myght seeme to be certayne earthly Paradyses, and yet were vtterly voyde of men. Hereby your holinesse may consider how pernicious a kynde of men this is. We haue sayde before, that the lland named Sancti Iohannis (which the inhabitantes cal Burichena) is next to Hispaniola. It is sayde, that onely the Canibales which dwell in the other llandes neere about this, as in the llande called Hayhay or Sancta Crucia, and in Guadalupea (otherwise called Queraqueira, or Carucuiera) haue in our tyme violently taken out of the sayde llande of Sancti Iohannis, more then fyue thousande menne to be eaten. But let it suffice thus muche to haue wandered by these monstrous bloud-suckers. Wee will now therefore speake somewhat of the rootes wherof they make their bread, forasmuch as the same shall hereafter be foode to Christian men, in steade of breade made of wheate, and in the steade of radyshe, with such other rootes as they haue beene accustomed to eate in Europe. We haue oftentimes sayde before, that lucca is a roote, whereof the best and most delicate bread is made, both in the firme lande of these regions, and also in the llandes: but howe it is tyllid or husbanded, howe it groweth, and of how diuers kindes it is, I haue not yet declared. Therefore, when they entend to plant this lucca, they make a hole in the earth, knee deepe, and rayse a heape of the earth taken out of the same, fashionyng it like a square bedde, of nine foote breadth on euery side, setting twelue trunks of these rootes (being about a foote and a halfe long apeece) in euery of the sayd beddes containing three rootes of a side, so layd a slope, that the endes of them ioyned in manner together in the center or midst of the bedde within the grounde. Out of the ioyntes of the rootes, and spaces betweene the same, spring the toppes of the blades of newe rootes, whiche by litle and litle encreasyng growe to the bignes and length of a mans arme in the browne, and oftentimes as bygge as the thygh: so that by the tyme of their full rypenesse, in manner all the earth of the heape is conuerted into rootes. But they say that these rootes are not ripe, in lesse then a yeere and halfe, and that the longer they are suffered to grow, euen vntil two yeeres compleate, they are so much the better, and more perfecte to make breade thereof. When they are taken forth of the earth, they scrape them, and slise them, with certayne sharpe stones, seruing for the same purpose. And thus laying them betweene two great stones, or putting them in a sacke made of the stalkes of certayne

tough

tough hearbes and small reedes, they presse them (as we doe cheese or crabbes, to drawe out the iuyce thereof) and so let them dry a day before they eate them. The iuyce or liquour they cast away: (as wee haue sayde) it is deadly poyson in the llands. Yet is the iuyce of such as growe in the firme lande wholesome, if it be sodde, as is the whey of our milke. They say that there are many kyndes of this lucca, whereof some are more pleasant and delicate then the other, and are therefore reserued as it were to make fyne Manchets for the kinges owne table: But the Gentlemen eate of the meaner sort, and the common people of the basest. The finest they call Cazabbi, whiche they make rounde like cakes, in certayne presses, before they see the it, or bake it. They say furthermore, that there are likewise diuers kyndes of the rootes of Ages, and Battatas. But they vse these rather as fruites, and dyshes of seruice, then to make breade thereof, as we vse Rapes, Radishes, Mushromes, Naues, Parsnippes, and suche like. In this case, they most especially esteeme the best kinde of Battatas, which in pleasant tast and tendernes, farre exceedeth our Mushromes. It shall suffice to haue sayd thus much of roots: We will nowe therefore speake of another kinde of their bread. We declared before, that they haue a kinde of grayne or Pulse, muche like vnto Panicum, but with somewhat bygger graynes, which they beate into meale, vpon certayne great hollow stones with the labour of their handes, when they lacke lucca, and of this is made the more vulgar or common breade. It is sowne thryse a yeere, so that the fruitfulnessse of the ground may beare it, by reason of the equalitie of the time, whereof we haue spoken sufficiently before. In these regions they found also the grayne of Maizium, and sundry kyndes of fruites of trees, diligently planted, and well husbanded. The way betwene the regions of Caramairi and Saturma, is fayre, broad, and right forth. They founde here also sundry kyndes of water pottes made of earth, of diuers colours, in the which they both fetch and keepe freshe water: Lykewise sundry kyndes of iugges, godderdes, drinking cuppes, pottes, pannes, dishes, and platters, artificially made. When the gouernour hadde giuen commaundement by proclamation, that the inhabitantes should eyther obey the Christian king, and embrace our religion, or els to depart out of their country: they answered with venomous arrowes. In this skirmishe, our menne tooke some of them: whereof, clothing the most parte in fayre apparell, they sent them agayne to their owne companie: But leading the residue to the shippes, to the intent to shew them the power and magnificence of the Christians, that they might declare the same to their companions, thereby to wyne their fauour, they appareled them lykewise, and sent them after their fellows. They affirme, that in all the ryuers of these coastes, they sawe great argumentes and tokens of golde. They founde here and there in their houses good store of Harts flesh, & Bores flesh, wherewith they fedde themselves delicately. They also haue great plenty of sundry kyndes of birdes, and foules, whereof they bring vpp many in their houses, some for necessarie food, and other for dayntie dyshes, as wee doe Hennes and Partridges. Our menne hereby coniecture, that the ayre of these regions is very wholesome, forasmuch as sleeping all night vnder the firmament on the bankes of the ryuers, none of them were at anie tyme offended with reumes or headache, by reason of any noysome humour, or vapour proceeding from the earth, ayre, or water. Our menne furthermore founde there many great botomes of gossampine cotton ready spunne, and fardelles of dyuers kyndes of feathers, whereof they make themselves crestes and plumes, after the maner of our men of armes: also certayne clokes, which they esteeme as most comely ornamentes. They founde likewise an innumerable multitude of bowes and arrowes. The inhabitantes also of these regions, in some places vse to burne the carkases of their princes when they are dead, and to reserue their bones buried with spyes in certayne hylles. In other places, they onely drie them, and imbalme them with spyes and sweete gummes, and so reserue them in sepulchers in their owne houses. Somewhere also, they drie them, spyce them, adorne them with precious ieweltes, and ouches, and so reuerently place them in certain tabernacles, made for the most purpose in their owne pallaces. When our men hadde many of their tablettes, braselettes, collers, and such other ouches (which they call Guanines) they found them rather to be made of laton then of golde: whereby they suppose that they haue used to exchange their ware with some craftie straungers, which brought them those counterfeit

VOL. V.

O o

terfeit

Panicum is a
grayne some-
what like milke:
The Italians call
it Melica.

He meaneth the
equal length of
day & night
which is conti-
nually in regis-
vnder the Equi-
noctiall lyne.

Holsome ayre.

Gossampine
Cotton.
Feathers.

Bowes and
arrowes.

Dead bodies re-
serued.

Sonzalus Oui-
edus sayth, that
they gylt mar-
ueylously with
the iuyce of a
certayne hearbe.

White marble.

The great ryuer
Maragnonus.
This ioyneth
with the mightie
riuer called
Flumen Amazon-
um, found of
late,

Clokes of fea-
thers.

The swift course
of the water.

Fourtie leagues
in one night.

Sundry opinions
why the sea
runneth with so
swift course
from the East
into the West.

The Equino-
ctiall lyne.
Why sh waters
moue toward
the South or
Equinoctiall,
read Cardanus
de secund. liber
ii de elementis
strayghtes.

As by the
strayght of Ma-
gellan.
The North
Landes.

The frozen sea.

Sebastian Cabot.

terfeit ouches, to defraude them of their golde: For euen our men perceiued not the deceit vntill they came to the melting. Furthermore, certayne of our builders wandering a little way from the sea coastes, chanced to find certayne peeces of white marble: whereby they thinke that in time past some strangers haue come to those lands, which haue digged marble out of the mountaines, and left those fragments on the playne. There our men learned that the riuer Maragnonus descendeth from the mountaynes couered with snow, called Montes Niuales, or Serra Neuata, and the same to bee encreased by many other riuers, which fall into it throughout all the lowe and waterly regions, by the which it runneth with so long a tract from the sayd mountaynes into the sea, and this to be the cause of the greatness thereof. These thinges being thus brought to passe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpeter to blowe a retraite: Whereupon they which were sent to land (being fife hundred in number) making a great shout for ioy of their victory, set themselves in order of battayle, and so keeping their array, returned to the ships laden with spoyle of those prouinces, and shining in souldiers clokes of feathers, with fayre plumes & crestes of variable colours. In this meane time, hauing repayed their ships, and furnished the same with all necessaries, they loosed anker the xvi. day of the Calendes of Iuly, directing their course to the hauen of Carthagena, in the which voyage they destroyed & wasted certayne llands of the Canibales, lying in the way according as they were commanded by the king. But the swift course of the water deceived both Iohannes Sarranus the chiefe Pilot of the gouernours ship, and al the other although they made their best that they perfectly knew the nature thereof: For they affirme that in one night they were caried fourty leagues beyond their estimation.

The sixt Chapter of the thirde Decade.

HERE must wee somewhat digresse from Cosmography, and make a philosophical discourse to searche the secret causes of nature. For wher as they all affirme with one consent that the sea runneth there from the East to the Weste, as swiftly as it were a ryuer falling from high mountaynes, I thought it not good to let such matter slyppe vntouched. The which while I consider, I am drawne into no small ambiguitie and doubt, whyther those waters haue their course, whiche flowe with so continuall a tract in circuite from the East, as though they fledde to the West, neuer to returne, and yet neyther the West thereby any whit the more fylled, nor the East emptied. If we shall say that they fal to their centre (as in the nature of heauie thinges) and assigne the Equinoctiall lyne to bee the centre (as some affirme) what centre shall we appoynt to be able to receiue so great abundance of water; Or what circumference shall be found wet; They whiche haue searched those coastes, haue yet founde no like reason to bee true. Many thinke that there should be certaine large strayghtes or entrances in the corner of that great lande, which we described to be eight tymes bigger then Italie, and the corner thereof to bee full of gulfes, whereby they suppose that some strayghtes shoulde passe through the same, lying on the West side of the llande of Cuba, and that the sayde strayghtes shoulde swalowe vp those waters, and so conueye the same into the West, and from thence agayne into our East Ocean, or North seas, as some thinke. Other will, that the gulfe of that great lande bee closed vpper, and the lande to reache farre towarde the North on the backe side of Cuba, so that it embrace the North landes, which the frozen sea encompasseth vnder the North pole, and that all the lande of those coastes, should ioyn together as one firme lande: Whereby they coniecture, that those waters shoulde be turned about by the obiect or resistance of that lande, so bending towarde the North, as we see the waters turned about in the crooked bankes of certayne ryuers. But this agreeth not in all poyntes. For they also which haue searched the frozen sea, and sayled from thence into the West, doe likewise affirme, that those North seas flowe continually toward the West, although nothing so swiftly. These North seas haue bin searched by one Sebastian Cabot, a Venetian borne, whom being yet but in manner an infant, his parents caried with them into Englande, hauing occasion to resort thither for trade of marchandize, as is the manner of the Venitians, to leaue no parte of the worlde vnsearched to obtayne rychesse. Hee therfore furnished two shippes in England at his owne charges:

charges: And first with three hundred menne, directed his course so farre toward the North pole, that euen in the moneth of Iuly he found monstrous heapes of Ice swimming on the sea, and in manner continuall day light: Yet sawe hee the lande in that tracte free from Ice, whiche hadde bene moulen by heate of the Sunne. Thus seeing such heapes of Ice beefore him, hee was enforced to turne his sayles, and folowe the West, so coasting still by the shore, that he was thereby brought so far into the South, by reason of the lande bending so much southwarde, that it was there almost equall in latitude with the sea called Fretum Herculeum, hauing the North pole eleuate in maner in the same degree. He sayled likewise in this tract so farre toward the West, that hee hadde the Iland of Cuba on his left hande, in maner in the same degree of longitude. As he trauallyed by the coastes of this great lande (whiche he named Baccallaos) he sayth, that hee founde the like course of the waters toward the West, but the same to run more softly and gently, then the swift waters which the Spanyardes founde in their navigations southwarde. Wherefore, it is not onely more like to bee true, but ought also of necessity to be concluded, that betweene both the landes hitherto vnkown there shoulde be certayne great open places, whereby the water should thus continually passe from the East into the West: which waters I suppose to be dryen about the globe of the earth by the vncessaunt mouing and impulsion of the heauens, and not to be swallowed vp and cast out agayne by the breathing of Demogorgon, as some haue imagined, because they see the seas by increase & decrease, to flow and reflow. Sebastian Cabot himselfe named those landes Baccallaos, because that in the seas therabout he founde so great multitudes of certayne bygge fyses, much like vnto Tunnies (which thinhabitants call Baccallaos) that they sometimes stayed his shippes. Hee founde also the people of those regions couered with beastes skinned: yet not without the vse of reason. He also sayth there is great plentie of Beares in those regions, whiche vse to eate fyses: For plunging themselves into the water where they perceiue a multitude of these fyses to lye, they fasten their claws in their scales, and so drawe them to lande, and eate them: So that (as he sayth) the beares beeing thus satisfied with fyses, are not noysome to menne. He declareth further, that in many places of these regions, he sawe great plentie of laton among the inhabitantes. Cabot is my very friende, whom I vse familiarly, and delight to haue him sometimes keepe mee companie in my owne house: For beeing called out of Englande by the commaundement of the Catholike king of Castile, after the death of Henry King of Englande, the seuenth of that name, hee was made one of our counsaile and assistance as touching the affayres of the new Indies, looking dayly for shippes to bee furnished for him to discover this hidde secret of nature. This voyage is appoynted to be begunne in Marche in the yeere next following, being the yeere of Christe. 1516. What shall succede, your holynesse shall be aduertised by my letters, if God graunt me life. Some of the Spanyardes denie that Cabot was the first finder of the lande of Bacallaos, and affirme that hee went not so farre Westwarde: But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of the gulfes and straghtes, and of Sebastian Cabot. Let vs now therefore returne to the Spanyardes. At this time, they let passe the haven of Carthago vntouched, with all the Ilandes of the Canibales thereabout, whiche they named Insulas Sancti Bernardi, leauing also behinde their backs, all the regions of Caramairi. Heere by reason of a sodayne tempest, they were cast vpon the Ilande Fortis, beeing about fyftie leagues distaunt from the entraunce of the gulfes of Vraha. In this Ilande, they founde in the houses of the inhabitantes, many baskets made of certaine great sea reedes, full of salt. For this Iland hath in it many goodly salt bayes, by reason whereof they haue great plentie of salte, which they sell to other nations for such thinges as they stand in neede of. Not farre from hence, a great Curlew, as bigge as a Storke, came flying to the gouernours shippe, and suffered her selfe to be easily taken, which beeing caryed about among all the shippes of the nauie, dyed shortly after: They sawe also a great multitude of the same kinde of foules on the shore a farre off. The gouernours shyppe, which we sayde to haue lost the rudder, beeing now sore broosed, and in manner vnprofitable they left behinde, to followe at leasure. The nauie arryued at Dariena the twelfth day of the Calendes of Iuly, and the gouernours

The voyage of
Sebastian Cabot
from Englande
to the frozen
sea.

Demogorgon is
the spirit of the
earth.

People couered
with beastes
skinned.

The Ilandes of
the Canibales.

The Ilande
Fortis.

Salte.

A strang thing.

How Vaschus
received the
newe gouernour.

Habitable regi-
ons vnder the
Equinoctiall line.

Where the new
gouernour plant-
eth his habita-
tion.

A passinger ship.

Decurians are
officers deuised
into tenues &c.

The golde mines
of Dabaiba.

uernours shippe (being voide of men) was driuen alande in the same coastes within foure daies after. The Spaniards whiche now inhabited Dariena, with their Captaine and Lieu-tenant Vaschus Nunnez Balboa (of whome we haue largelie made mention before) being certified of the arriual of Petrus Arias and his companie, went fourth three miles to meete him, and receiued him honorably, and religiously with the psalme Te deum laudamus, giuing thanks to God by whose safe conduct they were brought so prosperously thitherto al their comfortes. They receiued them gladly into their houses builded after the maner of those prouinces. I may wel cal these regions, Prouinces, a Procul Victis (that is) such as are overcome farre of, forasmuche as our men do now inhabite the same, al the barbarous kinges and Idolatours being eicted. They entertained them with such cheare as they were able to make them: as with the fruites of those regions, and new bread, both made of rootes and the graine Maizium. Other delicates to make vp the feast, were of their own store, which they brought with them in their ships, as poudred flesh, salted fishe, and bread made of wheat: for they brought with them many barrells of wheate meale for the same purpose. Heere may your holinesse, not without iust cause of admiration, beholde a kinges naue and great multitude of Christians, inhabiting not only the regions situate vnder the circle of heauen, called Tropicus Cancrī, but also in maner vnder the Equinoctiall line, contrarie to the opinion of the olde wryters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are now mette together, let vs further declare what they determined to do. Therefore, the day after that the naue arriued, there assembled a companie of Spaniards th inhabitours of Dariena, to the nūber of foure hundred and fiftie men. Petrus Arias the gouernour of the nauy, and his companie, conferred with them both priuile and openlie of certaine articles, whereof it was the kinges pleasure he shoulde enquire: and most especially as concerning suche thinges whereof Vaschus the first finder and Admirall of the South sea, made mention in his large letter sent from Dariena to Spaine. In this inquisition they founde al things to be true whereof Vaschus had certified the king by his letters, and therevpon cōcluded, that in the dominions of Comogra, Pocchorrosa & Tumanama, at the assignement of Vaschus, certaine fortresses shoulde be erected fourthwith, to thintent there to plant their colonie or habitation. To the better accompyshment hereof, they sent immediatly one Iohannes Aiora, a noble young gentle man of Corduba, & vnder Lieuuetenant, with foure hundred men, and foure Carauels, and one other litle ship. Thus departing, he sailed first directly to the hauen of Comogrus, distant from Dariena about twentie and fīue leagues, as they write in their last letters. From hence, he is appointed to sende a hundred and fiftie of his foure hundred, towards the South, by a newe and righter way founde of late, by the whiche (as they say) it is not past twentie and sixe leagues from the pallace of king Comogrus to the entraunce of the gulfe of Sancti Michaelis. The residue of the foure hundred shal remaine there, to be an aide and succour to al such as shall iorney to and fro. Those hundred and fiftie whiche are assigned to go southwarde, take with them for interpretours certain of our men, which had learned the soother language of the bondmen which were giuen to Vaschus when he ouerranne those regions, & also certaine of the bondemen themselues which had nowe learned the Spanishe tongue. They say that the hauen of Pocchorrosa is only seuen leagues distant from the hauen of Comogrus. In Pocchorrosa he is assigned to leaue fiftie men, with the lightest ship, which may be a passinger betwene them: that like as we vse post horses by land, so may they by this currant ship, in short space certifie the Lieuuetenant and th inhabitours of Dariena of such thinges as shal chaunce. They entend also to build houses in the region of Tumanama. The pallace of king Tumanama, is distant frō Pocchorrosa about twenty leagues. Of these foure hundred men, being of the olde souldiers of Dariena, & men of good experience: fiftie were appointed to be as it were Decurians, to guide and conduct the newe men from place to place to do their affaires. When they had thus set all thinges in order, they thought it good to aduertise the king hereof, and therewith to certifie him, that in those prouinces there is a king named Dabaiba, whose dominion is verie riche in gold, but the same to be yet vntouched by reason of his great power. His kingdome ioiueith to the second great riuier, named Dabaiba after his name, whiche falleth into the sea

out

out of the corner of the gulfe of Vraba, as we haue largely declared before. The common report is, that all the land of his dominions is ryche in golde. The pallace of King Dabaiba is fyfthe leagues distant from Dariena. The in' bitautes say, that from the pallace, the gold mynes reach to the borders on euery side. Albeit our menne haue also golde mynes not to bee contemned, euen within three leagues of Dariena, in the which they gather golde in many places at this present: Yet do they asirme greater plentie to bee in the mynes of Dabaiba. In the bookes of our first fruites, written to your holinesse, we made mention of this Dabaiba, wherein our men were deceiued, and mystooke the matter: For where they founde the fyshermen of king Dabaiba in the maryshes, they thought his region had bene there also. They determined therefore to sende to king Dabaiba, three hundred choyse young men, to be chosen out of the whole armie, as most apt to the warres, and well furnished with all kyndes of armour and artillerie, to the intent to go vnto him, and will him, eyther friendly and peaceably to permit them to inhabite part of his kingdome, with the fruition of the golde mynes, or els to bidde him battayle, and driue him out of his country. In their letters, they oftentimes repeate this for an argument of great ryches to come, that they in a manner dygged the ground in no place, but founde the earth myxt with sparkes and small graynes of golde. They haue also aduertised the king, that it shal be commodious to place inhabitours in the hauen of Sancta Martha, in the region of Saturma, that it may be a place of refuge for them that sayle from the llande of Dominica, from the whiche (as they say) it is but foure or fve dayes sayling to that hauen of the region of Saturma, and from the hauen, but three dayes sayling to Dariena. But this is to bee vnderstoode in going and not in returning. For the returning from thence is so laborious and difficulte, by reason of the contrary course of the water, that they seeme as it were to ascende hyghe mountaynes, and stryue agaynst the power of Neptunus. This swift course of the sea towards the West, is not so violent to them whiche returne to Spayne from the llandes of Hispaniola and Cuba, although they also doe labour agaynst the fall of the Ocean: The cause whereof is, that the sea is heere very large, so that the waters haue their full scope. But in the tract of Paria, the waters are constrained together by the bending sides of that great lande, and by the multitude of llandes lying against it, as the like is seene in the strayghtes or narrowe seas of Scicile, where the violent course of the waters cause the dangerous places of Scilla and Caribdis by reason of those narrowe seas which conteyne Ionium, Libicum, and Tirrhenum. Colonus the firste finder of these regions, hath left in wryting, that sayling from the llande of Guanasso, and the prouinces of Iaia, Maia, and Cerabaro, being regions of the West marches of Beragua, he founde the course of the water so vehement and furious agaynst the foreparte of his shippe, while he sayled from those coastes towards the East, that he coulde at no time touche the ground with his sounding plummet, but that the contrarie violence of the water woulde beare it vppe from the bottome: Hee affirmeth also, that hee coulde neuer in one whole day, with a meetely good winde, wyne one myle of the course of the water. And this is the cause why they are oftentimes enforced to sayle first by the llandes of Cuba and Hispaniola, and so into the mayne sea towards the North, when they returne to Spaine, that the North wyndes may further their voyage, whiche they cannot bring to passe by a direct course: But of the motions of the Ocean sea to and fro, this shall suffice. Let vs now therefore rehearse what they write of Dariena, and of their habitation there, which they call Sancta Maria Antiqua, planted on the sea bankes of Dariena. The situation of the place, hath no natural munition or defence, & the aire is more pestiferous then in Sardus. The Spanishe inhabitours are all pale and yelow, like vnto them which haue the yelow iaudies: which neuerthelesse commeth not of the nature of the region, as it is situate vnder the hauen. For in many regions being vnder the selfe same degree of latitude, hauing the pole of the same eleuation, they find holsome & temperate ayre, in such places where as the earth bringeth forth fayre springes of water, or where holsome riuers runne by bankes of pure earth without mudde: but most especially where they inhabite the sides of the hills, and not the valleyes. But that habitation whiche is on the bankes of the ryuer of Dariena, is situate in a deepe valley, and enuironed

An error.

The region of Saturma.
The llande of Dominica.Difficult sayling
agaynst the
course of the sea.The dangerous
straights of
Scylla and Charybdis.The vehement
course of the sea
from the East to
the West.

on

on euery side with high hilles: By reason whereof, it receiue the Sunne beames at noonetide directly perpendicular ouer their heades, and are therefore sore vexed by reflection of the beames, both before, behinde, and from the sides. For it is the reflection of the sunne beames whiche causeth feruent heate, and not their accesse or neerenesse to the earth, forasmuch as they are not possible in themselves, as doth manifestly appeare by the snowe lying continually vnmoulten vpon certayne high mountaynes, as your holinesse knoweth right well. The sunne beames therfore falling on the mountaynes, are reflected downwarde into the valley, by reason of the obiecte of the declining sides of the hylles, as it were the fall of a great rounde stone, rowled from the toppes of a mountayne. The valley therefore receiue both those beames whiche fall directly thereon, and also those whiche are reflected downwarde from euery side of the mountaynes. Their habitation therefore in Dariens, is pernicious and vnwholesome, onely of the particular nature of the place, and not by the situation of the region as it is placed vnder the heauen, or neere to the sunne. The place is also outrageous by the nature of the soyle, by reason it is compassed about with muddie and stinking maryshes, the infection whereof is not a little encreased by the heate: The village it selfe is in a marishe and in manner a standing puddle, where, of the droppes falling from the handes of the bondemen, while they water the paumentes of their houses, Toades are engendred immediately, as I my selfe sawe in another place the droppes of that water turne into flies in the Sommer season. Furthermore, wheresoeuer they digge the ground the depth of a handfull and a halfe, there springeth out vnwholesome and corrupt water, of the nature of the ryuer, whiche runneth through the deepe and muddy chanell of the valley, and so falleth into the sea: Now therefore they consult of remoouing their inhabitations. Necessitie caused them first to fasten their foote heere, because that they whiche first arryued in those landes, were oppressed with suche vrgent hunger, that they hadde no respect to chaunge the place, although they were thus vexed by the contagion of the soyle and heate of the Sunne, becside the corrupt water, and infectious ayre, by reason of venomous vapours, and exhalations rysing from the same. An other great incommodity was, that the place was destitute of a commodious hauen, being three leagues distaunt from the mouth of the gulfe: The way is also rough and difficult to bring victualles and other necessaries from the sea. But let vs now speake somewhat of other particular thinges which chaunced. Therefore shortly after that they were arryued, there happened many thinges whereof they hadde no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phisition of Ciuile, whom partly the authoritie of the Byshop of Dariens, and partly the desire of golde, had allured to those landes, was so scarred with lightning in the night season, lying in bedde with his wife, that the house and all the stuffe therein being set on fire and burnt, hee and his wife beeing sore scorched, ranne soorth crying, and almost naked, hardly escaping the daunger of death. And another time as certayne of them stode on the shore, a great Crocodile sodenly caryed away a mastie of a yeere and a halfe olde, as a kyte shoulde haue snatched vp a chicken: and this euen in the presence of them all, where the miserable dogge cryed in vaine for the helpe of his maister. In the nyght season they were tormented with the byting of bates, whiche are there so noysome, that if they bite any man in his sleepe, they putte him in daunger of life, onely with drawing of bloude: In so much that some haue dyed thereof, falling as it were into a consumption through the maliciousnesse of the venomous wounde. If these Battes chaunce to finde a cocke or a henne abroad in the night season, they byte them by the combes, and so kil them. They also whiche went last into these dominions, do write, that the lande is troubled with Crocodiles, Lions, and Tygers: but that they haue nowe deuised artes and engins how to take them. Likewise that in the houses of their fellows, they founde the hides and cases of such Lions and Tygers as they hadde killed. They write furthermore, that by reason of the ranknesse and fruitfulnessse of the grounde, kye, swyne, and horses, doe marueilously increase in these regions, and growe to a muche bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the first broode. Of the exceeding highnesse of the trees with their fruites, of the garden hearbes, fruites, plantes, and seedes, which our men brought from Spaine, and sowed and set the same in these regions: likewise of the Hartes

and

By what meanes
the Sunne
beames are cause
of feruent heate.

The pernicious
ayre of Dariens.

Toades and Flies
engendred of
dropps of water.

Necessitie hath
no lawe.

A house set on
fire with light-
ning.

A dogge deu-
oured of a
Crocodile.
Tanquam canis
de Nilo.
The byting of
Battes.

Lions and
Tygers.

Beastes were
higher in their
kind.

The third
and oth
and fish
of the
friendly
with the
strange
strumen
admirat
whereof
they cal
before.
of these
will not
they on
so malit
they do
wood is
thinhab
seruitud
priue co
their sle
hereof,
an hours
preserue
small thi
thinges
whiche
that rich
into the
time of
voiage t
For they
either ve
of Nebri
point of
pertaine
the back
Martha,
had of t
to deatr
of the n
tiferous
of those
daiorias
and Val
to searc
to plant
from Da
with fif
Whethe
he onel
the kno
matters

and other foure footed beastes both tame and wilde, also of diuers kindes of fowles, birdes, and fishes, they write euen as wee haue declared in the decades before. Careta, the king of the region of Cioba, was with them for the space of three daies: whom when they had friendly entertained, and shewed him the secretes places of their shippes, their houses also, with their trappers, bardes, and other furnimentes, beside many other thinges which seemed straunge to him, and had further delighted his minde with the harmony of their musical instruments, & given him many rewardes, they dismissed him halfe amazed with too much admiration. He signified vnto them, that there are trees in that prouince, of the planks whereof if shippes were made, they shoulde be safe from the woormes of the sea, which they call Bromas. Howe these woormes gnawe and corrode the shippes, we haue declared before. Our shippes are greatly troubled with this plague, if they lie long in the hauens of these regions. But they affirme that the wood of this tree is so bitter, that the woormes will not taste thereof. There is also an other tree peculiar to these landes, whose leaues if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mans body they cause great blisters, and those so malicious, that except the same be forthwith healed with salte water or fasting spittle, they do incontinently engender deadly paines. They say likewise, that the sauour of the wood is present poison, and that it can no whither be caried without daunger of life. When thinhabitantes of the llande of Hispaniola had oftentimes attempted to shake of the yoke of seruitude, and coulede neuer bring the same to passe, neither by open warre, nor yet by priuie conspiracies, they were determined in the night season to haue killed our men in their sleepe with the smoke of this wood: But when the Christian men had knowledge hereof, they compelled the poore wretches to confesse there intent, and punished the chiefe authors of the deuce. They haue also a certaine hearbe with the sauour wherof they are preserued from the hurt of this venomous wood, so that they may beare it safely. Of these small thinges it shall suffice to haue saide thus much. They looke dayly for many greater thinges to certifie vs of from the llandes of the South sea: For at such time as the messenger whiche brought our letters departed from thence, Petrus Arias prepared an expedition to that riche llande which lieth in the mouth of the gulfes called Sinus S. Michaelis, and reacheth into the South sea, being also left vntouched of Vaschus, by reason that the Sea was at that time of the yeere sore troubled with tempestes, as we haue further declared in Vaschus his voiage to the South. Wee looke therefore dayly for greater thinges then are hitherto past. For they haue now taken in hande to subdue manie other prouinces, which we suppose to be either very riche or to bring forth some straunge workes of nature. Iohannes Diaz Solisius of Nebrissa (of whom we haue made mention before) is sent by the front of the cape or point of Sancti Augustini (which reacheth seuen degrees beyonde the Equinoctial line, and pertaineth to the dominion of the Portugales) to thintent to ouerrunne the South side, from the backe halfe of Paria, Cumana, Cuquibacca, with the hauens of Carthago, and Sancta Martha, of Dariena also, and Beragua, that more perfect and certaine knowledge may be had of those tractes. Further more, one Iohannes Poncius was sent forth with three ships, to destroe the Canibales, both in the lande and llandes there about: aswell that the nations of the more humane & innocent people may at the length liue without feare of that pestiferous generation, as also the better and more safely to searche the secretes and riches of those regions. Many other likewise were sent diuers and sundrie waies, as Gasper Badaicius to search the West partes, Francisus Bexerra, to saile by the corner of the gulfes and Valleys, to passe by the mouth or enteraunce thereof to the East coastes of the gulfes, to searche the secretes of the lande, in the which Fogeda with his company had of late begun to plant there habitation, and had builded a fortresse and a village, Badaicius departed first from Dariena, with foure-score souldiours wel appointed, whome Lodouicus Mercado folowed with fiftie: To Bezerra were also fourescore assigned, and threescore and tenne to Valleys. Whether they shall arrive at safe and commodious hauens, or fall into vnfortunate stations, he onely knoweth whose prouidence ruleth all: for as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of thinges after they haue chaunced. Let vs now therefore come to other matters.

Note.

Broma or Bromas are woormes which destroy shippes.

A venomous tree.

Perhaps their venomous arrows are made of this woode.

A preratiue against poison.

The llands of the South sea.

The rich lland called Dites.

Cap. sancti Augustini. Of the euill success of these voyages, see the decade, 3. Lib. 9.

An expedition to destroy the Canibales.

Looke decade 3. Lib. 9.

The

The seuenth Chapter of the thirde Decade.

The nauigations
of Andreas
Moralis.

A particular de-
scription of the
Ilande of His-
paniola.
Nereides are
nymphes of the
sea, he meaneth
Ilandes.
Tethis the wife
of Neptunus &
goddess of the
sea.

Great pearles.

Hispaniola like
vnto the earthly
Paradise.

The first inha-
bitours of His-
paniola.

Ierusalem.

Mecha.
The Ilandes of
Canarie.

PEtrus Arius the gouernour of the supposed cōtinent, was scarcely entred into the mayne sea with his nauie, onwarde on his voyage to Dariena, but I was aduertised that one Andreas Moralis a pilot, who had oftentimes ouerrun the coastes of these newe seas, and the Ilandes of the same, was come to the court to sel such marchandies as he brought with him from thence. This man had diligently searched the tracte of the supposed continent, and especially the inner regions of the Ilande of Hispaniola, whereunto hee was appoynted by his brother Nicolaus Ouandus (the gouernour of the Ilande, and chiefe Commendator of the order of the knights of Alcantara) because he was a wittie man, and more apt to search such thinges then any other: so that with his owne handes hee drewe fayre cardes and tables of such regions as hee discovered. Wherein as he hath beene founde faithfull of such as haue since had better triall hereof, so is he in most credite amongst the best sort. He therefore resorted to me, as all they are accustomed to do which returne from the Ocean. What I learned of him & diuers other, of thinges heretofore vnknown, I wil now declare. The beginning of this narration, shall be the particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola, forasmuche as it is the heade, and as it were, the principall mart of all the liberality of the Ocean, and hath a thousand & againe a thousand, faire, pleasant, beautifull, & rich Nereides, whiche lye about it on euery side, adorning this their lady & mother, as it were an other Tethis the wife of Neptunus enuyroning her about, & attēding vpō her as their queene & patronesse. But of these Nereides (that is to say, the Ilandes placed about her) wee will speake more hereafter. Lette vs in the meane tyme declare somewhat of the Ilande whiche our menne named Margarita Diues (which the Spanyardes call De las perdas) being nowe well knowne, and lying in the South sea in the gulfes called Sinus Sancti Michaelis (that is) saint Michaels gulfie. This Ilande hath presently brought to our knowledge many straunge and woonderfull thinges, and promiseth no small hope of greater thinges in tyme to come. In this is founde great plenty of pearles, so fayre and great, that the sumptuous queene Cleopatra might haue seemed to weare them in her crownes, chaynes, and braslettes. Of the shellfishes wherein these are engendred, we wil speake somewhat more in the end of this narration. But let vs nowe returne to Hispaniola, moste lyke vnto the earthly paradise. In the description hereof, wee will beginne of the imposition of diuers names, then of the fourme of the Ilande, temperate ayre, and beneficiall hauen, and finally of the deuision of the regions. Therefore for the righter pronounciation of the names, your holines must vnderstand that they are pronounced with the accent, as you may know by the verge set ouer the heads of the vowels, as in the name of the Ilande Matinino, where the accent is in the last vowell, and the like to bee vnderstoode in all other names. They say therefore, that the first inhabitours of the Ilande were transported in their Canoas (that is, boates made of one whole peece of woode) from the Ilande of Matinino, being lyke banished men dryuen from thence by reason of certaine contrarie factiōs and diuisions among themselves, like as we reade howe Dardanus came from Corytho, and Teucus from Creta into Asia, and that the region where they placed their habitation, was afterward called Troianum. The like wee reade howe the Tyrians and Sidonians arriued with their nauy in Libya by the fabulous conduction of Dido. These Matinians in like maner being banished from their owne country, planted their first habitation in that parte of the Ilande of Hispaniola, which they call Cahonao, vpon the banke of the ryuer named Bahaboni as is reade in the beginnyng of the Romans that Æneas of Troy arriued in the regiō of Italie, called Latium, vpon the bankes of the riuer of Tiber. Within the mouth of the ryuer of Bahaboni, lyeth an Iland, where it is sayd that the inhabitantes builded their first house, whiche they named Camoteia. This house they consecrated shortly after, and honoured the same reuerently with continuall giftes and monumentes, euen vntill the comming of our menne, like as the Christians haue euer religiously honoured Hierusalem the fountayne and originall of our sayth: As also the Turkes attribute the like to the citie of Mecha in Araby, and the inhabitantes of the fortunate Ilandes (called the Ilandes of Canarie) to Tyrma, builded vpon a hygh rocke, from the whiche manie were wont with

ioyfull

The thirde

ioyfull
priester
eternal
that sup
away:
that the
and first
king of
languag
had sol
succeed
to this
colde o
The Ila
and this
and bel
that so
large, v
because
worlde:
with the
great, a
as rough
whole is
as in ma
rrible th
mountay
fleere n
holiness
beare in
fore, the
children
knowled
chiefely
particul
auncest
in certa
Areitos
like ma
of certa
loue, an
with eu
dauncir
giue th
cause o
prophe
ing, ar
these p
is, men
at one
maruel
success
peare t
VOL.

to the mayne
one Andreas
the Ilandes
with him from
ent, and espe-
pynted by his
or of the order
o search such
e tables of
f such as haue
He therefore
What I learned
e beginning of
e forasmuche as
e Ocean, and
reides, whiche
ther Tethis the
& patronesse.
ll speake more
che our menne
e well knowne,
saint Michaels
and woonder-
me. In this is
ene Cleopatra
Of the shel-
nd of this nar-
paradise. In the
f the fourme of
of the regions.
stand that they
e heads of the
ast vowell, and
first inhabitours
whole peece of
hence by reason
howe Dardanus
ere they placed
the Tyrians and
o. These Mati-
first habitation
e banke of the
Eneas of Troy
Tiber. Within
the inhabitantes
sacred shortly
tes, euen vntill
ured Hierusalem
like to the cite
l the Ilandes of
were wont with
ioyfull

ioyfull myndes and songs to cast themselves downe headlong, beeing perswaded by their
priestes that the soules of all such as so died for the loue of Tyrma, shoulde thereby enioye
eternall felicitie. The conquerors of the Ilandes of Canarie, founde them yet remaynyng in
that superstition euen vntill our tyme, nor yet is the memorie of their sacrifices vtterly worne
away: the rocke also reserueth the olde name vnto this daye. I haue also learned of late,
that there yet remayneth in the Ilande some of the faction of Betanchor the Frenche manne,
and first that brought the Ilandes to good culture and ciuilitie, being thereto lycenced by the
king of Castile, as I haue sayde before. These do yet (for the most part) obserue both the
language and maners of the Frenche menne, although the heyres and successours of Betanchor,
had solde the two subdued Ilands to certaine men of Castile: Yet the inhabitours which
succeeded Betanchor, & builded them houses, and encreased their families there, do continue
to this day, and liue quietly and pleasantly with the Spanyardes, not griued with the sharpe
colde of Fraunce. But let vs nowe returne to the inhabitantes of Matinino and Hispaniola.
The Ilande of Hispaniola was first named by the first inhabitours Quizqueia, and then Haiti:
and this not by chance, or at the pleasure of suche as deuised these names, but of credulitie
and beleefe of some great effecte. For Quizqueia, is as muche to say as, A great thing, and
that so great, that none may bee greater. They interprete, also, that Quizqueia signifieth
large, vniuersall, or all, in like signification as the Greekes named their God called Pan,
because that for the greatnes thereof, these simple soules supposed it to bee the whole
worlde: and that the Sunne beames gaue light to none other world, but onely to this Ilande,
with the other adiacent about the same, and thereupon thought it most woorthie to be called
great, as the greatest of all other knowne to them. Haiti is as much as to say by interpretation,
as rough, sharpe, or craggie. But by a figuratiue speache called denomination (whereby the
whole is named by parte) they named the whole Ilande Haiti (that is) rough: Forasmuch
as in many places the face of this Ilande is rough, by reason of the craggie mountaynes, hor-
rible thicke woodes, and terrible darke and deepe vallies, enuironed with great and high
mountaynes, although it bee in manie other places exceeding beautifull and flourishing.
Heere must wee somewhat digresse from the order we are entred into. Perhappes your
holinesse will maruell by what meanes these symple men shoulde of so long continuance
beare in minde such principles, wheras they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is there-
fore, that from the beeginning, their princes haue euer beene accustomed to commit their
children to the gouernance of their wise men, which they cal Boitios, to be instructed in
knowledge, and to beare in memorie suche thinges as they learne. They giue themselves
chiefely to two thinges: As generally, to learne the originall and successe of thinges, and
particularly, to rehearse the noble factes of their graundfathers, great graundfathers, and
auncestours, aswell in peace as in warre. These two thinges they haue of old time composed
in certayne meeters and ballettes in their language. These rymes or ballettes, they call
Areitos. And as our minstrelles are accustomed to sing to the Harpe or Lute, so do they in
like manner sing these songs, and daunce to the same, playing on Timbrels made of shels
of certayne fishes: These Timbrels they call Maguei. They haue also songs and ballettes of
loue, and other of Lamentations and mourning, some also to encourage them to the warres,
with euery of them their tunes agreeable to the matter. They exercise themselves much in
dauncing, wherein they are very actiue, and of greater agilitie then our men, by reason they
giue themselves to nothing so much, and are not hindered with apparell, which is also the
cause of their swiftnesse of foote. In their ballets left them of their auncestours, they haue
prophecies of the comming of our menne into their country. These they sing with mourn-
ing, and as it were with groning, bewayle the losse of their libertie & seruitude. For
these prophecies make mention that there shoulde come into the Iland Maguachochios, that
is, men clothed in apparell, and armed with suche swoordes as shoulde cutte a man in sunder
at one stroke, vnder whose yoke their posteritie should be subdued. And here I do not
maruell that their predecessours coulde prophecie of the seruitude and bondage of their
succession (if it be true that is sayd) of the familiaritie they haue with spirites, whiche ap-
peare to them in the night, whereof we haue largely made mention in the ninth chapter of

Betanchor a
Frenchman.

The first names
of Hispaniola.

Their manner of
learning.

Ballets and
rymes.
Singing and
dauncing.
Songs of loue
and mourning.

Prophecies.

Note.

Their familia-
ritie with spi-
rites.

the first decade, where also we haue intreated of their Zemes (that is) their Idolles, and images of deuilles whiche they honoured. But they saye that since these Zemes were taken away by the Christians, the spirites haue no more appeared. Our men ascribe this to the signe of the crosse, wherwith they defende themselves from such spirites: For they are nowe all cleansed and sanctified by the water of baptisme, wherby they haue renounced the deuill, & are consecrated the holy members of Christ. They are vniuersally studious to knowe the bondes and limits of their regions and kingdomes, and especially their Mitani (that is) noble men: so that euen they are not vitterly ignorant in the surueying of their landes. The common people haue none other care then of selling, sowing, and planting. They are most expert fishers, by reason that throughout the whole yeere, they are accustomed dayly to plunge themselves in the ryuers, so that in manner they liue no lesse in the water then on the lande. They are also giuen to hunting: For (as I haue sayd before) they haue two kindes of foure footed beastes whereof the one is, little Conies, called Vsias, and other Serpentes, named Iuannas, much like vnto Crocodiles, of eight foote length, of most pleasant taste, and lyuing on the sande. All the llandes nourishe innumerable byrdes and foules: as Stockdoues, Duckes, Geese, Hearons, beside no lesse number of Poppingayes then Sparrowes with vs. Euery King hath his subiectes diuided to sundrye affaires: as some to hunting, other to fishing, and other some to husbandrie. But let vs nowe returne to speake further of the names. Wee haue sayde that Quizqueia and Haiti, were the olde names of this Ilande. The whole Iland was also called Cipanga, of the region of the mountaynes abounding with golde: lyke as our auncient poets called all Italie Latium, of part thereof. Therefore as they called Ausonia and Hesperia, Italy: euen so by the names of Quizqueia, Haiti, and Cipanga, they vnderstood the whole Iland of Hispaniola. Our men did first name it Isabella, of Queene Helisabeth, whiche in the Spanishe tongue is called Isabella, and so named it of the first Colony where they planted their habitation, vpon the banke neere vnto the sea on the North side of the Ilande, as we haue further declared in the first Decade. But of the names, this shall suffice. Let vs nowe therefore speake of the fourme of the Ilande. They which first ouerranne it, described it vnto me to be like vnto the leafe of a Chesnut tree, with a gulfe toward the West side, lying open agaynst the Ilande of Cuba. But the expert shypmaister Andreas Moralis, brought me to the forme therof somewhat differing from that. For from both the corners, as from the East angle and the West, he described it to be indented and eaten with many great gulfes, & the corners to reache forth very farre, and placeth manie large and safe hauens in the great gulfe on the East side: But I trust shortly so to traualle further herein, that a perfect carde of the particular description of Hispaniola may be sent vnto your holinesse. For they haue now drawne the Geographicall description therof in cardes, euen as your holinesse hath seene the fourme and situation of Spayne, and Italy, with their mountaynes, valleyes, riuers, cities, and colonies. Let vs therefore without shamefastnesse compare the Iland of Hispaniola to Italie, sometime the head and Queene of the whole worlde. For if we consider the quantitie, it shall bee founde little lesse, and much more fruitfull. It reacheth from the East into the West, fife hundred and fourtie myles, according to the computation of the latter searchers, although the Admirall somewhat increased this number, as wee haue sayde in the first Decade. It is in breadth somewhere almost three hundred myles, and in some places narrower, where the corners are extended: But it is surely much more blessed and fortunate then Italie, being for the most parte thereof so temperate and flourishing, that it is neyther vexed with sharpe colde, nor afflicted with immoderate heate. It hath both the stayinges or conuersions of the Sunne (called Solstitia) in manner equall with the Equinociall, with litle difference betweene the length of the day and the night throughout all the yeere. For on the South side, the day ascendeth scarcely an houre in length about the night, or contrariwise. But the difference is more on the North side: Yet are there some regions in the Ilande in the whiche the colde is of some force. But your holynesse must vnderstande this to bee incident by reason of the obiect or neerenesse of the mountaynes, as we will more largely declare hereafter: Yet is not this colde so pearcing or sharpe, that the inhabitants are molested

The deuill is
driven away by
baptisme.

Surueyora.

Serpentes.
A Crocodile is
much like to
our Fowle or
Lyserre.

Cipanga.

Italie called
Latium.

Isabella.

The fourme of
the Iland of
Hispaniola.

A particular
carde of His-
paniola.

Hispaniola com-
pared to Italie.

The tempera-
ture of Hispan-
iola.

The Equinoc-
tiall.

Cold accidental,
and not by the
situation of the
regions.

molested
time,
the wi
fortun
do ene
of sma
also h
and su
declare
they g
the ox
this so
swines
some t
other p
as doe
encrea
wheate
the sam
maner
brawne
all conti
the bre
because
residue
of gold
with sh
Spaine
Of the
mastix,
of this
happy
chamber
apparell
olde in
They a
holson
For the
out gol
partes
with fo
toward
thirde
falleth
obseru
Iland i
finally
beginn
so nar
thing.
is Bain
larger
Ilande

molested with snow or byting frost. In other places, the llande enioyeth perpetuall spring time, and is fortunate with continuall sommer and haruest. The trees flourishe there all the whole yeere, and the meddowes continue alway greene. All thinges are exceeding fortunate, and growe to great perfection. Howe wonderfully all garden hearbes and fruites do encrease, so that within the space of sixteene dayes after the seede is sowed, all hearbes of small steames, as lettise, borage, radishe, and such other, come to their full ripenesse, and also how hearbes of the bigger sort, as Gourdes, Melons, Cucumbers, Pompons, Sitrones, and such other, come to their perfection in the space of thirtie dayes, we haue sufficiently declared els where. Of the beastes transported out of Spayne thither, we haue saide howe they growe to a much greater kinde: Insomuch that when they fall into communication of the oxen or kine, they compare them in bignesse to Elephantes, and swyne to Mules: but this somewhat by an excessiue kinde of speech. Wee haue also made mention howe their swines fleshe is more sauourie and of farre better and more pleasaunt tast, and more wholesome then ours, by reason that they are fedde with the fruites of Mirobalane trees, and other pleasaunt and nourishing fruites of that cuntry, which growe there of themselves, as doe with vs Beeches, Holly, and Okes. Vines would also prosper there with marueylous encrease, if they hadde any regard to the planting therof. The like encrease commeth of wheate, if it be sowed vpon the mountains, where the cold is of some strength: but not in the same plaines, by reason of too much fatnesse and ranknes of the ground. It is in maner incredible to heare, that an eare of wheate should be bigger then a mans arme in the brawne, and more then a span in length, bearing also more then a thousand graynes, as they all confesse with one voyce, and earnestly affirme the same with othes. Yet they say that the bread of the llande called Cazabbi, made of the roote of Iucca, to be more holosome, because it is of easier digestion, and cultured with lesse labour, and greater increase. The residue of the time which they spend not in setting and planting, they bestowe in gathering of golde. They haue nowe such plentie of foure footed beastes, that Horses and oxen hydes, with sheepe skinner, and goate skinner and such other, are brought from thence into Spaine: so that nowe the daughter in many thinges helpeth and succoureth her mother. Of the trees of brasyle, spices, the graine which coloureth scarlet in bright shyning red, mastix, Gossampine cotton, the precious metall called Electrum, & such other commodities of this llande we haue spoken sufficiently before. What therefore canne chaunce more happy vnto man vpon the earth, then there to lyue where he need not to be dryen to close chambers with sharpe colde or faynting heate, nor yet in winter eyther to be laden with heauie apparel, or to burne the shinnes with continuall sitting at the fire, which thinges make men olde in short time, by resoluing the naturall heate, whereof a thousand diseases ensue. They also affirme the ayre to be very healthfull, and the waters and ryuers to be no lesse holosome, as they whiche haue their continuall course through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in maner no ryuers, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes, that are vtterly without golde. But lette vs nowe at length come to the particular description of the inner partes of this blessed llande. Wee haue before declared how it is in maner equally diuided with foure great ryuers, descending from hygh mountaynes, whereof that which runneth towards the East, is called Iunna, as that towards the West is named Attibunicus, the thirde is Nahiba or Haiba, whiche runneth Southward, the fourth is called Iache, and falleth towards the North. But this shypmaister hath brought an other description, obserued of the inhabitants from the beginning. Let vs therfore diuide the whole lland in to fise partes, calling the regions of euery prouince by their olde names: and finally make mention of such thinges as are worthy memory in euery of them. The beginning of the llande on the East side, is contained in the prouince named Caizcimu, so named for that in their language Cimu signifieth the front or beginning of anie thing. After this, foloweth the prouince of Hubaba, and then Caibabo, the fourth is Bainoa. Guaccairima conteineth the West corner. But the last saue one, Bainoa is of larger boundes then the three other. Caizcimu reacheth from the first front of the llande to the riuier Hozama, which runneth by the citie of saint Dominicke. But towarde

Perpetuall
spring and
sommer.

Marueylous
fruitfulness.

Beastes.

Oxen and swine
of exceeding
bignes.

Swine fed with
Mirobalanes,

An eare of
wheat as big as
a mans arme in
the brawne.

Great plentie of
cattayle.

Incommodities
of intemperate
regions.

Holtsome ayre
and water.
Golde euery
where.

The citie of
S. Dominick

the North side, it is ended at the rough mountaines of Haiti. Hubabo is included within the mountaines of Haiti and the riuier Iaciga. Caiabo the third prouince, containeth al that lieth between Cubabo and Dahatio, euen vnto the mouth of the riuier Iaccha or Iache (one of the foure which diuide the lland equally) & ascendeth to the mountaines of Cibaua, where the greatest plentie of gold is founde, out of the which also the riuier Demahus springeth, and ioining with the springes of the riuier of Naiba (being an other of the foure which diuideth the lland toward the South sea) falleth to an other banke of the riuier of saint Dominick, Bainoa beginneth at the confines of Caiabi, and reacheth euen vnto the lland of Cabini, which lieth neare vnto the sea bankes of the North side of the llande, where we saide that they erected the first colonie or habitatiō. The prouince of Guaccaiarima, occupieth the remanēt towarde the West: this they named Guaccaiarima because it is the extreame or vttermost part of the lland. For Iarima in their language, signifieth the taile or end of any thing, and Gua, is an article which they vse oftentimes in the names of things, and especially in the names of their kinges, as Guarionexius & Guaccanarillus. In the prouince of Cazium, are these regions, Higuei, Guanama, Reyre, Xagua, Aramana, Arabo, Hazoa, Macorix, Caiacoa, Guaigua, Baguanimabo, & the rough mountaines of Haiti. Here let vs speake somewhat of their aspirations, which they vse otherwise then the Latines do. It is to be noted that there is no aspiration in their vowels, which haue not the effect of a consonant. So that they pronounce their aspirations more vehemently then we do the consonant f. Yet, all suche wordes as in their tongue are aspirate, are pronounced with like breath and spirite as is f. sauing that heerein the neather lippe is not moued to the vppermost teeth. With open mouthes, and shaking their breastes they breathe out these aspirations, ha, he, hi, ho, hu, as the Hebrues and Arabians are accustomed to pronounce theirs. I finde also that the Spaniardes vse the like vehemencie in the aspirations of those wordes, which they haue receiued of the Moores & Arabians which possessed Spaine, and continued there many yeeres, as in these wordes Almohadda, which signifieth a pillow or boulder, also Almohaza, that is a horse combe: with diuers such other words, which they speake in maner with panting breastes, & vehement spirites. I haue thought it good to rehearse these thinges, because among the the Latines it oftentimes so chaunceth, that only the accent or aspiration, chaungeth the signification of the wordes, as hora, for an houre, and ora, for the plurall number of this worde os, whiche signifieth the mouth: also ora, whiche signifieth regions or coastes. The like also chaunceth in the diuersitie of the accent, as occido I kil, & occido I fal: euen so in the language of these simple men, there are many thinges to be obserued. But let vs now returne to the description. In the prouince of Hubabo, are these regions, Xamana, Canabacoa, Cubabo, with many other, the names whereof I haue not yet learned. The prouince of Cubabo, containeth these regions, Migua and Cacuabana. The inhabitauntes of this region, haue a peculiar language much differing from the common language of the lland, and are called Maioriexes. There is also an other region called Cubana, whose language differeth from the other. Likewise the region of Baiohagua, hath a diuers tongue. There are also other regions, as Dahabon, Cybaho, and Manababo. Cotoy is in the middle of the llande. By this runneth the riuier Nizaus, and the mountaines called Mathaitin, Hazua, & Neibaymao, confine with the same. In the prouince of Bainoa, are } regios of Maguana, Iagohaiucho, Baurucco, Dabaiagua, & Attibuni, so named of the riuier, also Caunoa, Buiaici, Dababonici, Maioguariti, Atiei, Macrazini, Guahabba, Anninici, Mariē, Guaricco, Amaguei, Xaragua, Yaguana, Azuei, Iacchi, Honorucco, Diaguo, Camaie, & Neibaimao. In Guaccaierima the last prouince, these regions are contained Maucarao, Guabagua, Taquenazabo, Nimaca, Baiona the lesse, Cabaini, Iamaici, Manabaxao, Zauana, Habacoa, and Ayquiora. But let vs entreate somewhat of the particulars of the regions. In the prouince of Caicimu, within the great gulfes of the beginning, there is a great caue in a hollow rocke vnder the root of a high mōtaine, about two furlonges from the sea, the entry of this caue is not much vnlyke the doores of a great temple, being very large, and turnyng many wayes. Andreas Moralis the shypmaister at the commandement of the gouernour, attempted to search the caue with the smalest vessels. He sayth that by certayne priue

Of prouinces
diuided into
regions.

The pronun-
ciation of the
Hebrues and
Arabians.
The Moores
and Arabians
possessed
Spaine.

How the aspi-
ration chaungeth
the signification
of wordes.

Diuers lan-
guages in the
lland.

The t

wayes
exper
scare
by any
places
his sh
rysing
encou
side w
long i
entred
the ob
clouds
tinuall
these v
also d
daunge
score n
taynes
of the
and als
the shi
mount
token
regions
three n
riuers
with t
be call
firme l

The
and Ca
byter
and Hi
cania.
& also
thereo
Am
mydde
the c
deuou
water,
are the
Quant
and th
on the
occup
freshe
waded
must
builde

ways many ryuers haue concourse to this caue, as it were a synke or chanel. After the experience hereof, they ceased to maruaile whither other ryuers ranne, which comming four-score & ten myles were swallowed vp, so that they appeared no more, nor yet fel into the sea by any knowne ways. Nowe therefore they suppose that ryuers swallowed vp by the hollow places of that stony mountayne, fall into this caue. As the shypmaister entred into the caue, his shippe was almost swallowed. For he sayth, that there are many whirlpooles and rysinges or boylinges of the water, which make a violent conflict and horrible roryng, one encounteryng the other: also many huge holes and hollow places, so that what on the one side with whirlpooles, and on the other side with the boyling of the water, his shyppe was long in manner tossed vp and downe like a ball. It greatly repented him that he had entred, yet knew he no way how to come forth. He now wandred in darknesse aswell for the obscurenesse of the caue into the which hee was farre entred, as also that in it were thick clouds, engendred of the moist vapours proceeding of the conflict of the waters, which continually fall with great violence into the caue on euery side. Hee compareth the noyse of these waters, to the fal of the famous riuer Nilus from the mountains of Ethiope, they were also deafe, that one could not heare what another saide. But at the length with great daunger and feare, he came forth of the caue, as it had bene out of hell. About three-score myles distant from the chiefe citie of Saint Dominicke, there are certayne hygh mountaynes, vpon the toppes whereof is a lake or standing poole inaccessible, neuer yet scene of the which came lately to the llande, both by reason of the roughnesse of the mountaynes, and also for that there is no path or open way to the toppes of the same. But at the length the shipmaster being conducted thither by one of the kinges, ascended to the toppes of the mountaynes, and came to the poole. He saith that the colde is there of some force: and in token of winter, he founde fearne and bramble bushes, which two growe onely in colde regions. These mountaynes, they call Ymizui Hibabaino. This poole is of fresh water three myles in compasse, and wel replenished with diuers kinds of fishes. Many smal riuers or brooks fall into it. It hath not passage out, because it is on euery side enclosed with the toppes of mountaynes. But let vs now speake of another poole, which may well be called a sea in the mydlande, and bee compared to the Caspian or Hircanian sea in the firme lande of Asia, with certayne other lakes and pooles of freshe water.

Riuers deuoured of causes.

Whirlpooles and conflict of waters.

Clouds in the caue.

The cataracts of Nilus.

A standing poole at the top of a high mountaine.

Fearne and bramble bushes grow onely in cold regions.

The Caspian and Hircanian sea.

The eyght Chapter of the thirde Decade.

The prouince of Bainoa being thrise as bigge as the three first, that is Caizcimu, Vhabo, and Caibaho, includeth a velley named Caiouani, in the which there is a lake of salt, sower and bytter water, as we reade of the sea called Caspium, lying in the firme lande betweene Sarmatia and Hircania. We haue therefore named it Caspium, although it bee not in the region of Hircania. It hath many swallowing gulfes, by the which, both the water of the sea springeth into it, & also such as fal into it from the mountayns are swallowed vp. They thinke that the causes thereof, are so large and deepe, that great fshes of the sea passe by the same into the lake.

A great lake of sower and salt water.

Among these fshes, there is one called Tiburonus, which cutteth a man in sunder by the myddest at one snap with his teeth, and deuoureth him. In the ryuer Hozama, running by the chiefe citie of Saint Dominicke, these Tiburoni doe sometymes come from the sea, and deuoure many of the inhabitantes: especially such as do dayly plunge themselves in the water, to the intent to keepe their bodies very cleane. The riuers which fall into the lake, are these. From the North side Guanibacon: From the Southe, Xaccoci: From the East, Guannabo: And from the West, Ocoa. They saie that these riuers are great and continuall, and that beside these, there are .xx. other small riuers whiche fall into this Caspium. Also on the North side within a furlong of the lake, there are about two hundredth springes, occupying likewise about a furlong in circuite, the water whereof is colde in sommer, freshe also, and holsome to be drunke. These springes make a riuer that can not bee waded ouer, which neare at hande ioining with the other, falleth into the lake. Here must we staie a while. The kinge of this region founde his wife praying in a Chapell builded by the Christians within the precincte of his dominion, and required her company

Sea fishes in lakes of the midlande.

The deuouring fish called Tiburonus.

The riuers that fall into the lake Caspium.

CC. springes within the space of a furlong.

A miracle.

The Indian
language.

A king stricken
dumme and
lame by a
myracle.

Such as are
drowned in the
lake are not
cast vp againe.

A lake of salt &
freshe water.

A lake of freshe
water.

A lake of ten
miles in length.

A plaine of a
hundred and
twenty miles.

A plain of two
hundred miles
in length.

The marrey-
lous fysh
Manati.

pany to satisfie his fleshely lust. His wife reprobred him, and put him in remembrance to haue respectes to the holy place. The wordes which she spake to him were these, Teitoca, Teitoca, which is as muche to say, as, be quiet, be quiet. Techeta cynato guamechyna: That is God will be greatly angry. Guamechyna, signifieth God, Techeta greatly, Cynato angrie. But the husbände haling her by the arme, saide, Guuibba, that is, goe, Cynato macabuca guamechyna: That is, What is that to me if God be angry? And with these wordes as he profered her violence, sodenly he became dumme and lame. Yet by this myracle being stricken with repentaunce, he euer after ledde a religious life, insomuche that from thencefoorth he would neuer suffer the Chapell to be swepte or decked with any other mans hande. By the same miracle, many of thinhabitautes, and all the Christians being moued, resorted deuoutly to the Chapell. They take it in good parte that the king suffered the reuenge of that reproche. Let vs now returne to Caspium. That salte lake is tossed with stormes and tempestes, and oftentimes drowneth small shippes or fisher boates, and swalloweth them vp with the mariners: In so muche that it hath not been hearde of, that any man drowned by shippewracke, euer plunged vp againe, or was caste on the shore, as commonly chaunceth of the dead bodies of suche as are drowned in the sea. These tempestes, are the daintie banquets of the Tiburones. This Caspium, is called Hagueigabon. In the myddest hereof, lyeth an Iland named Guarizacca, to the which they resort when they go a fishing: but it is now cultured. There is in the same playne, an other lake next vnto this, whose water is mixte of salt and freshe, and is therfore neither apt to be drunke, nor yet to be refused in vrgent necessitie: This containeth in length twentie and fise miles, and in breadth eight miles, in some places also nine or ten. It receiue many riuers, which haue no passage out of the same, but are swallowed vp as in the other. Water springeth out of the sea into this also: but in no great quantitie, which is the cause that it is so commixt. In the same prouince towards the West side, there is an other lake of freshe water, not farre distaunt from Caspius: this the inhabitautes call Iainagua. The same salte lake hath on the North side thereof, an other named Guacca: this is but litle, as not past three or foure miles in breadth, and one in length, the water of this may well bee drunke. On the South side of the salt lake, there lieth an other named Babbareo, of three miles in length, and in maner rounde: the water of this is freshe, as of the two other. This lake, because it hath no passage out, nor yet any swallowing gulfe, conueieth the superfluous waters to the sea if it be encreased with the streames which fall somtimes more abundantly from the mountaines: There is in the region of Xamana in the prouince of Bainoa. There is an other called Guaniba, lying betwene the East and the South, neere vnto the side of Caspius: this is ten miles in length, and almost rounde. There are furthermore many other small standing pooles or lakes dispersed here and there in the Ilande, whiche I will let passe, lest I should be tedious in remaining too long in one thing. I will therfore make an ende with this addition, that in all these great plentie of fishe and foule is nourished. All these lakes lie in a large plaine, the which from the East reacheth into the West a hundred and twentie myles, being of breadth xviii. miles where it is narrowest, and, xxv. where it is largest. Looking toward the West, it hath collaterally on the left hand the mountaines of Daiguani, and on the right hand, the mountains of Gaigua, so called of the name of the vale it selfe. At the roots of the mountaynes of Caigua towards the North side, there lyeth an other vale much longer and larger then that before named: For it containeth in length almost two hundred myles, and in breadth thirtie where it is largest, and about. xx. where it is narrowest. This vale in some parte thereof, is called Maguana, in an other place, Iguani, and els where, Hathathiei. And forasmuch as we haue here made mention of this parte of the vale named Hathathiei, wee will somewhat digresse from the discourse of this description, and entreate of a thing so straunge and marueilous, that the lyke hath not bene heard of. So it is therefore, that the king of this region named Caramatexius, taketh great pleasure in fishing. Into his nettes chaunced a young fyshe of the kinde of those monsters of the sea, which the inhabitours called Manati, not founde I suppose in our seas, nor knowne to our men before this tyme. This fishe is foure footed, and in shape lyke

vnto

vnto a Tortoyse, although shee be not couered with a shell, but with scales, and those of such hardnesse, & couched in such order that no arrow can hurte her. Her scales are beset and defended with a thousand knobbes, her backe is playne, and her head vitterly like the head of an Oxe. She liueth both in the water, & on the land, shee is slowe of mouing, of condition meeke, gentle, associable, and louing to mankind, and of a marueilous sence or memory, as are the Elephant and the Delphyn. The king nourished this fish certayne daies at home with the bread of the countrey, made of the root of Iucca & Panycke, and with such other roots as men are accustomed to eate: For when shee was yet but young, hee cast her into a poole or lake neere vnto his pallace, there to bee fed with hande. This lake also receiueh waters, and casteth not the same forth againe. It was in tyme past called Guaurabo: but is now called the lake of Manati, after the name of this fyshe, which wandered safely in the same for the space of xxv. yeeres, and grewe exceeding bigge. Whatsoever is written of the Delphines of Baian or Arion, are much inferiour to the dooinges of this fyshe, which for her gentle nature they named Matum, that is, gentle, or noble. Therefore whensoever any of the kinges familyers, especially such as are knowne to her, resorte to the bankes of the lake, and call Matum, Matum, then she (as mindefull of such benefites as shee hath receiued of Matum men) lifteth vp her head, and cometh to the place whither she is called, and there receiueh meate at the handes of suche as feede her. If anie desirous to passe ouer the lake, make signes and tokens of their intent, she boweth her selfe to them, therewith as it were gently inuityng them to amount vpon her, and conueyeth them safely ouer. It hath beneene seene, that this monstrous fish hath at one tyme safely caryed ouer tenne men singing and playing. But if by chance when shee lifted vp her head she espied any of the Christian men, she would immediately plunge downe againe into the water, and refuse to obey, because shee had once receiued iniurie at the handes of a certayne wanton young manne among the Christians, who hadde cast a sharpe darte at her, although shee were not hurte, by reason of the hardnesse of her skinne, being rough and full of scales and knobbes, as wee haue sayde: Yet did shee beare in memorie the iniurie shee susteyned, with so gentle a reuenge requiting the ingratitude of him, which had dealt with her so vngently. From that day whensoever shee was called by any of her familiars, she would first looke circumspectly about her, least any were present apparelled after the maner of the Christians. She would oftentimes play and wrastle vpon the banke with the Kinges chamberlens, and especially with a young man whom the King fauoured well, being also accustomed to feede her. Shee would be sometimes as pleasaunt and full of play as it had bene a monkey or marmaset, & was of long tyme a great comfort and solace to the whole lland: For no small confluence aswel of the Christians as of the inhabitantes, hadde daily concourse to behold so strange a myracle of nature, the contemplation whereof was no lesse pleasaunt then wonderfull. They say that the meate of this kinde of fyshe, is of good tast, and that many of them are engendred in the seas thereabout. But at the length, this pleasant play-fellowe was lost, and caryed into the sea by the great ryuer Attibunicus, one of the foure whiche diuide the llande: For at that tyme there chaunced so terrible a tempest of wynde and rayne, with such flouds ensuing, that the lyke hath not lightly beneene heard of. By reason of this tempest, the ryuer Attibunicus so ouerflowed the banks, that it filled the whole vale, and mixt it selfe with al the other lakes: at which tyme also, this gentle Matum and pleasant companion, folowing the vehement course & fall of the flouds, was thereby restored to his olde mother and natyue waters, and since that tyme neuer seene agayne. Thus hauyng digressed sufficiently, let vs nowe come to the situation of the vale. It hath collaterally the mountaynes of Cibaua and Caguam, which bring it to the South sea. There is an other vale beeyonde the mountaynes of Cibaua towards the North, this is called the vale of Guarionexius, because that before the memorie of man, the predecessours & auncestours of king Guarionexius, to whom it is descended by ryght of inheritance, were euer the Lordes of the whole vale. Of this king, wee haue spoken largely in the first naration of the llande in the first Decade. This vale is of length from the East to the West, a hundred and fourescore myles, and of breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles where it is narrowest, and fiftie where it is broadest. It beginneth from the region Canabocoa by the prouinces of

A monster of
the sea fedde
with manna
hande.

A fish caryeth
men ouer the
lake.

A marueilous
thing.

The ryuer
Attibunicus.

The great vale
of Guarionexius.

Huhaba

Huhabo and Caiabo, and endeth in the prouince of Bainoa, and the region of Mariena: it lyeth in the middest betwene the mountaynes of Cibaua, and the mountaynes of Cahonai & Caxacubuna. There is no prouince nor any region, which is not notable by the maiestie of mountaynes, fruitfulnessse of vales, pleasantnesse of hilles, and delectableness of playnes, with abundance of faire ryuers running through the same. There are no sides of mountaynes or hilles, no riuers, which abound not with golde and delicate fishes, except only one riuer, which from the original thereof, with the springes of the same breaking forth of the mountaynes, commeth out salt, and so continueth vntill it perish: This riuer is called Babuan, and runneth through the middle of the region Maguana, in the prouince of Bainoa. They suppose that this ryuer hath made it selfe a way vnder the grounde, by some passages of playster, or salte earth: for there are in the llande many notable salte bayes, whereof wee will speake more heereafter. Wee haue declared howe the llande is diuided by foure ryuers, and fyue prouinces. There is also another partition, whiche is this, the whole llande consisteth of the toppes of foure mountaynes, whiche diuide it by the myddest from the East to the West: in all these is abundance of nourishing moysture, and great plentie of golde, of the caues also of the which, the waters of all the ryuers (into the which the caues empty themselves) haue their originall and increase. There are lykewise in them horrible dennesses, obscure and darke vales, and mightie rockes of stone. There was neuer any noyesome beast founde in it, nor yet any rauening foure footed beast: no Lion, no Beare, no fierce Tygers, no craftie Foxes, nor deuouring Woolues. All thinges are blessed and fortunate, & now more fortunate, for that so many thousandes of men are receiued to bee the sheepe of Christes flocke, all their Zemes and Images of deuilles beeing reiected and vtterly out of memorie. If I chaunce nowe and then in the discourse of this narration to reapeate one thing diuers tymes or otherwise to make digression, I must desire your holynesse therewith not to bee offended: For whyle I see, heare, and wryte these thinges, mee seemeth that I am heerewith so affected, that for very ioy I feele my minde stirred as it were with the spirite of Apollo, as were the Sibilles, whereby I am enforced to reapeate the same agayne: especially when I consider howe farre the amplitude of our religion spreadeth her wynges. Yet among these so many blessed and fortunate thinges, this one grieveth mee not a little: that these simple poore men, neuer brought vp in labour, doe dayly perishe with intollerable traualle in the golde mynes, and are thereby brought to such desperation, that many of them kill themselves, hauing no regarde to the procreation of children: insomuch that women with childe, perceiuing that they shall bring forth suche as shall bee slaues to the Christians, vse medicines to destroy their conception. And albeit that by the Kinges letters patentes it was decreed that they shoulde be set at libertie: yet are they constrainned to serue more then seemeth conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wretches is wonderfully extenuate, they were once reckened to bee about twelue hundred thousand heads: but what they are now, I abhorre to rehearse. We will therefore let this passe, and returne to the pleasures of Hispaniola. In the mountaynes of Cibaua, which are in manner in the middest of the llande, in the prouince of Caiabo (where we sayd to bee the greatest plentie of natyue gold) there is a region named Cotobi, situate in the cloudes, enuironed with the toppes of high mountaynes, and well inhabited: it consisteth of a playne of. xxv. miles in length, and. xv. in breadth. This playne is higher then the toppes of other mountaynes: so that these mountaynes may seeme to bee the chiefe progenitours of the other. This playne suffereth alterations of the foure times of the yere, as the Spring, Sommer, Autumne, and winter. Heere the hearbes waxe withered, the trees loose their leaues, and the medowes become hoare: the whiche thinges (as wee haue saide) chaunce not in other places of the llande, where they haue only the Spring and Autumne. The soile of this playne bringeth forth fearne and bramble bushes, bearing blacke berries, or wilde raspes, which two are tokens of colde regions: Yet is it a faire region, for the colde thereof is not very sharpe, neither doeth it afflict the inhabitants with frost or snowe. They argue the fruitfulnessse of the region by the fearne, whose stalkes or stemmes are bigger then a speare or lauelin. The sides of those mountaynes are riche in golde, yet is there none appointed

Golde in all mountaynes, and golde and salt in all ryuers.

Salt bayes.

The ryuers haue their increase from the caues of the mountaynes. No hurtfull or rauening beast in the llande.

The authours excuse.

By what meanes the people of the llande are greatly consumed.

The pleasures of Hispaniola.

The region of Cotobi situate in the cloudes. A playne in the toppes of mountaynes. The higher the colder. Moderate colde in the mountaynes.

Golde.

Mariena: it
of Cahonai
the maicstie
e of playnes,
les of moun-
except only
ing forth of
uer is called
ce of Bainoa,
ome passages
ayes, whereof
ed by foure
whole llande
dest from the
eat plentie of
hich the caues
them horrible
uer any noy-
no Beare, no
sed and fortu-
ned to bee the
ed and vtterly
ion to repete
plynesse there-
mee seemeth
as it were with
eate the same
spreadeth her
deueth mee not
ly perishe with
speration, that
ren: insomuch
l bee slaues to
by the Kinges
ey constraigned
poore wretches
ndred thousand
let this passe,
hich are in
said to bee the
in the cloudes,
eth of a playne
the toppes of
progenitours of
as the Spring,
rees loose their
saide) chaunce
me. The soile
berries, or wilde
the colde there-
nowe. They are
are bigger then
it is there none
appointed

appointed to digge for the same, because it shalbe needfull to haue apparelled miners, and such as are vied to labour: For thinhabitants liuing contented with little, are but tender, and can not therefore away with labour, or abide any colde. There are two riuers which runne through this region, and fall from the toppes of the present mountaines: One of these is named Comoiaxa, whose course is towarde the West, and falleth into the chanell of Nainba: the other is called Tirecotus, which running towarde the East, ioineeth with the riuier of Iunna. In the llande of Creta (now called Candie) as I passed by in my legacie to the Sol-dane of Alcair or Babilon in Egypt, the Venetians tolde mee, that there lay such a region in the toppes of the mountaines of Ida, whiche they affirme to be more fruitfull of wheate corne then any other region of the llande: But forasmuch as once the Cretences rebelled against the Venetians, and by reason of the streight and narrow way to the toppes thereof, long defended the region with armes against thauthoritie of the Senate, and at the length, being foreweried with warres, rendred the same, the Senate commaunded that it should be left desarte, and the streights of thentraunces to be stopped, least any should ascend to the region without their permission. Yet in the yere of Christ M. D. ii. licence was graunted to the husbände men to till and manure the region, on such condition, that no such as were apte to the warres might enter into the same. There is also an other region in Hispaniola, named Cotoby, after the same name: this diuideth the boundes of the prouinces of Vbabo and Caiaba. It hath mountaines, vales, and plaines: but because it is barren, it is not much inhabited: Yet is it richest in golde, for the originall of the abudaunce of golde be-ginneth herein, in somuch that it is not geathered in small graines and sparkes, as in other places: but is founde whole, massie, and pure, mong certaine softe stones, and in the vaines of rockes, by breaking the stones whereof, they folowe the vaines of golde. They haue founde by experience, that the vaine of golde is a liuing tree, and that the same by all waies that it spreadeth and springeth from the roote by the softe pores and passages of the earth, putteth forth branches, euen vnto the vppermost parte of the earth, and ceaseth not vntill it discouer it selfe vnto the open aire: at which time, it sheweth forth certaine beautifull colours in the steede of floures, rounde stones of golden earth in the steede of fruites: and thinne plates in steede of leaues. These are they which are disparceld throughout the whole llande by the course of the riuers, eruptions of the springes out of the mountaines, and violent falles of the flooddes: For they thinke that such graines are not engendred where they are gathered, especially on the drie land, but otherwise in the riuers. They say that the roote of the golden tree extendeth to the center of the earth, and there taketh nourish-mēt of increase: For the deeper that they dig, they finde the trunks thereof to be so much the greater, as farre as they may folowe it for abudaunce of water springing in the moun-taines. Of the branches of this tree, they finde some as small as a thread, & other as bigge as a mans finger, according to the largenesse or straightnesse of the riftes and cliftes. They haue sometimes chaunced vpon whole caues, sustained & borne vp as it were with golden pillers, and this in the waies by the which the branches ascende: the which being filled with the substance of the trunk creeping from beneath, the branche maketh it selfe waie by whiche it maie passe out. It is oftentimes diuided by encountering with some kinde of harde stone: Yet is it in other cliftes nourished by the exhalations and vertue of the roote. But nowe perhappes you will aske me what plenty of golde is brought from thence. You shall therefore vnderstand, that onely out of Hispaniola, the summe of foure hundred, and sometimes fife hundred thousande ducates of golde is brought yeerely into Spayne: as may bee gathered by the fift portion due to the Kings Exchequer, which amounteth to the summe of a hundred and fourescore, or fourescore & tenne thousande Castellanes of golde, and sometymes more. What is to be thought of the llande of Cuba and Sancti Iohannis (otherwise called Burichena) being both very rich in golde, we will declare further hereaf-ter: to haue sayde thus much of golde, it shall suffice. We will now therefore speake some-what of salt, wherewith wee may season and reserue such thinges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of Bainoa, in the mountaynes of Daiaguo, about twelue myles distant from the salt lake, called Caspius, there are salte bayes in the mountaynes, in a

VOL. V.

Q q

maner

Thinhabitantes
of Hispaniola
can abide no la-
bour nor colde.

The llande of
Creta or Candie,
vnder the domi-
nion of the Ve-
netians.

Pure and massie
golde in the re-
gion of Cotoby.
The vaine of
golde is a liuing
tree.
These colours of
floures are called
Marchantes.

The roote of the
golden tree.

The branches of
the golden tree.
Caues susteyned
with pillers of
golde.

The stones of
the golden mines.

What golde is
brought yeerely
from Hispaniola
into Spayne.

Salt of the
mountaynes
very hard and
cleare.

maner as harde as stones, also clearer and whiter then crystall. There are likewise such salt bayes, which growe wonderfully in Laletania (nowe called Catalonia) in the territorie of the duke of Cadona, the chiefe ruler in that region: but such as knowe them both, affirme that these of Bainoa are most notable. They say also, that this cannot bee cleft without wedges and beetelles of Iron: But that of Laletania may easily bee broken, as I my selfe haue prooued. They therefore compare this to suche stones as may easily be broken, and the other to marble. In the prouince of Caizimu, in the regions of Iguanama, Caiacoa, and Guariagua, there are springes whose waters are of marueylous nature, beeing in the superficiall or vppermost parte freshe, in the middest, myxte of salte and freshe, and in the lowest parte salte and soure. They thinke that the salt water of the sea issueth out softly, and the freshe to spring out of the mountaynes: The one falleth downe, and the other ryseth, and are not therefore so vniuersally myxte, whereby the one may vtterly corrupt the other. If any manne lay his care to the grounde neere to any of these springes, hee shall perceiue the grounde there to bee so hollow, that the rebounding noyse of a horseman coming, may bee hearde for the space of three myles, and a footeman one myle. In the last region toward the South, named Guaccaiarima, in the lordship of Zauana, they say there are certayne wild men, which liue in the caues and denues of the mountaynes, contented only with wyld frutes: These men neuer vse the company of any other, nor will by any meanes become tame. They lyue without any certayne dwelling places, and without tyllage or culturyng of the grounde, as wee reade of them whiche in olde tyme lyued in the golden age. They say also that these men are without any certayne language: They are sometymes seene, but our menne haue yet hyde handes on none of them. If at any tyme they come to the sight of men, and perceiue any making towarde them, they flee swifter then a Harte: Yea, they affirme them to bee swifter then Grehounds. What one of these solitarie wanderers dyd, it is worth the hearing. So it is, that our men hauing granges adioyning neere vnto the thicke woods, certayne of them repayed thither in the moneth of September, in the yeere M.D.xiii. in the meane time, one of these wyld men came leaping out of the woode, & approaching somewhat towarde them with smyling countenance, suddenly snatched vppe a childe of theirs, being the sonne of the owner of the grange, which he begot of a woman of the Ilande: He ranne away with the childe, and made signes to our men to follow him: Many followed, aswell of our men, as of the naked inhabitantes, but all in vayne. Thus when the pleasant wanderer perceiued that the Christians ceased to pursue him, hee left the chylde in a crosse way by the which the swynehearde were accustomed to dryue the swyne to their pasture. Shortly after, a swynehearde founde the childe, and brought him home to his father, yet tormenting himselfe for sorrowe, supposing that wyld man to haue beene one of the kinde of the Canibales, and that his sonne was nowe deuoured. In the same Ilande they gather pytch, whiche sweateth out of the rockes, beeing much harder and sourer then the pytch of the tree, and is therefore more commodious to calke or defende shyppes agaynst the wormes called Bromas, whereof wee haue spoken largely beefore. This Ilande also bringeth forth pytch in two kyndes of trees, as in the Pyne tree, and another named Copeia. I neede not speake of the Pyne tree, because it is engendred and knowne in manner euery where. Let vs therefore speake somewhat of the other tree called Copeia. Pitche is likewise gathered of it, as of the Pyne tree, although some say that it is gathered by distilling or dropping of the woode when it is burnt. It is a strange thing to heare of the leafe thereof, and howe necessarie prouision of nature is shewed in the same. It is to bee thought that it is the tree, in the leaues whereof the Chaldeans (beeing the first finders of letters) expressed their mynde beefore the vse of paper was knowne. This leafe is a spanne in breadth, and almost rounde. Our men write in them with pynnes or needles, or any such instrumentes made of metall or wood, in maner as well as on paper. It is to bee laughed at, what our men haue perswaded the people of the Ilande as touching this leafe. The symple soules beleue, that at the commaundement of our men, leaues doe speake and disclose secretes. They were brought to this credulitie by this meanes. One of our menne dwelling in the cite of Dominica, the chiefe of the Ilande, deliuered to his seruant (being a man borne

Salt as hard as stones.

Springes of salt, freshe and sower water.

Hollow caues in the ground.

Certaine wild men liuing in caues and denues.

Men without a certayne language.

Men as swift as Grehounds.

A wilde man runneth way with a childe.

Pitch of the rocke.

Pitch of two kyndes of trees. The Pyne tree. The tree Copeia.

The leafe of a tree in the stead of paper.

They beleue that leaues do speake. A pretie story.

The th
borne
myse)
This n
by app
to his
the lea
sayth?
Conies
fessed
of. Th
rehears
when h
obedien
do disci
receiue
ment, a
in gree
the lett
it bee v
Xagua,
loureth
away fo
strength
wee hau
the Kin
durst no
of those
intent t
thereof
ished ac
whatsoe
certaine
of Maiz
vse of t
applied
to entro

They
whiche
the roo
mushro
baioea
many y
bush li
kinde,
deadly
be of p
found
also, t
by dry
bread,
bread

borne in the Ilande) certayne roasted Conies (whiche they call Vtias, being no bygger then myae) willing him to carie the same to his friende, whiche dwelt further within the Ilande. This messenger, whether it were that he was thereto constrained through hunger, or enticed by appetite, deuoured three of the Conies by the way. Hee to whom they were sent, wrote to his friende in a leafe how many he receiued. When the maister hadde looked a while on the leafe in the presence of the seruant, hee sayde thus vnto him, Ah sonne, where is thy fayth? Could thy greedie appetite preuaile so much with thee, as to cause thee to eate the Conies committed to thy fidelitie? The poore wretche trembling and greatly amased, confessed his fault, and therewith desired his maister to tell him howe he knewe the truth thereof. This leafe (quoth he) which thou broughtest mee, hath tolde me all. Then he further rehearsed vnto him the houre of his coming to his friende, and lykewise of his departing when hee returned. And thus they merily deceiue these seely-soules, and keepe them vnder obedience: insomuche that they take our men for gods, at whose commaundement leaues do disclose such thinges as they thinke most hid and secrete. Both the sides of the leafe receiue the fourmes of letters, euen as dooth our paper. It is thicker then double parchment, and maruelous tough. While it is yet florishyng and newe, it sheweth the letters white in greene, and when it is drie, it becommeth white and harde, like a table of woode, but the letters waxe yelow: It dooth not corrupt or putrifie, nor yet looseth the letters though it bee wet, nor by any other meanes, except it bee burnt. There is another tree named Xagua, the iuyce of whose soure apple, being of a darke redde coloure, stayneth and coloureth whatsoever is touched therewith, and that so firmly, that no washing can take it away for the space of twentie dayes. When the apple is full ripe, the iuyce looseth that strength. The apple is eaten, and of good tast. There is an hearbe also, whose smoke (as wee haue rehearsed the like beefore of a certayne wood) is deadly poyson. On a tyme when the Kinges assembled together, and conspired the destruction of our men, where as they durst not attempt the interprise by open warre, their deuise was, priuily to lay many bundels of those hearbes in a certayne house, which shortly after they intended to set on fire, to the intent that our men, making hast to quench the same, might take their death with the smoke thereof: But, their purposed practyse being bewrayed, the authours of the deuise were punished accordingly. Nowe (most holy father) forasmuche as your holinesse wryteth, that whatsoever we haue written of the newe worlde, doth please you right well, wee will rehearse certaine thinges out of order, but not greatly from our purpose. Of the setting the rootes of Maizium, Ages, Iucca, Battatas, and such other, being their common food, and of the vse of the same, we haue spoken sufficiently before: But by what meanes they were first applied to the comodity of men, we haue not yet declared. Wee nowe therefore entende to entreate somewhat heereof.

Ignorance causeth admiration.

The leafe wherein they write.

A strong colour of the iuyce of an apple.

An hearbe whose smoke is poyson.

The ninth Chapter of the third Decade.

They say that the first inhabitours liued contented with the rootes of Dates, and Magueans, whiche is an hearbe, much like vnto that whiche is commonly called Sengrene or Orpin: also the rootes of Guaiegans, which are round and great, muche like vnto puffes of the earth or mushroomes. They did likewise eate Guaieros, like vnto Persnips, Cibaies like Nuttes, Cibaioes and Macoanes, like vnto Onions, with diuerse other such rootes. They say that after many yeeres, a certaine Boition, that is, a wise olde man, sawe vppon the bankes syde a bush like vnto fenell, & transplanting the root thereof, brought it from wilderness to a better kinde, by nourishing it in gardens. This was the beginning of Iucca, which at the first was deadly poyson to all such as did eate thereof rawe. But for as much as they perceiued it to be of pleasant taste, they determined many wayes to proue the vse thereof, and at the length found by experience, that being sodde, or fryed, it was lesse hurtfull: by whiche meanes also, they came to the knowledge of the venome lying hyd in the iuyce of the roote. Thus by drying, salting, seasoning, and otherwise temperyng it, they brought it to their syne bread, which they cal Cazabbi, more delectable and holsome to the stomacke of man then bread made of wheate, because it is of easier digestion. The same is to be vnderstoode of

The kinde of frutes wherewith the inhabitants lyued first.

Necessitie the mother of all artes.

The syne bread Cazabbi, made of the rootes of Iucca.

Howe Ceres
first founde the
wheate & barley
in Egypt.

The rootes of
Ages.

The authours
saying.

Plinie.

By what names
they salute the
kings children
when they are
borne.
The names and
tytles of the Ro-
mane Empe-
rours.

other roots, and the grayne of Maizium, whiche they haue chosen for their chiefe meate among the seedes of nature, as we reade howe Ceres the daughter of Saturnus, gathered wheate and barley (with such other corne as are now most in vse among men) in Egypt, of certayne graynes taken out of the mudde dryuen from the mountains of Ethiopia by the increase of the ryuer Nilus, & left in the playne at such time as Nilus resorted agayne to his chanell. For the which fact, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to Ceres, who first nourished and increased suche chosen seeds. There are innumerable kindes of Ages, the varietie whereof, is knowne by their leaues and flowers. One kinde of these, is called Guanaguax, this is white both within and without. An other named Guaraguei, is of violet colour without, and white within. The other kindes of Ages, they call Zazaueios, these are redde without and white within. Squietes, are white within, redde without. Tunna, is altogether of violet colour. Hobas is yelowe both of skinne and inner substaunce. There is another named Atibunieix, the skinne of this is of violet colour, and the substaunce white. Aniguamar, hath his skinne also of violet colour, and is white within. Guaccaracca, hath a white skinne, and the substance of violet colour. There are many other which are not yet brought to vs. But I feare me least in the rehearsal of these, I shall prouoke the spurres of malicious persons against me, which will scorne these our doings, for that wee haue written of many such small thinges, to a Prince occupied in such weyghtie affayres, as vnto your holinesse, vpon whose shoulders resteth the burden of the whole Christian worlde. But I woulde aske of these malicious enuyers of other mens traualles, whether Plinie and such other famous writers, when they directed and dedicated such thinges to kinges and Princes, entended onely to profit them to whom they consecrated the fruit of their knowledge. They sometymes intermyxt famous thinges with obscure thinges, light with heauie, and great with small, that by the furtherance of Princes, their vniuersall posteritie might enioye the fruition of the knowledge of thinges. At other times also being entent about particular thinges, and desirous of new thinges, they occupied themselves in searching of particular tractes and coastes, with such thinges as nature brought forth in the same, by this meanes to come the better to more absolute and vniuersall knowledge. Let them therefore contemne our doing, and we will laugh to scorne not their ignorance and slouthfulnesse, but pernicious curiosnesse: and therewith hauing pytie of their frowarde dispositions, will committe them to the venomous Serpentes of whome enuie tooke his first originall. It shall in the meane tyme abundantly content vs, that these thynges doe please your holynesse, and that you doe not despyse our simple vestures, wherewith wee haue only weaved together, and not adourned, gathered, and not described, such marueilous thynges, in the garnyshing whereof, nature hath sufficiently shewed her cunning. Our desire is none other herein, but for your sake to doe our endeour that these thinges may not peryshe: let every man take heereof what lyketh him best. Of the sheepe or bullocke solde in the market, nothing remaineth in the euening, beecause the shoulder pleaseth one, the legge another, and the necke another: yea some haue most phantasie to the bowelles, and some to the feete. Thus hauing enough wandered, lette vs returne to our purpose, and declare with what words they salute the Kinges children when they are first borne, and how they apply the beginning of their liues to the end, and why their kinges are called by many names. Therefore when the King hath a sonne borne, suche as dwell neere about his pallace or village, repayre to the queenes chamber, where one saluteth the newe borne childe with one name, and another with another name. God saue thee thou shining lampe, sayth one: Another calleth him, bright and cleare. Some name him the victourer of his enemies: and other some, the puissaunt conquerour descended of bloud royall, and brighter then golde: with diuers other suche vayne names. Therefore like as euery of the Romane emperours was called Adiabenicus, Parthicus, Armenicus, Dacicus, Gothicus, and Germanicus, according to the titles of their parents and auncesters: euen so by the imposition of names inuented by other kinges, Bechicus Anacacoa the lord of the region of Xaragua (of whom and of the wise woman Anachaona his sister, we haue spoken largely in the first Decade) was called by all these names following, Tureigua Hobin, which is as much to saye as, a king shining as bright as laton, Starei, that is, bright, Huibo, highnesse,

chiefe meate
rnus, gathered
) in Egypt, of
ppia by the in-
agayne to his
to Ceres, who
ndes of Ages,
these, is called
ei, is of violet
eios, these are
Tunna, is al-
taunce. There
ataunce white,
accaracca, hath
ich are not yet
e the spures of
ee haue written
s, as vnto your
worlde. But I
Plinie and such
es and Princes
nowledge. They
and great with
oye the fruition
lar things, and
lar tractes and
nes to come the
emne our doing,
nicious curious-
itte them to the
the meane tyme
hat you doe not
d not adourned,
whereof, nature
for your sake to
reof what lyketh
in the euening,
other: yea some
ough wandered,
Kinges children
to the end, and
a sonne borne,
mber, where one
ame. God saue
re. Some name
ur descended of
mes. Therefore
rmenicus, Daci-
uncesters: euen
the lord of the
we haue spoken
na Hobin, which
at, Huibo, high-
nesse,

nesse, Duiheynequen, a rich floud. With all these names, and more then fourtie other such, doth king Beuchius magnifie himselfe as often as hee commaundeth any thing to bee done, or causeth any proclamation to be made in his name. If the cryer by negligence leaue out any of these names, the king thinketh it to sounde greatly to his contumely and reproche: The like is also of other. Howe fondly they vae themselves in making their testaments, wee will now declare. They leaue the inheritance of their kingdomes to the eldest sonnes of their eldest sisters. If shee sayle, to the eldest of the seconde syster, and so of the thirde if the seconde also sayle: For they are out of doubt that those children come of their bloude, but the children of their owne wyues, they counte to bee not legitimate. If there remayne none of their sisters children, they leaue the inheritance to their brothers: and if they sayle, it descendeth to their owne sonnes. Last of all, if all these sayle, they assigne it to the worstiest, as to him that is of greatest power in all the llande, that hee may defende their subiectes from their auncient enemies. They take as many wyues as them lysteth. They suffer the best beloued of the kinges wyues and concubines to be buried with him. Anachaona the sister of Beuchius the king of Xaragua, being a woman of such wisdom and cunning, that in making of rymes and balletes shee was counted a prophetisse among the best, commanded, that among all the wiues and concubines of the King her brother, the fayrest (whose name was Guanahattabenechina) shoulde bee buried aliue with him, and two of her wayting maydes with her: Shee would surely haue appoynted diuers other to that office, if shee had not bene otherwise perswaded by the prayers of certayne fryers of saint Frances order, which chanced then to bee present. They say that this Guanahattabenechina had none in all the llande comparable to her in beautie. She buried with her all her jewels, and twentie of her best ornamentes. Their custome is, to place beside euery of their sepulchres, a cuppe full of water, & a portion of the fyne bread of Cazabbi. In Xaragua, the region of this king Beuchius, and in Hazua, part of the region of Caiabo, also in the fayre vale of salte and freshe lakes, and lykwise in the region of Yaquino in the prouince of Bainoa, it rayneth but seldome: In all these regions are fosses or trenches made of olde time, whereby they conuey the water in order to water their fieldes, with no lesse art then doe the inhabitours of newe Carthage, and of the kingdome of Murcien in Spartaria for the seldome fall of rayne. The region of Maguena, diuideth the prouince of Bainoa from Baiabo, and Zauana from Guacciarima. In the deepe vales, they are troubled with rayne more often then needeth. Also the confines of the chiefe citie, named S. Dominike, are moister then is necessarie. In other places, it raineth moderately. There are therefore in the lland of Hispaniola, diuers and variable motions of the elementes, as we reade the like of many other regions. Of their colonies or mansions which the Spaniardes haue erected in this lland, we haue spoken sufficiently before. They haue since that time builded these villages, Portus Platae, Portus Regalis, Lares, Villanoua, Azuam, and Salua Terra. Hauing saide thus much of the lland of Hispaniola, the mother and lady of the other llandes, and as it were Tethys the most beautifull wife of Neptunus the God of the sea, let vs now entreate somewhat of her Nymphes and fayre Nereides, which waite vpon her, and adourne her on euery side. We will therefore begin at the nearest, called the newe Arethusa, so named of the fountaine Arethusa in the lland of Sicilie. This is famous by reason of a spring, but otherwise vnprofitable. Our men named it of late Duas Arbores, because it hath onely two trees growing in it: neere vnto the which is a fountaine that cometh from the lland of Hispaniola through the secrete passages of the earth vnder the sea, and breaketh forth in this llande, as the riuier Alpheus in Achaia runneth vnder the sea from the citie of Elde, and breaketh forth in the lland of Sicilie in the fountaine Arethusa. That the fountaine of this newe Arethusa, hath his originall from the llande of Hispaniola, it is manifest heereby, that the water issuing out of the fountaine bringeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche growe in Hispaniola, and not in this llande. They saie that the fountaine hath his originall from the riuier Yamiroa, in the region of Guacciarima, confining with the lande of Zauana. This llande is not past a mile in circuite, and commodious for fishermen. Directly towards the East (as it were the porter keeping the entrie to Tethis) lieth the llande

Howe they make their testaments.

So did great Alexander.

The kinges wyues & concubines are buried with him.

They burie their jewels with them. A dreame of another life after this.

Where it rayneth but seldome.

Where it rayneth much

Variable motions of the Elementes.

The colonies and villages which the Spaniardes haue builded. The other llandes about Hispaniola. The llande of Arethusa.

A spring running vnder the sea from Hispaniola to Aethiopia.

The Iland of
Sancti Iohannis.

The Ilande of
Cuba.

Habitable regions
under the
Equinoctiall.

The riche golde
mines of Cuba.

The Iland of
Iamaica.

The Iland of
Guadalupea.

The gum called
Anime album.

Dates.

Pine trees.

The Canibales.

Whereby it was
thought that
there were
Ilandes of
women.
Hony in trees
and rockes.

The Ilande Des-
iderata.
The Ilande Ga-
lanta.

The Ilandes of
Todos Sanctos,
or Barbata.
The Ilande
Monserratus.
The Ilande
Antiqua.

of Sancti Iohannis (otherwise called Burichena) whereof we haue spoken largely before: this aboundeth with gold, and in fruitfull soile is equal with her mother Hispaniola: in this are many colonies or mansions of Spaniards, which apply them selues to geathering of golde. Towards the West on the North side, great Cuba (for the longnesse thereof, long supposed to be continent or firme lande) wardeth our Tethis on the backe halfe. This is much longer then Hispaniola, and from the East to the West is diuided in the middest with the circle called Tropicus Cancrī. Hispaniola and the other lying on the South side of this, are included almost in the mydde space betweene the saide Tropike and the Equinoctiall line, which many of the olde writers supposed to be vnhabitable and desert, by reason of the feruent heate of the Sunne in that clime, as they coniectured: but they were deceiued in their opinion. They affirme that richer golde mynes are founde in Cuba, then in Hispaniola. They say also that euen now while I write these thinges, there is golde geathered together ready to the melting, amounting to the quantitie of a hundred and fourescore thousand Castellans of gold, an argument surely of great riches. Iamaica is more towarde the South then these, and is a pleasaunt and fruitfull Ilande, of soyle apt for corne, grasse and setter, it consisteth of onely one mountaine: the inhabitantes are warlike men, and of good wit. Colonius compared it to Sicilie in bignes. They which of late searched it more exactly, say that it is somewhat lesse, but not much. It is thought to be without golde and precious stones, as the like was supposed of Cuba at the beginning. The Ilande of Guadalupea (first named Caraqueira) lying on the South side of Hispaniola is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two gulfes (as we reade of great Britanie, nowe called England, and Calidonia, nowe called Scotland) being in maner two Ilandes. It hath famous Portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries call Animæ Album, whose fume is holmesome against reumes and heauinesse of the head. The tree whiche engendereth this gumme, beareth a fruit much like vnto a Date, being a spanne in length. When it is opened, it seemeth to containe a certaine sweete meale. As our husbandmen are accustomed to reserue Chestnuts, and such other harde fruites, all the winter, so do they the Dates of this tree, being much like vnto a Figge tree. They founde also in this Ilande, Pine trees, of the best kinde, and such other daintie dishes of nature, whereof we haue spoken largely before: Yea they thinke that the inhabitautes of other Ilandes, had their seedes of so many pleasaunt fruites from hence. For the Canibales, being a wilde and wandering people, and ouerrunning all the countreie about them, to hunte for mans fleshe were accustomed to bring home with them whatsoever they founde straunge or profitable in anye place: They are intractable, and will admit no straungers. It shall therefore be needefull to ouercome them with great power: For as well the women as men, are experte archers, and vse to inuene their arrowes. When the men go forth of the lande a man hunting, the women manfully defend their coastes against such as attempt to inuade the same. And hereby I suppose it was thought, that there were Ilandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as Colonius the Admiral him selfe perswaded mee, as I haue saide in the first Decade. This Ilande hath also fruitfull mountaines and plaines, and notable riuers. It nourisheth honny in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in Palma one of the Ilandes of Canaria, honny is geathered among the briers and bramble bushes. About. xviii. miles Eastward from this Ilande, lieth an Ilande which our men named Desiderata, being. xx. miles in circuite, and verie faire. Also about tenne miles from Guadalupea towarde the South, lieth the Ilande of Galanta, being thirtie miles in circuite, and plaine: It was so named for the neatnesse and beautifulnesse thereof. Nine miles distant from Guadalupea towarde the East there are sixe small Ilandes, named Todos Sanctos, or Barbata: these are full of rockes, & barren, yet necessary to be known to such as vse to trauaile the seas of these coastes. Againe, from Guadalupea. xxxv. miles towarde the North, there is an Ilande named Monserratus, containing in circuite fourtie miles, hauing also in it a mountaine of notable height. The Ilande named Antiqua, distante from Guadalupea thirtie miles, is about fourtie miles in circuite. Diegus Colonius the sonne and heire of Christophorus Colonius, tolde me that his wife (whom he left in the Ilande of Hispaniola at his coming into Spaine to the courte) did write vnto him, that of

late

The t

late a
On the
Ilande
this Ila
rounde
come
egges
much
to the
creatio
swarmi
of their
also co
these,
cessary
and ma
therewi
Libia,
North s
tillage
nowe th
receiue
great p
booke v
boa, the
sea, lea
with pe
infestio
Wee de
pestes
knowne
him fro
water o
purpos
were so

AT t
that on
therefo
before
teined
they ca
Latin to
next to
of pear
couey
which
of the
great b
Guazza
word to
bows.

largely before :
Hispaniola : in
to geathering of
e thereof, long
halfe. This is
e middest with
th side of this,
equinoctiall line,
eason of the fer-
eeueid in their
in Hispaniola.
thered together
re thousand Cas-
arde the South
affes and settes
and of good wit.
it more exactly,
de and precious
Guadalupea (first
neerer the Equi-
Britanie, nowe
landes. It hath
Animæ Album,
e whiche engen-
n length. When
andmen are ac-
so do they the
this Ilande, Pine
we haue spoken
d their seedes of
e and wandering
eshe were accus-
le in anye place:
eedefull to ouer-
archers, and vse
hunting, the wo-
ne. And hereby
ely with women,
st Decade. This
ourisheth hony in
ria, hony is gea-
from this Ilande,
e, and verie faire.
ande of Galanta,
esse and beauti-
re are sixe small
en, yet necessary
rom Guadalupea.
eining in circuite
named Antiqua,
Diegus Colonius
m he leste in the
nto him, that of
late

late among the Ilandes of the Canibales, there is one founde which aboundeth with golde. On the leste side of Hispaniola toward the South, neere vnto the hauen Beata, there lieth an Ilande named Portus Bellus: they tell marueilous thinges of the monsters of the sea about this Ilande, and especially of the Tortoises, for they say that they are bigger then great rounde targettes. At suche time as the heate of nature moueth them to generation, they come forth of the sea, and making a deepe pit in the sande, they lay three or foure hundred egges therein. When they haue thus emptied their bagges of conception, they put as much of the sande againe into the pit, as may suffice to couer the egges, and so resort againe to the sea, nothing carefull of their succession. At the day appointed of nature to the procreation of these beastes, there creepeth out a multitude of Tortoises, as it were pissemires swarming out of an ant hill: and these onely by the heate of the Sunne, without any helpe of their parentes. They say that these egges are in maner as bigge as Geese egges. They also compare the fleshe of these Tortoises, to be equall with veale in taste. There are beside these, innumerable Ilandes, the which they haue not yet searched, nor yet is it greatly necessary to sift this meale so finely. It may suffice to vnderstande that there are large landes, and many regions, which shall heereafter receiue our nations, tounes, and maners, and therewith embrace our religion. The Troians did not sodeinly replenish Asia, the Tirians Libia, nor the Greekes and Phenices Spaine. As touching the Ilandes whiche lie on the North side of Hispaniola, I haue let passe to speake: For albeit they are commodious for tillage and fishing, yet are they leste of the Spaniards as poore and of small value. We will nowe therefore take our leaue of this old Tethis, with her moist and watery Nymphes, and receiue to our new acquaintance the beautiful lady of the South sea, richly crowned with great pearles, the Ilande of Dites being riche both in name and in treasure. In my Epistle booke which I sent vnto your holinesse this last yeere, I declared howe Vaschus Nunnez Balboa, the Capitaine of them which passed ouer the daungerous mountaines toward the South sea, learned by reporte, that in the prospect of those coastes there lay an Ilande abounding with pearles of the greatest sort, and that the king thereof was riche, and of great power, infesting with warres the other kinges his borderers, and especially Chiapes and Tumacchus: Wee declared further, howe at that time it was left vntouched by reason of the raging tempestes which troubled that South sea three monethes in the yeere. But it is now better knowne to our men, who haue now also brought that fierce king to humanitie, and conuerted him from a cruell Tyger, to one of the meeke sheepe of Christes flocke, sanctified with the water of baptisme, with all his familie and kingdome. It shall not therefore be from our purpose to declare, by the gouernance of what capitaines, or by what meanes these thinges were so happily atchieued.

The Ilande
Portus Bellus.
Great Tortoises.
The generation
of Tortoises.

The Egges of
Tortoises.
Innumerable
Ilandes.

Troians.
Tirians.
Greekes.
Phenicians.
The North
Ilandes.

The Ilandes of
the South sea.

The Ilande of
pearles.

Wilde beastes
must be tamed
with the rod.

The tenth Chapter of the thirde Decade.

AT the arryual of Petrus Arias the new gouernour of Dariena, he gaue commandement that one Gaspar Moralis should take in hand the expedition to the Ilande of Dites. Hee therefore tooke his voyage first to Chiapes & Tumacchus kinges of the South, whom Vaschus before had conciled & left friends to the Christians. They friendly & magnifically entertained our men, who prepared the a navy of 3 kings boats to passe ouer into this Iland, which they cal Dites, and not Margarita or Margaritea, although it abound with pearls, which in the Latin tong are called Margaritæ. For they first called another by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of Os Draconis in the regiõ of Paria, in the which also is foud great plerty of pearles. Caspar brought with him only xl. armed men to the Iland, for that he could couey ouer no greater number, by reasõ of the smalnes & narrownes of their boates or barks, which they cal Culchas made of one whole peece of timber, as we haue sayd before. The king of the Iland came forth against them fiersly, with cruel and threatning countenance, & with a great band of armed men, crying in maner of a larome, & in token of the battayle, Guazzauara Guazzauara, which is asmuch to say as, battaile against the enemy, & is (as it were) a watch word to giue the onset: wherewith also they threw their darts, for they haue not the vse of bows. They were so obstinate & desperate, that they assailed our men w foure Guazzauaras, that

An expedition to
the Ilande of
Dites in the
South sea.

The Ilande of
Margarita.

Os Draconis.
Paria.

A conflict.

that is, batailles. At the length our men with certaine of Chiapes and Tumacchus men (beeing olde enemies to this king of the llande) got the vpper hande, by reason they assailed the king sodenly and vnawares. Yet was hee determined to assemble a greater power, and once againe to attempt the fortune of warre, but that he was otherwise perswaded by the kinges his borderers, which counselled him to giue ouer, and submit himselfe, sometime by the example of themselves & other, threatning the destruction of his flourishing kingdom, and otherwhiles declaring vnto him the humanitie and gentlenesse of our men, by whose friendship hee might obteyne honour and quietnesse to him and his: willing him furthmore to cōsider, what chaunced vnto them which the yeere before resisted and aduentured the hasarde of the bataille, as did these kings Poncha, Pocchorrosa, Quarequa, Chiapes, and Tumacchus, with such other. By these perswasions, the king submitted himselfe, and came friendly to our men, whom he conducted to his palace, which they say to bee marueilously adourned and prince like. As soone as they entred into the pallace, hee brought forth a basket of curious workemanship, and full of pearles, which hee gaue them. The summe of these pearles amounted to the weight of a hundred & ten pounds, after. viii. ounces to the pounce: being againe rewarded of our men, with such tryfles as they brought with them of purpose, as garlandes of Christall, and glasse, and other counterfeit stones of diuers colours, with looking glasses also, and laton belles, and especially two or three Iron hatchets (which they more esteeme then great heapes of golde) he thought himselfe abundantly recompenced. They laugh our men to scorne, that they will depart with so great and necessarie a thing for anie summe of golde: affirming an axe or hatchet to be profitable for many vses of men, and that golde serueth onely for wanton pleasures, and not to be greatly necessarie. Being therefore ioyfull and glad of the friendship of our men, he tooke the captain by the hande, and brought him with certaine of his familiars to the highest towre of his palace, from whence they might prospecte the mayne sea: then casting his eyes about him on euery side, and looking towarde the East, hee saide vnto them, Beholde, heere lyeth open before you the infinite sea, extended beyonde the sunne beames: then turning him toward the South and West, he signified vnto them that the lande whiche laie before their eyes, the toppes of whose great mountaines they might see, was exceeding large: then comming somewhat neerer, hee sayde, Beeholde these llandes on the right hande and on the left, which all obey vnto our empyre, and are ryche, happie, and blessed, if you call those llandes blessed whiche abounde with golde and pearle. We haue in this lland little plentie of golde: but the deepe places of all the seas about these llandes are full of pearles, whereof you shall receyue of mee as many as you will require, so that yee persist in the bonde of friendshippe which you haue begunne. I greatly desire your friendshippe, and would gladly haue the fruition of your thinges, whiche I sette muche more by then millions of pearles: You shall therefore haue no cause to doubt of any vnfaithfulnesse or breach of friendshippe on my behalfe. Our menne gaue him lyke friendly wordes, and encouraged him with many fayre promises to doe as he hade sayde. When our menne were nowe in a readinesse to departe, they couenanted with him to pay yeerely to the great king of Castyle a hundred pounce weight of pearles. He gladly agreed to their request, and tooke it for no great thing, nor yet thought himselfe any whit the more to become tributarie. With this king they founde such plentie of Harts and Conies, that our men, standing in their houses, might kill as many as them list with their arrowes. They liue heere very pleasauntly, hauing great plentie of all thinges necessarie. This lland is scarcely sixe degrees distant from the Equinoctiall lyne. They haue the same maner of breade, made of rootes and the grayne of Maizium, and wine made of seedes and fruites, euen as they haue in the region of Comogra, and in other places, aswell in the llandes, as in the firme lande. This king is nowe baptised, with all his familie and subiectes. His desire was, at his baptisme, to bee named Petrus Arias, after the name of the gouernour. When our men departed, hee accompanied them to the sea side, & furnished them with boates to returne to the continēt. Our menne diuided the pearles among them, reseruing the fift portion to be deliuered to the officers of the kinges Exchequer in those partes. They say that these pearles were marueilous precious, faire,

orient,

The king of the
llande of Dites
submitte himselfe.
The kinges
pallace.
A hundredth and
ten pound weight
of pearles.
Axes and hatch-
ets more es-
teemed then
golde.

The kinges
ordres.

Llandes ryche in
golde and pearles.

C. pounce
weight of pearles
yeerely for a
tribute.
Plentie of
Hartes and
Conies.

Wine of fruits
and seedes.
The king is
baptised.

The fift parte of
pearles due to
the king.

orien
nutte
pred
fourti
one b
as big
who g
her h
very p
were
bee th
parts
dayes,
chant
pearle
follow
and ou
they w
therefo
sea, b
same,
and su
conuer
or thre
this lla
Captai
beeing
kinde o
in Hen
beleue
whereo
beeing
of their
after, t
ming R
they a
closed
ing his
places.
the sea
Ocean
sea by
becom
or othe
be as i
knowle
handle
affirme
deepest
the br
are cre
(and the
vol.

umacchus men
in they assailed
er power, and
rsuaded by the
e, sometime by
ing kingdome,
men, by whose
g him further:
and aduentured
h, Chiapes, and
helfe, and came
e marueilously
rought forth a
The summe
viii. ounces to
y brought with
stones of diuers
ee Iron hatchets
elfe abundantly
o great and ne-
e profitable for
not to be greatly
e tooke the cap-
highest towre of
his eyes about
Beholde, heere
s: then turning
hiche laie before
ding large: then
t hande and on
ssed, if you call
this Iland little
re full of pearles,
ee persist in the
riendshippe, and
by then millions
esse or breach of
and encouraged
were nowe in a
t king of Castyle
and tooke it for
tributarie. With
ng in their houses,
easantly, hauing
distant from the
and the grayne of
gion of Comogra,
is now baptised,
bee named Petrus
accompanied them
ur menne diuided
icers of the kinges
s precious, faire,
orient,

orient, & exceeding big: insomuch that they brought many with them bigger then hasell
nuttres. Of what pryse, & value they might bee, I consider by one pearle the whiche Paulus,
predecessour to your holines, bought at the secōd hand of a marchant of Venice for scure & ^{Big pearles.}
fourtie thousand ducates. Yet amōg those which were brought from this Iland, there was ^{A pearle for a Pope.}
one bought euen in Dariena, for a thousand & two hundred Castellās of gold this was almost
as big as a meane walnut, & came at the length to the handes of Petrus Arias the gouernour,
who gaue it to that noble and faithfull woman his wife, of whose manner of departure with
her husband, we haue made mention before. We must then needes thinke that this was
very precious, whiche was bought so deare among such a multitude of pearles, where they
were not bought by one at once, but by poundes, and at the least by ounce. It is also to
bee thought that the Venetian marchant bought his for no great summe of money in the East
parts: But he solde it the dearer, for that he chaunced to liue in those lasciuious and wanton
dayes, when men were giuen to such nice and superfluous pleasures, and met with a mar-
chant for his purpose. But let vs nowe speake somewhat of the shellfishes, in the which
pearles are engendred. It is not vnknowne to your holynesse, that Aristotle, and Plinie his
follower, were of diuers opinions as concerning the generation of pearles. But these Indians,
and our men, rest onely in one assertion, not assenting to them in any other: as, eyther that
they wander in the sea, or that they mouue at any tyme after they are borne. They will
therefore that there be certayne greene places, as it were meddowes, in the bottome of the
sea, bringing forth an hearbe much like vnto Tyme, and affirme that they haue seene the
same, and that they are engendred, nourished, and growe therein, as we see the increase, ^{Herbes in the bottome of the sea.}
and succession of Oysters to grow about themselves. Also that these fishes delight not in the
conservation or companie of the sea dogges, nor yet to bee contented with onely one, two,
or three, or at the most foure pearles, affirming that in the fysching places of the King of
this Ilande, there was founde a hundred pearles in one fyshe, the whiche Gaspar Moralis the
Captaine himselfe, and his companions, diligently numbred: For it pleased the King at their
beeing there, and in their presence, to commaunde his dyuers to goe a fysching for those
kinde of fyshes. They compare the matrices of these fyshes, to the places of conception
in Hennes, in the whiche their egges are engendred in great multitudes and clusters, and
beleeue that these fyshes bring forth their birth in like manner. For the better prooffe
whereof, they say that they founde certayne pearles comming forth of their matrices, as
beeing nowe come to the tyme of their full ripenesse, and moued by nature to come out
of their mothers wombe, openyng it selfe in time conuenient: lykewise, that within a while
after, they sawe other succede in like manner. So that to conclude, they sawe some com-
ming forth, and othersome yet abiding the tyme of their perfection: which being complete,
they also became loose, and opened the matrice. They perceyued the pearles to bee in-
closed in the myddest of their bellies, there to bee nourished and increase, as an infant suck-
ing his mothers pappes within her wombe, beefore hee mouue to come forth of her priuie
places. And if it chaunce any of these shellfishes to bee founde scattered in the sande of
the sea (as I my selfe haue seene Oysters dispareled on the shores in dyuers places of the
Ocean) they affirme that they haue beene violently driuen thither from the bottom of the
sea by force of tempestes, & not to haue wandered thither of themselves: But, that they
become white by the clearnesse of the morning dewe, or waxe yelowe in troubled weather,
or otherwise that they seeme to reioyce in fayre weather and cleare ayre, or contrarywise, to
be as it were astonysht and dymme in thunder and tempestes, with such other: the perfect
knowledge hereof, is not to be looked for at the handes of these vnlearned men, which
handle the matter but grossely, and enquire no further then occasion serueth. Yet do they
affirme by the experience and industrie of the dyuers, that the greatest pearles lie in the
deepest places, they of the meane sort hygher, and the least highest of all, and neerer to
the brimme of the water: And say therefore, that the greatest doe not wander, but that they
are created, nourished, and increase in the deepest places of the sea, whether fewe dyuers
(and that but seldome) dare aduenture to dyue so deepe to gather them, aswell for feare of
the sea crabbes, which wander among these pearle fyshes to feede of them, and for feare of

Big pearles.
A pearle for a
Pope.

An other pearle
of great price.

Nice and su-
perstitious
pleasures.
Diuers opinions
of the generation
of pearles.

Herbes in the
bottome of the
sea.

A hundred
pearles in one
shell fyshe.

The matrice of
the pearle fyshe.

The birth of
pearles.

Where the
biggest meane &
least pearles are
engendred.

Sea crabbes.

The sea muscles
wherein pearles
are engendred.

other monsters of the sea, as also least their breath should fayle them in too lōg remainyng in the water: And this they say to be the cause why the oldest (& therefore biggest) sea muscles inhabite the deepest places, from whence they are not lightly moued by tēpests. Furthermore, how much the bigger & older these fishes are, they say that in their larger matrices, the greater number & bigger pearles are found, and that for this cause there are fewer found of the biggest sort. They thinke also, that when they first fal from their fishes in the deepe places, they are deuoured of other fishes, because they are not yet heard. Againe, the smallest differ from the biggest in a certaine swelling or impostumation, which the Spanyards call a tympany: For they denie that to be a pearle which in olde muscles cleaueth fast to the shell, but that it is a wart, which being rased from the shell with a fyle, is round & bright but only of one side, and not precious, being rather of the nature of the fish it selfe, then of a pearle. They confesse that they haue seene certaine of these muscles cleauing on rockes, yet these but fewe, and nothing woorth. It is also to bee thought, that the pearle fishes or sea muscles whiche are founde in India, Arabia, the redde sea, or Taprobana, are ruled in such order as the aforementioned famous authours haue written: For their opinion herein is not vtterly to be reiected, forasmuche as they were learned men, and trauayled long in the searching of these thinges. But wee haue nowe spoken sufficiently of these sea fyshes, and of their egges, which the fond nicenesse and wantonnesse of menne haue made dearer then the egges of hennes or geese. Let vs therefore intreate somewhat of other particular thinges, which are come to our knowledge of late. Wee haue elsewhere largely described the mouthes of the gulfes of Vraba, with sundry and variable regions diuided with the manifolde gulfes of that sea: But as concerning the West coastes, in the which our men haue builded houses, and planted their habitations on the bankes of Dariena, I haue no newe matter to write. Yet as touching the East partes of the gulfes, I haue learned

The regions of
the East side of
the gulfes of
Vraba.

The region of
Caribana.

The originall of
the Canibales.

The villages of
Caribana.

Manhattens.

Bookes
Looke in the
beginning of the
bookes of the
first voyage
founde.

as followeth. They say that the vniuersall lande of the East region of the gulfes, from the corner thereof farre reaching into the sea, and from the extreame or vttermost mouth of the same, receiuing the waters of the sea whiche fall into it, euen vnto Os Draconis and Paria, is by one generall name called Caribana, of the Caribes or Canibales whiche are founde in euery region in this tracte: But from whence they hadde their particular originall, and howe, leauing their natyue soyle, they haue spreade their generation so farre, lyke a pestiferous contagion, wee will nowe declare. Therefore from the firste front reaching forth into the sea (in whose tracte we sayd that Fogeda fastened his foote) towarde the corner, about nine myles distant, there lyeth a village of Caribana, named Futera: three myles distaunt from this, is the village of Vraba, of the whiche it is thought that the whole gulfes tooke his name, beecause this village was once the heade of the kingdome. About sixe myles from this, is Feti: Nine myles from Feti, is Zerema: And about twelue myles from this, Sorache. Our men founde all these villages full of people, all the which giue themselves onely to man hunting: Insomuche that if they lacke enemies agaynst whome they may keepe warre, they exercise crueltie agaynst themselves, and cyther slay the one the other, or els dryue the vanquished to flight. Whereby it is apparant, that by these their continuall warres, and dryuing the one the other out of their countreys, this infection hath gone so farre, not onely on the firme lande, but also into the llandes. I was also aduertised of another thing, the whiche to my iudgement seemeth woorthie to bee put in memorie. One Cornales, a iudge in causes of lawe among the Spanyardes of Dariena, sayth that on a tyme walking abroad with his booke in his hande, hee met by the way with a fugityue, which hadde fledde from the great landes lying farre towarde the West, and remayned here with a King with whome hee was enterayned. When this man perceiued the lawyer looking on his booke, marueyling thereat, hee came running vnto him, and by interpretoirs of the king whom hee serued, spake thus vnto him. Haue you also bookes, wherein you may reserue thinges in perpetuall memorie; and letters, whereby you may declare your mynde to suche as are absent? And herewith desired that the booke might bee opened vnto him, supposing that he shoulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne countrey: But when hee sawe them vnyke, he sayde further, that in his countrey there were cities fortified with walles, and gouerned by lawes, and that

the

the people also used apparell: but of what religion they were, I did not learne. Yet hadde our menne knowledge both by the wordes and signes of this fugitiue, that they were circuncised. What nowe thinke you hereby (most holy father) Or what doe you diuine may come hereof, when time shall subdue all these vnder your throne? Let vs nowe entermingle certaine small things among these great matters. I haue not thought good to pretermitt that which chanced to Iohannes Solisius, who to searche the South side of the supposed continent, departed with three shippes from the port Ioppa (not farre distant from the llandes of Gades or Cales in the Ocean) the fourth day of the Ides of September, in the yeere M. D. xv. or what successe Iohannes Pontius hadde, whom the newe gouernour Petrus Arias appoynted to vanquish and destroy the Caribes or Canibales, deuourers of mans fleshe: also to what ende the voiges of the other captaynes came, which were sent forth diuers waies at the same tyme, as Gonzalus Badaicius, Franciscus Bezarra, and Valleijs, Iohannes Solisius tooke the matter in hande in an euill houre. He sayled beyonde the poynt of saint Augustine (whiche they cal Cabo. S. Augustini) toward the South side of the supposed continent beyond the Equinoctial line. For (as we haue said before) that point reacheth Southwarde to the seuenth degree of the South pole, called the pole Antartike. He proceeded in that voiage sixe hundred leagues, and found the land from the point to extend so farre toward the South beyond the Equinoctiall, that he came to the thirtieth degree of the South pole. As he sayled thus forward, hauing nowe on his backe halfe the starres named Caput Draconis, (that is, the Dragons head) and the regions of Paria lying northwarde from him, & prospecting toward the pole Artyke, he chanced to fall into the hands of the filthy Canibales: For these craftie foxes seemed to make signes of peace, when in their mindes they conceived a hope of a daintie banquet, & espying their enemies a farre off, began to swallow their spettle, as their mouth watered for greedines of their pray. As vnhappy Solisius descended, with as many of his company as coulde enter into the boate of the byggest shypp, sodenly a great multitude of the inhabitantes brust forth vpon them, and slue them euery man with clubbes, euen in the sight of their fellows. They caried away the boate, and in a moment broke it all to fytters, not one escaping. Their furie not thus satisfied they cut the slayne men in peeces, even vpon the shore, where their fellows might behold this horrible spectacle from the sea. But they being stricken with feare through this example, durst not come forth of their shippes, or deuise howe to reuenge the death of their Captayne and companions. They departed therefore from these vnforgotten coastes, and by the way lading their shypp with Brasell, returned home agayne with losse, and heauie cheare. Of these thynges I was aduertised of late, by their owne letters. What they haue els doone, I shall haue more particular knowledge hereafter. Iohannes Pontius was also repulsed by the Canibales in the llande of Guadalupea, being one of the chiefe llandes of their habitation. For when they sawe our men a farre off on the sea, they lay in ambushe, sodenly to inuade them when they shoulde come a lande. Our men sent forth a fewe foote men, and with them their Laundresses to washe their shirtes and sheetes: For from the llande of Ferrea, beeing one of the llandes of Canarie (euen vnto this llande, for the space of foure thousand & two hundred myles) they had seene no lande, where they might finde any fresh water, forasmuche as in all this large space the Ocean is without llandes. At their comming therefore to lande, the Canibales assailed them, caryed away the women, and putte the menne to suche distresse, that fewe of them escaped. By reason whereof, Pontius being greatly discomfited, durst not inuade the Canibales, fearing their venomd arrowes, which these naked manhunters can direct most certainly. Thus good Pontius fayling of his purpose, was fayne to giue ouer the Canibales, whome (being safe & vnder the house rooffe) he threatned to vanquish & destroy. Whither he went from thence, or what new thinges hee founde, I haue as yet no further knowledge. By these misfortunes, Solisius lost his lyfe, and Pontius his honour. Let vs nowe speake of another, whose enterpryse came to lyke purpose the same yeere. Iohannes Aiora, borne in the cite of Corduba, a man of noble parentage, sent in steade of the Lieutenaunt (as we haue saide) more couetous of gold, then carefull of his charge, or desirous of prayse for well seruing, sought

Circumcised people.

What chanced to the Captaynes whiche the gouernour sent diuers waies. Looke dec. de lib. vi.

The voiage of Iohannes Solisius. Cab S. Augustini.

Iohn Solisius is slaine of the Canibales

The fiercenes of the Canibales

Brasyle.

Iohannes Pontius is repulsed by the Canibales.

The voiage of Iohannes Aiora. Locke Deca. iii. lib. vi.

The lewd be-
haviour of
Iohn Aiora.

occasions of quarrelling agaynst the kinges, and spoyled many, violently extortyng gold of them against right & equitie: and further, handled them so extremely, that of friendes they became most cruell enemies, insomuche that they ceased not with desperate myndes, by all meanes they could, to slay our men openly or priuily. By reasō whereof it is come to passe, that where beefore they bartered quietly, exchanging ware for ware, they are nowe fayne to doe all thynges by force of armes. When hee had thus exacted a great quantitie of golde of them (as it is sayde) hee fled priuily and tooke away a shippe with him by stealth, as the common rumour goeth, nor yet hitherto haue we heard whither he went, or where hee arriued. Some suspect that Petrus Arias the gouernour shoulde consent to his departure, because this Iohannes Aiora, is brother to Gonsalus Aiora, the kinges hystoriographer, a man both learned, and expert in the discipline of warre, and so much the gouernours friend, that these two among a fewe, may be counted examples of rare amitie. I my selfe also am greatly bounde vnto them both, and haue long enioyed their friendship yet shall I desire them both to pardon me in declaring my phantasie heerein, that in all turmoyles and tragicall affayres of the Ocean, nothing hath so muche displeased me, as the couctousnesse of this man, who hath so disturbed the pacified minds of the Kinges. Nowe among these troublous chaunces, let vs

The variable
fortune of Gon-
salus Badaio-
cius.

rehearse the variable fortune of Gonsalus Badaicius, and his felowes, whose prosperous beginnings, ended with vnfortunate successe. Gonsalus therefore in the moneth of May, in the yere of Christ 1515. departed from Dariena with fourescore armed men directing his voyage towardes the South, and resting in no place vntill he came to the region of Cerabaro, which our men named Gratia Dei, distant from Dariena about a hundred and fourescore myles: for they call it threescore leagues. He spent certaine daies heere in idlenesse: for he coulde neither by fayre meanes, nor by foule, allure the king of the region to come to him. While he lay thus idly, there came to him other fyftie men, sent from Dariena vnder the gouernance of captayne Lodouicus Mercado, who departed from Dariena in the Calendes of May, to the intent to searche the inner partes of those regions. When they mette together, they determined, after consultation to passe ouer the muntainnes lying toward the South, euen vnto the South sea lately founde. Beholde nowe a wonderfull thing, that in a lande of suche marueilous longitude in other places, they founde it heere to bee onely about fyftie myles, distaunt to the South sea: for they count it xvii. leagues, as the manner of the Spaniards is to reckon, and not by myles: Yet say they that a league consisteth of three myles by lande, and foure by sea, as we haue noted before. In the toppes of the mountaynes and turning of the waters, they founde a king named Iuana, whose kingdome is also named Coiba, as is the region of king Careta, of whom we haue made mention elsewhere. But for as much as the region of this Iuana, is rycher in golde: they named it Coiba Dites, that is, Coiba the rich: For wheresoeuer they dygged the grounde, whether it were on the drie lande, or in the wet chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the sande, whiche they cast forth, myxt with golde. Iuana fledde at the comming of our men, and could neuer be brought agayne. They spoyled all the country neare about his palace: yet had they but litle golde, for he had caryed all his stuffe with him. Here they founde certayne slaues, marked in the faces after a straunge sorte: For with a sharpe pricke made eyther of bone, or els with a thorne, they make holes in their faces, and forthwith sprinkling a powder thereon, they moiste the pounced place with a certaine blacke or ready iuyce whose substaunce is of such tenacitie and clamminesse, that it will neuer weare away: They brought these slaues away with them. They say that this iuyce is of suche sharpenesse, and putteth them to suche payne, that for extreme doloure they haue no stomacke to their meate certaine dayes after. The kinges which take these slaues in their warres, vse their helpe in seeking for goide, and in tyllage of the grounde, euen as doe our men. From the pallace of Iuana, following the course of the water about tenne myles towardes the South, they entred into the dominion of another king, whom our menne named the olde man, because hee was olde, not passing of his other name. In the region of this king also, they founde golde in all places, both on the lande, and in the ryuers. This region is very fayre, and fruitfull, and hath in it many famous ryuers. Departyng from hence, in fyue

Cerabaro. De-
cade iii. li. iiii.

The South sea.

A league con-
taineth foure
myles by sea
and but three
by lande.

The golden
region Coiba
Dites.
Sande myxt
with golde.

Howe their
slaues are
marked in
the face.

Golde.

dayes

dayes
ciuite
fyfth d
ium, v
stood
dwelt
dwelt i
whom
bread
another
menne,
South
and art
founde
grounde
whose
thousan
From h
at their
golde.
another
taine
many g
hence,
golde,
A great
houses
firing th
viter de
salus Ba
geather
brest pl
had ge
obtained
otherwis
slaues, v
of Moil
reason
dominio
thing)
in such
fiftie, a
the gol
escaped
constan
pened
offentin
in conf
table,
Liquer
sleep
choic
went to

dayes journey they came to a lande leste desolate: They suppose that this was destroyed by
 ciuile discorde, forasmuche as it is for the most parte fruitfull, and yet not inhabited. The
 fyfth day, they sawe two men comming a farre off: these were laden with breade of Maiz-
 ium, whiche they caryed on their shoulders in sackes. Our men tooke them, and vnder-
 stode by them that there were two kinges in that tracte, the one was named Periquete, who
 dwelt neere vnto the sea, the others name was Totonoga. This Totonoga was blinde, and
 dwelt in the continent. The two men whiche they mette, were the fishers of Totonoga,
 whom hee hadde sent with certayne fardelles of fyshe to Periquete, and had againe receiued
 bread of him for exchange: For thus doe they communicate their commodities one with
 another by exchange, without the vse of wicked money. By the conducting of these two
 menne, they came to king Totonoga, dwelling on the West side of saint Michaels gulfe, in the
 South sea. They hadde of this king the summe of sixe thousande Castellans of golde, both rude,
 and artificially wrought. Among those grumes of rude or natyue golde, there was one
 founde of the weight of two Castellans, whiche argued the plentifull rychnesse of the
 grounde. Following the same coast by the sea syde towarde the West, they came to a king,
 whose name was Taracuru, of whom they had golde, amounting to the weight of eyght
 thousande Pesos. Wee haue sayde before that Pesos is the weight of a Castelan, not coyned.
 From hence they went to the dominion of this kinges brother, named Pananome, who fledde
 at their comming, and appeared no more afterwarde. They say that his kingdome is ryche in
 golde. They spoyled his pallace in his absence. Sixe leagues from hence, they came to
 another king, named Tabor. From hence they came to the king of Cheru. He friendly en-
 tertained our men, and gaue them foure thousand Pesos of golde. He hath in his dominion
 many goodly salt bayes: the region also aboundeth with golde. About twelue myles from
 hence, they came to another king called Anata, of who they had xv. thousande Pesos of
 golde, whiche he had gotten of the kings his borderers, whom he had vanquished by warre.
 A great part of this gold was in rude fourme, because it was molten when hee set the kinges
 houses on fire whome he spoyled. For they robbe and slay the one the other, sacking &
 firing their villages, and wasting their countreies. They keepe warre barbarously, and to
 utter destruction, executing extreame crueltie against them that haue the ouerthrowe. Gon-
 salus Badaocius, with his felowes, wandred at libertie, vntill they came to this king, and had
 gathered great heapes of golde of other kinges. For what in bractettes, collers, earringes,
 brest plates, helmettes, and certayne barres wherewith women beare vp their brestes, they
 had gathered together in gold the summe of fourscore thousand Castellans, which they had
 obtained partly by exchange for our things where they founde the kinges their friendes, &
 otherwise by forcible meanes where they found the contrary. They had gotten also fourtie
 slaues, whose helpe they vsed both for cariage of their victualles and baggages, in the steede
 of Moiles or other beastes of burden, & also to relieue such as were sicke and forewearyed by
 reason of their long iourneies and hunger. After these prosperous voiajes, they came by the
 dominion of king Scoria, to the palace of a king named Pariza, where (fearing no suche
 thing) Pariza enclosed them with a great armie, and assailed them straggeling and vnwares,
 in such sort that they had no leasure to put on their armour. He slue and wounded about
 fiftie, and put the residue to flight. They made such hast, that they had no respect either to
 the golde they had gathered, or to their slaues, but left all behinde them. Those fewe that
 escaped, came to Dariena. The opinion of all wise men, as concerning the variable & in-
 constant chaunces of fortune in humane things were false, if all thinges shoulde haue hap-
 pened vnto them prosperously. For such is the nature of this blinde goddess, that she
 oftentimes delighteth in the ouerthrowe of them whom she hath exalted, and taketh pleasure
 in confounding high thinges with lowe, and the contrary. Wee see this order to be impermu-
 table, that who so wil apply him selfe to geather rootes, shal somtimes meet with sweete
 Liqueresse, and other whiles with sowre Cockle. Yet woe vnto Pariza: for he shall not long
 sleepe in rest. The gouernour him selfe was of late determined with three hundred & fiftie
 choise souldiers to reuenge the death of our men: but where as he by chaunce fell sicke, his power
 went forward vnder the conducting of his Lieutenaut Gaspar Spinos, a Iudge in cases of lawe

A fruitfull re-
 gion left deso-
 late by ciuile
 discorde.

Sixe thousand
 Castellans of
 golde.

King Tara-
 curu.

Foure thou-
 sand Pesos of
 golde.
 Salte.

The manner
 of warre.

Gonsalus Ba-
 daocius hath
 the ouerthrow
 and is spoiled
 of great riches
 of gold.

The inconstan-
 cie of fortune

in

The expedition
of Francisco
Bererra against
the Canibales.

Gunner.

Valleius repul-
ed of his ene-
mies.

The llands of
the south sea.

In the scale
of the Indies
Mollaynes
is a Part of
the Indies.

Collacutes
Cochinus and
Camemorus
from whence
the Portugals
haue their spe-
ces.

He meareth
in the strait
of Magellanus.

How they take
Hartes and
wylde Bores.

Of the houses.

The way to
the Indies.

Poppingay
and easily taken.

A strange
kind of fouling.

in Dariena. At the same time other were sent forth to the lland of Dites, to exact the por-
tion of pearles limited to the King for his tribute. What shall succcede, time will bring to
our knowledge. The other two attempted thinhabitautes beyonde the gulfe. Franciscus Be-
zerra, passing ouer the corner of the gulfe, and the mouthes of the riuer of Dabaiba, with two
other captaines, and a hundred and fiftie souldiers well appoynted, went to make warre vpon
the Cabniales, euen in Caribana their owne chiefest dominion, towards the village of Turnify,
whereof wee haue made mention beefore in the coming of Fogeda. They brought also
with them diuers engins of warre, as three peeces of ordinaunce, whose shot were bygger
then egges: likewise fourtie archers, and xxv. hagbutters, to the entent to reach the
Canibales a farre off; & to preuent their venomed arrowes: But what became of him & his
companie, or where they arrived, wee haue yet no perfect knowledge. Certaine which came
of late from Dariena to Spaine reported, that at their departure they of Dariena stode in
great feare lest they also were tossed with some misfortune. The other captaine Valleius
obtainned the fore part of the gulfe, but hee passed ouer by an other way then did Bezerra,
for he tooke the beginning of Caribana, & Bezerra the end: Valleius returned againe. But
of the threescore and ten men which he conueighed ouer with him, hee left fourtie and eight
slaine among the Canibales. These are the newes which they bring that came last from Da-
riena. This came to mee the day beefore the Ides of October in this yeere 1516. Rodericus Col-
menares (of whom we haue made mention beefore) & one Franciscus Delapunte. This Francis-
cus was one of the vnder captaines of this band, whose cheife captaine was Gonsalus Badaicius,
who hardly escaped the handes of King Pariza. These two captaines therfore, Rodericus &
Franciscus, who departed from Dariena immediately after the misfortune which befel to Ba-
daicius & his companie doe both asirme, the one, that he hath heard, & the other that he
hath scene, that in the South sea there are diuers llandes lying westward from the lland
of Dites, and Saint Michaels gulfe, in many of the which are trees engendred and nou-
rished, which bring forth the same aromaticall fruites as doth the region of Collacutes.
This lande of Collacutes, with the regions of Cochinus and Camemorus, are the chiefe
marte places from whence the Portugales haue their spices: And hereby doe they coniecture,
that the land where the fruitfulness of spice beginneth, should not be farre fro thence,
insomuch, that many of them which haue ouerrunne those coastes, do only desire that leaue
may be graunted them to search further, and that they will of their owne charges frame and
furnish shippes, and aduenture the voyage to seeke those llandes and regions. They thinke
it best that these shippes should be made and prepared, euen in saint Michaels gulfe, and
not to attempt this voyage by saint Augustines point, which way were both long and difficult,
and full of a thousand daungers, and is saide to reach beyonde the fortieth degree of the pole
Antartike. The same Franciscus, being partener of the trauayles and daungers of Gonsalus,
saith, that in ouerrunning those landes, he founde great herdes of Hartes and wylde Bores,
and that he tooke many of them by an art which thinhabitautes taught him: which was, to
make pittes or trenches in their walkes, and to couer the same with boughes: By this meanes
also they deceyue all other kindes of wilde & foure footed beastes. But they take foules
after the same maner that we do: As stocke doves, w an other tame stocke doue brought vp in
their houses. These they tie by a string and suffer them to flie a little among the trees: to
the which as other birdes of that kinde resort, they kill them with their arrowes. Otherwise
they take them with nettes, in a bare place purged from bryers & bushes, & scattering cer-
tayne seedes round about the place, in the midst whereof they tie a tame foule or bird, of
the kinde of them which they desire to take: In like maner doe they take Poppingayes &
other foules. But they say that Poppingayes are so simple, that a great multitude of them will
flie euen into the tree in whose boughes the fouler sitteth, and swarme about the tame chat-
tering Poppingay, suffering themselves to bee easily taken: For they are so without feare of
the sight of the fouler, that they tary while he cast the snare about their neckes, the other
beyng nothing feared hereby, though they see him drawe them to him with the snare, and
put them in the bagge which hee hath about him for the same purpose. There is another
kinde of fouling, heretofore neuer heard of, and pleasant to consider. Wee haue declared
beefore

The th

beefore
lakes of
are see
there g
ing to
tion, &
water,
sand su
use the
such ot
a kinde
enter in
by their
put the
as it we
holes no
thus en
cised in
space:
fouler g
his head
where a
plunge
purpos
to seek
way be
the decl
rations,
the form
somewh
wardes
golde m
things
nesse fa
haue m
thus to
Ocean.
tile, do
tinent,
North
in opit
the sug
ing, th
about
picus
stream
and gr
comm
runne
are so
suche
which

before howe that in certayne of the Ilandes, and especially in Hispaniola, there are diuers lakes or standing pooles: In some of these (being no deeper then men may wade ouer them) are seene great multitudes of water foules: as well for t at in the bottome of these lakes there growe many hearbes and weedes, as also that by reason of the heate of the Sunne, pearsing to the naturall place of generation and conception, where being double in force by reflection, & preserued by moisture there, are engendred of the sliminesse of the earth and water, and by the prouidence of the vniuersall creator, innumerable little fishes, with a thousand sundry kindes of frogges, wormes, gnattes, flies, and such other. The foules which vse these lakes, are of diuers kyndes: as Duckes, Geese, Swannes, sea Mewes, Gullies, and such other. Wee haue sayde also, that in their Orchardes they noryshe a tree which beareth a kinde of great Gourdes. Of these Gourdes therefore, well stopped least any water should enter in at their rifes, and cause them to sinke, they cast many in the shalowe pooles, where, by their continuall wandering and waueryng with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the foules out of suspicion & feare: the fouler in the meane time, disguising himselfe as it were with a visour, putteth a great gourde on his head, much like to a helmet, with two holes neere about his eyes, his face and whole head beside being couered therewith: and thus entereth hee into the poole euen vnto the chynne. For being from their infancie exercised in swimming, and accustomed to the waters, they refuse not to continue therein along space: the foules thinking this Gourde to bee one of the other that swymme vpon the water, the fouler goeth softly to the place where hee seeth the greatest flocke of foules, and with waggyng his head, counterfeiting the mouing of the wauering Gourdes draweth neere to the foules, where softly putting forth his right hande, hee sodainly snatcheth one by the legges, and plungeth her into the water, where hee putteth her into a bagge which hee hath with him of purpose: The other foules supposing that this dyed into the water of her owne motion to seeke for foode (as is their maner) are nothing moued hereby, but go forward on their way before, vntill they also fall into the same snare. I haue heere for this cause entred into the declaration of theyr manner of hunting and fouling, that by these more pleasaunt narrations, I may somewhat mitigate and assuage the horrour conceyued in your stomake by the former rehearsall of their bloody actes and cruell manner. Let vs now therefore speake somewhat againe of the newe and later opinions, as concerning the swyft course of the sea towards the West about the coastes of Paria, also of the manner of gathering of golde in the golde myne of Dariena, as I was aduertised of late: and with these two quiet and peaceable thinges, we will make an ende of the tragicall assayres of the Ocean, and therewith byd your holynesse farewell. So it is therefore, that Andreas Moralis the pilot and Ouiedus (of whome wee haue made mention before) repayed to mee, at my house in the towne of Matrite. As wee met thus together, there arose a contention betwene them two, as concerning this course of the Ocean. They both agree, that these landes and regions perteyning to the dominion of Castile, doe with one cotinuall tract & perpetual bo d, embrace as on whole firme land or continent, all the mayne land lying on the North side of Cuba, & the other Ilands, being also Northwest both frō Cuba & Hispaniola: Yet as touching the course of the water, they vary in opinion. For Andreas will that this violent course of water be receiued in the lappe of the supposed continent, which bendeth so much, and extendeth so farre towards the North, as wee haue sayde: and that by the obiect or resistance of the lande, so bending and crooking, the water shoulde as it were rebounde in compasse, and by force thereof bee driuen about the North side of Cuba, and the other Ilands, excluded without the circle called Tropicus Cancri, where the largenes of the sea may receiue the waters falling frō the narrow streames, & therby repress that inordinate course, by reason that the sea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanyng to nothing more aptely, then to the swift streame commyng forth of a myll, and falling into the myll poole: For in all such places where waters runne with a violent fall through narrowe chanelles, and are then receyued in large pooles, they are sodainly disparted, and their violence broken: So that where as before they seemed of suche force as to ouerthrowe all thinges beeing in their way, it cannot there be perceiued which way they runn. The Admirall himselfe Diegus Colonus, sonne and heyre to Christo-

Fishes and wormes engendred of slime, Foules.

Gourdes of the tree.

Later opinions of the swift course of the Ocean toward the West.

The continent or firme land.

The voyager of Diego Colonus.

The voyege
from the new
land to Spaine.

The contrary
course of waters.

The point of
the pole starre.

The golde
mynes of Da-
riena, and the
manner of gea-
thering golde.

Our inclosers
would leaue no
such commons.

Auri sacra
Fames.

The droppe of
couetousnesse.

phorus Colonus, the first finder of these landes (who had nowe in coming and going, foure times passed through these seas) being demanded of me what he founde or perceiued in sayling too and fro: answered that there was muche difficultie in returning the same way by the which they goe. But whereas they fyrst take the way by the mayne sea towarde the North, before they directe their course to Spayne, hee sayth that in that tract hee felt the shyppes sometymes a little dryuen backe by the contrary course of the water: Yet supposed that this chaunceth onely by the ordinary flowing and reflowing of the sea, and the same not to be enforced by the circumflection or course of the water, rebounding in compasse as wee haue sayde. But thinketh rather, that this mayne land or supposed Continent, should somewhere bee open, and that the sayde open place, should bee as it were a gate entrie, or streight, diuiding the North partes of that lande from the South, by the which also the Ocean runnyng towarde the West, may by the rotation or impulsion of the heauens, bee dryuen about the whole earth. Oniedus agreeth with Andreas Moralis as touching the continuall adherence and closenesse of the sayde continent: Yet neither that the waters should so beate against the bending backe of the West lande, or bee in such sort repulsed and dryuen into the mayne sea: But sayth, that he hath diligently considered, that the waters runne from the deepest & myddest of the maine sea towarde the West: Also, that sayling neere vnto the shore with small vessels hee founde the same waters to retorne againe towarde the East, so that in the same place they runne together with contrary course, as we oftentimes see the like to chaunce in ryuers, where, by the object of the bankes diuers whirle pooles and turninges arise in the water. By reason whereof, if any chaffe, strawe, wood, or any other thing of light substance be cast in any such places in ryuers, it followeth, that all such as runne with the water in the myddest of the chanell, proceede well forward, but such as fall into the bending gulfes and indented margences of the crooked bandes, are carryed ouerthwart the chanell, and so wander about vntill they meete with the full and directe course of the ryuer. Thus haue wee made you partener of suche thinges as they haue giuen vs, and written their dyuers opinions: Wee will then giue more certayne reason, when more certayne truth shall be knowne. We must in the meane time leane to opinions, vntill the day come appointed of God to reueale this secreete of nature, with the perfect knowledge of the pointe of the pole starre. Hauing sayde thus muche of the course of the Ocean, a brieue declaration of the gold mynes of Dariena, shall close vp our Decades, and make an ende of our traualles. Wee haue saide, that niene myles distant from Dariena, are the sides of the hilles and the drye plaines in the which golde is geathered, both on the dry lande, and also on the bankes, and in the chanells of ryuers. Therefore to all suche as are willing to geather golde, there is of ordinarie custome appointed to euery man by the surueyers of the mynes: a square plotte of grounde, containing twelue pases, at the arbitrement of the chooser, so that it be not ground already occupied, or left of other. The portion of grounde being thus chosen (as it were assigned of the stugures to buylde a temple) they inclose their slaues within the same, whose helpe the Christians vse in tylling of their grounde, and geathering of golde, as we haue sayd. These places appoynted vnto them they keepe as long as them list: and if they perceyue tokens of little golde, they require an other plot of grounde of twelue pases to be assigned them, leauing the first in common: And this is thorder which the Spaniardes inhabiting Dariena obserue in geathering of golde. I suppose also, that they vse the like order in other places: Howbeit, I haue not yet enquired so farre. It hath been proued, that these twelue pases of grounde, haue yielded to their choosers the summe of fourescore Castellanes of golde. And thus leade they their lyues in fulfilling the holy hunger of golde. But the more they fill their handes with finding, the more increaseth their couetous desire. The more woodde is layde to the fire, the more furiously rageth the flame. Vnsatiabie couetousnesse is no more diminished with increase of rychesse, then is the drinesse of the droppe satisfied with drynke. I let passe many thinges whereof I intende to wryte more largely in time conuenient, if I shall in the meane season vnderstande these to be acceptable vnto your holynesse: my dutie and obseruance to whose authoritie, hath caused mee the gladlier to take this

The f
this la
holyn

MO
times p
whē he
that af
writing
cludin
reporte
full of
gather
another
vaunted
and we
loden,
greate
corne v
so to th
both si
haue th
handes
Iucatan
whe
After th
nent: a

BY r
that cer
they son
politick
paued
haue ne
Holyne
Throne
Colon
North,
certain
this la
Saint I
and ri
yeare
ciscus
mined
the off
lesse,
costs a
angle
110. s
prouis
vou

this labour in hande. The prouidence of the eternall creatour of all thinges, graunt your holynesse many prosperous yeeres.

The 4. Decade of Peter Martyr a Millanoise of Angleria written to Pope Leo the 10 now first set forth, and examined.

MOST blessed Father, Ægidius Viterbiensis that bright example of the Heremites of Augustines profession, and of the sacred order of Cardinals hauing executed his Legation a Latere whē he departed out of Spaine, left mee this charge in your Holinesse name, and his owne, that after my 3. Decades long since sent vnto your Holynes, I shoulde set downe also in writing, what the pregnant Ocean brought forth, beginning from the yeare 1492. and concluding with the yeare 1516. of all which I deferred to write, because many idle things were reported, and very litle worth the memorie. In our royall Senate of Indian affaires, Epistles full of circumstances sent from euery vaine fellowe, were daily read, out of the which wee gathered litle substance. One boasted that hee had found a finger of the hande discovered, another, a ioynt of the finger, and they who were the first Authors of discovering that world vaunted much more proudly and with full mouth, that they had discovered great matters, and writt newe and strange things. Imitating the Ante, which thinketh shee is waightly loden, when shee carrieth a graine of corne to her Anthill, stolne out of the floore from a greate heape, sowed by anothers labour. I call a finger of the hand found out graines of corne whatsoeuer llandes, the Ocean maintaineth, lyinge neere to Hispaniola and Cuba, and so to the Continent. For they are compassed about, both before, and behinde, and also on both sides with innumerable llandes, as hennes inuironed with chickens, yet euery one is to haue the reward of his labour. Let vs therefore omittinge circumstances present to the handes of your Holines, to delight your longinge eares, whatsoeuer is reported of the llandes lucatan, and Cozumella, and the huge country of Hacolucana, as yet not well knowne whether it bee an lland, or annexed to the Continent, seeming woorthy of my remembrance. After this I will breifly declare in the ensuing story what succeeded in the supposed Continent: And Hispaniola shall finish the whole worke.

The first Chapter.

BY my former Decade, published by meanes of the Printers, your Holines may gather that certaine fugitiues arriuing vpon the borders of Dariena, wondering at our bookes, said, they sometimes dwelt in such countries, whose inhabitants vsed such instruments, and liued politickly vnder lawes, & Pallaces & had stately Temples built of stone, & also streets, and paved wayes orderly composed, where they traded and vsed to resort. Those lands our men haue now found out. Who therefore were the Authors, and how matters proceeded, let your Holynes lend your attentue care, seeing all these are published, to be subiected to your Throne. Of the lland Cuba (which Diecus Velasquez Lieutenant gouernor by the name of Colonus the Admirall, called Fernandine, neere Hispaniola on the West, yet so toward the North, that the Tropick of Cancer diuideth Cuba in the middest, but Hispaniola is distant certaine degrees from thee Tropick to the Æquator) we haue spokē somewhat before. In this lland of Cuba there are now 6. towns erected. The cheife whereof taketh his name from Saint James the Patrone of the Spaniards. Heere, there is natue gold both in the mountaine, and riuers: so that they are dayly occupied in gathering and digginge thereof. The same yeare that I finished my bookes, three Spaniards of the most auncient citizens of Cuba, Franciscus Fernandex of Corduba, Lupus Ochoa Caizedus, and Christophorus Morantes, determined to seeke out new countries: but, for the kinge, Bernardinus Ignignez Calciatensis of the office of Accompts, and Capitaine of one of the shippes. The Spaniards mind is euer restlesse, and alwayes buyssing it selfe about great attempts. These men (at their owne proper costs and charge) furnished three shippes, such as they call Carauelles, and from the West angle of Cuba called Saint Antonie, they take sea with their Pilott Anthonius Alaminus and 110. soldiers: for this angle is most commodious, and fit for relieuinge of shippes, and for prouision of wood and water. Betweene the West and South, which winde the Spaniards

Franciscus Fernandex Lupus Ochoa, Christophorus Morantes their voyage. The Spaniards rest.

S. Anthony. Anthonius Alaminus.

Lucatan and
why so called.

Cayrus a great
City.

The apparrell
of the lucas-
tans.

The lucatans
superstitious
Idolaters, and
some of them
circumcised.
Crosses and a
fabulous Tra-
dition thereof
amongst them
howbeit ob-
servable.

The province
of Campechium.

A strange arti-
ficiall specta-
cle.

call South, West, they see lande for six dayes space. In which time (they say) they ran onely 66. leagues, for they anchored wheresoeuer sunset came vpon them, least wandringe through an vnknown sea, they might strike vpon the rockes or lightinge amonge the sandy shelves, might so be drowned and sunke. At length they fell vpon a very greate lande, where they goe a shoare and are courteously intertained and receiued by the Inhabitants. Our men (by signes, and beckning to them) demaunde of them what they call the name of the whole Prouince? They answered lucatan, which signifieth in their language, I vnderstand you not. Our men thought lucatan had bin the name of the Prouince. So from this vnpremeditated euent this name of lucatan remained, and shall continue for euer: yet the beginning thereof thinhabitants call Encampi. Our men goe vnto the citty seated on the shore, which for the hugeness thereof they call Cayrus, of Cayrus the Metropolis of Ægipt: where they find turreted houses, stately temples, wel paved wayes & streets where marts and faires for trade of marchandise were kept. The houses are either of stone or bricke, and lime maruelous artificially built. To the square courts or first habitations of their houses they ascend by 10. or 12. steps or staires. Yet they are not tiled but couered with reedes, or great stalkes of herbes. They gratifie each other with mutuall presents. The Barbarians gaue our men brooches, & Jeweles of gold very faire, & cunningly wrought, and our men requited them with vesturs of silke & woll, & gaue them also counterfet stones of glasse and little laton or copper belles acceptable presentes to them beecause of the strangeness thereof. But they made slight account of our counterfeites, because themselves (out of certaine stones in their Mines) might get those that were much brighter. This nation is not apparreled with wooll, because they haue no sheepe, but with Cotton after a thousand fashions, and diuersly coloured. The women are clad from the wast to the ancle, and couer their heade and breasts with diuers wayles, and are very carefull that their leggs, and feete bee not seene. They frequent their Temples often, to the which the better sort paue the wayes with stone from their houses. They are great Idolaters: and are Circumcised, but not all. They liue vnder lawes, and traffike together with greate fidelitie, by exchanginge commodities without money. They sawe Crosses: and beeing demanded by Interpreters whence they hadde them, some say, that a certaine man of excellent beauty passinge by that coast, left them that notable token to remember him. Others report a certaine manne brighter then the Sunne dyed in the workinge thereof. But concerninge the truth, there is no certainty knowne.

The seconde Chapter.

HAuing stayed there some fewe dayes they now beegan to seeme troublesome to the inhabitants: for the long stay of a guest is not well pleasinge vnto any. Taking therefore provision of victuals, they bēd their course directly to the West: and passing the prouinces Coma, and Maia (so called of the borderers) they tooke only woodd and water for their voyage. The Barbarians on the shore wondered to see our great vessels floatinge on the sea, to the beholdinge wherof menne, and women, children came striding and thronginge from all places. Our menne also (not without great astonishment and admiration) beheld farre of from sea, their goodly buildinges, but chiefly their Temples next the Seaside, aduanced like Castelles. At length hauing sayled 110. leagues, they determined to anchor in a prouince called Campechium, whose towne consisteth of 3000. houses, where after they hadde landed, and friendly imbraced each other, the Barbarians with great astonishment wondered at our mens art of sayling, the greatnesse of the vesselles, the sayles, the flagges, and other thinges. But as soone as they hearde the thunder of our ordinance discharged, and perceiued a smoaky, and sulphury fierie sent, and smell, they thought lightning had come from Heauen. The pettie king of this prouince courteously and royally entertayned our men in his Pallace, when they had feasted them after their manner, (where they haue both Peacockes and crammed soule both of the Mountaynes, Woods, and Water, as Patryches, Quayles, Turtles, Duckes, Geese, and fourefooted wilde beastes, as Boores, Hares, and Hares: beside Wolfes, Lyons, Tygers, and Foxes) our menne were conducted with a princely Trayne to a broade crosse-way, standing on the side of the towne. Here they shew our menne a square stage or pulpit foure steppes

steppes high, partly of clammy Bitumen, and partly of small stones, whereto the Image of a manne cutte in marble was ioyned, two fourefooted vnknowne beastes fastening vpon him, which (like madde dogges) seemed, they would teare the marble mans guttes out of his belly. And by the Image stood a Serpent, beameared all with goare bloud deuouring a marble Lyon, which Serpent compacted of Bitumen, and small stones incorporated together, was seuen and fourtie feete in length, and as thicke as a great Oxe. Next vnto it were three rafters or stakes fastened to the grounde, which three others crossed, vnderpropped with stones. In which place they punish malefactors condemned, for prooffe whereof, they sawe innumerable broken arrowes, all bloudie, scattered on the grounde, and the bones of the deade, cast into an inclosed courte neere vnto it. The houses also heere, are built of lime and stone. This king they called Lazarus because they landed vpon S. Lazarus day. They depart from thence, alwayes to the West 15. leagues: and take the prouince called Aguanil. The towne thereof is called Moscobu, and their king Chiapoton, accenting the last sillable with a sharpe accent. This king sternly beholdeth our men like an enemy, and seekes to intrap them with a Stratagem. For demanding water, they signifie vnto them that there is a fountayne on the other side of the next hill, where they were to passe through a narrowe path: but by the chaunging of their countenances, and carying of their bowes and arrowes; they perceiued the deceit. Our men refuse to goe any further. The Barbarians therefore charge them, and set vpon them, straggling & vnprovidd, and ouerthrowe aboue a thousande of our menne. Suche as fledde, stucke fast in the myre on the shore, for the Sea was very muddy there, by meanes whereof they shot 22. of our men through with their arrowes, and so slewe them, and for the most parte wounded the rest. They report that Francisus Fernandez himselfe Admirall of the Fleete, receiued 33. woundes almost none escaped scotfree: if they hadde marched forward to the hilles they shewed them, they hadde bene slayne euery man. They therefore that remayned aliuie, returned sad and sorrowfull, to the lande Fernandina from whence they came, and are receiued by their companions with teares, and sighes, for those they hadde left behinde them, and those that were present, being wounded.

The prouince
of Aguanil.

1000. Spaniards
slayne by
the Barbarians.

The Admirall
wounded in 33.
places of his
body by the
Barbarians.

The thirde Chapter.

Diecus Velasquez Lieutenant Gouvernour of Cuba Fernandina vnderstanding this, furnished a fleete of foure Carauelles, with 300. menne or thereabouts. And appoynteth his Nephewe Iohn Grisalua Admirall of this litle Fleete, ioyning vnder officers with him, Alphonsus Auila Francisus Montegria, and Petrus Aluaradus, but for Pilotte the selfe same Anthonius Alaminus, who hadde the direction and regiment of the former Fleete. Who vndertooke the same voiage agayne, but sometimes more to the South. And hauing sayled some 70. leagues they discried a tower spiring aboue the Sea, but sawe no land. By direction of which tower, they made towarde an lande called Cosumel, three leagues distaunt from whence (they say) they smelt the sweete sauour of fresh water the winde blowing from thence. They finde this lland to be 45. leagues about, a playne lande, and a most fortunate and fertile soyle. It hath golde, not naturally growing there, but brought vnto it from forreine partes. It aboundeth with hony fruites, and hearbes, and hath great plentie of foule and fourefooted beastes. That I may briefly conclude, the Oeconomically, and Politically gouernment of these inhabitantes, agreeth with theirs of Iucatan. Their houses, temples, streetes, and trade of marchandise are all one, and the apparell both of men and women is of Cotton, which the common people of Italie call Bombase, and the Spanyards, Algodon, not cloth of woll, or silke. Their houses of bricke or stone, are couered with reedes, where there is scarcitie of stones, but where Quarries are, they are couered with shindle or slate. Many houses haue marble pillers, as they haue with vs. They founde auncient towers there, and the ruines of such as hadde bene broken downe and destroyed, seeming very auncient: but one aboue the rest, whereto they ascended by 18. steppes or staires, as they ascende to famous, and renowned temples. These people wondered at our ships, and art of sayling. At the first incounter they were vnwilling to entertaine gwestes, but afterward they courteously admitted them. The Gouvernour (whome they suppose to bee a Priest) conducted them

The lland
Cosumel.

Their houses.

Auncient Towers.

Santa Cruce.

Idolles.

Circumcision.
The Kings ap-
parell.The Barbarians
encamp & make
warre against the
Spaniards.The haven of
Desire.

Collua or Oloa.

The ryuer Gri-
salua.
Golden targets.

them vnto a tower, in the toppes whereof they erect a banner, and adiudging the Dominion thereof to the king of Castile. They call the Ilande Santa Cruce, because they entred into the same the Nones of May, being then the feast of the holy crosse. But they say, it was called Cozumella, of a certaine king Cozumellaus, whose auncesters (as he vaunteth) were the first inhabitants of this Ilande. In the tower they founde chambers, wherein were marble Idolles, or Statues, and Images of earth in the similitude of Beares, these they call vpon with loud singing all in one tune, and sacrifice vnto them with fumes, and sweete odors, worshipping them as their housholde goddes. There they performe their diuine ceremonies, and adoration: they are also circumcised. This king was apparelled with a garment of gossampine cotton, curiously wrought, and had the toes of one of his feete cut of. For a deuouring fish called Tubero, violently snapped his toes of at a bit, while he was swimming. He honorably feasted our men, and bountifully entertained them. After three daies they depart, sayling directly to the West, and espie great mountaines a farre of. Which they perceiued to bee Iucatan, a land which they had alreadye discouered, being but fve leagues distant from Cozumella. They take the South side of Iucatan (to witte) next the continent. They compasse it, but not all, by reason of the multitude of rockes, and sandie shelles. Then Alaminus the Pilot brings backe the ships to the North side of the Ilande, already knowne vnto him. And at length came to the same towne Campechium and king Lazarus, to whom the former ships went the yeere before: of whom beeing gently receiued, they are invited to the towne. But they soone repented, that they had invited them. For within a stones cast from the towne, the borderers will our men to stand, and command them to begon, our men desire leaue to water before they depart. They shewe them a well behinde them, from whence (they say) they might drawe water, but not elsewhere. They lodge at night in a fielde neere vnto the well. The Barbarians mistrust, and about 3000. armed men incampe themselves not farre from our men neither partie slept that night, they fearing our menne woulde breake into the towne, and our men suspecting some sudden assault of the Barbarians, wakened the sleepey, with the sound of the trumpet, and drumme. As soone as day began to peepe, the Barbarians come vnto them, and call for our Cuba Interpretours, whose speach (though not the same) is notwithstanding somewhat like vnto it: and lighting a Torch of Frankincense, between both armies, they threaten to kill them, vnlesse they quickly depart, before the torch bee extinguished, and plainly tell them, that they will haue no guests. The torch is put out, or consumed they encounter hand to hand, and kill one of our men, whome they shot through his shield with an arrow, and wounded many: so that our men retired to the ordinance placed by the wel, to discharge them vpon the Barbarians. The borderers retire vnto the towne, the souldiers with eger courage desired to pursue the. The Admiral Grimalua forbiddeth them: from thence they proceed to the furthest end of Iucatan, & found it more then 200. leagues in length from East to West. They go to an excellent harbor which they called the haven of Desire. Afterwardes they passe ouer sea to other landes, and lande on the West neere to Iucatan: and doubt whether it be any Ilande or not. They suppose it to be annexed to the Continent, there they find a Bay, which they imagin to be compassed on both sides with lande: but knewe no certaintie thereof. This lande is called Collua, or otherwise Oloa, of the borderers. A mightie great riuer founde there, through the rage and violent current thereof into the Sea, yeldeth potable waters for the space of two leagues. They called the riuer (by the Admirals name) Grimalua, the bordering Barbarians woondering at the sayling of their shippes, beset both side of the riuer, to the number of 6000. warriours, armed with golden targets, bowes, and arrowes, and broade wdden swords, and speares hardened in the fire, to resist their landing, and to defend the shore. Both parties that night stode in armes. At the first dawning of the day, beholde, about an hundred Canoas full of armed men. Wee haue elsewhere sayde, that the Canoas are litle barkes, made of one tree. Here the Interpreters of Cuba, and they, agreed well inough in language. Peace offered by the Interpreters, is admitted. One Canoa commeth vnto them, the rest stande still. The Maister of the Canow, demandeth what our men seeke in strang countries: they answer they desire gold, but onely by exchange,

The f

chang
what
thing
him, v
nerall
brestp
from t
with w
of silke
when
9. bor
The ki
his rase
his felo
beyond

SAY
which
(most
of your
vnto th
ble, &
necke,
it may
bloud o
they ph
the lips
heart v
One of
the blo
browne
if they
clotted
traspor
dead ca
those c
light v
They s
sent vi
Ilande
cietie
consid
lightin
or such
from t
with p
they m
women
the art
they k
Colua
a Caw

change, not of gift or violently. The Canow returneth to the king and the mariners report what they had done: the king being sent for, willingly commeth vnto them. O admirable thing (most holy father) & worthy to be reported. The king calles his chamberlane vnto him, willett the furniture of his chamber to be brought, & commandeth to arme our Generall Grisalua therewithall: first therfore he beginneth to put him on golden shoes, bootes, brestplate, and whatsoeuer armour vsually made of Iron, or steele, a man of armes armed from top to toe vseth to weare when he cometh into the field, all that made of gold, wrought with wonderfull art, the king bestoweth on Grisalua. Grisalua requiteth him with vestures of silke, linnen, woollen, and other things, of our country. In the beginning of this lucatana, when they passed ouer from Cozumella, they light on a Canow of fishermē, wherein were 9. borderers, fishing with golden hookes: they take them al vnarmed, misdoubting nothing. The king knew one of the, & promised to send Grisalua as much gold the next day for his rāsome as the man should weigh. Grisalua denied to release him without the consent of his felowes, and therefore kept him still, and departed desirous to know further what lay beyond them.

The Generall
by a Barbarian
King armed from
toppe to the toe
in compleate
gold.

The fourth Chapter.

SAYling about 100. leagues thence; alwayes to the West, they found a great gulfe, in the which 3. small Ilands stood: they went vnto the greatest of them. But oh cruell impiety (most holy father) oh terrible & blouddie minds of men, let your holines close the mouth of your stomacke, least it be disturbed. There they offer vp their children, boyes and girles, vnto their Idols, they are circumcised. The Images which they worship, are some of marble, & some of earth. Among the marble Images, standeth a Liō, with an hole through the necke, into the which they poure the bloud of those miserable wretches, that from thence it may run into a marble trough, let vs now declare with what ceremonies they sacrifice the bloud of those miserable creatures. They cut not their throats, but ripping vp their brestes, they plucke out the heart of the vnhappy sacrifice, with whose warme bloud they annoint the lips of their Idolles, and let the rest runne through into the trough, & then burne the heart vnopened, and the bowels, supposing it to be an acceptable fume vnto their gods. One of their Idolles hath the shape of a man, which bowing downe his head, looketh into the blouddie trenche, as it were accepting the oblation of the slayne sacrifices: they eate the brawnes of the armes, and fleshie partes of the thighes, and calves of the legges, especially if they sacrifice an enemy conquered in the warres. They founde a riuer of congealed and clotted bloud, as though it had runne out of a butchery. For this wicked purpose, they transport poore soules from the bordering Ilandes: there they sawe innumerable heades and dead carcases mangled and cut in peeces, and very many whole, couered with mats. All those coasts abounde with golde & precious stones, one of our men wandering in the Iland, light vpon two hollow alabaster pitchers (cunningly wrought) ful of stones of diuers colours. They say also that they found a stone of the value of 2000. Castellanes of gold, which they sent vnto y^e gouernor. This Ilande they called the Ilande of Sacrifice, there are also other Ilandes situate on the sides of this Coluacana, which women onely inhabite, without the societie of men. Some thinke they liue after the maner of the Amazonas. But they that consider the matter more wisely, thinke them to be virgins liuing in common together, delighting in solitarines, as with vs, and in many places in auncient tyme, the virgins vestales, or such as were consecrated to Bona Dea vsed to doe. At certaine times of the yeere, men from the bordering Ilandes passe ouer vnto them, not for the cause of generation, but moued with pittie, to till their fields and dresse their gardens, through which manuring of the ground they might the better liue. Yet report goeth, that there are other Ilandes, but of corrupt women, who cutte off the pappes of their young children, that they may the better practise the art of shooting, and that men resorte vnto them for the intent of generation, and that they keepe not the male children, but I thinke it a fable. Our men therfore at the shore of Coluacana, drew neere vnto the lande, and quietly trafficke there. The king gaue our men a Cawdron, bracelets, chaynes, brooches, and manie other Jewelles of diuers kinds, and all

An Ilande
wherein they sa-
crifice their chil-
dren to Idolles.

The maner of
their most abhor-
minable sacrifice.

A precious stone
of a great value.
The Iland of Sa-
crifice,
Ilandes of wo-
men.

Giftes.

of

25. very great
townes in Co-
lucana & the
maner of this.

Palmaria.

A strange cere-
mony of these
Barbarians at
the receiving of
strangers.
Single life.
Chastitie.

Adultery.
The honorable
estimation the
Barbarians haue
of marriage.

General fasts.

Rich gifts of
diuers sorts be-
stowed vpon the
Admirall.

Swymming &
dying into the
bottom of riuers
for gold.

Sweete odors.

A stone of a
great value.

of golde. Our men againe on the other part, gratifie him with our country commodities, and make him very cheerful. Here the cōpanie desired to settle themselves, and plant a Colonie, but the Admirall woulde not permit them. At that time the soldiers (companions in armes) were desperately bent against the Admirall. Their prouince consisteth of turreted houses: & hath also 15. very great townes, & in some places, they affirme, that they sawe townes of 20000. houses. The houses ioyne not euery where together, but are disieuered with gardens, and courts. Many of them are distaunt one from another. They haue streets compassed with walles, where they keepe their markets and sayres, they haue paved streets, ouens & furnaces, lime, & bricke: they haue also potters, & Carpenters, & other artificers, & haue gotten most excellēt workmen of all the mechanicall arts. This king is called Ta-uascus: the country Palmaria. They say the towne where he keepeth his courte, called Pontanchianum, consisteth of fifteene thousande houses. When they receiue straungers or newe guesstes, whose entertayne peace with those countreyes, in token of friendship, they drawe a litle bloud from themselves (with a razor, or a litle knife made of stone) either out of the tongue, hand, arme, or any other part of the bodie, and this they doe, euen in the sight of the stranger. Their Priestes liue a single, and vncorrupted life. No man knoweth what the act of generatiō meēth, vntil he marry. It is a detestable and haynous matter, and puni-hable with death, if they chaunce to do otherwise. The women are maruelous chaste. Every great man afore he hath maryed a wife, may haue as many Concubines as he please. But the married wife being takē in adultery, is sold by her husband, yet only to his soueraign Prince, from whom, it shalbe lawfull for her kinsfolke to redeeme her. It is not lawfull for any that is vnmarried to sit at table with such as are married, or to eate of the same dish, or drinke of the same cup and make themselves equall with such as are married. In the monethes of August, and September, they abstaine 35. dayes, not onely from flesh, whereof they haue the best, both of foule, and wilde beastes taken by hunting: but they doe not so muche as eate fish, or any thing which might nourish the bloud: so that for those dayes of abstinence, they liue onely vpon hearbes, or pulse. Here our men spent a fewe dayes very pleasantly, afterward they depart, following the same shore, and meete with another king whom they call Ouandus. When the king vnderstoode our men desired golde, he brought them plates of moulted golde. The Admirall signified by the interpreters, that hee desired store of that mettall, the next day he commaunded the golden image of a man of a cubit long to bee brought and a fan of gold, and an Idol of one of their Domesticall gods curiously wrought, and also garlandes of diuers stones. He gaue our men also great store of brest-plates, and brooches and ornaments of diuers kinds, and precious stones of seuerall colours. He also satisfied them with most delicate meates very sauorie and wel seasoned. Inuiting our men a shore, forthwith erecting paulions or booths by commaundement of the king they speedily couered them with greene boughes. The king smote his domesticall seruants (that were negligent in bringing of boughes) with the scepter he bare in his hand, the seruants with an humble countenance patiently beare the stripes he gaue them: the king being demanded, where so great plenty of gold was gathered, pointed with his finger to the next mountaines, and riuers runninge from them: these people are so vsed to riuers, and lakes, that it is all one to them to swimme or goe vpon the lande. When they desire to gather gold, they diue into the riuers, & bringe forth their hands full of sande. And siftinge the sande from hande to hande, they picke out the gold. In the space of two houres, they are report to fill a cane as bigge as a manns finger, with gold. Smooth, and pleasinge words might be spoken of the sweete odors, and perfumes of these countries, which we purposely omit, because they make rather for the effeminatinge of mens mindes, then for the maintenance of good beahaiour. The Admirall refused a boy of 12. yeeres of age which the kinge offered him, but receiued a yonge Virgin richly adorned, and reiected the boy, contrary to the mindes of the company. Of the precious stones they had from this king, they write, that one, was worth 2000. Castelanes of gold. So, at length they depart from this kinge, laden with gold and precious stones. The Admirall Grisalua sendeth one of the Carauels to the Lieutenant Gouvernour of Fernandina his vnclie with messengers, who had the gold and precious

The fou
preciou
one shi
the two
ascribe
by inter
intreat
king of
compan
taine gi
vnto an
but the
swords
landings
The Bar
furie the
faile the
fore con
without

WE w
fouid lan
time wh
onely, w
inhabita
shore of
soyle, G
harmless
them int
their co
arriued,
towne of
in length
for thes
and few
libertie,
them, th
they ha
same II
and pas
the Brig
to the B
place a
Vamos
Contine
thereof,
but they
came to
with the
men fro
thinking
chaunce
fighting

commodities,
and plant a
(companions
th of turreted
at they sawe
re disseuered
e haue streets
paued streets,
her artificers,
is called Ta-
courte, called
straungers or
shippe, they
e) either out
e, even in the
man knoweth
us matter, and
rueulous chast.
as he pleaseth.
his soueraign
not lawfull for
same dish, or
rried. In the
flesh, whereof
they doe not so
or those dayes
e a fewe dayes
e with another
ide, he brought
hat hee desired
man of a cubit
gods curiously
store of brest-
uerall colours.
d. Inuiting our
the king they
l seruants (that
d, the seruants
king being de-
ger to the next
ers, and lakes,
e to gather gold,
tinge the sande
es, they are re-
ge words might
purposely omitt,
the maintenance
hich the kinge
oy, contrary to
ng, they write,
from this kinge,
the Carauels to
d the gold and
precious

precious stones. In the meane space, the rest followe the shoare towards the West. But one ship wherein Franciscus Montegrius the Viceadmiral was, sayled hard by the shoare, and the two other kept a loofe within vewe of the lande. The borderers wondering at them, ascribe the strangenes of the matter to miracle. Thirteen Canoes came vnto Montegrius, by interpreters speake together, and courteously salute each other: The borderers humbly intreat the to come a shoare and promise them great matters, if they would goe to the king of the country. But Montegrius saith he cannot yeld to their intreatyes, because his companions were to farre of from him, yet he sent them away contented giuinge the certaine gifts of our country commodities, which pleased them well. From thence they goe vnto another famous towne & the 3. Carauelles together approached neere the shoare, but the borderers with their targets, bowes, quiuers full of arrowes and broad wooden swords & lauelins hardened at the end with fire, came fortharmed to our men, to resist their landinge, & shot at them as farre of, but our menne discharged their ordinance against them. The Barbarians wonderinge at the thundring of the greates Artillerie, and astonished at the furie thereof, betake them to flight, and desire peace. Here our mens victualles began to faile them, & nowe the shippes were broosed, & shaken, with long voyages. Grisalua therefore contented with that which he had done, and found, to returne to the Iland Fernandina, without the good liking of his companions.

The borderers
seek to repulse
the landing of
the Spaniards,
& at thastomish-
ment and terror
of the great
artillery are put
to flight.

The fifth Chapter.

WE will now diuert a litle, and handle another navigation, & then returne to these new fould landes againe. The same Diecus Velasquez Gouvernour of Fernandina, almost at that time who he sent forth this navy of 4. Carauels, appointed another voyage for one Carauell onely, with one Brigantine to go in consort with 45. men. These vsed violence against the inhabitantes. The people were Idolaters, and circumcised, & are bordering next vpo the shore of the supposed Continent. There are many fertile Ilandes, of a blessed & fruitfull soyle, Guanaxam, Guitillam, and Guanaguam. From one of these, they violently tooke 300. harmlesse inhabitantes of both sexes. This Ilande they called Sancta Marina. They thrust them into the Carauell, & returned to Fernandina. They leaue the Brigantine with 25. of their companie, to the intent to hunt for more men. The hauen where the Carauell first arriued, is called the hauen of Carenas: this hauen is 200. and 40. leagues distaunt from the towne of S. Iames, the chiefe towne of the Iland of Cuba, this is a very long Ilande reaching in length to the West, which the Tropicke of Cancer diuideth. Fortune seeking reuenge for these miserable wretches, certaine of the keepers of the captiues go aland, and fewe remained in the Carauell. The Ilanders hauing gotten opportunitie to recouer libertie, suddenly snatching vppe our mens weapons, fel vpon the keepers, & slew sixe of them, the rest leape into the sea. By which meanes the Ilanders possesse the Carauell, which they had learned to rule, so that they returne into their country, they lande not first at the same Iland, but at the next. They burne the Carauell, cary the weapons away with them, and passe ouer to their companions in Canoes, and sette vpon our menne which were left in the Brigantine, ouerthrew them, and slew some of them. They who escaped, fled vnhappyly to the Brigantine: there standeth a great tree, next vnto the shore, in the top whereof they place a Crosse, and engraueth this inscription in Spanish vpon the vpper barke thereof: Vamos al Darien. Darien is a ryuer, on the shore wherof the chiefe towne of the supposed Continent is seated, called Sancta Maria Antiqua. The gouernour hauing intelligence thereof, speedily sendeth 2. shippes laden with souldiers, for succour of them that were lefte, but they consulted too long while all was done and past. Yet following the Crosse, they came to the shore, and read the letters ingrauen on the tree: but durst not attempt fortune with those desperate men that fled, well armed, and therefore returne backe againe. These men from the next Ilande, carry away 500. men & women as it had bin so many hares: thinking they might therefore lawfully doe it, because they were circumcised, the like mischance befell them arriuing at Fernandina: Of the 2 shippes, they fiercely assault one, and fighting eagerly, kill some of their Spanish keepers, the rest cast themselves into the sea, and swimme

The fertile
Ilands of Gua-
naxam Guitil-
lam and Gua-
naguam.
300. Barbarians
taken Captiues
The hauen of
Carenas.

The Captiues
escape and slay
sixe of the
Spaniards.

The riuer
Darien.

500. men and
women taken
& the succour
answerable to
the former.

The Barbarians
fight with the
Spaniards.

100. Barbarians
slayne and
wounded.

Archipelagus.

Florida.

26. Ilandes.

Golde.

Idols of golde.

A wonder it is
that ther shuld
be such excel-
lent workman-
ship amongst
the Indians
without the vse
of steele and
iron.

swimme to the next Carauell, which went in consort with them, and vniting themselves all together with the Carauell which remained, assailed the other taken from them: the victory was doubtfull for 4. houres space the Barbarians, both men and women, for recouery of their libertie, fought very fiercely, and the Spaniards likewise with no lesse fury and courage encountered them, least they shoulde loose the pray which was taken from them. At length the Spaniards were conquerers, because they were more nimble and readie in handling their weapons. The vanquished Barbarians cast themselues headlong into the sea, but are taken vp againe in boates: so that those that were slaine in fight, and drowned in the water, were about 100. persons. Of the Spaniards but fewe were wanting. The Barbarians that remained aliue, are sent to the towne of S. Iames, and to the mines of gold. Shortly after they goe vnto another of the neighbouring Ilandes: which are more in number there then Simplegades in our Ionian Sea, which multitude of Ilands they commonly call Archipelagus. Here, as many of our mē as went a shore out of the ships, were entertained with hostile armes, and slaine or wounded: they suppose this Iland to be that whereunto Iohannes Pontius the Captain of one ship went and left them much disquieted, being repulsed by the inhabitants, and called it Florida: because he founde that Ilande, on the day of the resurrection: the Spaniard calleth Easter, the flourishing day of the resurrection. They report, they saw, 26. Ilands, which Colonus had ouerpassed, as it were so many daughters of Hispaniola and Cuba, and guardians of the supposed Continent, to breake the force of the stormes comming from the Ocean. In many of these, they found natiue graynes of gold. These people also weare diuers Jewelles, and vse gilded wooden Idols of their household gods, and some of gold very artificially wrought, they are most curious and ingenious workemen euery where. Franciscus Chieriegatus your holinesse his Nuncio to our Caesar in Spaine, brought one of their Idols with him, whereby you may gather how ingenious they are. It is a marueilous thing to see the making of their rasors. They forme them of certaine yelow stones cleere and transparent as chrysell, and with them they shaue, no otherwise, then if they were made of the most excellent steele. But that which is most admirable, and woorthie the beholding, when they haue a blunt edge through long vse, they sharpen thē not with a whet-stone, or other stone, or powder, but temper them onely by putting them into a certaine water. They haue also among them a thousande kindes of instruments and tooles, & other excellent fine things, which were too long to rehearse, & peradventure tedious to your holines, so much busied with matters of great importance. I returne therefore from whence I digressed, to Cozumella, Iucatana, and Coluacana, or Oloa, riche and pleasant landes as Elisium, lately founde out, from which I diuerted, where it is sufficiently knowne, of how great moment those tractes & countries are.

The sixth Chapter.

The new inhabitants of the Iland of Cuba, (the Spaniards) with the consent of the gouernor, furnish a new navy of ten Carauells, with 500. men, ioyning three Brigantines with them as light horsemen, whose helpe they might vse to sounde the shallowe shores, and to discouer the daungers of many rockes. They shippe 16. horses, fit for warre: and choose Fernandus Cortesius (who then was chiefe Commaunder of the Citie of Cuba) Generall, and Admirall of the navy, and for vnder officers they appoynt Alphonsus Fernandez Portucarrierius, Franciscus Montegius, Alphonsus Auila, Aluaradus the Spatensian Commendatory, Iohn Velasquez, and Diecus Ordassus. They still followe the same winde (from the last angle of Cuba to the West) which first Franciscus Velasquez did, and after him Iohn Grisalua, and so came to the Iland of Sacrifices, whereof I made mention before. Heere a sharpe and boistrous wynde forbadde them to take lande, and a cruell tempest carried them backe againe to Cozumella, lying on the East side of Iucatana, this Ilande hath onely one hauen, which they called S. Iohns Port. It hath in it sixe townes onely, and hath no other water, then such as is in welles and cisternes. It wanteth riuers and fountaynes because it is a playne lande: and is onely 45. leagues in circuit about. The inhabitants fled vnto the thicke woodes, and forsake their towns for feare, our men enter their desolate and emptie houses, and feede vpon their country

S. Iohns Port.

The fou

country
hanging
all this
other th
viewed
any viol
onely in
Spanyars
kings.
the won
with our
stuffe re
children
spirites,
the mess
whence
be sold
huge an
the inhab
Ilandes
nourish
snouts li
for incre
that are
told their
followe.
earth, an
They suff
virgin (w
& the p
God him
of the te
and with
temple.
captiue
tempest
ing this
with the
the Chri
appoynt
declaret
of them
light fro
appoynt
lane me
returne
thinke o
desired,
sea with
from Iud
Hieroni
with wh
them hi
him and
vol.

themselves all
the victory
of their
and courage
At length
handling their
but are taken
water, were
ians that re-
Shortly after
er there then
Archipelagus.
hostile armes,
es Pontius the
inhabitantes,
rection: the
they saw, 26,
iola and Cuba,
comming from
ple also weare
e of gold very
e. Francisus
of their Idols
a thing to see
ere and trans-
e made of the
holding, when
stone, or other
e. They haue
ent fine things,
o much busied
ssed, to Cozu-
lately founde
moment those

consent of the
brigantines with
shores, and to
e: and choose
General, and
ndez Portucar-
mendatory, John
the last angle of
Brisalua, and so
e and boistrous
oacke againe to
en, which they
er, then such as
yne lande: and
les, and forsake
ede vpon their
country

country victualles, and found there, furniture for houses of diuers colours, rich and costly hangings, garments, and couerlets, which they cal Amaccas of gossamine cotton. Besides all this (most holy father) they founde innumerable bookes: of the which, together with other things brought to our newe Emperour, we will hereafter speake at large. Our souldiers viewed the llande diligently throughout, yet still keeping themselves in battayle array, least any violence might assayle them. They finde but few of the inhabitants, and one woman onely in their companie. By the Interpreter of Cuba, and three others, which the former Spanyardes had taken from Iucatan, they perswaded the woman, to sende for the absent kings. The inhabitantes were the familiar friendes of this woman, the kinges conducted by the woman, came with her, who sent messengers for them, made a league of friendship with our men, and cheerefully returne vnto their country houses, and had much of their stuffe restored vnto them. They founde them Idolaters, & circumcised. They sacrifice children of both sexes to their Zemes which are the Images of their familiar and domestical spirites, which they worship. Alaminus the Pilot, Franciscus Montegius & Portucarrerius, the messengers who brought the presentes to the king, being demaunded by me, from whence they had the children they offered in sacrifice: answered, that they were brought to be sold from the collateral llandes, for exchange of gold, & other marchandize. For in so huge and spaciuous a lande, the cursed care of damnable money hath no where yet possessed the inhabitants. They report also the same of other lands lately found two of the which llandes they call Bian and Segestian. For want of children they sacrifice dogges: they nourish also dogs to eate, as our nation doth Conies: which dogs cannot barke, & haue snouts like foxes. Such as they purpose to eate, they geld. They reserue store of bitches for increase, and but a small number of dogs, as our shepheards do, of the sheepe. They that are gelded growe marueilous fat. Our men diswaded them from sacrificing men, and told them howe abhominable it was. These Barbarians desire a lawe which they might followe. They easily perswaded them that there was one God, who created heauen and earth, and was the giuer of all good things, being one in substance vnder a triple person. They suffer their Zemes to be broken in peeces: & set vp the painted Image of the blessed virgin (which our me gaue the) in a sacred place of temple, they pare, & sweep temple, & the pauemēt therof. They receiued also a Crosse to be worshiped, in remembrance of God himselfe, and that man, who died thereon for saluation of mankind: and on the toppe of the temple they erected a great wooden Crosse. They all assemble themselves together, and with reuerent feare, and trembling, humbly adore the Image of the blessed Virgin in the temple. These Inhabitantes signified by interpreters vnto our men, that there were seuen captiue Christians in the bordering lland Iucatan, who arryued there being driuen thither by tempest. This lland is onely fife leagues distant from Iucatan. The Admirall Cortes vnderstanding this presently dispatcheth fiftie menne with two Carauelles for that businesse: who carrie with them three Cozumellanes to make inquirie for them, with letters also from the Admirall to the Christians, if they were to bee founde.ouer these fiftie men and two Carauelles hee appoynted Diccus Ordassus chiefe commaunder, who was a warlike and valiant man: and declareth vnto them howe honourable an act they shoulde performe, if they could bring any of them. Hee earnestly commendeth the matter vnto them, for he hopeth to haue some light from them of all those tractes and countries. They fortunately depart; sixe dayes were appoynted them for their returne, they stayed eight. Our men suspected that the Cozumellane messengers, were either slaine or detained, because they stay so long: & therefore returne to the Admirall to Cozumella leauing them behinde. Nowe the Admirall began to thinke of his departure from Cozumella (despayring of the Christians, whom he so much desired, and of the Cozumellanes they had left behinde) but the opposite violence of the sea withheld him. While they stay, behold frō the West, they discry a Canow comming from Iucatan, which brought the Cozumellanes and one of the captiue Christians, called Hieronimus Aquilaris, an Astigitan Vandall who had liued 7. yeeres among the Iucatanes: with what ioy each embraced other, this casual accident may declare. He reporteth vnto them his owne hard chaunce & the miserable condition of his cōpanions lost together with him and they harken vnto him with attentive minds. Here I thinke it not much from the

Rich hangings.

Bookes.

Idolatory.
Circumcision.
Sacrificing ut
children.

Marchandise of
children for
golde.

Heu quis pri-
mus fuit ille,
auri qui pondera
tecti gemasque
laure volentes,
pretiosa pericu-
la fudit. Boet.

The llands of
Bian and Se-
gestian.

Eating of
dogges.

The Barbarian
easily beleue
there is a God.
So apte a peo-
ple to receiue
Religion, the
more to be
lamented their
miserie that
euer they hap-
pened to be dis-
couered by the
cruell Spanyarde
that sought not
so much their
precious soul as
as their golden
soles.

Seuen captiue
Christians in
Iucatan.

A captiue Chris-
tian liued 7.
yeeres among
the Iucatan.

Valdiuia and his
miserable fortune.

Valdiuia and
certaine of his
companions
slaine, and sa-
crificed to the
Idoll Zemes.

The mother of
Aquilaris fell
mad, and the
occasion.

Aquilaris de-
scribed at the
captivity of the
Barbarians.

matter, nor troublesome to your Holinesse, if I rehearse how this mischance befel them. In my former Decads I made mention of a certaine noble man called Valdiuia, sent frō the Spaniards which inhabited Darien in the supposed Continēt of the gulfe of Vrabia, to Hispaniola to the vice roy and Admirall Colonus, & to the Kings counsel (to whom the ordering & redresse of matters touching the supposed Cōtinent appertained) to signifie with what penury they were punished, and what want they had of all things. Vnhappy Valdiuia tooke this matter vpon him in an vnlucky houre: for in the view of the Iland Iamaica, on the South side of Hispaniola & Cuba, a suddaine whirlwind droue him vpon the Quicksandes. These blinde and swallowing sholes of sandes the Spanyardes call the Vipers, and that very aptly, because many shippes are there intangled, (as Lysertes with the Vipers taylor) and so drowned. Here the Carauell splitte in peeces, so that Valdiuia with thirtie of his companions could scarce descende into the shippe boate: where, without oares, and sayles, these miserable wretches were violently caried awaie by the strong current of the Sea. For (as wee sayde beefore in our Decades) the Seas flowe there in a perpetuall course towards the West. Thus they wandered thirteene dayes, not knowing whether they went, nor euer found any thinge to eate. By meanes whereof 7. of them perished through famine, and became foode for the fishes. The rest that remained aliue, now fainting through famine, were driuen to Lucatan: where they fell into the handes of a cruell king, who slew the Captaine Valdiuia, with certaine of his companions, and presently sacrificed them to their Zemes, & then inuited his friendes, he ate them. These Barbarians eate onely their enemies, or such strangers as come vnto them, otherwise they abstaine from mans flesh. This our Hieronimus Aquilaris, and 6. of his fellowes, were kept till the third day to bee sacrificed: but they brake their bands by night, and so escaped the hands of this cruell and bloody Tyrant. They fle to another king who was his enemy, & humbly submit themselues vnto him, and are receiued, but as bondmen, and slaues. It is a lamentable thing to heare of the mother of this Aquilaris, whē shee vnderstood the matter, shee presently fell mad, though shee had heard it onely but vncertainly reported, that hee fell into the handes of men-eaters: so that when soeuer shee sawe fleshe roasted, or put on the spit, shee would fill the house with her outcries, saying: Behold the members of my sonne. O most miserable and wretched mother, the most vnhappy of all women. Aquilaris therefore hauing receiued the Gouvernours letter, sent by the Cozumellane messengers, declareth before the king his maister called Taxmarus, what newes the Cozumellanes brought: And discourseth at large of the power of their king, who were arrived in those partes, and of the fortitude of the menne and their boundtie towardes their friendes, and rigor toward those that refused, or denied their requestes. Wherewith hee made Taxmarus tremble, insomuch, that hee intreateth his seruant that hee would so handle the matter that they might not enter his dominions as enemies, but would come peaceably vnto him. Aquilaris promiseth peace, and if neede were to succour and ayde him against his enemies. Wherupon hee dismissed Aquilaris, and giues him three of his familiars for his companions. These thinges thus prosperously succeeding, Cortes ioyfull for the preservation of Aquilaris, whom he might vse as a fit interpreter, departeth from Cozumella. Now therefore let vs declare, whether that flecte went, and what happened vnto them.

The seuenth Chapter.

SO then, Alaminus the Pilot directing their course, they fall downe to the riuer which Grisalua had first discovered beefore: and found the mouth thereof stopped with sand, as we read of the riuer Nilus of Egypt, when the wind bloweth Easterly, about the Canicular dayes. They could not therefore proceede against the streame in greater vessels, then Brigantines, although else where it bee apt to receiue such shippes. The Gouverneur landeth 200. men in Brigantines & boates vpon the shoare, offereth peace by Aquilaris. The borderers demanded what they would haue? Hieronimus Aquilaris answered, victuales. There was a large sandie plaine, on the side of the towne, whether the inhabitantes will them resorte. The day following our men goe thither, and they bringe them eight of their hennes, as bigge and as sauoury meate as Peacocks some what of a brownishe colour, and brought also as much Maizium,

fel them. In sent fro the rabia, to His ordering with what Valdiuia tooke on the South sandes. These at very aptly, (sayle) and so his companions, these miser- For (as wee gardes the West. neuer found any d became foode were driuen to ptaine Valdiuia, & then inuiting such strangers as nimus Aquilaris, they brake their t. They fle to and are receiued, of this Aquilaris, pard it onely but then soeuer shee outcries, saying: er, the most vn- etter, sent by the marus, what newes king, who were ie towards their ewith hee made dld so handle the e peaceably vnto him against his familiars for his or the preservation Cozumella. Now them.

the riuer which d with sand, as we e Canicular dayes then Brigantines, deth 200. men in orderers demanded here was a large resorte. The day as bigge and as got also as much Maizium,

Maizium, as woulde scarce haue sufficed tenne hungry menne: and withal protest and plainly tell them, that they speedily depart thence. A greate multitude of armed menne come flocking to our men refusing to departe, and the Barbarians demaunde againe, what they meant to sayle through other mens countries. Our menne (by Aquilaris) answered, they desire peace, and victuales for exchaung of commodities, and gold also if they haue any. They answered, that they will neyther haue peace nor warre with them, and that they shoulde bee gone againe, vnlesse they woulde bee kilde euery manne. Our menne sayde, and repeate it againe, that they woulde not departe, without plentie of victuailes, sufficient to maintayne the souldiers that were presente. The Barbarians appoynte to bring them victuales the nexte day, but they sayled: yet the thirde day, after our menne had incamped on the sandes, and stayde there all night, they brought them as much more victuales as before, and in their kings name commaunded them to depart. Our men sayde, they desired to see the towne, and to haue better victuales yet. They denie their request, and murmuring turne their backs. Our men oppressed with hunger, are compelled to seeke food. The Gouvernour therefore sendeth his vnder Capitaines a lande with 150. men, who goe sundry wayes (diuiding themselves in seuerall companies) vnto the countrie villages. The Barbarians euilly intreated one of the troopes they met: but their companions were not farre from them, who hearing the sound of the alarum, came to rescue them beeing in danger. On the other part, the Gouvernour planteth the Ordinance in the Brigantines, and boates: and draweth nere the shore with the rest of the souldiers, and 16. horses. The Barbarians prepared to fight, runne speedily to defend the shoare, and withstand their landing, and with their arrowes and darts, hit some of our men a farre off, and wounded about 20. persons vnprepared, whereupon the Gouvernour discharged the great Ordinance against the enemy, who with the slaughter which the bullets made, the thundring of the Artillery, and flashing of the fire, are astonished and discomforted. Our men cast themselves into the water, and runne vp to the knees, to pursue the stragling enemy flying, and together with the affrighted Barbarians enter the Towne. The Barbarians with continued course passe by the Towne, and forsake their houses. On the banke of this riuer, they say, there standeth a wonderfull huge towne, greater then I dare report. Alaminus the Pilot sayth it is a league and an halfe long, and containeth 25000. houses. His companions lessen the greatnes, and number of the houses: yet they confesse, it is a wonderfull great and famous towne. The houses are diuided with gardens, and are built of lime and stone, cunningly wrought by the industrious art of the Architect. Vnto these houses or habitations they ascend by 10. or 12. steppes or stayres. For none may charge his neighbours wall with beames or rafters. All the houses are seperated the distance of 3. paces asunder, and for the most part are couered with reede, thatch, or marish sedge: yet many of them are couered with slate, or shindle stone. The Barbarians themselves openly confessed, that they were 4000. men in battaile that day, yet vanquished of a few by reason of the newe and strange kind of fight, with horses, and shot, for the horsemen assailling the Barbarians in the reere ouerthrew their troupes, slew and wounded them on the right side, and on the left, as disordered flockes of sheepe. These sillie wretches stroken with astonishment at this miraculous & strange sight stooode amased, and had no power to vse their weapons. For they thought the man on horse-backe and the horse to haue beene all one beast, as fables report of the Centaures. Our men held the towne 22. dayes, where they made good cheere vnder the rooffe, while the hungry Barbarians abode in the open ayre, and durst not assaile our men. They chose the strongest parte of the Towne, as it were a Castle of defence, and securing themselves with continuall watch by night, alwayes suspitious, and fearing some violent assault, they gaue themselves to rest and sleepe, vnder the King Tanosco. The Inhabitants call the towne Potanchianum, and by reason of the victorie obtained there, our men called it Victoria. They report also wonderfull and strange things of the magnificence, greatnes, and finenesse of their countrie pallaces built (for their delight) vpon their possessions or farmes, with solars, square courtes to receiue the raine, and excellent borden rooms, after our fashion. At length by Interpreters, and such as were taken in battaile, they sende for the King, and those that were cheife in authoritie vnder him, and per-

The Barbarians fight with the Spaniards & are discomfited.

A wonderfull large towne on the banke of the riuer.

The concept of the Barbarians when they saw men on horse-backe.

Victoria a town.

Covenants for
suppressing of
Idolatry and
exercising of
Christian re-
ligion, agreed
vpon by the
Barbarians.

S. Johns Bay.

Vniuersall is the
sickness of Am-
bition.

Rich gifts, &c.

swade them to come vnarmed, and submit themselves. They obey their command, and re-
turne euery man vnto their houses, whereupon they assure them of peace vpon certaine con-
ditions proposed, that they abstaine from the horrible ceremonies of mens bodyes which
they sacrificed to their Zemes, and pernicious deuils, whose image they worshipped, and di-
rect the eyes of their mind to our God Christ, the father of heauen and earth, borne into
the world of a Virgin, and crucified for the redemption of mankind, & that they breake
downe their images, and finally professe themselves to become subiect to the King of Spaine.
All which they promise: and as the shortnesse of time would permit, they were instructed.
Being restored our men giue them content by presenting them with our countrie commodi-
ties. They suppose such men to bee sent from Heauen, who beeing so fewe in number durst
incounter hande to hand, against so huge a multitude. They likewise also gaue our men cer-
tayne presentes of gold, and twenty women slaues. So leauing them, they depart to seeke
out other lands of the same shoare, and goe vnto a gulfe found out by Alaminus vnder the
conduct of Grisalua, which they named S. Johns Baye, for *Bian* in the Spanish tongue signi-
fieth a gulfe. The inhabitants come peaceably vnto them. The towne was some mile distant
from the shoare situate vpon an hill, contayning 500. houses, as they reporte. They inuite
them to lodge in the towne, and offer them the halfe parte thereof, if they will dwell with
them for euer. Our menne thought they were eyther terrified with the example of the Inha-
bitantes of Potenchianum, hauing heard the report thereof, or else, hoped (vnder the pro-
tection of such men) to haue fauour & aide against the bordering enemies. For euen these
people also are continually sicke of this naturall disease, as the rest of mankind, miscarried
through raging ambition of soueraingtie and dominion. Our men refuse to seate themselves
there still, but graunt to stay with them for a time. The people follow our men returning
to the shoare, and with greate diligence erect booths for them, and cottages made of boughes,
and couer them the safest way to shelter them from raine. There they incampe: and lea-
the rest of the company should growe slouthfull, the Admirall chargeth Alaminus the Pilot
and Franciscus Montegius to indeuour to search the West part of that land: and that in the
meane time hee would recreate and refresh the feeble and weary souldiers, and cure those
that were wounded at Potenchianum. The Admirall therefore remaineth with the rest. When
they were readie to go, he giueth them 2. Brigantines and 50. men. To this gulfe, the
course of the water was very smooth: but when they had sayled a little further vnto the West
the violence of the Sea in short space transported them 50. leagues from their fellowes, as if
they had bene forcibly carried away with a swift streame falling from the high mountaynes.
They light on a place where two waters meete together, discovering it selfe to them to bee
an huge plaine sea, which met with the waters running to the West, as two mighty riuers,
when they meete one against the other. So the waters comming from the South seemed as
if they would resist them as enemies, setting foote in anothers right, against the will of the
true possessors thereof. Opposite to which concourse of waters, they sawe land a farre off,
but on the right hand, and on the left none. Floating betweene these conflicties, they were
tossed hether and thether with the whirle pooles, which had almost swallowed them insomuch
that for a long space they doubted of any hope of life. Thus struing with sayle and oares,
they were scarce able to ouercome the violence thereof, for when they thought, they hadde
one night sayled two leagues forward, they founde that they were driuen backe foure. Yet
at the length, through Gods fauour and helpe, they ouercame this dangerous conflict: they
spent twentie two dayes in that little space of Sea, and returne at length to their fellowes.
They declare the matter vnto them: and adiudged it to be the end of the land of Hacolucana.
& of the supposed Continent. The land which they saw before them, they suppose to be
eyther annexed to our continent, or else to ioyne with the North partes to the Baccellas,
whereof wee haue at large discoursed in our Decades. So that (most holy Father) this matter
remayneth doubtfull yet, but will be discovered in time. These aduertisements they gaue
vs, we deliuer to your Holinesse. While Alaminus, and Franciscus Montegius searched these
secrets, the king of the Prouince, whose name was Mutezcuma, by one of his nobles called
Quitalbitor, who gouerned the foresayd towne, presented our men with many rich gifts of
gold

gold and siluer, and precious stones sette in golde, curiously wrought after a marueilous strang maner, which they determined to send vnto our new Emperour the King. They consult concerning the planting of a Colonie, without the aduise of Diecus Velasquez Gouvernour of Cuba, and differ in opinion. Some hold it as a fowle error, but the greatest part seduced through the subtilty, and practise of Cortes, gaue him their voyces and consent. Heere many thinges are reported against Cortes, touching his treachery and false dealing, which shall be better knowne heereafter, and therefore now may be omitted. They say, that they were not to respect the Gouvernour of Cuba, seeing the matter should be brought before an higher Iudge, (to wit) the King of Spaine himselfe, so the multitude preuayled. Wherefore they desire victuales of Quitabitor the king, & assign the place for plantatiō of their Colony, 12 leagues fro thence in a most blessed and fertile soyle. And for their General and Commander they chose Cortes himselfe, (as some thinke) against his will. Who createth other Magistrates to gouerne the citie which they purposed to build. They chose Portucarrierius, and Montegius (of whom else where I haue sufficiently spoken) as messengers to carry the presents to the Emperour the King of Spaine, vnder the conduct of the sayd Alaminus the Pilot. Fower of the nobles willingly offer themselues, with two women to attende the after the fashion of their country, which they likewise brought. The people are somewhat of a brownish colour. Both sexes peirce the flappes of their eares, where they hang pendants of gold beset with precious stones. But the men bore whatsoever space remaineth betwene the yppermost part of the nether lippe, and the rootes of the teeth of the lower chapp: and as we sette precious stones in gold to weare vpon our fingers, so in that hole of the lippes, they weare a broad plate within fastened to another on the outside of the lippe, and the iewell they hang thereat is as great as a siluer Caroline doller and as thicke as a mans finger: I doe not remember that I euer sawe so filthy and ougly a sight: yet they thinke nothing more fine or comely vnder the circle of the Moone. By which example wee are taught, how foolishly mankind runneth headlong, blinded in his owne errors, and how wee are all decciued. The Ethiopian thinketh the blacke colour to be fairer then the white: and the white man thinketh otherwise. Hee that is polled, thinketh himselfe more amiable then hee that weareth long hayre, and the bearded man supposeth hee is more comely then he that wanteth a beard. As appetite therefore moueth, not as reason perswadeth, men run into these vanities, and every prouince is ruled by their owne sense, as one sayth, we chose vaine thinges, and abhorre thinges certaine and profitable. Whence they haue gold wee haue sufficiently spoken, but our men wondred whence they had their siluer. They shewe them high mountaynes continually couered with snow, which fewe times of the yeere shewe their bare topps, by reason of thicke cloudes and mists. The playne and smooth mountaines therefore seeme to bring forth gold, and the rough craggy hilles and colde vallies ingender siluer. They haue copper also. They found battayle axes, and digging spades among them: but no iron or Steele. Let vs now come to the presents which were brought to the king, and begin first with the bookes.

The eight Chapter.

WE haue sayde before, that these nations haue bookes: and the messengers who were Procurators for the new Colony of Coluacana, (together with other presentes) brought many of them with them into Spayne. The leaues of their books whereon they write, are of the thin inner rinde of a tree growing vnder the ypper barke: I thinke they call it Philyra, not such as is within the barke of Willowes or Elmes, but such as we may see in the woolly and downy partes of dates, which lyeth within the hard outward rinds, as nets interlaced with holes, and narrow spots. These mashes or little nettings they stampe in a morter together with Bitumen, and afterwarde being softened binde and extend them to what forme they please, and being made hard againe, they smeere and annoynt them with playster, or some matter or substance like playster. I thinke your Holinesse hath scene table bookes, ouerstrewed with playster beaten and sifted into fine dust, wherein one may write whatsoever he pleaseth, and after with a sponge or a cloath blot it out, and write thereon againe. Bookes also

A Colonie erected.

The people of a brown colour. Eare rings.

Lippe iewels.

Consuetudine nihil fortius. Seneca, all is but opinion.

Siluer.

Copper.

Bookes.

are cunningly made of the fig-tree timber, which stewards of great houses carry with them to the market, and with a penne of metall sette downe the wares which they haue bought, and blot them out againe when they haue entred them in their bookes of accompt. They make not their books square leafe by leafe, but extend the matter and substance thereof into many cubites. They reduce them into square peeces, not loose, but with binding, and flexible Bitumen so conioyned, that being compact of wooden table bookes, they may seeme to haue passed the hands of some curious workman that ioyned them together. Which way soeuer the booke bee opened, two written sides offer themselves to the view, two pages appeare and as many lye vnder, vnlesse you stretch them in length: for there are many leaues ioyned together vnder one leafe. The Characters are very like ours, written after our manner, lyne after lyne, with characters like small dice, fish bones, snares, files, starres, & other such like formes and shapes. Wherein they immitate almost the Egyptian manner of writing, and betweene the lines, they paint the shapes of men, & beasts, especially of their kings, & nobles. Wherefore it is to bee supposed that the worthy acts of euery kings ancestors, are there set downe in writing, as we see the like done in our time, that oftentimes the Printers insert the pictures of the authors of the matter deliuered into generall histories, and fabulous bookes also, to allure the mindes of such as are desirous to buy them. They make the former wooden table bookes also with art to content and delight the beholder. Being shut, they seeme to differ nothing from our bookes, in these they set downe in writing the rites, and customes of their lawes, sacrifices, ceremonies, their computations, also, & certayne Astronomical annotations, with the manner and time of sowing and planting. They begin the yeere from the going downe of the Starres, Pleiades, or Virgilias, and end it with the moneths of the Moone. For they call a moneth a moone, heereupon when they intend to signifie moneths, they say moones. They call the moone in their language Tona: and reckon the dayes by the Sunne: therefore naming so many dayes they say so many sunnes, and in their language they call the Sunne Tonatico: yet somewhere it is otherwise, where yet without shew of reason they diuide the yeere into 20. moneths, and include the moneths also into 20. dayes. The huge Temples they frequent, they adorne with golden tapestry, and other furniture intermixed with precious stones. Euery day as soone as light beginneth to appeare, they perfume their temples, and offer deuout prayers before they take any thinge in hand. The inhabitants also of these countryes vse horrible impietie in their sacrifices, for as I haue sayd before, they sacrifice children of both sexes to their Idols. At what time they cast their seede into the ground, and when the corne beginneth to shoote out in eares, the people for want of children, sacrifice slaues (bought with money, daintily fed, and richly arrayed) vnto their Zemes. They circumsise them twentie dayes before they offer the to their Idols, who passing through the streetes, are humbly saluted by the townesmen, as though they should shortly be reckoned among the number of the Godds. They honour their Zemes with another sharpe kinde of piety, and deuotion: for they offer their owne blood, one out of the tongue, another out of the lippes, some out of the eares, and many out of the breast, thigh, or legges. This blood they draw from them, by cutting and gashing themselves with a sharpe rasor, which as it droppeth they receiue in their hands and casting it on high towardes heauen, besprinkle the pavement of the Church therewith, supposing the godds are thereby pacified. Twelue leagues distant from the new Colonie Villa richa, on the East standeth a towne of 5. thousand houses, by the ancient name of the inhabitantes, called Cempoal, but by a new, Siuillia. The King of this towne had five men imprysoned reserued for sacrifices: which our men hauing taken away, hee humbly desired to haue them restored, saying, you bring destruction vpon me, and all this my kingdome, if ye take the slaues away from vs, which we determined to sacrifice. For our Zemes being displeased when our sacrifices cease, will suffer all our corne to be eaten with the weeuell, or to bee beaten downe with hayle, or consumed with droughth, or to be laid flat to the ground with violent showers. Least therefore the inhabitantes of Cempoal should desperately reuolt from them, our men chose the lesse euill for the present, supposing it was no time to forbid them to vse their ancient & accustomed ceremonies, and therefore restored the slaues. Although

The Characters
which the In-
dians vse.

The subject of
the Indian
bookes.

A moneth a
moone.

Their diuision
of the yeere.
The cost the
Indians bestow
on their temples
very observable.
Prayer.

Siuillia.

The superstition
of this people.

The fo

Althou
with th
heauie
Quines
honour
was al
as trop
another
seeme
their te
vnderst
as the
at their
Temple
the pre

The
gold, a
twenty
a Cast
of this
to the
or spi
bough
weigh
not m
two ch
set, b
the be
and b
hang.
garni
set in
by ch
and s
of the
preci
helm
like
Sure
what
stand
writi
of m
tifful
ther
and
ish,
two
plat
stou
heln

Although the Priestes promise them eternall glory, and perpetuall delightes, and familiarity with the Godds after the stormy dayes of this world: yet they hearken to these promises with heauie cheere, and had rather bee deliuered, then put to death. They call their Priestes Quines, in the singular number Quin, who liue vnmarried, a pure and chaste life, and are honoured with reuerent feare. They also hang vp the bones of their enemies taken in the wars after they haue eaten the flesh, bound together in bundels, at the feete of their Zemes, as trophes of their victories, with the titles of the conquerours vnder them. They report also another thing worth the noting, which will bee very pleasing to your Holinesse. The Priestes seeme to baptise children both males and females of a yeere olde, with holy ceremonyes in their temples, powring water crosse-wise out of a cruet vpon their heads, and although they vnderstand not their words, yet they obserued their murmurs and actions: neyther do they as the Mahumetanes or Lewes, thinke their temples profaned, if any of another sect be present at their sacrifices, or ceremonyes. Wee haue now spoken sufficiently of their bookes, Temples, and rites and ceremonyes of their sacrifices, let vs therefore proceede to the rest of the presents brought to the King.

A persuasion of
the resurrection.

The bones of
their enemies
hanged vp for
trophies.

A kinde of bap-
tizing with
water, used
amongst them.

The ninth Chapter.

They brought also two mills, such as may bee turned about with the hand, the one of gold, and the other of siluer, solid and almost of one circumference and compasse: (to wit) twenty eight spannes about. That of golde weighed 3800. Castelanes. I sayd before, that a Castelane is a coyne of golde, weighing a third part more then the Ducate. In the center of this mill, was an Image of a cubite long, representing a King sitting in a thronne, clothed to the knee, like vnto their Zemes, with such a countenance, as we vse to paint hobgoblins or spirites which walke by night. The field or plaine without the center was florished with boughes, flowers, and leaues. The other of siluer was like vnto it, and almost of the same weight: and both were of pure mettall. They brought also graines of gold, as they grew, not molten, for prooffe of natieue gold, which were as big as Lintels, and small pulse. And two chaynes of gold, wherof the one containyd eight linckes, wherein 232. redd stones were set, but not carbuncles, and 183. greene stones, which are of the same estimation there that the best Emerodes are with vs. At the edge of this chaine, hang twenty seuen golden belles, and betwene euery bell foure iewels set in gold, at euery one whereof golden pendants hang. The other chaine had 4. round linckes, beset with 102. red stones, & with 172. greene, garnished with 26. golden belles. In the middle of the chaine, were 10. great precious stones set in gold, at the which 130. golden pendants hung, curiously wrought. They brought also by chaunce 12. payre of leather buskins of diuers colours, some embroydered with gold, and some with siluer, and some with precious stones, both blewe, and greene. At euery of of these hung golden belles: also certaine myters, and attyres of the head full of diuers blew precious stones sowed in them, like vnto Saphires. I know not what to say of the crests, helmets, and fannes of feathers: if manns witte or inuention euer got any honour in such like artes, these people may worthily obtayne the cheife soueraingty and commendation. Surely I marueile not at the gold and precious stones, but wonder with astonishment with what industrie and laborious art the curious workmanship exceedeth the matter and substance. I beheld a thousande shapes, and a thousand formes, which I cannot expresse in writing: so that in my iudgement I neuer saw any thing which might more allure the eyes of men with the beauty thereof. The feathers of their foule vnkowne to vs, are most beautifull and shining. As they would admire our peacocks, or phesants traines when they sawe them: so did wee wonder at their feathers, with the which they make their fannes, and crests, and trimly beautifie all their worke. Wee sawe blewe, greene, yeallow, redd, white & brownish, to be natieue colours in feathers. All those instruments they make of gold. They brought two helmets couered with blewe precious stones: one edged with golden belles, and many plates of gold, two golden knobbes sustaining the belles. The other couered with the same stones, but edged with 25. golden belles, crested with a greene foule sitting on the top of the helmet, whose feete, bill, and eyes were all of gold, and seuerall golden knobbes sustained euery

The rich gifts
brought to the
king.

The Indians
excell al other
nations in cu-
riousness of
workmanship.

euery bell. Also foure trowt-speares three-forked, couered ouer with quilles, and platted and wrought in, of diuers colours, the teeth whereof were full of precious stones, fastened together with golden threedes, and wyars. They brought also a great Scepter beset with precious stones after the same manner, with two golden rings, and a bracelet of golde: and shooes of an Harts skinne, sowed with golden wyar, with a white sole in the bottom, and a looking glasse of a bright stone, halfe blew and white, set in golde, and by chaunce also they brought a cleere transparent stone called Sphengites. Likewise a Lysert set in gold, and two great shelles, two golden duckes, and the sundry shapes of diuers birdes, and all of golde, foure fishes called Cephal of massie gold, and a rodd of copper. Besides targets for the warres, and bucklers, 24. shieldes of gold, 5. of siluer, what soeuer they brought was curiously wrought in with feathers. Also a light square target platted and wouen with quilles and feathers of diuers colours, in the front whereof, the middle of the golden plate was ingrauen with the portraiture of the Idoll Zemes. Foure other golden plates in maner of a crosse inclose the Image, wherein were the proportions of diuers beastes, as Lyons, Tygers, and Woolues, hauing their heads framed of twigges, and little splints of timber, with the skinnes of the beastes sowed vpon them, garnished with copper belles, and the shapes of diuers other beastes exceeding well made of the whole skinne. Likewise great sheetes of gossampine cotton, intermingled with blacke, white, and yeallow colours, checker wise, which is an argument, that they are acquainted with chesse boards. One of these sheets, on the right side was chequered with blacke, white, and red colours, and on the inside, all of one colour, without variety. Another also wouen after the same manner, of other colors, with a blacke wheele in the midst, full of rayes and spots, with bright feathers intermixed. Two other white sheetes also, Tapestry couerlets, rich Arras hangings, a little souldiers cloake or cassocke, such as they vse to weare in their countrie, with certaine wouen coates which they weare vnder the, and diuers thinne light tyres for the head. I omitte many other things more beautifull to behold, then precious, which I suppose would be more tedious to your Holiness, then delightfull to report: as also the innumerable particulars of the discoverers, concerning their labours, wantes, dangers, monsters, and many aduersities, whereof euery one in their anotations largely discourse, which also are read and registred in our Senate of Indian affayres. These fewe obseruations I haue gathered out of many and diuers of their bookes, and priuate letters. Yet the bringers of these presents, and Ferdinandus Cortes the Admirall, and author of erecting the new Colony, in those remote countries, were adiudged by the Kings Councell of India, to haue done against equity and right, for that without the aduise of the Gouvernour of Cuba, who by the Kings authority sent them forth, they tooke the matter vpon them contrary to his commaundement, and that they went (although it were to the King) without his consent. Diecus Velasquez therefore, the Gouvernour by his procurator accuseth them as fugitiue theeves, and traitours to the King: but they alledge, that they had performed much better seruice and obedience to the King, and that they appealed to a greater tribunal and an higher Iudge: and say, that they furnished a nauie at their owne charge, and that the Gouvernour himselfe parted with nothing vpon other termes, then as a marchant that was to receiue gaine and profit by his commodities, which they alledge, he sold at a farre dearer rate. The Gouvernour requireth to haue them punished by death, they desire magistracy and offices of commaund, and reward for the daungers, and labours sustayned. Both the reward, and punishment are deferred: yet was it decreed, that both parties should be heard. Now let vs returne to the Darienenses the inhabitants of the gulfes of Vrabia in the supposed Continent. Wee haue sayd heeretofore that Darien is a riuer falling into the West side of the gulfes of Vrabia. Vpon the banke whereof the Spaniards erected a Colony, expulsiue the King Cemarcus by force of armes: and called the name of the Colony Sancta Maria Antiqua, by occasion of a vow made at the time of the fight. To these (as wee mentioned in the ende of our Decades) the same yeere wee ceased to write, 1200. men were sent vnder the conduct of Petrus Arias Abulensis, at the request of Vasques Nunnes Balboa, who first discovered the South Sea heeretofore vnknewne, and gouerned the Darienenses: Petrus Arias arriuing at Darien with ample authority from the King, we declared, that diuers Centurions were sent forth diuers wayes with

Sancta Maria
Antiqua.

The
diue
hide
acte
creat
Petr
Bish
and
be fo
cruel
again
to be
confu
to se
diere
my f
shall
and p
and a
wee
to fin
uern
and i
upon
worle
euted
the la
imbar
hee b
with
the f
Darien
was u
for be
seuer
let vs

Of
vter
Sea,
inha
this
four
of D
three
wou
the l
darts
the
in th
Vas
ba, a
pani
v

diuers companies of foote: whereupon what followed I will briefly deliuer, because all was hideous and dreadfull, & nothing pleasing. Since our Decades ceased, no other thing was acted saue to kill, and be killed, to slaughter, and be slaughtered. The Catholique king created Vascus Balboa Atlantado, who could not brooke the soueraignty and commande of Petrus Arias, so that the dissention betwene them ouerthrew all. Iohannes Capedus the Bishop, a preaching Fryer of the order of S. Francis mediated the matter betwene them, and promised to giue Vasques the daughter of Petrus Arias to wife. But no meanes might be found to make agreement betwene these two Commanders. They fall out much more cruelly, insomuch that the matter came to that passe, that Petrus Arias taking occasion against Vascus through proces framed by the magistrats of the city, commaunded Vascus to be strangled, and 5. other cheife Commanders with him, saying that Vasques and his confederates went about to rebell in the South Sea, where Vascus built a flecte of 4. shippes, to search the South shoare of the supposed Continent. And affirmeth, that to the 300 souldiers he had with him (his companions in armes) hee should speake these wordes. What, my friendes and fellow souldiers, partakers with me of so many labours, and daungers, shall we alwayes be subiect to anothers commaund? Who can nowe indure the insolency and pride of this Gouverneur? let vs follow these shoares whither Fortune shall conduct vs, and among so many Elisian prouinces of so huge a land, let vs chose one, where at length wee may leade the remnant of our life in freedome and liberty. What manne shall be able to finde vs out, or hauing found vs do vs violence? These wordes being reported to the Gouverneur, Petrus Arias sendeth for Vascus from the South: Vascus obeyeth his commaund, and is cast in pryson, and yet denyeth that he euer imagined any such purpose. Whereupon they sought to produce testimony of the misdemeanours which he had committed: his wordes are repeated from the beginning, and he adiudged worthy of death, and was executed. So poore miserable Vascus (euen when he hoped to obtayne greater titles) ended the labours and dangers which he had vndergon. Petrus Arias, leauing his wife in Dariena, imbarceth himselfe in the flecte, to search the countries lying on the shoare: but whether hee bee returned, we haue yet no certaine intelligence, so that Fortune playes her part also with him. For euen now another whose name was Lupus Sosa, being called home, from the fortunate Ilandes, where he had beene Viceroy a long time, was made Gouverneur of Darien: what stomacke Petrus Arias may haue, if he returne, let good men iudge. There was nothing done vnder his government, woorthy of glory. On the one side he is blamed for being too remisse, and negligent, and on the other, for being too fauourable, and nothing seuerer in correcting errors and disorders. But we haue spoken enough of this matter: Now let vs repeate some thinges remayning yet behinde.

The tenth Chapter.

OF the great and deepe riuer Dabaiba, called by our men Grandis, which falleth into the vttermost angle of the gulfe of Vrabia, by 7. ports or mouths as Nilus into the Egyptian Sea, we haue spoken at large in our Decades. The hilly countries thereof by report of the inhabitants are very full of gold. Vascus and other Commanders went foure times vp this riuer armed in battayle aray against the streame, with shippes of diuers kinds: first forty leagues, next fifty, then eighty, and at an other time crossed it, to search the secrets of Dabaiba: but O wonderfull mischeife and mischaunce. A naked people alwaies ouerthrowe the clothed nation, the vnarmed the armed, and sometimes kild them euery manne, or wounded them all. They goe to the warres with poysoned arrowes, and where they can see the bare fleshe of their enemies, they will not fayle to strike them there. They haue likewise darts, which in the time of fight, they cast so thicke a farre off, that like a cloude they take the light of the sunne from their enemies: and haue also broade wooden swordes hardened in the fire, wherewith they fiercely fight hande to hande, if they come to handie strokes, and Vascus himselfe sometime receiued many woundes at their handes. So the riuer of Dabaiba, and the kingdome were left vnsearched. It remayneth, that wee speake somewhat of Hispaniola, the mother of the other Ilands. In it, they haue a full Senate, and siue Iudges added

vol. v.

U u

to

Vascus executed.

Lupus Sosa made Gouverneur of Darien.

The riuer Grandis.

Gold.

Poisoned arrowes.

Darts.

Wooden swordes hardened in the fire.

Hispaniola.

The roote
Iucca.

Hispaniola de-
creed to be a
free people.

He commendeth
the suger Canes
of Hispaniola.

Plenty of cattle
and wonderful
increase of corne.

Vines.

to them, to giue lawes to the people of all those tractes and Countries, but shortly they will leaue gathering of golde there, although it abound therewith, because they shall want myners, and labourers. The miserable inhabitants (whose helpe they vsed in gathering golde) are brought to a very small number: consumed from the beeginning with cruell warres, but many more with famine, that yeere they digged vpp the roote Iucca, wherewith they made bread for their nobles, and ceased from sowing that graine Maizium their common bread: the spots and pustels of that foule disease heeretofore vnknowne vnto them, in the former yeere 1518 which like rotten sheep inuaded the through a contagious breath or vapour, and withall, to speake truly, the greedy desire of gold in digging, sifting, & gathering whereof, they cruelly vexed these poore wretches, who after the sowing of their seede, were wont to giue themselves to idle sportes, dancing, fishing, or hunting of certaine conies, which they call Vitæ, consumed the rest. But now it is decreed by all the Kings Councell, that they be reduced to a free people, and giue themselves onely to increase or generation, and to tillage and husbandry: and that slaues else where bought, should be drawne to that labour of the gold mines. We haue spoken sufficiently of the deadly hunger of golde. It is a marueilous thing to heare how all thinges grow & prosper in this lland. There are now twenty eight suger-presses erected in it, wherewith they wring out great plenty of suger. They say, that higher and greater suger canes grow in this lland, then any where else: and that they are as thicke as a mans arme in the fleshy and brawny part, and of a mans stature, and an halfe high. And which is more strange, Valentia in Spayne, where our Auncestors made greate quantity of suger euery yeere, or wheresoeuer they take most care and paines about their suger canes, and when euery roote bringeth forth sixe, or seuen sprouting canes at the most: in Hispaniola, euery roote bringeth twenty and sometimes thirtie. The plentie of foure footed beastes and cattle is exceeding great: yet the raging thirst of gold hath hetherto diuerted the Spanyard from tyllage. Corne increaseth wonderfully there, insomuch (as they say) it hath sometimes yielded more then an hundred fould, where they are carefull to sow it in the hilles, or tops of the mountaynes, especially towards the North. But in playne and open fieldes, it vanisheth to chaffe, by reason of the rancknesse, and excessive moysture thereof. Vines also grow in those parts: but what shoulde wee speake of the trees which beare Cassia-fistula, brought hether from the bordering llandes of the supposed Continent, mentioned in the bookes of our Decades? Whereof there is so great plentie now, that after fewe yeeres, wee shall buy a pound thereof at the Apothecaries, for the price of one ounce, I haue spoken sufficiently in my Decades of the Brasil woodes and other prerogatiues of this blessed lland, and also of the benefits which nature hath bountifully bestowed vpon it. I thought good also to repeate many things, because I suppose, the waight of your important affayres, might happily diuert your Holinesse mind from the remembrance thereof. And sauoury and pleasing discourses, distort not the lippes by repetition, so that a precious matter be adorned with rich and costly attire. The matter deserued a garment imbroydered with gold, and precious stones: but wee haue couered it with a fryars coole. Let the blame therefore of my fault be imposed vpon the most reuerent Ægidius Viterbiensis that well deseruing Cardinall of your Holinesse sacred Sea Apostolical, who inioyned mee, being an vnskillfull artificer to melt gold in a Smithes shopp, to frame costly iewels and ornaments therewith.

HAs Petri Martyris salebras, & spineta qua potuimus cura, & industria, iam tandem percurrimus, in quibus traducendis si temporis mora tibi nimis longa videatur, qui poteras, quod mihi oneis imposuisti facilius subire, qui acuto polles ingenio, & arte meliore: æquo tamen animo, & amica fronte feras, quod in hisce novi argumenti libellis studuerim magis veritati, quam verborum ornameto, aut breuitati,

M. LOCK.

The

The 5. Decade of Peter Martyr a Millanoise of Angleria, dedicated to Pope Adrian the sixt.

MOST holy father, and most gracious Prince, I dedicated my fourth Decade of the state of India, to Pope Leo the tenth your most bountifull Cosin germane: wherein we haue related with great fidelity, and integrity what menne, llands, or vnknowne landes haue bene discovered in the Ocean in our time, to the yere from the incarnation 1520. Since which time, other letters came from Fernandus Cortes, Admirall of the Emperours fleete, sent from those countries, which he had then subiected to the Spanish dominion, wherein newe and straunge matters were containd, such as had neuer bene heard of before, very admirall and wonderfull. All which, as briefly and truely as I could, obseruing the order of the matter and times, I haue pressed in this fift Decade of my Commentaries, which I dedicated to Pope Adrian your predecessour, and seeing he is departed this life before the receipt thereof, as you are heyre of his dignity, so be inheritor of my labours, as heereafter you shall bee of all, if I write any thing worthy the historிக்க reading. I dedicate it therefore by name to your gracious and sacred maiesty, that vnder your happy protection and authority it may be published, & all men may know howe great an addition hath bin made vnto the name of Christ, since your Holinesse came to the Papacy which the Almighty, (as I hope, and desire) for your piety, and clemencies sake, will infinitely increase. Proceede therefore, as you haue begunne, and make perpetuall peace betweene Christian Princes, especially betweene the Emperour, and the most Christian Princes, which are at variance with him, and aduance the standarde of the healthfull Crosse against the impious enimie: and so leaue eternall monuments of your name, and fame to al posterity, which no time shal euer be able to deface. In the end thereof of the former booke, (that we may returne to our purpose,) mention was made of the most mighty King Mutezuma, who in an huge citty, seated in the middle of a salt lake, called Tenustiane, raigned farre, and wide ouer many cities, and kinges of diuers Prouinces, from whom (as we mentioned before) presentes of wonderfull excellency were sent by the Spanyardes Montegius and Portucarrerius to the Emperour Charles abiding at Vallidolet that most famous towne of Spaine. But in the meane space while Cortes expecteth the returne of the messengers hee sent to the Emperour, least through idlenes the souldiers should become dull and sluggish, hee determined to execute his intended voyage. That great and mighty citty therefore beeing pacified and quieted, which in the former booke of my Decades, I say was called Potenchianum vnder King Tauasco, was presently after called Victoria by our men, by reason of a victorie obtained there against an huge multitude of Barbarians. From whence Cortes went some 80. leagues to the West, and there planted a Colonie vpon the shoare, some fewe leagues from another citty within the lande, named Zempoal, neere the riuer of Grisaluz, and aboute halfe a league from the village, vpon a little rising hill, named Chianistan: but hee called his owne Colonie Vera Crux, because he landed vpon the Eue before the feast of the Crosse. From thence Cortes determined in persō to vnderstand what was reported of so great a King, as he had heard Mutezuma was, and what rumour went of so huge and vast a citty. Cortes thought and purpose being vnderstood, the inhabitants of Zempoal bordering vpon Mutezuma, who by violence yeelded him subiection, yet beeing deadly enemies vnto him, consulting together, went vnto Cortes, as the Hædui, and Sequani, after the Heluetians were vanquished, came humbling themselves and weeping vnto the Emperour, for the insolent and outrageous tyranny of Ariouistus King of the Germanes: so did the Zempoalenses complaine of Mutezuma, & much more greiuously, in that, besides the heauy tributes of other prouinciall reuenues, which they yeerely gaue, they were compelled to giue vnto Mutezuma slaues, and for want of them, to giue him some of their owne children in stead of tribute, to bee sacrificed to their godds. For wee haue sayde, and it is well knowne vnto your Holinesse, that in all those countries they offer vp mans blood to appease their angry godds, as heereafter shalbe declared more at large. The Zempoalenses therefore promise to giue Cortes pledges for their fidelity, and auxiliary forces (valiant and courageous warriours) against the Tyrant because they hope (that God, creator of

U u 2

Heauen

He begins his narration.

The Colony Zempoal. Vera Crux.

Mutezuma a mighty king.

Slaues (and for want of slaues) free children paid for tribute to Mutezuma to bee sacrificed.

The Conceit
that the Barba-
rians had of the
Christians.

A digression to
answer an objec-
tion.

The great Ar-
tillery and men
on horse back
how terrible to
the Barbarians.

A Pollicie of
Cortes.

Heauen and earth fauoringe them, of whom our men made report, and also safely brake downe their parents Images which they worshipped before) they shall free the city from so cruell a Tyrant, and restore liberty to the whole Prouince, otherwise most fortunate, if Cortes would pittie this their so great calamity, & meete with their cruell iniuries: and they further say, they doubt not but they shal get the victory because they thought Cortes and his consorts were sent from Heauen, seing they were so mild vnto the conquered, and such destroyers of them that refused amity with them, or being fewe in number, that they durst stand, and resist so great a sorte of warriors as the power of the Potenchianensioans was. For our men in that battayle disfranked and ouerthrewe 40000. armed men (as your Holines hath often heard of them who were present thereat, and hath likewise read it in letters sent from the cheife Commanders) with no more then 500. foote, 16. horse and some great ordinance. Heere we must make a litle digression to another sort of men, who are of so slender and base a courage as they take those things for fables, which they think to be without compasse of their strength. These men will writh the Nose, when they shall vnderstand that so many thousands of the enemye were ouerthrown by so small a number of souldiers. But two things may cutt their caulles asunder. The one is an example, the other the strangenes of the thing. Haue they not read that the Emperour with lesse force conquered the mighty armies of the Heluetians, then of Arionistus, and lastly of the Belgæ? Did not Themistocles vanquish Xerxe kinge of the Persians and slew his army at Salamina (who is reported to haue invaded Grecia with so great a multitude, that his army hauinge pitched their tentes, desirous to dine, drinking riuer water, drew their chanel drye) when he had no greater a power then 12. thousand Grecians so that the Emperor being scarce able to flie, escaped with one shippe onely? Besides, our menne hadd two seuerall kindes of fight, neuer scene before to those Barbarians or euer hearde of, which with the onely sight thereof compelled them to runn away, to wit, the thunder of the ordinance, & the flame and sulphury smell issuinge from the great artillery which they supposed to be thunder and lightning, brought by our menn from heauen. Neither were they lesse terrified through the approach of the horses thinkinge the manne on horsebacke and the horse to haue bin but one beast, as fables report of the Centaures: neither did it alwayes succede well and happily with our menne, who had often vndergone the like hazzardes themselves, insomuch, that the Barbarians haue sometimes destroyed whole armyes of our men and haue vitterly refused to intertaine strangers and guesates. But I must now returne to the intended voyage, from whence I diuerted. The oration of the Zempoalenses being ended, and interpreted by Hieronimus Aquilaris, who tossed to and froe with waues had 7. yeeres together led a seruile life, vnder the power and commande of a certaine King of whom I haue at large made mention in the booke goinge before this Decade Cortes departed from Vera Crux, leauinge 150. men there, for defense of that Colony & so marched forward with 15. horsmen only, 300. foote and 400. auxiliary Zempoalenses to ayde him in the warres: yet first, he commanded all the shippes (wherein he had brought his army) to be sunke vpo pretence that they were rotten: but he himselfe confesseth the cause, to be this, to wit, that thereby he might remoue all hope of flight from the souldiers, seeing he had determined to settle himselfe in those countreyes & make his perpetuall dwellinge there. Yet the souldiers for the most part seemed to thinke otherwise: for they feared by the example of many of their companions who were often slaughtered by the Barbarians, least the same might happen to them, that being but few in number, they should be brought to infinite nations, and those warlike, and armed people. Moreouer many of the were the familiars, & frendes of Iacobus Velasquez Gouverneur of the Iland of Fernandina, which is Cuba who desired to obey their old comander after they shuld returne from the search and viewe of strange countreyes. Many of these (at what time Cortes dispatched a ship with the presents to the Emperour, without acquaintinge Iacobus Velasquez therewith) attempted to steale away with a Brigantine, to signifie the departure of y ship, y laying al passage both by sea, and lād he might take her whereupon Cortes apprehended foure and punished them as guiltie of treason. Their names were Iohn Scutifer, Iacobus Zermegnus, Gonsalus Vmbria, all Pilottes, together with

with Al
the exa
the 16.
hundred
from the
maius.
whose h
manner
I am to
him that
ciscus C
newe C
tayne
thing: I
it: & b
halfe p
denyeth
be spoy
ments f
other co
commit
coastes
large in
habitaun
Pontius,
was so w
he prese
Pontius,
to bee i
vpon a
many vi
of that r
subiect
not per
brought
bendeth
Tenuiti
side of
litle pr
Wheref
Cortes,
called b
the Sec
esse.
marche
Sincue
a litle
it, but
house
full Pr
contay
euery

with Alphonsus Pognatus. The shippes therefore being sunke, and the rest terrified (by the example of these foure) from further thought of any departure, he tooke his iourney vpon the 16. day of August, 1519. to that great citie Tenustitan standing vppon a lake, an hundred leagues distant to the West, from the Castle of Vera Crux: And had with him from the Zempoalenses three principall Commanders, called Teuchius, Manexius, and Tamauius. That citie, and her neighbour towne named Zacacami, gaue him 1300. men, whose helpe our men vsed for caryage of their burdēs, in steede of pack-horses, as the manner is in those countryes. Nowe therefore least matters should slightly bee omitted, I am to declare, what befell Cortes in that iourney. As he was vppon the way, it was told him that an vnknowne Fleete wandred along that shore: & as he vnderstoode, it was Franciscus Garaius Gouvernour of the llande Iamaica, who also sought a place to erect a newe Colonie. Wherefore Cortes sendeth messengers to Garaius, and offereth him entertainment at his Colonie of Vera Crux, and such supplie as he had there, if hee wanted any thing: but whither he did this politickly or no, we shall hereafter knowe. Garaius refuseth it: & by the Kinges Secretary, and witnesses hee protesteth to Cortes, that he yeelde him halfe part of all those countryes, and assigne limites to diuide their iurisdiction. Cortes denyeth his demaunde, and commanded the Secretarie and witnesses sēt from Garaius to be spoyled, and taking away his owne mens olde raggs gaue them as many new garments for them. Garaius vrged him no further, but departed; being about to goe to other countryes, of the same shore. For from Iamaica, (the gouernment whereof was committed vnto him) he also in three Carauelles, the yeere beefore, ranne along the Sea coastes of that lande which Iohannes Pontius called Florida, (of whom I haue spoken at large in the former Decades) but with ill successe. For hee was ouerthrowne by the inhabitants, who slewe the greatest part of his menne. The like also happened to Iohannes Pontius, the firste finder of Florida. Beeing oftentimes repulsed by the inhabitants, hee was so wounded at the length, that returning to Cuba to cure himselfe, & his wounded men, he presently died there. But Garaius searching those shores after the death of Iohannes Pontius, saith hee founde Florida, to be no lland, but by huge crooked windings & turninges to bee ioyned to this mayne Continent of Tenustitan. Garaius sayling to those shores, light vpon a riuer, flowing into the Ocean with a broad mouth, and from his ships, discryed many villages, and with reedes. A king whose name is Panuchus possesseth both sides of that riuer, for which the country also is called Panucha. This king is reported to be subiect to the great king Mutezuma, and to paye him tribute. Free libertie of trading was not permitted there, and as wee gather by the Chart or map which Garaius his painters brought, it bendeth like a bow, so that descending from Tenustitan, to the North, it bendeth alwayes more and more to the middle of a bowe. And presently againe it bendeth by litle and litle to the South, so that if a line be stretched from the shore of Tenustitan, to that parte of the lande which Iohannes Pontius first touched, from the North side of Fernandina, it will make the string of the bow. Garaius thinketh that coast to be very litle profitable, because he sawe tokens & signes of small store of golde, and that not pure. Wherefore he wished rather to erect a Colonie not farre from Sancta Crux the Colonie of Cortes, but he forbad him. For in that place Cortes himselfe planted another, which he called by the name of Almeria, from Almeria a citie of the kingdome of Granado standing on the Sea shore, which not many yeeres since was recouered frō the Moores by warlike prowesse. These things being thus done, Cortes pursueth his entended purpose. And hauing marched foure dayes iourney, forward from Zempoal, came into a Prouince named Sincuchimalarem, whiche is a playne hauing onely one citie or towne, seated on the side of a litle rising hill, exceeding stronge and fortified by nature. There is no other accesse vnto it, but by two scales or greeces, made by mans hande, harde to clime: which is the seate, and house of the King of that small Prouince tributarie to King Mutezuma. It is almost fruitefull Prouince, euery where in the playne full of many townes and villages, euery one of them contayning 300. or 400. houses, but country cottages. The Nobilitie (as it falleth out euery where) dwell with their Kinge. This king peaceably entertained our menne in his towne,

Cortes takes his iourney towards the great Citie of Tenustitan.

Franciscus Garaius.

Florida.

The vnhappy successe of Iohannes Pontius.

Panucha.

The Colonie Almeria.

Sincuchimalarem a Prouince.

towne, and fed them well, affirming that Mutezuma charged him so to doe. Cortes sayeth, hee will report it to Mutezuma and glue him thanks, and further sayth that hee came out of his owne Empire and dominions to see him. Cortes departing from this kinge, went to a most high mountaine inclosing the end or boundes of that prouince. Cortes affirmeth, and they that came from it confesse, that no mountaine in Spayne is higher, and that passing ouer it in the Moneth of August, they indured sharpe and bitter cold, by reason of the congealed snow & continuall Ice. In the descent of these mountaines, they enter another plaine, at the beginninge and entrance whereof standeth a towne named Texunacum, this also is a most fruitfull plaine, and fortified with many villages and towers, and all of them subiect to Mutezuma. Being gone out of that valleye two dayes iorney, weakened & spent with hunger and cold they passed ouer barren countries without water, and therefore desolate, and not inhabited. Through that distemper, and a violent storme of winde and raine, with lighteninge and thunder many perished. From thence they came vnto a calmer Mountaine, on the topp whereof stode a Chapell dedicated to their Idolls. Before the Chapell dores, was an exceeding great stacke of wood. At certaine times of the yeere, euery one offer to their godds pyles of woode, together with the oblations which are to be sacrificed: Who thinke thereby they appease the angry gods. The Spaniards call the opening of the mountaine toppes, Portes, so from the same effect: they called that passage the Port of wood. Descendinge from that Mountayne, they enter into another valley fruitfull and inhabited, whose Kinge is called Cacataminus. The Kinges Courte is all of stone, very greate made with halles, and many Chambers, after our fashion, and seated vpon the banke of a pleasant riuer runninge through that valley. This kinge honorably intertained vs, and being demaunded whether he were at Mutezumas command, he answered, & who is not? seeing Mutezuma is Lorde of the world. But demaunding of him what hee thought of our King, he confessed he was greater, whom Mutezuma also himselfe would obey. Our men instantly requiring to know whether hee could get any gold, he confessed, that he had gold, but that he would not giue it to any, without Mutezumas consent. So they durst not compell him to giue them any least they should disquiet Mutezuma beeing farre of. Two other bordering Kinges persuaded through the fame of our nation, came vnto Cortes and either of them brought him a seuerall chaine of gold, but of smale weight, and no pure mettall, whereof the one had dominion 4. leagues vp the riuer, and the other two leagues downe the streame. They say that both sides of the riuer are euery where fortified with houses which haue gardens, and country farmes lying betweene them. They report that the Princes court, who hath his house vp the riuer, is not inferior either in greatnes, excellency, or strength, and that there is a Castle here neere vnto his court, inexpugnable, and most exactly built with bulwarkes and turretted walles. The report goeth that this Kinges towne consisteth of 5000. houses, & some say 6000. but they told vs not the name thereof. Our menn were also well entertained by this Prince: who is likewise subiect to Mutezuma. From this kinges lodginge Cortes sent 4. messengers to the next towne called Tascalteca, to sounde the myndes of the inhabitants, whether they would be pleased, that hee should come vnto them because he had heard that the Tascaltecanes were a warlike people, and deadly enemies to Mutezuma: Whereupon hee stayde 2. dayes with his king, expecting the messengers. Mutezuma could neuer perswade the Tascaltecanes to admitt any lawe from him, or that they should obey him, insomuch that they alwayes brought vp their youth in the hatred of Mutezuma, by meanes whereof for many yeares together they wanted salt and gossampine cotton wherewith to make garments, being inclosed on euery side with Mutezumas countries, and could not elsewhere procure these necessaries. They say, that they had rather liue with greate want of things necessary, free fro the slauery & seruitude of Mutezuma, then to become his vassells, & subiects. In this city they say there are many nobles, Lords of villages, whose helpe the comon wealth of y^e Tascaltecanes vseth, making the captaines & Commanders in the wars. They will haue no Lords. If it arise in any manns minde, to be desirous to raise an heade, it woulde draw to a worse mischiefe vpon that citizen, then the Heluetianes inflicted vpon Orgenitoris,

A high mountaine,

Texunacum a towne,

A Chapell dedicated to Idolls.

The Port of wood. Cacataminus and his Court.

Mutezuma thought to be lord of the world yet acknowledged to be lesse then Themperu.

3. petty kinges bringe presents to Cortes.

Tascalteca a towne,

The magnanimite of this people.

Cortes sayeth, at hee came out
inge, went to a
s affirmeth, and
at passing ouer
f the congealed
er plaine, at the
s also is a most
them subiect to
& spent with
ore desolate, and
and raine, with
lmer Mountaine,
e Chapell dores,
ery one offer to
sacrificed: Who
ing of the moun-
Port of wood.
l and inhabited,
one, very greate
pon the banke
y intertained vs,
answered, & who
f him what hee
ma also himselfe
got any gold, he
hout Mutezumans
y should disquiet
ough the fame of
aine of gold, but
gues vp the riuier,
of the riuier are
s lying betweene
er, is not inferior
ere neere vnto his
tted walles. The
y 6000. but they
this Prince: who
4. messengers to
unts, whether they
that the Tascalte-
pon hee stayde 2.
uer perswade the
insomuch that they
whereof for many
e garments, being
e procure these ne-
essary, free fro the
cts. In this city
ōmon wealth of
warrs. They will
raise an heade, it
nes inflicted vpon
Orgentorites,

Orgentorites, affecting Empire and soueraignie, and perswading the Princes and chiefe of the Hedui, and Sequani, to do the like. The Tascaltecanes are iust & vpright in their dealing, as they foud by experiēce afterwards, wherof hereafter we wil speake at large. Cortes therefore expecting the messengers, and none of them returned, departed from that towne, yet spent eight dayes in that valley, and diuers villages thereabout. In the meane space the Zempoalenses goe about to perswade Cortes, to procure the amitie and friendship of the Tascaltecan common wealth, declaring how great helpe he should finde in them against the power of Mutezuma, if at any time hee attempted to doe any thing against them. Whereupon he remoued thence towards Tascalteca. In his journey he founde another valley, which a wall of 20. foote broade, and a mans height and an halfe high, ouercrossed from both the bottomes of high mountaines standing on either side. In the whole wall there was but one gate, ten paces wide, built with diuers crooked turnings, leas the sudden inuasion of the enimie might assault them wandering & vnprovided. The wall appertained to the Tascaltecanes, made for that purpose, leas the Mutezumans shold passe through that valley, whether they woulde or no; The inhabitantes of the valley behinde them, accompanying Cortes, as Guides to direct him the way, admonished and perswaded him, not to goe through the borders of the Tascaltecanes, saying they were deceitfull, breakers of their fidelity and promise, and enemies to all strangers, and such as receiued intertainment from them, and further that if they tooke any, they were deuourers of their enemies: and therefore they woulde conduct Cortes and his companions al the way through the countreyes of Mutezuma, where by Mutezumans commaundement, they should haue whatsoever they could wish or desire. On the contrary parte the Zempoalensian guides, Teuchius, Manexius, and Thamaius, and some of the chiefe of Zacatamini who had a thousand warriours, were most of the same opinion, who aduise him by any meanes not to trust the tributaries of Mutezumans, for our mē were to be drawn by Mutezuman guides, through places, full of dangers, and passages fit for ambushment: and that he shoulde beware of the deceit of the Mutezumanes, they earnestly besought him: promising that they woulde be his guides through the open countreyes of the Tascaltecanes. Resolving therefore to followe the counsell of the Zempoalensians, and Zacatamini, hee taketh his journey through the Tascaltecan fields. Cortes himselfe went beefore the bandes as they marched, with the horse, of the which, he drew forth two, and sent them beefore as scouters, who if they sawe any imminent danger beefore their eyes, they might take notice thereof, & comming backe, signifie, that they must prepare themselves to fight. The horsemen being sent beefore from the toppe of an high hill some foure miles of, by chauce discovered certaine armed men lying in ambuscado in the next plaine, nowe in the iurisdiction of the Tascaltecanes. As soone as they sawe the horse, supposing the man and the horse to be but one beast, stricken with feare at such an horrible sight and strange apparition, they fled away or dissembled flight. Our men make signes of peace, and cal them backe againe as they fled, beckening, and wauing to them with their handes. Of many, 15. of the onely make a stande: hauing an ambuscado hard by. The two horsemen that went beefore, cal the rest of the horse, and bidde them make speede. A litle further about 4000. armed men issue forth of the place where they lay hid, and begin the fight with our men, and in the twinkling of an eye kill two horse: with their arrowes. Our foote companies goe vnto them, and set vpon the enimie, who being wounded with arrowes and arquebus shot forsake the battaile. They slew many of them, but not a man more of ours either slayne or wounded. The next day following, messengers were sent to Cortes to desire peace: who brought two of the messengers with them whom Cortes expected a long tyme: they intreate pardon for that they had done, and make excuses: saying, that they had forraigne souldiers that day, whiche they could not restraine, and that it was done against the power & abilitie which the Princes of that Prouince hadde to withstande it: and that they were readie to pay for the horses, and if any other damage were done, they offered recompence. Cortes admitted their excuses. Marching some three myles thence, hee incamped on the side of a certayne ryuer, and appoynted his nightlie watches, shrewdly mistrusting the Barbarians.

A wall beeing
inge to the Tas-
caltecanes.

Cortes sendes
scoutes beefore
him.

Many armed
men of the Tas-
caltecanes in am-
bush discovered
fled at the sight
of our horse-
men.

The Tascalte-
cans begin to
fight.

The Tascalte-
cans desire
peace.

As

The Tascalte-
cans make fight
again.

200000 barba-
rians in ambush.
A doublefull
battayle.

O savage peo-
ple.

400 captives
taken.

A huge army of
the Tascalteans
assault the camp.

Great and ad-
mirable are the
effects of re-
solved minds yf
urged by extre-
mitie.

The Tascal-
teans craue par-
don and using
present.

As soone as day began to appeare, he went to the next village, where (of the foure mes-
sengers he sent to sounde the inhabitantes mynds) he found two of them had bin taken by
the inhabitantes, & bound with cords, but breaking them by night they escaped. It was
determined, that the next day they shoulde bee slaine: this they themselves reported.
While he thus stayde, beholde a thousande armed men vnexpected, filling the ayre with their
horrible clamors, cast their lauelins, and many sortes of dartes at our men a farre of: but
Cortes endeoured with faire speeches to allure them, yet it profited nothing. They signifie
vnto them by interpreters, that they prouoke not our men: but the more gently he dealt
with them, the more insolent, and outrageous was the Barbarians. At length they retyled,
and by litle and litle drewe our men pursuing them, to an hidden ambuscado of armed men,
about some hundred thousande as Cortes himselfe writeth. The Barbarians issue forth,
and compassed our men on euery side, so that they fought with doubtfull successe from an
houre before noone vntill the euening. In that battayle the Zempoalenses, Zacatamini,
Istacmastitani, and the rest of the inhabitantes, who folowed Cortes, behaued themselves
valiantly, compelled through extreme necessitie: for being inclosed within the countries of
the Tascaltecanes, there was no way open for flight. The only hope of their safty was, to
despaire of safty. Yf they had bin vanquished, they had made the Tascaltecanes a daintie
banquet with their flesh. For the conquered become foode to the conquerours. Where-
fore the Tascaltecanes trusting in their multitude began nowe to lick the their lippes, through
hope of daintie and delicate cates, when they vnderstoode a forraigne nation had entred the
limits of their borders. But it fell out otherwise with them: for Cortes had sixe fiede peeces,
and as many arquebus shot, fourtie archers, & 13. horsemen intermixed with them, warlike
engines and instruments vknown to the Barbarians. Wherefore that cloud of Barbarians was
nowe at length dispersed: yet hee passed that night without sleepe (in a certain chappell
in the field consecrated to Idolatry) much troubled & disquieted in mind. But at first
dawning of the day, he came forth into the open field with all his horse an hundred foote of
his owne and 300 of the Istacmastitan Prouincialles: for that towne Istacmastitan also peace-
ably receiued Cortes, and gaue him 300. men for his supply and ayde against Muteezuma.
He tooke also of the Zempoalenses, and their next neighbours foure hundred men, leauing
the rest to garde the campe and the carriages, and ouerranne al the enemies plaine, burnt
fiue villages, made hauocke and spoyle of whatsoever he met with: and brought 400.
captiues to the Campe. But at the first twilight, before the morning began to waxe red,
behold such an infinite number of the enemy, ran violently to the Campe, that they seemed
to couer all the fieldes. They write, that there came 150000. armed men thither, who fought
furiously at the fortifications of the campe. They say they incoutered hand to hand for the
space of foure houres with great hazard of our me: but the Barbarians retyled without
doing any thing, for none there, coulde turne their backes. Of fearefull sheepe, each man
then tooke a Lyons courage with him. The enemy being put to flight, Cortes like a tyger
great with young, marched forth against these traytors, who here and there were nowe
returnd to their houses. So wasting, destroying, taking, or killing, all he met he came vnto
a towne of 3000. houses (as they report) and aboue, all which he destroyed with fyre and
sworde. This being thus done, the Prouincialles smitten with exceeding terrour and feare,
sent the Nobility of that country Embassadors vnto Cortes. They craue pardon for that
which is past, and promise that hereafter they woulde bee obedient to his commaunde, and
receiue what Lawes soeuer in the name of that greates King of whome Cortes so muche
gloryeth. For prooffe whereof, they brought presentes such as were honourable and of
esteeme with them, to witte, helmettes and plumes of feathers, (ornamentes for the warres)
curiously wrought with wonderfull art. They brought also necessarie prouision of victuall,
as of corne, and plentie of crammed foule, after their manner. For wee haue sayde before,
and your Holinesse hath heard it reported, that they mayntaine certaine foule among them
(in steede of our hennes) greater then Peacocks, and nothing inferior to them in tast.

The

The second Chapter.

HAuing heard what the Embassadors would deliuer, he greatly accuseth their Lordes and masters, yet offereth them pardon for the former dammage they had done: & to admitt them into his amity and friendship, so that hereafter they carry themselves faithfully in the obedience of the King of Spaine. The next day after, 50. men of the nobilitie came vnarmed vnto him (vnder color of intertaining amity) to espy the entrance of the campe. When Cortes sawe the view the situation of the campe with fixed eye, & troubled countenance, he began to suspect. Separating one of them therefore from his felowes, hee leadeth him aside, and by a faithful Interpreter exhorteth him to confesse the truth, who being intised through promises, and flattering speeches, openeth the whole matter. He saith that the chiefe man of that prouince Quesitangal by name, lay in ambushment with a great power of armed menne, to assault the campe vnawares the next night: and for that purpose his consorts were sent vnder pretence of peace, that they might vnderstand where to make the assault, or which might be the easiest way to the booths which our menne had erected, (that they might not lodge all night in the open ayer) that so entering them, they might set them on fire, and while our menne were busied in quenching the same they might assault them, and put them all to the sword: for (saith he) we will tempt fortune with crafty deuises, and stratagemes seeing they were alwayes ouerthrown so vnghappily through warlike prowess. Cortes vnderstanding this, desired more fully to knowe the truth of the matter. Wherefore hee brought other 5. of the same company into a secret place a part, and threatened to torture the, & offered the liberall rewardes, in conclusiō all of them (without difference) cōfessed y same y the first man did. But, befor y report of this inquisitiō shuld be spread he tooke those 50. euery man: & cutting of their right hāds sēt the back to their master with this message. Tell your Princes thus, that it is not the part of valiant men, or such as are renowned for warlike prowess, to bringe their purposes to passe by such treacherous deuises. As for you the instruments of treachery who came enemies vnto vs in steede of negociators, receiue this punishment of your wickednes, that hauing your right handes cutt off, ye returne vnto the who chose you to be authors of so mischieuous and foule a deed. Tell them, we wilbe ready, what houre soeuer they come, whether they assaile vs by night or set vpon vs at noone daye: so that they shall well know what those fewe are, whom they seeke to disquiet. They goe, and report what they sawe, and shew what they had suffered. In the euening, an huge and turbulent multitude of Barbarians, diuided into two seuerall cōpanies came vnto them. Cortes thought it much better to medle with them in the open day, when by the light he might shewe the Barbarians the sterne countenance of his horse, vnknowne to the, & the force of the furious artillery, then to expect night which brings a thousand dangers with it, especially to those that set footing in strang countries, ignorant of the places, if they be compelled to change. Seeing the horses and fury of the great ordinance, and stricken with feare at the noyse thereof, at the first incounter the Enemy retires to the stādinge corne, whereof the fields at that time were very ful, so being dispersed, they sought to hid themselves. Their corne (as I haue oftē said) is Maizium. Hereupo they gaue Cortes free liberty to wander: yet for certaine dayes he durst not put his heade out of the Campe. About some league from the Campe they had a city of the enemy which at the sound of a trumpet assembled an innumerable multitude of souldiers. For Cortes himself writeth, and they who came frō thence are bold to say that this city Tascalteca consisteth of 2000. houses. At length being certified by spies, y the inhabitants of that greate city were vnprovided, and secure, he suddenly inuaded it in the second watch of the night, and set vpon them either wandring or being asleepe: by meanes whereof he possesseth the strongest place therof. At the first dawning of the day, the chiefe men come vnto him & humbly intreat him to doe the no hurt & sweare to obey his command. They bring with the plenty of their cōtrie victualles, as much as Cortes would desire, where vpon Cortes returned victor to the Campe, where he founde the company much moued against him, because hee brought them, where they might not returne, and therefore

VOL. V.

X x

sayd

go. spies sent
home to their
princes with
their right
hands cut off.

The enemies
about to begin
fight are ar-
ranged at the
noise of the
ordnance and
die.

Cortes taketh
the city by
night.

A mutinie in
Cortes his com-
paignie.

Cortes his braue
oration to the
souldiers.

View here the
mutability of a
multitude.

Zeutegal skils
Embassadours to
Cortes with
promise of sub-
reittion.

Cortes present-
ed by 6. of the
kindred of Mu-
tecuma with
rich gifts.

said they would goe no further, for they could by no meanes escape, but should shortly bee slayne every man, seeing they sawe themselves compassed on every side with such fierce warriors, and that they should perish either with famine or colde, after they had escaped the weapons of the Barbarians. Affirming further, that the successe of war was vncertaine, and that the victorie was not alwayes in the hande of menne, and therefore they perswade and intreate him to returne to the shore, where their companions were left. Yf he refused, they protest, that they will forsake him. But Cortes who resolu'd in his mind, that he would goe to Tenustitan, the chiefe citie of all those countreyes, thinking to deale wisely and gently rather then to handle the matter seuerely, thus reasoneth with them. What a strange thing is this my fellow souldiers and companions in armes? why doe yee feare? Do you not apparently knowe that God is with you, who hath giuen vs so many happie victories? Doe yee thinke those whom wee are about to seeke, are better, and more valiant and stout? Doe yee not see, that it is in your power, that the faith of Christ should infinitely be amplified? What kingdomes, and of what quality shall ye procure to your King and your selues, so yee be constant? That which remaineth behind is but a small matter. If peradventure, (which I nothing feare) we must die, what could be more happie? could any man euer finish his life with more glory? Besides, remember ye are Spanyardes, who commonly are of an vndanted spirite, not esteeming their life a farthing, where either the obedience of Almighty God, or the opportunitie of obtaining glory, offer themselves. Againe, whither shall we goe? What shall wee doe growing slothfull through idlenesse on the shores? Take courage, take courage I say, and with me subdue these barbarous nations to the Lawe of Christ, and the obedience of our King. What fame shall be left to posteritie of these worthy actes, which yet neuer came to the eares of any man liuing? We shal be more honourable among our neighbours in our country, then euer was Hercules in Greece, through his comming into Spaine, of whome monumentes are yet extant. Our labours are much more grievous, and our rewardes shall be the greater. Rouse vp yourselves therefore and with a stout courage vndertake with me what ye haue begunne, making no question of the victorie. Hauing ended his oration, the Centurians affirmed that Cortes had spoken well. The multitude (more vnconstant than the waues of the Sea, which goe whither soeuer the winde bloweth) yeeld likewise their consent, and lend their eares and tongues to serue every turne. The souldiers myndes being pacified, Embassadours came vnto Cortes from Zeutegal, Generall Commander of that country, who craued pardon for that which was past, for taking armes agaynst our men. And that they shoulde not woonder thereat, they say, that they neuer acknowledged any king, or were euer subiect vnto any, and that they alwayes esteemed libertie so much, that they suffered many inconueniencies in former times, least they should obey Mutezumass command. But chiefly they wanted cotton garmentes, and salt to season their meats which they coulde not get, without Mutezumass leaue. Yet if they might now be receiued into his fauour and grace, they promise to doe whatsoever he shoulde commande. No man knewe of it, and so they were admitted. That citie Tascalteca was sixe leagues distant from the Campe, the citizens intreate him to come vnto them. Cortes a long time refused it, yet at length ouercome through the intreaties of the Princes, he went. But I must insert another thing before I proceed in the Tascaltecan matters. Sixe of the familiar friendes of Mutezuma came to Cortes, with excellent and costly presentes: who brought diuers Iewels, and sundry vestures of golde, to the value of a thousand Castellanes of golde, and a thousand garmentes of Gosampine cotton dyed of diuers colours. When these men vnderstoode that Cortes determined to visite Mutezuma and his citie, they desired Cortes in the behalfe of Mutezuma, to thinke no more of that matter, because that citie Tenustitan was seated in the waters, where naturally was great want and scarcitie of all thinges: so that vnles they were supplied by forrainers, there would be smale store of prouision fit for so great persons. But the Embassadours promise that Mutezuma should send what sūme soeuer Cortes would demand of golde, silver, precious stones and other things, wheresoeuer he should make his aboad. To this Cortes made answer that he could not by any meanes graunt their request, because he had expresse commandement from his king, both to see that citie, and the king thereof, & make diligent inquiry of all

but should
n every side
colde, after
successe of
menne, and
their compa-
But Cortes
e of all those
atter seuerely,
d companions
with you, who
about to seeke,
lower, that the
at quality shall
remaineth be-
must die, what
Besides, re-
steeming their
nitie of obtain-
ee doe growing
, and with me
r King. What
to the eares of
n our country,
ne monumentes
be the greater.
what ye haue
the Centurians
an the waues of
eir consent, and
being pacified,
at country, who
And that they
ng, or were euer
y suffered many
command. But
they could not
his fauour and
we of it, and so
the Campe, the
at length ouer-
her thing before
teczuma came to
sundry vestures
armes of Gos-
armes determined
czuma, to thinke
, where naturally
forainers, there
sadors promise
e, siluer, precious
ortes made answer
esse commande-
ligent inquiry of
all

all things, that he might signifie by messengers to his maiesty what a thing it is. Vnder-
standing his minde and purpose, they desire leaue of Cortes to send one of themselves with
that answer to Mutezuma. Leauē is graunted, & one of the six, who were ioyned in cō-
mission went & returned againe the sixt day: & brōght ten peeces of embossed golden
plate from Mutezuma of equall waight and very fairely wrought. He brought also vpo
slaues shoulders (because they cann get no beastes for carriage) 1500. garmentes more
precious then the former 1000. They that are of a base spirit, will heere woonder, & be-
leeue those things to be fabulous which they neuer heard of before or which are without
the compasse of their strength. These men wee will satisfy in their place, when wee shal
come to treate of the oeconomicall and howshold affaires of Mutezuma. Let this digression
from the Tascaltecanes suffice. Now let vs report the quality, & greatnes of Tascalteca,
and this first, which I touched before. It alloweth Noblemen but cannot brooke Lords, as I
sayd before, and is gouerned partly Democratically and partely Aristocratically, as sometime
the Common wealth of Rome was, before it came to a violent Monarchy. Cortes writeth
& they that come from thence say, that it is much greater then the city of Granata, and
more populous, and abounding with all things necessary for the life of man. They vse
bread made of Maizium: and haue store of foule, wild beasts and fresh water fish, but no
sea fish: for it standeth too farre from the Sea, aboue 50. leagues distant, as some say. They
haue also diuers kinds of pulse. Within the stone walls, are houses of stone high and well
fortified, for they are allwayes suspicious and in feare, by reason of the bordering enemy
which ioynes vpo them. They frequent markets, and fayres: and are cloathed, & weare
stockings or buskines. They delight much in Jewels of gold & precious stones: & greatly
esteeme helmetts, and plumes of feathers of diuers colors, which they vse for ornamēt
in the wars: all which they plat & interlace with gold: they sell wood for fuel euery where in
the markets brought vpo mens shoulders: & sel also for the vse of building, beames, rafters
planckes bricke, stones, & lime, & they haue architects, & excellēt potters. There is no
earthen vessels with vs, that exceedeth the workmanship of theirs. They haue also Her-
baristes that sell medicinable herbes: and they vse bathes. And it is also certainly knowne
that they haue an order and lawes where by they gouerne. The largenesse of that prouince
is 90. leagues in circuit about, whereof this city Tascalteca is the heade & cheife: being
full of townes, villages, and streets, mountains, and fruitfull valleyes replenished with peo-
ple, and those men of warre, by reason of the neighbourhood of Mutezuma their perpetual
enemy. Heereunto adioineth another prouince, called the country of Guazuzingo: which
is gouerned after the same order, in the forme of a common wealth. They are all enemies
to theeues, for hauing taken them they lead them bound through the marketts, and beate
them to death with cudgelles & are iust & vpriight dealers. He aboad 20. dayes with the
Tascaltecanes: at what time, the six Embassadors of Mutezuma were alwayes at his side
endeuoring to perswade Cortes not to intertaine friendship with the Tascaltecanes, and that
hee should not trust faithlesse, & deceitfull men. The Tascaltecanes on the contrary part,
affirmed that the Mutezumanes were tyrants, & wold bring Cortes into some daungerous
& ineuitable misery, if he gaue credit to the. Cortes secretly reioyced at this their dis-
sentio, thinking their mutuall hatred might profit him, & therefore fedd the both with faire
speeches. The Mutezumanes were very earnest with Cortes, to discharge himselfe of the
Tascaltecanes and that hee woud goe to the city Chiurutecal, in the iurisdiction of Mutez-
uma, not aboue 5. leagues distāt thence. There (say they) he might more easily treate
whatsoever he woud concerninge the affaires, hee had with Mutezuma. The Tascaltecanes
on the contrary, told Cortes, that they had prepared to intrappe him, both in the way & in
the city Chiurutecal. In the waye, because they signified y in many places the citizens
thereof had cut trenches whereby y horses might be indangered, and that other wayes were
turned from the right course: And that within the city the wayes were stopped and dammed
vp in many places, and senced with heapes of earth, or stones: & that those citizens had
gathered together a great heape of stones in their solars, turrets, & windows which were
ouer the streets & publicke wayes, whereby frō aloft they might kill our men cōming vnto
the.

Mutezuma
sends presents of
wonderfull value
to Cortes.

Democratically
and Aristocrati-
cally the go-
uernement of
Tascalteca.

A Politike go-
uernment.

Guazuzingo, a
Prouince.
Punishment of
Theeues.

Cortes his po-
licie to mayn-
taine a faction.

Chiurutecal
a city.

The Chiurute-
calensians send
Embassadours to
Cortes.

Cortes (contrary
to the good coun-
sell of the Tas-
caltecanes) is by
practise driuent
goe to Chiurute-
cal.

A conspiracie of
Mutezumana
with the citizens
of Chiuruteall
against Cortes.

thē. And further the Tascaltecās declare that it was an argument, that the Chiurutecalensians were corruptly affected towards our men, in that they neuer came vnto them, as they of the citie Guazuzingo did, who were further of. Cortes vnderstanding this, sent vnto the Chiurutecalensians, to complayne of their iniurie and negligence. Hauing hearde the message of Cortes, they sent Embassadours, but of the basest of the people, and men of no worth to tell him, that they came not before, because they were to goe through their enemies countryes, yet they sayde that the Chiurutecalensians were well affected vnto Cortes. But vnderstanding the indignitie they offered him, in that the nobilitie disdayned to come vnto him, hee sent those base companions away with threatning woordes, and with this charge, that vnlesse the chiefe men of that citie came vnto him within three dayes, hee woulde come against them as an enemy, and then (sayth he) they shoulde prooue what hee vseth to doe when he is angry, if they deferred their comming, to yeeld obedience to the King of Spayne, to whom the dominion and Empire of all those countryes belongeth. So they came, and Cortes sayth, hee woulde admit the excuses they made, so they performed their promise. They promise willingly to doe his command and that he shoulde know, and vnderstande that the Tascaltecans had spoken vntruth, and offered that they would pay tribute according to Cortes his edict, if he woulde come vnto them. So he stood long doubtfully distracted in diuers opinions. At length hee resolved to trie his fortune, and yeelding to the Mutezumana, taketh his iourney towards Chiurutecal. But the Tascaltecans hauing hearde his resolution, perceiuing that good counsel preuailed nothing, say, they woulde by no meanes suffer, that Cortes shoulde freely commit himselfe to the Mutezumans trust so that it might be in their power, to be able to hurt him. That they were thankfull menne, to him who vsed them so kindly, and receiued the Tascaltecans into his friendshippe and fauour after so innumerable errors, when he might vtterly haue destroyed them in due reuenge of their rebellion. Wherefore they instantly affirme that they would giue him an hundred thousand armed mē in steed of a Prætorian army to gard his persō: but Cortes refused. It booteth not to deny thē. That first night therfore he encāped on the banke of a riuer ouer against him, with that army of almost an hūdrē thousand men. Afterwards retaining 2000. for his defence, hee sent away the rest, yeelding them deserued thanks, as was fit. The Chiurutecalensian priests comming forth after their manner with boyes and girles, singing, and with the sounde of drummes, and trumpettes, receiued our menne (comming vnto them) a farre of. Entering the cittie, they were entertayned, and fedde well enough, but not daintilie, or plentifully. Concerning the damming vp of wayes, and rapires, & stones which were prepared, they perceiued somewhat, as they were admonished by the Tascaltecans. But now, beholde newe messengers from Mutezumana: who spake vnto the citizens of Chiurutecal in the eare, and not to Cortes. The messengers demanded what they had done with our men, the citizens made them no further answer. Wherefore Cortes moued to suspition, being mindfull of the counsel of the Tascaltecans, by Hieronimus Aquilaris the Interpreter (who was skilfull in the language of these countryes, hauing serued long time in the bordering prouinces) questioneth a certayne young man admitted to his presence: & this is the summe of all that he vnderstoode. He saith, that the Chiurutecalensians when our men were to goe vnto them, had sent away all the children, and old men, with their women, and goods what they ment else, he plainly professeth, that he knoweth nothing. The treason is discovered, but in what manner and order, I must declare vnto you. A certaine Zempoalensian mayde was abiding with a woman of Chiurutecal, who peradventure folowed her husbāde or her friende. The Chiurutecalensian woman spake thus vnto the Zempoalensian stranger. Friende, go with me. Whither saith she? without the citie, and farre of saith shee. For that night she saith innumerable multitude of armed men would cōe from Mutezumana, who will kill as many as they find within these walles. I reueale this vnto you, because I haue compassion on you: stay not heere, vnlesse you desire cruelly to finish these pleasaunt yeeres of your tender age, with the rest. The mayde discovereth the matter to Aquilaris. Cortes desiring to examine it, knoweth the matter, and vnderstoode it to be true. Whereupon he sent to cal the chiefe rulers of the Chiurutecalensians, & comādeth his

mē

mē presētly to arme thēselues. He declarēth y matter to y captayles, & willeth y vpō notice giuē by discharge of a pecee they fall vpon the authors of that mischeuous practise, whom hee woulde assemble together in the hall of his lodginge. The cheife men of the citty came, and declaringe the matter first vnto them, hee casteth them in prison, taketh horse, and goeth forth. He found the gates of his pallace compassed about with armed menne: so greater was the armed multitude of citizens which expected their comminge. Hee setten vppon them, before the rest could come vnto them, so that they fiercely fought a long time, as he himselfe saith for the space of 5. houres. At length hee vanquished the treacherous Barbarians, and then returneth to the appointed pallace. Hee calleth the citizens (who were bounde) vnto him, who being demaunded why they did so, they answered, they were deceived by Mutezuma: and that it was done against their will. But if hee would spare them, they promise, they would bee subiect to him for euer, and neuer obey Mutezuma, any more. The Zempoalenses, and Tascaltecanes who ayded him, behaued themselves manfully that day, for the hatred they conceiued against the tyranny of Mutezuma. Whereupon Cortes spared the citzizens, and commanded them to goe vnto the women, and children, and the rest, & bringe them backe againe. They did so: and the citty was replenished with her people. This beinge done, hee did his endeouour to reconcile the Tascaltecanes, and the Chiurutecalenses, and to make them agree together, who were at variance before by Mutezumas meanes, and deadly hated one another. That citty Chiurutecall standeth in a fruitfull plaine, consisting (as they write) of 20000. houses built of lime and stone, within the wall, and as many in the suburbs. It was sometimes a common wealth: but Mutezuma made it tributary and subiect to his comaunde. Both cities will now willingly obey vs. These people are richer, and haue better garments then the Tascaltecanes their neighbours. The Chiurutecalenses water a great part of their plaine by trenches which they haue cut: and that prouince is well fortified with turreted walles. Cortes himselfe writeth that fro one high Church, he numbered 400. towers belonging to y prouince, besides those which were erected in the streets of y citty which al were in steed of Churches. This country hath land fit for pasture, which (he saith) he yet found no where else in those countries because other prouinces were so full of people that they haue scarce grounde enough for their seede. These things succeeding thus, he calleth Mutezumas Embassadors vnto him, and blameth the vnjust and deceitfull dealing of their maister, affirming that it was not the part of a noble Prince, such as he supposed Mutezuma had bene, to deale craftily, and to make others instrumentes of his cunning practises and deuises. Wherefore Cortes sayth, that he woulde no longer keepe fidelitie and promise of amitie, giuen him by messengers betweene them, seeing Mutezuma had so trecherously contrary to his oath attempted these things against him. But the Embassadors halfe dead, and out of hart, sayd, their master, neuer imagined, or knewe of any such matter, and that time shoulde discouer what they sayd, to be true. They say, that Mutezuma was alwayes a religious obseruer of his promise: and that the Chiurutecalenses diuised that of their owne heade, to preserue them from the displeasure of Cortes. Hauing thus spoken, the Embassadors desire Cortes that with his good leaue they might send one of their cōpany to Mutezuma, to signifie what might be treated. Prouision of victuall is giuen him: who within fewe dayes returning brought presentes with him for a King, to witte, tenne golden chargers, as he writeth and 1500. garments of Gossampine cotton, such as they vse to weare. I sayd elsewhere, I woulde deliuer these things more plainly to satisfie base spirites of meane capacitie, from whence this King hath so many garments in his wardrope: besides many things for foode, but specially wine, which Kinges and noble men delight in, differing from that which the people vse. For they make many sorts of drinke, the ordinarie and common sort of Maizium, but the better of diuers fruites. But of certaine almondes, which they vse in steed of mony, they make wonderfull drinke, of this almonde we will speake hereafter. By that familiar friend therfore of Mutezuma, and by these other new Embassadors, he affirmed that he knewe nothing of that, whiche the Chiurutecalenses spake of him, who spake vnto truly to excuse themselves, and that it shoulde so fall out hereafter that hee shoulde vnderstande there

Cortes bindeth the cheife men of the citty authors of the conspiracy. The Battayle loyned.

Cortes vanquisheth.

Cortes pardoneth the Conspirators and they become his subiectes forsaking Mutezuma.

The description of the City of Chiurutecall.

Pasture.

The Embassadors excuse Mutezuma.

Kingly presents againe sent from Mutezuma to Cortes.

Wine.

Drinke. Almondes in steede of money.

was

Muteczuma dis-
waileth Cortes
from coming
to his cite.

A strange and
admirable report
of a smokey
mountaine called
Popocatepeque.

The boulders of
a Spaniards.

The opinion the
inhabitants haue
of this moun-
taine.

3 Lakes.

The Guazuzingi.

was true friendship between them, and, that Muteczuma used not to attempt anie thing by fraudulent meanes. Yet among these discourses, hee intreateth him agayne, to desist from his intended purpose of coming to his city, for want of thinges necessary, because that city being seated in the waters, was naturally destitute of all thinges: yet sufficiently provided for her inhabitants by the auncient tradinge of the neighbouring townes: but if straungers came vnto it, it would bee poore and beggerly. Cortes denied that he could graunt that because he was so commaunded by his kinge. Vnderstanding Cortes his resolution, hee signifieth vnto him by the Embassadours, that hee would expect him in the city, and that hee would prouide accordinge to his power, that nothing might be wantinge. And for that purpose they sent many of his cheife rulers to accompany him vnto him. He therefore setteth forward towards the city Tenustitan, being desirous to see it. About some 8. leagues from thence hee founde a mountaine couered with ashes in the sommer, hauing two toppes, large and spacious on euery side, called Popocatepeque which is as much to say as a smoaky mountaine, because in their language Popoca signifieth smoake, and tepeque a mountaine. From whose toppes a stronge smoake continually issueth, ascendeing vp right vnto the cloudes, as an obscure cloude ariseth with a thicke vapour, so that the smoke equaleth the quantity of a greate house and is carried vp into the ayer with such fury, that though the ayer bee shaken with violent windes, yet the smoake is not at all dispersed. Cortes wondering at the matter, sent ten valiant Spaniards with guides of the inhabitants, to search out the cause of so strange a thinge, if it were possible. They obey his command, and ascend the mountaine as neere as they might goe: but could not come vnto the very topp, by reason of the thicke ashes, yet they came so neere, that they perceiued the roaringe of the flame, and the furious & fearefull noyse of the smoake that issued forth, with perpetuall whirle-winds which blustered about the mountaine, so y the mountaine trembled, & seemed as though it would haue fallē. But two messēgers of y Spaniards more bold then y rest determined to get vnto the toppe, the inhabitants dissuading them, who ascended to the view of that huge gaping mouth and say it is a league & an halfe broade: yet in the end much terified through the noise of y raging flame, they returned, happy in their chance. They escaped y violence of the flame more & more increasing, which issued forth somewhat more mildly at y time, but in a very short space became most furious, casting out stones after an incredible & strange manner so that vnlesse by chance they had found a place in the way which was somewhat holowe, which gaue the shelter, while the shower of stones was ouerpast (for that mountaine doth not alwayes cast forth stones) they had viterly perished, and lost their liues. The inhabitants so woondred at this matter, that they came flocking from euery place, with presents, to see them, as if they had bin halfe Goddes. But this (most holy father) is not to be omitted: The inhabitants suppose kinges (who while they liued, gouerned amisse) to haue a temporary abode there being companions with diuels amonge those flames, where they may purge the foule spots of their wickednesse. These thinges being thoroughly sought out, the Muteczuman Embassadours led Cortes, whether the Tascaltecanes dissuaded him to goe. For that way hath troublesom passages, trenches, and diches full of narrow bridges, where an army might easiely be ouerthrowne, because they could not passe ouer those places in troopes. He therefore tooke his iourney another way, somewhat further about, & more difficult, by the lowe valleyes of high smoakinge mountaines, from whence, when they were past, and looked downe before them, from the litle hilles vnder the mountaine they sawe a mighty greate valley called Colua where that greate city Tenustitan lieth in the lake. This greate valley is famous for two lakes, the one salt, where the city is seated, which (as they say) containeth 60. leagues in circuit: the other fresh, whereof wee shall speake more at large heereafter. The Muteczuman Embassadours, who accompanied our menn, being deniaunded why they went about to leade the army another way, answered, that they denied not but that this way was better and more commodious: but because they were to march a dayes iourney through the Enemys countryes of the Guazuzingi, and because peraduenture they might want prouision of victuall y way, therefore they persuaded the therevnto. Here we are to note and obserue y the Guazuzingi, and the Tascaltecani (two comonwealthes)

were

were vnited in league & heart against Mutezuma: & therefore they sold the but poore because being compassed with so mighty an enemy, they inioyed no free liberty of trafficke with any other natiō. Wherefore vsing & cōtētinge themselues with their prouinciall reuenues, they liued in grente misery, rather than they would submitt their necke vnto the yoke of any kinge. Yet vnto Cortes, because by his meanes they hoped in time to come to wander freely, they performed couenantes of friendship, and in token thereof, they gaue him certaine slaues, and garments after their manner, but very meane, and bestowed vpon him things necessary for his reliefe, plentifully inough, for one day. August was now ended when being scarce gone past the narrow passages of those mountaines, he was brought to a pallace in y^e plaine, built for Summer delighes, which was so exceeding great, that the whole army was intainted there that night. For making a muster of them, he found with him of the Zemponlensians, Tascaltecanes, and Guazuzingl, more then foure thousand armed men, but of his Spaniards scarce 300. But as I haue now sayd, to stopp the mouthes of base & meane spirites, the matter was performed with gunnes, and horses, strange and vknown kindes of fight, rather then with the multitude of armed men: And they had prouision of maintenance enough. For Mutezumaz stewards whether soeuer our men went, prouided plentifully enough for them. Here they quaked for cold, by reason of the high mountaines neere adioyning, therefore they had neede of great fires. The brother of Mutezuma with many nobles came to Cortes that day, and brought presents in Mutezumaz name, 3000. Castellanes of golde, and excellent iewelless, and withall besought them to returne, and stay wheresoeuer they pleased. And that Mutezuma would giue what tribute soeuer Cortes should set downe, so hee would desist from comminge to the city compassed with waters where, of necessity, especially with so great a multitude, hee must suffer penury and want, because naturally it yeeldeth nothinge, and that hee would neuer, or by any meanes reuolt from the obedience of that kinge, from whom hee sayd he was sent. Cortes as mildly as he could, answered that hee would willingly yeeld to Mutezumaz request to graunt so great a king, if he might safely do it without breach of his kings cōmātemēt. And that they should not thinke his comminge to bee vnprofitable, but rather beneficiall and honorable. And that hee purposed to come thither, seeinge hee could not otherwise cause. But if hee reuolter his abode should be troublesome to Mutezuma, he would presently returne, after a league made and matters composed betweene them, which might more apparently and commodiously be performed in presence, then by intercourse of messengers, on either side. While they were busie about these thinges, Cortes saith, that the inhabitants ceased not to prepare to trapp him, and that the woods in the mountaines neere vnto the pallace, were that night full of armed men. But hee glorieth that hee was alwayes so wary, that hee easily freed himselfe from their practises and deceits. Remouinge thence toward the city in the lake, hee founde another lande city, of 20000. houses, as they say, called Amaquemeca, the name of whose prouince is Chialco. The king of that place is subiect to the dominion of Mutezuma. Here hee feasted our men daintily, and plentifully and gaue his guests 3000. Castellanes of gold, & iewells, & 40 slaues, as another had giuen him alittle before. Foure leagues from thence, he came to a fresh lake, much lesse then the salt: on the shoare whereof standeth a city, halfe in the water & halfe on drye land. An high mountaine lyeth neere vnto the city. There twelue men came vnto Cortes, the cheife whereof was carred in a horse litter vpon mennes shoulders: he was 25. yeeres old. When he alighted from the horselitter, y^e rest ran speedily, and clenched the way of all filth, and stones, and if any strawe or dyt lay there they made the way cleane as hee went to salute Cortes. After hee had saluted Cortes in the behalfe of Mutezuma, hee intreated that hee would blame the King as carelesse and negligent, because hee came not forth to meete him, affirminge hee was sicke, and that they were sent to accompany him. Yet if he would alter his purpose of goinge thither, it should be most pleasinge and acceptable vnto them. He courteously intainted them with faire words, & gaue them certaine pleasing presents of our country comodities: so they cheerefully departed. Cortes followinge them, found another towne of 1506. houses seated in a lake of fresh water: wherto they passed & returne by boat. Their boates are made of one tree as I haue oftē

The Guazuzingl submit to Cortes and giue presents such as they had.

A great palace.

Cortes in all 4000. strong.

Presents brought from Mutezuma, Mutezuma gives tribute.

Amutezuma, the king of the province of Chialco.

Amaquemeca in the prouince of Chialco.

A lake.

A great embassage sent to meete Cortes on the way.

A towne.

Iztapalapa a towne.

Coluacana a City.

Gifts.
The pallace of Iztapalapa.

said of the Canowes of the Ilâds & they call those boates Acates. Marching through the middle of the lake, he found a causey of the height of a speare, which brought him to another famous towne of 2000. houses. Heere, he was honorably entertained, and the townsmen desired Cortes to stay with them all night, but the Mutezumans Princes accompanying him denied their request. Wherefore the Mutezumans conducted him that evening to a farre greater city, called Iztapalapa, which touched the shoare of a salt lake. This city was in the iurisdiction of Mutezumans brother, whose name was Tacatepla, three leagues distant from the former towne. Another city called Coluacana is three leagues distant from Iztapalapa, from whence the prouince also is called Collua, whereupon our menn from the begininge called the whole country by that name, because they vnder stood thereof being farre from thence. Iztapalapa (as they say) consisteth of eyght thousand goodly houses for the most part: and Coluacana is not much lesse. The king of Coluacana was with Mutezumans brother, who also presented Cortes with precious gifts. They report that the pallace of the king of Iztapalapa is very curiously built with lime and stone: and they say that the workmanship of the tymbre thereof is very artificiall: and they highly commend the princely pauements, inner roomes, and chambers, thereof, together with the huge and greate halles. That house also hath orchardes, finely planted with diuers trees, and herbes, and flourishing flowers, of a sweete smell. There are also in the same, great standing pooles of water with many kindes of fish, in the which diuers kindes of all sortes of waterfoule are swimminge. To the bottome of these lakes, a man may descend by marble steppes brought farr of. They report strange thinges of a walke inclosed with nettinges of Canes, least any one should freely come within the voyde plattes of ground, or to the fruite of the trees. Those hedges are made with a thousande pleasant deuises, as it falleth out in those delicate purple crosse alleyes, of mirtle, rosemary, or boxe, al very delightfull to behold. He reporteth many vniuersall and meane thinges touching these matters which haue almost veried me with their prolixity. Now therefore omittinge other thinges, let vs cast forth this manne Cortes into the citie Tenustitan, and to the desired embracements of Mutezuma, on the one part.

The 3. Chapter.

A wall of stone built in the water.
2 Cityes founded in the water.
Mesiqualingo a city.

The vse of salt.

Obey not Mutezuma and take no salt.

A Castle.

Drawe bridges.

They goe from Iztapalapa to Tenustitan, the seate of that great king Mutezuma, vpon a wall of stone, made by the hande of man & with incredible charge, built in the waters, two speares length in bredth. That wall is in steed of a bridge for Iztapalapa also itselfe, some part of it standeth in a salt lake, but the rest is built vpon the land. Two cityes founded partly in the water, ioyne to one side of that bridge. On the other side standeth one, whereof the first they meete with who goe that way, is called Mesiqualingo: the second is Coluacana, whereof I spoake a litle before: and the third is called Vuichilabasco. They say the first, consisteth of more then 3000. houses the second, of 6000. and the third of 4000. all of them furnished with turretted and sumptuous Idole temples. These cityes adioyninge to the bridge, make salt, which all the nations of those countries vse. Of the salt water of the lake, they make it harde, conueyinge it by trenches into the earth apt to thicken it. And beinge hardened and congealed they boyle it, and after make it into rounde lumps or balles, to be carryed to marketts, or sayres, for exchange of foraine commodities. The tributaries only of Mutezuma were made partakers of the benefit of that salt: but not such as refused to obey his commande. The Tascaltecanes therefore and Guazuzingi, and many others, season their meate without salt, because, as wee haue sayd, they resisted the gouernment of Mutezuma. There are many such walles, which serue in steede of bridges from places on the land, to cityes on the water which sometimes, as diuers wayes, ioyne and meete together. With this wall descending from Iztapalapa, another wall meeteth, from another side of the city. In the place where they meete is a Castle erected of two inexpugnable towers, from thence by one way they goe to the city. In these walles, or bridges, within a certaine space, there are litle moueable bridges of tymbre, which, when any suspicion of warre is imminent are drawne vp. I thinke those partitions or cliftes also are made for portes, that they might not be deceiued, as in many places, which inioy quiet peace wee see the gates of cityes shut by night for no other cause.

The

ough the mid-
to another fa-
wnesmen de-
nying him de-
to a farr great-
was in the iu-
stant from the
apalapa, from
nge called the
hence. Iztapa-
and Coluacana
also presented
palapa is very
ymber thereof
nes, and cham-
rcharades, fine-
smell. There
, in the which
se lakes, a man
of a walke in-
oyde plattes of
de pleasant de-
mary, or boxe,
touching these
omittinge other
the desired em-

teczuma, vpon a
the waters, two
selfe, some part
ounded partly in
whereof the first
uacana, whereof
st, consisteth of
n furnished with
idge, make salt,
y make it harde,
rdened and con-
veyed to marketts,
Muteczuma were
commande. The
ate without salt,
There are many
es on the water
descending from
lace where they
way they goe to
oueable bridges
I thinke those
ed, as in many
no other cause.
The

The bridges beinge drawne vp, the pooles of flotinge waters remaine. They make a way for the waters, for the waters (as they say) ebb and flowe there. This is a wonder (most holy father) in nature, in my iudgement and theirs, who say they cannot belecue by any meanes that it can be so, because themselves haue else where neuer read it. This citie standing in the lake, or the situation of the salt lake itselfe, is more then seenty leagues distant from the Sea. And betweene that and the sea lye two long ridges of high mountaines, and two mighty valleyes betweene both mountaines. Yet the lake receiueth the flowinge and ebbinge of the Sea, vnlesse they speake vntruth. But noe man knoweth where the Sea commeth in, or goeth out. The flood comminge, by the narrow streights of two hilles, the salt water is emptied in the channell of the fresh lake, but the force thereof returninge, it returneth from the fresh to the salt, neither is the fresh thereby so corrupted but it may bee drunke, nor doth the salt lake become fresh. We haue spoken sufficiently of lakes, walles, bridges & Castles: let vs now at length returne to that pleasing spectacle to the Spaniardes, because it was longe desired, yet happily to the wise Tenustitans it may seeme otherwise, because they feare it would so fall out, that these guestes came to disturbe the Elisian quietnesse and peace, though the common people were of another opinion, who suppose nothinge so delectable, as to haue present innouations before their eyes, not carefull of that which is to come. To this crosse way, a thousand menne, attired after their country fashion, came from the citie to meete Cortes: who all vsing their seuerall ceremonies, salute him. The ceremony or manner of salutation is this, to touch the earth with their right hand, & presently to kisse that part of the right hand where with they touched the earth, in token of reuerence. All these were Noblemen of the Court: behind the king himselfe so much desired, cometh now at length. That way (as I haue already sayd) is a league and an halfe long, others say, it is two leagues, yet is it so straight, that layinge a line vnto it nothinge can be drawne more straight. If the quicknes of mans eyesight beholding it wold serue him, he shal easily perceiue the entrace of Muteczumas citie from the very Castle, from whence Cortes remoued. The King went in the middle of the bridge, and the rest of the people on the sides orderly followinge in equall distances one from another, and all bare footed. Two Princes (whereof the one was his brother, the other, one of the peeres, Lord of Iztapalapa) taking the Kinge Muteczuma drew him by the armes, not that he needed such helpe, but it is their manner so to reuerence their kinges, that they may seeme to be vpheld and supported by the strength of the nobilitie. Muteczuma approachinge, Cortes dismounted from the horse whereon he roade, and goeth to the kinge being about to embrace him: but the Princes which stood on either side would not suffer him for with them it is an hainous matter to touch the kinge. They that came on the sides in ordered troopes, left their appointed places, that they might all salute Cortes with the accustomed ceremony of salutation. And then presently euery one went backe to his place againe, least the rankes should be disordered. After cheereful salutations ended, Cortes turninge to the Kinge, tooke a chaine from his owne necke (which he wore) of smale value, and put it about the Kings necke. For they were counterfeits of glasse, of diuers colours, partly diamondes, partly pearle, & partly Carbuncles & all of glasse, yet the present liked Muteczuma well. Muteczuma requited him with two other chaines of gold and precious stones with shelles of golde, and golden Crevises hanginge at them. Hauinge entertained all, they who came out to meete them, turned their faces to that huge and miraculous citie: and march backe againe in the same order that they came, by the sides of that admirable bridge, leauing the middle alley of the bridge, onely for the Kinge Muteczuma, and our menne. But oh abhominable impiety to behould, and horrible to be spoken. On either side of that bridge, on the outside, were many stately towers erected in the lake, all which were in steede of Churches. In these either the bodies of slaues bought for money or the children of tributaries appointed for that purpose instead of tribute, were offered or sacrificed, with a certaine horor that cannot be conceiued. Many vnderstanding y matter as they passed by confessed y their bowells earned within the. At length they came to an exceeding great Palace, the auncient seate of Muteczumas auncestors, finely decked with Princely ornamentes. There Muteczuma placed Cortes on a throne of golde, in the Kings hal and returned to another Pallace. He commanded all Cortes his followers and companions to be

The ebbing & flowing of a lake 70 leagues distant from the sea.

A Ceremonious and reuerent kinde of salutation.

The Kinge drawne by the armes & what that may signifie.

Cortes dismounting to embrace the king was interrupted of the nobles.

Cortes giueth the king a counterfeite chaine a proper reward for so many rich presents.

The abhominable Sacrifice of slaues and Children, the Christians first entertainment.

Cortes placed in a throne of golde.

Cortes his royall
entertainment.

The oration of
Mutezuma
with Cortes &
his companions.

Mutezuma
reneweth vp
his kingdom
to Cortes.

fed with delicate and Princely meates, & to bee all commodiously and well entertayned in their lodgings. After a few houres Mutezuma hauing dined, returneth to Cortes, and brought with him Chamberlaines, & others of his domestically seruantes, laden with garmentes, intermixed with golde, and most liuely colours of Gossampine cotton. It is incredible to be spoken, but how credible it is, wee shall hereafter speake: They (who sawe them) say, they were 6000. garments and Cortes himself writeth the same. They brought also with them, many presentes of golde and siluer. At the tribunall of Cortes there was another bourded floure layde, decked with the like ornamentes. Vpon that scaffold Mutezuma assembling al the nobilitie of his kingdomes vnto him, made this oration vnto them, as they perceiued by the Interpreters which Hieronimus Aquilaris vnderstood. Most worthy & renowned men for warlike prowesse, & gracious towards the suppliant, I wish that this your meetinge may be prosperous, and I hope it shall be so: and let your comming to these countreies bee fortunate and happie. After, turning to his nobilitie he speaketh thus. We haue heard by our auncestors, that we are strangers. A certaine great prince transported in shippes, beefore the memorie of all men liuing, brought our auncestors vnto these coasts, whither voluntarily, or driuen by tempest, it is not manifest, who leauing his companions, departed into his country, & at length returning, would haue had them gone backe againe. But they had now built them houses, & ioyning themselues with the women of the Prouinces had begotten children, and had most peaceable settled houses. Wherefore our auncestors refused to returne, and harkened no further to his perswasion. For they hadde nowe chosen among themselues both a Senate, and Princes of the people, by whose counsell and direction they would bee gouerned, so that they report he departed with threatening speeches. Neuer any appeared vnto this time, who demanded the right of that captaine & Commaunder. I therefore exhort and admonish you the Nobles of my kingdomes, that you doe the same reuerence to so great a Commander of so great a king, that ye doe to me, and at his pleasure, giue him the tributes, due vnto me. After turning his face vnto Cortes, he spake further. We thinke therefore by that which we haue spoken, that king who (you say) sent you, deriued his descent from him, wherfore yee are luckily come, repose your mindes after the exceeding great labours, which I vnderstande yee haue indured since ye came into these countreies, and now refresh and cōfort your faint and weary bodies. Al the kingdomes which wee possesse are yours. What Nobleman soeuer thou art, being sent a Captaine for this purpose thou mayst lawfully commande all the kingdomes, which were subiect vnto me. But as touching the reports of the Zempoalensians, Tascaltecanes, and Guazuzingi, concerning me, they may iustly bee taken, for such, as proceeded from the affection of anemie: but the experience of matters shall proue them liars. They babbled that my houses were of golde, and my mattes golde, and my householde stuffe was all of gold, and that I was a god, and not a man. You yourselfe see, that my houses are of stone, my mattes made of ryuer weedes, and the furniture of my house of cotton. I confesse I haue Jewels of golde, layde vp in my Treasury. Those are yours: which in the behalfe of that great king of ours, vse at your pleasure. But as touching that, that they said I was no man, but immortall, beholde mine armes, and my legges, looke whether they be not flesh and bone. Speaking this, he discouereth his armes, and legges, halfe weeping. When hee hadde made an end of speaking, Cortes comforteth him, and putte him in good hope that matters should be well caryed. With these wordes Mutezuma departed, somewhat with a cheerefull countenance, but whither quieted in minde, to suffer a Competitor, let him iudge who euer tasted the sweete of Soueraignty, and whether any man would euer entertaine guests willingly, who violently intrude, lette such speake as haue hadde experience thereof. In the faces of the Princes assembled, who hearde it, casting downe their eyes vpon the grounde, you might apparently vnderstande, how quiet that assembly was. For beeing readie to weepe, they receiued whatsoeuer was acted, with sobbes and sighes, and remayned long silent in a dumpe: and at length promise to perfourme Mutezumas commaunde: yet, that they coulde not but be troubled in their mindes, for so great and suddaine an alteration of their state. The assembly being dismissed, euery one went to their owne kindred or familie. Of these thinges we haue sufficiently spoken: now let vs declare what succeeded after that

The first

that m
his fri
ceedin
bee tal
So they
that no
For afte
occasio
garriso
King o
matter
messen
him, a
compa
they fo
would
fence.
against
messen
count
assault
slew p
ing it
copoc
ordinā
dering
The C
those
a pray
hauing
peradu
y inso
hardly
might
that it
Gouer
maund
minde
must
his po
citie
to bee
where
murder
mand
it of
After
that
great
them
tribu
Coale
did it

yned in their
and brought
entes, inter-
to be spoken,
y, they were
them, many
oured floure
ing al the no-
ed by the In-
men for war-
may be pros-
fortunate and
ur auncestors,
the memorie
or driuen by
country, & at
at them houses,
and had most
kened no fur-
a Senate, and
d, so that they
e, who dema-
n you the No-
der of so great
e. After turn-
e haue spoken,
ee are luckily
ande yee haue
int and weary
neuer thou art,
gdomes, which
altecanes, and
eded from the
They babbled
was all of gold,
of stone, my
onfesse I haue
behalfe of that
I was no man,
lesh and bone.
ee hadde made
matters should
refull counte-
ho euer tasted
ests willingly,
In the faces
the grounde,
ing readie to
remayned long
maunde: yet,
e an alteration
kindred or fa-
succeeded after
that

that meeting. All things fell out very ill and vnluckily to Mutezuma his Tributaries, and his friendes, as we shall hereafter speake: but for the enlargement of our religion, exceeding well. For wee hope, it shall shortly come to passe that those blouddie sacrifices shall bee taken away from among them, through the imbracing of the commandements of Christ. So they passed sixe dayes quietly, but all the dayes following, ful of sorrow, and calamitie, so that nothing coulde euer haue fallen out more vnappily to any people, not onely to a King. For after those seuen dayes, whether that it so fell out, or that Cortes woulde thereby take occasion, hee sayd, he receiued letters a litle before from that Gouvernour whom he left in the garrison of the Colonie of Vera Crux, wherby that Gouvernour signified, that Coalcopoca the King of that prouince, where Cortes erected a Colonie, called Alueria, had committed a foule matter, not by anie meanes to be indured. That Gouvernour reported that Coalcopoca sent messengers vnto him, to tell him that the King Coalcopoca came not yet vnto him to salute him, and doe him that reuerence, due to so great a King, as he was, whome Cortes and his companions acknowledge, because he was to passe through the enemies countryes, from whom they feared some inconuenience woulde ensue, and therefore desireth, that the Gouvernour woulde sende some of his Spanyardes vnto him, to accompanie him in the way for his defence. For, he sayde, hee was in good hope, that the enemye durst not attempt any thing against him, while the Spanyardes were in his companie. The Gouvernour gaue credite to the messengers, and sent foure Spanyardes to Coalcopoca, to accompany him vnto him, through countries, friends to him but enemies to Coalcopoca. The messengers going vnto him, were assaulted within the borders of Coalcopoca, two of them the robbers on the high way side slew presently, the other two being grievously wounded, escaped. The Gouvernour supposing it was doone by the practise of Coalcopoca, in reuenge of the matter, goeth agaynst Coalcopoca. Hee hadde onely two horses, & with those, certayne shot, and some peeces of ordinance, and footemen. He bringeth 50. of his companie with him, yet sendeth for the bordering enemies of Coalcopoca to come to aide him, and so they assault the cite of Coalcopoca. The Coalcopocans fiercely resisted. In the assault they slew seuen Spanyardes, and many of those that came to ayde them. At length the seat of Coalcopoca was vanquished, and made a pray, many citizens being slayne and taken: But Coalcopoca escaped by flight. Cortes hauing gotten this occasion determined to destroy and overthrow Mutezuma fearing least peraduenture fortune might chang, or lest at any time becoming loathsome vnto the, through insolency of the Spanyards, whom specially when they were idle and full fed he coulde hardly restraîne, fearing also lest through the long & continuall trouble of entertainment, he might make them desperate who entertained them, he goeth to Mutezuma: and affirmeth that it was written, and tolde him, that Coalcopoca his Tributary did those things against the Gouvernour of Vera Crux, not onely not without the priuite of Mutezuma, but by his commandement. Cortes sayde he woulde not haue beleueed it. Yet to take all suspicion out of the minde of the great King, to whose eares as he sayd, the report of the matter came, Mutezuma must come to the Pallace where Cortes himselfe dwelt, that hee might write that he had him in his power, although his purpose were not to alter any thing concerning the gouernment of the cite or the kingdomes. But Mutezuma, although he vnderstood his authoritie beganne now to bee weakened, yet graunted his request. He commandeth his horselitter to be brought, wherein hee might come vnto him. Whereupon through so great an alteration of thinges, a murmuring arose among the people, and they beganne to make a tumult. Mutezuma commanded them to lay downe their armes, and bee quiet: and perswaded them all, that hee did it of his owne accorde. His Nobles and familiar friendes followed their maister with teares. After a few dayes, he desireth, that hee woulde sende for Coalcopoca, and the partakers of that wicked practise to punish them, that so hee might acquitte his innocencie with the great King. Mutezuma obeyeth: and callinge for certayne of his faithfull friendes, giueth them his pryue seale, in token of his last will, adding this also in charge, that calling the next tributary people vnto them, they endeouour to bring him by force, if hee denyed to come. Coalcopoca, and one of his sonnes, and 15 Noblemen come. He denyed at the first, that he did it by the consent of Mutezuma. Whereupon Cortes making a great fire in a large and

Letters to Cortes from the Gouvernour of Vera Crux.

A while vsed by Cortes to drawe Mutezuma into his power.

Coalcopoca sent for cometh to Cortes.

Mutezuma appeached of conspiracy is bound with fetters.

Cortes to Mutezuma.

The golden mines of Zuzulla.

Small towns, the Spaniards.

Malinaltepech.

The Coatimacus King of Tenis.

Rivers in Tenis, yielding gold.

spacious streete, commaunded Coalcopoca with his sonne, and the rest to be burned, Mutezuma and all his huge princely citty looking on, the sentence of treason was pronounced against them. But when they saw they should be brought to receiue punishment they confessed that Mutezuma commaunded them. Whereupon Cortes who by seeking occasion, went about to challenge the Empire of Mutezuma vnto himselfe, bindeth Mutezuma (whom he had with him) with fetters, and reuiled him besides with threatening speeches. Vnhappy Mutezuma then, astonished at so strang a matter, was full of feare, and his courage began to faile, so that he durst not now lift vpp his head, nor intreate ayde of his subiectes and friendes, yet he presently loosed him, and greatly blamed him for the deede. But he confessed hee had deserued punishment, who like a meeke lambe with patient minde seemed to suffer these rules harder then those which are inioyned grammer schollers, being but bearded boyes, and quietly beareth all things, least any sedition of the Cittizens and Nobilitie might arise. Any yoake whatsoeuer seemed to bee more easie vnto him, then the stirring vp of his people, as if he had bene guided by the example of Dioclesian, who rather determined to drinke poyson, then to take the Empire vpon him againe, which he had once reiected. After that Cortes speaketh to Mutezuma, saying, that he hoped, hee would keepe the promise he had made, concerning his obedience, and other couenants concluded in the behalfe of that great King of Spayne, wherefore to fulfill his desire, if hee would, hee might returne backe vnto his palace, where he liued before in princely manner. Cortes offereth him this fauour, but he refused it, saying, it was not possible, but he should be prouoked by his nobility, and tormented with a thousand troubles, and saith further, that their mindes were prepared to rayse tumults, who (as he vnderstood) gnashed their teeth for anger, because he entertained Cortes, and his companions, especially with such a multitude of hatefull officials. He confessed, that he liued more quietly and safely with our menne, then to conuerse with such an vnruely and tempestuous multitude of his subiectes. Yet sometimes he went to his pallaces to walke, which hee had built with wonderful curiosity and art for his delight, whereof wee shall speake more at large hereafter. So, they liued both together vnder one roole a long time, Cortes the guest entertained, and Mutezuma the intertayner, but now contrary. When soeuer he returned in the euening, he went not to the ancient pallace of his auncestors, and his seate, but to the pallace of Cortes. Descending from his horse-litter, he gaue gifts to all his followers, and to the Spanyardes also, and desired to haue the Spaniards take him by the hand to whome hee called, and spake vnto them with cheerefull countenance, and courteous speeches. The state of things being thus, Cortes desired Mutezuma, to shew him the mynes of golde, from whence he and his auncestors had their gold: I am well content saith Mutezuma: and presently he commaunded skillful workemen experimented in that art to be brought vnto him. Diuers men with Spaniardes appoynted by Cortes are sent into diuers places to bringe newes to Cortes, what they had seene. They are first directed to the gold mines of a certaine prouince called Zuzulla. That prouince is 80 leagues distant from the Pallace of Tenustitan, where they gathered gold out of three riuers with little trouble, and yet the Spaniardes tooke not their instruments with them, wherewith to cense it. For the inhabitants doe not so highly esteeme golde, that they make any reckoning to seeke for it otherwise, then, that casting vp the sand, they may picke out the greater graines of gold among the little stones. They say, that cuntry, especially in the middle thereof, is replenished with stately townes within a leagues distance one from another. He sent others to the cuntry called Tamaculappa, whose inhabitants are richer, and more costly and curious in their attire, the Zuzullani, because they inioy a more fertile soyle. He apoynted others also to go to another prouince named Malinaltepech, which lyeth neerer the Sea. 60. leagues distant from that Princely lake. There they gathered golde out of a great riuer. Others went to a cuntry in the mountaines, named Tenis. Heere are fierce warriours, who haue speares of 30. spans long, fit for fight. Coatimacuss, the King thereof, is free from the subiection of Mutezuma: who said, that the Spaniardes might lawfully set footing in his borders, but not the Mutezumanes. So Coatimacuss peaceably receiued the Spaniardes, and fed them daintily. This Cuntry Tenis is famous for 8. riuers, all which ingender gold. This King sent messengers to Cortes,

ned, Mute-
cun against
ey confessed
casation, went
whom he had
happy Mute-
egan to faile,
friends, yet
essed hee had
o suffer these
rdlesse boyes,
e might arise.
of his people,
ned to drinke
l. After that
promise he had
that great King
e vnto his pal-
ur, but he re-
and tormented
rayse tumults,
Cortes, and his
essed, that he
an vnruely and
aces to walke,
ee shall speake
g time, Cortes
hen soeuer he
and his seate,
to all his fol-
by the hand to
teous speeches.
ynes of golde,
utezcuma: and
ught vnto him.
o bringe newes
a certaine pro-
of Tenustitan,
paniards tooke
nts doe not so
then, that cast-
the little stones,
stately townes
called Tamacu-
re, the Zu-
to go to another
stant from that
to a country in
30. spans long,
utezcuma: who
Mutezumanes.
This Country
ngers to Cortes,
to

to offer himselfe and all that he had. Others were apoynted to goe to a prouince called Ta-
chintebch, who found two riuers there yeelding gold, and that it was a fit country for planta-
tion of a Colony. Cortes being certified of the goodnes of this cuntry of Tachintebch,
desired of Mutezcuma, that he would erect an house in that prouince, in the behalfe
of our great King, whether, such as went thether to gather gold, might resort. This motion
pleased him well: whereupon he commaunded the kings Carpenters to bee readie at hande.
The diligence of his seruantes was so great that within lesse then the space of two moneths,
they built a pallace, able to receiue any great Prince, and all his kingly traine, that they
should lacke nothing. In the meane space while the house was building in the twinkling of
an eye, as I may say, graines of Panick, wherewith they make bread, innumerable measures,
and many small pulse, and diuers kindes of other pulse were sowne, & they planted also 2000.
of those trees, which beare the almonde, which they vse in stead of mony, whereof else where
I haue spoken more at large. Men of meane capacity, will thinke it but a phantasie, that
mony should be gathered from trees. Without the greater house, three other houses were
built, apoynted as houses of seruice for the pallace. They made also great pooles of fresh-
water, where abundance of fish and water-foule might be kept, and maintained, but specially
geese. For he caused 500. at one clap to be cast in, because they haue more vse of them,
for the feathers, whereof they make many sortes of couerings. For they plucke the feathers
from them euery yeere in the beginning of the spring. He added also hens, which are greater
then our peacocks, & not inferiour to the in tast, as I sayd elsewhere, whereof he pro-
vided 1500. for present foode, & for increase of chickens. Besides, they make all instru-
ments what soeuer might serue for tillage of the ground, and for the vse of husbandry. Cortes
writeth, that that pallace erected in so smal a time, if it might haue bin sold, to haue bin more
worth then 20000. Castellans, & that there was not the like thereof in all Spaine. We grant
what they grant. Mutezcuma being afterward demaied where there was any hauen, answered,
he could not tell, because he neuer had any care of matters pertayning to the sea coast: yet
hee would giue him all the shoare described in painting, that hee might choose a place him-
selfe, at his owne pleasure. And to that end, he sent skilfull maisters of those shoares with
the Spaniards, who trauaile diuers parts. In the prouince Guazacalco, whose king is
deadly enemy to Mutezcuma, the king admitted the Spaniards, but not the Mutezumanes.
This king sayth he had heard of the worthinesse of our men, and of their warlike prowesse,
since they subdued the Potencianenses, and from that time he desired the amitie and friend-
ship of our men, and sayth that hee wisheth that their comming might be prosperous, and
shewed them the great mouth of a riuer, which riuer (they saye) is deepe, where they might
haue harbour for their greater shippes. There, he began to erect a Colony, the king so de-
siring it, who after the maner of that country, set vp six of his Tributaries houses vpon the
banke of that riuer. He promised more, when need shall require and inuited the Spaniards to
a perpetuall habitation, if they would settle themselves within his borders, nay, euen within his
city also, if they rather sought it. Hee sent presents in token of desired amity, although not
very sumptuous, and embassadours also to Cortes to offer his obedience. Let vs returne
to Mutezumas matters againe. Mutezcuma being detained, or (that I may more freely
speake,) brought into honest seruitude, Catamazinus the possessor of the prouince of Haco-
lucana, (the cheife city where of is Tesucco,) being a subiect, and allyed to Mutezcuma,
began to rebell: and openly professed that now, hee would neyther obey Cortes, nor Mute-
zcuma any longer, and proudly aduanced his crest against them both. This King hath domi-
nion ouer foure citties (from thence he is called Nahautechal, because Nahau signifieth foure,
and tecal Lord) yet are they vnder the Empire of Mutezcuma: As your Holinesse knowes, it
falleth out in our kingdoms of Europe, that there are mighty Princes vnder the Emperours
in Germany, and vnder the kings of Spaine, and France, yet are they subiect to Emperours,
and kings, with the countries themselves, which they command. They say, that the cheif of
those citties, Tesucco: containeth 30000. houses, famous for excellent wals, sumptuous
temples, and stately houses: and the rest, haue some 3. or 4000. houses, with country farmes,
streetes, and rich villages, blessed with a fruitfull soyle. The messengers of Cortes inuited
him

Tachintebch
gold.

A great pallace
at Tachintebch
built in two
moneths.

Instruments of
husbandry.

Great Mutezcuma
then no man
at Sea.

Guazacalco.

The great cur-
tesis of this king
to Cortes.

Catamazinus
believe.

Tesucco a city.

The answer of
Catamazinus to
the offer of
peace.

Mutezuma dis-
wadeth to warre
with Catamazi-
nus.

Catamazinus
surprised and
brought to Cor-
tes.
Cacuscasinus the
brother made
king.

Presents de-
manded to be
sent to the K.
of Spayne.

34000. Castel-
lans of gold for
the King of
Spayne.

Materim repe-
ratat opus.Ouid.

The King's s.
part of the sil-
uer.

him to peace, he answered with a proud and haughty countenance: doe you thinke vs to be so delected in mind, that we will subiect our necks to you strangers? Hee also sharply re-
proued Mutezuma, that he so faintly yeelded himselfe into the power of our men: and that they should vnderstand what hee was, if they came vnto him. And casting out his armes, he said, let them come whensoever they would. This being reported Cortes desired to inuade Catamazinus with hostile armes: Mutezuma aduised him to deale otherwise. For slaughter was prepared, if they came to handy blowes, because Catamazinus was mighty, and Lord and Commander of men well experimented in armes. That the victory would be doubtfull, and if he ouercame, it would be bloody and therefore he thought best, to deale with him by sub-
tilty, and cunning stratagems. He answered, that care should be left to him: and sayth, that he will cut Catamazinus his combe, without any great difficulty. Therefore sending for his noble Stipendiary Capitaines, hee sayth, that hee would suppress the rash insolency of Catamazinus. These Capitaines had alliance with Mutezuma and Catamazinus, and his fami-
liar friends, who being suborned, he commandeth to doe their endeuour to take Catamazinus, and bring him vnto him whether hee woulde or no, and if they sawe it needefull to kill him. The circumstances are long, and the history tedious: but it sufficeth to declare how the mat-
ter was acted. The Capitaines performed the commandement of their maister, luckily. They tooke Catamazinus by violence in the night, vnprepared, and fearing nothing, and sur-
prised him by boates in his owne house, seated on the brinke of a salt lake, and brought him to the pallace of Tenustitan standing in the lake. Hee gaue Catamazinus to Cortes, who being imprysoned and bound in chaines, he placed his brother Cacuscasinus in his kingdome, who was obedient to Mutezuma. The people of those cities desired it, because they were to proudly gouerned by Catamazinus, neyther durst the brother liue with the brother, because hee was to stubborne, and captious. A fewe dayes after, Cortes perswaded Mutezuma, to send messengers to the Noble menne, (who hearing their Kings oration, concerning the performing of their obedience to the great King of Spaine, went backe againe vnto their native countries) to require of euery of them, some parte of those things they possessed, to be sent to the great King of Spayne, because he was buisily employed in framing of a certaine great and endles peice of worke, and was carefull to finish the building hee had vndertaken. Mutezuma granted his request. Wherefore of his familiar friendes, Noble men knowne vnto him, as it happeneth in kings houses, through conuersing in kings secret chambers, Cortes sendeth two or three, to euery noble man, with as many Spanyardes to accompany them. So great a feare was now conceiued among them, that hearing the name of the Spaniardes no man knew how to mutter, or to thinke otherwise, then that he should be commaunded. Diuers men went to diuers places, some 50. some 60. some 80. and some an 100. leagues and more, and demaunded, and receiued large and liberall gifts. There was such plenty of gold, that Cortes writeth, that the 5. parte of that which was molten, due vnto the King, amounted to 34000. Castellans of gold: and your Holinesse knoweth, that the roynce which they call a Castellan, exceedeth the Ducat, a third part. Besides the gold which was to be melted, they brought many precious iewels of great waight, and value, very curiously wrought, wherein, the art and workmanship exceeded the mettall. For they haue most in-
genious workemen of all arts, especially for working in gold, and siluer, whereof your Holinesse is not ignorant. For your Holinesse hath scene many, & hath sometimes wondred at the curious workmanship thereof, when you were with vs, before you attayned to that high and mighty throne. Cortes also saith, that they brought no meane store of precious stones. But of the siluer which was brought, Cortes writeth, that the Kings fift part, was more then an hundred waight, of eight ounces, which the Spanyard calleth markes. They report incredible matters of Cotton, housholde-stuffe, tapestry or arras hangings, garments, and couerlets. Yet are they to be thought credible, when such a person dare boldly write such things to the Emperour, and the Senatours of our Indian Colledge. He addeth further, that he omitted many things, least hee should bee troublesome in recounting so great variety of things. They also who returne vnto vs frō thence, affirme the same. But, as for those things which hee receiued from the King himselfe Mutezuma, they are so admirable both for the value,
and

thinke vs to be
so sharply re-
men: and that
his armes, he
sired to inuade
For slaughter
and Lord and
doubtfull, and
th him by sub-
m: and sayth,
ore sending for
h insolvency of
s, and his fami-
e Catamazinus,
ull to kill him.
e how the mat-
iaister, luckily.
othing, and sur-
d brought him
ortes, who being
kingdome, who
use they were
brother, because
Mutezuma, to
concerning the
gaine vnto their
possessed, to be
g of a certaine
had vndertaken.
en knowne vnto
hambers, Cortes
pany them. So
e Spaniards no
e commaunded,
an 100. leagues
such plenty of
vnto the King,
the royne which
which was to be
very curiously
ey haue most in-
ereof your Holi-
ines wondred at
ned to that high
precious stones.
was more then an
report incredible
ouerlets. Yet
th things to the
that he omitted
ariety of things.
ose things which
th for the value,
and

and art, that I thinke it best to omit them, before we see them. What was sent before, we saw, together with your Holinesse in that famous towne Valdolet, which in the fourth Decade we described. He writeth, that hee will shortly send many of those things. They, who come vnto vs, say that the former, were much inferiour, both in number, quality, and value. Cortes gaue himselfe to rest & quietnes, and knew not what to doe in so great, and happy a successe of things, for beholding the power of Mutezuma, the largenes of his Empire, and the order, elegancy, and plenty of his house, confesseth that he knowes not which way to turne himselfe, nor were to begin, to make report thereof. Yet, he declareth, y he wold begin with that prouince, where those lakes, and the great city of Tenustitan, and many others lie, and that hee will afterwarde speake of the rest. He sayth, the prouince is called Messica, inclosed with high mountains. In that Plaine are those two lakes, the fresh, and the other salt, as I sayde before. They say, that, that plaine is 70. leagues in circuite about, the greatest part whereof is filled with lakes. Seeing the city of Tenustitan is the seate of the great King Mutezuma, placed in the center of a salt lake: which way soeuer you go vnto it, it is a league and a halfe, or two leagues, distant from the Continent, the lake day and night is plyed with boates going and returning. For they goe by stone bridges made by hand, foure leagues, as from the foure sides, for the most part ioyned together, and solid, yet for a long space open, and deuided, with beames layde ouer those ports vnderpropped by posts, whereby the flowing, and ebbing waters may haue a passage, and whereby they may easily be drawne vpp, if any daunger appeare. They say, those bridges are two speeres length broade. One of them, wee described, when Cortes mette with Mutezuma, from thence, the forme and fashion of the rest, may bee taken. Two conduits of water were conueied by the bridge, without impedimēt to the bridge. All the city take their drinke from thence. And places are appointed along the bridg, for the kings rentgatherers, who keepe boates to carry water through the city to be sold, and require tribute of such as fetch water there. This conduit hath 2. channells: so that whē one is foule, through the mossy furring of the running water, they turne the course of the water into another channell, while the other be clen- sed, so eyther channell beeing scoured by turne, they drinke purified water throughout the whole city. They say the thickness of that pipe, equalleth the body of an ox. What shall I speake of the multitude of bridges, throughout the city itselfe, whereby neighbours passe ouer vnto neighbours? They are made of timber, and all of them so broad, that ten men may walke together in a ranke, they are innumerable as they say, and wee can thinke no lesse. For their wayes for the most part, are by water: yet are there other wayes by land, as ap- peareth in our famous common wealth of Venice. Moreouer, they say, there are other cities built and founded vpon either lake, both on the banke, and on the water, after the manner of Venice. As for Tenustitan itselfe, they report, that it consisteth of 60. thousand houses, or thereabout, and if the rest be true, which is deliuered, none may obiect against the possibility thereof. There are exceeding great streetes therein, but specially one, inclosed on euery side with walkes or galleries: which is the receit of all marchants and other tradesmen. Heere there are worthy shoppes and warehouses of all vendible wares, most commodious for apparell, victualling, and warlike, and ciuill ornaments: you may euery day in the markets, and faires number 60. thousand men buyers, and sellers, who bring of the commodities of their country in boates vnto the city, and carry backe some forraine marchandise with them againe. As all our country men with vs vse to cnuay their carriages, vpon asses, or else vpon packe- horses, or carts, so doth the country people out of the villages and country farmes to the neighbouring townes, and cities, whatsoeuer they haue gathered through their labourious in- dustry and care: and at their returne in the euening, cary home, wood, strawe, wine, wheate, barley, crammed foule, & such like, wherewith to satisfie either necessity, or appetite. But there is another great benefite there for all strangers, and traders. For there is no streete, bi- uiali, triuiali, or quadriuali, where there are not victuallers. Euery moment of an houre rost and sodden meates of foule, and foure footed beasts are there to bee founde, but oxen, goates, and sheepe they haue none. Young whelpes flesh is vsuall there, as I haue already sayd, which they geld and fatte for foode, they haue also store and plenty of deere and wild

The vnspcakable
power & riches
of Mutezuma.

Messica the
name of a pro-
uince.

Mutezuma his
Court in the
center of a salt
lake.

Bridges.

Tenustitan hath
60000 houses.

Trades and mar-
chandise.

No oxen, goates or
sheepe.
Young whelpes
flesh dainty
meate there.
Deere & wild
boare.

Hares.
Conies.
Turtles.
Blacke birdes.
Partridges.
Pheasants.

Of the nature of
their Hens and
Cockes.
A pretty con-
script.

Fruites.

Potherbes.
Hony gathered
from trees.
Of bees.

Money of the
fruits of trees.

Drinke may be
made of their
money fit for a
king.
He doth prefer
this moue to
ours of gold and
silver, as les-
hurtfull to the
minde and more
profitable to the
body.
Drunkes.

bore, and they are excellent hunters: and haue also hares, and conies, turtle doues, blacke birdes, and certaine birdes feeding vpon figgs and grapes, Partridges, and other birdes they call Atagenes, that country also nourisheth Pheasants. And among other domesticall foule, euen as our country women bring vp chickens, so do they maintaine Geese and Duckes, & Peacockes which our country men call hennes. I haue heeretofore sayd, that in greatnes, & colour of feathers, they are like Peahennes. But I neuer yet described their nature and disposition. The females sometimes lay 20. or 30. egges, so that it is a multiplying company. The males, are alwayes in loue, and therefore they say, they are very light meate of digestion. They alwayes stand gazing and looking vpon themselves before the females, and as our peacockes doe, they walke all the whole day with their traines spread like a wheele, before their beloued females, ietting and going crossewise, as our peacockes also doe, and continually euery moment, after they haue gone foure strides, or little more, they all make a noyse, like a sicke man oppressed with a violent feuer, when he gnasheth and chattereth with his teeth for cold. They shewe diuers colours at their pleasure among the feathers of the necke, shining sometimes blewe, sometimes greene, and lastly purple, according to the diuers motion of the feathers, as a delicate young man inuared with the loue of his lemman desiring to yeeld contentment & delight. But a certaine priest called Benedictus Montinus, a curious searcher of those countries, told me one thing, which hee sayd, hee learned by experience, hard for mee to beleue. He sayth, hee nourished many flockes of these peacockes, and was very carefull to multiply them by generation: who sayth, that the male is troubled with certayne impediments in the legges, that he can scarce allure the henne to treade her, vnlesse some knowne person take her in his hand, and hold her, nor doth the henne (saith he) refuse to bee taken, nor is the male discouraged from coming vnto her. For as soone as hee perceiue the henne which he loueth, is held, hee presently commeth vnto her, and performs his businesse in the hand of the holder. This he reporteth, yet his fellowes say it falleth out very seldome so. Of those peacockes, Geese, and Duckes, they haue great plenty of egges, so that, whether they will haue them raw, or dressed after diuers manners, or serued vpon sippets, they haue them alwayes at hand. They haue also with them, plenty of fish, both of the riuier, and of the lake, but no sea fish, for they are a great distance from the sea, and of those, raw, boyled, or roasted, marchants get store at their pleasure. But of our cuntry fruities, they haue cherries, plummies, and apples, of diuers kindes, but many of those sortes of fruities are vnknowne to vs. Many rauening foules of euery kinde for sensuall appetite, are sold aliue, and their whole skinner stuffed with cotton, so that such as behold them, would thinke they were liuing. All streetes, and passages haue their artificers, diuided apart. They highly esteeme Herbarists and Apothecaries, to cure diseases. They haue also many kindes of pot herbes, as lettuce, raddish, cresses, garlick, onions, and many other herbes besides. They gather certaine hony, and wax from trees, and such hony as our country yeeldeth from bees. I haue now sufficiently spoken concerning crammed foule, foure-footed beasts, fishes, and other things serueng for foode, and sensualitie: but with what money these things are done, it is a pleasing story to report, but your Holinesse hath heard it, and I haue else where written thereof.

The fourth Chapter.

I Haue heeretofore said that their currant money is of the fruits of certaine trees, like our almonds, which they call Cachoas. The vtility and benefit thereof is two fold: for this almonde supplieth the vse of monie, and is fit, to make drinke, of itselfe it is not to be eaten, because it is somewhat bitter, although tender as a blaunched almond. But being bruised or stamped in a mortar, it is kept for drinke, a portion of the powder whereof being cast into water, and then stirred about a little, drinke is made thereof, fitte for a king. O blessed money, which yeeldeth sweete, and profitable drinke for mankinde, and preserueth the possessors thereof free from the hellish pestilence of auarice, because it cannot be long kept, or hid vnder grounde. There are also many other sortes of drinke, (as it commonly happeneth in the Country where your Holinesse was borne,) of ale, and syder, and the graine Maizium bruised and boyled in certaine great vessels, or pitchers, with fruities and certayne herbes, which

the doves, blacke
birds they call
all foule, euen
Dukes, &
in greatnes, &
nature and dis-
tinct company.
of digestion.
and as our peo-
ple, before their
and continually
e a noyse, like a
with his teeth for
necke, shining
motion of the
to yeeld content-
ment of those
d for mee to be-
carefull to mul-
impedimentes in
one person take
taken, nor is the
henne which he
se in the hand of
me so. Of those
whether they will
they haue them
and of the lake,
boyed, or roasted,
they haue cherries,
vknowne to vs.
and their whole
were liuing. All
steeme Herbarists
herbes, as lettuce,
they gather certaine
rees. I haue now
and other things
ne, it is a pleasing
ten thereof.

the trees, like our al-
: for this almonde
be eaten, because
being bruised or
of being cast into
king. O blessed
preserueth the pos-
t be long kept, or
commonly happeneth
the graine Maizium
d certayne herbes,
which

which drinke, euery tauerne or victualling house where meate is dressed, affordeth to such as will buy the same. Before your Holinesse departed out of Spayne, you vnderstoode of that strange matter of the money, neuer heard of before. But how that tree might be planted, and nourished, and grow, wee had not then heard: but now all things are better knowne vnto vs. Those trees grow but in fewe places: for they haue neede of an hot, and moist country, indued with a certaine milde temper of the ayre. There are Kings, whose rents, and reuenues are only the fruits of those trees. By exchange and barter thereof they buy them necessary things, as slaues, and garments, and whatsoever maketh for ornament, or other vases. Marchantes bring in diuers wares and commodities vnto them, and carry out plenty of those fruites, which the rest of the prouinces vse. These almondes are so currant, as by that meanes, all the borderers are made partakers thereof. The like happeneth in all countries: for who soeuer haue spices, gold, siluer, steele, iron, leade, or any other mettall, through the bounty of their country, they obtaine the forraigne commodity which they desire. For they goe through other countries, which want these marchandies, or which through humane effeminacy suppose they want them, and bring home such things as they knowe are acceptable to their neighbours, that through this varietie of thinges they may adorne nature. So wee liue in the world, and so we must speake. But with what art these trees are nourished, I am now to declare. The yong & tender tree is platted vnder any other tree, that as a yong infant in the bosome of the nurse, it may be secured fro the heat of the sun, & violence of showers. But after it is grown vp & it may spread her roots, & being now hardened, may inioy the calme breathing of the ayre & sun, the nourishing tree is either rooted vp, or cut down. Let this suffice for the tree which beareth money: which if comon & base spirits wil not beleue, I desire not to compel them thereunto. Whatsoever also serueth for the building or ornament for houses, is sold in the streets of Tenustitan and common markets, as beames, rafters, wood, lime, mortar, or playstering, bricke, and stones readie hewed for present vse. Many sorts also of earthen vessels are sold there, as water pots, greate iuggs, chargers, gobblets, dishes, colenders, basens, frying pans, porringers, pitchers, all these vessels are cunningly wrought. They lacke steele, and iron: yet haue they great plenty of gold, siluer, tinne, leade, and copper. Whether a man desire the rude mettall, or to haue it molten, or beaten out, and cunningly made into any kinde of Iewell, hee shall find them ready wrought. They are so sharpe witted, and ingenious, that whatsoever the workemans eyes behold, they presently forge, and graue it so fayre, that they immitate nature. There is no aspect, countenance, or shape of any birde, or foure footed beast, whereof Mutezuma hath not the similitudes and representations, most liuely counterfeiting them that bee aliue, and whosoever beholdeth them a farre off, would thinke they were liuing. And your Holinesse knowes it very well: for your Holinesse hath seene many of them in a present, which was brought, before you tooke your iourney from Spaine to the City. There is also another thing not to be omitted. In the broad field of a large streete standeth an huge Senate house, where tenne or twelue auncient men authorised, continually sit, as lawiers readie to decide and iudge of controuersies arising. And by them stand sergeants to execute their commaundement: the Clarkes of the market also are present there, who haue the charge of the measures, and numbers, whether they vse waight or no, they had not yet heard. There is another thing besides much to bee wondered at. I haue heeretofore sayd, that there is great plenty of all thinges, in that city compassed with a salt lake, although they haue neyther beastes of burthen, Mules, or Asses, nor Oxen wherewith to drawe waynes or cartes. But many with good reason will demand by what meanes or industry such huge beames especially, and stones fit for building, and such other thinges, & the rest might bee carryed? Let them know, that all these thinges are carryed vpon the shoulders of slaues: and it is not without admiration, that seeing they want iron and steele, they so cunningly frame and make all thinges with such elegance and perfection. Let them vnderstande that all thinges are formed and fashioned diuersly with stones. In the beginning of this so rare inuention, I gotte one of them, which Christophorus Colonus, Admirall of the Sea gaue mee. This stone was of a greene darkishe colour, fastened in most firme and harde woode, which was the handle or helue thereof. I stroke with all my force vpon Iron barres,

VOL. V.

Z z

The nature of
this money tree
and touching
the planting
thereof.

Commodities of
all sorts sold at
Tenustitan.

The wonderful
ingenuity of the
Indian work-
men.

A Senat house
and Senators.

Sergeants.
Clarkes of the
market.

Slaues in stead
of beastes of bur-
then.

All workman-
ship beitt neuer
so curious
framed and fa-
shioned with
stones.

A greene Sma-
ragdine stone.

Cortes buildeth
4. small gallies
and the cause
thereof.

Every temple
hath a peculiar
Idoll.

The description
of their cheife or
Cathedral
Temple.

A Colledge of
yong boyes.

Wichilabuchichi
their great Idoll.
The dedication
of an Image.

Reade heere
Barbarisme in
his trust con-
fours, if thou
canst without
amusement.

and dented the Iron with my strokes without spoiling or hurting of the stone in any part thereof. With these stones therefore they make their instruments, for hewing of stone, or cutting of timber, or any workmanship in gold or silver. After this, Cortes fearing that which commonly falleth out in the vnconstancy and fragility of humane things, to wit, that the variable mindes of men might change, and supposing that it might come to passe, that the Tenustitanes, eyther wearied through the continuall trouble of intertainement, or vpon any other occasion taken whatsoeuer, would rise vpp against him, and take armes, although Mutezuma endeouored to hinder the same, when hee saw himselfe compassed about with waters, and draw bridges, hee built 4. smale gallies in the salt lake, with 2. ranges of oares, called Brigantines, that vpon any vrgent necessity assaying him, he might set 20. men a shoare at once, with the horses. The Brigantines beinge finished, when through the benefite thereof he nowe thought himselfe safe, hee determined to search the secretes of that city, which were of any moment or worth. First therefore, Mutezuma accompanying him, hee visiteth the Churches: where, as with vs, in euery Tribe called a Parishes, the Churches are all assigned to their particular Saint, so in euery streete with them, their temples are dedicated to their peculiar Idolls. But your Holinesse shall heare what thinges are reported of their greatest temple, & cheifest Idolls. He sayth, it is a famous and renowned square temple. On euery side thereof, there is an huge gate, whereunto, those 4. admirable, paued wayes, (which are in stead of a bridge from the Continent) directly answere. The largenes of that temple in situation, is matchable with a towne of 500. houses: it is fortified with high stone wals, very well, and cunningly made, and compassed about with many towers, built after the manner of a strong castle. Of many towers, he sayth, 4. of them are greater then the rest, and much more spacious, because in them are halles and chambers appointed for the priests, & prelates. To the chiefe dwellings the priests ascended by 50. marble steppes: those are the houses of the priests, who (as I sayd) take charge of the sacrifices. There the sonnes of the cheife menne of the cittie, are shut vpp at seuen yeeres olde, and neuer put out their heads, or come forth thence, vntill they become marriagable, and are brought forth to bee contracted in marriage. All that time, they neuer cut their hayre, and at certaine times of the yeere they abstaine from all riot and excesse, and meates ingendering blood, & chasten their bodies with often fastings, least they waxe proude, and so the seruant contemne reason the mistresse. They are clothed in blacke. He writeth that some of those towers are higher then the steeple of Siuill, which is very high: so that hee concludeth that he neuer saw greater, better, or more curious wrought buildings in any place: but whither he hath scene any out of Spaine, let the curious aske the question. It is a fearefull thing to be spoken, what they declare, and report concerning their Idolls. Omitting therefore to speake of their greatest marble idoll Wichilabuchichi of the height of three men, not inferiour to that huge statue of Rhodes. When any moued through piety towards any diuine power, determineth to dedicate an Image thereunto, he endeoureth to gather together of all seedes fit to bee eaten, such an heape, as may suffice for the height of that Image which he hath purposed to erect, bruising those seedes, and grinding them to meale. But oh cruell wickednes, oh horrible barbarousnes, they teare in peeces so many boyes, and girles, or so many slaues, before the meale which is to be baked, while they draw so much blood, as in stead of luke warme water may suffice to temper the lumpe, which by the hellish butchers of that art, without any perturbation of the stomacke being sufficiently kneaded, while it is moyst, and soft euen as a potter of the clay, or a wax chandler of wax, so doth this image maker, admitted and chosen to be maister of this damned & cursed worke. I haue else where said, if I mistake not, that these sacrifices are not slaine, by cutting of the throat, but by thrusting a knife through the short ribs neer vnto the hart, so that their hart is pulled out, to be sacrificed while they be yet liuing, & behold their own miserable cōdition: with the blod which is next vnto the hart they annoint their godds lips, but burne the heart it selfe, who thereby suppose the displeasure of their godds to be appeased, and this prodigious act, the priests perawade the people to be acceptable seruice to their Idolls. But many wil demand, & that rightly, what they do with the flesh & mēbers of those miserable sacrifices: O wicked yawning & gaping,

oh

oh loathsome prouocation to vomit: as the Iewes sometimes eate the lambs which were sacrificed by the old law, so do they eate mans flesh, casting only away the hands, feet, & bowels. To diuers effects they forme diuers Images of their godds, for victorie if they be to fight in battaile, for health, for plenty of fruits, & such like, after euery ones pleasure. Now let vs returne to Cortes walking about that great Church. In the halles, which as we sayd before, were in the temples, were the great Images of their godds, & in the halles were darke inner roomes, into the which they enter by narrow & strait dores, whereunto the priests only haue access. The great halles, beset with great Images, were dedicated to the Princes for their sepulchers: & the lesser, which were in the inner chambers, were appoynted for buriall of the Nobles descended of honorable parentage: and as euery man was of abilitie, so euery yeere he offered sacrifices of mans flesh. A poore man with vs offereth a small taper, to the Saints, and a rich man a great torch, many sacrifice onely with frankincense, others build churches, as we pacifie Christ and his Saints with our frankincense, and waxe, yet offering the feruent zeale of the heart. It happened, that while the King, and Cortes went through the open halles of the greates church, some of Cortes his familiars, entred into those narrow, & darke chappels, against the keepers wils, and when by torch light they saw the wals besmeared with a redd colour, they made prooffe with the pointes of their poniards, what it should be, and breake the walles. O brutish minds: the walles were not only besprinkled with the blood of humane sacrifices, but they found blood added vpon blood two fingers thicke, oh loathing to the stomacke, out of the holes they made with their poniards they say, an intolerable hellish stincke issued from the rotten blood which lay hidd vnder the fresh. But among so many horrible and fearefull things, one thing commeth to mind worthy of a lubble. Whatsoeuer Images were in the halles Cortes commaunded them to bee presently ouerthrowne, and broken, and to be throwne downe the steppes of the high stayres, in peices, one marble Colosse he left standing, because it was too huge, & could not easily be taken away. Wherewith Mutezuma (being present) was much troubled, & all the Nobilitie of the court, who complained saying: O vnhappy, and miserable men that we are, the godds being angry with vs, wil take away the fruites which we eate, and so wee shall perish through famine, and as at other times it hath befallne vs, the Godds being displeased all kindes of diseases shall sodainely come vpon vs, and wee shall not be freed from our enemies, if we be assailed by warre, nor be sufficiently secured from the tumult of the people, who if they vnderstand this, will furiously arise in armes. Whereto Cortes maketh answer: Behold (sayth he) what is more wicked, and abhominable? and what more foolish? doe you thinke those to bee Godds, which are formed and fashioned by the handes of your Tributaries? Is the seruice of your men more worthy, then the men themselues? Is that thing (O Mutezuma) which your workemen, and peraduenture a filthy slaue fashioneth with his handes, more woorthy then your maiestie? what blindnes is this in you? or what mad cruelty? that ye slaughter so many humane bodies euery yeere, for these insensible Images sakes? what doe these perceiue, which neither see, nor heare: Him, him, (I say) who created heauen and earth, him, yee are to worship. This is he, from whom all good things proceede, to whom these your sacrifices are most offenseiue. Besides, it is decreed and established by a law from our King, whom yee confesse to deriue his descent from him, who brought your auncestours vnto these countreies, that whosoever smiteth male or female with the sword, should die the death. When Cortes had declared these things by interpreters, Mutezuma with a pale countenance, and trembling heart replied: Hearken O Cortes, the ceremonies of sacrifices left vs by tradition from our auncestours, those wee obserue, and haue hitherto exercised, but seeing you say wee haue so much erred, and that it is displeasing to our King, wee are greatly delighted to heare it, so wee may perswade the people thereunto. These rites and ceremonies, peraduenture our auncestours who were left heere, found them to be obserued by the inhabitants of those times, so that wee haue followed the customes of our Fathers in lawe and of our wiues, neyther are you to wonder that wee fell into these errors, if they be errors. Giue vs a law, and we will endeavour to embrace it with all our power. Cortes hearing this, repeated that there was one God, three in persons, and one in essence,

Z z 2

Gods for diuers purposes.

O religious hellishnes, O hellish religiō.

Cortes ouerthroweth images. A huge marble Colosse. Such was the power of Sathr over these godles people to afflict them if at any time they had neglected his seruice. Cortes diswaith notably their Idolatry, and sacrificing of children.

Mutezuma his answer.

Mutezuma contented to forgoe Idolatry. Cortes preacheth one God.

who created the heauen, and the earth, and the Sunne & the Moone, with all the ornament of the Stars, which moue about the earth for the vse of men, and hence it cometh, that it is odious vnto him to kill men, who formed the slaue, & all others hauing the face of men, of the same matter, whereof he made me, thee, and them. He was borne among vs of a woman who was a virgin, and suffered for the saluation of mankind, which by the learned men who are to come, shal hereafter more largely be declared both to you, & the rest. The standard of that God, and ensigne of victorie, is the Image or representatiō of this crosse, for it behoueth the Generall both to haue the crosse, and also the image of the virgin his mother, carrying the infant in her bosome. And as he was speaking thus, Cortes of a Lawyer being made a diuine, shewed the crosse, and the Image of the virgin (to be adored.) These Images of wicked spirits and monsters beeing broken in peeces, Mutezuma causeth his seruantes to sweepe the temples in his presence, and cense them by rubbing of the walles, that no signe or token might remaine of such horrible bloudshed. We haue now sufficiently spoken of the corrupt religion of Tenustitan: lette vs therefore say somewhat of the pallaces of the nobilitie, and other rich men, and of their excellent buildings. Cortes sayth, that he neuer sawe any pallace in Spayne either of Kings, or any other Prince, which the meanest of 70. stone or marble houses, doth not match, who sayeth that they are all builte by the curious art of the architect, with pauementes of diuers sorts, and pillars of lasper stone, or white transparent marble, rounde aboute the courts, and large galleries vnder the solars. He addeth further, that whatsoever is reported concerning these things, ought to be credited, saying it is no wonder, beecause Mutezuma hath many large kingdomes, in the which a great multitude of noblemen gouern many countryes, as vnder the Emperours crowne, many Dukes, Earles, and Marquesses, and Nobles of other titles, are shadowed. All these at certayne times of the yeere, by an auncient custome, frequent the court of Mutezuma, nor may they doe otherwise. It is a thing whereto they are much inclined, that euery one shoulde strue in his desires, to excell his companions in the building of sumptuous houses: I might compare the manner of the Popes Cardinals in the citie of Rome to their magnificence: but much otherwise, for the Cardinals in their buildings haue respect onely to themselves, not regarding succession. But these people being obedient to Mutezuma, prouide for posteritie long to come: for they send their owne children to bee brought vp with Mutezuma, especially suche as descend from nobilitie, whereof there is so great a multitude, that euery day as soone as light appeareth you may see more then 500 such young noblemen walking in the hals, and open solars of Mutezuma, with whose familiars, pages, & folowers, three great courts, and streets (before the gates of the pallace) are filld at that time, to the houre of dinner. All these are filld with Mutezumas prouision, he saith, the cellers are neuer shut all day long, and that any manne may demand drinke of the butlers. Yet no man seeth the King, before he come forth to dinner or supper, out of the priue chambers, in to the great Hall, whose equall in greatnesse, Cortes sayth, hee knowes not any. When he is set, 300. young men apparellled after the Palatine maner come vnto him, and euery one of them bring seuerall dishes of diuers daintie meates, with chaffin dishes vnder them that the meates freeze not in the winter tyme. But they come not neere the table, for it is compassed about with a rayle, one onely standeth within the rayle, who taketh the seuerall dishes from their hands, and setteth them before the Prince being readie to dine. Mutezuma giueth with his owne hande of the dishes to 6. auncient men of great authoritie standing at his right hand, who after the auncient maner, while he dineth, stand all bare footed. The pauements are covered with mats. If it so happen that he cal any, he that is called goeth vnto him, bowing downe his bodie, with his face to the earth: and lifeth not vp his head at all, before he be gon far from him, creeping backwarde, for he may not return turning his back toward him. No man vseth directly to looke vpon the king, his familiars, and friends, & also the princes, casting down their eyes, & turning their face to y left or right hande, harken what the king answers: and thereupon they blamed Cortes, because he suffered the Spaniards which he called vnto him, to behold him with a direct countenance: who answered y it was not the manner with vs, nor that our king so highly esteemed his mortalitie, although he were the greatest,

Good Cortes recall these words in this lyne.

Pallaces.

Mutezuma hath many large kingdomes.

A most frequent Court of Nobles.

300 young noble men attending vnto Mutezuma his Courte.

No Prince equall in greatness to Mutezuma. The manner of his seruice

The statelike manner of their crouching and returning fro the king. An other poynt of state.

the ornament
meth, that it is
e of men, of
g vs of a wo-
e learned men
he rest. The
of this crosse,
virgin his mo-
s of a Lawyer
dored.) These
auseth his ser-
he walles, that
fficiently spo-
f the pallaces
es sayth, that
ich the mean-
l builde by the
asper stone, or
the solars. He
to be credited,
in the which a
crowne, many
ll these at cer-
utezuma, nor
ery one shoulde
ouses: I might
gnificence: but
himselfes, not
side for posteri-
Mutezuma, es-
y, that every day
walking in the
ers, three great
he houre of din-
uer shut all day
seeth the King,
the great Hall,
set, 300. young
men bring seue-
eates freese not
ed about with a
rom their hands,
n with his owne
right hand, who
ments are couer-
to him, bowing
ll, before he be
ack toward him.
also the princes,
n what the king
iardes which he
was not the ma-
were the great-
est,

est, that he would be adored with so great reuerence: this answer pleased the. Beside, whē Mutezuma is present, in what state soeuer he appeare, among so great a multitude there is so wonderful a silence, that non would thinke any of the, drew any breath at al. Every dinner, & euery supper, he washeth his hands on both sides, & wipeth them with very white linnen, & the towel hee once vseth hee neuer taketh in hands againe, all instrumentes must neuer hee touched more. The like doth he concerning his apparel, arising from his bed, he is clothed after one maner, as he commeth forth to see scene, and returning backe into his chamber after he hath dined, he changeth his garments: and when he commeth forth againe to supper, hee taketh another, and returning backe againe the fourth which he weareth vntill he goe to bed. But concerning 3. garments, which he changeth euery day, many of them that returned haue reported the same vnto me, with their owne mouth: but howsoeuer it be, all agree in the changing of garments, that being once taken into the wardrope, they are there piled vp on heaps, not likely to see the face of Mutezuma any more: but what manner of garments they be, we will elsewhere declare, for they are very light. These things being obserued, it wil not be wōdred at, that we made mention before concerning so many garments presented. For accounting the yeares, and the dayes of the yeares, especially, wherein Mutezuma hath inioyed peace & howe often he changeth his garments euery daye, all admiration will cease. But the readers will demand, why he heapeth vp so great a pile of garments, & that iustly. Let them knowe that Mutezuma vsed to giue a certeine portion of garments to his familiar friends, or well deseruing soldiers, in steed of a beneuolence, or stipend, when they go to the wars, or returne from victory, as Augustus Cæsar lord of the world, a mightier Prince then Mutezuma, commaded only a poore reward of bread to be giuen ouer & aboue to such as performed any notable exployt, while being by Maro admonished, that so smal a larges of bread was an argumēt y he was a bakers son: then although it be recorded in writig that Cæsar liked y mery cōceit, yet it is to be beleued y he blushed at that diuinatiō, because he promised Virgil to alter his dispositiō & that hereafter he would bestow gifts worthy a great king, & not a bakers son. Mutezuma eateth & drinketh in earthen vessels, although he haue innumerable plate of gold, & siluer beset w precious stones: such earthē vessels as are once brought, as chargers, dishes, poringers, pitchers & such like vessels, neuer goe backe againe. I wil now speak sōwhat of their palaces, & houses in y plaine fields. Euery noble mā, besides his houses in the city, hath sumptuous houses builde for delight in the open field, and gardens and greene plots of grounde adioyning to them, & places where fruit trees growe of diuers kindes, and hearbes, and roses, and sweete fragrant floures: where there wanteth no art in looking to the plats or quarters, & fencing them about with inclosures of cane, least any suddenly enter into the manured delights to ouerthrowe them, or robbe or spoyle them: besides euery one hath standing pooles in his orchardes, where sculles of diuers fishes swimme, and multitudes of water foule flote vpon them. If therefore euery Noble man hath one such house, it is meete that their Emperour Mutezuma shoulde not come behinde them. Mutezuma hath three great houses in a solitary place out of the way to refresh and recreate himselfe in the heate of sommer: in one of these he hath great plentie of monstrous men, as dwarfes, crooke backed, such as are gray headed from their youth, and men with one legge, or two heades, and seruants are appointed to attend them. The second is ordained for rauening foule, where both Vultures, and Eagles, and all other kindes of hawkes and cruell byrds of pray are kept. Euery foule hath her open cage in a great courte with two perchies fastened in them, the one on the outside to take the sunne, and the other within, to roost vpon: and euery cage separated one frō another with their sedge betweene them. But the whole courte is couered with wooden grates about that euery foule may inioy the open ayre, and safely flie in that parte assigned her: seruants also are appointed them, not onely to giue them meate, but they haue likewise a certain number of stipendiary Surgeans, who by the art of phisicke knowe how to cure the diuers kinds of diseases which grow in birds. One thing seemeth somewhat wonderfull & strange, concerning water foule: whatsoeuer they bee that liue in the sea, are included in the salt pooles, and those that lyue in fresh waters, are kept in the fresh pooles, and at certayne tymes of the yeere, the old waters being dried vp, and the fresh ponds carefully censed,

An other poynt
of state.

An other poynt
of state.

The change of
the Kings gar-
ments.

Why Mutez-
uma heapeth
vp so many gar-
ments.

Mutezuma
eateth & drink-
eth in earth
vessels.

Of palaces in
the country.

Of Mutezuma
his three great
houses in the
countrie.
One for mon-
strous men.
The seconde
house for rauening
foule.

Strang pooles
of water foule.

The third
house.

Cumatana a
Citie.

Muteczuma a
faithfull and
cōstant prince
and free from
ambition.

The mutabili-
ty of fortune.

ed, fresh waters are let in: the seruantes giue meate to euery kind of foule, of fishes, hearbes, and the graine Maizium, according to euerie ones nature, deliuered them by the houshoulde seruants and stewards of Muteczuma. Round about those standing pooles are large walks, where, vpon marble, alabaster, & lasper pillars, are other solars or floares, from whence Muteczuma (whē he cometh) may behold al the actions & conflicts of the birds below, especially when they are fed. The third house is appointed for lions, tygers, woolues, foxes, & other rauening beasts of this kind, & peacocks inclosed within their pales, & roomes, whereof I haue sufficiently spoken before: with these the fierce & wild beasts are fed. Those pallaces or courts are well replenished with houses, so yf the king with his family determin to lodge ther al night, he may conueniently doe it. This they say, and this we report. Whatsoever they write, or declare in our presence, we beleue, because, we suppose they would not presume to signify any thing rashly, contrary to truth, & because we haue also learned to beleue y those things might be done, which are possible, & not miraculous, and they further say, that they omit many things, lest they should offend the eares of Cæsar & the courtiers, with too long narrations. While our men thus searched these things, messengers were sent with Spaniards to accompany them, vnto diuers countries of Muteczumas dominions, to declare vnto y noblemen of the cōtries in their kings name, that they were to obey the great King of Spayne, and (in his behalfe) the captains sent from him. From the East vnto the furthest limits of those countries, which diuide them from Iucatan (for they think Iucatan w first offereth itselfe to them y come from Cuba, to be an Iūd, & it is not yet certainly known) they say, so much lād lyeth betweene, y it is almost thrice as big as Spain: for we haue already said that Tenustitā is more thē an 100. leagues distāt from y citie Potenchiana, otherwise called Victoria, & y borders of Potēchian are extended further vnto Iucatā & to y gulfe call- Figueras lately discovered. But they that were sent vnto the West, foud a city, & that: eat one too called Cumatana, 200. leagues distāt or therabouts from Tenustitan, & y King, of this citie, whose name I know not, & such as lie betweene, and they of the East also as farre as the Potenchiani, who (except those fewe common wealthes of whom I haue spoken before at large) were obedient to Muteczuma, nowe both of them haue subiected themselues to vs. Cortes often perswaded Muteczuma to goe vnto his ancient pallace: but he refused, saying, it is expedient for neither of vs, y we should be parted: for my nobles as I said before louing their benefit more then our quietnesse, will instantly intreate me, to raise the people, and make war against thee, being therefore knit together, wee shalbe the safer from their insolent ambition. Yet sometimes for his recreation, he resorted to those houses, as I mentioned a litle before, & at the euening, he alighted from his cabinet at the Pallace of Cortes. As he went or returned no man looked directly vpon him: so great is the reuerence which is conceiued towards him, that they thinke theselues unworthy to behold him. That superstition is ingrafted in the minds of the people, from their auncesters. But what? but what? & againe y 3. time, but what? The flattering inticemēts of fortune y mother, in the turning of her wheele, were conuerted to the accustomed buffets of a stepdame. Cortes saith, he entred into that city of the lake the 8. day of September in y yeere 1519. and there passed a most quiet and peaceable winter, & the greater part of the sprig vntill the moneth of May the next yeere: at what time Diccus Velasquez gouernor of Cuba or Fernandina, furnished a nauy to cōe against Cortes, because, without asking his aduice, & against his wil, as I mentioned before, he determined to set footing on those countries, & plant Colonies there. As touching the fleete wee will hereafter speak, but now concerning Cortes. While he thus aboad with Muteczuma, daily expecting with earnest desire, y returne of the messengers Montegius, and Portucarrerus, whom he had sent with presents vnto Cæsar, behold it was told him by the inhabitants of Muteczuma who bordered vpon the Sea shore, that ships were seene at Sea: he supposed it had bene his messengers ship, & reioyced, but his ioy was presently trasformed into sorow & sadness. I will here omit many smal matters, which the Grecians, & Iewes (because they are always straited within narrow boundes) would insert into their Hystories, if they hadde happened to their fellow-citizens: but in so great a vastity of matter, wee omit many things. To be short, It was the fleete of Iacobus

bus Velasquez, consisting of 18. shippes, both beaked Carauelles, & Brigantines of two ranges of oars, furnished with men, to witte, 800. footemen, and 80. horsemen & 17. peices of ordinance, as hereafter shall appeare.ouer this present fleete Velasquez made a young manne called Pamphilus Naruaecij, Generall. Cortes sent messengers vnto Pamphilus, to require him to come in friendly manner, and that hee shoulde not goe about to disturbe so happie enterpryses. Pamphilus made aunswere, that the Emperour comanded him, to execute the office of Generall of the armie of those countreyes, and willethe to command Cortes, to yeeld vp his Empire and gouernment, and come humbly, and vnarmed vnto him, that rendring account of his actions, hee might submitte himselfe to his Iudgement, or to the censure of Iacobus Velasquez who sent him. Cortes sayth hee woulde obey the Kinges letters patentes, if he woulde shew them to the Gouvernour left in the Colonie of Vera Crux. But if he falsly say that he hath those letters, let him depart the Prouince, in the which he determined to sette footing, and not forraging the countrey violently take away what hee findeth, because hee thinketh it auailable for the king. not to disturbe so great attempts by his coming: & that all the Barbarians now conquered, who vnder his conduct became obedient vnto Caesar, and honor his name, if they vnderstande that the Spanyardes disagree, and are at variance among themselves, will aduance their crests. and rebell against the Christians.

A fleete of 18. ships sent from Velasquez vnder the conduct of Pamphilus Naruaeci against Cortes. Cortes sendes messengers to Pamphilus.

The fift Chapter.

Many suche thinges by messengers were discussed on either side, & nothing don, so that Pamphilus continued his purpose. In the mean space those shippes, with their seuerall peeces of ordinace, horses, 28. smal shot, 120. archers, all landed vpon the shore, were brought by certaine trybutaries to Mutezuma, paynted in a certaine table of the barke of a tree. Cortes therefore vnderstanding the matter, was much tormented in mynde ignorant at the first, what counsell to take. If he made light of the matter, he saw that, it would so fall out, that the authoritie of a newe open enemy, woulde gather strength both with the Spanyardes, and the Barbarians. On the other side it was a harde case to forsake so great a matter, for feare of that, which fell out, to witte, the violent assaulte of the Barbarians vpon his menne. At length he thought it better to goe to Pamphilus, relying vpon the authoritie, wherby hee preuayled with them that came with Pamphilus, when hee was chiefe Magistrate for Iustice, in the Ilande of Cuba. Leauing garrisons therfore in the Pallace where he kept Mutezuma, hee spake vnto Mutezuma in these words. O my king Mutezuma, now occasion of thy future happines offereth it selfe, if the king shal find thee faithfull at such a time, it shal cōe to passe that al things shall succeed prosperously, & happily vnto thee. I goe, to search out what this matter may be, in my absence be carefull that no innouation arise. The Spanyards whō I leaue to be at your command, I commēd to your faithfull protection. Mutezuma promised them al succour & helpe, & sayd, he would account the Spaniards in steede of kinsmen. Go prosperously, & if they touch my borders with a treacherous mind, giue me notice therof: & I will command them to be subdued by war, & expelled out of my countries. Therefore leauing a garrison there, and bestowing certaine acceptable presents vpon Mutezuma, & his son, he taketh his iourney towards Pamphilus, who had seated hiselfe in Zempoal, and seduced the citizens against Cortes. He went with that mind, to disturb whatsoever he met opposed vnto him. So Cortes went vnto him: and omitting circumstances, sendeth for his Alguazill (that is to say the executioner of Iustice, which the Latines call a sergeāt: although a sergeant seldōe cometh into the dining roome) & sendeth him before with 80. footmē, with commandement that vsing f Prætorian law, he apprehend Pamphilus. He himselfe foloweth after to aid him with the rest, which were 170. He therfore with 250. men setteth vpon Pamphilus, not vnprepared, because he was admonished therof by the scouts. Pamphilus had fortified himselfe in an high tower of the tēple of that citie: & had eight peeces of ordinance planted on the steps of the staires. This Terentian Pamphilus rather, then that Troian Hector is beset with 800. soldiers, assaulted, & take. We think those Pamphilā souldiers durst not lift vp their heads against Cortes, who somtime made

Cortes to Mutezuma.

Cortes leaues a garrison and goeth against Pamphilus.

Pamphilus taken.

made them afraid, when he was chief gouernor of *y* citie of Cuba: we also think *y* the chiefe comãders were seduced through *y* subtilty & crafty deuises of Cortes: that, at *y* time when *y* matter was to be performed, they shuld leaue their swords they brought w them, in their sheaths. Here many things are muttered against Cortes, which time will discouer: howsoeuer it be, Pamphilus making sō resistãce, lost one of his eies. So he led away Pãphilus with on eye, who a litle before had the luster of 2. eyes, & with him, his chiefe cōsorts, faithfull Centuriãs to their General: who are said to be but a few. A certain Licentiate called Aiglionus, an excellent lawyer, one of *y* Senators of Hispaniola, folowed Pamphilus. This licẽtiãte in the behalfe of the Senate of Hispaniola, by whom lawes were giuen to al those parts, commãded Iacobus Velazquez, not to sende out that fleete against Cortes, & that he should not be the occasiō of so great a mischiefe: who said that the matter was to be decided by authoritie of the king, & not by armes: & cãe also to declare *y* sãe to Pãphilus, & endeouored with all his power to diuert *y* authors of the fleete from that enterprise. This Terentian Pamphilus did not onely not obey him, but casting the Senator into prison, sent him in a ship to Cuba to Diecus Velasquez, the inuẽter therof. The wisdom of *y* Licentiate was such, that seducing the mariners, he brought his keepers boũd, in the same ship to Hispaniola. So they became a pray in the lap of fortune. These are small matters, let vs now come to those of more weight, & importãce. Whosoever folowed Pamphilus, stucke to Cortes the known Gouernour of *y* citie. He sent the ships to the garrisons of *y* Colonie of Vera Crux, to giue them notice of the victorie: & with the rest hee taketh his iourney towards Tenustitan: & sendeth messengers before, to certifie Mutezcuma (and the rest who were left behinde) concerning the successe of thinges. This messenger was stabbed with manie wounds in the way, so that he scarce escaped aliue: who brought backe newes, that they were all in an vproare in the city Tenustitã & that the Barbarians were reuolted, and had burned those 4. Brigantins (whereof I made mention before) built for defence of our men, and that our garrisons being besieged were in extreame perill, and straightly beset with fire and sword, and all prouision of victuall intercepted. And he further said, that they had all perished, and bin ouerthrown, if Mutezcuma had not withstood it, to whom the citizens are now become rebellious & disobedient as he sayth. Cortes with all his traine approacheth to the brinke of *y* salt lake, and sendeth a Canoa made of one whole tree, to search, what the matter was. Another Canoa meeteth them, wherein one of Mutezcumas messengers, & another of the garrison of the Spaniards besieged, were conueied, who cãe to signify vnto Cortes the distresse our men were in. It is manifestly known, *y* this was don against *y* wil of Mutezcuma: wherfore the messengers exhort him to make hast, who say, that Mutezcuma hopeth by meanes of his comming, that the sedition which was already risen should turne vnto a quiet calme: whereupon the 8. of the Calendes of Iuly, he speedily conueyeth himselfe with certayne Canoas into *y* Pallace, to the garrisons, & Mutezcuma, who was very pensieue and sadde by reason of that tumult. He founde the wooden bridges (which all along diuide the stone bridges) drawne vp, and the wayes fortified with rampers: he first thought they hadde done it through feare, but it was farre otherwise: for they determined rather to dye, then any longer to indure such guests, who detained their King vnder colour of protecting his life, possessed the citie, and kept their auncient enemies the Tascaltecans, Guazuzingi, and others beside, before their eyes, at their charge: and consumed their prouision which was harde to get, by reason that beeing compassed with water, they naturally wanted all things, abstained not from iniuries, imposed tributes, and desired whatsoever thing was precious which they vnderstande they had, endeouoring either by force or cunning to extort it from them, who, to conclude brake in peeces the Images of their gods, & deprived them of their old rites, and auncient ceremonies. For these causes the Princes of *y* city being much moued, & with thẽ the forraigne Nobility (who familiarly inioyed the presence of their king, and brought vp their children & kinsmen with him from their childhood) determined in a rage, to roote out this nation, as husbandmen vse to pluck vp thistles by the roots out of their corne. And therefore tooke vpõ them (without the kings comãdemẽt, nay though he withstood it to his power) to conquer the Pallace, & kil the garrison, or consume them with

The Tenustians
in rebellion.

The fidelitie of
Mutezcuma.

Cortes con-
ueieth himselfe
into the Pallace.

famin,

The f

famin
come
seeing
Castle
great
As so
Pallac
stones
y our
the al
those
who m
tude,
yet h
grieco
sudden
stones
are m
Cortes
dãgr
& diu
renue
ports,
many
corag
to rem
was an
day, b
place
lesse
turbat
deuou
more
their
like r
was s
were
such
must
Cale
crue
& y
were
notw
them
day
abro
fal v
castl
our
Nec
enfe
t.c

famin. Whereby our men were now brought to extreme hazard of life, vnles Cortes had come vnto thē, at whose cōming, they tooke courage again, being now almost out of hart seeing there was no further hope remaining. They had fortified $\hat{y}$ Pallace in maner of a Castle, the Castle had hie churches, neer which stood a tower inuirded with firre trees. They greatly indāamaged ovr mē by casting darts & stones out of $\hat{y}$ firre trees, & fortresses. As soon as the Barbariās vnderstood $\hat{y}$ Cortes was cōe with auxiliary forces, & entred the Pallace, to his mē, they begā more furiously & fiersly to assault thē, a blacke cloud of stones, & darts, & arrowes, & al kind of weapōs deliuered from the hād, cāe so thick $\hat{y}$ our men could not discerne the sky. The clamors raised to the Heauens, cōfounded the aire, because the nūber of those obstinate & sturdy warriours was innumerable. To those $\hat{y}$ fought on the plain grouūd, Cortes sent forth a Captain with 200. Spaniards, who made some slaughter of the Barbarians, but being inclosed by an infinite multitude, he could not breake the array. It was hard for them to returne vnto the Castle, yet he got out, making his way with his sword: among them $\hat{y}$ were slaine, he was grievously wōūded, and left 4. of his company slaine: on the other side Cortes commeth suddenly vpon them, but did them litle hurt, for as soon as they had cast their darts, & stones, they retired to certā litle turrets, which the Spaniards call Azoteas, whereof there are many built throughout the citie: the battaile continued fierce a long time, insomuch as Cortes was constrained to betake himselfe to $\hat{y}$ Castle out of the fight, which (not without dāger) he scarsly performed, many of his cōpanions being slaine through violence of stons, & diuers kinds of weapons. Cortes being brought back away into the Castle, the Barbariās renewed the assault, & seeke entrāce on euery side, & ruine, & coming close vnto $\hat{y}$ ports, they endeouor by setting fire to them, to burne them, they $\hat{y}$ defended the assault shot many of the assaylāts through with bullets with the shot, & bowmen, yet with an obstinate corage remaing by the dead carcases of their companions, if need required, they proceeded, to renew $\hat{y}$ fight: they say the battaile continued from morning vntill the euening. This was an intollerable labour for our men, $\hat{y}$ they were al compelled to be al in armes, the whole day, but much more easy for them, that 4. times in euery houre, fresh & sound men were placed in the rancks in steed of the weary, slaine, & wōūded men, who came no lesse cheerefull vnto dāger, then they departed weary from the fight: so great was the perturbation of that hatred which they now conceiued. They exhorted one another, to indeuoure corragiously to thrust such guesstes out of their houses, that none could liue with more contentment, then to shake of such a yoke from their neckes, by fighting, or loosing their liues for $\hat{y}$ libertie of their country. So they continued the whole day in the battaile like raging wolous about a sheepfold, & the fight ceased at the euening. But $\hat{y}$ whole night was so troubled with their strōg & loud clamors, $\hat{y}$ through the noise therof, al $\hat{y}$ dwelt neer were struckē with deafnes. Neither could they within $\hat{y}$ castle hear one another there was such a resōūding or bellowing of voyces. The Barbarians departing $\hat{y}$ day, Cortes taking muster of his men, fōūd 80. of thē wōūded. The next day after, which was $\hat{y}$ 8. of the Calends of Iuly, they ran more fiersly thither then their accustomed maner, wherupon a cruel conflict ariseth. He planteth 13. field peeces against $\hat{y}$ enemy, & rāgeth the A. chers, & $\hat{y}$ smal shot in the front: oh admirable attempt, although 10. & sometimes 12. of thē were shot through with euery great shot, & their dismembred lims tossed into the ayre, yet notwithstanding they persisted, & cāe on still: & which way soeuer the great shot tare them in peeces, they presently closed the Armie, like the Germās or Heluctiās. The next day being cōpelled through great want of things necessary, he determined to try his fortune abroad. The Spaniards (whom cruel hūger cōpelled) issued forth like raging lions. They fal vpon $\hat{y}$ enemy, kill many, & wōon certaine houses by assault, which lay neere to $\hat{y}$ castle. They passed some of the wooden bridges which crossed $\hat{y}$ waies. But at the euening our men returned, no lesse hunger starued, Cortes & 50. of his company being wōūded. Necessitie dayly more & more vrging, especially the great penury of corne, they were enforced to find out deuises, whereby doing greater damage to the enemy they might draw thē to some quiet peace. By night therefore he made 3. warlike engis of wood, couered

The Tenustitans
fiercely assault
the Pallace.

Cortes himselfe
wounded.

A battaile 63
morning to the
euening.

The Tenustitans
shew great
courage.

Cortes againe
wounded.

with boordes, in maner of a litle square house, the art military calleth them engins of defence, this engin was able to containe 20. souldiers, and putting wheels vnder it, they issue out of the same: they were shot & bowmen which filled the engin of defence. They brought also behind them, slaues with axes, & mattocks, thinking to be able to ouerthrow houses, & bulwarkes & annoyed them. There was such casting of stones and Jartes from the Towers (which hunge ouer the wayes) vppon those Engines, that they brake the couering thereof: so they were faine to creepe backe againe vnto the Castle. These things thus doone, Mutezuma (that vnhappy King, whome our men hadde with them) desired that hee might bee brought to the sight of them that fought, promising to indeuoure to perswade them to giue ouer the assault. By euil fortune, hee was brought vnto a certayne open loft, on that side where the assaylantes were thickest, when presently such a mighty tempest of stons cāe violently powring down vpō them that fought, that no manne put out his head, who departed not shrewdly shaken, and bruised. There, the most puissant king Mutezuma, a good man by nature, and wise enough, got the vnhappy end of his greatnesse, and delights, who being strucke with a stone by his owne people, the thirde day breathed out that soule which commanded so many kingdomes, and was a terrour to so many nations and people. Our men gaue his body to the citizēs to be buried. What was els done, they knowe not. For they had no free libertie lefte them, to be able to doe any other thing, thē to bethinke them, how to preserue life.

The Lamentable end of the mightie King Mutezuma.

The sixth Chapter.

Cortes speaketh to the citizēns.

The next day after, Cortes speaketh to the commanders of the warres, the Principall men of the citie, and the kinges Allies (among whom was the Lord of Astapalapa the kings brother) being sent for to the place, where that lamentable mischance happened to Mutezuma. And perswadeth exhorteth & aduiseth them rather to imbrace peace then warre: and that vnlesse they desisted from their enterprises hee woulde vtterly destroy that so famous and renowned cittie, their chiefe seate and natie soile: and that he pittied their future calamitie, whom he once admitted for his friendes: whereto they answered, that the wordes which Cortes spake, were vaine, & idle. They sayd, they woulde account him for no friend, but a deadly & hatefull enemy: & further say, they will not accept his offered peace, vnlesse he leaue them their country free, departing out of their borders with his army. Cortes againe putteth them in mind to beware of the future dammage, and grievous losses. They replied, that rather then they would indure such a bondage, they would constantly die euery man: and therefore bid him thinke of his return, & not put any confidence in weak & fraile words, they say, death should be most pleasing vnto thē, so they might shake of that slauish bondage from the necke of their children and the rest of their posteritie. Contrarily, Cortes againe propoundeth vnto thē, what miseries other natiōs (who refused his friendship) had indured. He promiseth to pardō former Errors. They reply again, that they will haue none of his friendship, nor none of his pardō. Nay, they say, they doubt not but they shal consume them euery mā either with the sword or famin, & shew, that it might easily be done, because there is so great a multitude of desperate men desiring death, so that they make no reckening of the slaughter of a thousand men: if the death of euery thousand be recōpenced, but with one of ours. They affirme, that they are al resolute in this opinion, & therefore admonish him with threatening words, that (a Gods blessing) he goe from whence he came, & prouid for him, & his, with the time: & desire, & beseech him to suffer them to inioy the customs, & precepts of their Auncestors. Cortes, who shortly was likely to perish through famine, with al his traine, vnles he ouerthrow the force & power of the Barbarians (for hee was nowe pressed with extreame famin) out of his necessitie was compelled to frame the courage of his mind vnto an higher straine. He suspected also, least if hee went about to depart, as was required, hee might be intercepted within the drawe bridges, which was easily don, the woodē bridges betweene him & thē, being either drawn vp, or taken away. It increased his suspicion also, for & the chiefe men of the citie were not ignorant that Cortes had great treasures heaped vp, through desire wherof they were drawn, and that

The magnanimous resolution of the Barbarians.

A Vertue of necessitie.

that not without cause surely, for our menne confesse, that out of all those countries he had gathered the sum of seuen hundred thousande Ducates, in gold, siluer, and precious stones, all which he had in his custodie. Thereupon hee determined to prepare himselfe to the fight, and that night to hazard what the fortune of war shuld decree. They amend those Engins of war whereof we haue made mention: & as soone as day began to appeare, he went forth, first to destroy those little towns, out of the which our men were indangered by casting down stones, & such like things from thence: & then to possesse them by strong hand, if he could. These Engins with wheels, were drawn by them that were within, behind the 3. peeces of battery folowed after, whose flanks many targeteers, & shot guarded & defended, accompanied with troops of $\frac{1}{2}$ Tascaltecas, & Guazuzingi to the nuber of 3000. out of the first little town which they assayed, such a cloud of stons & darts was thrown down vpon our mē, $\frac{1}{2}$ they could not vse the ordinace: so that on of our mē being slaine, & many wouled, they returned w heauy cheer vnto the Castle. Out of the hie tower of $\frac{1}{2}$ church also, which was ouer $\frac{1}{2}$ Castle, they receiued innuerable damages. Wherefore our men attēpted to assault it, & ascend by an hundred marble steps, & more, vnto the top thereof: but the Præsidary Barbarians of the sãe, made our men tūble headlong down the stairs. Whereupon the corage of our men faited, but the enemies puffed vp with pride, pressed $\frac{1}{2}$ seig much more grieuously, & renewed the fight. Cortes compassed with so great calamitie, perceiving that present death would follow, except he woon $\frac{1}{2}$ tower by assault, because they could not so much as put forth a finger, for the enemy, so lōg as $\frac{1}{2}$ tower stood speedily taketh vp a target himselfe, and such as were of stoutest courage folowed after him, armed with targets in like manner. They assault the tower: with resolution either to win the tower, or in that conflict to end their liues. And although they vnderooke it with manifest hazard and danger of life, yet boldnes of courage preuailed. The enemy endeouours to defend the stayres, our men desire to ascend them, in so much, as they fought eagerly. At lēgh our men obtained their desires. They woon the tower, & made the defenders to leape down from the top of $\frac{1}{2}$ stairs. In that tower (casting down their Idols) they placed the image of the blessed virgin: which the enemy stole away. Wherefore he commanded that tower, & 3. others to be burned, least any further damage should be don vnto the Castle therby. Those towers being lost, $\frac{1}{2}$ Barbarians began to quaille. The night folowing our mē sallying forth, in one of the vvaies neere vnto the castle, burned 300. houses: & many in another, from which the castle was much annoyed. So somtimes killing, somtimes destroying, & sōtimes receiuing wouids in the wayes, & bridges, they laboured many daies & nights, on both sides. At length the nobles of the city, fayning feare, send messengers to Cortes to treat of peace, who say, they will be obedient vnto him, so he will pardon that which was past. Whereto Cortes sayth, that he was well content. Now Cortes had one of the Priestes a man of great authoritie whom he detained in the castle. They earnestly intreat him to act $\frac{1}{2}$ Priest at liberty, by whose means the matter might be performed: the priest is let go, & Cortes being credulous taketh no further care for $\frac{1}{2}$ matter. Cortes sitteth down to dinner, vpō a sudden, messēgers cōe rūning forth cōtinually, who report $\frac{1}{2}$ the bridges were interrupted by armed enemies. Cortes had filled certain spaces, which $\frac{1}{2}$ woodē bridges vsed to couer, to the intēt that if the bridges were taken away, the horses might freely runne hither and thither, vpon the firme ground: they signifie that the bricke of those void places, and the earth, and all other kinde of matter or rubble were cast out, and the bridges made vnpassable againe, and those spaces clenched, so that no footemen, much lesse horsemen, might passe that way. He leapeth forth from the table, sendeth out the horsemen vpon the Barbarians, and violently breaketh in through the midst of the enemy, wounding, and killing, on both sides, for a long space. But it repented him that he ranged so far, and wide. Returning from the fight, hee founde all the way behinde him, very full of souldiers, on the water with boates, and thicke on both sides, and before, filling the whole breadth of the bridge. They that remayned by flight, presse vpon him dangerously behinde: he was also assayed from the towers, many on both sides were battered with stones, and pierced with darts, and Cortes also grieuously wounded on the heade, and fewe escaped free, and those so faint and weake, that they

The huge mass of golde and siluer that Cortes had gathered.

Cortes assaults the tower.

A most resolute and valiant act of Cortes.

They win the tower.

300. Houses burnt.

The Nobles subtilly entreate peace.

Cortes assaults the Barbarians but with euill success

Cortes packs
up a great mass
of treasure.

Cortes and his
companions flee.

Muteczumas
children slain.

Tacuna.

gen. Spaniards
slaine, & 2000
utliers.

A Stratageme.

could not so much as lift vp their armes. But after they retired to the Castle they found not meate sufficiently enough seasoned to refresh them, nor peradventure morselles of breade of rough Maizium, nor potable drinke, as for wine & flesh, they had no great care. So being all heauie and sad, they besought Cortes, to bring them backe againe from thence, for it would shortly come to passe that they should either dye by the sword of the Barbarians, or pine through famin. He harkened to the request of his felowes in armes, & being moued with y^e matter it selfe now brought to the last cast, he yeelded to depart: & prepared certain great peeces of timber, to lay ouer the bridges wher the stone bridges were wanting. Being ready to goe forth one night secretly, he diuideth the treasures, to the sum of 7. hundred thousande Ducates. He assigneth the kings sift part to the kings Auditor, and Treasurer, & other officers, & commandeth them to take charge therof. The rest he diuideth to be caryed behinde them vpon horsebacke. He had with him Mutezumass son, and 2. daughters, pledges, & many other chiefe men taken in the conflicts, for whose sakes, & for casting down y^e images of their gods that tumult of the people arose. He setteth the ranks in order, he chooseth chiefe commanders, and vnder officers, raungeth the army, & taketh his iourney in the silent night. The report & fame thereof is spread throughout the whole citie in the twinkling of an eye, that Cortes, and his companions were fled. A huge number of warriors run suddenly vnto them, they raise their clamors to the heauens, so that our miserable men were pelted with stones and darts on euery side. They that were in the vanguard escaped, but such as were in the middle, and followed in the reare, were shrewdly smitten, and wounded. The discourses concerning these conflicts are long & tedious. Your Holinesse shall briefly heare what they write at large: the Barbarians slew many of our men, and horses, because they carryed away their Kinges children, and the chiefe men of the city, and for that they conueied away the treasure, they fought with madde fury and courage: so that whatsoever riches or householdstuffe our men tooke away, became their praye, except that little which fell to the vanguard share by chance: the fury of the conflict was so great, that they slew pel mel Mutezumass children, and the principall men of the city, together with the slaues, whereof our men had gotten many, and our men also intermingled with them; and if at any time, the horsemen which remained, went backe to such as followed them, the first they met withall, with a violent course leapt into the waters, seeing it is all one with them to swimme, and to walke vpon the land (as is it to Crocodiles, or Seales) and afterwarde coming out of the water, creeping by the walles of the bridges, they came in againe. So our men being vtterly ouerthrowne, and dispersed, forsooke the whole lake. They whose good happe was to escape, made a stand in the field of a certayne land citie, called Tacuna. Vpon an high steepe side of a hill of that plaine, Cortes abode, to gather the remnant of his vanquished Armie together, and incamped there all night, in the open ayre. Mustering his army after the vnhappy remnant thereof receiued, he found left behind him slaine, of the Spaniards 150. of the Auxiliary Tascaltecanes, and Guazuzingi, and others bordering vpon them, about 2000. of the horses, he lost 42. and there remayned not one of the children of Mutezumass, or of the chiefe men who were led captiue. The like also befell the slaues: they all dyed in the sight of our men. The Tenustitan conquerors alwayes followed the stepps of our men fighting, to the very view of this citie Tacuna: expecting the day light. Cortes being certified by the Spies, what purpose they had, and how great a multitude was gathered together against him, vsed a Stratageme. He commaunded fiers to be kindled in diuers places, to the intent, that the enemy should thinke our menne would stay there, and not moue a foote till day light. At the second watch of the night hee commaundeth to take vp the Ensignes, and chargeth the souldiers to follow as well as they could: one of the Tascaltecan Auxiliaries escaped, Cortes being very pensieue, because he knew not which way they must goe, or should be compelled to go: he ohereth his helpe to conduct him, because he declared. that he had trauiled through those countries before time. This Tascaltecan heeing his guide, he remoueth, they bring forth those that were grievously wounded vpon the buttockes of horses, or fastened to their tayles: the rest who were vnprofitable for warre, who could stand vpon their

their feet
reareward
mile from
the day.
Barbarians
lently fe
armie w
together
was it l
they car
they tha
shephear
woolfe i
friends t
titan, th
Cortes s
greedily
the parcl
heere, w
liuing eu
dangers o
This Roc
ger, and
tie requ
parture,
Guazilli
pected,
might be
they had
derstand
they sen
ty, and
friend to
good che
lecting
greivanc
receiue
der their
quest o
zingi ch
modities
tayned,
part to
things in
(to the s
horses ad
of Colu
fied to
continue
freshed
returnin
of the C
Colony,

Castle they
enture mor-
sh, they had
them backe
ther dye by
e request of
to the last
ay over the
n one night
Ducates. He
officers, &
ried behinde
pledges, &
own f images
he chooseth
s journey in
hole citie in
s, so that our
e in the vant-
shrewdly smit-
dious. Your
y of our men,
n of the city,
l courage: so
praye, except
was so great,
itty, together
ed with them;
ved them, the
one with them
d afterwarde
n againe. So
They whose
called Tacuna,
emnant of his
Mustering his
slaine, of the
rding vpon
he children of
ll the slaues:
wed the stepps
light. Cortes
was gathered
diuers places,
moue a foote
the Ensignes,
ne Auxiliaries
must goe, or
declared that
his guide, he
ckes of horses,
ld stand vpon
their

their feete: or such as were wounded, or otherwise sicke of any disease, he sent before. The reareward, which he kept, with the horse, and a few sound men, were scarce marched one mile from the place where they incamped that night, when in the first twilight and dawning of the day, an innumerable multitude of Enemies came vnto them: and with their large paces the Barbarians ouertooke our reare-ward. They so galled our men behind, that the horsemen violently fell vpon them all along the way, and slew many, and returned backe againe to the armie while they were marching. So, they alwayes followed our men fighting for two leagues together, for they might not make a further iournie, for the annoiance of the enemy: neither was it les greiuous vnto them, that they were oppressed with the want of al things, because they carried nothing out of Tenustitan fit for food, nor did they safely march fro the townesmen: they that were next in the way, came violently running out of their houses with loud outcries, as shepheards vse to doe vpon the taking of a Woolfe at the sheepefolde, while they perceiue the wolfe is gon farr from the foldes. Through these difficulties, at length they came to their friends the Tascaltecanes. In the second encounter after they were got out of the city Tenustitan, the enemy wounded 4. horses with their arrowes of the which one being slaine, (as Cortes saith) gaue him and his fellow souldiers a sumptuous & delicate supper, for that they greedily deuoured the horse. They say they led a miserable life for fife daies together, with the parched graine of Maizium only, & that, not to saturity neither. I omit many particulars heere, which cause mee to belecue, that neither that fabulous Grecian Hercules, nor any man liuing euer suffered any such things, & yet remained aliue, so many painefull labours, so many dangers of sight, such hunger, I thinke none liuing which is not a Spaniard could haue indured. This Race of men is borne for this, that it might more easily indure what labour soeuer, & hunger, and thirst, heat and cold, & continuall watching, (& that in the open ayre if necessitie require) then any other nation in my iudgemēt. At the length the sixt day fro that departure, which was like vnto a flight, he came to a town of the Tascaltecan iurisdiction, called Guazillipa: which consisteth of 4000 houses, as they report. He entred that towne halfe suspected, because he feared (which vsually happeneth in humane affaires) least their mindes might be changed with fortune, and of friends were nowe become enemies, but hee found they had dealt faithfully with him. That towne was 4. leagues distant from Tascalteca. Vnderstanding by the Tascaltecanes of the slaughter of our men and theirs, and of their coming: they sent two of the chiefe men of the city messengers vnto them, the one a man of authority, and the other Sacutengal. Messengers also came from the common wealth of Guazuzingo friend to the Tascaltecanes, who comforted our distressed men & perswade them to be of good cheere, and put them in some hope of future reuenge, offering al their forces for the effecting of the matter. They exhort them to quiet theselues for the present after so many greiuances, & cure their companions: and further promise that the Tenustitanes should shortly receiue punishment for the slaughter of the Spaniards, & the losse of their cittizens slaine vnder their protection. Cortes with these words confirmed his wandering mind, & at the request of the embassadours went to Tascalteca. But he sent the embassadours of the Guazuzingi cheerefully back againe, hauing presented them with certaine gifts of our country commodities, acceptable vnto them, because they were strange. Our men were curteously intertayned, & cherished with soft beds, & necessary prouision of victuals. Cortes being to depart to Mutezuma, had left with the Tascaltecanes some store of gold & siluer, and found all things intire and safe, & their fidelitie kept. But what auailed it: he sent that wealth in chests (to the summe of 21000. Castellanes of golde, besides Iewels,) to the Colony of Vera Crux: fife horses accompanied those riches, and 44. footemen through the enemies borders of the prouince of Colua, because they are friends to the Tenustitanes: who were takē euery man, & all sacrificed to their gods, & deuoured by the Coluani, & their treasures diuided among thē. Hauing continued f. space of twenty daies with the Tascaltecanes, he cured the wounded men and refreshed the feeble. After this, he sent againe to the Colonie of Vera Crux, the messenger returning, sayd those Garrisons were all well, at that message Cortes reioyced, but the rest of the Commanders and souldiers were of opinion, that they should be brought backe to that Colony, to the intent that beeing ioyned together, they might more easily resiste the treachery and

The Barbarians
ouertake the
reareward.

Hee commend-
eth the hardnes
and hardines of
the Spaniards.

They come to
Guazillipa.

They of Guazilli-
pa giue hope of
reuenge.

Tepeaca
a huge city.

Cortes taketh
the city of
Tepeaca.

A castle built.

Embassadoure
to Cortes from
Guaccachiulla
a city, at cum-
ty with the
Tenustitanes.

An other City
sent Embas-
sadors to Cortes.

Cortes goeth
against Izuca
a city.

Izuca wonne.

and deceits of the enemy. Cortes sayth hee will not returne againe, seeing hee had found so great faithfulness in the Tascaltecanes and Guazuzingi, and perswadeth them to bee ready to take reuenge of the Tenustitanes for such their outrageous & villanous actes. About the Calendes of Iuly in the yeere 1520. hee marcheth forward in battayle array. There is an huge city called Tepeaca not farre distant from Tascalteca, these citties pursue each other with hostile hatred. The Tepeacenses sacrificed and deuoured 12. Spanyards taken passing through their borders. To them Cortes (with great and mighty armies of the Tascaltecanes, Chiurutecali, and Guazuzingi,) directeth his course: it was reported by the Spies that the Tepeacenses, had receiued mercenary souldiers from the city Tenustitan, against our men. But that I may conclude in few wordes, omitting circumstances, both the hostes, & the guests were conquered: so that he had the city yeelded vp vnto him. They promised by an oath that they would obey the command of Cortes, and in token of obedience, they gaue pledges. Our ordinance and warlik engins together with our horses (things neuer seen nor heard of before, by them) presently make their courages to quail, but the greatest help was, that power of 3. nations gathered together. In this prouince of Tepeaca he chose a new place to plant a colony, & built a Castle there, which he called Sugura la Frontera. He determined not to trust the Tepeacenses, because they might easily be perswaded to imbrace the counsell of the Tenustitan Princes, & for that Tepeaca is the midd way, intercepting from Vera Crux to these friendly nations. While these things were thus done, Cortes had messengers from Vera Crux, who reported, that the forces of Garaius were sent from Panucus the king, to that great riuer, to erect a Colony, and that they were vanquished, and ouerthrowne, and escaped out of the hands of the King Panucus, and were arriued at Vera Crux. After the Tepeacenses vanquished, a spreading rumour throughout the rest of the bordering nations, stirred vp the minds of the people. There is another montanous city called Guaccachiulla, which secretly sent Embassadours to Cortes, to offer themselves and all their power against the inhabitants of the Prouince of Colua, the friendes of the Tenustitanes, from whome they complained, that they had receiued innumerable losses, and disgraces, euen to the rauishment of their women. The Guaccachiulli are seated on this side the mountaine, enemies to these inhabitants beyond the mountaines situated in the countrie of Colua. They told Cortes that 30000. armed men lay in ambush beyond the mountaines in the borders of Mestinga, because they hearde that our men were minded (being next vnto the mountaines) to passe into Colua. He went therefore to the Guaccachiulli with 200. Spanish footemen, 13. horses onely, three thousand of the auxiliary forces, and with certayne peeces of Artillery: the Commanders of this ambushment quietly rested themselves securely in the city Guaccachiulla. Whereupon he tooke, or slew them euery manne. The city Guaccachiulla is fortified with strong towred wals, compassed about with mountaines, blessed with a fruitfull soyle, consisting (as they say) of 6000. houses or thereabouts built of lime and stone, famous for 2. riuers watering the plaine thereof. There is another city 4. leagues distant only from Guaccachiulla. This City also sent Embassadours to offer to yeelde themselves. The king hereof fled away, with the Coluani that escaped, who beeing for to inioy his dominion, refused the same. He rather desired to suffer banishment, then to be subiect to our men. At the request therfore of the people, hee made his brother king in his steade, who promised the cittizens, that hee would not alter and change his opinion. A few dayes after that, he went to another city, named Izzucca, 4. leagues also from Guaccachiulla, but lying another way. After he was in his iourney, hee perceiued there were very great forces of the Coluani in the borders of that city: they write that they were 20000. They thought they were able to defend the country, that our men should not enter. Within the city were 6000. defenders, the best of the rest, were distributed into the townes and villages: but the women, and all such as were vnfit or vnprofitable for war, they sent forth into the woods, and mountaines with their household stuffe. This city is very well fortified by art and nature, I should be weary with recounting all the strength thereof, therefore shortly thus. It was wonne at length: the greater part of the defenders leaped downe from the wall into a riuer running close thereby, because they perceiued they were assailed behind. The city being taken, Cortes pardoned the people, & commandeth them to bring backe their families,

The families
settled in
the Tepeaca
banishment
who were
in the city
of the
to look
himself
temples
place,
caused
such c
ers: as
This ci
and bi
great q
are wel
maner
towns
fame th
rauenon
courtes
rans to
ing in a
& the T
so great
and sec
they are
discours
ter the
Tenusti
Measels
for of
slaught
eased w
he coul
because
would r
chiefly
for the
vessels
their pr
necessi
In the
harque
Spaine
peror
describ
beseech
him, to
had see
1520.

he had found so
o bee ready to
out the Calen-
as an huge city
her with hostile
g through their
s, Chiuruteali,
e Tepeacenses,
But that I may
ests were con-
n oath that they
edges. Our ord-
rd of before, by
power of 3. na-
lant a colony, &
trust the Tepea-
f the Tenustitan
these friendly na-
rux, who report-
riuer, to erect a
the hands of the
shed, a spreading
ls of the people.
Embassadours to
the Prouince of
they had recei-
n. The Guacca-
eyond the moun-
d men lay in am-
rde that our men
went therefore to
nd of the auxiliary
pushment quietly
ke, or slew them
compassed about
6000. houses or
hereof. There is
r Embassadours to
hat escaped, who
uffer banishment,
made his brother
d change his opi-
leagues also from
eined there were
they were 20000.
ot enter. Within
ne townes and vil-
ey sent forth into
y well fortified by
therefore shortly
one from the wall
led behind. The
bring backe their
families,

families, and goods. They all cheerefully returned vnto their houses, so that the city is pre-
sently replenished. By 2. messengers of the city he commandeth the King who departed with
the Tenustitanes, and the rest of the Coluani, to be sent for: hee refused to come, and desired
banishment rather. The brother vnto this king was a bastard, and aged, and by his sonne
who was dead, there was a grandchilde of ten yeeres old, he therefore placed the nephew only
in the kingdome, because he was legitimate, choosing his vnckle for Protector, ioyning three
of the bordering Guaccachiulli faithfull men, and of great authoritie with him in guardianship,
to looke to the estate of the orphāt, while attaining to more yeeres, he knew how to gouerne
himselfe. They say this city Izzucca consisteth of 3000. houses, with about an 100. towred
temples dedicated to their Idols, which Cortes himselfe saith he numbred from a certaine high
place, and in them they sacrifice with mans blood. All these towers with all their Idols he
caused to be burned: commanding, that hereafter they should no more apply their mindes to
such ceremonies. And he further sayd, that the Creator of heauen and earth hated manslai-
ers: and that it was contrary to the law of God and Nature, that one man should kill another.
This city had a Castle neere vnto it compassed with hilles, which defend it from the sharpe
and bitter blastes of winds, and by reason of the heate thereof it bringeth forth exceeding
great quantity of Gossampine cotton. The plaine thereof is well watered. All the fields therof
are wel moistened in the summer by trenches cut from place to place. There is plenty of all
maner of fruits there, neither is the sowing of pot herbs neglected. The plaine is ful of
towns and villages. The Guaccachiulli being vanquished, & the Izzucani subdued, the
fame thereof being spread through far remoued nations, declared that the countenance of
rauenous and greedy fortun was now changed, & of a stepmother was turned into a milde
and courteous mother. The minds and affections of the nations ranne headlong frō the Tenusti-
tans to our men, as it vsually happeneth, in turning of the wheele. Embassadours come stru-
ing in all post hast from euery place to yeeld theselues: affirming that for feare of the Coluani,
& the Tenustitan Princes of that prouince, they durst not hitherto offer their due odedience to
so great a king, as the Spaniards professed he was. But now, seeing they hoped to be safe,
and secured by the fauour of our men frō the tyranny of the bordering kings, they say that
they are come to discover the affection of their cities. That we may now at length end this
discourse, related in a sufficient long story: Cortes vnderstood by certaine captiues, that af-
ter the death of Mutezuma, his brother the Lord of Hastapalappa was made king in the city
Tenustitan, who 3. moneths after the kingdome & soueraignty taken vpon him, died of the
Measels, in whose stead Mutezumaes sisters son succeeded, whose name was Catamazinus,
for of the 3. daughters of Mutezuma, they theselues had slain one, at the bridges in the
slaughter of our men. But of the that remained aliue, the one was an idiot, & other dis-
eased with the palsie. This Catamazinus endeouored to get all maner of armes, as many as
he could: especially long pikes, wherwith he hopeth to be able to wound the horses afar off:
because they are disranked onely with the incounter of 3 horse. For he feareth that Cortes
would return vnto him, to reueng the outrage committed: because he vnderstood the nations
chiefly round about bordering vpon him were revolted frō him, & promised aid vnto our men
for their destruction. Neither was he surely deceived, for he said 3 Cortes would prepare 13.
vessels of 2. ranks of oars called Bergantines to destroy that great salt lake, 3 so great a city,
their prouisiō of victual being taken from the & their cōdits broken, might be vrged with such
necessity, 3 they might be compelled to submit their necks to 3 yoke of the king of Spaine.
In the meane space he sent 5. ships to Hispaniola, to bring a conueniēt nūber of horses, &
harquebus shott, with store of gunpowder. Cortes writeth that those countries are like vnto
Spaine in the abundance of riuers, mountains, & woody vallies. Therefore he desireth the Em-
peror to confirme 3 name, which he had giuē vnto those countries: for he called al which is
described, Noua Hispania, of the Ocea sea. Withal in the end of his huge volume, he hūbly
beseecheth him that it would please his M. to send some man of courage & experience vnto
him, to viewe the coastes of those countries subdued by him, that he might report, what he
had seene. Dated the 30. day of October, from the Castle which he called Segura Frōtera.
1520.

Cortes burnes
the temples with
their Idols.

Fortune againe
smiles vpon
Cortes.

Catamazinus
king of the
Tenustitans.

Cortes prepareth
for the warre.

To Adrian the Pope, concerning the compassing of the world.

The seventh Chapter.

While these writings remained in my deske, messengers sayling by reason of the long distance of place, and dangerous trauieling, beholde late matters discovered, behold new hatched broods from the pregnant Ocean. This worke shall be concluded with two additions thereunto, which shall far exceede the former discourse in worth: one, of the strang, and incredible compassing of the world, and the llandes which bring forth spices discovered: & other, with what art, pollicy, heate of courage and force of armes of the Tascaltecan, Guazuzingí, and the bordering enemies of Mutezuma aiding him, Fernandus Cortes recovered that huge and mighty city of the lake, Tenustitan, and all the power thereof and ouerthrew it, and almost vtterly destroyed it. Whereby no small addition is made to the sceptre of your Holinesse, and the kingdome of great Castile. But let vs come to the Paralell compassed from East to West, and to the negotiation of Spices, which is somewhat further to be deriued. From the city Barchinona, when the Emperour intended the Laletane Council there, your Holinesse being president in our Emperours Senate of Indian affayres: charge was giuen, as you may remember, to Fernandus Magaglianus the Portugall, who fled from his owne King, to search out the Molucha llands, which nourish spices, for that being 7. yeeres conuersant in times past, in the Cochinean, Cananorean, Colocutean, Chersonesian, otherwise called the Malachian Martes and fayres, he knewe where those llands lay. They are not farre distant by sea from golden Chersonesus, commonly called Malacha & & rest of those marts. Magaglianus being dismissed by our Senat whereof your Holinesse was president, set sayle to sea from Barameda the mouth of Bethis, the 20. of September in the yeere 1519. with 5. shippes, the Admirall whereof was called the Trinity, the other S. Anthony, the Victory, the Conception, and S. James in the which he carried 237. men, of these ships, two only returned. One of the which forsaking the Admirall, returned vsenueicable: the other, almost 3. yeeres after her departure out of Spaine (for shee arriued the 6. of September 1522 at the same hauen, frō whence shee departed when shee went out) returned laden with cloues, & certaine other spices. Few of the men escaped. And the Admirall himselfe Magaglianus remained still in one of the llandes called Matam, slaine by the inhabitants in his voyage, as we shall declare heereafter. Betweene the Castellanes and the Portugues there is a certaine naturall hatred and priuie grudge from all antiquity: Magaglianus seeking diuers occasions vnder pretence of Iustice, consumed many of the Castellanes, because they obeyed him vnwillingly. Of these, we shal speak in their fit places: now let vs come to the voyage vnderaken by them. Arriuing at the fortunate llands first, and after comming within view of the llands Gorgodes, which the Portugall Lord thereof calleth the Greene Cape: they turned about to the right hand on the backe side of our supposed Continent, all along the length of that land which is called S. Augustine, as the Castellanes named it: and a little further to S. Mary, so called of the Portugalls, which extendeth it selfe 5. degrees beyond the æquinocctiall line, and so they came to the Antartick, to the very signe it selfe: where in one of the Decades we sayd that Solisius the Captain of our flecte, running along those shoares, was slaine, with certaine of his consorts, and deuoured by the inhabitantes. That Bay, as they say, is 38. degrees beyond the æquinocctiall to the Antartick. This place was called the Bay of Saint Mary. I haue else where sayd that a Bay is called a gulfe. Messengers being sent from Magaglianus against the streame which fell into the gulfe with one of the ships, & the pinnace of another, they saw three halfe wild, and naked men, two spannes higher then the common stature of men: One of them beeing more hardy then the rest entred the boate. Our men supposed that he would haue allured his companions to the ships, if they intreated him well, when they had him in their hands. Hauing well intertained him with meat & drinke, and cloathing, they sent him backe againe. But none of them came vnto them, neyther returned he any more. Yet they found trees cut with our hatchets, and in the top also of another tree, a Crosse erected, but found no footing of any one of our men. They report wonderfull

S. Mary.

3. halfe wild and
naked men.

The
full
coun
firme
ceiue
water
to the
gulfe
miral
count
north
more
throu
April
Maga
miliar
with M
of plo
he wo
but fe
report
did, th
cient
habita
people
tagone
Saint
antarc
This M
actions
with
Chance
that it
and le
pieces
furthe
mount
the wa
furthe
turnin
of the
moun
the St
ther S
Straig
of Eu
three,
upon
euery
cident
cast at
the re
Antho
abode
Maga
vol

1.
n of the long dis-
hold new hatched
ditions thereunto,
incredible com-
other, with what
azuzingi, and the
ed that huge and
ew it, and almost
f your Holiness,
assed from East to
riued. From the
e, your Holiness
tuen, as you may
he King, to search
nuersant in times
ed the Malachian
istant by sea from
Magaglianus being
ea from Barameda
ppes, the Admirall
ption, and S. Iames
One of the which
s after her depart-
hauen, fro whence
aine other spices
ed still in one of
hall declare heere
naturall hatred and
vnder pretence of
llingly. Of these
en by them. Ar-
e Ilands Gorgodes,
about to the right
of that Iland which
S. Mary, so called
ortiall line, and so
e Decades we said
laine, with certaine
is 38. degrees be-
of Saint Mary. I
t from Magaglianus
e pinnace of ano-
n the common ste-
e boate. Our men
intreated him well,
eat & drinke, and
m, neyther returned
op also of another
They report wonder-
full

full things of the largenes of this riuer, as else where I haue spoken of Maragnonus in the country of Paria to the North. They say, they went 20. leagues vp the riuer, where they af-
firme it is 17. leagues broad. But the mouth thereof (because in their iournie they per-
ceiued that many other riuers flowed into it) they say, is exceeding broad: and that fresh
waters are drunke for a very great space within the Sea: leauing which Bay, a few degrees
to the antarctick, because it now bended to the westerne land, they found another great
gulf, which they named S. Iulian. There was a very safe Harbour there, therefore the Ad-
mirall commanded them to cast ancor. Now the sunne ascending vnto vs, forsooke those
countries: After they had passed the middle of Aries, they were oppressed with cold, as our
northren men are, the sunne passing the halfe part of Libra. In that hauen our men passed
more then 4. months of the sommer, vnder cottages, and sheds vpon the shoare, deteyned
through extremity of cold, and shut in by tempestuous weather. For in the Kalends of
Aprill they tooke that Harbour, and went out the 9. of the Kalends of September. Here
Magaglianus the Portugall dealt cruelly with a certaine man called Iohannes Cartagena, the fa-
miliar friend of the Burgentian Bishop: who by the kinges decree was ioyned in commission
with Magaglianus, and was Vice-admirall of the flete. Him, and a priest (vnder pretence
of plotting to kill him) he set a shoare, with a bagg of bisket, and each of them their sword:
he would haue punished their deuises by death, if peradventure they imagined to kill him:
but fearing the hatred of the Castellanes already conceiued against him, he durst not. Diuers
report this matter diuersly, and other things like vnto this. Some say Magaglianus lawfully
did, that which he did, others taxe him, and ascribe those executions to the generall aun-
cient hatred betwene the Castellanes and Portugues. There, they saw cottages of the in-
habitantes: but it is a barbarous nation, vnarmed, onely couered with skinnes, a runagate
people, without any certaine place of abode, lawlesse, of a large stature, and are called Pa-
tagones. The sunne now returning to those coastes: waying anchor out of that Harbour of
Saint Iulian, the 9. of the Kalendes of September, in the yeare 1521. they descend vnto the
antarctick 14 degrees more, as they say. Heere wee must walke a little vpon plaine ground.
This Magaglianus when hee was a childe, confusedly heard vnder a cloud, in the Portugal
actions, that there lay a straight, and narrow Sea, in those countries, intangled and inclosed
with diuers coastes, and reaches, but which way he was to seeke it, he vnderstoode not.
Chance offered that, which reason directed not: for ther arose a great tempest, insomuch
that it violently carryed one of the ships, and cast her whole vpon some of the next rockes,
and left her hanging there, the men were preserued: but the shipp remained shiuered in
pieces by the violence of the sterme. Beholde now one of the fiue left behind. A little
further on the left hand he had the huge Ocean. On the right hand, vnaccessible snowy
mountains: one of the ships which drew lesse water, seeking an Harbour from the fury of
the waues, drew neere to the land. By chance they saw a narrow straight, and going a little
further in, she light vpon a Bay 4. Spanish leagues broad, and 6. leagues long, the ship re-
turning bringeth tidings of a straight. Heere I omit many smale and trifling things, the rest
of the ships follow: they say that in some place they might cast stones with a sling to eather
mountayne. The countrey is desert, and they affirme that the mountaynes on both sides
of the Straight are beset with Cedar trees. Hauing passed beyond that Bay, they met with ano-
ther Straight, some what broader, yet narrow. After that, another Bay, and then another
Straight, beyond which, there was another Bay, to witt, as two narrow mouthes in the Maps
of Europe, containing a certain large space to the Hellespont: so in this straight ther were
three, with as many large & great spaces. These straights are full of small Ilands, where-
upon beeing always suspicious, and fearing shallowe water, they sayled by those places. But
euery where they found very deepe seas. Nowe that tract or coast bent vnto the aestuall Oc-
cident, which they note to bee extended an hundred and ten leagues in length. While they
cast anchor in a certaine square space of the Sea of that coast, they found nothing worthy
the remembrance. Three of the foure shippes follow their course. The fourth called S.
Anthony, remayned in that square space, their consorts thought shee would follow: but shee
abode still, and gaue her companions the slip, and now returning backe, a long time reuiled
Magaglianus with reproachfull speeches. Wee do not suppose that the Commanders of the

A Riuer.

S. Iulian.

The displeasure
of Magaglianus
against Iohannes
Cartagena.

The Patagones.

A tempest
whereby
the ship was
cast.Another ship,
returning.



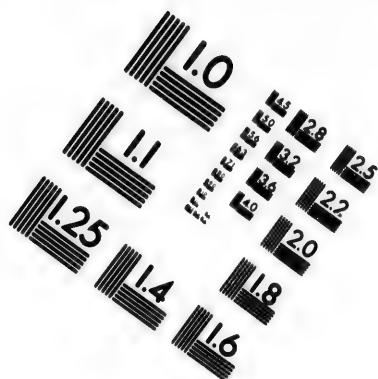
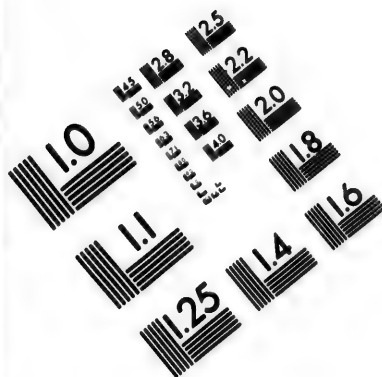
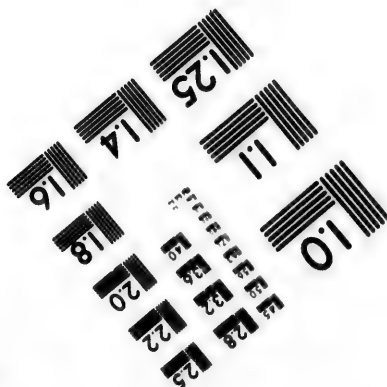
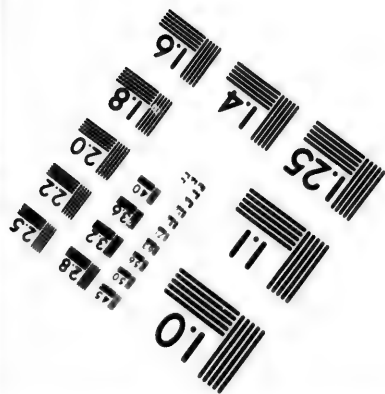
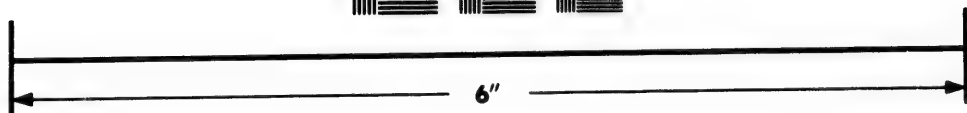
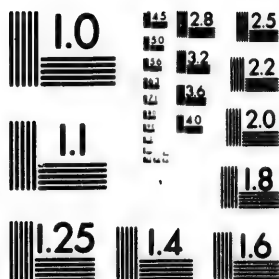


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

1.8 2.0 2.2 2.5 2.8 3.2 3.6 4.0 4.5 5.0 5.6 6.3 7.1 8.0 9.0 10.0 11.2 12.5 14.0 16.0 18.0 20.0 22.5 25.0 28.0 31.5 36.0 40.0 45.0 50.0 56.0 63.0 71.0 80.0 90.0 100.0

1.0 1.1 1.2 1.5 1.8 2.0 2.2 2.5 2.8 3.2 3.6 4.0 4.5 5.0 5.6 6.3 7.1 8.0 9.0 10.0 11.2 12.5 14.0 16.0 18.0 20.0 22.5 25.0 28.0 31.5 36.0 40.0 45.0 50.0 56.0 63.0 71.0 80.0 90.0 100.0

A greates dis-
tresse.

The vnfortunate
Ilandes.

Latrones.

The Iland Bur-
neia.

A strang tree.

Idolaters and
Mahumetans
heere.

Rice.

Presents carried
vpon Elephants.

The Kings pal-
lace.
The Iland Zubo.

The kinge of
Zubo baptised
and submitteth
to the kinge of
Spayne.

ship would suffer such disobedience vnpunished. The rest therfore proceed with 3. ships onely. At length they come out of those straights, for hauing entred into them the 21. of October, they came out the 5. of the Kalendes of December. They say, they had very long dayes at that time, and very short nights: neither is it contrary to the reason of the Sphere. Hauing passed that coast, they tooke the huge Ocean, another Sea. That is to say, on the backside of our supposed Continent, and is ioyned to that Sea, which in the Decades I call the South sea, first found out by Vaschus Nunnez from Darien, the sons of King Comogrus directing him: they say, they liued 3. months, & 20. dayes in that huge Ocean, contenting theselues with the sight of the heauen, and the salt water. They report lamentable thinges of their great wantes, and of the extremity of heate which much vexed them. They confesse that an handful of Rice, for many daies together, was their dayly portion onely, without a morsell of any other meate. And there was such scarcity of potable water, that they were compelled to cast in a third part of salt seawater to boile the Rice, and if perhaps any would drinke it without mixture, hee was forced to shutte his eyes by reason of the greene tainture thereof, and stoppe his nose for the stincke. Sayling through that great sea, to the West, and North, they came to the æquinoctiall line againe, next vnto whiche they founde two worthles Ilandes, which they called the vnfortunate Ilandes, beecause they were vnprofitable, and desert. After that they called the multitude of Ilandes Archipelagus, like our Cyclades in the Ionian Sea: in the beginning of whiche, they went a shoare in manie Ilandes fise hundred leagues distaunt from the comming out of the narrowe Straight, those Ilandes (the auncient name not beeing expressed) they called Latrones, because they stole whatsoever they coulde lay hand on, although our menne quietly suffered it: as that wandring kinde of theues, whiche the Italian calleth Zingari, who fayne themselves to bee Egyptians: amonge the thinges which were stolne, the boate, wherein our menne went a shoare from the shippes, when they hadd scarce turned their backs, yet they caried her away: but many of them beeing slaine first, they brought her againe. It is a naked people, and halfe brutish. In that place a tree groweth which beareth Coccus. The greatest of those Ilandes is Burneia, which without doubting, they write to be two hundred and foure and fiftie leagues in circuit about. In the Harbour of this Ilande they say, a tree groweth whose leaues falling, goe creeping like a worme: I suppose some vitall spirite swellles between both sides of the leafe, which like a puff of winde that lasteth for a smal time, may moue the leaues. They vnderstood that there were 2. kindes of Religion there, Idolaters, and Mahumetans, agreeing well inough one with another. Heards of oxen & Buffalas are nourished there, flocks also of goates, and great plenty of our country fatted foule are there maintained, but no sheepe. They want wheate, barlie, and wine, but haue abundance of Rice, that is their bread, and of Rice they make diuers daintie dishes. The Burneian King, and our men, interchangeably saluted each other with acceptable presents. The King sent his presets to our men vpon 2. Elephants: and the next day after, 32. sortes of dainty meats brought vpon the shoulders of noblemen: they say that the city of this Prince consisteth of 25. thousand houses: but made of wood, except the Kings pallace which (they say) is built of stone. Many little Ilandes lie about Burneia: among the which there are two, whereof the one is called Zubo, and the other Matan of the cheife towne thereof so called. Magaglianus procured vnto himselfe the loue & fauour of the king of Zubo, by bestowing certaine presents of our country commodities vpon him, acceptable vnto him, because they had not bin seene before & were estranged from their knowledge. He subiected the King to Baptisme, and to the obedience of Cesar. Moreouer, leauing the ships in the hauen of Zubo, he passed ouer with their skiffes, & the Canowes of that Prouince, and certaine Zubensian soldiers, into the Iland Matan, so called of the towne Matan, which lieth within the view therof, 4. leagues only distant from thence. He endeouored by Interpreters to perswade the King of Matan, that he would subiect himselfe to the great king of Spaine, and to the king of Zubo, & to pay tribute to the great king of Spaine, he answered he would obey him, but not the king of Zubo. Magaglianus made a pray of the town next vnto the kings seate, and wholly consumed it with fire, to the number of some 50. houses: and returned backe to Zubo with a pray of victuals (whereof there was some scarcity in Zubo) and of diuers implements & furniture

ceed with 3. ships
to them the 21. of
they had very long
on of the Sphere.
is to say, on the
the Decades I call
of King Comogrus
Ocean, contenting
amenable things
them. They con-
tion onely, without
er, that they were
erhaps any would
he Greene tainture
sea, to the West,
they founde two
were vnprofitable,
like our Cyclades
manie Ilandes five
those Ilandes (the
le whatsoever they
g kinde of theues,
ians: amonge the
from the shippes,
ut many of them
halfe brutish. In
Ilandes is Burneia,
leagues in circuit
causes falling, goe
sides of the leafe,
ues. They vnder-
anes, agreeing well
re, flocks also of
d, but no sheepe.
their bread, and
en, interchangeably
our men vpon 2.
on the shoulders of
sand houses: but
stone. Many little
ne is called Zubo,
procured vnto him-
ents of our country
in scene before &
e, and to the obe-
passed ouer with
soldiers, into the
therof, 4. leagues
e King of Matan,
ng of Zubo, & to
but not the king
e, and wholly con-
ke to Zubo with a
ers implements &
furniture

furniture for houses. But the greater parte of them the Zubenses (enemies to them of Matan) tooke from him. Eight dayes after that, Magaglianus returning after the same manner, leauing his shippes, attempted by force of armes, and assault, to win Matan the kings towne it selfe. The king refused to obey the command of Magaglianus, brought hether by euill destinie: and went out armed with the inhabitants of the towne to meet him. Besides weapons of that prouince, of canes, and wood hardened in the fire, this king hath gotten long speares: for the Sericæ, & marchants of the countries of the Siensæ do often trade with these Ilands. To make short he was slaine with 7. of his companions, by the king, and 22. wounded. So that the good Portugall Magaglianus ended his greedy desire of spices. They that remained, returning to their companions to Zubo, were inuited by the Zubensian king. At that banquet Iohannes Serranus (the principall Pilot of the Ocean, of whom I spoke in my former Decades) now master of one shipp, & another master of another, with some 10. more perhaps of their companions, were present. In the meane space, about some 40. others of the mariners wandered through the Iland. The kings armed troops lying in ambuscado sally forth vpon them while they were at dinner, & slew some, and kept the masters of the ships aliue, and stripping them starke naked drew them openly to the shoare, supposing that others would haue come from the ships with their skiffes, to take them in. They that kept the ships durst not go vnto them. So leauing their cōpanions, these vnfortunate men set saile. I inquired diligently of them that returned, & among the rest, of a yong man of Genoa, one Martinus de Iudicibus, who was present at al things, what crime cōmitted moued the Zubensian king to attemp so cruel & wicked a deed. They suppose that the defouling of their women caused this perturbation: for they are iealous. These are the Ilands (in my iudgement) wherof many Authors report many things: that thousands of Ilands, som say 3. thousands, others increase it, are not far distant from the Indian shoares. Of those Ilands that lie about Burneia, there is one, wherein are 2. towns, Buturan, & Calegam: there they were peaceably receiued. Fro the same Iland they saw another, which the Caleganenses shewed thē with their finger, where the Buturanenses, & Caleganenses said, that ther was so great plenty of gold in the sand of the Sea, that the sand only being sifted through a sieue, they might picke out graines of gold, which were as big as a filberd nutt, or little lesse: the rest they contemne, as nothing worth: with in the view of this Iland there is another, famous for two statly towns: Vnidanaus, & Chipicus, of the which, the one looketh to the South, and the other to the North. The Southerne land ingendreth Cinamon, the other gold. They gaue our men somewhat of either, for exchange of commodities. To these Ilands (as I haue already sayd) marchants of the Sericæ, and Siensenses, & other countries of India, vse often to resort, barter for gold, and precious stones, and other things: and giue them webbs of linnen or woollen cloth, and other things seruing for apparell, and humane ornament, and also for the vse of warre. From the prospect of these Ilands, those Malucha Ilandes so much desired, are 175. leagues distant to the æquinoctial, they account them 10. degrees: why they should beate their braines about these computations, I see no reason. The ancient Philosophers, will haue a degree consist of 60. Italian miles, whereof euery one includeth a thousande paces by measure. These say, that a league containeth 4. of those miles by sea, and but three by land. If we take the computation of leagues, after the maner of the Spaniah sea men, euery degree containeth 15. leagues: but they, contrary to the opinion of all men, say that a Degree containeth 17. leagues, and a halfe. Let them vnderstand themselves, for I vnderstand them not. Let vs come to the Maluchas: at length they attayned them. There are five principall Ilands of them, either vnder the æquinoctial line, or next vnto it, almost of an equall circuit or compasse: euery one of them is contained within the compasse of 4. 5. or 6. leagues at the most. By a certaine instinct of Nature, an high hill ariseth in euery one of them. In them the Cloues naturally growe and increase. The huge land named Gilolo seemeth to inclose them all five vpon the Antarctick side. Cloues also grow in Gilolo, but somewhat sharpe, and halfe wilde: as it happeneth of chesnuts, & oliues of wild oliue trees not grafted, but in all those small Ilands there are aromatically, and pleasant fruits and spices. But it is a most delightfull thing to heare, by what meanes in their

Magaglianus
came by the
Iunge of Matan.

40 men slayne
and lost in the
Ile Zubo.

A multitude of
Ilandes.

Buturan and
Calegam.

Gold.

Vnidanaus and
Chipicus two
statly townes.

They come to
the Maluchas.

Cloues,
Gilolo.

Fruits and
spices.

The opinion of
the inhabitants
concerning the
vigor of their
clouds.

Rice.
A third ship
broken.

Those Ilandes
happy, and
why.
Bread of the pith
of old date trees.

A skirry kinde
of bread be sure.

Bread of the
grayne of Tiph.

A fatall rule.
Suger.

African apples.

Nasturtium
aquaticum.

Anapellus or
scollis bane.

iudgement that aromaticall vigor is put into the Cloue. The inhabitants say, that a certayne Cloude ariseth thrice every day (they say it is sent from Heauen) early in the Morning, at noone, and in the euening, which couereth the toppes of the Hilles which bring forth cloues, so that, at that time the toppes cannot bee seene: and after a short time that cloud is dissolued. And the trees of cloues, which are almost equall, & like to bay trees, they say it is an argument, that they become fruitfull with that spirit of breathing, because that cloude neuer descendeth to the plaine of those hills: nor the trees transplanted from the hills prosper, or bring forth sauory fruite. Euery Iland preserueth the plaine for the sowing and bringing forth of Rice. They went a shoare in one of them, by whose king they were peaceably, & honorably intertained, but with 2. ships only: for the third, they brak in peices, because they wanted men, to gouerne more, after the slaughter of the Admirall, and his companions, and that fatall banquet. The ships which were called the Trinity, and the Victory, remained safe. This nation is almost naked, and vse breeches made of the inner rine of trees to couer their secret parts only. But that king told vs, that therefore he ioyfully receiued our menne for his guests, because that a few months before, he saw in the circle of the moone, a forraigne nation come from sea plainly, & confessed that our men differed not one jot frō that image which he saw: they say, that they suppose these Ilandes are 5000. leagues distant from Hispaniola, which containe 20000. Italian miles: but I thinke they are deceived. Our men say those Ilandes are happy, although they want our bread, and wine, and beefe, and mutton, because they are contented with their Rice, of the which they make a thousande sorts of meate. They haue another kinde of common bread of the inner pith of certaine olde date trees falne downe, withered with long continuance, as it vsually falleth out in thicke woodes standing vpon mountaines, remoued from resort of men, in the which great trees fall, smitten with the violence of whirlwindes, or earthy substance fayling in the rootes, through long space of yeers, and the length of trees increasing, which require greater strength of rootes, then the earth it selfe can giue them, to sustaine the tree. How soeuer it be, many lie in the woods, and grow old, & are eaten with the wormes. Such is that pith of the Date tree, of which they make their common bread. They cut the pith into square proportions, then presently they grinde it into meale, and dry it, and lastly they kneade it, & bake it. They brought pieces thereof made in the forme of a bricke. I desired to tast it, but nothing was more rough, nothing more vnsauory: that must bee the foode of poore miserable men, who haue not ability to procure rice: because they are ignorāt in tillage of the ground. And I myself haue seen the inhabitants of y^e mountaines in the montanous countries, & villages, eate a little more sauory breade, almost of a blacke color, of the grayne of Tiph, commonly called Spanish Centenum, or Millium or Panicum, or some other worse then these. It is a rule in the arbitrement of the wheele turning about, that fewe should be satisfied, many famished, some haue delicates, not many foode. Yet men liue euery where, for nature is contented with a litle, so we be vsed to a litle. They are carefull to maintaine goates & all kinde of crāmed foule: they haue also sweete Canes, out of which suger is taken. They haue also African apples, which the Italians & the Spaniard call Pomegranats & Oringes & Citrons of all sortes. Among these apples, the Spaniard calleth Limas Limones, Narangias Torongias, Cidras, Cidrones which differe amonge themselues. Among herbes also why should I call Nasturtium Aquaticū herbs growing in y^e little streams of y^e fountaines? If the cōmon people of Spaine plainly & without circūlocutiō call thē by one name Berron and y^e Italian Cresones? And which prouoketh more to disdaine amonge those herbes, a certaine poysonous killing herbe (I know not what) groweth, of the Spaniard called Anapellus. One being demanded (who careth to store vp nothing in the treasure of his minde, but to be a Latinist) whether it might bee lawfull to call it Anapellus, because the Latine tongue wanteth that woorde, & it may very well bee taken elsewhere? he will wryth the Nose, and with a certaine graue and stately countenance whisper and buzz it into your eares, that it ought to be called woolfes bane. Therefore thus in my iudgement with the good likinge & leaue of those fine witted fellows, the Ilands of Malucha abounde with Limons, Oringes, Citrons, Pomegranats, and pott herbes. I made mētū of Cresones or Berrin,

say, that a cer-
 early in the Morn-
 hills which bring
 a short time that
 like to bay trees,
 breathing, because
 asplanted from the
 ine for the sowing
 king they were
 ird, they brak in
 the Admirall, and
 the Trinity, and the
 made of the inner
 erefore he ioyfully
 saw in the circle of
 ar men differed not
 llands are 5000.
 t I thinke they are
 bread, and wine,
 e which they make
 d of the inner pith
 as it usually falleth
 men, in the which
 nance sayling in the
 hich require greater
 ee. How soeuer it
 Such is that pith of
 with into square pro-
 y kneade it, & bake
 d to tast it, but no-
 of poore miserable
 illage of the ground.
 countries, & villages,
 ne of Tipha, com-
 worse then these.
 should be satisfied,
 ery where, for na-
 to maintaine goates
 nich suger is taken.
 all Pomegranats &
 leth Limas Limones,
 es. Among herbes
 ms of y fountains?
 by one name Berroa
 monge those herbes,
 paniard called Ana-
 easure of his minde,
 h, because the Latine
 ? he will wryth the
 d buzz it into your
 iudgement with the
 lucha abounde with
 cētō of Cressons or
 Berris,

Berris, & Anapellus, not without cause, for whē in the first beginning of supper we eate y^e Of the force of this hearbe.
 herbe with salt, vineger, & oyle: my deere friēd Fernandus Rodericus (whose helpe your
 Holines sometimes vsed by persuasiō of y^e Emperours Maiesty) lyght vpō Anapellus which
 as soone as he had takē, he fell flat downe in such a taking as if he had eaten Hemlock, or
 Libberds bane, but we presētly preuēted daunger of death with Treacle & Mithridate: Yet
 he liued a long time halfe benumbed. Is not Anapellus a pleasing & well sōunding word,
 when they will clatter & babble y^e it ought to be called the strāgler of y^e wolfe by a filthy
 circumlocution? They make not wine of grapes, which the Maluchas llandes haue not but
 make very pleasant wines of diuers kindes of fruites, especially of one. There is also with
 them and with the inhabitants of our supposed continent, a tree almost a Date tree in like-
 nesse of forme, but very vnlike in the manner of bearinge fruit. This tree bringeth forth 12.
 bunches of berries, sometimes more, euen to the number of 20: in euery bunch clusters as
 of the grape, but couered with a thousande rindes: euery cluster being piled, is very like
 vnto a smale Melō, but of a shelly rinde or barke, almost as hard as a shell. They call those
 fruites Coccus, & this Coccus is wrapped with in more outward curious wouen works, then
 the date, which is to be eaten, with the same litle ribbes, certaine networks bindinge them
 together: and those skinnes are to be taken away with noe lesse labour, thē dates are piled.
 These Cocci being opened, yeeld meate & drinke, for they finde thē full of sweete & pleasāt
 liquor. Within the barke or rind a certaine spongy masse of the thicknes of two fingers, is
 nourished sticking within the shell in whitenes & softnes like vnto butter, or suet, but
 sweeter in tast: That lump is cutt a way from the inside of the shell, being very fit to bee
 eaten. If it remaine but a few dayes in the vessell a litle rouled vp together, it is sayd to
 melt, & turne into oyle, sweeter then oyle of oliues, and is very wholesome for such as are
 sicke. Another profitable seruice of nature is receiued from this tree. They pierse the
 sides of y^e tree where the leaues spring out: whereupon they say that potable liquor dis-
 stilleth forth by droppes, into vessels set vnder thē, which liquor is most pleasing to the
 tast, & agreeable with health. They apply theselues to takinge of fish, whereof those Seas
 euery where ingender many sorts, and among the rest, one very monstrous, somewhat lesse
 then a cubit, all belly, with a backe not fensed with scales, but with a very hard skinnē, with
 a swines snowte, armed in the forehead with two straight bony hornes, and with a diuied
 backe, bunchinge out, & bony. The Kinge to whom our menn went a shoare, beleuing that
 they were brought thether by Gods helpe and direction: demanded of our men what they
 desired, or what they sought? They say, they desire spices. What we haue (saith he) you
 shall obtaine. With that he calleth his tributary llanders vnto him, and commandeth euery
 one of them to shew their heapes of cloues vnto our men, & suffer them at their pleasure
 to take them away, yet riuing honest contentment for the same: for when they be ripe,
 they lay them together on heapes at home, expecting marchants, as it falleth out in all
 others marchandize. Heere they are carried to the Collocitean, Cochinean, Canenorian, and
 Malachean faires, in certaine great shippes, which they call lunckes. So doe they likewise
 of Pepper, Ginger, Cinnamon, and other Spices which effeminate the mindes of menn,
 needeles, and vnecessary allurements: but in these 5. llandes of the Maluchas noe other
 Spices grow, saue Cloues. Yet those llands which bring forth other delicacies are not farre
 distant frō those, as the inhabitants of the Maluchas told vs, & had learned by an experiment
 of pyrac. For when they set sayle to the Maluchas from the great llande Burneia, and
 the rest of the llands lying round about, in one of the which they slewe the Admirall Ma-
 gaglianus: as they sayled, they suddenly light on a great ship of those prouinces vnpre-
 pared, called a luncke, laden with marchandize, amonge which they found some store of all
 other spices, but in smale quantity, yet very perfect, and well conditioned, because they
 were new gathered: nor dare those shippes passe ouer the longe reaches of the Sea, because
 their shippes are not built with so greate art, that they can brooke those stormes of the Sea,
 which ours indure: nor are their marriners so skilfull, that they knowe how to sayle, when
 the wind bloweth not directly in the sterne. That shipp brought her burdē of the cōtry
 prouision into another lland next adioyninge: to witt, Rise, Coccus, wherof I spake a litle
 before,

Of the tree
 Coccus, & the
 properties
 thereof.

A fish of a mo-
 nstrous shape.

Fayres of Spices.

before, hennes, geese, & many things else to be eaten, & some store also of graine of golde : with these profits & reuenues they prepared themselves dainty dinners, at $\frac{1}{2}$ cost of innocents passing by without suspitiō. They therefore determined to lade the two shippes that remained, with Cloues : & because they found not such store with $\frac{1}{2}$ kinge, to fill both shippes the King himselfe speedily roweth ouer to the bordring Ilandes within vewe, for, of 5. fower of them may see one another. The fift is a litle further from the rest, not so farr as the eye of mann may diuerne but a litle more. Behold two ships filled with Cloues newly gathered from the trees themselves, from which they brought also the bowghes, each hauinge their cloues vpon them. It was a delightfull thing to all Courtiers to see those branches & to smell those little berries on their mother boughes. That sent differeth not meanelly from the smell of old Cloues which the Apothecaries sell. I had many boughes of them that were brought : and I imparted many vnto many, to be sent vnto diuers countreyes. There remaine yet a few with me, which I will keepe vntill I vnderstand whether any of them came vnto your Holines his handes. Behold two shippes laden with Cloues. Let vs declare what followed thereupon. One of the two called the Trinitie, putrified, was eaten through, & rotted with wormes (which the Venetian calleth Bissa, and the Spaniard Broma) & was boared so full of holes, as the water rann through her sides, & Pumpe as through the holes of a Siue. Wherefore shee durst not committ her selfe to the Sea for such a longe voyage, till she were new repaired. The Trinitie therefore remained there still vntill this day, but whether shee be safe or no, wee knowe not. Of fise shippes therefore two only returned. This which is called the Victory returned now : and the other called Saint Anthony, the former yeere, but fewe of the menn. It remaineth that wee declare, what way shee returned : For after three yeeres (a fewe dayes only excepted) from her departure shee came backe another way, by euill fortune leauinge all the cheife menn behinde her. But this shipp (which was neuer heard of before, nor neuer attempted from the beginninge of the worlde) went about the whole Parallel, and compassed all the Earth. What would Græcia haue fained vpon this incredible Nouelty, if it had happened to any Græcian ? The Argonautick shippe (which without blushing and derision they suspiciously fable to be carryed vp to heauen) may say, what hath she effected ? If we consider what $\frac{1}{2}$ ship hath done, going out of the citty Argos into Pontus, to Oeta, & Medea, with their Nobles Hercules, Theseus, and Iason, I knowe not what shee hath done : for it is yet vnknown what that golden fleece was but what the distance of the iourney frō Græcia to Pontus was, childre haue learned it with yong Grammarians. That distace is much lesse thē a Gyantes nayle. But wee must labour to perswade men, how it might be that shee compassed the world : for it is hard to be beleued. Let vs take prooffe thereof from hence. Let your Holines cōmand a solid rōūd Sphere to be brought, wherein the figure of the whole world is described. There let your Holines take the Herculean narrow passage called the straight of Gibraltar for your guide. Goinge out on the left hande, the Fortunate Ilāds commonly called the Canaries, are the first Ilandes they meete with. Betweene them & the shoare of Affrica saylinge directly South, they meete with other Ilandes called the Ilands of $\frac{1}{2}$ Greene Cape, by the Portugalles who are Lords thereof, but in Latin $\frac{1}{2}$ Medusean Gorgones. Here your Holines is to marke with an Attick minde, for from hence the grounde of this admiration is taken. The Portugalles from the Hesperides turned about wholly to the left hand, and passe the equinoctiall line, and goe beyond the Tropick also of Capricorne, euen to the furthest ende of Montes Lunæ : called the Cape of Bona Esperansa : as they commonly cal it : from the Equator 34. degrees some, deduct two. From the pointe of that promontory, they returne backe to the East, and sayle by the mouthes of the Eritrean Sea, and the Persian gulfe and by the huge mouthes of Indus, and Ganges, as farr as golden Chersonesus, which (as we sayd) they call Malucha. Behold the halfe part of $\frac{1}{2}$ Circle of $\frac{1}{2}$ world. All Cosmographers by a perpetuall accompt haue set it downe in writinge, that, that is $\frac{1}{2}$ space of 12. howres, of the 24. which the sunne runneth. Now let vs measure the halfe which remaineth. We must therefore returne to the Gorgodes. This ours litle flecte of 5. shippes, leauinge those Ilands on the left hand, went directly to the right hande, turninge sterne to sterne to thē Portugalles, on the backe

The Trinitie
and what befell
her.

What way the
Victory returned
how shee com-
passed the earth.

A comparison
betwixt the
Argonautick
ship so much
renowned by
antiquity and
this.

The prooffe from
the sphere and
cōpass.

side

The 5th Decade.

f graine of golde :
at 5 cost of inno-
the two shippes that
e, to fill both shippes
we, for, of 5. fower
to so farr as the eye
ues newly gathered
each hauinge their
branches & to smell
nely from the smell
that were brought:
There remaine yet a
em came vnto your
clare what followed
ough, & rotted with
was boared so full of
of a Siue. Where-
e, till she were new
out whether shee be
med. This which is
e former yeere, but
ed: For after three
cke another way, by
pp (which was neuer
ide) went about the
e fained vpon this
tick shippe (which
to heauen) may say,
ut of the city Argos
and Iason, I knowe
e was but what the
it with yong Gram-
must labour to per-
ard to be beleueed.
d roud Sphere to be
et your Holines take
guide. Goinge out
are the first Ilandes
ly South, they meete
alles who are Lords
marke with an Attick
Portugalles from the
ociall line, and goe
Montes Lunæ: called
or 34. degrees some,
o the East, and sayle
the huge mouths of
) they call Malucha.
perpetuall accompt
24. which the sunne
therefore returne to
nds on the left hand,
ugalles, on the backe
side

side of that lande of ours, which we call the supposed Continent, whose first entrance is in the Iurisdiction of the Portugues, & this flete went so farr, 5 (as wee now say) 5 way they attained more then 50. degrees of the Antarctick: I note not the particular number because they differ in the report of the degrees, although but litle. Followinge the West, as the Portugalles did the East, they made those Ilands of the Maluchas behinde them which are not far distant from that where Ptolomeus placeth Gatigara, & the greates gulfe: that wide & open entrance to the country of the Sium. What shall I say of the great gulfe, and Gatigara which (they say) they found not so situated, as they are described by Ptolomy, for the present I omitt them happily else where I shall speake thereof more at large. Let vs returne to the cōpassing of the Paralel, behold the golden Chersonesus found out a cleane contrary way to that of the Portugues: and this shipp (Queene of the Argonautikes) returneth the same way within the vewe of golden Chersonesus, holding the same course that the Portugues did: this shippe arriuinge at the Hesperian Gorgodes, in great want and necessity of all things, sendeth her boate a shoare with 13. menn, to desire water, and somewhat to cate, yet not freely. There the Portugues officers of their King (who supposed their right eye should bee plucked out, if any other Prince gott the profit of Spices) made stay of the boate and menn against the league made from the beginninge of the diuision, established & confirmed by Pope Alexander the sixt: and the Kinges Gouvernours of the Hesperides attempted to take the shippe it selfe, which had bin easily done. But the mariners understandinge of the successe of their companions, before the Portugalls could prepare their shippes for the encounter wayinge ancor, they say, they fledd away, leauinge 13. of their companions in the power of the Portugues, of 31. which they brought thether, of 60. menn taken into the shippe at the Maluchas, but the Portugues settinge them at liberty, by cōmandement of their King sent thē home againe. If I would recite their greiuances, daungers, hunger, thirst, watchinges, & painfull labours in pumpinge out the Sea water day and night which came in through the open chinkes and holes, I should insert too longe a discourse, let this therefore suffice for that shipp which was fuller of hoales than any siue, and for those 18. persons which shee brought, who were more carion leane, then any staruelling horse. They say they were violently driuen so farr out of their course, that they affirme they rann, 14. thousand leagues, saylinge now hether, now thether, although they confesse the whole compasse of the Earth is lesse then 8. thousand, because they knewe not, what way (contrary to the course of the Portugalls) these desired Ilands were to bee sought. Meanes are made, that such enterprises should not come to nought: what shalbee determined, and how the matter shalbe concluded with the Portugalles, who complaine that they shall sustaine exceedinge losse by this meanes, wee will hereafter signifie. They say that the Maluchas are within the limits assigned to either king, to witt, 5 kings of Castele, & the Portugall, by Pope Alexāder 5 sixt: they say, they are townes, & cōuntry villages which bring 5 profitts of their lads to 5 Malachiā, Colocuteā & Cochinean marts, as generally it falleth out with country men, who bring such necessary things as country men nourish and maintaine at home, to sell thē at cittyes & townes. But we haue fōūd 5 the Maluchas haue bin vsurped by them, because it is without that line, diuidinge frō East to West, from either Pole. That is best knowne vnto your Holines, because this question was often discussed before you. One thing remaineth which will fill 5 Readers with great admiration, especially those, who thinke they haue 5 wandering courses of the Heauens familiar before hande. When this ship came backe to the Gorgodes, 5 saylers thought it had bin Wednesday, but found it to be Thursday. Whereupō they say that in that wandering course, they lost one day, in that space of 3. yeeres. But I replyed to them your preists peraduenture deceiued you by omitting 5 day either in their Celebrations, or in 5 accōūt of howers. They answered me againe what doe you think it possible that all, especially wise men, & wel experienced could fal into so foule an Error? it is a common case, to keep a ready account of 5 dayes and monthes, because many had with thē bookes of the cōputatiō of howers, & knewe very well what was dayly to be accōūt. In the howers especially of the blessed Virgin, to whom we prostrated our selues euery momēt, desiring her protectiō: in these, & in

Golden Cherso-
nesus.

They arrive at
the Hesperian
Gorgodes.

The direct cō-
passe of the
earth les then
8. thousand
leagues.

The Maluchas
to belong to the
kinge of Spaine.

The losse of a
day in this voy-
age a strange
thinge to bee
noted.

An Excellent
and very prob-
able reason for
the loss of a
day.

in the commemoration of the dead, many spent $\frac{1}{2}$ vacant time. Direct your thoughts there-
fore another way: without all questiō wee lost a day. These remēber this, others other
things, & diuers diuers things, but all agree, that they had lost aday. I added moreouer:
my friends, remember $\frac{1}{2}$ yeere following after your departure (which was 1590) was leape
yeere, least peraduenture you were deceiued thereby. They affirmed, that they gaue Pigmean
February 29 dayes that yeere, and forgot not the leape yeere at $\frac{1}{2}$ Kalendes of March. These
18 persons which remained, were altogether vnlearned: so they say all, one after another.
Being much disquieted and trobled with that care, I conferred with Gasper Contarinus (a
man not meanelly instructed in all kinde of literature) who then was Embassadour with the
Emperour for his famous commonwealth of Venice. Whereby wee know (discussinge the
matter with diuers arguments) that this strange report, neuer heard before, might very well
be, after this manner. This Castellāe ship set sayle frō $\frac{1}{2}$ llāds of Gorgodes towards $\frac{1}{2}$ West,
which way also the Sunne goeth. Thence it came to passe, that hauinge followed the Sunne,
they had euery day longer, according to the quantity of the way they made, wherefore
hauinge perfit the Circle, which the Sunne performeth in 24. howers towards the West, it
cōsumed & spent one whole day, therefore it had fewer dayes by one, then they who for
that space of time, kept one certaine place of abode. But if the Portugall Fleete, which
sayleth towards the East, should returne againe vnto the Gorgodes, continuing their course
vnto the East, by this way and Nauigatiō, now first fōūd & discouered to mortall men, no
man wold doubt seeing they shuld haue shorter dayes, hauing perfit $\frac{1}{2}$ Circle, but that 24.
whole howres shuld remaine vnto thē ouer & aboue, and so one whole day, wherefore they
should reckon more by one: and so if either fleete, to witt, the Castellane and the Portugall,
had set sayle the same day from the Gorgodes, and the Castellane had sayled towards the
West, and the Portugalles had towards the East, turninge sterne to sterne, and had returned
to the Gorgodes, by these diuers wayes, in the same space of time, and at $\frac{1}{2}$ same moment,
if that day had bin Thursday to the Gorgodes, it had bin Wednesday to the Castellanes, to
whom a whole day was consumed into longer dayes. But to the Portugalles, to whom by
shorteninge of the dayes, one day remained ouer & aboue the same day should be Friday.
Let Philosophers more deeply discusse this matter, we yeld these reasons for the present.
We haue now spoaken sufficiently of the Parallel compassed, and of the llāds nourishinge
spices, and of a day lost, and of strange countryes. Now let vs at length come to the
affaires of Tenustitan, which I will shortly touch in as few wordes as I cann, because I am
now grievous, and troublesome to my selfe through so great a labour, by reason of fadinge
old age in whose greedy talons your Holines left me almost faintinge: which indeuoureth
with speedy flight to thrust me downe to that more greedy and deuouringe gulfe of his
crooked aged Sister, as if I should more quietly walke through the pathes of this cloyster.

The Eight Chapter.

1511.

Cortes settled in
Tascuco a great
city.

The Tascalte-
cans came the
roytes of the
Bergintines vnto
their shoulders
to Tascuco.

OF the casting of our menn out of the Laky city Tenustitan, or by what meanes, after
so great an ouerthrow through the ayde of the borderinge enemyes of the Tenustitanes,
they began to gather strength againe, hath bin sufficiently spoaken: Let vs now therefore
at one cast passe ouer to $\frac{1}{2}$ neighbourhood of $\frac{1}{2}$ lake omirtinge meane actions. In a city of
8. thousande houses (but consi-tinge of vnmeasurable suburbes reaching euen to the lake
18. leagues frō Tascalteca) called Tazcuco, Cortes with a mighty army settled his abode.
The Tazcucane citizens taught by the example of their neighbours, durst not deny him,
least they shuld be made a praye. Cortes had left shippwrightes in Tascalteca, to make 13.
Bergantines (as we mentioned before) while he by warring, subdued the bordering ene-
myes round about. As soone as hee first settled his army in Tascuco, he commaunded the
loyntes of $\frac{1}{2}$ Bergantines to be brought, which were carried boorde by boorde, or peece by
peece vpon the shoulders of $\frac{1}{2}$ Tascaltecas and Guazuzingi, neither did they vnwillingly vn-
dertake $\frac{1}{2}$ labour & paines, so cruell is their hatred against the Tenustitans that they account
all trauaile & paines whatsoeuer delightfull, directed to the destruction of the Tenustitanes.
Behold a thinge not easy for the people of Rome to haue done, whē their estate most flo-
rished,

our thoughts there-
this, others other
I added moreouer:
as 1590) was leape
they gaue Pigmean
es of March. These
one after another.
asper Contarinus (a
mbasadour with the
w (discussinge the
re, might very well
des towards f West,
followed the Sunne,
y made, wherefore
towards the West, it
e, then they who for
rtugall Fleete, which
ntinuing their course
to mortall men, no
y Circle, but that 24.
day, wherefore they
ne and the Portugall
sayled towards the
rne, and had returned
d at f same moment,
to the Castellanes, to
tugalles, to whom by
ay should be Friday.
asons for the present.
he Islands nourishinge
length come to the
I cann, because I am
by reason of fadinge
: which indeuoureth
nouringe gulfes of his
nes of this cloyster.

by what meanes, after
of the Tenustitanes,
Let vs now therefore
actions. In a city of
ning euen to the lake
my settled his abode.
durst not deny him,
ascatlaca, to make 13.
d the bordering ene-
p, he commanded the
y boorde, or peece by
d they vnwillingly vn-
titans that they account
on of the Tenustitanes.
their estate most flo-
rished,

rished. From Tascuco to f lake runneth a smale riuer, each bancke where of is fenced with
houses standinge together on a rowe with orchardes lying betweene thē. In the meane sea-
so while the ioyntes of the Bergantines were set together, and whilst the oares, and all the
flagges were makinge, he commanded a Trench to be cut fro Tascuco to the lake, for the
space of 3. Italian miles and 4 fathom deepe somewhere, most strongly fortified with their
bulwarkes, which might receaue a Riuer, to carry the Bergantines to the lake and within the
space of 50. dayes with 8000. continuall pioners of the menn of that prouince, he finished
the worke. But when both the Trenches were ended and the Bergantines framed, and set toge-
ther, he burned and destroyed many cittyes both on the lande and standinge vpon lakes,
whereby hee was molested when he fledd away: so that the Tenustitanes durst not now
peepe out, nor ioyne battayle with our menn in open field. The 13. Bergantines beinge
launched in the lake by that admirable worke of cuttinge of a Trench, the Tenustitans sawe
their present ruine and destruction: yet forced by necessity they tooke courage. Vnder-
standinge of the comming of the Bergantines into the Lake, an huge multitude of boates
in an instāt of time, with armed warriours came speedily rowing to the Bergantines, they
say, that in a trice, there were 5. thousand present, which also the citizens reported after the
victory obtained: the boates comming towards them, by force of the ordinance planted
in the prowes, and sides of the Bergantines were dispersed euen as little clouds by fierce
windes. So wandring and routing in the open Sea of the lake, they shrewdly molested and
vexed the city with the Bergantines. In a few dayes space Cortes tooke away from the
citty their fresh riuer waters, their conduits beinge torne asunder by Christopher Olit: and
that no prouision of victuall might be brought from any place to them that were besieged,
hee compassed the city with three Armyes: with one from Tascuco, by Astapalappa, which
he destroyed vtterly, because it was more mighty then the rest, & at that time the an-
cient seate of Mutezumaz brother. Cortes himselfe had the command thereof with more
then threescore thousand warriours, as they say: for many more then he desired both for the
hope of booty, and liberty, came now flocking to him from all the prouinces: so that Cortes
himselfe kept the bridge which came from Astapalappa to the Princely city, whereof men-
tion was made beefore. And fighting by little and little the enemy withdrawinge themselues,
by stronge hande, and by force of the ordinance, and the horse beefore and by the helpe
and fauor of the Brigantines on the sides, hee got the bridge as far as the Castle, whereof
wee speake in the meetinge of the Kinge Mutezumaz, with our menn, where wee described
that Castle to bee fortified with two townes, buttinge vpon two bridges, which are ioynd
vpon the arches thereof. In f place Cortes pitched his Campe, & by f meanes possessed
f entrāce of either bridge. On f contrary he commanded other capes to be placed for de-
fence of āother greate bridge on f North, ouer which he gaue the charge to Gonsalus San-
doualus, a soldier to execute iustice which the Spaniard called Alguazill. And ouer f third
army incamped on another side of the city hee committed the charge to Petrus Aluaradus.
They say, that those 3. armyes consisted of one hundred & twenty thousand soldiers. So
the miserable city compassed on euery side with Enemies, indured extreame want of all
thinges: and was no lesse wasted and consumed through the ambition of a fewe (whose
greedy desire of souerainty drew the vnhappy people to that misery) then it was afflicted
by the enemy. The people might easily haue bin perswaded to subiect their necke vnto our
yoke, but that the kinges sisters sonne who vsurped the kingdom, and the pride of his
Nobles, withstoode it. For 70. dayes together both before and behinde it was continually
vexed & molested with incursions, and assaults. Within the streets of the city it selfe,
our men returning to the Campe toward the Euening they write, that 500. and sometimes a
thousand were slaine, at euery encounter: the more cruell the slaughter was so much the
more plentifully and daintily the Guazuzingi, Tascaltecanes, and the rest of the auxiliary
prouincials, supped, who vse to bury their enemies which fall in battaile in their belly.
neither durst Cortes forbid it. They say, but fewe of our menn, alwayes were slaine.
Therefore both by the swoorde, & famine the greater part of the cittizens was consumed:
Our menn for the most part entering the city fightinge, founde heapes of deade men in the

A trench cut to
conuey a riuer
an admirable
worke.

A multitude of
boats sent to
stop the Bergan-
tines dispersed
by the ordinance.

The Bridge won.

Cortes his 3. ar-
myes of 120000.
Soldiers at this
siege.

streets, who as they sayd, dyed with hunger and thirst. They destroyed many of those excellent buildings when they thrust the Enemeyes out. Cortes was once circumvented and surprised by the Enemy vpon one of the bridges, but was preserued by a certaine familiar freinde of his, called Franciscus Olea, who brandishinge his sworde against the enemy cutt of both his handes at one blowe who pressed vpon his maister Cortes hauing taken him. But with § vnhappy destiny of § Preseruer who (after he had giue him his horse) was slaine. At length it was now reported to our menn, in what part the king had hidd himselfe with his familiars, and Princes. Cortes vnderstanding the matter, with the Brigantines, setteth vpon a litle flete, of Boates discovered by Spies (wherein the Kinge wandred in certaine secret corners of the lake) and tooke them all. The Kinge being now subiect to the power of Cortes, touchinge the dagger wherewith Cortes was girded, sayth, behold the weapon, wherewith thou maist, and oughtest to kill me, I haue done what laye in me, so that now my life is become hatefull & loathsome vnto me. Cortes comforted him, and sayde, he had done that which became a couragious Kinge. But yet hee ledd him with him into the Continent, and deliuered him to his menn to bee kept in safe custody. These thinges being done, so greate a citty vanquished, and the people thereof almost destroyed, hee subdued all those Nations to the Emperours Iurisdiction. Two menn came vnto me, of them which Spaine calleth Fidalgi, who had not leas to doe in all matters, both in searchinge out the secrets of the Prouinces, and also in all the conflicts, the one called Diecus Ordassius, and the other Beneuides: who sayd that Cortes (at his pleasure) created a King in Tenustitan, who was of the blood royall and commanded him to seate himselfe there, to the intent that citty beinge now desolate for want of resort might vnder the shadowe of a king be stored with people againe, otherwise so huge a citty had remained desolate without inhabitants. But hee himselfe impatient of ease determined by Messengers to search out other sträge countreyes. High mountaines to the South laye within viewe, but what lay beyond them, hee commaundeth diligently to bee sought: and it was told him, that another Sea lay on the South side of these mountaines, as I wrote in the Decades, of the South Sea discovered from Darien, by Vasquez Nunnez. There are six Cityes there whereof (they say) the least is much greater then our Vallidolet that famous corporation: one whereof is called Teph, the second Mechnaca, the third Guaxaca, the forth Fuesco, the fift Tequantepech, to the sixt they giue no name: and it is written in a particular letter out of the volum of the Affairs of Tenustitan, that they vnderstoode in the South Sea that those llands ingendringe spices, gold, & precious stones were not farr distant from that shoare. But the cities that lye in lakes, and one the sides of lakes, are called by these names. Saltucar, Tenuaica, Tenustitan, Scapuzalco, Tacuba, Capulazpech, Culucan, of that name two, Guichilobusco, Suchimilco, Quitagua, Astapalappa, Mesechice, Coluacan, Tezucco. Of those two, Beneuides, lately returned from his companions, one of the two ships set from Cortes. In them they bringe gifts sent from Cortes, which they say are much more precious and excellent, the those which were carried and brought from the Emperours Maiesty, that yeere hee went out of Spaine vnto the Belgæ, which your Holines sawe: they valew these riches about two hundred thousand Ducates in estimation, but those shippes are not yet come vnto vs. They stayd In the llandes Cassiterides, called the Azores by the Portugalles who are Lords thereof, least they should haue fallen into the hands of the French Pyrates, as another did the yeere before, comminge from Hispaniola and Cuba, with a great masse of gold of seuentie two thousand Ducates, and six hundred waight of precious pearles of eight ounces to the pounce, & with 2000. suger bushes (a briar is called of the Spaniard arroua) of 25. pouid waight, of 6. ounces to the pounce. Besides many brought many particular things: all which became a Pyrates pray. An armed flete was sent to waite those two safe fro the Azores. At the time that I wrote this they were not yet brought hether. Those ships brought (as Beneuides saith) three Tygers brought vp of litle ones in seuerall cages, or grates, made of longe rafters, two in one of the shippes, and the third in the other: in that, where two were carryed, one of the cages was a litle battered and broken by the rowling and shaking of the shipp by tempestuous and foule weather, so § it

Cortes surprised
and by Franciscus
Olea rescued at
a deare rate.

The king taken.
His speeches to
Cortes.

The citty won
and those na-
tions all subdud
to the Emperour.

Cortes createth
a king one of the
bloud royall in
Tenustitan.

The South sea.
6. cityes.

1 Teph
2 Mechnaca
3 Guaxaca
4 Fuesco
5 Tequantepech
6. Name name.
Certayne Cityes
lying in lakes.

20000. ducats
sent to the king
of Spaine.

3. Tygers.

The first Decade.

many of those ex-
circumvented and
a certaine familiar
the enemy cutt
g taken him. But
horse) was slaine.
add himselfe with
gigantines, setteth
ndred in certaine
ject to the power
hold the weapon,
me, so that now
and sayde, he had
him into the Con-
se things being
yed, hee subdued
e, of them which
earchinge out the
us Ordassius, and
ing in Tenustitan,
to the intent that
a king be stored
at inhabitants. But
other strage coun-
beyond them, hee
er Sea lay on the
ea discovered from
ly say) the least is
called Teph, the
epeech, to the sixt
m of the Affairs of
ringe spices, gold,
that lye in lakes,
a, Tenustitan, Sea-
usco, Suchimilco,
Beneuides, lately
s. In them they
ous and excellent,
ly, that yeere hee
ualew these riches
are not yet come
y the Portugalles
f the French Py-
nd Cuba, with a
waight of precious
ar is called of the
ides many brought
te was sent to wait
ot yet brought he-
vp of litle ones
shippes, and the
as a litle battered
foule weather, so
f it

f it made way for the Tyger to come out. The Tyger escaping by night rann about the ship with noe lesse rage and furye, then if shee had neuer scene any man: shee runneth about rauinge euery where & shooke & seised vpon 7. men, from one shee tare an arme, from another a legge, from others the shoulders, slewe twoe and leapping vpon one who fled from the mast of the ship, shee caught him: and being halfe dead yet rescued by his companions, he perished not: All they that were in the shippe ran vnto her with lauelines, swordes and all kinde of weapons, and hauinge giuen her many woundes, they forced her to leape downe into the Sea, and slew her fellow in the cage, least the like mischaunce should befall them by her. The third which is in the other shipp, Beneuides saith, is brought. In f thicke woods of these Mountaines, great multitudes of Tygers, Lions, and other wild beasts liue. Being demanded with what foode they are maintained, he sayth they pray vpon hartes, Robuckes, deere, hares, and conyes, & many other milde creatures which liue there. Two men had the charge of those shippes who were Capitaines of the warres in those coun-tries, to witt, Alfonsus Auila, and Antonius Quignonus: these men bringe the Kings part giuen him by the people, to be deliuered vnto him: But Iohannes Ribera hath the charge of Cortes his part, who was his Secretary, & companion of all his labours from the begin-ning: and by the decree of the Kings Counsell of India, the Emperour cōfirm'd f govern-ment of Noua Hispania to Cortes, who gaue it that name. But Diecus Velasquez is both thrust out of the Governmēt of Cuba, & neere there about, because it is decreed, that he did not well in sendinge forces against Cortes, the Counsell of Hispaniola forbiddinge the same. Newes was lately brought, that fiteene of the shippes of the French Pyrates were scene wandringe at Sea, vpon hope to gett these shippes, as they tooke another: But by foule and tempestuous weather, they were transported into Affrica, and most of them drowned.

The Govern-
ment of Noua
Hispaniola cō-
firm'd to Cortes.
Velasquez de-
posed from the
government of
Cuba.

The Ninth Chapter.

I haue hetherto declared, what Cortes, what f fellow soldiers of Cortes, and the officers of the Kings Magistrates, the Treasurer, Auditor, and Distributor (whom the Spaiard calleth Factor) both writte while they remained, and also reported vnto me by word of mouth re- turning: Wherein I haue omitted many circumstances, least through the repetition of smale and trifling matters, I should become tedysous and contemptible: Let vs now report some- what from Darien by the letters of Petrus Arias Gouvernour of f supposed Continēt, & by his Eldest sonne Diecus Arias who returned frō his father, and then, many things lately vn- derstoode concerning the affaires of Hispaniola, and Cuba Fernandina: and this first. In the supposed Continent 5. Colonies are planted, vpon the North shoare of the country Sancta Maria antiqua, which towne we call Darien: because that towne (as in the former Decades I spoke at large) is seated vpon the Banck of the Riuer Darien: why they chose a place there, & why they gaue the place that name which of Zemacus the King thereof was called Zemacus, I then sufficiently declared. The second Colony called Acla is situated toward the West, Acla, and 30 leagues distant from Darien: 40. leagues frō Acla standeth an house seated on the shoare, to the West, called Nomen Dei, of a Hauen thereof so called, by Colonius who first discovered it. At the South shoare are Panaman & Natan (accenting the last sillable,) their country names not being changed. The third is very broad in some place, but chiefly on f coast, where that great riuer Maragnonus runneth, whereof I haue spoken at large in the former Decades where shewing f causes why so great abundance of waters could be conioyned in one chan- nell, among other, I sayd, that country was very large from North to South, whereby through the great distance of place many riuers might be ingēdred, which might fall into this one, to be cōueyed to f Northerne Ocean Sea. So (most holy father) it was fōud f I had pro- phesied, when f passage was discovered. Frō those Northerne shoares, famous for the fall of Maragnonus (where I sayde f Kings are called Chacones) f land is extended to f an- tarcicke to f straight beyond the Æquinoctiall, 54. degrees some deduct two whereof in the discourse of the seeking out of the lland of Spices I haue sufficiently spoken. Neere vnto that straight, winter shut vp that flecte of 5. shippes, through f extremity of cold, almost

Santa Maria
antiqua,
Darien.

Nomen Dei.
Panaman and
Natan.

A learned con-
ecture of the
largenes of a
Continent.

Of the crueltie
& ferocities of
Tigers in these
countrys.

A pleasant story
of apes.

Scorpion an in-
strument of war
like a Scorpion
to shoute small
arrowes.

Vrracusa mightie
and courageous
King.

for our five sommer monethes (as we haue already spooken) when $\S$ Sun departed from them vnto vs. From thence ariseth $\S$ admiration of $\S$ prodigious riuer Maragnonus. How then should $\S$ land be very broad there, which elsewhere is content with narrow straights of lande? but especially frō $\S$ Colony called Nomen Dei, to the South shoare, and the Hauen Panama, are 17. leagues distance, yet by vnpassable mountaines, and inaccessible, by reason of the huge rockes, and exceeding thicke woodes, neuer meddled with in any age: so that those desert places are the dennes and habitation of Leopardes, Tygers, Lyons, Beares, & Apes of many shapes, & other monsters. Wounderfull things are reported of these wilde beasts. They say $\S$ the Tygers doe no more feare to meete Trauellers, then if they mette with a little whelp: If they finde any man wādringe alone, there is no remedy but hee must needes be torne into a thousand peeces and eaten. Therefore they chiefly beware of Tygers, which by experience they finde much more cruell then Lyons: There are many valleyes of most fruitfull land, and many sides of those mountaines, which remaine desert, without any inhabitant, by reason of the Saunge and wild beasts, which otherwise would be replenished with store of people. But it is a pleasant thing to bee reported, touching diuers Apes, and dangerous also. By those mountaines through which Petrus Arias now Gouvernour, writeth hee hath made a passage, and dayly doth proceede more and more, in breakinge the stones in the craggy rocks, and burning the thick woods, the ringleaders of the Apes, when they perceiued any of our troopes of men marchinge (for being but a few, much lesse being alone durst they attempt any such thing) assemblinge a common multitude of diuers kindes, runne forth to meete them and pursuinge our men which way soeuer they march, with horrible outcries, leaping from tree to tree, and deride them with a thousand scurrilities, & a thousand mockinge gestures, especially those that haue tayles: and oftentimes make shewe as if they would assaile our men by troopes and companies. But as soone as they are come downe to the body of the trees, and see the arrows, & harquebuse shot (which they haue sometimes felt) ready to be leuelled & directed against thē, they make back againe as swift as the winde to the toppes of the trees from thence vntill their rauinge cōplaintes they gnash with their teeth in threatening manner. They say their dexterity & agility is such, $\S$ they know how to avoyde arrowes shot at their bodyes, & take thē in their hād, as if they volutarily receiued thē, being reached vnto thē. Yet they haue not so learned to shift & avoyde the arquebuse shott, wherewith they slew māy, peradventure of the younger sort, who were not so skilfull & cūning: But when they see any one of their cōpany fal headlong wounded, & takē vp by our men frō $\S$ ground they thūder & fil $\S$ skyes with such a violet, & horrible noyse $\S$ it exceedeth $\S$ roarings of a thousand Lions & as māy Tygers. But one thing is worthy the hearing: Euery Ape when they are nowe about to clime the trees, caryeth as many stones as shee can beare in one hande, and some in her mouth, and thereby fight with stones against such as passe by, whensoever our men cease shooting their arrowes or shot, at them. A bowman of our men bent his Scorpion against an old Ape with a long tayle, bigger then a Baboon, this Ape made as though she woulde waite for it, but as soone as she sawe the arrowe directed by shutting of one eye, casting downe a stone vpon the archer, shee shrewdly bruised his face, and (as they say) brake his teeth out of his head. But yet the Munkie was punished for her straunge stratagem, for at what tyme the stone fell downe vpon the archer, the arrowe ascended vnto the Ape, and hauing slayne her, they eate her for a daintie dish, for so great hunger oppressed them, that they hadde eaten toads, or any other worse meate. We haue spoken sufficiently of fourefooted beasts: now let vs speake somewhat of them that are two footed: for that two footed nation, is almost like those fourefooted beasts. There is a mightie and courageous king called Vrracus, in the borders of the Colonie of Natan towards the South, whom Petrus Arias the Gouvernour could neuer perswade to intertayne amity and peace, and therefore prepared to master him by warre. But this king trusting in his power and authoritie, is reported to haue answered the Embassadours proudly who came to treat concerning peace, and presumed, armed after his maner, by incursions to invade the Colony of the Christians who inhabit Natan. For they haue many kinds of darts in those countrys, wherewith they fight a farre

of,

parted from them
onus. How then
ow straighes of
e, and the Hauen
ceivable, by rea-
in any age: so
e, Lyons, Beares,
reported of these
ers, then if they
is no remedy but
ey chiefly beware
There are many
h remaine desert,
herwise would be
ted, touching di-
us Arias now Go-
pre and more, in
the ringleaders of
being but a few,
common multitude
h way soeuer they
h with a thousand
ayles: and often-
eyes. But as moone
harquebuse shot
at the, they make
vitering their ra-
they say their dex-
ir bodies, & take
e. Yet they haue
may, peradventure
ee any one of their
& fill skyes with
& as many Tygers,
to clime the trees,
mouth, and there-
ase shooting their
gainst an old Ape
oulde waite for it,
ing downe a stone
ke his teeth out of
e, for at what tyme
and hauing slayne
n, that they hadde
ourefooted beasts:
o footed nation, is
ing called Vrracus,
s Arias the Gouver-
prepared to master
reported to haue
ce, and presumed,
tians who inhabite
n they fight a farre
of,

of, and broad wooden swords burnt in the fire, wherewith they incounter hand to hand. They haue bowes also, with the endes of their arrowes either of bone, or hardened in the fyre. In those countries there is great plentie of the fruite of Coccus, whereof I made mention before. Where especially in the South coast, the flowing Sea washeth the broad neighbouring playnes: of the which, they say, one is overflowed by the flood for the space of two leagues, and becometh dry againe with the ebbe. In those places (they say) those trees grow and increase of their owne nature: and not elsewhere, vnlesse the yong and tender plants be transported thence. Some thinke that the flowing of the Sea brings the seeds of those trees thether frō vknowne countryes, from other countryes of the Indies, where they naturally growe: they say, they are brought to Hispaniola and Cuba as I sometimes sayd of the trees which beare Cassia Fistula, and from the Ilandes to the Continent, vntill they come to those Sontherne partes. But in the Ilandes by the wonderful purpose and worke of nature, another tree groweth, (whiche I know not yet whether it growe in the Continent or no) which hath leaues whereon a man may write, besides that tree whereof I made mention in the Decades. This tree compared with that, differeth much: which wee will describe, when wee shall speake of those Ilandes. Now let vs returne vnto the affaires of the Continent. From Panama a Colonie of the South Sea, they descended with shippes built in that Sea, so farre to the West, as they thought they hadde attained to the backside of Iucatan. For argument and prooffe thereof Gil. Gonzalus the Admirall of that flete, and his Consortes say, that they light on men appparelled after the same maner, with holes pierced in their lips, wearing goulden or siluer iewelless about their neckes, beset with precious stones, such as those were, wherof I made report in my 4 Decade to Pope Leo, when mention was made of the affaires of Iucatan, and of the presents which were brought. They write, that on the right hande they founde suche a furious and raging Sea, that they suppose there was a narrowe strayght there betweene the Continent, and Iucatan, though not yet discovered: but durst not hazarde themselves in such a raging sea, because the shippes, by reason of the long space of time they had sayled along those shores, were halfe rotten, and eaten through with wormes. Hauing repayred and amended their shippes, they promise to returne. In that voyage Gil. Gonzalus, and his Consortes tolde Petrus Arias, that about an hundred leagues from the Colony of Panama, they found the Vast Sea of a blacke colour, in which shales swim of the bignesme of Dolphines, melodiously singing with sweet harmony, as is reported of the Syrenes, and after the same maner, inuiting to sleepe. Heere menne of meane spirit and conceit will wonder, and say it is a thing impossible. I will therefore discourse the matter a little with these men. Do we not read that the Erythrean gulfie is red, from whence it hath the name of the red sea. Whether it be by the nature of the water, or whether it happen by the redde sandes, or reuerberation of the red rockes on the shore, the Sea appeareth red: who therefore would make nature so dull, to take away her power that shee could not ingender blacke sandes also, and blacke rocks, which elsewhere might make the waters seeme blacke? But concerning the singing and melody, I my selfe also thinke it to bee a fable, albeit wise and discrete menne report it: yet notwithstanding in their excuse, is it not knowne that the Trytones are very shrill? they haue beene sometimes hearde, and haue beene found dead cast vp vpon the shore, in the West Spanish Ocean: & doth not a frogge croake vnder water? Why should it then be wondered at, of other Vocall fishes also be founde, neuer heard of before? Let euery manne beleue as hee pleaseth: I thinke nature able to doe great matters. All the ryuers of the supposed Continent are full of Crocodiles: in the Ryuers they are hurtfull, and dangerous, but not on the Lande, as those of the River Nilus are. They founde one deade of two and fourtie feete long, and seuen foote broad betweene the iawes. Petrus Arias his sonne being returned from his Father, sayth, that those trees are now found, of the planks and tymber whereof, if shippes bee built, they might bee freed from daunger of those mischieuous wormes which gnawe holes through them. He sayth also that the wood being brought into the kitchen, coulde scarce bee burned, by reason of the exceeding moystrure thereof. Now let vs come to the commodities. That lande hath many Gold mines:

Coccus.

A great ebbe.

A tree no
whose leaues
a man may
write.A furious and
raging sea.The blacke Sea.
The Syrenes.

Crocodiles here.

Gold mines.

mines: but let Petrus Arias, and the rest pardon me, who haue gotten gold, by the sweate of the poore miserable Inhabitauntes. That whiche by the assistance of your Holynessee hath beene often attempted, is nowe established and decreede in our Senate of the Indian affayres: to witte, that the Indians shoulde euery where bee free, and applie themselues to tillage of the ground, and Christian disciplyne. But if any, through hope of obtaining anie of our commodities, voluntarily offer themselues they might lawfully haue them as mercenaryes, & hired seruants. We haue sufficiently spoken of the Continent: now let vs speake somewhat of the llandes. In Hispaniola nothing is changed. The Senate is the same, from whiche all those tractes and countries receiue their Lawes. Whatsoeuer thinges are sowed or planted there, increase daily more and more. There are great multitudes of

No smal proof
of good land
by this prooff
of horses.

horses, swine, and hearde of cattell there. The like also is in the rest. A yong mare colt conceiue the tenth month after shee is foaled, and hath scarce brought forth a colt when she desireth and taketh the horse again. They liue contented with their country bread made of lucca, and Maizium: wines are brought home vnto them from Vandalia, although

Vineyardes.

they haue vineyardes in very many places: they say, they growe wonderfully: and become so ranke, that they spend their vigor and strength in the leaues and branches, and little in the clusters, and die a fewee years after the planting. They say the same of corne, that it groweth to the height of canes, with exceeding long eares, yet that the graynes vanish to nothing, before they be ripe, for the most part: and that there is more plentiful store of other thinges in those llandes, then elsewhere. Sugar presses are euery yeere increased.

Corne.

Now lette vs speake of the tree which yeeldeth parchment, which is very like a date tree, the leaues whereof are so great, that euery one being spread vpō the head, may defed the whole body of a man from a showre of raine, as if he cast a cloath cloake vpon his backe. This is but a smal matter, lette vs speake of that which is admirable: those leaues which cleaue to the tree no otherwise then the Date doth to her tree, the leafe plucked vppe by the roote, whereby it is ioyned to the tree (for the leafe you lay holde on is easily taken from the tree by thrusting the poynt of a knife to the bottome of the stalke) in the inner rinde thereof containing the parchment, a little white skinne is found, like to the white of an Egge: whiche is pilled away, as the skinne is slayed from a sheepe new killed, and is taken whole from the barke, not much lesse than a sheepes, or a goates skin of parchment: whiche all those people vse, as if they hadde gotten parchment it selfe: and they say it is no lesse tough and strong. They cutte that parchment with sissers, so muche

A tree which
yeeldeth parch-
ment.

The tree Yagua.

onely as serueth for the present necessitie of writing. This tree is called Yagua: the fruite thereof is lyke to an Oliffe, it fatteth swine, and is not so conuenient for menne. But howe they vse the benefitte of the other leafe which may bee written vpon, differing from this thinne skinne, wee haue sufficiently spoken in his place. There is another Tree whiche groweth in the cliftes of Rockes, and not in a fatte soyle, and it is called Pythahaya, the fruite is sower mixed with sweet, as wee see in the Soure sweete African apple, called Pomegranate: the fruite thereof is as bigge as an Oringe, of a red colour within, and without. But the fruite of the Tree called Mameia, in the llandes is no bygger then a small Melon, but in the Continent, not much lesse thē a great one. This fruite nourisheth three small creatures somewhat greater then a nutte, for preseruacion onely of their kind. Nowe let me speake a little of the Pepper of the llandes, and of the Continent.

Pepper of di-
uerse scates.

They haue woodes full of fruites whiche bring forth Pepper, I call it pepper, although it be no pepper, because it hath the strength and Aromaticall tast and sauour of pepper, nor is that graine lesse esteemed then pepper, they call it Axi, accenting y last sillable, & it exceedeth the height of Poppey. Grains or berries of them are gathered like those of Iuniper, or firre tree, but not altogether so great: there are two sortes of that grayne, some say five: one of them is halfe as long againe as the length of a mans finger, it is sharper, and biteth more then pepper, the other is rounde, no greater then pepper. But this consisteth of a thinne skinne, and certayne substantiall, and animall partes, which three, haue a hotte kinde of sharpnesse and biting. The thirde is not biting, yet aromati- call, which if we used, we should not neede Caucasian pepper: that which is sweete, and pleasant

by the sweato
your Holynesse
te of the Indian
e themselves to
pe of obtaining
y haue them as
ent: now let vs
nate is the same,
uer thinges are
multitudes of
A yong mare
ght forth a colt
r country bread
andalia, although
ly: and become
hes, and little in
of corne, that it
graynes vanish
lentifull store of
yeere increased.
like a date tree,
d, may defed the
vppon his backe.
ose leaues which
plucked vppe by
on is easily taken
like) in the inner
ce to the white of
ew killed, and is
goates skin of
nent it selfe: and
sissers, so much
Yagua: the fruite
for menne. But
vppon, differing
e is another Tree
it is called Pytha-
te African apple,
red colour within,
s no bygger then
one. This fruite
seruation onely of
of the Continent.
pper, although it
ur of pepper, nor
last sutable, & it
ered like those of
as of that grayne,
mana finger, it is
en pepper. But
hall partes, which
ting, yet aromati-
ich is sweete, and
pleasant

pleasant they call Boniatum, the thinne sort they call Caribe, because it is sharpe and strong, and from thence they call the Canibales Caribes, because they confesse them to be strong, and cruel. There is another kinde in these Ilandes, the dawe whereof being touched, a manne is infected as if he had taken poyson. If any man with fixed eye beholde that tree, he looseth the sight of his eyes, and presently swelleth like one that hath the dropsie. There are two other trees, the woode and leaues whereof being set on fire, kill onely with the fume, if the woode of any one of them beeing but a little kindled, be caryed about the house or lodging. It is an others poyson, if any sucke in, the fume of the leafe by the nostrils. A certayne priest told mee of a cruell and mischieuous act, who sixe times sayled from the Continent to Cuba and Hispaniola, that long voyage by sea, going three times, and returning as often, his name was Benedictus Martinez a man of good sort. This was he, who first came to Barchiuona to make report of Iucatan, and the rest of those bordering countryes. He sayth that a certayne man called Madronus a citizen of the towne of Albazet in the Country Spartaria, hadde by an auncient custome, a certayne King with his subiects at his commande, vnder his subiection to digge golde out of the Mines, in a place called S. Iames: in short time, that mine of gold was found by chance. This king with his Miners, gathered for his Temporary Maister 9000. Castellanes of gold. Now it was decreede in our Kings Senate, that some largesse, of our commodities, shoulde bee giuen to euerie one departing from their labour, to witte, a cappe, a stomacher, or a shirt, a cassocke, or a glasse, or such lyke. The king supposed hee should haue had some fatte larges from his maister, because that in so short a time he hadde founde so great a Masse of Golde. Madronus dealt more strictly with him then he ought: whereupon the King conceiued such displeasure, and anger, that calling those Miners into an house, to the number of ninty siue, he thus debateth with them. My worthy companions & friends why desire wee to liue any longer vnder so cruell seruitude? lette vs nowe goe vnto the perpetuall seate of our Auncestors: for we shall there haue rest from these intollerable cares and grieuances which we indure vnder the subiection of the vnthankful. Go yee before, I will presently followe you. Hauing spoken this, he helde whole handfulls of those leaues which depriue life, prepared for the purpose: and giueth euery one part thereof beeing kindled, to sucke vp the fume: who obeyed his command. The King, and a chiefe kinsman of his, a wise and prudent man, reserued the last place for themselues, to take the fume. The whole pauement of the Hall was now couered with dead carkases: so that an eager conflict arose betweene those two that were liuing, whether of them should kill himselfe first. The king vehemently vrged that his companion should first dispatch himselfe: but his companion saith he wil follow him, but not goe before. At length the king made riddance of himselfe first. His cōpanion through the loue of sweete life, deriding the king, and those other fooles, refused to follow, & comming out from thence, reported to our men what had happened. Hee further sayth, that much about that tyme, another more horrible accident fell out in the Prouince called the Princes prouince, one of the city captains called Olandus had a Cubensian mayden the daughter of a king: the captayne suspecting (though she were with childe by him) that she dealt abroad, fastened her to two wooden spits, not to kill her, but to terrifie her, and set her to the fire, and commaunded her to bee turned by the officers: the mayden stricken with feare through the cruelty thereof, and strange kinde of torment, gaue vp the ghost. The king her father vnderstanding the matter, tooke thirtie of his men with him, and went to the house of the Captayne who was then absent, and slewe his wife whom he had maryed after that wicked act committed, and the women who were companions of the wife, and her seruants euery one: then shutting the dore of the house, and putting fire vnder it, he burnt himselfe, and all his companions that assisted him, together with the Captaynes deade family, and goods. Hee reporteth also a fearefull atory of another mayde. This mayde being deflowred of a Spanish Muletter, went home, and declared what had happened, and told her parents that she would therefore kil her selfe, it booted not to comfort her. She tooke the iuice of Iucca, which if it be taken rawe, is poyson, if boyled, is used for milke: the force of §

Boniatum.
Caribe.

A kind of pep-
per tree that
blindeth the
beholder.
Other strange
reportes of the
pepper tree.
A tragical tal-
e of barbarous
resolution.

A worthy and
Roman lyke
act of an Indian
mayd.

poyso

These Indian
Maydes neuer
heard of leading
Apes in hell.

Of the thygh
bone of a Gyaunt.

A country
inhabited with
Giants.

poysd was not such, that it would kil her: yet notwithstanding she resolved to ende her lyfe, by any meanes whatsoever. The next day, shee said shee would goe wash her selfe at a ryuer neere adioyning: for it is the manner with them to wash themselves twice euery day: shee founde a cruell way of reuenge for her selfe: shee bent downe a little tree standing by the ryuers side, and broake it to the height of her heade, and sharpened the poynt of the tree as well as she could. Then getting vppe into a greater tree neere vnto it, shee thrust the poynt of the tree into her selfe, where shee was deflowred, and remainned spytte, euen as a kidde to bee roasted at the kitchen fire. Another mayde also, a fewe dayes after, determined to finish the miseries of her lyfe, who brought as a companion with her, the maid seruant of this Priest, of like yeeres to her selfe, and easilie perswaded her, that by her example, shee woulde goe with her vnto their auncesters, where they shoulde leade a quiet and peaceable life: binding therefore the girdles, wherewith they were girt, to the boughes of a tree, & fastening them with a knot about their necks, they cast theselues down from the tree, & so by hanging themselves, they obtayned their desires. They report many thinges of such like matters. I determine therefore to vphold this last leafe with a giant-like discourse, to backe and defende these reportes, like that fearefull supporting Athlas. Diecus Ordacius, of whom I made mention before, diligently viewed many secrete and solitary places of those Countries, and appeased their Kinges: especially the King of that Prouince, where the Money tree groweth, where he learned howe that Money tree was planted, and nourished, as I haue declared in his place. This Diecus Ordacius founde a peece of the thygh bone of a Giant (in the vault of a Church) broken of, and halfe consumed through long continuance of time: whiche thigh bone, the Licentiate Aiglionus, a Lawyer, & one of the Counsell of Hispaniola brought to the citie Victoria, not long after your Holinesse departed thence towards Rome. I hadde it at home for certayne dayes: it was siue spannes long, from the huckle bone vnto the knee, and the proportion answered the length. After this, they that were sent by Cortes to the Montanous Countryes of the South, reported that they hadde found a Country inhabited with these men, and for prooffe thereof, they are sayd to haue brought manie of the ribbes of those deade men. Concerning other occurrents, which happen among vs, your Holinesse is often aduertised by those that are neere about the Emperour, and therefore none of those matters are to bee required of me, whiche disquiet the afflicted mindes of Christian Princes intangled in mutuall secret hatred, and displeasure, to the benefit of the Mahumetanes, and losse, & hinderance of our Religion. Nowe therefore I bid your Holinesse farewell, before whose feete prostrating my selfe, I dedicate my most humble, and deuoted seruice.

The tenth Chapter.

EVEN as the heads of Hydra smitten of are seuen times doubled, so vnto me deliuering one discourse, many other arise. I thought I shoulde nowe at length haue concluded the affayres of Tenustitan: when behold through new tidings comming suddenly, & vnexpected, I am compelled to enter into the discourse thereof againe. In one of the 2. shippes which brought the Presents from the Cassiterides, one of the familiar friendes of Cortes (neere about him) called Iohannes Ribera, is returned: the other shippe, for feare of the French Pyrates, expecting other subsidiary shippes to conduct her, with the Treasure, whereof, besides the fift due to the Kinges Exchequer, Cortes willingly giueth a parte of the riches gotten by his owne labour, and industry: another part also the rest of his chiefe companions in Armes bestowed. This Ribera bringeth in charge with him, to present the giftes, assigned by Cortes, to the Emperour, in his maisters name, for the rest, those two, who (as I said before, remained in the Cassiterides, with the ships) should offer their presentes. This Ribera is skilfull in the Tenustitan language, and nothing was done all the time of the warres, at the which hee was not present, alwayes at his maisters side: who was sent from his maister, many daies after the departure of his companions: from him therefore we may haue a most cleare and apparent reaso of all thinges. Being first demanded of the Originall of the city Tenustitan, and defini-

tion

tion of the name then of the ruine and destruction, and of the present state thereof, and with what forces Cortes maintayned and defended the same, & of many such like things besides: hee saith the citie was built in the middle of a salte lake, vpon a rocke found there (as we read of that most famous citie of Venice, seated on a plat of ground appearing in that parte of the Adriaticke Gulfe) to secure themselves from the incursions of the enemy: but the name thereof is deriued from 3. short words. That which seemeth diuine, they call Teu, fruite, they call Nucil, and Titan, they call a thing seated in the water, from whence commeth the name of Tenu-titan, that is to say, a diuine fruit seated in the water: for vpon that rocke they founde a naturall tree laden with pleasant fruit (fit to be eaten) greater then our country apples, which yeelded desired foode to the first inuentors: wherupon in token of thankfulness, they beare that tree imbroydered in their Standard, it is like a Mulbery tree, but hath leaues much greener. The Tascaltecan also in their Colours, haue 2. hāds ioyned together, kneading of a Cake, for they vaunt that they haue more fruitful fields of corne, then the rest of the borderers, & from thence the city hath her name: for Tescal is a cake of bread in their language, and Teca, is a Lady, and therefore she is called the Lady of breade. The same also is reported of the inhabitantes of the Mountayne which we call Vulcanus, whiche casteth out smoake. For in their warlike Auncients, they beare a smoaking Mountayne, and call the Mountayne itselfe Popocatepech, because Popoca is Smoake, and Tepech, signifieth a Mountayne. A litle distant, on the East, standeth another Mountayne neere vnto this, couered all the yeere with Snowe, there are also other Mountaynes laden with Snowe, by reason of the height thereof. Another hill also full of Conies is called Cachutepech, because Cachu is a Conie, and therefore it is called the Mountayne of Conies. The house of their Religion they call Teuale, of Teu, which signifieth God, and Cale, an house. So they define all their matters from the effect: but wee shall more curiously search into these thinges hereafter. He further sayde, that the citie for the moste parte, was ruined and destroyed with fyre, and sworde, and that but fewe of the chiefe menne, remayned alyue. In some places hee sayde it remayned whole, and intyre, where anie secrete streete or rowe of houses was free from the furious conflicts, and that the three chiefe Pallaces were woonderfully repayred and amended, the chiefe whereof beeing the house of Mutezuma, all menne report to bee so great, that no manne after hee entred into it, was able to find the way out agayne, without a guide, borne, and brought vppe there, as wee reade of the wyndinges, and turnynges, of that fabulous Labirynth of Minos: in this house, Cortes sayeth hee purposeth to Seate himselfe, and therefore intended first to repayre it. And this manne reporteth, that there are houses of pleasure, built within the Cittie, and in the water itselfe, with pleasaunt and delyghtful greene plattes of grounde, and not in the Continent as others sayde, where dyuers kindes of fourefooted wilde Beastes, and sundry sorts of foules are inclosed, as I mentioned beefore. Hee reporteth manie thynges of the Roaryng of Lyons, and of the querulous yellyng, and howling of Tygers, Beares, and Woolues, when they were burnt with their houses, and of the miserable spoyle of all those thynges. It will bee long ere those houses bee repayred, and newe builde, for they were all of stone from the Foundation, with Turrettes rounde about them, adorned and beautified in manner of a Castle: for seldome doe the Conquerours repayre the ruines of defaced townes, who rather sacke twentye stately Cities, and fortified Castles, then erect one particular house, especially, where newe conquests call them away, and the greedy desire of inlarging their dominion hasteneth them to inuade other Prouinces. But the common houses themselves as hygh as a mannes Girdle, were also built of stone, by reason of the swellng of the Lake through the floode, or washing flote of the Ryuers fallyng into it. Vppon those greate Foundations they builde the rest of the house, with Bricke burned, or dried in the Sunne, intermingled with Beames of Tymber: and the Common houses haue but one Floore, or Planchin. They seldome make their aboade, or lodge vppon the Grounde, least the dampe thereof through excessive moysture might indanger their desired health. They couer the Roofe of their houses, not with Tyles, but with a certayne kinde of clammye earth, or Claie: for that way or manner of coueringe is more apt to receiue the Sunne, yet is it supposed to bee consumed in a short-er tyme. But howe they drawe those huge Beames, and Rafters, whiche they vse in building

VOL. V.

3 D

of

Tenu-titan situated as Venice.

An excellent Etimologie of the worde Tenu-titan.

As witte is that of Tascalteca the Lady of bread.

A kinde of bearing of armes amongst the Barbarians appeareth here. A Mountayne couered all the yeere with snowe.

Teuale: Gods house.

Of the greatnes and intricacie of Mutezuma his Pallace.

of their Houses, considering they haue neyther Oxen, Asses, nor Horses, nor any other beast of burthen, (as heereafter shall bee spoken) wee will nowe declare. The sides of those high Mountaynes are beset with goodly spreading Citron or Lymon Trees, with the which the Voluptuous Romaines, (after they fell from Contynencie to Ryot) made Tables, bedde-steedes, and other Vtensils, for ornamente and furniture of houses: because the Citron Tree perpetually preserueth whasoeuer is boorded with it, from Woormes, and Putrifaction, (as the auncient writers report of the Cedar) and the boordes of that Tree are naturally Flourished with dyuers coloures: immitating the curious art of some ingenious Artist, and the places where Pyne Trees growe are neere adioyning to those flourishing Citron Trees in all the spacious Woodes. With their Copper Hatchets, and Axes cunningly tempered, they fell those trees, and hewe them smooth, taking away the chyppes, that they may more easily be drawne. They haue also certayne hearbes, with the which, in steed of broome, & hempe, they make ropes, cordes, and cables: and boaring a hole in one of the edges of the beame, they fasten the rope, then sette their slaues vnto it, like yoakes of oxen, and lastly in steede of wheels, putting round blocks vnder the timber, whether it be to be drawn steepe vp, or directly downe the hill, the matter is performed by the neckes of the slaues, the Carpenters onely directing the carriage. After the same manner also, they get all kind of matter fitte for building, and other things apt for the vse of manne, seeing they haue neither oxen, nor asses, or any other fourfooted beast of burden. Incredible thinges are reported of those beames of tymber, nor durst I repeate them, except menne of great authoritie, and that many, had testified, and affirmed vnto vs, assembled in our Senate, that they had measured many: & that in the cite Tascuco, they sawe one of a hundred and twentie foote long, eight square, bigger then a great Oxe, which supported almost the whole Pallace, they affirme that they beheld it, & no man gaine-sayeth it: hence we may gather, howe great the industry of these men is. But concerning the money called Cacaues, and of the strength of Cortes to sustaine so great an Empire, he sayth that the money is not chaunged, nor that it is expedient that it shoulde be altered. And he declareth, that the strength of Cortes consisteth in 40. peeces of ordinance, 200. horse, & 1300. foote, of the which he hath 250. alwayes in a readinesse to man the Brigantines, beating vp and downe the lake day, and night, with their appoynted Commaunder. Others helpe hee vseth in ranging new countries: many haue thoroughly searched the middle of the Mountaynes from the playne of Tenustitan vnto the South: and from the East vnto the West they finde them verie farre extended. They who attempted the discouery say, they trauallyed fiftie leagues: and that they were well stored with victualles, and delightfull, and famous for many excellent cities. From those Mountaynes, and diuers Riues running through the playne of Tenustitan, this Iohannes Ribera, in token of the riches of the soile, bringeth many sorts of gold, as big as a lentil, or the pulse of pease, & diuers pearls fro the South part: but they were such as were founde with Mutezuma, and his gallant and delicate Nobles, or other enemies among the spoyle of warre. When I had this Ribera at home with mee, the Reuerend Secretary Caracciolus, Legate to your Holinesse, with Gaspar Contarinus the Venetian Embassadour, and Thomas Mainus a yong man, the nephew of great Iason Mainus, Embassadour for the Duke of Millane, desirous to heare, and see straunge things came vnto me. They wondered not at the great plenty of golde, nor that it was so pure of his owne nature (for it is so pure, that golden Ducates might bee coyned thereof, without refining it) but they first wondred at the number and forme of the vessels filled with golde, which from diuers Nations contained diuers sortes, sent for Tribute: & for prooffe that that gold was gathered with them, euery vessel or little cane had the seuerall markes of their country printed in them with an hotte Iron: and euery one of them consisted of eyght nine or tenne drammes weight of gold. That being shewed vnto vs, declareth, what kinde of golde properly belongeth to one manne, of those who were partakers of those thinges: For Ribera himselfe is maister of all that, whiche hee shewed: but, that which is brought in the shyppe which staieth, is an huge masse, to bee presented to the Emperour: the summe of the golde whiche is moulten and brought into wedges, and barres, amounteth to 32000. Ducates: and that which may be made of ringes, Jewells, shieldes, helmettes, and other thynges, amounteth to the summe of an hundred and fiftie thousand ducates more, as he saith: but I know not what flying report there

The Citron or Limon tree an enemy to wormes.

Copper hatchets.

Ropes and cables made of certayne hearbes. The vse of wheeles wanting here.

Beames of tymber of a huge length and biggenes.

With howe great a power Cortes maintaineth a great Empire.

Pearles.

The puritie of the golde of these parts.

A huge masse of golde for the Emperour.

for any other beast
des of those high
he which the Vo-
s, bedde-steedes,
on Tree perpetu-
tion, (as the aun-
Flourished with
the places where
in all the spacious
ey fell those trees,
be drawne. They
they make ropes,
y fasten the rope,
eels, putting roid
e the hill, the mat-
the carriage. After
ther things apt for
fourfooted beast of
nor durst I repeate
d affirmed vnto vs,
Escuco, they sawe
t Oxe, which sup-
an gaine-sayeth it:
cerning the money
p, he sayth that the
And he declareth,
& 1300. foote, of
ting vp and downe
ee vseth in ranging
nes from the playne
hem verie farre ex-
ues: and that they
cellent cities. From
titan, this Iohannes
s big as a lentil, or
as were founde with
the spoyle of warre.
olus, Legate to your
Mainus a yong man,
p, desirous to heare,
plenty of golde, nor
tes might bee coyn-
forme of the vessels
for Tribute: & for
the seuerall markes
n consisted of eyght
what kinde of golde
things: For Ribera
in the shyppe which
the golde whiche is
ates: and that which
unteth to the summe
ot what flying report
there

there is, that the French Pirtes haue vnderstoode of those ships, God sende them good suc-
cesse. Let vs now come to the particulars of this Ribera, which are but smal shaddowes, and
proportions of the thynges which are to bee brought. Hee shewed vs Pearles, (no worse then Pearles.
those which humane effeminacie calleth Orientall) whereof many exceede a very great filberd,
but for the most parte not very white, beecause they take them out of roasted Shelle fishe,
ingendring pearles: yet wee sawe some cleare, and of a good lustre. But this is but a small
matter. It was a delightfull thing to beeholde the variety of Iewelles, and Rynges: there is Jewels.
no fourefooted beast, no foule, no fyshe, which their Artificers haue once seene, but they are
able to drawe, and cutte in mettall the likenesse and proportion thereof, euen to the lyfe.
We seemed to behoulde liuing countenances, and wondered at their vessels, earerings, chains,
bracelettes, and all of golde, wherein the curious workemanship and labour exceeded the mat-
ter and mettall, as also their crestes, plumes, targettes, and helmettes, artificially wrought
with smale prickes and pouncing so drawne out in length, that with the smalnes e thereof, de-
ceiued the very sight of the Eye: wee were muche delighted with the beautie of two glasses
especially, the one was garnished and edged about, with an halfe globe of golde, the circum-
ference and compasse thereof was a spanne broade: the other was sette in greene woode, not
so bigge altogether. This Ribera sayth, that there is such a Quarrie of stons in those Countryes, A Quarrie of
that excellent glasses may bee made thereof by smoothing and polishing them, so that wee all transparent
confessed that none of ours did better shewe the naturall and liuely face of a manne. Wee sawe stones.
a Visarde very excellently well made, set in a table on the inside, and aboue vpon that, inlayed A Visarde.
with very small stones, so fastened together, that the nales coulede not enter them, and the
clearest eye woulde thinke them to bee one entire stone, made of the same matter, whereof
wee sayde the glasse was composed: it hadde also golden eares, and 2. greene circles of Em-
rodes ouerthwart the face thereof, from either side of the heade, and as many yellow, with
bone teeth, shewing themselves halfe out of the mouth, whereof two of the innermost checke
teeth hanging downe from either iawe, were putte forth without the lypes: those Visardes
they sette before their Idoles face, when their Prince is sicke, and take them not away before
hee either escape and recouer, or els die. After this, hee brought forth diuers garmentes out Garmentes.
of a very great chest: they haue three kinds of matter or stuffe, whereof they make al gar-
ments, the first is of Cotton, the next, of the feathers of foule and the thirde, they compact of
Conies haire: and they set those feathers in such order betweene the Cony haire, & intermingle
them betweene the thriddes of the Cotton, and weaue them in such difficulty, that we doe not
well vnderstand how they might do it. Of cotton there is no wonder: for they weaue their
cotton cloth, as we weaue, or begin our webs, of linnen, woollen, or silke. Concerning
the shape and fashion of their garmentes, it is ridiculous to beholde: they call it a garment,
because they couer themselves therewith, but it hath no resemblance with any other garment,
of any fashion: it is onely a square couering like vnto that, which your Holines cast on your
shoulders, somtimes in my presence, when you were about to kembe your heade, to preserue
your garmentes, least haire, or any other filth should fal vpon thē. That couering they cast
about their necke, and then knitting 2. of the foure corners vnder their throate, they lette the
couering hange downe, whiche scarce couereth the bodie as lowe as the legges. Hauing seene
these garmentes I ceased to wonder, that so great a number of garmentes was sent to Cortes,
as we mentioned before: for they are of small moment, and many of them take vppe but litle
roome. They haue also sloppes or breeches, whereat (for elegancie & ornament) certayn
toyes of feathers of diuers colours hange: from the knee downward they goe bare. Many use
breeches for the most parte of feathers, they mingle feathers and Conies haire most curiously
together in the cotton thriddes in all thinges, and of them they make their winter garmentes,
and couerlets or blankets for the night. For the rest, they are naked, and vnlesse it be ex-
treme cold, they alwayes put out one of their armes. Therefore they are al somewhat swart,
& brown coloured: but the country (although they sometimes feele the cold) necessarily can-
not be much troubled with cold, seeing they say that plaine is distant from the North Pole
from 19. Degrees onely vnto 22. but I marked one thing described in the Mappes whereof he
hath brought many. On the North, the Mountains in some places are distant one from another,
most fruitfull valleyes diuiding them, betweene the narrow passages whereof, the violence

He digresseth
to satisfie some
doubts.

A deceit of
the Barbarians.

He seems to
demonstrate that
a great part of
the world is yet
vndiscovered.

of the Northerne windes is very strong, and boystrous in that playne, and therefore that side of the citty Tenustitan which looketh towards the North, is fortified with rampires of huge stones, and tymber fastened in the ground, to defend the cite from the violence of whirlewindes. I sawe the like inuention at Venice, to sustayne the furie of the Adriaticke Sea, leaste it shoulde shake the houses, the Venetians call that pile of woode, the shore, commonly El Lio. Contrarily, on the Southe side all the Mountaynes loyue one vpon another, so high, that the South windes haue no power to blowe through that playne, to giue them heate: but the North windes come from the skie, and from on high doe more beate vpon them then the South winds because they ascend from the bottome to the toppe, and the playne itselfe hath perpetuall snowie Mountaynes, and burning Mountaynes not farre from it. Wee sawe a Mappe of those countreyes 30. foote long, and little lesse in breadth, made of white cotton, wouen: wherein the whole playne was at large described, with the Prouinces, aswell friendes, as enemyes to Mutezuma. The huge Mountaynes compassing the playne on euery side, and the South coastes also butting vpon the shore are ther, together described, from whose Inhabitanes, they say, they had hearde, that certaine llandes were neere vnto those shores, where (as wee sayde before) the Spices grew, and great plentie of gold and precious stones were ingendred. Here (most holy Father) I must make a little digression. When this poynt was read amongst vs, many distorted the nose, and thought that fabulous which the letters reported of a doubtful thing to come as it happeneth in manie thynges, which are deliuered by report of the Barbarians, while they come to bee openly knowne: and surely they doubted not without good cause, by the example of three thinges, which happened in our supposed Continent not agreeing with the first propositions, whereof I made mention in the former Decades, yet leauing them alwayes doubtfull. I haue heretofore said that the Spanyardes were accused by one of the sonnes of King Comogrus, chiefe of seuen, because they esteemed golde so much, whereof he offered to shew them sufficient plentie, so they would procure some forces of armed menne, by whose conduct they might boldly passe ouer the Mountaynes he shewed them, possessed by warlike kinges, courageous, and stout defenders of their owne right: because those sides of those Mountaynes, which looke towards the South, had another Sea, at the Antarticke, and the inhabitantes of those sides were very rich: they passed those Mountaynes, to consider througly of the South Sea: and knew the substance and wealth of those Kings to be farre inferiour to that which fame reported: the like also they vnderstoode of the ryuer Dabaiba, wherof I haue largely and sufficiently discoursed before. Which two thinges declared to the Catholike Kinge incited him to send Petrus Arias with 1200. soldiers to be slaughtered. For they are almost all deade, with out any great benefit, as I haue elsewhere sufficiently declared. The third thing perswadinge them to giue lesse credit to y which is reported, is this, nor is it repugnant to reason. It is now manifestly known through long experience, y all the inhabitantes of those Countries, to y intent to driue our men away from their borders diligently inquire what they desire: & whē they vnderstoode they desire gold, or victualls, they shewe vnto thē by signes, places y are farther distant from them, & tell thē with admiration, that they shall finde much more abundance of the things they seeke with certaine Kinges which they name, then with them. But when they went to the appointed Kinges they vnderstood they had bin deceived. Not with out cause therefore, they iudge that the like also may happen concerninge those thinges which are reported from farr Countryes. But I, imbracing this Casualty, in fauour to so great a mann, seeme to my selfe to haue found out probable, and persuauiue reasons. I disputed these thinges in the Senate of Indian affaires, in presence of the great Chancellor Mercurius a Gattinera, the cheife Comendador Fernandus Vega, Doctor, Lord dela Rochia Belga, a mann gracious with the Emperour Philippes great Chancellers sonne & the great treasurer, Licentiato Vargas, admitted after the departure of your Holines. I should blush to reckon this thinge amonge the difficult or miraculous thinges of Nature. The Malucca llands ingendring spices, are partly vnder the Æquinoctiall as I mentioned before: and these Countries if we consider the whole world occupy but a very smale space. Seeing then the æquinoctiall circle compasseth the whole world, who will denye, but that elsewhere as well

before that side of
 empires of huge
 olence of whirle-
 aticke Sea, leaste
 commonly El Lio,
 so high, that the
 te: but the North
 the South winds
 e hath perpetuall
 a Mappe of those
 wouen: wherein
 es, as enemies to
 e, and the South
 ose Inhabitantes,
 es, where (as wee
 s were ingendred.
 was reade amongst
 ported of a doubt-
 l by report of the
 uted not without
 pposed Continent
 e former Decades,
 Spanyardes were
 ue they esteemed
 o they would pro-
 dly passe ouer the
 and stout defend-
 ch looke towards
 ose sides were very
 Sea: and knew the
 ich fame reported:
 e largely and suf-
 Kinge incited him
 e almost all deade,
 e third thing per-
 t repugnant to re-
 abitantes of those
 y inquire what they
 nto the by signes,
 ey shall finde much
 ey name, then with
 y had bin deceiued.
 concerninge those
 Casualty, in fauour
 ersuasiue reasons. I
 e great Chancellor
 r, Lord dela Rochia
 sonne & the great
 es. I should blush
 ure. The Malucca
 de before: and these
 e. Seeing then the
 at elsewhere as well

as there, other countries may bee founde of the same milde temper of the Ayre, which the powerfull influence of the Sunne may inspire with that aromaticall vigor, and yet the Diuine Providence would haue them vnknown vntill our times: as wee see so great a vastity of the Ocean and earthly Countries to haue bin hetherto concealed? for those Southerne shoares of Tenustitan, are scarce 12. degrees distant from the Equinoctiall. What woonder then, if as the rest which were drowned before, we now see them discovered? and this falleth out for the increase of our Emperours felicity, the disciple of your Holines. I would the same should be spokē to such as resolute only to beleue those things, which they may attaine by the power of their owne witt, and that, in your Holines name, who haue allwayes bin a prudent searcher, of not onely the secrets of Nature ingendringe all things, but also of such as bee diuine. Besides that which hath bin already spoken I am moued with another argument. Cortes, who performed so great matters, would not in my iudgemēt, be so voyd of reason, if at his owne charge he wold blindfold vndertake so great a matter in the South Sea, as wee knowe hee embraced, in the building of 4. shippes to search out those countries, vnles he had vnderstoode some certainty, or likelyhod at the least. We haue now spoken sufficiently of these things let vs therefore returne to Ribera his familiar friend. In those Mountainties by report of the Inhabitantes, he saith, there are wild men, rough as hairy beares, contentinge themselves with montanous caues, or the naturall fruites of the earth, or such beasts as they take in huntinge. After that, we sawe another greate Mapp, a little lesse, but not lesse alluringe our mindes, which contained the city of Tenustitan it selfe described by the same hand of the inhabitantes, with her Temples, bridges, and lakes. After this I caused a boy borne in the same country (whom he carryed with him as his seruant) to bee brought vnto vs out of my chamber, furnished in warlike manner, as we sate in an open Solar. In his right hande hee held a plaine wooden sword, without stones which they vse (for they abate the edge of their warlike sword and fill the hollow and concavity thereof with sharpe stones fastened with tough and clammy Bitumen and clay) so that in fight, they may almost compare with our swordes. These stones are of that kinde of stone whereof they make their rasors, whereof I haue spoken elsewhere. He brought forth a target also made after their manner: that is to say compact and ioyned together with twiggēs or osyers, ouerlaid with golde, from the middle lower circumferences of the edge whereof, wauinge feathers hang dangling downe, more then a spann longe, set in for ornament: the inner part of the Targett was couered with a Tygers skinn: the out side had a bosse of gold in the middle, with a field or large space of fethers of diuers colours little differinge from our veluet. The boy commeth forth armed with his sword, clad with a straight garment of feathers, partly blew and partly redd with a paire of breeches of bombasin cotten, and a little napkin hanginge betweene his thighes, hauinge his breeches fastened to his garment therewith, as one that putteth off his doblet without vndoinge his poyntes from his hose, and being very well shodd, the boy thus counterfeited the practise of warr, now setting vpon the enemy, and presently retryng from them, at length hee maketh shewe as if he had taken another boy in fight, instructed for that purpose, and his fellow seruant, and halinge him by the haire of the head, as they vse violently to carry away their enemyes taken in the warres, hee draweth him to sacrifice him, & hauing layd him all along, hee seemed first to open him with a knife about the short ribbes where the hart lyeth: and then pluckinge out the hart made as if hee had drawne out the blood next vnto the hart with both his handes, and therewith besmeeringe his sword and target, he moystened and washed them. After this manner (as they say) they vse the enemyes which they haue taken. But the hart it selfe hee burneth in the fire kindled with twoe stickes rubbed together, fit for that purpose, for the fire which they supposed to be acceptable to f Goddes that fauour their warres must bee virgin fire newly kindled: the rest of the body they diuide and cutt into seuerall parts (leauing the whole bellye with the intrayles least f filth fall out) as the boyes action did demonstrate. But the head of the sacrificed enemy, hauing the flesh taken from it, euery slaughterer reserueth it set in gold for a trophy or signe of victory & causeth so many litle goldē gaping heads to be made for him, as shalbe proued he hath slaine, & sacrificed enemyes: & hāgeth the

He returns to
 Ribera.
 Hayric men.

A boy armed
 after the Indian
 manner.

He counterfeit-
 eth warr.

The head of
 the sacrificd set
 in gold for a
 Trophy.

The manner of
saluting & of-
fering of seruice
to the kinge.

A drunken spec-
tacle.

The country of
women.

A note of the
greatnesse of
Mutezuma.

Chesse } Play
Tennis }

Heree is Enuie
for the French
men that are
wed to be borne
with rackets in
their mouths.
Caudles.

thē about his necke, & it is thought, they feede vpō their mēbera. This Ribera saith, he knew f all f Princes of Mutezuma thēselues used to eate mans flesh, wherpō he suspected f Mutezuma also himself did f like: although in f case he alwayes forboare f same after they declared how foule a fault it was, & displeasing vnto God, to kill a man, how much more to eate him. After f fained solēnities of sacrificing ended by the boy, while in f meane space wee wearied Ribera with questioninge him concerninge the customs of those countryes, and the largenes thereof, hauing brought the boy into a chamber they attired him for sport, and meriment: Who came forth vnto vs cladd in another manner, taking a golden rattle curiously beautified, in his left hande, but in his right hande hee brought a garland of belles, shaking it and gently aduancinge the rattle about his head, and then presently swinging it about belowe, singinge after his country manner, hee filled the roome with dauncinge, where we sate to behold him: it was a delightfull thing to see when he came to any more honorable persō how they salute kings whē they bring presēts, with a trembling voyce, and lowly countenance, neuer presuminge to looke the kinge in the face, approachinge, & prostratinge his body hee speaketh vnto him, and deliuereth words to this effect: Hee calleth him Kinge of kinges, Lord of heauen and earth & in the name of his citty or towne hee offereth his seruice, and obedience, and of two things intreateth him to chose, which he would rather haue: Whether that they build him any house, in drawinge stones, timber, and rafters thether: or whether he purpose to vse them in tillage of the ground: They say, they are the Kinges bondmenne, and affirme that (for his sake) they haue sustained exceedinge great losses by the bordering enemyes, yet that they willingly receiued all iniuries for the reuerence, and fidelity they bare vnto him and many such like Idle speeches. Thirdly, while wee were earnestly talkinge with Ribera, f boy commeth forth of the Chamber, coiterfeitinge a drunkard: so that wee haue not seene any spectacle more like a drunken mann: when they shall obtaine any thing which they desire of their Idol godds, he saith, that two or three thousand of them come together, and fill themselves with the iuice of a certaine inebriatinge herbe, and so runn naked hether and thether through the streetes of the citty, seekinge the walles to support them, and demanding of them they meete, which is the way to their owne lodginge sometimes spittinge, and sometimes vomitinge, and often fallinge. Let this suffice for the boy. I knowe not what Ribera saith hee hath heard of a country inhabited onely by women in those Mountaines lyinge towards the North but noe certainty. For this reason (they say) it may bee beleueed, because the country is called Yguatlan for in their language Yguat signifieth a womann, and lan is a Lord or Mistres: supposinge therefore, that it is the country of women. In the meane space while the boy was prepared for diuers spectacles, amongst other arguments of the power and greatnesse of Mutezuma hee is sayde to haue had interpreters & innumerable Embassadours of diuers prouinces with him, gracinge his Court with their perpetuall residence in their Lordes behalfe, as we haue Earles Marquesses and Dukes, obseruers of Caesar. It is not much from the purpose, although it bee but a trifling matter, to declare what sports and games they vse: It is well knowne that they haue chesse bordes, by the checker worke which they haue wouen in their sheetes: but Tennis play both with them, and in our llands, is accounted the cheefest pastime. Their balles are made of the iuice of a certaine herbe which climeth on the trees, as hoppers doe vpon hedges: this iuice they boyle, which beeing hardened by heate, conuertheth into a massy substance, of the which, beeing rubd together and wrought with the hande, euery one formeth his balle at his owne pleasure, and others say, that of the rootes of the same herbes wrought together weighty balles are made: but I knowe not how, there is a ventosity in that solid body, that being strocken vpō the ground but softly, it rebounds vncredibly into the ayer. And in f sport & pastime they are very quick & nimble: so f they smite the ball with their shoulders, elbows, and heades, seldome with their handes, and sometimes with their buttockes turninge their backe from him that playeth with them while the ball is smitten, for they exercise this pastime naked like wrastlers. In steade of candels, and torches they burne the pith or heart of the pine, and they haue no other tallow, grease, or oyle: neither did they vse wax for that purpose (although they haue both hony and wax)

before

is Ribera saith, he
 rupō he suspected
 poore & same after
 a man, how much
 , while in & meane
 of those countreys,
 ired him for sport,
 ng a golden rattle
 a garland of belles,
 eently swinging it
 h dauncinge, where
 ny more honorable
 voyce, and lowly
 achinge, & prostra-
 ct: Hee calleth him
 r towne hee offereth
 ich he would rather
 timber, and rafters
 They say, they are
 ed exceeding great
 iniuries for the re-
 nes. Thirdly, while
 mber, cōterfeitinge
 anken mann: when
 he saith, that two or
 e of a certaine in-
 streetes of the city,
 meete, which is the
 e, and often fallinge
 ard of a country in-
 but noe certainty,
 called Yguatlan for
 : supposinge there-
 boy was prepared for
 e of Mutezuma hee
 prouinces with him,
 fe, as we haue Earles
 purpose, although it
 is well knowne that
 in their sheetes: but
 fest pastime. Their
 trees, as hoppers doe
 e, conuerteth into a
 h the hande, euery
 e rootes of the same
 , there is a ventosity
 ounds vncredibly into
 so & they smite the
 ades, and sometimes
 hem while the ball is
 eade of candels, and
 er tallow, grease, or
 both hony and wax)
 before

before our comminge vnto them. In the courtes or entrances of the kinges and noble mennes
 houses, they keepe three fires burninge all the night, made of those peeces or chippes of
 pine, appointinge likewise fuellers for that busines, who with perpetual supply of wood to
 the fire, maintaine the light vpon an high candlestick, curiously wrought of copper. One
 candlestick standeth in the entrance of the Court another in the cheife hall where their
 household seruants walke expectinge their Lordes pleasure: and the third within the Princes
 chamber. If they bee particularly to goe any whether, euery one carrieth his torch in his
 hande, as our menn doe a candle. But in the llandes they vse the trane or tallow of the
 Tortoyse to maintaine candle light. Hee further saith, that the cōmon sort of people con-
 tent themselves with one wife: but that euery Prince may maintaine harlots at his pleasure:
 and affirmeth also that Princes onely lye vpon beddes, and the rest on matts spread vpon
 the floore, or vpon cotton carpetts, beeing contented onely with certaine cotton sheets: the
 halfe part whereof they spread vnder them, and with the other part they couer themselues.
 Of these kinde of sheets Ribera shewed vs many. Moreouer they lye contented with num-
 ber, and measure, weights are vnknowne vnto them. I haue heeretofore sayde, that they
 haue books whereof they brought many: but this Ribera saith, that they are not made for
 the vse of readinge, but that those characters garnished and beautified with diuers Images
 and proportions, are examples and patternes of thinges from the which workemen may draw
 out examples for the fashioning of Iewels, sheets, and garments to beautify them with those
 proportions, as I see semsters euery where in Spaine, and those who with fine needles make
 silken chaine worke, roses, & flowers in linnen cloath, and many kinde of formes, to de-
 light the eye that beeholds them, the formes and proportions of all which workes they haue
 in particular samplers of linnen cloth, by direction whereof they instruct younge maydens
 and girles. What I should thinke in this variety I knowe not. I suppose them to bee bookes,
 and that those characters, and Images, signifie some other thinge, seeinge I haue seene the
 like thinges in the obeliskes and pillars at Rome, which were accounted letters consideringe
 also, that wee reade, that the Caldeis vsed to write after that manner. I remember that I
 haue written beefore, that Mutezuma at the request of Cortes, built a Pallace by his ar-
 chitects neere, vnto the Sea, 60. leagues from his owne Court, where he commaunded 2000.
 mony trees to bee planted, and many measures of Hemina of the graine Maizium to bee
 sowed, and geese and duckes, and peacokes, to be cast in for breed, with three other houses
 for seruice of the Court or Pallace: but at such time, as they were expelled out of the city, he
 saith, that the borderinge Barbarians slewe our menn, and made hauock of all. Hee maketh re-
 port also of the commodity of foode, of the salt, and potable lake: that the fish of the salt
 lake are lesse, and lesse sauory, & when the water of the salt lake floweth into the fresh,
 that the fishes bred and nourished in the salt lake, flye backe from the tast of the fresh water,
 to the course and passage of the ebbing water. And contrarily as soone as the fishes bred
 in the fresh water begin to tast the salt, they likewise returne backe. Being demanded,
 what was done concerninge the auncient forme of rites and ceremonies, or after what manner
 they receiue so sudden an alteration of their holy rites, hee saith, that all Images or Idols
 are ouerthrowne by the warre of the Conquerours: and that it is vterly forbidden to sacrifice
 mans bloud any more. And that such friends as hee left, weere perswaded to kill noe more
 menn, if they desire to please the Creator of Heauen, neuertheles hee thought it was noe
 time, that he should so suddenly compell them to chaunge and alter the customes receiued
 from their auncesters. In this one thinge onely he is supposed to haue done enough, that
 neither the Tascalticans, nor Guazuzingi, or any other friendes whatsoever, durst publicly
 any more exercise that kinde of slaughter, and butchery: yet, whether secretly they alto-
 gether abstaine hee sayth hee maketh some doubt. It is to bee hoped, that by litle and
 litle hee shall abolish their auncient ceremonies. He requireth Preists and desireth belles,
 with ornaments: all which shalbee sent vnto him, whereby many new hundred thousands
 of people shalbe subiected to your Holinesse throne.

Of fires in the
 Court.

Wines and cōcu-
 bines.

Princes onely
 lye on beddes.

Of bookes other-
 wise then in the
 4. decade chap. 8.

Three quarters of
 a pinte.

Of the fish of
 the salt and
 fresh lake.

A good step to-
 wards Christi-
 anity.

The

The sixth Decade, of Peter Martyr a Millanoise of Angleria written to the Consentine Arch Bishopp, to bee giuen to the Pope.

The first Chapter.

BEfore you returned to the citty, hauinge executed your Spanish Legation honorable, & profitable to two Popes while Spaine wanted a Kinge, by reason of his departure to take vp him & Imperiall crowne offered vnto him, I suppose, that amonge the Nobles of Spaine, who passed through the South side of our supposed Continent in the new worlde, you knewe, that Ægidius Gonsalus commonly called Gil. Gonzalez, and Licentiatu Spinoso the Lawier, were men of noe ordinary rancke. Concerninge Spinoso I wrot many things in the third booke of my Decades (while you were present) to Pope Leo, at his request. But now we haue letters from Ægidius Gonsalus two yeeres after, dated the day before the Nones of March 1524. written frō Hispaniola the Pallace or Princely Court of those countries: where (hee saith) hee arriued with an hundred and twelue thousand dragmes of gold: and that hee returned the 25. of Iuly 1523. to Pannama, the yeere before. It would arise to a great volume of paper, to declare euery little accident that befell them in so longe a space of time and distace of countryes. And the demaundes which hee requireth at the handes of the Emperor are very large, for their trauailes, & dangers sustained, & for their miserable wantes indured in that wandring Voyage: nor are there complaints, & wordes wanting concerning Petrus Arias the generall gouernour of those countryes (which vnder one denominatiō we call golden Castele) straightly desiring liberty from his will and pleasure: among which hee saith { he is more nobly borne, as if it made any matter, whether those & are chose of the kings for the effecting of such laborious and waighy affaires, were borne of base and idle victuallers, or Hectorean, and valiant menn, especially in Spaine where for the most part they suppose, the Nobilitye haue a speciall prerogatiue, to liue Idley, without any exercise or imployment, except it were in the warres, and that as commanders, not as ordinary & priuate soldiers. I receiued letters from you deliuered me by the hands of your Iohannes Paulus Oliuerius dated in the citty the Nones of Maye, whereby amonge other things, you say, that Pope Clement is noe lesse delighted with these relations, then his cousin german Leo, or Pope Adrian his Prædecessors were, who by their letters mandatory commanded me to set downe the same the same in writing. Of many things I haue gathered a few, to be directed vnto you, not vnto his Holines, which if as his nephew Leo, or as his Successor Adrian did, he shal cōmand me to write, I willingly obey otherwise, I will forbear & labour, leas by scandalous mouthes I be iudged to haue incurred & sclaunder of temerity. Obseruinge therefore our manner, little regardinge & slight affection of & writers, we will shortly touch such things as we thinke necessary to be known, neither shal & cheife point of your Epistle diuert me a iot frō this purpose, where you say, & through & perswasio of Iohn Granatensis & elect Bishop of Vienna, whatsoever Fernandus Cortes, the Conqueror of those huge coutries of & Iucatanex & Tenustitā, hath written to & Emperors Couell of & Indian affaires, & to & Emperor himselfe, was translated in Germany, word for word out of & Spanish tongue, into & Latine: for out of the, & by relation of others (as you knowe) I haue made special choice of such things as I thought worthy & noting. Let vs now therefore at length come to & matter, & begin with & Colonies erected, to the intēt & the auncient Geography being more easily perceiued, the vnderstanding may apprehēd, what coasts, & countryes this Ægidius hath trauailed. Cōcerning & largenes of those coutries, which thrice exceede all Europe in length, & yet the ende thereof not discovered, I haue made mētion in my former Decades (vnder & name of & supposed Cōinēt) subiect to & printers presse, & sufficiently spread abroad through out the Christiā world. We wrot & they lay in the probatiō or prooffe of the Latitud of the riuier Maragnō, & & this lād hath two huge, & mighty Seas: this our Ocean, butting vpon that Northerne coutry, & the other, & South sea. These things presupposed, his Holines may vnderstand & on the sides of & land, there are six Colonyes planted by the Spaniards: three on the North, vpon the banke, or shoare of the riuier Darien

Letters from
Ægidius Gonsalus.

A spotte vpon the
nobility of
Spaine.

in

in the Gulfe of Vraha, one called Sancta Maria antiqua 30. leagues from Darien Acla: & the third, called Nomē Dei, in the dominion of king Careta, 37. leagues distant from Acla. And on the South shoare they haue erected as many, one whereof, leauinge the country Name, they haue called Pannama, the second Natan, 31. leagues from Pannama, & the third called Chiriqui, they built 75. leagues from Natan.

The second Chapter.

OVt of the Hauen of § North Colony called Nomen Dei, the Inhabitantes, with Petrus Arias the Gouvernour, determined to make a way to Pannama standing on § South shoare, through the moûtaines ouergrown with thick woods neuer touched from all æternity, and vnp-possible to passe ouer by reason of the steepe and dangerous rocks, reachinge vp to Heauen. For that distance of lande betwene both Seas is 17. leagues onely, which containe about some 50. miles, although elsewhere the land be very broad and so enlarged, that from the mouth of the riuier Maragnon fallinge into the Ocean from the North, to the Antartick, it extendeth it selfe more then 54. degrees beyond the Æquator, as I thinke you sawe in that Decade directed vnto Adrian, who lately dyed, which I sent you to be giuen to his Successor, although intituled by another name, because he was preuēted by death, without receiuinge the Decade where mention is made at large, concerning the llandes ingendringe spices, foud out by that waye. Through this narrow strait of land therefore, at the great cost and charge both of the kinge and Inhabitantes breaking the rocks, and felling downe the woods which were a couert for diuers wild beastes, they make that way able to giue passage to two carts at once, to the intent they might passe ouer with ease to search § secrets of either spacious Sea, but they haue not yet perfited the same. From the lland therefore which in my former Decades (I sayd was called Dites, but now the lland of Pearle, because there is great store of pearle there, seated within the view of the Colony Pannama, Ægidius Gonsalus saith, that the 21. day of Iaury in § yeere of our Lord God 1522. he set sayle vnto the West, with a smale, and almost an vnarmed flecte of 4. shippes, to the end that by the Emperours commaund, he might obey the counsell and aduise of our kings Senate, from whom hee receiued this charge, to view the westernne coasts neuer yet attempted, and make diligent search, whether betwene the furthest boundes of the same supposed Continent lately knowne, and the beginninge or first entrance of the country of the lucatanes, any straight or narrow Sea might be founde, diuidinge betwene those huge Cōtreyes: in few wordes to cōclude, they finde no straight at all: but what he performed (omitting many circumstances & many noted, & obserued) you shal heare. He writeth § in the space almost of 17. monethes, he passed six hundred and 40. leagues (which amount to 2000. miles or thereabout) to the West, through the coasts of strange countryes, and dominions of pettie kings. At what time while his broken ships, (and eaten through with Sea wormes which the Spāiards call Broma) were repaired, wantinge also necessarye victuals hee was compelled to trauaile the rest by lande. Hee passed through the heart of the cōtrie 244. leagues, with an hundred menn or thereabouts, begginge breade for himselfe, and his followers of many kinges, from whom (hee sayth) hee hadd giuen him 112000. dragmes of gold: (Pensum is a dragme and a fourth part more, as you must needs haue learned through your singular familiarity, and conuersation with the Spaniards for fourtene yeeres space:) and hee further sayth that more then 32000. persons of both sexes, were willingly baptised by such as hee hadd with him, who hadd receiued baptisme, and entred into the rules, and first principles of Religion: and that he sayled so farre, that on the backe side of the Prouince of lucatane, he found the same customes, & manner of behauiour, & speech which § lucatane inhabitāts chiefly vse. Of § 112000. Pensa of gold brought by § Treasurer Cerezeda sent frō him he saith he sedeth vnto Cæsar for § kings portiō, on § on part 17. thousand Pensa of halfe pure gold, which attaineth to § degrees of twelue, & thirteene, on § other part 15000. 3. hūdrēd and sixty Pensa. In hatchets, which they vse in steed of Iron & steele ones made fitt for the cutting of wood or timber, he writeth that by testimony of the ouerseers, appointed for that purpose deducting the Pensa of euery one of them a litle more thē halfe a Ducate of gold, each

A way of 30. miles in length cut throw the mountaynes from Nomen Dei to Pannama.

The lland of Pearle.

Ægidius Gonsalus with 4. shippes sayles towards the West.

Beggars well rewarded.

32000. persons baptised.

The kinges part of gold.

Hatchets of gold.

Smiths that
make rusticali
instruments of
gold.

The pallace of
pety king, & of
the fall thereof.

The hausen of
S. Vincent.

King Nicolianus
his courteous en-
tertainment &
great gifts of
gold.

Nicoianus de-
sireth baptisme
& is baptizd
with 1000. more
of his subiectes.

Nicoianus his
sincerity in ban-
ishing of his
Images.

hath their true valewe. But that which we greatly esteeme, is that we haue founde coun-tries, where smithes worke, and also rusticali Instruments are all made of gold, though not pure. In belles also made of gold, wherein they are greatly delighted, he sayth he hath sent fourescore & six, weighing aboue 6000 Pensa, which attaine almost nos degree by the assay of the ouerseers: in y the belles shakē to & fro, sound more dull or shrill, our men suppose they are so made without any order, or rule: for y ringinge of gold (as you must needes know) y purer the gold is so much more duler is y sould thereof. And recoūting māy things more particularly, he sayeth, y by reasō of their wading through y riuers, and the often showers of raine, in regard they were our winter monethes: although, neere vnto the Æquinoctiall they were not so oppressed with colde, yet hee, and his consorts fell into diuers diseases, which hindered them from makinge great Iourneyes. Passinge ouer to a strange land in their Canows with the Prouincialls or inhabitants of that prouince, which by testimony of his companions is tenn leagues longe and six broade, he was courteously intertained by the King of the Ilande, whose Court or Pallace was erected in forme of a warlike pavilion, built with vnder setters or crosse beames vpon a litle rising hill, & couered with reede, and grasse to defend them from the raine. In this Iland, and neere about the Pallace runneth a mighty riuier which diuideth it selfe into two armes: this riuier as hee sayth, at that time that he remained with that king intercepted of his Iourney, did so ouerflowe almost the whole Ilande with inuudations of water, & so surrounded the kings house it selfe to the heighth of a manns girdell, that through the fury of the increase thereof, the very foundations of the pillars sustayning y Pallace being ouer throwne, & moued out of their places, y house it selfe fell downe. But (he saith) that the endes of the beames being fastened, held the house together that it should not wholly fall vpon them: so that they were forced to cut out a dore with axes, whereat they might issue forth. From whence they fledd for refuge to the boughes of high trees, where (he saith) himselfe, his companions, and their hostes that receiued them, remayned for the space of two dayes, while the waters returned to their channels, after the rayne ceased. He reporteth diuers particular accidents. But it is sufficient for you, if principally you make blessed Clemēt partaker of these trifling matters of Fortune, whom that greate and waighty pontificall charge ought alwayes to deteine buisied in great assayres. All prouision of victuall being taken away by this inundation, cōpelled through want, and being about yet to seeke foode by land, he traualleth further to y West, yet neuer leaving the vewe of y shoare, at length he came to an hausen already known, which our men called the hausen of S. Vincent. Where he found his consorts arriued, with whom he thus mett, after he departed from them while they repayed their shippes, and water coake.

The third Chapter.

HAuing saluted his cōpanions as the time would permitt & speedily deliberating what euery one should doe, taking 4. horses out of y ships which he brought with him, he cōmandeth thē of y flete to sayle by litle & litle directly towards the West. And chargeth them to beware of sayling by night, by reasō of the rockes, & sādy shouldees, because they were now to passe through the vnknown coastes of the Sea, but he, with those 4. horses, & about 100. foote traualing by land, light on a Kinge called Nicoianus: this Nicoianus hauinge courteously intertained him, gaue him 14000. Pensa of gold: being perswaded by our mē y there was another Creator of heauen & earth about the sunne then they supposed, who made the sunne it selfe, & the moone & the rest of the visible stars, of nothing, & gouerned thē by his wisdom, who also rewardeth euery man according to his deserts. Whereupō he desired with all his family to be baptised; & by the kings example, a thousand men of his kingdome or thereabouts were baptised. Hauing remained about 17. dayes space with Nicoianus, hee left him so well instructed, that hee deliuered thees wordes in his owne language (vnderstoode by the bordering Interpreters) at such time as they departed. Seeing I shall neuer hereafter speake any more to these auncient Images of the Gods, nor euer desire any thinge at their handes, take them away with you. And speakinge thus to Ægidius Gonsalus he gaue him six golden Images of a spann longe, the auncient monuments of his ancesters. Fifty leagues

que founde coun-
gold, though not
sayth he hath sent
egree by the assay
our men suppose
as you must needes
nd recoiting may
riuers, and the
gh, neere vnto the
orts fell into diuers
ouer to a strange
which by testimony
usly intertained by
a warlike pavilion,
red with reede, and
the Pallace runneth a
th, at that time that
almost the whole
life to the heighth
foundations of the
places, & house it
ened, held the house
e forced to cut out a
dd for refuge to the
their hostes that re-
turned to their chan-
But it is sufficient
ing matters of For-
p deteine buisied in
inundation, cōpelled
h further to the West,
already known, which
s arriued, with whom
opes, and water caske.

ly deliberating what
ght with him, he cō-
West. And chargeth
ouldes, because they
h those 4. horses, &
this Nicioianus hau-
g perswaded by our
n they supposed, who
nothing, & gouerned
serts. Whereupō he
assand men of his king-
pace with Nicioianus,
vne language (vnder-
Seeing I shall neuer
uer desire any thinge
idius Gonsalus he gaue
his auncesters. Fifty
leagues

leagues distant frō the Pallace of Nicioianus, he vnderstoode, that the Kinge called Nicoragua, had his kingdom: staying therefore one dayes Iourney from the princely seat of Nicoragua, he sent messengers to deliuer the same message to the King which our men were wont to declare to the rest of the kinges before they would further presse them, that is to say: that they should become Christians, and that they admitt the lawes and subiection of the great Kinge of Spaine: but if he refused, then they would rayse warr, and vse violence against him. The next day after fowre Nicoraguanian Noble menn came forth to meete him, sayinge in their Kinges behalfe, that they desire peace and baptisme. Our menn goe forward to Nicoragua, whom they constraine to receiue holy baptisme with all his household, and somewhat more then 9000. menn besides. This Nicoragua gaue vnto Ægidius Gonsalus 15000. Pensa of gold made into diuers Jewels. Ægidius recompenced his gifts with other presents, and gaue vnto Nicoragua a silken garment, and an inner vesture of linnen wouen, and also a purple capp: and erecting two crosses, one in their temple, and another without the towne he departed: and went vnto another cōtry about 6. leagues of, makinge his way alwayes to the West: where (hee sayth) hee found 6. villages, euery of them consisting of about 2000. houses a peece. The fame & report of our menn being heard, while they staid amongst those 6. villages, another Kinge further to the West called Diriangen (desirous to see them) came vnto our menn accompanied with 500. menn, and 20. woemenn, tenn auncients, and fūe Trumpeters goinge before him after their manner. The King comminge to Gonsalus expectinge his approach in a throne adorned with rich and princely furniture, commaunded to sounde the Trumpetts and presently to cease, & the auncients that went before him to be layde down & euery one of the men, one, brought one, the other, two foules like vnto peacocks, not inferior in tast, nor greatnes. These foules are their domestical powltry: as hēnes are with vs. I make a litle digression with your leaue: & repeate many particulars of this sort, who being but an vnskillfull husbandman instruct Æsculapius in medicine: for māy of these things are very well known to you, & dilated at large in my Decades. But supposing that these relations may come vnto the hands of men desirous thereof, to whom they are vnknowne, vnlikely to obtaine your interpretation, I repeate them, that for your sake, they might obtaine their desire: do not you therefore accuse me, who are borne for the benefit of many. This kinge Diriangen by his seruants brought about 200. hatchets, euery of them weighing 18. Pensa, or somewhat more. Beinge demanded by Interpreters, which Ægidius had of his next bordering neighbours, who vnderstoode our menn, what cause moued him to come: he is sayd to haue answered, that it might be graunted him to behold a strange Nation, which he had heard, trauailed those countryes, and offeringe, that whatsoever they desired of him, he would performe their demaundes. Whereupon they admonished them (by alledginge the same reasons they vsed to perswade the rest) to become Christians, & that they would submitt themselues to the obedience of the great king of Spaine. Hee saith, hee was contented to doe both, and promised the third day to returne vnto our menn to receiue their charge. And so he departed.

The fourth Chapter.

IN the meane time, while our menn remained with Nicoragua, many thinges fell out betwene them not vnworthy the relatinge. For beside that I gathered them out of the letters of Ægidius, the kings Questor with him, cōmonly called the Treasurer, one Andreas Cerezeda, no meane partaker of all their trauailes, & labours, told me, & departinge left me his writings. Ægidius, the commander of our soldiers & Nicoragua the king falling in to diuers discourses for recreation, while they were at leasure, by an Interpreter which Ægidius had brought vp, borne not very far frō the kingdome of Nicoragua, who perfectly spake both languages. Nicoragua demāded of Ægidius what was thought (with the mighty king, whose servant he confesseth himselfe to be) concerninge the generall flood past, which as hee had heard his auncesters say, ouerwhelmed the whole earth with men & beastes. Ægidius sayth it is beleueed that it was so: beinge demanded whether he thought it should come againe, he answered, noe: but as once by the inuadon of waters for the wicked misdeedes of men,

Ægidius Gonsalus sends messengers to h. Nicoragua with offer of the chrysm of Christianity & subiection, or warrs. Nicoragua with all his household & 9000. men besides receiue baptisme. Nicoragua giues to Ægidius 15000. Pensa of gold. a Crosses erected.

Diriangen a king hearinge of the fame of Ægidius Gonsalus comes to see him.

King Diriangen presents to Ægidius Gonsalus 200. hatchets of gold.

It is very remarkable how apte the barbarians are alwayes to receiue the Christian religion.

Notable questions proposed by Nicoragua to Ægidius Gonsalus. A tradition of Noah his flood amongst these Indians.

The generall
combustion to
come.

Nicoragua made
a questiō whe-
ther Gonsalus
and his company
cam from heauen
or no.

He questions
of the departure &
places of Soules
departed, of
times & seasons
which God hath
put in his owne
power. Act i. 7.

Naturall ques-
tions.

Diuine ques-
tions touching
earthly matters.

Intemperancy
and the sedes
thereof.

Marriage.

Sacrificing of
mankinde dis-
waded.

Their Idolles
the Images and
invention of the
deuill.

& cheifly, for their vnlawfull & mōstrous lust, all liuing creatures (a fewe only excepted) perished, so after an appointed terme of yeeres (vnknown to men) it should come to passe y through flaminge fire cast downe from heauen, all things should be cōsumed to ashes: wondering at this discourse, they were all strickē with astōishmēt. Whereupon Nicoragua turning to the interpreter, with a discontented countenance demanded of him: Whether this so wise & vnderstanding a Nation came from Heauen: the Interpreter sayth they were sent downe from Heauen. Then out of his simplicity & innocēcy he asked him, whether he came directly down or in a circuite, and compasse like a bowe or arch, the Interpreter sayth, hee knewe not that, who was borne in the same country where Nicoragua was, or in the next. After this he commanded the Interpreter to aske his Maister Ægidius, whether the earth should euer be turned vpside downe: Whereunto Ægidius answered, declaring that this was a secret resting onely in his mind who is the Creator of Heauen, Earth, and menn. And questioninge him further concerninge the vniuersall consummation of mankinde, and of the places appointed for the soules departed out of the prison of the body, and of the determined time of sendinge downe that fire, when the sunne, and moone, and the rest of the starres shall cease to giue their light, and of the motion, quantity, distance, and effects of the starres and many things besides. Ægidius although hee were very wise, and delighted to reade common bookes translated out of the Latine tongue, yet hadd hee not attained that learninge, that he could otherwise answer this, then that y knowledg of those thinges was reserued in the brest of y diuine prouidence. Nicoragua further demanding of him concerning the blowing of the windes, and the causes of heate and colde, and of the varietie of dayes and nights, although it be very smal with them (because they are but a litle distant from the Equinoc-tiall) and many such like questions, Ægidius answered Nicoragua satisfying him in many thinges according to the ability of his iudgement, and commēding the rest to the diuine intelligence. Nicoragua and his familiar Courtiers descending afterwarde to earthly thinges, demanding whether without sinne, they might eate, drinke, vse the act of generation, play, sing, and dance, and exercise arms, he answered them after this manner: he sayth they might cheere themselves with meates, and drinckes, but auoyde gluttony and surfeiting: for whatsoeuer is taken beyonde the necessitie of nature, is receiued both against the excellencie of the minde, and health of the bodie, and thereby he sayth that the seeds of vices, braules, and priue hatred, and displeasure are stirred vp, and reuiued: and that it is lawfull to vse the act of generation, but with one woman onely, and her, coopled and ioyned in mariage. And if they desire to please that God who created all thinges, they must abstaine from any other kinde of lust whatsoeuer: and that it was not forbidden to delight themselves with singing, honest sportes, and dancing in their due tymes. Seeing they questioned him not concerning their ceremonies, nor slaughtering of menne in sacrifice, hee mooued conference thereof himselfe, and saith, that those oblations of sacrifices were most displeasing vnto God, & y with his Maister the great King there was a Law made, that whosoever slewe any man with the sword, should dye by the sworde. And he further sayth, that those Idolles, whereunto they sacrifice mans bloud, are the Images & representations of deluding deuilles, who being cast out of Heauen for their pride, are throwne downe to the pitte of hel. From whence, going out by night, they shewe themselves for the most parte to innocent men, & perswade them through their deceitfull artes, that those thinges are to bee done, which ought in all kinde of things to bee auoyded, to the intent they might estrange our soules from his loue, who created them, and desireth by charity, and other honest actions of lyfe to reduce them againe vnto him, least beeing violently carryed away by those wicked spirites from eternall delightes, vnto perpetuall tormentes, and miserable woes, they be made companions of the damned.

The fift Chapter.

After that Ægidius, like a pulpit preacher, had thus reasoned, or in the like sense, by his Interpreter he signified the same to Nicoragua as well as hee coulede. Nicoragua assented to the wordes of Ægidius, and withall demaunded what hee shoulde doe, that they might please that

Nicoragua de-
mandeth to
know how to
please God.

only excepted) should come to passe as to ashes: won- Nicoragua turn- Whether this so h they were sent him, whether he Interpreter sayth, was, or in the next, whether the earth ringe that this was and menn. And kinde, and of the of the determined rest of the starres ffects of the starres hted to reade com- ned that learninge, es was reserued in concerning the blow- of dayes and nights, from the Equinoc- fying him in many est to the diuine in- e to earthly things, of generation, play, he sayth they might urefiting: for what- st the excellencie of s of vices, braules, at it is lawfull to vse ioynd in marriage. st abstaine from any ght themselues with questioned him not moued conference displeasing vnto God, neuer slewe any man those Idolles, where- luding deuilles, who pitte of hel. From to innocent men, & e done, which ought e our soules from his ons of lyfe to reduce wickid spirites from be made companions

he like sense, by his Nicoragua assented to that they might please that

that God, the author of all things, of whom he maketh report. Cerezeda the Kings treasurer with him, witnesseth that Ægidius answered Nicoragua in this manner: hee who created vs, and all things, is not delighted with the slaughter of menne, or shedding of bloude, but in the feruent loue onely of our mind towards him, hee greatly reioyceth, the secrets of our hearte are apparant vnto him, hee desireth onely the meditations of the hearte it selfe, he feedeth not on flesh, or bloude, there is nothing wherewith he is more angry and displeased, then with the destruction of menne, of whom he desireth to be magnified, and glorified. These abhominable sacrifices are pleasing, and all impious, and wicked actions are acceptable to his, and your enemies cast downe to the bottomelesse pitte of Hell, whose Images you heere obserue, to the ende that they may drawe your soules (departing hence) together with themselves into eternall ruine and destruction. Throwe these vaine, nay pernicious Idolles, out of your houses and temples: and imbrace and entertaine this Crosse, the Image whereof the Lorde Christ beedewed with his bloude for the saluation of mankind that was lost: and hereby yee may promise vnto your selues happie yeeres, and blessed eternitie to your soules. Warres, also are odious to the creator of all things, and peace amonge neighbours is amiable, whom hee commaundeth vs to loue as our selues: yet, if leading a peaceable lyfe any doe prouoke you, it is lawfull for euery manne to repell iniury, and to defende himselfe, and his goods, and substance. But to prouoke any through the desire of ambition, or couetousnesse, is vtterly forbidden: and that these things are done both against common ciuility, and also against the will of God himselfe. These things thus playnly declared, Nicoragua, & his Courtiers who were present fixing their eyes with open mouth vpon the countenance of Ægidius, consented to all other things beefore propounded, but to this one concerning warlike affaires, they made a wry mouth: and demanded where they shoulde cast their weapons, golden helmets, or whether they should throw their bowes and arrowes, their military ornaments, and their renowned warlike ensignes, shall we giue them (say they) to women, to vse? & shall we handle their spindles, and distaffes, and till the ground after the rusticall maner? Ægidius durst not answer them any thing to this, because he knewe they spoake it halfe discontented. But when they asked him concerning the mistery of the Crosse to be adored, and of the benefit thereof, hee saith, that if with a pure, and sincere heart looking vpon it, (mindfull with a religious zeale of Christ who suffered thereon) you shall desire any thing ye shall obtaine it, so ye desire iust and honest things: if peace, or victory against your enemies, plentie of fruits, if temperatnes of the ayre, or saftie and health, and if ye propound such other like things to bee desired and wished for, ye shal obtaine your desires. I haue mentioned beefore, that Ægidius erected them two Crosses, one vnder a rooffe, and another in the open ayre, vppon an high hill of bricke made by hande: at what time it was carried to bee sette vppon the hill, Cerezeda saith that the Priestes went beefore the glorious and pompous shewe in procession, and Ægidius followed with his souldiers and traine, the King accompanying him, and the rest of his subiectes. At what tyme the Crosse was sette vppe, they beganne to sound the Trumpettes, and stricke vppe the Drummes. The Crosse being fastened, Ægidius with his heade discovered, and bowing the knee, ascended first to the foote thereof, by the steppes whiche were layde, and powred out his secrete prayers there, and imbracing the steppes of the Crosse, lastly kissed them. The King, and by his example all the rest did the like. So beeing instructed in our rites and ceremonies he made a decree. Concerning the distribution of dayes saith he, sixe whole daies ye are continually to apply your selues to tillage, and the rest of your labours, and arts, and the seuenth, you must diligently attende sacred and religious exercises, and hee appointed them the Lordes day for the seuenth, nor did hee suppose it to be profitable to be further trouble- some vnto them with a long rancke of holy dayes. I will adde one thing onely omitted by Ægidius himselfe in the discourse of his narration, which Cerezeda recyteth. All the Bar- barians of those Nations are beardless, and are terribly afraide, and fearefull of bearded men: and therefore of 25. beardless youthees by reason of their tender yeeres, Ægidius made bearded men with the powlinges of their heades, the haire being orderly composed, to the end, that the number of bearded men might appeare the more, to terrifie the if they should

Ægidius his reply.

This good doctrine concerning war: onely ex- cepted agaynst by the Barba- rians.

He acquainted them with the Saboth.

The Barbarians of these nations are beardless in great feare of bearded men vpon this occasion Gonsalus used a pretie be policy.

Ægidius Gons.
When he set
sayle for the
straight.

The fashion of
the kings courtes
in these parts
and the maner
of their other
buildings.

Their Temples.

Auncients
paynted with
diuelles.

be assailed by warre, as afterwarde it fell out. Cerezeda added that Ægidius wrote vnto him, that with 250. foote mustered in Hispaniola, and 70. horse, he set sayle about the Ides of March 1524. to the desired prouince to seeke the Strayght. But this matter is not yet reported to our Senate, when we haue it, you shall haue notice thereof. Nowe at length, let vs passe ouer these thinges, and come a little to that horrible Lestrigonian custome of those Nations, and to the situations, and buildinges of their houses and temples. The length of their kinges courtes consisteth of 100. paces, and the breadth 15. the frontes whereof are open, but are all close behinde. The pauements or floares of their pallaces are erected halfe a mans stature from the ground the rest, are nothing raysed from the earth. All their houses are made of tymber, and couered with strawe, and haue but one roose or couering, without any boorded floare. Their temples also are built after the same manner: they are large, and replenished with lowe, darke, inner chappels, wherein euery noble manne hideth his housholde goddes, and they haue them also for Armoryes: for there with their Auncients painted with Diuelles, they keepe their warlike weapons, their bowes, quiuers, golden brest plates, and golden helmettes, and broade wooden swardes, wherewith they fight hande to hande and their darts also whiche they cast a farre of, and diuers ornamentes of warre, during the time of peace, and to the proper Images of the goddes left by their Auncesters, according to their abilities they slay particular sacrifices of mans flesh, and adore them with affected prayers of vowes or desires, composed by the priests after their manner.

The sixt Chapter.

The situation
of the Kings
courts and no-
blemens houses.

Gold smithes.

Pillars erected
for thabominable
sacrifices.

Their accursed
altar of sacrifice.

A blouddie
preacher.

Two kinds of
Sacrifices.

Large and great streetes garde the frontes of the Kinges courts, according to the disposition and greatnes of their village or towne. If the town consist of many houses, they haue also little ones, in which, the trading neighbours distant from the Court may meete together. The chiefe noble mens houses compasse and inclose the kinges streete on euery side: in the middle site whereof one is erected which the Goldsmithes inhabite. Golde is there moulten and forged to be formed and fashioned into diuers Iewelles, then being brought into small plates, or barres, it is stamped or coyned after the pleasure of the owners thereof, and at length is brought into the forme and fashion they desire, and that neatly too. Within the viewe of their Temples there are diuers Bases or Pillers like Pulpittes erected in the fieldes, of vnburnde bricke, and a certayne kind of clammie earthy Bitumen which serueth for diuers vses and effectes, which Bases consist of eight steppes or stayres in some place twelue, and in another fiftene the space of the highest parte of the toppe thereof is diuers, according to the qualitie of the designed mistery, one of these is capable of tenne men, in the middle space whereof standeth a marble stone higher then the rest, equalling the length and breadth of a mans stature lying all along: this cursed stone is the altar of those miserable sacrifices: at the appoynted day for sacrifice, the people rounde about beholding the same, the King ascendeth another pulpitte in the viewe, to beeholde the execution thereof. The Prieste in the audience of all, from that eminent stone, standing on his feete performeth the office of a Preacher, and shaking a sharpe knife of a stone, whiche hee hath in his hand (for they haue quarries of stone in al those countries, fit for the making of hatchets and swordes, whereof we may haue as many as we will, and the Cardinall Ascanius was not ignorant hereof) proclaymeth that sacrifices are to be slaine, whether they be of the bodies of their enemies, or bred at home. For there are two kinds of humane sacrifices with them: the one, of enemies taken in the warres, the other of such as are brought vp and maintained at home: for euery king, or Noble manne from their infancie maintaine sacrifices at home to be slaine, to their abilitie, they also not being ignorat wherfore they are kept and fed more daintily then the rest, who are not sadde & sorowfull for the same, beecause from their tender yeeres they liue so perswaded, that through that kinde of death, they should be turned into goddes or heauenly creatures. Hereupon walking freely through the villages and townes, they are reuerently receiued of all that meete them, as if they were halfe deified alreadie, and are sent away laden with whatsoever they demande, whether they desire any thing for foode, or ornament: nor doth

The sixth Decade.

wrote vnto him, about the Ides of er is not yet re- we at length, let custome of those

The length of ontes whereof are s are erected halfe

All their houses couering, without hey are large, and panne hideth his th their Ancients bowes, quiuers, s, wherewith they diuers ornaments oddes left by their of mans flesh, and priests after their

ding to the dispo- y houses, they haue ay meete together. every side: in the de is there moulten brought into small ers thereof, and at y too. Within the ected in the fieldes, ch serueth for diuers e place twelue, and a diuers, according men, in the middle length and breadth miserable sacrifices: he same, the King of. The Prieste in meth the office of a hand (for they haue swords, whereof we orant hereof) pro- of their enemies, or the one, of enemies at home: for euery o be slaine, to their re daintly then the der yeeres they liue into goddess or hea- , they are reuerently are sent away laden , or ornament: nor doth

doth he who giueth to the goddess, suppose, that day fell out vnluckily with him, wherein he bestoweth something. Therefore they diuersly handle these diuers kinds of sacrifices in offering them to their Idols. They stretch out either sacrifice on that stone flat vpon their backe, and after the like manner open them through the short ribbes, plucking out the heart, and with the blood of either obseruing the same rule, they annoint their lips, and beards, but the preaching Priest holding a knife in his hande, compassing the enemye whiche is to bee sacrificed with certayne mournfull songes, being layde along vpon the stone, goeth thrice about him, and then openeth him, and after that cutteth him into smal peeces, and being cutte diuideth him in this manner to be eaten. The handes and also the feete are both giuen vnto the king, the harts are giuen to the Priestes, their wiues, and children, who by the Law ought to haue them, the thighes are diuided to the Nobilitie, and the rest to the people in peeces: but the heads in steede of a trophy or signe of victory, are hunge vpon the boughes of certayne small trees a little way distant from the place of execution, where they are pre- serued for that purpose. Euery king nourisheth his appointed trees in a fielde neere vnto him, obseruing the names of euery hostile country, where they hange the heads of their sacrificed enemies taken in the warres (as our Commanders and Captaynes fasten the hel- mettes, colours, and such like ensignes to the walles of churches) as witnesses of their outrageous crueltie whiche they call victory. And whosoever should haue no parte nor portion of the sacrificed enemye, would thinke he shoulde bee ill accepted that yeere. But although they teare the domestical sacrifice in peeces after the same manner, and order, yet they vse it otherwise beeing deade: they reuerence all parts thereof, and partly bury them before the dores of their temples, as the feete, handes, and bowels, which they cast together into a gourd, the rest (together with the hartes, making a great fire within the view of those hostile trees, with shrill hymns, and applauses of the Priestes) they burne among the ashes of the former sacrifices, neuer thence remoued, lying in that field.

The seventh Chapter.

NOW when the people perceiue by the accustomed murmur, and whispering of the Priestes, that the gods lippes are rubbed, they vter their vowes, and prayers, & desire the fertilitie of their ground and plentie of other fruits, salubrity of the ayre, & peace, or if they are to fight, victory and euery one through torment of minde earnestly intreateth them to driue from them the flies and locustes, and to remoue inundations, and drought, and violence of wilde beastes, and all aduersitie. Not content with these sacrifices, the King, Priestes, and Nobles, sacrifice to one Idoll onely with their owne bloude. This Idoll fastened to the toppe of a speare of three cubites longe, the elder sorte authorised thereunto with great pompe in the face of heauen out of the Temple, where it is religiously kept all the yeere: and it is like the infernall goddess, after the same manner that is paynted vpon the walles to terrifie men. The mytred Priestes goe before, and a multitude of people following after carry euery one their banners of wouen cotton painted with a thousande colours, with the images & representations of their diuels. From the Priestes shoulders, couered with diuers linnen clothes, certayne belts more then a finger thicke, hange downe vnto the ancles, at the fringed endes whereof seuerall purses are annexed, wherein they carry sharpe rasors of stone, and little bagges of powders made of certayne dried hearbes. The king, and his Nobles followe the Priestes behinde in their order, and after them the confused multitude of the people to a man: none that can stand on his feete may bee absent from these ceremonies. Being come vnto the appointed place, first strawing sweete smelling hearbes, or spreading sheets or couerlettes of diuers colours vnder them, that the speare may not touch the ground, they make a stand, and the priestes supporting the same they salute their litle diuel with their accustomed songes, and hymnes: the young men leape about it tripping, & dancing with a thousande kinds of antique sports, vaunting their agiity, and nimblenesse of body by the shaking of their weapons, & targets. The priestes making a signe vnto them, euery one taketh his rasor, and turning their eyes vnto the Idoll, they gash and wound their owne tongues, some thrust them through, and the most part cut them, so that the blood issueth forth

The manner of their sacrificing.

An Idoll whereunto the King Priestes & Nobles sacrifice with their owne bloude. This may be called the diuels procession.

forth in great abundance all of them (as we sayd in the former sacrifices) rubbe the lippes and beard of that foolish Idol: then presently applying the powder of that hearbe, they fill their woundes. They say the vertue of that powder is such, that within few houres their vlcers are cured, so that they seeme neuer to haue bene cutte. These ceremonies ended, the Priestes bowe downe the speare a litle, at what tyme, the king first, then the Nobles, and lastly the people whisper the Idoll in the eare, & euery one vttereth the turbulent and tempestuous outrage of his minde, and bending the heade to one shoulder, with reuerent trembling, and mumbling they humbly beseech, that luckily, and happily he would fauour their desires. Being thus deluded by the Priestes, they returne home again. While they applied theselues to the diligent search of these, and such like other idle toyes, beholde, first one, then another, and after that, many spies or scouts came, who brought tidings that Diriangen was come, armed: for he came not onely with a purpose to take againe that which he hadde giuen, but also to kill our men, presuming vpon the small number of men which he had discovered, and with an hope to possesse that which our men had with them: for euen they themselves loue golde, though not as money and coyne, but for the making of Jewels, for ornament sake: hee came therefore with a great troope of men accompanying him, armed after their manner, hee setteth vpon our men, whom, if he had found vnprouided, he had killed them euery man. So they fought fiercely vntill the night.

Diriangen with a great troope armed after their manner sets vpon the Christians.

The eight Chapter.

Here hee reporteth many things, which I omit, least we should be troublesome, I vnto you, & you vnto his Holinesse, and your friends: & therefore you may collect the rest. Our small company of men ouercame their great armies: hee reciteth religiously and with feare & trembling that God, who is the Lord of hosts was present with them, and brought them safely out of that danger. Nicoianus the king left behinde, vnto whom he was constrained to returne, following the change of fortune, practised to slaughter them, & to take away from them the golde which they caryed. Egidius Gonsalus suspecting the same, did not committe himselfe to Nicoianus. Therefore setting his men in battaile array, and so keeping them, and placing the weake wounded men, & the gold in the middest of the array of footemen in the battaile, with those 4. horsemen, and 17. shot, and bowmen, he sustained the fury of the warriours, and slewe many. That night hee slept not, at the first dawning of the day, they desire peace, and peace is grated. So they returne to the haven of S. Vincent from whence they departed. Where they found the shippes returned, whiche had now sayled about 300. leagues to the West of an vnkowne sea, while the Admirall Egidius made diligent search within the country. But they returned, as he saith, to repaire their ships againe in that haven, which were bruised, and battered after many monethes wandring and sayling. Hee describeth the bordering country of Nicoragua after this manner. On the very inner side of the Court of Nicoragua he sayth he found a lake of fresh water whiche extendeth it selfe so farre, that they coulde not discouer the ende thereof, whereupon he thinketh it may be called a sea of freshe waters, for those causes: and he further saith, that it is full of Ilands. The borderers being demanded, whether it should runne, and whether those waters were emptyed into the neighbouring sea three leagues distant thence, they plainly declared that it had no issue out: especially to that South Sea neere vnto it, but whether it fell into the other sea, hee saith, hee left them doubtfull. Therefore hee plainly confesseth, as hee himselfe reporteth by the opinior of maisters and pilottes, that they holde it for a certainty, that this is that heape or gathering together of waters, correspondent to the North Sea, and that the streight so much desired, might there bee founde. If you desire to knowe what I thinke in this case, I thinke it spoken to excuse himselfe, because hee founde not the strayght: both by reason of the nature of those potable waters, as also for that the borderers are ignorant whether those waters haue any issue out, we ought to be disquieted and tormented with the same desire, whether any strayght diuide those huge countries.

The Christians with a small company ouercame Diriangen his great army. Nicoianus practiseth slaughter. Egidius with his handfull of horse & foote sloues many of his men. Egidius returnes to the haven of S. Vincent.

A supposed Sea of fresh water.

The

rubbe the lippen
t hearbe, they fill
few houres their
ceremonies ended,
n the Nobles, and
urbulent and tem-
per, with reuerent
would fauour their
hile they applied
olde, first one, then
es that Diriangen
t which he hadde
which he had dis-
m: for euen they
of Jewels, for orna-
him, armed after
ded, he had killed

oublesome, I vnto
y collect the rest,
eligiously and with
nt with them, and
nde, vnto whom he
laughter them, & to
suspecting the same,
attaile array, and so
middest of the array
owmen, he sustained
the first dawning of
hauen of S. Vincent
iche had now sayled
rall Egidius made
repaire their ships
methes wandring and
s manner. On the
fresh water whiche
eof, whereupon he
e further saith, that
runne, and whether
distant thence, they
neere vnto it, but
erefore hee plainly
ttes, that they holde
correspondent to the
le. If you desire to
because hee founde
as, also for that the
ght to be disquieted
uge countries.

The

The ninth Chapter.

STay awhile, after these letters, The letter carier yet tarrying and almost putting on his hat to be gone, Diccus Arias the sonne of Petrus Arias the gouernour came vnto me, & brought with him that Licentius Spinosa whom I mentioned before. Spinosa saith, that Petrus Arias the gouernour, & himselfe, were defrauded by this Egidius Gonsalus, who affirmeth, that those tracts and coasts were long since discovered by them both, & that in their progresse they left the kings (who inhabited the same) in amity & peace with them. Both parties shal be heard. What Cæsar shall think good to be decreed in our Senate, such as are desirous of these things yet vntouched, shall vnderstande thereof hereafter for your sake: and so let this suffice for the present. And when occasion shall giue opportunitie, present many kisses in my behalfe to the feet of our most blessed Clement. The Spaniardes will esteeme his Holines to be of so great value & price, as he regardeth you, whom for your long conuersation with them, they thinke worthily to be most highly respected of the best, and greatest. The iudgements & censures of men are often deliuered, from the elections and choyce of Princes in their ministers, and seruants.

Receiue now the third thing that came to light, while the post yet stayed, which as I suppose will be very acceptable & delightfull to his Holines to know. In that Decade directed vnto Adrian, where the description of the Ilandes of the Maluccas ingendring spices appeareth, mention is made of a controuersie that arose betweene the Castellane discoverers and the Portugalles, concerning these Ilandes being found. And we thinke it to bee so certayne a thing within our limits assigned by Pope Alexander, that for preparation of a new voyage, with no meane charge, we haue builde 6. newe ships in the Cantabrian hauē of Bilbauus & furnished the with all necessary prouision of victual, & determined, they shuld set sayle about the vernal Equinoctiall, out of the Clunian Gillician hauen which you know, is appointed for the trading, & marchandise of spices, because for all marchants coming from the North coasts, it is much neerer, and more commodious, & a safer way, then if they should be constrained to goe to Siuill (appoynted for the Indian affaires) called the house of trafficke or trading, or into Portugall, by diuers and long windings & turnings of the shores. The Portugalles seeing almost the present ruine & ouerthrow of their estate, earnestly besought vs with their whole indeuour, that they might not sustaine so great losse, their interest & right not being first vnderstoode, for that they perswade themselves, those Ilands of the Maluccas were hitherto found out, & traded by their marriners, & y they lay within their limits, & not within the bounds of the 300. & 70. leagues assigned to the Emperor, without the Ilandes lying towards Caput Viride so called, which by Ptolomy is called the Risardinian Promontory, supposed by vs to be the Gorgones. Cæsar, as he is a louer rather of that which is right, and iust, then of riches, with a King of his kindred, especially who is his cousin germaine, & peraduenture (if the rumor spread abroad be true) should shortly become his sisters husband, granted their requestes, that the matter should bee deliberated what right they had. The ships are stayd, the preparation gaineth nothing, and the men and officers chosen for that seruice mutter thereat. Whereupon it was decreed that menne skillful in Astronomy, Cosmography, and Nauigation, and learned Lawyers also on either side, should meeete together to discusse the matter in the city Pax Augusta, which the Spaniard commonly calleth Badaiozum, because that place is the bounde of Portugall and Castele. Our men went, and they came. From the Calendes of April, or thereabouts the property began to be sifted and discussed. The Portugalles who thought it not expedient to consent any iot, admit no reasons which our men brought. The Castellanes wil that the assignement of the 300. and 70. leagues should begin from the last Iland of the Gorgones called S. Antony lying to the West, & they say that it is nine degrees of longitude and an halfe distant from the knowne Meridian of the fortunate Ilands: on the contrary, the Portugalles obstinately vrge that it ought to be accounted from the first of the Ilandes, called the Ilande of Salt, which distace containeth 5. degrees of longitude. The Castellans proue their matter thus. If any Arbitrator chosen to decide controuersies betweene neighbours

VOL. V.

3 F

con-

A report of one
Licentius Spino-
sa challenging
the first dis-
covery of the
last mentioned
countries to
Petrus Arias
and himselfe.

He reporteth a
controuersie
betwixt the
Castellanes and
the Portugalles
for the title of
the Maluccas.

The matter put
to Committees.

The Castellanes
what they al-
ledge.

The Portugall
his claime.

contending for their boundes, shall so censure that from the known and long possessed inheritance of Iohn, his neighbour Francis shoulde haue an hundred paces, no man will doubt, that the measure is to begin from the furthest limit of the inheritance of Iohn. For if the measure be to be taken from the beginning of the mannor, or inheritance, of necessity Iohn must loose the possession of his inheritance, because by that meanes he includeth his inheritance in the couenant. Therefore the Castellanes say, either discharge the soueraignty & dominion which hetherto you haue had ouer the llandes Gorgones, els you must needs consent, that this question or matter of controuersie is to bee measured from the furthest shoare of those llandes. They stode long vpon it: but nothing concluded: because if the Portugalles shoulde haue consented to the opinions of the Castellane Iudges, they must needs confesse, that not onely the Malucca llandes bordering vpon the Sinences, & the great gulfe and Promontory of the Satyri, and Gillola (whereof I spake in the Decade to Adrian) by Ptolemy as many of them thinke Catigara, a 100. and 75. degrees from the fortunate llandes, and 150. from the lyne diuiding the boundes of eyther King: but also Malucha it selfe, long time vsurped by them, as the Castellanes say. For the Castellanes vaunt that the Portugalles are conuicted by the authorities of Ptolomey, and other authors disputing about the longitude of degrees. The Portugalles hearing this shake their heads thereat: our mariners also returning from that vast and long nauigation, brought letters, and excellent presents from the chiefe King of those llandes (where they laded & shippe called the victory with cloues) as an euident argument of their obedience yielded. But the Portugalles shewe no league or couenant made with any king of those llands: yet they say, that the name of the Portugalles came to those llandes, and that Portugalles were scene there. Whereunto our men answer and confesse, that they founde one Portugall, but a fugitiue, fearinge iudgement for his wicked acts committed, but none els, nor any signe or token of any other kinde of trading. What shalbe decreed by Cæsar, whereof consultation was had in our Senate before, is yet vnknowne. It will be very hard for the Portugalles to be intercepted of their accustomed actions and trading, nor will it be pleasing vnto vs to loose the occasion of so great a discovery. God be present with vs. Now fare you well, from Burg the 14. day of Iuly 1524.

The tenth Chapter.

BY reason of diuers Pirats, and hostilitie with the French King, the iniury of the times barred vs of all traualles by lande, and sea voyages. I sende therefore vnto you (after two maners) requiring the same, suche newes as came to light concerning the newe world, a fewe thinges only being added. Foure & twentie approued men of euery facultie six, to wit, Astronomers, Lawyers, Cosmographers, and Nauigators were sent with the Portugalles to the consultation of the foresaide controuersie. Few of these are known to you: but to the Popes Holynesse none. They all returned: and in the name and behalfe of others yielded a larg account of their acts in that meeting, first to our Senate, and next vnto Cæsar. Don Fernandus Colonus the seconde sonne of Christophorus Colonus, the first searcher and discoverer of these tractes and countries, a learned man, and three lawyers, the rest being hearers. Licenciatus a Cunna, and Licenciatus Emanuelus, the one auditor of the Kings Senate, and the other, likewise of the Valledoletane Chauncery, and also Licenciatus Perisa chiefe Iudge of the Cranatensian Chauncery, as the report goeth, brought the Aduocates backe againe. What I mentioned before, was inacted, and nothing more. At the day appoynted by Cæsar, which was the last of May, the Castellane arbitrary Iudge appointed for that purpose, vpon the bridge of a riuer called Caia, diuiding Castecele and Portugall, deliuered their sentence: nor could the Portugalles obtaine (to whome euery delay was beneficiall) that they shoulde deferre their sentence for a day or an houre: which they deliuered in this manner. That the Malucha llandes both by the iudgement of yong and olde, should be vnderstoode to be situate 20. degrees and more within the Castellane limits, it is so decreed. Neither doe they exclude Malucha and Taprobana, if that bee it, which the Portugalles call Zamatra. The Portugalles therefore returned hanging down their heades, and taxing whatsoever was done,

The names of
the Committees.

The sentence of
the Iudges
touching the
controuersie be-
twixt the Castellane & Portu-
galles.

The Portugalles
discontented.

The sixth Decade.

ing possessed in-
man will doubt,
John. For if the
ce, of necessite
he includeth his
e the soueraignty
you must needs
from the furthest
aded: because if
judges, they must
e Sinences, & the
in the Decade to
rees from the for-
King: but also
or the Castellanes
and other authors
shake their heads
rought letters, and
ed f shippe called
d. But the Portu-
yet they say, that
were scene there.

all, but a fugitiue,
signe or token of
onsultation was had
ugalles to be inter-
vnto vs to loose the
are you well, from

injury of the times
vnto you (after two
the newe world, a
facultie six, to wit,
Portugalles to the
ou: but to the Popes
others yeelded a larg
cesar. Don Fernan-
er and discoverer of
being hearers, Li-
ings Senate, and the
crisa chiefe Iudge of
backe againe. What
appointed by Cesar,
that purpose, vpon
deliuered their sen-
beneficiall) that they
ered in this manner.
ould be vnderstoode to
screed. Neither doe
galles call Zamatra.
king whatsoever was
done,

done, not purposing to forsake their auncient actions. And wee haue hearde that a mightie fleet is nowe sent from that young king: and they secretly giue out that they will drown and destroy ours, if it come. But we, the day before the Calends of Iuly, haue thought good in our Senate of Indian affaires, that Cæsar should decree, that before the next month of August comming, be ended, our fleet of sixe shippes should set sayle, nor shall they be commanded to fight together: if the Portugalles being more mightie, shall presume to pro- uoke them, it is in Cæsars power to auenge himselfe by lande, if they attempt disobedience at Sea. For Portugall, as you very well knowe, is an angle or corner of Castelee, and howe great a portion of Portugall, seeing in Portugall there are famous cities Metimna of the playne, a notable Mart towne, Salmantica, together with Abula, Segouia, Zamora, Taurus, & the fortunate kingdom of Toledo, and many besides, inclosed within the riuers Aua and Doria, as I often declared in my olde Decades: that countrey sometimes was a county of Castelee, freely transferred and bestowed by a bountifull king vpon his nephew, by the name, and title of a king. It is also decreed, that one Stephanus Gomez, (who also himselfe is a skillfull Nauigator) shall goe another way, where by betweene the Baccalaos, and Florida, long since our countries, he saith, he will finde out a waye to Cataia: one onely shippe called a Carauell is furnished for him, and he shall haue no other thing in charge, then to search out whether any passage to the great Chan, from out the diuers windings, and vast compassings of this our Ocean, were to be founde.

FINIS.

Soli Deo Laus & gloria.

The Seuenth Decade of the same Peter Martyr, dedicated to the Vicecount Franciscus Sfortia, Duke of Millaine.

AScanius the Vicechauncellor your Excellencies vncler, sometimes a most woorthy, and famous Prince amongst the Cardinales, and inferiour to none, obtayned the first front of my Decades, concerning the newe found world, because through his importunate suite, & often requestes hee commanded me, to signifie vnto his Excellency, what accidents fell out in these Westerne coastes, and countries. Hereof I present you this famous witness, indued with all vertue, and experience Marcus Caraciolus, the Apostolicall chiefe Secretary, at this present chosen the Emperor Charles his Catinensian Embassadour with you, who then was your vnclers Secretary, when the Ocean first opened her gates vnto vs, which before, vntill these times, from the beginning of the worlde, were shutte. And at that time, he saith, in his maisters behalfe he receiued my letters, and made mee suche aunswere as his maister willed him to write. Ascanius being deade, and I growing slothfull, no manne inciting, and stirring mee vp, King Fredericke (beefore his fortune was changed from a milde and gentle mother, into a cruel stepdame) hadde receiued my second Editions by the hands of his cousin germaine, the Cardinall of Aragon: then, the Popes, Leo the tenth, and his successor Adrian the sixt, inciting me by their letters, and parchment patents, vsurped the body of my scattered Decades, perswading me, not to suffer a matter of so great woorth, iniuriously to lye buried in obliuion. And your most Noble Prince, lately borne, and lately aduanced to the kingdom of your Auncesters, vnderstād what lately happened. Camillus Gelinus your excellencies Secretary, beeing Petitioner to the Emperour, I diuert these Narrations from other Princes, to your Excellencie the Lady, and mistres of my birth day. Among so many turbulent affaires, wherewith your Excellencie is incumbred, hee once or twice plainly protested with an oath, that it would be a most acceptable ease, & solace of your cares. From the first, and large bounty of the Ocean, raised by Christopherus Colonus, whatsoever went before, euen vnto these narrations, Iacobus Pierius carried in one bundell to his maister the chiefe Secretary. elected Catinensian Embassadour (when hee departed from this legation vnto you in Cæsars behalfe) to bee presented to Pope Adrian: whiche were partly published by the Printers meanes, and partly written by his owne hande, out of my first coppies, and

3 F 2

examples.

Of the king-
dome of Portu-
gall.Portugal once
a County of
Castelec.
Stephanus Go-
mez to be set
out for Cataia.

The fruitfulness
of the Ocean.
He fills into
the prayers of
Hispaniola la-
maica & Cuba.

The largenes
of the supposed
Continent.
The situation
thereof.

The multitude
of lands on the
North side of
Hispaniola and
Cuba.

40000. Indians
caried into cap-
tivity to digg
gold.

Lucaï.

The leafe of
the trees of
these lands
neuer fall.

Of the tree
laruma and of
the wonderfull
nature thereof.

examples. He remaineth with your Excellencie vnder the same maister. For the thinges past, demaunde account of him, which if hee yeeld you not, he shall be accounted but a badde fellowe. Lette vs now briefly recite what newe thinges the pregnant Ocean hath brought forth, a short epilogue (of what is past) going beefore. For this our Ocean is more fruitfull than an Albanian Sowe, whiche is reported to haue farrowed thirtie pigges at one time, and more liberall then a bountifull Prince. For euery yeere, it discouereth vnto vs new countries, and strange nations, and exceeding great riches. Concerning Hispaniola the Queene of that huge, and vast country, where the Senate remaineth giuing lawes vnto the rest, and of lamaica and Cuba, by a new name called Fernandina, and the rest of those Elisian Ilands, reaching vnto the equinoctiall, within the Tropick of Cancer, wee haue now sufficiently spoken: where none of the people vnderstand the difference of day & night all the yere long, where there is neyther hard and vntemperate Summer, nor cold and frosty winter, where the trees also are greene all the yeere, laden with blossomes, and fruite together, nor all the yeere long are all manner of pulse, gourdes, melons, cucumbers, or other garden fruites wanting, where flockes, and heardees of Cattle being brought thither (for no fourefooted beast naturally breedeth there) more fruitfully increase, and grow taller, and larger bodied: as also of the supposed Continent, which in length from East to West, thrice exceedeth all Europe, no lesse also somewhere extended from North to South, although elsewhere it be comprehended within narrow straights of land. That land of the supposed Continent is extended from 55. degrees of the Pole Arctick diuiding both Tropickes, and the æquator, to 54. degrees of the Antarcticke Pole: where, at what time the Orcaedes haue their Summer, they quake, and tremble for frost and Ice, and so contrary. These things your Excellency may gather by a relation to Adrian the Pope, by mee compiled, and brought vnto the city with the rest, and plainly set downe in a short parchment mapp, which I deliuered to your Secretary Thomas Mainus, when hee departed hence. Therein your Excellency shall finde the situation of all those coasts, and countries, with their bordering Ilandes. Now, let vs hasten to relate thinges which more lately happened. On the North side of Hispaniola, and Cuba, otherwise called Fernandina, of Fernando the King, so great a multitude of noble and ignoble Ilandes lie, that I my selfe (to whose handes whatsoever commeth to knowledge, is brought) dare scarcely beleuee the number of them, which are reported. Of those within these twentie yeeres, and more, in which the Spaniardes (inhabitants of Hispaniola and Cuba) haue had to doe with them, they say, they haue passed through 400. & carried away forty thousand of both sexes, into seruitude, to satisfie their insatiable desire of gold, as wee shall heereafter speake more at large. These they call by by one name lucaïe, and the inhabitants lucaïj. Many of these Ilands consist of trees, growing of their owne nature, which are marueilous profitable. The leaues neuer fall from them, or if any fall through age, yet are they neuer left bare, for new begin to bud forth, beefore the olde leaues wither, and fayle. Nature hath giuen them two excellent trees, most worthy to bee remembred aboue the rest, the one they call laruma, to the other they gaue no name. This laruma is like a figtree, not solid, after the manner of other trees, nor hollow, and empty, like a reede: but rather like fennell gyant, or the elder tree. It yeeldeth a kinde of fruite of a spanne and an halfe long, of the softnes of a figge, sauory, and medicinable for the curing of woundes, the leaues wherof worke wonderfull effects: as certaine men of authority proued, by one example. Two Spaniardes brawling, fought together, one of them, with one blow of a sword cut of almost the shoulder and arme of his aduersary, a little thin skin vnder the arme hole, where it is ioyned to the flanke, scarce sustaining the member. Whereuppon an old lucaian woman runneth vnto him, and stayeth vp the member fallen from his place, & layeth thereon the bruised leaues of that tree, without applying any other kinde of medicine, and within few dayes after they testifie, and affirme, they saw him whole, and sound. Who so seeke knots in rushes, let them champe, and ruminat hereon at their pleasure: but wee determine to beleuee, that this, and greater things in nature, may be done. They report, that the barke of this tree is slippery, and smooth, which not being solid, but full of pith, with little scraping is easily emptied, and made bare. Whereuppon your

For the things accounted but a vast Ocean hath his our Ocean is d thirdie pigges e, it discouereth Concerning His- meth giuing lawes h, and the rest of of Cancer, wee difference of day summer, nor cold h blossomes, and elons, cucumbers, g brought thither e, and grow taller, East to West, thrice uth, although else- of the supposed th Tropickes, and e the Orcaides haue ary. These things piled, and brought en mapp, which I ce. Therein your with their bordering ed. On the North the King, so great hands whatsoever of them, which are e Spaniardes (inha- y, they haue passed ude, to satisfie their These they call by and consist of trees, caues neuer fall from begin to bud forth, two excellent trees, na, to the other they er of other trees, nor der tree. It yeeldeth ge, sauiory, and medi- effects: as certaine fought together, one me of his aduersary, a scarce sustaining the ayeth vp the member without applying any affime, they saw him and ruminate hereon at things in nature, may nooth, which not being e bare. Whereuppon your

your Excellency shall heare an accident most worthy the reporting, but vnhappy to the artifi- cer, and contriuer thereof. The Iucaij being violently taken away from their habitations The desperate conditions of the crying Indians enforced by the cruell Spaniard, and places of abode, liue in despaire: and many idle drones, refusing meate, lurking, and hiding themselves in the vnfrequented vallies, desert woods, and close, and darke rockes, gaue vpp the ghost: others ended their hatefull life. But such as were of a stronger courage, vpon hope of recouering liberty, desired rather to liue. Many of these, peraduenture the wisest, if they had opportunity to escape, went vnto the more northerly partes of Hispaniola, from whence, the winds blew from their country, so that they might see the North pole a farre of: there, stretching out their armes, and with open mouth, they seemed to desire to sucke in their country breath by fetching of their wind, and many of them, breath sayling, fainting through hunger, felle downe dead. One of these more desirous of life, being a carpenter, and built houses in his countrie (although they want Iron, and steele, yet haue they axes, but made of stone, and other instrumētts and tooles, for that purpose) tooke vppon him a hard and difficult peice of worke, to bee beleueed. Hee cut of the body of the tree Iaruma, and scraping out the pith, made it empty, and hollow, hee stuffed it with the graine Maizium, and gourdies filled with water, and kept a little without, for prouision of victuall, and so filled and stopped eyther front or ende of the tree, and casting the beame into the sea, gate vp vpon it, and admitteth another man, and a woman skilful in swimming, who were of his kindred, and affinity, and with oares they driue the raft towards their country. This mis- erable man began that excellent inuention vnluckily, about some 200. miles of, they light on a shippe returning from Chichora, whereof wee will speake in his proper place: the Spaniardes draw the mournfull pray into the shippe, brought the beame to Hispaniola, for a witnes and prooffe of so strange a thing, and vsed that miserable store which was piled and heaped vp: many men of authoritie say, they both saw the beame of timber, and spoke with the Architect of that frame, & deuise: we haue now spoken sufficiently of the tree Iaruma, and the circumstances thereof. There is another tree very like vnto a Pomegranate tree, & no bigger, but more full of leaues, of the fruit thereof, they yeeld no reason, of the barke which is taken from the tree, (as the corke tree which is rinded euery yeere to make slippers, and yet withereth not, nor dieth, or ceaseth to beare fruit as is reported also of the Cynamō tree) almost incredible things are spoken: yet I beleuee them who biit, and tasted the barke brought from Hispaniola where this tree also groweth euery where, of the fruite whereof I sent to Ascanius Sfortia your vnclē, when Colonius the first discouerer of these tractes and coastes, returning from his first voyage and nauigation, made mee partaker of many straunge things. In the ende of the second Chapter of my first Decade, your Excellencie shall finde mention made heereof: that barke resembleth the taste or smacke of Cynamon, the bitternes or biting of Ginger, and the sweete smell, and odour of Cloues. Out of our dulnesse, wee seeke strange spices, which we should not want, if such as commonly grow in our Ilandes, were in vse, and request: as without doubt they wilbe heereafter. The cruell and vnstatiable Auri sacra fames, hunger of gold, hath violently transported the minds of the Spaniardes to the onely loue thereof: other things being contemned, although worthily precious, and profitable, are re- iected as vile, & contemptible. Behold, what I report of our pepper, sent to Ascanius to- gether with the rest, which like mallowes and nettles with vs, groweth euery where in great plenty, which being bruised, & stamped, and the bread being infused, and mingled with water, all the Ilanders eate, whereof they say there are fūe kindes. This pepper is hotter then the Malabarian and Caucasean pepper, & where twenty graines of Malabarian and Caucasean pepper would not suffice, fūe of these are enough, and they make the fleshe pottage of these fūe more sweete, and delicate, then of those twentie. The madnes of mankind is so great, that what things he obtayneth with more difficulty, hee thinketh them to be more sweet, and profitable. This tree is famous onely for the barke, it sendeth forth for many furlonges, sauiory, and pleasing smelles, and refreshing sauours, it reacheth out his broad boughes, and in the Iucaian Ilandes, it is very common. So great a multitude of Doues builde their nests among the boughes thereof, that of the next borderers the Bimini a great Iland, and the Inhabitanes of the countrie of Florida, passing ouer thither to catch in trees, Doues,

The desperate conditions of the crying Indians enforced by the cruell Spaniard.

A most straunge aduenture and inuention of an Iland slave.

Glandes. Of the barke of a tree there, certaine rare vertues.

Auri sacra fames.

Pepper.

Doues building in trees.

The beauty of
the women of
Lucia.

The cleere &
spectable habit
of maidens.

Ciuill obedience
against nature
and reason.

The Kings care.

The golden age.

The Kings
pleasure a law.

Of certaine pre-
cious stones
found in shellfish
and sea snailles.

The Lucian
supposed to be
sometimes ioyned
to the rest of
the great Ilandes.
The Messan-
ian straight be-
tween Sicily and
Italy.

Doues, carry away whole shippes laden with their young: their woods are full of wild vines climbing vp the trees, as wee haue else where sayde of the woodds of Hispaniola. They affirme that the women of Lucia were so faire that many Inhabitants of the bordering countries allured through their beauty, forsaking, & leauing their owne priuate houses, chose that for their country, for loue of them. Wherefore they say that many of the Lucian Ilands, liue after a more ciuill manner, then in those countries which are further distant from Florida, and Bimini, more ciuill countries. It is a pleasant thing to heare how the women behaue them in attyring themselves: for the men goe naked, but when they make warre, or vpon solemne holy daies glue themselves to dauncing, and tripping, and then for elegancy, and ornament they put on garments of diuers coloured feathers, and tufts, or plumes of feathers. The women while their childish yeeres continue, before the pollution of their Menstrua, weare nothing at all. But after that, they couer their priuities with small meshed netts of bombasine cotton, wherein they put certaine leaues of herbes. When the Menstrua begin to come, as if she were to bee brought to a man to be married, the parents inuite the neighbours to a banquet, and vse all signes, and tokens of ioyfulness, and while they be marriageable, they couer no other parte at all. But being deflowred, they weare breeches down to the knee, made of diuers stiffe, and tough herbes, or of bombasine cotton, which naturally groweth there, of which they drawe thrids and spinne, and sewe, and weaue them in: although they bee naked, yet for ornament of their beddes, and necessitie of their hanging cabbins, they make sheetes or couerlets, which they call Amacas. They haue Kings whom they so reuerently obey, that if the King commaund any to leape downe headlong from an high rocke, or top of any steepe hill, alleading no other reason, but I command you to cast your selfe downe, he executeth the commandement of the King without delay, but within what bounds the regall authority is included, it is a sacred thing to be heard. The King hath no other care, but of the seede time, hunting, and fishing. Whatsoeuer is sowed, planted, fished, hunted, or effected by other artes, is done by the kings commandement: so that at his pleasure he diuideth these exercises and employments man by man. The fruites being gathered, are stored and layd vp in the Kings garners: and from thence, to the vse of the people, are diuided to euery one according to their families, all the yeere long. The King therefore as the king of Bees, is the distributor, and steward of his flocke, and people. They had the golden age, mine, and thine, the seedes of discord, were farre removed from them: the rest of the yeere from seede time, & harvest, they gaue themselves to tennis, dancing, hunting, and fishing: concerning iudiciall courts of lustice, suits of law, & wrangling, and brawling among neighbours, there is no mention at all. The will & pleasure of the King was accounted for a law. The like was obserued in the other Ilands, in all of them, they were contented with a little: they find a certaine kind of precious stone vnder the water, among the redd shellfish, greatly esteemed of the, which they bring hanging at their eares. But they haue another more precious ort of the great sea snailles, whose flesh is dainty meate, they finde redde translucide flaming stones in the braine of euery Sea snaille: such as haue seene any of them, say, they are no worse then the redd Carbuncle, comonly called the Rubie: they call the shellishe it selfe Cohobus, and the stones thereof they call Cohibici. They gather also bright and cleere stones vpon the land, of a yeallow, & blacke colour, of these, they bring chaines, & Jewels for ornamet of the armes, neckes, and legges, although they went naked, when they were Lucians. I will now speake of the situation of their coutrie, and shortly touch their ruine and ouerthrowe.

The second Chapter.

OVr menn suppose by coniecture that the Lucian were sometimes ioyned to the rest of the great Ilandes, and that their auncestors so thought, the Inhabitantes themselves plainly confesse. But through violence of tempestes the earth being by litle and litle swallowed vppe, they were diuided each from the other, the Sea coming betweene them, as Authors are of opinion concerning the Messanensian straight, diuiding Sicilia from Italia, which in times past ioyned together. Wee see, and that euery where, that land ariseth in many places, and

dayly

all of wild vines
spaniola. They
tering countries
chose that for
ian Ilands, liue
t from Florida,
women behaue
warre, or vpon
elegancy, and
mes of feathers,
their Menstrua,
meshed netts of
Menstrua begin
inuite the neigh-
they be marriage-
breeces down to
, which naturally
weaue them in:
of their hanging
Kings whom they
ong from an high
d you to cast your
, but within what
The King hath no
s sowed, planted,
ement: so that at
The fruites being
thence, to the vse
l the yeere long,
of his flocke, and
ord, were farre re-
y gaue themselves
ustice, suits of law,
at all. The will &
the other Ilands, in
d of precious stone
they bring hanging
a snailles, whose flesh
of euery Sea snaille:
Carbuncle, comonly
nes thereof they call
a yallow, & blacke
necks, and legges,
e of the situation of

ned to the rest of the
mselues plainly con-
and little swallowed
e them, as Authors are
Italia, which in times
n in many places, and
dayly

daily increaseth and driueth backe the Sea, as appeareth by the cities Rauenna and Pataulum, which had the Sea neere vnto them, but now farre remoued: and that the sea is now in many places, where land was wont to be. By a present similitude therefore we may make coniectures of things absent. They report that the greatest part of these Ilands were sometimes most happy and blessed with diuers commodities, and profits arising out of the earth, I say they haue been, because at this present they are desolate and forsaken, as shal be remembred in his place. They say that euery one of the Iucanian Ilands are from 12. to 40. miles in circuit about, & that ther is none greater, as we reade of the Strophades, & Symplegades of our Sea, assigned to the exiled Romans, with Giara, Seriphus, & many smal Ilands besides. But they confesse these were sometimes filled with inhabitants, yet nowe desolate, for that they say, from the thicke heape thereof the miserable Ilanders were brought to the grievous seruice and labour of the gold mines of Hispaniola, and Fernandina so that the inhabitauntes thereof sayled, about some twelue hundred thousande men being wasted and consumed, both through diuers diseases, and famine: as also through too much excessiue labour and toyle. It greiueth mee to report these thinges, but I must speake truth: yet the Iucaians were afterward auenged for their destruction, by slaughtering them who violently carried the away, as in my former Decades I mentioned at large. Through the desire therefore of hauing the Iucaians, after the maner of hunters who pursue wilde beastes through the woodes of the mountaines, and marish grounds, so certaine Spaniardes in 2. barkes built at the charge of seuen men, passed ouer sea three yeeres since, out of the towne called the Hauen of Plate, situate on that side of Hispaniola, which looketh towards the North, to the Iucanian Ilandes to take men. Although I now write these thinges, yet was I requested by Camillus Gilinus, to search out some thinges (not yet published) out of the printers presses concerning these discoueries, to bee directed to your Excellencie. They therefore went, and diligently searched all these Ilandes, but found no pray, because their bordering neighbours, hauing thoroughly searched the, had wasted, and depopulated them long before. And least their consortes should deride them, if they returned empty to Hispaniola, they directed their course to the North of Charles wayne. Many say they lyed, who saye they chose that way of their owne accorde, but they affirme by a suddaine tempest arising, and continuing for the space of two dayes, they were violently carried within the view of that lande, which wee will describe, hauing seene an high Promontorie a farre off. When our men made to the shoare, the Inhabitauntes astonished at the miracle and strangenes thereof, thought some monster came vnto them, because they want the vse of shipping: at the first through the greedie desire of gasing, they ranne flocking together in troopes vnto the shoare, and presently (our menne landing with their boates) they all fledde away swifter then the winde, and left the shoare desolate: our menne pursue them hasting away. Certayne more swift and nimble younge menne goe beefore the Troope, who making more speede, tooke two of them, a man, and a woman, who ranne more slowly then the rest, and bringeth them to the ships, apparelleth them, & let them go. Perswaded through that liberality, the inhabitants fill the shoares againe. Their King also vnderstanding how bountifully our men had dealt with them, and beholding the strange, and costly garments neuer seene before, for that they cloth themselves with the skins of Lyons or other beastes for the most part, sent fifty of his family vnto our men, laden with their country prouision. And whe they came a land, hee friendly and honourably receiued them, and beeing desirous to see the country neere there abouts, gaue them guides and companions to conduct them. Where-soeuer they went, the inhabitauntes of the kingdome came woondering forth vnto them with presents as it were vnto the Godds which are to be adored, especially when they saw them bearded men, and clothed with linnen and silken garments. But what? The Spanyardes at length violated the fidelitie of hospitalitie. For by craft, and diuers subtill deuises, after they had diligently searched out all, they practised, that on a day many of them should come together to see the shippes, so that the shippes were filled with beholders: and as soone as they had them full of men and women, weying ancor, and hoysing sayle, they brought them away mourning into seruitude. So of friendes, they left all those countries enemies, and of peaceable

The Iucanian
Ilands viterly
depopulated by
Spanish tyranny.

Homo homini
lupus, and they
be beastes: who
hunt for men as
beastes.

2. ships set out to
take men.

The Barbarians
astonished at the
view of the men
and shippes fled
away.

The Spaniards
pursue and take
a man & a
woman and ap-
parell them.

Men clothed in
lions skins.

The barbarous
King sends pre-
sents of his coun-
trie prouision &
friendly receiues
the.

The trechery of
the Spaniardes
which they vse
towards these
kind barbarians.

One of the 2.
ships lost.
A note of diuine
justice in not
suffering treachery
to escape unpunished.

Of the Bac-
chalais.

Of the Chicor-
anes, their
manners and
fashions.

Lucas Vazquez
Aiglionus.

A Chicorane
christened
Francis.

Easy the page
of vertue.

peaceable men, much disquieted, and discontented, hauing taken the children from the parents, and the husbands from their wiues. But of those two shippes, one onely escaped, the other was neuer any more seene: they coniecture it was drowned with the guilty and guiltles, because it was an olde shippe. That spoyle was very offensiu and greiuous to the Senate of Hispaniola, yet they left them vn Timer punished. And hauing consulted to sende the booty backe againe, nothing was put in execution, the difficulty of the matter being obserued, especially that one was lost. I learned certaine particulars of these thinges, of a wise man skilfull in the law, a priest, called Baularius Aluarus a Castro. This Priest, for his learning, and honest behaiour was made a Deane of the Priory of the Conception in Hispaniola, who beeing Vicar, and Inquisitor also of heresie I may giue the better credite vnto him in these thinges. As Pliny in the description of Taprobana, the dominion of Claudius, hearing of the fame of the Romans, saith that hee must giue credit to the Embas- sadour, called Rachia sent from that King with three companions, so I also in these thinges whereof I doubt, giue credit to men of authority. This Priest also sayth, that after diuers complaints of those rauishes, that the women brought from thence were apparelled with the skinnes of Lyons, and the men with the skinnes of other wild beastes whatsoever. Hee sayth, those kinde of men are white, and exceede the statute of common men. And beeing let goe at libertie, he sayth they were found among the dunghilles betweene the trenches before the walles seeking the rotten carion of dogges, and Ases to eate, and at length the greatest part of them died through greife, and anguish of minde: the rest that remainyed, were distributed among the Cittizens of Hispaniola, to vse them at their pleasure, eyther at home, or in the gold-mines, or tillage of the grounde. Now let vs returne to their country, whence wee digressed: or to the Bacchalaos, discovered twenty sixe yeeres since from England by Cabotus, or Bacchalaos, whereof wee haue else where spoken at large, I suppose those countries ioyned together. I am therefore to speake now of their celestiall situation, ceremonies of Religion, profits and commodities of the countrie, and of the manners and customes of the people. They affirme, that they lie vnder the same altitude of Degrees, and the same parallles, vnder which Andalusia of Spaine lyeth. They throughly searched the cheife Countries Chicora, and Duhare in fewe dayes space, and many of them farre extended into the lande ioyning together, where they east ancor. They say, the Chicoranes are halfe swart or tawnie, as our husbandmen are, burnt and tanned with the summer Sun. The men nourish their blacke haire downe to the girdle, and the women in longer traces round about them, both sexes tie vp their hayre. They are heedlesse: whether by nature, or by arte by applying some kinde of medicine, or whether they plucke of their hayre like the people of Tenustitan, it remaineth doubtfull: howsoeuer it bee, they are delighted to shewe themselves smooth. I cite another witness of lesse authority among the laitie, then that Deane among the Clergie: his name is Lucas Vasquez Aiglionus a Licenciate, a Cittizen of Toledo, and one of the Senatours of Hispaniola, partner of the charge of those two shippes: who being sent Procurator from Hispaniola came vnto our Senate of the affayres of India, and hath beene a long suiter to haue leaue to depart againe vnto those Countreies, to builde a Colony there. He brought one of the Chicoranes with him (which were brought thither) to waite vpon him, whom, being baptised he called Francis, and gaue him the surname of Chicora, of his native Countrey. While he stayed following his affayres, I sometimes hadd both Aiglianus the maister, and Chicora his seruant my guests. This Chicorane is no dull witted fellow, nor meanelly wise, and hath learned the Spanish tongue indifferently well. Such thinges there as Aiglianus himselfe the Licentiate shewed vnto me set downe in writing by report of his fellowes, and which the Chicorane by worde of mouth confessed (very strange and admirable) I will heere recite. Let euery one diminish or adde to the credit of the thinges. I will report, according to his inclination. Envy is a naturall plague bred in mankind, which neuer ceaseth to scratch, and compelleth to seeke brambles in other mens fields, although they be very cleane. This infectious disease cheifly raigneth in them, who are dull witted, or exceeding wise, who like vnprofitable burthens of the earth haue lead an idle

children from the
ne onely escaped,
n the guilty and
and greivous to
consulted to sende
the matter being
these thinges, of a
This Priest, for
the Conception in
the better credite
the dominion of
redit to the Embas-
so in these thinges
th, that after diuers
ere apparelled with
beastes whatsoever,
ommon men. And
hilles betwene the
Ames to cate, and at
minde: the rest that
them at their plea-
Now let vs returne
scouered twenty sixe
ie else where spoken
speake now of their
of the countrie, and
y lie vnder the same
zia of Spaine lyeth,
in fewe dayes space,
here they cast ancor,
dmen are, burnt and
downe to the girdle,
their hayre. They are
nde of medicine, or
remaineth doubtfull:
I cite another witnesse
gie: his name is Lucas
of the Senatours of
sent Procurator from
beene a long suiter to
ny there. He brought
vaite vpon him, whom,
Chicora, of his natue
add both Aiglianus the
dull witted fellow, nor
ell. Such thinges there
writing by report of his
sed (very strange and
the credit of the thinge-
ague bred in mankind,
s in other mens fields,
igneth in them, who are
the earth haue lead an
idle

idle and slouthfull life, without the study of learning. Leauing Chicora therefore, they went vnto the other side of that Bay, and tooke the Country called Duharhe: Aiglianus sayth the Inhabitantes thereof are white, which also Franciscus the tawny Chicorane with yeallow long hayre downe to the ancles, affirmeth. These people haue a King of a gyant like stature, and heighth, called Datha, and they say, that the Queene his wife, is not much shorter then himselfe. They haue five sonnes borne of them both: in steede of horses the King vaeth tall young menn, who carry him on their shoulders running to and fro, to the places and lodgings hee desireth. Heere diuers reporters compelled mee to doubt, especially the Deane, and Aiglianus, nor did Francis the Chicorane who was present, free vs from that controuersie. If I shall bee demaunded what I thinke, I should not suppose that so barbarous, and vnciuill a nation hath any horses. There is another country neere vnto this, called Xapida. This, they say, ingendreth pearles, and another kinde of precious stone of the earth, which they highly esteeme, much like vnto a pearle. In all the countries which they passed through, are herdes of Deere, as of oxen with vs: they faune at home, and reare them at home, and being loosed they wander through the woods as long as light lasteth, seeking pasture, and at euening they returne to visite their young, kept in the house, and suffer themselves to bee shutte vpp within pennes, (and hauing fedd their yong) to be milked. They haue no other milke, or cheese made of other milke. They nourish many kindes of foule to bee fatted, as henns, ducks, geese, and such like. Their bread is made of Maizium, as with the Ilanders: but they haue not the roote lucca, whereof Cazabi is made which is the food of the Nobility. The graine Maizium is very like to our Panick of Iusubria, but in bignes equalleth the pulse of pease: they sowe also another kinde of corne, called Xathi, they suppose it to bee Milium or Millet: nor doe they certainly affirme it, especially, because few of the Castellanes vnderstand what milium is, seeing they neuer sowe it in Castile. They haue some kinds of Batatas, but very little. Batatas are rootes to bee eaten, as radishes, carlots, parsnepps, turnepps, and rape rootes with vs: of these, and lucca, and the rest seruing for fooode, I haue abundantly spoken in my former Decades. They name many other countries, which they thinke to bee vnder the gouernement of one and the same King: Hitha, Xamunambe, Tihe. In this country they make report of a priestly attire differing from the people, and they are accounted for priests, and are had in great reuerence by the other bordering countries. The inhabitants heereof cut their haire, leauing onely two curled locks hanging downe from their temples, which they tye vnder their chinnes. When (as the pestilent custome among men is) they go forth to warre against the borderers, either party sendeth for them to the campe, not that they shoulde fight, but to be present at the battaile. Now when they are ready to come to handy strokes, & to incoüter, they compasse them al sitting, or lying along vpon the ground, & wett and besprinkle them with the iuice of certain herbes chewed w their teeth: (as our priests going to diuine seruite, sprinkle the people with a wett bough or branch) which ceremony performed, they suddenly sally forth, & invade the enemy. But they are left to guard the campe. The fight & cõflict being ended, they cure aswell wounded enemies, as frends without any difference at all & carefully apply themselves to bury the dead corpes of the slaine. These people cate not mans flesh: the conquerors haue those that are taken in battaile for their bondslaues. The Spaniardes trauiiled through many Countries of that greate Prouince, whereof they named these: Arambe, Guacaia, Quohathe, Tanzacca, Pahor, the Inhabitauntes of all which are somewhat tawny and swart. None of them haue any letters, but an hereditary memorie of antiquities left them from their ancestors, which they celebrate, & solemnize in rimes, and songes. They exercise dauncing and skipping, and are delighted with the play of the ball, wherein they are very nimble & skilfull. The women sewe, and spinne, and although for the most part they are clothed with the skinnes of wilde beastes, yet haue they Gosampine cotton, which our Insuber called Bombasine, and they make threede of the inner rindes of certaine tough herbes, suche as hempe or flaxe is with vs. There is another Country called Inzignanin. The Inhabitauntes by report of their auncestors

The Inhabitantes
of the country
of Duharhe white.

Of Datha their
wynt like king.

Xapida where
are pearles.

Of Deere that
are naturally
tame as oxen
and kine.

Deeres milke,
and cheese
made thereof
and no other.

A kind of corne
called Xathy.

Rootes for
eating.

Hitha, Xamu-
nambe, Tihe.
A priestly order.

Fare lockes (a
pestilent
custome) heere
in vse.

A ceremony (ot
besprinkling
their priestes)
much like the
Popish holy
water.

He writes this
as a wonder.
Arambe, Guacaia,
Quohathe, Tanzacca,
Pahor.

Their celebra-
tion of anti-
quities in rimes
and songes.

Their threede
made of the
inner rindes
of herbes.

A fabulous
tradition of
men with long
tayles.

say, that a people as tall as the length of a mans arme, with tayles of a spanne long, sometimes arriued there, brought thither by Sea, which tayle was not moueable or wauer-
ing, as in foure footed beastes, but solide, broad aboue, and sharpe beneath, as wee see
in fishes, and Crocodiles, and extended into a bony hardnes. Wherefore, when they
desired to sitt, they vsed seates with holes through them, or wanting them, digged vpp the
earth a spanne deepe, or little more, they must conuay their tayle into the hole when they
rest them: they fabulously reporte that that nation hadd fingers as broade as they were
long, and that their skinn was rough, and almost scaly. And that they were accustomed
onely to eate rawe fish, which fayling, they say all dyed, and that they left no posterity of
them behind them. They reporte, these, and many such idle vaine thinges were left them
by tradition from their grandefathers, and parents. Now let vs come vnto their religious
rites and ceremonies.

The third Chapter.

Where Kinges
Pallaces are
honoured as
Churches.

Adoration of
images & their
manner therein.

They want Temples, so that Kinges Pallaces are honoured of them as Churches: where-
of they bring one example: wee sayd that in the Prouince Duhare, there is a Gyant King
called Datha: in whose stone Court (for other houses are built of slender timber, and
couered with reede or grasse) they found two Images male, and female, of the bignes of
a childe of three yeres old, which they call by one name Inamahari. In this pallace there is
a receit for Images. They are seene twise euery yeere, once in the time of sowing, that
the seede time may be well, and happily begun, and prosperously succede, they deuoutly
pray: the second time, concerning the fruits of the harvest, in thanksgiuing if it fell out
well, if otherwise, that they may more luckily succede, & that aswaging their anger, the
gods would carry themselues more peaceably towards them the next yeere. The Images
are carryed forth with solemne pompe, and frequent concourse of the people: but after
what manner, it will not bee vnfit to bee heard. The night before the holy day of ado-
ration, the King himselfe, hauing his bedd made in the Images chamber, sleepech before
the Images. The day beginning to appeare, the people run vnto him. The King himselfe
bringeth the Images in his armes close vnto his breast: and sheweth them on high vnto the
people, which Images together with the King, the people kneeling or prostrate on the
ground with reuerent trëbling and feare, and loude voyces, salute. Then presently the
King departing, bindeth them to the breasts of two old men of approued authority, with
linnen clothes after their manner fairely wrought of cotton. They bring them out decked
with garments of feathers of diuers colours, and accompany them vnto the open field with
hymnes, and songs, or with dauncing and skipping of young men and maidens. And at
that time it is not lawfull for any to stay at home, or to bee else where: not onely hee who
should bee absent shoulde be taxed with the sinne and fault of heresie, but also hee who
should exercise this ceremony coldly, or disorderedly. The men accompany them the
whole day, and the women all the night long with the Images, shewing all signes of ioy-
fullnesse, and arguments of adoration, sleepe not at all. And lastly, the next day, they
are carryed back againe vnto the Pallace after the same order that they were brought forth.
Thus much be spoken concerning their Images, from which they thinke they shall obtaine
fertilitee of the fieldes, health of their bodies, and peace, or victory if they be in battayle,
if they reuerently and rightly sacrifice vnto them. They sacrifice as they did in old time,
with cakes made of corne: and they thinke their prayers shall be heard for the increase and
fruites of the field, especially if they be mingled with teares. There is another holy day
euery yeere, wherein they place a rude wooden statue, or Image in the field, vpon an high
pole fastened in the earth, accompanied with the same traine that the former were, &
hauing pitched lesser stakes, they goe about the former greate pole. And vpon these stakes
the people (euery one according to his ability) hang gifts of diuers sorts vnto the Idoll,
which at night the nobles diuide among them, as our priests doe the cakes or wafers which
women offer, or other giftes whatsoever. He that bestoweth the best oblations vpon the
Idol, is accounted more honorable. Witnesses stand by to receiue them, in steed of
Notaries,

Offering to
Images.

Their emulation
in giuing.

seventh Decade.

a spanne long,
 ueable or wauer-
 bath, as wee see
 fore, when they
 , digged vpp the
 e hole when they
 ade as they were
 were accustomed
 ft no posterity of
 es were left them
 nto their religious

Churches: where-
 e is a Gyant King
 ender timber, and
 , of the bignes of
 this pallace there is
 me of sowing, that
 fede, they deuoutly
 giuing if it fell out
 ng their anger, the
 yeere. The Images
 e people: but after
 the holy day of ado-
 per, sleepeth before
 The King himsele
 em on high vnto the
 or prostrate on the
 Then presently the
 oued authority, with
 ing them out decked
 the open felde with
 and maidens. And at
 e not onely hee who
 sie, but also hee who
 accompany them the
 ng all signes of ioy-
 s they did in old time,
 y were brought forth.
 nke they shall obtaine
 f they be in battayle,
 s they did in old time,
 d for the increase and
 e is another holy day
 ne field, vpon an high
 the former were, &
 And vpon these stakes
 rs sorts vnto the Idoll,
 cakes or wafers which
 best oblations vpon the
 iue them, in steed of
 Notaries,

Notaries, who (when the holy ceremonies are ended) recite what euery one hath giuen. Moued through that ambition, neighbour striueth earnestly to exceede neighbour. From Sunne rising vntill the Euening, they leape, and skip about the Idoll with much shouting, & clapping of hands for ioy, and in the first twilight of the night, hauing taken it from the pole, if they bee borderers vpon the Sea, they throw it headlong into the Sea, if of the Riuers, they drowne it in the riuers, and it is no more seene, so that euery yeere they make a new one. They haue a third festiuall day, wherein hauing taken the bones of a certaine old dead corse out of the graue, they erect a wodden pauillion in the field, after the maner of a tent. But the top being open, that they may behold heauen, laying a floore of boordes in the middle space of the pauillion, they sett vpp the bones which they had taken out of the earth. Women only stand about them mourning, and euery one of them according to their wealth and abilitie offer answerable giftes. The next day, they are carryed backe againe vnto the graue, and are accounted for an holy relique: the bones being buried, or readie to be buried, the chiefe priest playing the parte of an Orator, out of a pulpit in the midst of the throng of people standing round about, preacheth and discourseth many thinges of the prayse of the dead, and then presently, more of the immortality of the Soule, and lastly whether they goe. They say that they first goe to the colde Northerne partes, and to the countryes congealed with snow, and are expiated and purged with a King (who is Lorde of all the earth) called Mateczungua: and after that, they turne another way to the South countryes, vnto the iurisdiction and dominion of another great Prince called Quexuga, who being milde and bountifull, yet lame, offereth them a thousande delightes and pleasures: where they perswade the people, the soules inioy eternall delightes, among the dancings, and songes of young maidens, and among the embracements of their children, and whatsoever they loued heeretofore, they babble also there, that such as growe olde, waxe young againe, so that all are of like yeeres full of ioy and mirth. These thinges are deliuered by worde of mouth and tradition from the Elders to the younger, for a most sacred and true hystorie, inasmuch as he who but seemed to thinke otherwise, shoulde bee thrust out of the society of menne. They thinke also that men liue vpon the wheele or orbes of the heauens, and make no doubt of the Antipodes. They beleue there are Godds in the Sea, and boldly play the children as lying Grecia did, who fable of the Nereiades, and Sea Godds, Glaucus, Phorcus, and the rest. These thinges thus ended by a sermon, hee seemeth to purge the people departing, and absolue them from their sinnes, applying the fume of certayne herbes vnto their nostrils, breathing and blowing vpon them, and whisperinge somewhat vnto them. Heerevpon the people returne home ioyfully, beleueing that the fained deuises of that cosening deceiver are profitable not onely for the ease and comfort of the soule, but also for their bodily health. They also beguile the ignorant and sottish common people with another deceit, their cheife Prince dying, remouing all witnesses from him when hee is readie to giue vpp the ghost, they stand about him, and by their subtill deuises secretly faine, that when his last breath issueth out, sparkles of fire, & hot imbers come forth, as fro firebrands shaken, newly taken out of the burning fire, or from sulphury papers cast vpon high for sport and pastime. These counterfeit the dauncing and skipping Roebucks, or wilde goates, which the people suppose to be shooting starres, running hither and thither in the ayre, and presently vanish: for at what time hee yeeldeth vp the ghost, that sparkling flame ariseth vp with a horrible cracke, three armes lengths high, & there vanisheth: that flame they salute for the soule of the dead, and giue it the last farewell, and accompany the same with lamentations, teares, and howlinges, beeing so perswaded, they thinke it is departed vnto Heauen. Lastly wayling, and weeping they carry the dead corse to the graue. It is not lawfull for widdowes to marry any more, if the husband dyed a naturall death, but if he were put to death by sentence of the Iudge she hath liberty to marry. This nation loueth chastitie in women, and hateth lewde and dishonest women, and banisheth them from the company & society of the chaste. Princes are permitted to haue two wiues, the common people but one onely. The men diligently apply themselves to mechanicaall arts, cheifly to the Carpenters trade, and dressing of wilde beasts

3 G 2

skinnes:

O miserable god
 that lasteth but
 a yeere and then
 is drowned.

Their conceit of
 the immortalitie
 of the soule
 and whither it
 goes.

The priest absolue
 them from
 sinnes.

A policy used at
 their Princes
 death.

Widdowes heere
 may not marry
 againe if their
 husbands die a
 naturall death.
 Chastitie in wo-
 men.

Their diuision of
the yeere the
same with ours.
Theeues and
robbers seuerely
punished.
No vse heere of
deadly and
damned money.
Their sports.

Feuers cured
with the iuyce of
herbes.

Choller expelled
with the herbe
Guacu.

There is rather
no want, in the
want of super-
fluitie.

Natura paucis.

Their ridiculous
salutation of
their prince.

A maruelous
reporte.

skinner: the women are appoynted to exercise the distaffe, spindle and needle. They di-
uide the yeere into twelue moones, and they haue magistrates in these countries, for exe-
cution of iustice. They punnishe wicked and mischeiuous malefactors, with seuerie iudge-
ment, especially theeues and robbers. Their kings are gyants, whereof I haue already made
mention: and all those countries are tributarie. Euery one of them pay tribute of their
profits, and reuenues, and beecause they are not cumbred with deadly and damned money,
they trade each with other by bartering, and changing their commodities. These people
are also delighted with sports and pastimes, especially with the play of the ball, or tennis,
and also with topps or giggs driuen vpon tables, as likewise in shooting their arrowes at a
marke. Their nightly lightes are torches, and oyle of diuers frutes, although they plant
olue trees. They are delighted in feasting one another: and liue long: and olde age is
strong in them. They easily cure feuers with the iuyce of herbes, and easily heale woundes,
so they be curable. They haue, and know many kinds of wholesome herbes, if any perceiue
himselfe oppressed with sharp choller, drinking the iuyce of a certaine common herbe called
Guacum, or eating the same herbe, hee vomiteth choller, & shortly recouereth health. And
they vse no other kind of medicine, or will haue any other phisitions, then experienced olde
women, or priestes skilfull in the vertues of secrete herbes. They also want our wanton su-
perfluities, and hauing not Arabian odours, perfumes, and strange spices, contenting them-
selues with such things as naturally grow in their country, they liue more cheerefully, in
better health, and are more lusty, and strong in their old age. They haue small care to
please appetite, with diuers and sundry daintie meates, little sufficeth them. They seruently
and zealously adore their gods whatsoeuer, wherof they make choyce. It is a ridiculous
thing to heare with what gesture the people salute their Princes, and howe the Prince being
saluted, intertaineth them, especially the Nobles. The Saluter, in token of reuerence lifteth
vp both his handes as high as his nose, and then presently stretcheth out his handes to his
forehead, and the forepart of the heade with a certaine shrill screeking bellowing almost like
a Bull. The Prince receiuethe the peoples salutation without any signe of courtesie, but an-
swereth the salutation of a Noble man, by bowing downe his heade to his left shoulder, not
speaking a worde. But your Excellencie shall heare an incredible inuention. I mentioned
that the chiefe tyrant or lord of those countries, was of a giant-like stature. Aiglionus the
Licenciate a graue man, and of authority, (of whom I made mention beefore) as hee had
heard by them who were partners with him in the charge of building the ships, and Francis
his housholde seruaut by report of the borderers, being demanded, why he alone and his
wife should attaine to that talnesse and height of body, and none of the people besides, say,
that this gift is not hereditary vnto thē by nature, or from their birth, that they shoulde ex-
ceede others by that prerogatiue: but that it proceedeth from violent art, after this manner:
while the infants are in the cradell, and vnder the breastes of the nurses, the masters of that
art are sent for, who annoint the seuerall members of the infant for certayne dayes, with
medicines of certayne hearbes which mollifie the tender bones, so that the bones being pre-
sently conuerted into the softnesse of luke warme waxe, they so stretch them out in length
often times, that they leaue the poore miserable infant almost halfe deade, and after that
they feed the nurse with certaine meates of powerfull vertue. Lastly the nurse giueth it the
brest, while it lyeth couered in warme clothes, and refresheth and cheereth the infant with
milke gathered from substantiall meates: and after some fewe dayes of refreshing, they re-
turne to the dolefull seruice of wresting and winding of the bones againe. This Aiglionus,
and Francis his seruāt, the Chicorane, report. But the Deane of the Conception, of whom
I haue made mention beefore, tolde me that hee heard otherwise (of them who were stolne
away with the shippe which escaped) then Aiglionus his companions tolde him, both of the
medicines, and art augmenting the body: for he saith, it is not done by wresting of the
bones, but eating of a certayne stuffing meate verie nutritiue, made of diuers hearbes stamped
together fit for that purpose, especially when they begin to growe in yeeres, at what time
nature tendeth to increase, and the meates are turned into flesh, and bones. Surely it is
maruelous, these thinges notwithstanding considered, what straunge matters are reported of
the

They di-
tries, for exe-
seuer judge-
e already made
tribute of their
damned money,
These people
ball, or tennis,
their arrowes at a
ugh they plant
and olde age is
y heale woundes,
s, if any perceiue
mon herbe called
reth health. And
experienced olde
nt our wanton su-
contenting them-
re cheerefully, in
aue small care to
a. They feruently
It is a ridiculous
e the Prince being
f reuerence lifteih
at his handes to his
llowing almost like
courtesie, but an-
left shoulder, not
ntion. I mentioned
ure. Aiglionus the
eefore) as hee had
e ships, and Francis
y he alone and his
people besides, say,
that they shoulde ex-
t, after this manner:
t, the masters of that
certayne dayes, with
the bones being pre-
h them out in length
eade, and after that
e nurse giueth it the
ereth the infant with
refreshing, they re-
ine. This Aiglionus,
Conception, of whom
them who were stolne
told him, both of the
ne by wresting of the
uers hearbes stamped
yeeres, at what time
d bones. Surely it is
matters are reported of
the

the vertues of hearbes, if their secret power were rightly vnderstood, I shoulde thinke it might be possible. But, that kings onely may lawfully eate thereof, the reason is playne and easie. He should be accounted guiltie of high treason, who durst presume so much as to tast those delicacies, or woulde require the order or manner of that Composition of the makers and deuisers thereof, because he might seeme to desire to compare himselfe with kinges, for with them, it is an vndecent thing and without maiesty, that the King shoulde not exceede the common stature, who must looke downe from on high (vpon such as come vnto him) by being higher then they, or ouerpeering them. This they gaue vs to vnderstande, and this we signifie. Lette your Excellencie giue credite thereto as you please. Wee haue spoken sufficiently of the ceremonies of their religion, and of their manners and customes: let vs nowe come to the giftes of wilde nature growing in the fieldes. Wee haue already spoken of their breade, and sorts of flesh, it now followeth that we speake somewhat of trees.

The reason why
their kinges
should exceed
others in stature.

The fourth Chapter.

They founde there growing of their owne nature whole woodes of oake, Pines, and Cypress, and Chesnutt, & Almond trees, & wild vines blacke, & white, climbing vpon the boughes of trees, without the vse of wine pressed from them, for they make drink o diuers fruites. That country also yeeldeth figgetrees, and Oliue trees of diuers kinds: and being grafted lease their wildnes, as with vs, which without culture would retaine the rude tast of nature only. They plant orchards or gardens, & abound with diuers sortes of pot hearbes and are delighted with greene plattes of ground or gardens finely manured and dressed. They also nourish trees in their orchardes. There is a particular tree called Carito, which bringeth fourth a sauory fruitie æquall in bignesse to a small Melon: there is also another called Guacomine, whiche yeeldeth a kinde of fruitie greater then a Quince, they say it is of an excellent, and pleasing sent, and very wholesome. They plant and regarde many others besides, and many other kindes of thinges: whereof, leas by reporting all at once wee ouercharge and cloy your Excellencie, we will elsewhere speake. We caused Licentiatu Aiglionus the Senat. r to obtaine his desire: so that now he is sent away from vs and from Cesars maiestie through our perswasion. Hee determineth to builde a newe flecte in Hispaniola, to passe ouer to those coastes, to plant a Colonie: nor shall he want folowers: for all this Spanish nation, is so desirous of nouelties, that what way soeuer they bee called with a becke onely, or soft whispering voyce, to any thing arising about water, they speedily prepare themselves to flie, and forsake certainties vnder hope of an higher degree, to followe incertainties: which wee may gather by that which is past. With what stomacke they shalbe receiued of the inhabitantes so greatly weakened by rauishment of their children and kindred, time shall be Iudge. The like accident commeth to minde (though out of order) not to be omitted, concerning the Lucaian Ilanders, brought by the Spaniards, inhabitantes of Cuba and Hispaniola, to the glorious seruice and slauery of the Goldmines. When the Spanyardes vnderstood their simple opinions concerning the soules, which (after their sinnes purged in the cold Northerne Mountaynes) should passe vnto the South to the intent that leauing their native cuntry of their own accord, they might suffer themselves to be brought to Hispaniola and Cuba whiche lye to the southwarde of those Ilandes, they indeuoured to perswade those poore wretches, and did perswade them, that they came from those places, wher they should see their parents, & children, & al their kindred, & friends that were dead: & should inioy al kind of delights, together with f imbracements & fruition of beloued things. Being infected and possessed with these crafty & subtil imaginatiōs, by their own cosening deceiuers, as I mentioned before, & after by the Spaniards, singing and reioycing, they left their cuntry, and followed vayne, and idle hope. But, when they sawe, they were deceiued, and neyther met their parentes, nor any they desired, but were compelled to vnder-goe grieuous soueraignty and commaunde, and to indure cruell and extreame labours vnaccustomed, becoming desperate, they either slewe themselves, or choosing to famish, gaue vppe their faint spirites, beeing perswaded by no reason, or violence, to take foode, as I haue elsewhere sayde.

Vines without
knowledg of
their vse.

The tree Carito.

The tree Guacomine.

The Spanyardes
earnest in pur-
suite of nouel-
ties.

The policie of
the Spanyard
wherby hee
brought the lu-
caiana into sla-
uery.

The Spaniards
pretend conser-
uō but exercise
subuersion and
detestable crue-
tie.

A recital of cer-
tayne decrees
wel made but il-
obserued by the
Spaniards.

The heades of
Hydra.

Whether libertie
be to be giuen to
the Indians.

sayde. So the miserable Iucaians came to their ende: of whome, the number with the Spaniards is nowe very small, as of the inhabitantes themselves. But I suppose, that at the complayntes and pittifull grones of those wretched innocents, some diuine power being prouoked, affirmed reuenge of so great a slaughter, and peace of so many nations disturbed, because they confessed they were moued vnder pretence of increasing religion, and yet without any regarde they turne them to ambitious auarice, and violence. For whosoever were the first attempters or inuaders, doing otherwise then their Kinges commaunded them, were eyther slayne by them that they oppressed, or shotte with poysoned arrowes, or drowned in the sea, or grievously afflicted, fel into diuers diseases: for the decrees of the Lawes giuen them (by my testimonie, who daily considered therof with my associates) were so framed according to æquitie and iustice, that nothing might be more sacred and honest. For it was decreede for many yeeres, that they shoulde deale courteously, mercyfully, and peaceably with those straunge nations borne vnder the honour of age, and that the Kinges with their subiectes assigned to euery one of the Kinges bounty, shoulde bee vsed like tributary subiectes, and ditionaries, and not in a seruile manner, and that giuing them a due portion of flesh and breade, they shoulde bee well fedde to sustayne labour: that all necessaryes shoulde bee giuen them, and for their digging and myning in the day, they shoulde rewarde them with clothing and appoynted ornamentes as mercenaries, that they shoulde not want lodgings for their nightly rest, that they shoulde not bee rayzed before the sunne rising, and bee brought home beefore the euening, that at certayne times of the yeere being freed from the golde-mines, they should apply themselves to the setting of the roote Iuca, and sowing the graine Maizium: that vpon holy dayes they should cease from all worke, be present at the churches, and presently after the holy ceremonies of religion ended, they shoulde permit them to apply themselves to their accustomed sports, and dancings, and many thinges besides compacted and composed with prudent and humane reasons, by suche as were skilfull in the Lawe, and religious men. But what? falling downe through the descending Ocean (which imitateth the whirling course of the heauens) to so straunge, forraigne, and remoued worldes, far distant from their Generales and Commaunders, carryed violently away through the blinde desire of golde, they who departed hence milder then Lambes, arryuing there, were chaunged into rauening Woolues: vnmindful of all their Kinges commandementes. Many of them are both reprooued, fined, and punished: yet the more carefully the heades of Hydra are cut of, we see them arise and bud forth the more. I rest in that prouerbe: wherein many offend, that remaineth alwayes vnreuenged. We now begin to make new Constitutions, & decrees, and purpose to send new Gouvernors: determining to try, what fortune will haue vs doe with them that are left. And whether they ought to be free, and no labour exacted of any of them vnwillingly, nor without rewarde, we make some doubt. For through the diuers opinions of graue men, wee are ambiguously distracted: especially through the opinions of the religious of the Dominican profession, who perswade vs to the contrarie by their writings vnder their owne handes: affirming that it will bee muche better, and more secure for them, & more profitable for the health of the body, and saluation of their soules, if they bee designed to a perpetuall hæreditary obedience, then if they bee putte to temporary seruices, because they to whome hitherto they haue bene commended, at the kings pleasure, and in the name and behalfe of another who was absent, handled the matter as mercenaries. And seeing they feared, least after some fewe yeeres they shoulde be taken from them, as it is vsually doone, hauing no rewarde of the benefite of those poore wretches contrary to the articles & summe of holy lawes and constitutions, they vexed and pined both sexes in the gold-mines euen vnto the death, without respecting their age, so they might satisfie their maisters thirst of gold, and their owne. They gaue them neither necessaryes to maintaine life, nor prouided for their health, if it so happened, that through vnaccustomed and too much labour they fainted, and fell downe. Contrarily they say, that he who vnderstandeth that the Indians are appoynted to be transferred ouer to his heire, will indeuour as in his proper substance, not onely that they be preserued in health, but also will carefully prouide that the number of them may be increased by the pleasures receiued

ber with the Spa-
pose, that at the
power being pro-
nations disturbed,
religion, and yet
t. For whosoever
ommanded them,
drowes, or drowned
rees of the Lawes
ssociates) were so
d and honest. For
yfully, and peace-
at the Kinges with
ysed like tributary
them a due portion
that all necessaryes
they shoulde rewarde
y shoulde not want
re the sunne rising,
e yeere being freed
he roote Iucca, and
m all worke, be pre-
ended, they shoulde
es, and many thinges
y suche as were skil-
ugh the descending
straunge, forraigne,
rs, carried violently
milder then Lambes,
all their Kinges com-
id: yet the more care-
h the more. I rest in-
ged. We now begin
uornors: determining
hether they ought to
ut reward, we make
mbiguously distracted:
ofession, who perswade
rming that it will be
health of the body, and
tary obedience, then if
o they haue beene com-
nother who was absent,
fter some fewe yeeres
ewarde of the benefite
awes and constitutions,
ath, without respecting
their owne. They gaue
alth, if it so happened,
fell downe. Contrarily
to be transfered ouer to
be preserued in health,
creased by the pleasures
received

receiued of their wiues and children. But they vterly deny to giue them liberty, by many examples alledged. That those Barbarians coulde neuer attempte the destruction of the Christians, but that they executed their purposes and deuises and when it hath beene often proued whether libertie might bee profitable, it is manifestly knowne that it bred their ouerthrowe and ruine. For being idle and slothfull, they wander vp & downe, and returne to their olde rites and ceremonies, and foule and mischieuous actes. The thirde particular cause is horrible and fearefull, whereby it is proued, that especially in the supposed Continent, they are not woorthy of liberty. In a certaine parte of a great Prouince of the supposed Continent in the countrey called Chiribichi, the Fryars of the Dominican profession, some twelue yeeres since erected a temple. Through a thousands miseries of labours, and hunger, they nourished and maintained the children of kinges and nobles, and when they came to more yeeres they endeouored to drawe them to religion, exhorting, admonishing, and teaching them by intermixing faire and courteous vsage. And they had so instructed many of their children, that they ministred at the altars to such as had entred into religion, and had to doe with the holy misteries, and that not rudely, and vnaptly, and vnderstoode the Spanish tongue very well. But your Excellencie shal heare an horrible wicked act committed by them. Their childish yeeres being past, scarce attaining the age wherein the tender downe beginneth to budde forth two chiefe menne of them that were instructed, whom they thought they hadde nowe drawne from the brutish nature of their auncesters to the doctrine of CHRIST, and to humane rytes, determining to flie for succour, putting on their olde skynne lyke Woolues, receiued agayne their aunient and natiue vices, and corruptions, and hauing procured a great army of the bordering neighbours, they beeing their Captaynes and guides, went and assaulted the Monastery, where they hadde beene brought vp with fatherly charity. The Monastery being vanquished, and vterly ouerthrowne, they slewe them that brought them vppe, and their fellowes euery manne. Omitting circumstances, that after my sharpe accusations, you may knowe the Spanyardes deserued some excuse, if they denie that liberty should be giuen them, your Excellencie may reade one of the letters deliuered in our Indian Senate by certaine Fryars which escaped, by reason they were absent at that time in seeking prouision of foode for the rest. And this letter or handwriting was presented vnto vs when we were assembled with the chiefe manne of our Senate Garsias Louiza, a learned man in Italy, the Osonensian Prelate and (to speake after the vulgar manner) Cæsars Confessor, of the order of preaching Fryars, elected generall maister at Rome for his desert, to whom your Excellency is neyther vnkowne, nor ill accepted: receiue it therefore in the Spanish language it selfe (for to any Latinist, or Italian, it will bee easie to bee vnderstoode by reason of the affinity and propinquitie of the tongues) and I purposed so to doe, least any might argue, that I hadde changed any thing from the sense of the thing, or intent of the sender, through my translation. Lette vs therefore heare the Fryar himselfe, called Fryar Thomas Ortizius speaking Viua Voce before the Senate, and writing in the name and behalfe of others.

Of a wicked
practise of cer-
taine young men
of the Indians.

Estas son las propiedades de los Indios, por donde no merescen libertades.

Comen carne humana en la tierra firme: son Sodometicos mas que generation alguna: ninguna lüsticia ay entre ellos: andan desnudos, no tienen amor, ni verguenca: son estolidos, alocados: no guardan verdad, si no es a su prouecho: son inconstantes: no saben que cosa sea conseio: son ingratisimos, y amigos de nouedades. Se precian de embeudarse que tienen vinos de diuersas yerbas, y fructos, y granos, come Zerueza, y sidras, y con tomar fumos tambien de otras, yerbas que emborrachen, y con comerlas. Son bestiales, y precian se de ser abominables en vicios: ninguna obediencia, in cortesia tienen mucos a vieios, ni hijos a padr.s. No son capazes de doctrina, ni castigo: son traydores, cruels, y vengatiuos, que nunca perdonan, inimicissimos de religion. Son haraganes, ladrones, son de iuyzios, muy terrestres, y baxos: no gardan fee, ni orden. No se guardan lealtad maridos à mugeres, ni mugeres a maridos. Son echizeros, y augureros, y couardes come liebres. Son Suzios: comen picios, y arrannas, y gusanos crudos, doquiera que los hallan: no tienen arte ni manna de hombres. Quando an apprendida las cosas de la fee, dizen, que essas cosas son para Castilla, que

que para ellos no valen nada, y que no quieren mudar costumbres: son sin barbas, y si algunas les nascen, pelan las y arincanlas. Con los enfermos no tienen piedad ninguna: esta graue el enfermo, a vn que sea su pariente, ô Vezino le desamparan, ô lleuan alos montes a morir, y dexan cabe el vn poco de pan y agua, y vanse: quanto mas crescense hazen peores: hasta diez o doze annos paresce que an de salircon alguna crianca, y virtud, passando adelante, se tornan como bestias brutas. En fin digo, que nunca crio Dios tan cozida gente en vicios, y bestialidades, sin mistura alguna de bondad ô policia. Agora iuzgen las gentes para que pueda ser cepa de tan malas mannas y artes: los que los auemos tractado esto auemos experimentado dellos. Mayormente el padre fray Pedro de Cordoua, de cuya mano yo tengo escripto todo esto y lo plaucamos en vno con otras cosas que me callo, hallamos a oios vistas: son insensatos como asnos, y no tienent en nada matarse.

He reporteth
diuers disasters
of the Span-
yades.

The Caribes
Caniballes or
men eaters.
Of Solisius his
end.

Of Alphonsus
Fogeda and
Iohn Cossa.

Of Iohannes
Pontius.

The Caribes a
warlike people.

Of Diecus Ve-
lasquez.

Of Fernandus
Cortes his
heaped riches &
flourishing go-
uernment.

A prouerbe.

Three hundred
thousand pensas
prepared by
Cortes to be sent
to the Emperour.
Cassia fistula,
Corinian, and
Coccinean wood.

These, and such like other things daily offer themselves in controuersie, which although they bee diuersly disputed, haue almost fallen blouddily vpon the heades of the oppressors, as I sayde before, nor did the priuate grudges and dissentions arysing for soueraigntie take away a smal number of the Spaniards themselves, whereof I haue discoursed at large in my former Decades, where I spake of the Pinzones, the inhabitants of two townes Palos. and Moguer, on the Ocean shore, in Andaluzia, who running hither and thither along the vast shores of the supposed Continent, and the bankes of that miraculous riuer Maragnon, were shotte through, and slayne with poysoned arrowes by the inhabitants who were Caniballes, and then dressed, and serued in, in diuers dishes, as delicacies to bee eaten: for the Caniballes, otherwise called Caribes, are men eaters. Of Solisius to whō the same happened on the backe side of the supposed Continēt from whose horrible mischance name was giuen to that gulfie of the sea, where Magaglianus stayed a long time with his flete in his iourney. After this of Alphonsus Fogeda, and Iohn Cossa who with a strong army of souldiers searching the countries of Cumaná, Cuqui, Bachoha, Cauchietus, and Vrabia vnhappyly lost their liues. Of Diecus Nicuesa, commander of 800. men or therabouts, lost after these, while wandring from the western Bay of Vrabia, he searched the coastes of Beragua. Of Iohannes Pontius cuerthrowne by the naked Barbarians, and wounded vnto death in the country of Florida first founde out by him, who afterward lying long sicke, and languishing through that wounde, dyed in the llande of Cuba, and of many commaunders, and armies besides slaine through the might and fortitude of the Caniballs, to whom they made dainty banquettes with their bodies: for the Caribes were found with a flete of Canowes, to haue sayled many leagues from their borders in warlike maner and battayle array, to take men: their Canoas are boats made of one tree or piece of tymber (in Greeke called Monoxulon) whereof some of them are capable of 80. rowers. Lastly of Diecus Velasquez gouernor of Cuba called Fernandina, from exceeding great wealth and ryches brought vnto pouerty, and nowe at length deade, and of Fernandus Cortes disagreeing with deadly hatred among themselves, I haue at large discoursed of all these, Cortes onely as yet flourisheth, who is supposed to haue heaped vp treasures (in that great citie of the lake Tenustitan, vanquished & destroyed) to the summe of thirty hundred thousand Pensas, and this Pensum exceedeth the Spanish Ducate a fourth part, or quadrant: for hee commandeth many cities and Princes, with whome there is great plenty of gold, both of the ryuers and Mountaynes, nor doe they want rich caues of gold mines, but in his case peraduenture the generall prouerbe will preuaile, concerning his money, fidelity, and treasure, that much lesse wilbe founde, at his departure, then fame reporteth: which time shall discover, Iohannes Ribera, known to the Embassadour Thomas Mainus, and Guillinus Cortes his agent with Caesar, brought vp with him from his youth and partaker of all his noble and worthy acts and attempts, saith that his master Cortes hath 300000. Pensas prepared to be sent to the Emperour. But being aduertised of the taking of so many ladē ships by the French Pirates, he dare not send them away. There are also in the supposed Continent, and Hispaniola, Cuba, and Iamaica, exceeding great riches prepared, of golde, pearle, suger, & Cassia fistula growing in the llands, of Corinian or Coccinean wood also, vsed for the dying of wooll (which the Italian calleth Versin, the Spanyarde Brasil) commodities ready prouided. There are thicke woods of those trees.

trees in Hispaniola, as groues of firre trees, or oake with vs. While we consulted in our Senate of the affairs of India (concerning the safety, and defence of these ships) what counsell might be taken for remedy, it was decreede, & through our perswasion prouided, and commanded by Cæsar, that euery one of them shoulde meete together at Hispaniola, the heade and chiefe place of those countries, with such riches as they had heaped vp: wherby, the ships being gathered together, from al those countries, a stronge flecte might be made, so that they might safely defende themselues from the iniury of pyrats, if they met with them. What fortune shall befall them, is reserued in the armory and storehouse of the diuine providence. There are some, who say, that Cortes made two golden peeces of ordinance capable of Iron bullets, as bigge as a small tennis ball stuffed. It might be peraduenture for ostentation, because the softnes of gold (in my iudgement) is not apt to sustaine and endure, so great fury & violence, or els fabulously fained, through enuy: for his worthy acts are howlerly wrested with enuious, and spitefull blowes.

Future things
with God.

The fifth Chapter.

While I was thus writing these things, news were brought me that 4. ships from the Indies arryued vpon our Spanish coasts, what riches they bring, we vnderstād not yet: letters are brought frō ſ Senat of Hispaniola vnto Cæsar, cōcerning a cruell and mischieuous accidēt which lately happened, & (by coniecture) some worse matter is feared hereafter. Concerning Franciscus Garaius gouernour of Iamaica, I haue discoursed many things in my books to Adriā the Pope, brought vnto the city by Iacobus Pierius. Franciscus Garaius being about to erect a Colony vpon the riuier Panucus (from whence, both the country, & the king deriue their names, & the bordering country ioyning vpon the iurisdiction of Tenustitan) twice attempted the matter, & was as often repulsed and ouerthrowne almost by the naked inhabitants: the yeere past, hee vndertooke the same Prouince againe, with 11. ships, and 700. men, and more, and manie horsemen, presuming vpon the authority of the Kinges letters, whereby licence might be giuen him to erect the desired Colonie on the banke of that riuier. This riuier is famous for the channell, able to receiue ships of great burden, and is also in steed of an hauen, because that Prouince subiect to the iurisdiction of Tenustitan, is without hauens, and a wild, and vnsecure road for shipping. Beholde Garaius, and his consorts safely arryued. A strong and mighty tempest troubled them at Sea, and the fortune of war abandoned them to all abuses on the land, for arryuing he lost 2. of the flecte by shipwracke, and found the banks of the riuier possessed by the souldiers of Cortes, hauing erected a Colonie there, & ordained magistrates to gouerne the people, with the assent of ſ king Panucus (because he saith those countries are his, in the right of Tenustitan, & that the ryuer Panucus is included vnder the nāe of Noua Hispania, giuen to those countries by him, & cōfirmed by Cæsar) Garaius goeth to his Comprovincials the Spaniards, inhabitants of the place, & speaketh to them. He sheweth the kings letters patents, wherein he appointeth those banks of Panucus to be inhabited by him, & that he came for that purpose. He exhorteth, & admoni-heth them to obey the kings commād, and giue place to him, or retaine their Pretorian authority in his name, & not in the name & behalfe of Cortes, & ſ they should receiue frō him, & obserue the rest of their lawes & constitutions, necessary for their good, & quiet gouernmēt: but al in vaine. Hauing heard this in a long Oration, without further premeditated speech, or making any doubt at all, they answer. That, that Colonie was appoynted & erected by Cortes, vpon the soyle sometimes in the subiection of Tenustitan, which lyeth within the limits of Hispania Noua, assigned by Cæsar: & therefore it would iustly come to pas that they might be charged with trechery & treasō, if they reuolted, & harkened to the demands of Garaius. Garaius citeth, and sheweth the Kinges letters agayne. They say, that they were falsely procured, and obtayned, by misinforming Cæsar: and that they were hadde and gotten agaynst Cortes, through fauour of the Burgensian Bishoppe, President of the Indian Senate, who is offended with him for Iacobus Velasquez Gouernour of Cuba his friende, and somtimes a familiar of his brother Fonseca, a most deadly enemy to Cortes. As touching their priuate dissensions and hatred, I haue sufficiently dis-

Franciscus Garaius about to erect a Colony vpon the riuier Panucus is twice repulsed.

Garaius pleadeth the kings letters to erect his Colony but is rejected.

coursed at large in the matters concerning them both, which of themselves, fill no smal volume. Resisting, Garaius proclaymeth them guilty of treason, if they obey not the kinges commaundement. They say, they will sticke the letters on their heade, after the Spanish manner, and accept the commaundement, as farre as they ought: but for execution thereof, they say, they will take aduise of the king, or the Indian Senate, that both parties being hearde, Cæsar the King might censure, what shoulde bee most beehouefull for them to obey, and say, that they thinke Cæsar will commaunde otherwise, if he vnderstoode to what daunger so great a matter may be subiect, through this innouation: for if the Barbarians, being but lately conquered, shall perceiue that discorde ariseth among the Christians, they will indeuoure to cast of the yoake of subiection. It was at length decreed betweene them, that messengers shoulde be sent to Cortes. They doe their indeuour, and goe, and signifie the matter to Cortes. He appointeth two of his Captaynes, to indeuoure to perswade that Garaius might haue accesse vnto him, in that great city of the lake Tenustitan, the head and chiefe city of that mightie Empire, being about some 60. leagues distant from the riuer Panucus. The messengers come to Garaius, and perswade him. Garaius goeth: for he confessed he was inferior to Cortes: Cortes taketh the sonne of Garaius to be his sonne in Law, by mariage of his bastard daughter. While these things were thus doing, whether it were doone by the secrete counsell of Cortes, or that the inhabitants mooued of their owne accorde, sette vpon the forces of Garaius, and ouerthrewe them, the Senators of Hispaniola leaue it doubtfull, whosoener wrote these things particularly to their particular friends, whether this way, or that way, it little skilleth in the matter it selfe. The whole army of seuen hundred menne was ouerthrowne, and two hundred and fiftie of them are reported to bee slayne, and they write, that Garaius himselfe is deade, whether hee dyed with Cortes, or elsewhere, and whether grieuously troubled with a feuer, or holpen by the beenigne and courteous prouidence of Cortes, who freedde the man from the troubles, and incumbrances of humane cares, that hee alone might inioy the sweetnesse of his tyrannicall profession, it is vncertainely signified. For we haue neither letters from Cortes, nor from the magistrates sent to those countries, nor from any of the consorts of Garaius, but from the Senate onely of Hispaniola, writing to Cæsar, and our Senate, that one Christopherus Olitus, one of Cortes his Captaynes, arryued at the furthest wester angle of Cuba (where that Ilande fronteth lucatan) with 300. men, and 150. horse in no meane and contemptible fleete, and they say he goeth about to seduce and drawe an hundred other fresh men from Cuba it selfe. Who accompanying him, he giueth out, that hee woulde throughly searche those countries, which lye in the middle betweene lucatan (not yet known, whether it be an Ilande) and the supposed Continent, and there, he is reported to haue sayde, he woulde erect a Colonie. The Senators say, they were certified hereof by the Notary of Cuba, together with the diuers misfortunes that befell Garaius. Withall the Senators themselves say, that they thinke, these reportes were giuen out among the common people by false rumours of the seducer Olitus, to the intent, that beeing out of hope of reuolting to Garaius, the wanderers, and straglers (whom hee desired to haue) might the more easily turne vnto him. In another clause of the Epistle, they say, that Ægidius Gonzalez is ready in the hauen of Hispaniola, to goe to the same place, of whose nauigation by the South sea, the Embassadour Thomas Mainus hath brought with him a coppie of the discourse, vnto the Consentine Archbishoppe, to be presented to Clement the Pope: the nauigation is direct, which, it is needfull to beholde, that it may be vnderstoode, what the intent of these Captaines is in seeking those countries, by the permission and commandement of Cæsar: for Ægidius beeing returned from the South Sea, where hee founde an exceeding greate and huge Sea of fresh waters, replenished with Ilandes, hee determined to search to the North what fortune woulde afford, concerning the Strayght so much desired. Hee therefore came to Hispaniola with the Treasures spoken of in their place, leauing the southerne fleete, that hee might builde a new one in the North. For he supposeth that the flowing of that abundance and heape of waters, breaketh out betweene lucatan, and the Continent, by some ryuer able to receiue shippes, as Ticinus out of the lake Verbanus, and Mincius out of Benacus, and Abdia out of Larius,

and

Messengers sent
to Cortes.

Garaius goeth to
Cortes.

Garaius his army
ouerthrowne by
the Teuustitana.

Cortes suspected
to make away
Garaius.

Christopherus
Olitus arrived
at the West
angle of Cuba.

Ægidius Gon-
sales and of his
nauigation to the
South Sea.

and Rhodanus out of the lake Lemanus, are seene to issue forth, that they might conuey the waters (which they had swallowed) vnto the Sea. These thinges beeing vnderstoode, and that Petrus Arias Gouvernour of the supposed Continent, about to vndertake the same matter, hath taken the same way, hauing leui'd an armie of horse and foote, of no small, and contemptible number: the Senate forbad Ægidius Gonsalez to goe, least if Olitus, and Petrus Arias, & Ægidius himselfe meete together, they should kill one another: by speedy messengers, and swift shippes they admonished Petrus Arias, Fernandus Cortes, and Olitus vpon paine of treason, that none of them take armes against the other, if they met, and protested, that if they did the contrary, they should be thrust out of their gouernment with ignominy, and disgrace. This iudgement and decree of that Senate, our Senate, alloweth, what shal succeed we will write. The earnest desire of seeking this straight is so great that they obiect themselues vnto a thousand daungers: for whosoever shall finde it, if it may bee founde, shall obtaine the great fauour of Cæsar with high authoritie, because if from the South Sea a passage may bee founde vnto the North, the way to the Ilands of spices ingendring precious stones should be the more easie. Nor shoulde the controuersie begun with the king of Portugall preuaile, whereof I haue sufficiently spoken in my former Decades: but concerning the strayght there is little hope, yet we dissent not from the opinion of Ægidius, but that the ryuer which receiue those fresh waters may bee founde, running to the North, seeing they manifestly know, that those waters haue no fall to the South coast. Which if it so fall out, it is shewed, that the way from either sea will bee commodious enough, beecause from the banks of the fresh waters, whiche bende towardes the South, to the shoare of the South sea, the distance is onely three leagues, through a broad plaine: by which Ægidius saith, it will be an easie journey for any waines, and cartes, and very shorte to the Æquinoctiall circle.

Gonsales his
purpose forbid-
den by the
Senate.

The straight.

The sixth Chapter.

WE suppose also (most noble and renowned Prince) relying vpon most assured arguments, that it will come to passe, that other newe Ilandes may be found, not many yeeres hence, both subiect to the Æquator, and also neere vnto it on this side, and beyonde, as the Maluchas which are already found, and the rest described in my former Decades. For if through the vertue of the sunne about the Æquinoctiall vnder a terrestriall disposed matter, apt to receiue a cælestiall benefite offered, that aromaticall tast is infused into those trees, and other Ilandes are next vnto them, enriched with sandie golde: who dare infect mighty and powerfull nature with so great a blemish, and deface it with such iniury, that in so shorte a space of the Maluchas, as it were in the little finger of a Giant (if we consider the whole circuite) he will affirme shee hath fully expressed her force, and spent her wombe (filled with an excellent progeny) vpon so slender and small an infant? This reason issued from my braine, in the Indian Senate among my associats one example being added, that the matter might more easily be vnderstoode. I suppose I wrote the same reason to Pope Adrian, but I doe not wel remember, because the last seuentith yeare, age, and cares haue dulled my memorie, nor doe such thinges repeated vse to displease, although they haue been elsewhere seene, with out the limittes of their grounde. For tenne yeeres together in the times of Sixtus § 4. & Innocentius the 8. I liued at Rome, with her neighbourhood. Being prouoked, & stirred vp through the fame of the Granatensian wars, I went into Spaine: comming from Rome, I trauailed through the rest of Italy: I passed ouer that part of France which our Sea washeth beyond the Alpes. In those 37. yeeres wherein (through the gracious promises, & honourable receiuing into familiarity of the Catholike Princes Ferdinandus, and Elizabeth) Spaine held me. I viewed it all round about. But you wil say (most noble Prince) to what end are these things fetched? Trauailing ouer these parts, I light vpon woods of oake, & then of pine, yet mountains, & champion places, & riuers, or marishes diuiding betweene either wood, & after y I met with wildernesses of diuers trees, growing of their own nature, which tooke vp great & huge countries, and mette with such like woodes of pine, and oake, and riuers, or lakes, and

An excellent
read to proue
the liklihood
of newe dis-
coueries.

A digression.

An other excellent reason.

Odors perfumes & spices that they effeminate mens mindes.

An Allegory very witty and significant.

Sebastian Cabot and of his intended voyage.

passed ouer plaines not vnlike vnto the former, the subiect matter of the countries receiuing those varieties. So (most renowned Prince) on this side, beyond, & vnder the Equinoctiall Circle, the Tropicke of Cancer vnto Capricorne (which space and distance, the greatest part of the Philosophers falsly supposed to be desolate, and forsaken, being molested with the heate of the perpendicular sunne) many huge countries of lande, and vast and spacious seas lye, because the space of this circumference is the greatest, seeing it goeth aboute the whole worlde, where it most enlargeth it selfe, with the length thereof. That Circle therefore is the broadest of all. If therefore in so short a distance of lands and countryes (as I haue said) the art of powerfull nature be so great, that what commeth forth and groweth in one part of the same may also be founde in another drawing the same influence, in that kinde of things, which that ground hath brought forth, who doubteth, but in this aromaticall kinde, vnder so great a caelestiall vastity, manie other countries may be found capable of the same vertue, which is bestowed vpon the Maluchas and the neighbouring Ilandes, lying partly vnder the Æquator it selfe, and partly on both sides? One of the Colledge shruggde his shoulders, that he might bee accounted the wiser in infringing my argument. Behold (saith he) no mention is made of these things by our auncesters, if they stode vpon this matter, these things should be knowne to vs, or not vnknowne to any nation. Through ignorance of learning, especially of Philosophie, and by reason of his small experience, his obiection was easily ouer throwne, the great Chancellor who highly respecteth your Excellencie, and the rest of the associates, yeelding vnto me. For I sayde, that it was farre from all admiration, because we had notice of the Maluchas, and the bordering Ilandes, but none of the rest. For the Maluchas are almost within the view of India beyonde Ganges, and are almost adioyning to the countryes of the Sinæ and the great Bay of Catigara, which are knowne landes, not much distant from the Persian gulfe, and Arabia falsly called the happie, whereby, by little and little they crept vnto them, and then vnto vs (since the luxury of Rome began to increase) to our no smal losse & dammage. For the mindes of menn growe faint and effeminate, their manly courage is extenuated, through such flattering delights of odors, perfumes, and spices. But concerninge the rest of the vnkown Ilands, the reason is easily yeilded why they haue bin vnkown to this daye, because the mayne Continentes next vnto them, through the same purpose of the diuine prouidence, haue lyen vnkowne, euen vntill our times. These things considered, which are most true, if those countryes be of great courtes of the world, if there be adherent or neighbouring Ilandes of those courtes, who could walke through the halles, or search the secret roomes, when the courtes, weere yet vnkowne? we haue therefore founde the courtes when wee finde so vast and vnkown countryes, that they thrice exceede all Europe and more, if as we haue elsewhere proued, wee shall measure what came to the knowledg of menn in our time, from S. Augustine the said poynt of our supposed Continent, to the riuer Panucus 60. leagues distant (or thereabouts) from Tenustitan, that great city of the lake: we haue elsewhere largely discoursed these things. We shall also finde the rest of the members of those courts: and wee are not farr from the assurance of fulfilling this our desire. For we thinke it will come to passe, that Sebastian Cabot (who first founde the Baccalay, to whom about the Calends of September leaue was graunted (at his request) by authority of our Senate to search that nauigation) will returne in shorter time, & more luckily, then the shipp called the Victory, which only of her 5. consorts escaped, went about the world, and returned laden with Cloues: where of I haue spoake at large in his proper place. Cabot required of Cæsars treasury a flecte of 4. shippes furnished with all things necessary for the Sea, and with conuenient peeces of ordinance, & saith he had foud cōsorts at Siuil, & mart towne of all Indian marchandises, who vpon hope of great gaine, voluntarily offered tenn thousand Ducates towards the victuallinge of 5. flecte, & other necessaryes. About the Ides of September Cabot was sent away from vs to offer bonde to the consorts who weere partners with him. If it fell out well hee shall haue part of the gaine of those that contribute their mōv, of euery one according to his rate. It remaineth (most noble Prince) that with some likely & probable

e countries re-
h, & vnder the
nd distance, the
forsaken, being
es of lande, and
reatest, seeing it
length thereof.
nce of lands and
t commeth forth
ther drawing the
ught forth, who
manie other coun-
ne Maluchas and
tly on both sides?
d the wiser in in-
e things by our
wne to vs, or not
Philosophie, and
the great Chan-
es, yeelding vnto
had notice of the
aluchas are almost
e countryes of the
h distant from the
d little they crept
se) to our no smal
hinate, their manly
fumes, and spices.
ded why they haue
them, through the
h vntill our times.
great courtes of the
s, who could walke
ere yet vknowne?
own countryes, that
prooued, wee shall
stine the said poynt
r therabouts) from
coursed these things.
re not farr from the
asse, that Sebastian
eptember leaue was
igation) will returne
which only of her 5.
nes: where of I haue
casury a flecte of 4.
onuenient peeces of
of all Indian mar-
ann thousand Ducates
des of September
e partners with him.
tribute their moy, of
hat with some likely
& probable

& probable argumēt it be declared, why I sayd, he wold return in shorter time then the Victory, & why we should think this matter should more happily succcede, least moued with a windy breath wee seeme desirous to yeeld a reason of future euent. Cabot is about to depart the next moneth of August in the yeere 1525. and no sooner surely, because thinges necessary for such a matter of importance can neither bee prepared beefore, nor by the course of the heauens, ought hee to beginn that voyage before that time: for then he must direct his course towardes the Equinoctiall, when the sunne (depriving vs of summer, and the length of 3 dayes) beginneth to goe to 3 Antipodes. For he is not onely to goe the direct way to the Tropik of Cancer and the Equator, but also 45. degrees to the Antarctick to the furthest bounde of Capricornes, vnder which the mouth of the Straights of Magellane lye, by a way traded at other menns charge, and with the death of many, and not by bywayes, and diuers delays, and turnings about, as Magellane must needes doe, who through carefull labours, and diuers hard calamities spent three yeares, wandringe in that Nauigation, and of a flecte of fine shippes, together with the greater part of his company, lost fower, and his owne life in the ende. Of these thinges I haue sufficiently spoken at large in the Parallell compassed, directed to Adrian the Pope. For this cause therefore hee will sayle it in a shorter time, for that he is to direct his course by coasts hetherto vknowne, but now very well knowne. But in that we suppose it wilbe with more prosperous successe, & better fortune, we may gather from hence. At what time the dayes are shortest with the people of the North, Cabot shall haue them longest. He shall therefore commodiously runne alonge those shoares, while (hauinge passed the windinge Strait of Magellane, next to the Doggstarr) he direct his course to the right hande, on the backe side of our supposed Continent; whereof our former Decades dedicated to Ascanius, your vncler, and the Popes, Leo, and Adrian are full, and shall returne by the Zone of Capricorne to the Equator in which space hee shall finde an innumerable number of Ilands seated in that huge Sea. But whence the hope of great riches ariseth vnto vs, you shall heare. The flecte of Magellane, hauing passed through the straight, sought out with so great calamity of the men, leauing all the Ilandes they mett with, and sawe a farr of both on the right hand and on the left, directed their eyes, and their course alwayes to the Maluchas, for all their care was of taking the Maluchas. Searchinge by the way what euery one of the other Ilands brought forth he cursorily passed ouer: although in many of them hee landed for watering, & takinge in of wood or necessary barteringe of thinges for victualls, yet he made litle stay, and in that short abode, hee searched the commodities of euery Iland (whereunto hee went) with signes, and beekes, as well as he could, and vnderstood that in some of them the sands were mixed with much gold. And he further learned that in other of them, shrubbes or smale bushes of the best Cinamom grewe, which are like to the Pomgranate, of which precious barkes (as Maynus and Guillinus can testifie) I got some smal peeces. He likewise heard of great pearls, & other precious stones, thinges of noe slight regard. He determined to deferr the better searching of these Ilands vntill a more conuenient time, with open mouth and panting spirite gaping only after the Maluchas: but plotting to attempt great matters in his mynde, cruell fortune violently draue him into the handes of a barbarous and almost a naked nation, to be slaine, as hath bin spoaken in his place. If therefore from a voyage and speedy nauigation, neuer open to any beefore this, they gather such probabilities of the excellency of those Ilandes, what is not to bee hoped, concerninge the procuring of a settled tradinge with those Ilanders? For they must be curteously handled, & dealt with, without any violence and iniury, and with curteous vsage & gifts, they wilbe inticed. For those ten thousand Ducates, which Cabot is to haue of his cōsorts are to be bestowed vpon 3 busines, that victuall for two yeres may bee prouided and wages giuen to 150. men, the other part remaining, shalbe imployed vpō warrs, & marchandise such as they know wilbe acceptable to the Ilanders, to the intent, they may willingly giue such thinges as they lightly esteeme, naturally growing v̄ thē, for exchange of our commodities, vknown to thē, for they know not the pestilent vse of mony, & whatsoever is sträge,

Cabot his intended course of saylinge.

The flecte of Magellan.

stränge, & brought frō foraine cōuntries, every natiō accōuteth it a precious thing. These thoroughly viewed, & hādled w prudēt diligēce, they will scoure alōg all y South side of our supposed Continēt, & arriue at y Colonies of Pannama and Natā erected on those shores, the boundes of the golden Castele: thē whosoever at that time, shalbee gouernour of that Prouince (of the Continent) called golden Castile, will certifie vs of the successe. For wee thinke of the changinge of many Gouernours, least they wax insolent through to longe custome of Empire and soueraignty, especially such as were noe conquerers of the Prouinces, for concerning these Captaines, another reason is considered: whō wee shall vnderstande the flecte hath sett sayle we will pray for their happy and prosperous successe.

The seventh Chapter.

But first another flecte shall depart to goe for the Maluchas, that the possessiō taken, may be maintained, nor shall it be any impediment, that hee hath admitted the king of Portugall for his sonne in lawe, to whom Cæsar hath giuen Catharine his sister of the whole bloud to wife, borne after the death of his father, a most delicate young woman of seuentee yeres old, & a most beautifull and wise mayden. It is a vaine & idle rumour of the people, that Cæsar hath agreed with the king of Portugall to discharge his handes thereof, by reason and occasion of her dowry, being so exceeding great, and rich an inheritance although hee complayne it will bee pernicious vnto him, and to the vitter destruction & vndoinge of his poore kingdome sometimes an Earldome of Castile, if hee bee deprived of that intercourse of trading. Besides, Cæsar (who is very wise) thinketh it meete to prouide that so great iniury bee not done to the kingdomes of Casteele (which it concerneth) beeing the best sinewes of all his power. Let this digression suffice concerning the Iucaians Chicora, Duhare, the Tropickes Equinoctiall, and such like. Now let mee report some new things out of order, which Gillinus affirmed would bee acceptable vnto you. And let vs beginn with the most notable miracle of nature, wherein wee will first declare what is reported, next, what is the opinion of the Philosophers concerninge the same, and lastly what our dul iudgment conceiuethe thereof, as our manner is in all things whatsoever, hardly to bee credited. In my former Decades, which wander through the world in print, mention is made of the fame and report of a fountaine, and they say, the secret force thereof is such, that through drinkinge and bathinge therein, the vse of that water maketh them that are growne old, wax younge againe: I relyinge vpon the examples of Aristotle, and our Pliny, may presume to repeat and commit to writinge, what menn of great authority dare boldly speake. For neither did the one write of the nature of liuinge creatures, which hee hadd scene, but by the only report of them whom Alexander Macedo appointed to search the same at his great charge, or did the other note two and twenty thousand thinges woorthy the obseruinge without relyinge vpon others reports, and writings. But they whom I cite in my Decades (besides the letters of such as are absent, and their report by word of mouth who often goe, and returne hether) are, that Dene, Aiglianus the Senator a lawier before rehersed, and also the third, Licentius Figueroa sent to Hispaniola, to be Præsident of the Senate, and to require accompt of all the magistrates of their gouernment, and to direct at his pleasure things mis-carried, and maintaine that which was directly done, to fauour the good, and punish the euill. These three agree that they had heard of the fountaine restoring strength, and that they partly beleued the reportes: but they sawe it not, nor proued it by experience, because the inhabitants of that Terra Florida haue sharpe nayles, and are eager defenders of their right. They refuse to intertaine any guests, especially such, who goe about to take away their liberty, & possesse their country soyle. The Spaniards brought thether by ship from Hispaniola, & by a shorter cutt from Cuba, often determind to subdue them and set footing on their shores: but as often as they attempted the matter so often were they repulsed, ouerthrowen, & slaine by the inhabitants, whō (though but naked) yet fight they with many kindes of dartes, and poysoned arrowes. The Deane gaue one example heereof.

The wonderfull
vertue of a
fountaine in
Terra Florida
not hily dis-
coursed of.

ious thing. These
all & South side of
a erected on those
shalbee governour
vs of the successe.
insolent through to
noe conquerers of
sidered: whē wee
ppy and prosperous

the possessiō taken,
mitted the king of
he his sister of the
ate young woman of
vaine & idle rumor
discharge his handes
eat, and rich an in-
to the viter destruc-
Castile, if hee bee
y wise) thinketh it
Castele (which it
ion suffice concern-
such like. Now let
ould bee acceptable
ature, wherein wee
e Philosophers con-
proof, as our manner
mer Decades, which
one and report of a
rough drinkinge and
me old, wax yonge
y presume to repeat
ake. For neither did
me, but by the only
at his great charge,
seruinge without re-
my Decades (besides
h who often goe, and
ehered, and also the
enate, and to require
plea-ure things mis-
good, and punish the
age strength, and that
t by experience, be-
e eager defenders of
ho goe about to take
ought thether by ship
subdue them and set
o often were they re-
naked) yet fight they
gaue one example
heereof.

heereof. Hee hath a lucian one of his household seruants surnamed Andreas Barbatas, for that
hee hauinge a beard, escaped amonge his bearded countrymen. This fellow is sayde to haue
had a father now greiuously oppressed with old age. Wherefore moued with the fame of that
fountaine, and allured through the loue longer of lyfe, hauinge prepared necessary provision
for his iourney, he went from his native llande neere vnto the country of Florida, to drinke
of the desired fountaine, as our countymen doe from Rome or Naples to the Puteolane bathes,
for the recovery of their health. Hee went, and stayd, and hauinge well drunke and washed
himselfe for many dayes, with the appointed remedies by them who kept the bath, hee is
reported to haue brought home a manly strength, and to haue vsed all manly exercises, and
that hee married againe, and begatt children. The sonne bringeth many witnesses heereof,
amonge them who were carried away from his country lucia, who affirme they sawe hi n
almost oppressed with decrepit age, and after that flourishinge, and lusty in strength, and
ability of body. But I am not ignorant, that these thinges are reported, contrary to the opinion
of all Philosophers, especially Phisitians, who thinke that no returne may possibly bee from
the Priuation to the Habit: in the aged I confesse, the watery, and ayery vapours of the
radicall humor are either expelled, or at the least diminished, but the terrestriall predominant
which is cold, & drye, hath power to conuert & substance of all meats & drinckes into her
corrupt, & melancholy nature, I doe not assent, that dayly more & more euen to the cor-
ruption thereof, that dulnesse decayed increaseth, the naturall heate failinge. Therefore hee
that dares not beleue any thinge but that which is probable, & vsuall it wilbe demanded, how
this may be, which they say. Amonge the assertions therefore of these, and the powerfull
arguments of the auncient wise menn, whether so great power (exceptinge diuine miracles)
may bee giuen to Nature wee doubtinge thereof: not by the medicines of Medea wherewith
the Grecians fable her father in law Eson was restored to youth: nor moued by the inchaun-
ments of Circe, concerninge the companions of Vlysses transformed into beasts, and brought
home againe: but taught by the example of brute beasts, we determine to dispute of this so
strange a matter, and impossible in the iudgment of many, least wee iudge menn of so great
authority to haue spoken altogether in vaine. First of the Egles renuinge her age, and then
of snakes, wee reade that hauinge cast their old skinne, and leauinge the spoyle amonge the
brakes, or narrow clefts of rocks or stones, they wax yonge againe. The same is also sayd of
the Hart (if it bee a true narration) that hauinge sucked in an Aspe by the nostrels (which
he hath long sought) lyinge hid in vmortered walles, or within the limits of hedges, in the
winter time, he waxeth soft and tender like soulden flesh through force of the poyson, and
wholly change his old skinne, taketh new flesh, and new blood againe: what shall we
say of Rauens, and Crows abstayninge from drinkinge in sommer about the Solstitium,
duringe the blastes of the furious doggstare, beinge taught by the instinct of nature, that in
those dayes the waters of fountaines, and riuers are vnwholsom, flowinge at that time from
the menstruous wombe of the earth? And of certaine others beside, of whose prouidence,
no foolish and ignorant authors haue deliuered many thinges to posterity to bee read. If
these thinges bee true, if woonder working nature bee delighted to shew herselfe so bountifull
and so powerfull in dumbe creatures not vnderstandinge the excellency thereof, as likewise
vngratefull: what woonder is it, if also in that which is more excellent, it engender and
nourish some like thinge in her fruitefull boosome so full of variety? Out of the properties
of waters runninge through diuers passages of the earth, and drawinge thence diuers colours,
odors, tastes, and qualities, as also diuers waights, we see diuers effects produced. No
lesse also is manifestly known, that diuers diseased are euery where cured by the rootes,
bodvies, leaues, flowers & fruites of Trees. Aboudinge fleame also beinge killed, or to
speake more properly destroyed, choler ariseth: & contrarily the goodnes of the blood
beinge corrupted, the purifying thereof by diminishing the same, is founde to be the iuice of
flowers or hearbes, or by eating thereof, or by bathes, & medicines appropriated for &
purpose. Whereupon & humors beinge repressed, health is conuayed to & sicke by smiting
& patient. If therefore, as it is manifest, these thinges fall out thus in them, why shall we
maruell, but that Nature beinge also a prouident mother, may as well nourish some radicall
humour

The father of
Andreas Barba-
tus an old man
becomes yonge
againe.

Nature.

The Eagle &
snakes renew
their age.
The Hart.

Rauens and
Crows abstain-
ing from drink-
ing in the dog-
dayes.

A good argu-
ment.

Of priuation a
habit.

The manner of
the takinge of
Guacum.

An obiection
answered.

The miseryes of
long life.

Short life the
prouidence of
nature rather
of the God of na-
ture.

Immortalia hic
ne speres.

A fountaine of
Pitchy water.
Such a fountaine
as this there is
in Shropshire at
a place called
Pitchford where
of Camden mak-
eth mention in
his Britannia.

humour to repress that terrestriall part, so that the watery and ayery vapors beinge restored, the naturall heate decayed might bee renewed in the blood, which arisinge, the dull heauines itselfe may bee tempered, and all these beeing restored, an old house supported, by such helpe, may bee repayred. I should not therefore so greatly woonder at the waters of that fountaine so much spoken of, if they bringe with them some secret vnkowne power to moderate that crabbed humor, by restoringe the ayery and watery vertues. Nor yet may your Excellency thinke that this is easily obtained or that these thinges ought to bee done without torture, and distance of time, without fastinge, and abstinence from pleasinge and delightfull meats and drinke, or without drinkinge vnsauory potions vnpleasinge to the tast: they also who are desirous of longe life, suffer their difficulties, as they who seeke bathes, and such as desire to be cured of the troblsome disease of the poxe, which some thinke to be the Leprosie. For heereby occasion of takinge Guacum a cōmon wood in Hispaniola, they abstaine thirty dayes from all accustomed meates and drinke especially from wine, & the Phisitians bringe them to such a dulnes through that fastinge that I should thinke a thousande kindes of diseases might bee remoued without drinkinge the decoction of Guacum, which for the whole space of that time they only vse. Let vs now answere a secret obiection, which at the first sight may seeme legitimate and iust. Some haue said: we haue not at any time seene or heard of any man, who attained that gift of Nature, but both hartes, & snakes, and Egles, and other liuinge creatures of this kinde, by the iudgement of wise men renuinge their old age, wee see them euery where dye, after a fewe yeares of their age and surely they relye vpon no meane and foolish argument. To these I answere as few men haue the gift to be sharpe witted & ingenious, or to knowe what wisdom is, so is it not permitted to all Egles, harts, and Rauens to enter into the knowledge of this secret. For the knowledge of thinges in brute beasts is diuers, as in menn and though they knowe a secret, it may not yet be granted, that they shall haue power to inioy it, seeinge they may bee terrified with the memory of torments past, and the discomforts of a longe life: so that they care not to returne to that shopp to buy such wares. It must needes bee an hard mater for the fourefooted beastes, and such foules to indure so many winter coldes againe so many scorchinges of the summer sunne, and often wantes of foode. But it is much more horrible for a man, by reason of the intermixed troubles, and vexation of the minde, which the dumbe beastes want, and for a thousand miseryes, and casualties in the diuers interchangeable courses of humane affaires, whereto hee is subiect, and for the cause whereof, it often repenteth many that they euer came forth of their mothers wombe, how much more to desire longer yeares through the straight and narrow passages of fire and water. Who so desire the highest degrees in the wheele of fortune, more bitterly gnawe vpon these meats: prouident nature therefore hath appointed the terme & ende of life for a speciall benefit vnto men, least they should either be too much puffed vp in pride through long life, or fallinge into aduersity, they should despaire, and therefore reuile her with cursed speeches. But if peraduenture any haue deceiued nature by such like artes and deuises, in searchinge out her secrets, and puttinge the same in practise, so that they knowe how to prolonge life, it is to bee supposed, that happeneth but to a fewe, nor to those fewe in such excellent manner, that they can bee made immortall or permitted to inioy so rare a prerogative any longe time. Let this be sufficient and more than enough, that I haue wandered in these arguments: And let euery one collect, or reiect, from them at his pleasure. For these my writings, whatsoever they bee, yet are they to goe to Rome vnder your Excellencies name, to the intent I may bee obedient to honorable persons greatly desiringe the same. Let vs also report certaine other thinges, though not impossible to bee credited, yet to be admired, because not knowne to any European, or inhabitante of the world hether to discovered. In the llande of Fernandina, which is Cuba, a fountaine of pitchy water bursteth out, wee haue seene the pitch brought vnto Cæsar, and it is somewhat softer then the pitch of the tree, yet fit for the colouringe and beesprinklinge of the keeles of shippes and other accustomed vses: and my selfe pausinge a little at the straungenes of the matter, seeinge wee haue the like euent euery where before hande in a differinge thinge, I cease to woonder. Omittinge the salt of the Mountaine, of the pitts, and of the Sea coast, if the waters, retained in

voyde

being restored, the dull heaviness itselfe, by such helpe, waters of that fountaine power to moderate it may your Excellence without torture, and delightfull meats: they also who are and such as desire to be the Leprosie. For abstaine thirty dayes of diseases might be the space of that time might may seeme legitimate of any man, who at living creatures of see them every where and foolish argument, ingenious, or to knowe enter into the knowledgers, as in men shall have power to see, and the discomfort, buy such wares. It les to indure so many often wantes of food, troubles, and vexation, and casualties in the subject, and for the their mothers wombe, passages of fire and are bitterly gnawed up & ende of life for a up in pride through before reuile her with such like artes and de, so that they knowe ve, nor to those fewe fitted to enjoy so rare augh, that I haue wanted at his pleasure. me vnder your Excellency greatly desiringe the to be credited, yet of the world hether to pitchy water bursteth softer then the pitch of shippes and other matter, seeinge wee ease to woonder. Omit the waters, retained in voyde

voyde places (as happeneth in all the kingdomes of Castele) fallinge downe somewhere by the steepe mountaines, be conuerted through the feruent heate of the scorchinge sunne into hard and congealed salt, who will woonder, but that by the same purpose of nature, the like may also be done, concerninge the waters of that fountaine, brought by floodes to little trenches, and lowe receptacles without the Channell of the running riuer itselfe, or vnto a plaine plott of ground may be thickened, and incorporated into hard pitch, the vehement heate of the sunne fallinge thereupon? There is yet another thing not to be omitted. In the same llande of Fernandina there is a mountaine which yeeldeth stone bullettes, which are so rounde, that they could not be made rounder by any artificer, and these bullettes equal the waight of mettall, fit to fulfill the raging madnes of princes in the warres. That Licentius Figueroa, who (as I sayde) was made cheefe President of all the magistrates of Hispaniola, to require an account of the government administred by them, brought many, all which, wee sawe presented vnto Caesar: from the arquebusse bullette, that mountaine ingendereth bulletts fitt for the Canon, and the Culuerin. I vse the vulgar woordes, and names seeinge the auncient Latine tongue wanteth them, and I may lawfully cloth such thinges with newe apparell, as newly arise, seeinge (by their leaue that deny it) I desire to be vnderstoode. We also sawe such as he brought, which are not lesser than a filberd nutt, nor bigger than a smale tennis ball. Yet hee affirmeth that both the lesser, and the greater growe there, of their owne Nature: wee gaue one of them to a smith, to bee broaken, to knowe whether that stony matter were mingled with any mettall: the hardness thereof is such, that it almost broake the smithes hammer, and his anuile, beefore it would bee beaten in peeces, which beeing broaken asunder they iudged there were some vaines of mettall therein but of what nature they made no further search. These bulletts are kept in Caesars Treasury. Certaine other thinges (not vnpleasinge) came into my minde. I suppose they wilbee acceptable to your Excellency, or to your Courtiers desirous to reade, especially such as liue without serious employment.

Of a mountaine in Fernandina engenderinge stone bulletts.

The Eight Chapter.

IN my former Decades, mention is made of an huge Sea Caue in Hispaniola and the country Guaccarima, extending certaine furlonges within high mountaines, where it looketh towards the West: by the belly or bagg of this Caue they saile. In the furthest darke bay thereof for that the sunne beames scarce come therein, yet enter into the mouth thereof at Sunne sett, they who went into the same, sayde, their bowels weere griped with horrible terrour, through the fearefull noyse of the waters fallinge into that hole from an high. What the inhabitants beleeue concerninge the mystery of the caue, left in memory from their great grandfathers, it wilbee a pleasant thinge to heare. They thinke the llande hath a vitall spirite, and that it bloweth backe from thence, and sucketh in, and that it is fedd, and doth digest, as an hideous and monstrous monster, of the female kinde. They saye, the hollow hole of this Caue is the female nature of the llande, and thinke it to bee the fundament whereby it purgeth the excrements and casteth out the filth thereof: and for prooffe heereof, the country hath the name from the Caue, for Guacca is sayd to bee a country, or neerenes, and larima the fundament, or place of purgation. When I heare of these thinges, I remember what rude antiquitye iudged of that fabulous Demogorgon, breathinge in the wombe of the worlde, whence they supposed the ebbing and flowinge of the sea proceeded. But let vs interminge some true reports with fables. How happy Hispaniola is in many things, & how fruitefull of many precious thinges, I haue often spoaken in my former Decades to Ascanius, and the Popes, Leo, & Adrianus. They finde therein daily more and more many sortes of medicinale thinges. Concerning the tree, from whose cutt bodye, brought into powder potable decocted water is made, to drawe the vnhappy disease of the pox out of the bones and marrowe, I haue both sufficiently spoaken, and now the peeces of that wood wandering throughout all Europe, make triall thereof. It ingendereth also innumerable sorts of sweete smelling thinges aswell of herbes, as trees, and great plentie of manifold droppinge gummes, in the number whereof that sort is which the Apothecaries call Animæ Album, good for easinge the paine of the head, & giddines. A certaine liquor also almost like

Of a huge Sea Caue in Hispaniola and a pleasant storie thereof.

Demogorgon.

Hispaniola.

Of the tree that cures the pox.

Animæ album.

A strange report of a fish a hunter of fishes worth the reading.

The Matinianian Iland inhabited by women after the manner of the Amazons.

Margarita an Iland of pearls. Of a boy there Margarita which hath a excellent prerogatives.

like oyle, issueth out of certaine trees. A certaine learned Italian named Codrus, traouailinge ouer those places, to search the natures of things, hauinge leaue graunted him (for noe straunger may lawfully doe it otherwise) perswaded the Spaniards that it had the force of Balsamum. Now let vs repeate a few thinges of the fish wherewith they hunt to take other fishes. This, sometime prouoked mee a little to choller. In my first booke of my Decades dedicated to Ascanius, if I well remember, amonge other admirable thinges, because they bee strange, and not vsuall, I sayd, the inhabitants haue a fish, an hunter of other fishes. Some at Rome who weere apt to speake euill in the time of Leo, scornfully made a mocke at this, and many other such like thinges, vntill Iohannes Rufus Foroliuiensis the Cusentine Archbishoppe (returninge from his 14. yeeres Spanish Legation for Iulius the Pope, & Leo who succeeded, to whō whatsoeuer I wrote was well knowne) stopped the mouthes of manye by his testimonye, in defence of my good name. It seemed also very hard for mee to beeleeue it from the first beginninge. Hereupon I diligentely inquired of the foresayde menn of authority, and many others besides. What the matter might bee concerninge this fish: Who sayde they sawe it amonge the fishers, noe lesse common then wee pursue a hare with a French dogg, or chase a boare (brought into an inclosure) with a mastiffe, and that, that fish was sauory meat, and in the forme of an Eele, and beeing no greater, it durst assaile the bigger fishes, or Tortoyse greater then a target, as a weasell seiseth on a stocke doue, and a greater pray if hee may come by it, and leapinge vp on the neck thereof, causeth it to dye. But this fish by euery fisher is kept bounde in the side of his boate, tyed with a little corde, the station of the fish is somewhat distant from the keele of the boate, that hee may not perceiue the brightnesse of the ayre, which by no meanes hee indureth. But that which is more admirable, in the hinder part of the heade hee hath a purse which holdeth very fast, wherewith after hee seeth another fish swimminge by him, hee maketh a signe by his motion of takinge the praye: the corde beeing loosed, as a dogg vnchained, hee assaileth the praye, and turninge the hinder part of his heade, castinge that purse-like skinne vpon the necke thereof leapeth vpon the pray, if it bee a great fish, but if it bee a mighty Tortoyse hee seiseth on it where it lyes open from the shell, and neuer looseth his holde till drawing the cord by little and little he come to the side of the boate. Then if it bee a great fish (for the Hunter careth not for little ones) the fishers cast their harpunge Irons or hookes into it, and kill it, and after they drawe it to the view or sight of the ayre, and then the Hunter looseth the praye: but if it bee a Tortoyse the fishers leape into the Sea, and lyft vp the Tortoyse, with their shoulders while the rest of the company may lay hande thereon. The praye loosed the fish returneth to his appointed place and remaineth fixed there while hee bee fedd with part of the pray, as an hauke rewarded with the head of a quaille which shee hath taken, or else, bee sent backe againe to Hunte. Of the education or traininge vp of this fish vnder his Maister I haue sufficiently spooken in his proper place. The Spaniards call that fish Reuersus, because by turninge it selfe it setteth vpon the pray with his purs-like skinne, and taketh it. Concerninge the Matinianian Iland, which I sayd, not that woemen only inhabited after the manner of the Amazons, but reported that I had heard so: those witnesses leaue it doubtfull, as I did then. Yet Alfonsus Argoglius Cæsars priuy Counsellor in the affaires of Casteele, and collector of the reuenues of princely Margaret Cæsars aunt who traauiled through those coasts, affirmeth it to bee a true story and noe fable. I deliuer what they declare. The same Deane told mee certaine other thinges, not vnworthy the reporting, many approuinge the same. There is another Iland distant from Hispaniola about some 700. myles, next adioyninge to the Continent, named Margarita for that an infinite number of pearles are gathered there, out of shellfish: thirty myles distant from Margarita in the Continent lies a Bay in forme of a bowe, like a Cressaunt or new moone, like the Iron shooe of a mule, the Spaniard calleth such a Bay an Elbowe. In circuit it is about some 30. myles: and is very famous for two prerogatives. Whatsoeuer is washed either by the flood or stormy tempests on the shoare thereof, is full of salt: yet the ebbinges, and flowinges are very smale in all those coasts, to the northward: but in the South coasts it is contrary. Another prerogative is this that there is so great a benefitt and so infinite a multitude

Codrús, traunilinge
sted him (for noe
it had the force of
hunt to take other
ke of my Decades
because they bee
er fishes. Some at
mocke at this, and
ntine Archbishoppe
leo who succeeded,
many by his testi-
to beeleeue it from
menn of authority,
is fish: Who sayde
hare with a French
d that, that fish was
st assaile the bigger
doue, and a greater
eth it to dye. But
h a little corde, the
re may not perceiue
that which is more
eth very fast, where-
e by his motion of
assaileth the praye,
one vpon the necke
Tortoyse hee seiseth
drawing the cord by
fish (for the Hunter
into it, and kill it,
e Hunter looseth the
nd lyft vp the Ter-
hande thereon. The
fixed there while hee
cad of a quaille which
lucation or traininge
proper place. The
a vpon the pray with
nd, which I sayd, not
reported that I had
sus Argoglius Cæsars
ues of princely Mar-
e a true story and noe
ne other thinges, not
er lland distant from
med Margarita for that
ty myles distant from
ssaunt or new moone,
bowe. In circuit it is
oeuer is washed either
yet the ebbinges, and
the South coasts it is
and so infinite a multi-
tude

tude of fishes, especially of Pollardes & Mulletts, in that Baye, that the shippes cannot sayle through the Baye by reason of the great number of them, without danger of ouerswayinge, amonge which the fishers lightinge, are stayed for the present: wherefore castinge out their netts they easily driue the scoole vnto the shoare. There they haue a triple order of seruice-able attendants: they who stande on the shoare vp to the knees in water reach the fishes (which they haue taken with their handes) to the slaughter menn standinge within the shipp, who hauinge bowelled them cast them into the handes of their fellowes of the third order, who season the fishes with salt gathered from the shoare, prepared for that purpose. Being so salted, they spread them in the sunne vpon the sandy plaine, so that in one dayes space they are saued, and preserved, for that the sunne beames are exceedinge hot there, both because they are next vnto the Equinoctiall, and the plaine is compassed about with mountaines, into the which the wheeling sunne beames fall, as also for that naturally the sunne more vehemently heateth the sande, whereon it beateth, then the cloddy or turfie earth. Beeing dryed they gather them euen to the ladinge of their shippes. Of salt in like manner: so y every one may freely lade their shippes with both commodities. They fill all the neighbouringe cōtries with those fishes: nor doth Hispaniola it selfe the generall mother of those countries, almost vse other salt fish, especially of that kinde. But concerninge pearles, how they bee ingendred, increase, and are taken, I haue at large declared in my former Decades. The same men of authority also (whom I haue often at home with mee by reason of the affaires wherewith they haue to doe in our Senate) say, there are two smale riuers in Hispaniola, and the Priorye of the Conception, the one called Baho, the other Zate, retayninge their ancient country names. Now the Spaniards by reason of the medicinable properties thereof which I will declare, call them Conualentia, where they ioyn together. Through so long a voyage at Sea wherein from the straights of Gades to the beeginninge of Hispaniola, they sayled little lesse then 5000. myles through the Ocean, in the view only of the heauens and waters, through the change also of meates and drinkes, but chiefly of the ayer (for that Hispaniola and Iamaica are situated many degrees to the Equinoctiall beyonde the Tropick of Cancer, but Cuba standeth in the very line of the Tropick which the Philosophers (some few excepted) thought to bee vnhabited through the scorching heate of the sunne) they say, that such as lately came vnto them, for the most part fell into diuers diseases, and they who went vnto the waters of the riuers Baho, and Zate, now intermeddled in one Channel, with drinkinge, & washing therein, were purged and censed, in the space onely of fifteene dayes and in as many more were perfectly cured of the paine of the sinewes, and marrowe, and such also as had burninge feuers, & were payned with the swellinge of the lunges, were healed: but if they indeuored to wash them selues, or vse them longer, they shoulde fall into the bloodie fluxe. Thereupon, they who desire to gather golde out of the sandes thereof (for there is noe riuier that yeeldeth not golde nor any part of the earth without golde) dare not send diggers or labourers into the Channels of those riuers before noone or suffer them to drinke those waters, though they bee pleasant, and well relishinge, because they easily procure the fluxe, especiall in such as bee healthy and sounde. The same menn also say, that in the North angle of the country of Guacca Iarima of Hispaniola, many llandes of a smale circuit lie together in a short tract, which they thinke were sometimes ioyned. One of these excelleth the rest for notable fishing called labbaque producinge the last sillable saue one: the sea betweene those llandes in some places is very shallowe, and full of shoulds, but heere and there betweene, lie deepe pitts, and huge and many whirlepools. They say, the pitts or deepe places, are filled all the yeere with diuers fishes, as it were, gathered together into a safe place of succour as the owner may sweepe heaped corne out of the floore, so (they affirme) such as goe thether may after the same manner deale with the fishes and with litle trouble, and paynes they may lade their shippes. It is a pleasant thinge to heare, what they report concerninge certaine sea foules, eagles, and great vultures, by their speaches I coniecture them to bee the raueninge foules called Onocrotaly: For (they say) they haue a wide and large throate so that one of them swallowed halfe a rugge whole, wherewith a soldier couered himselfe, which hee cast vpon the foule seisinge vpon him with

Of their catch-
ing and salting
of their fish.

Baho & Zate
two riuers in
Hispaniola me-
dicinable waters

Cuba situate in
the lyne of y^e
Tropick which
the Philosophers
thought to be
inhabitable.

Marke this
parenthesis.

Guacca Iarima.

Labbaque an lland
of excelēt
fishinge.
Whirle pooles
of fishes.

Of deuouring
Sea foules a
pleasant relaco.

open mouth in the sight of all the standers by, and (they say) it was plucked out of the throate of the deade foule, without any losse or harme done vnto the garment. It is reported shee deuoured liuing fishes of fūe pounce waight at one swallowe, and greater. But when they are fedd with fishes, it will not bee amisse to tell, after what manner they get the pray swimminge vnder water in the Sea, seeinge they diue not as other seafoyles Geese, Duckes, & cormorants do: wheeling about and mountinge aloft into the ayre like Kites, and wanton sportinge foules, they watch when the fish commeth to the brimme of the water to the bright ayre. For there is a great flocke of them that flye houeringe about, so that sometimes many of them furiously cast themselues downe together to take the praye, insomuch as the sea it selfe is opened an armes length and an halfe wide: with that great noyse the fish floteth amazed, and suffereth himselfe to bee taken. Two of the company for the most part take one fish: then is it a delightfull and pleasinge spectacle to beehold their conflict from the ships, if they happen to bee present, or else to looke vppon them from the shoare: neyther of them leaueth the pray, while hauing torne it in peices, each of them bring away their parte. They say it is a birde with a bill of a spanne and an halfe long, & more hooked and croked, then any other rauening foule hath, with a very long necke, and with much more wide and spreading wings, then an Eagle or Vultur, but so carrion leane, that it scarce equalleth the flesh of a Ringdoue. Therefore to sustaine the waight of her huge throate, prouident nature hath giuen her great winges, seeinge shee had no neede thereof to carry her light body: the Spaniards call these fowles Alcatrazes. Those countries abound with many other fowles besides, vnknowne to vs: but especially Parrats of diuers colours, and bignes of body, which equall cocks, and exceede them in greatnes, and which are scarce so bigge as a little sparrow, are found there: and great multitudes of Parrats are no lesse commonly ingendred there, then Rauens and layes with vs: and it is there generall foode, as blackbirdes, and Turtles are with vs, and they nourishe Parrats at home for delicacy and delight, in steede of Linnets, or Pyes. There is also another gift of nature not to bee concealed.

The description
of a filthy fowle.

Parrats of diuers
Colours.

The ninth Chapter.

The Colony of
Zanana.

IN Hispaniola there is a Colony full of Hauens, called Zanana, because it lyeth in Zanana, that is to say, a moorish and grassie plaine, commodious for the nourishing and feeding of Oxen, and horses, for the Spanyarde calleth the like plaine Zanana: this Colonie hath a famous riuer. At certaine times of the yeere, it receiueth such store of raine water into the channell, that it filleth all the plaine (though very large) the lets of hilles and limitts withstanding, that the waters cannot haue their free course into the hauen: and that flood bringeth with it so great plenty of Eeles, that the riuer returninge to the channell, the Eeles remayne a farre off on the dry land as it were intangled among the marish weedes, and thicke canes, whiche naturally grow there. At report and fame thereof, the Mariners with the consent of the borderers, if at any time they went in due season, might lade their shippes with that fish if they pleased: but if after the flood, (as it often falleth out through the diuers disposition of the heauens) such as seeke Eeles prolong or deferre their cominge, or if impatient of delays they purpose to be gone, because they went before them, least the inhabitants exceeding abundance of putrified Eeles, corrupt the ayre, they driue herds of swine into the plaine, & make a dainty feast to the hoggs, whereof (of a fewe carried thether from hence) there is an incredible multitude in those llandes. By the nature and inclination of the heauen, all foure footed beasts are eyther great with young, or giue sucke to their young, all the yeere long, and oftentimes both: they affirme that young Cow-calues, & Marefoles conceiue the tenth moneth, and often bring forth two at one burthen, and that they liue longer then else wher vnder the ayre of our climatts. And this they proue by one example. The Deane, of whom I haue often spoken, is reported to haue transported a Cow to Hispaniola sixe and twenty yeeres since, which is yet liuing, and by testimony of the borderers, yeerely calueth, and hee vaunted before me (for he is yet with vs) that by that Cow onely, & her calues calues, and successiue ofspring, hee hadd gotten herdes of aboue 800. head of cattle. They report the same of all fowles, that beeing scarce driuen out of the nest, and but yet growing, they go to ingender new posteritie. Hee is woorthy of another commendation

Fruitfulness of
Cattle.

The Deane of
the Conception
his Cow.

Fruitfulness of
fowles.

ucked out of the
nt. It is reported
eater. But when
they get the pray
s Geese, Duckes,
Kites, and wanton
water to the bright
sometimes many
much as the sea it
se the fish floteth
ne most part take
conflict from the
e shoare: neyther
bring away their
more hooked and
with much more
ane, that it scarce
her huge throate,
hereof to carry her
abound with many
urs, and bignes of
arce so bigge as a
esse commonly in-
de, as blackbirdes,
delight, in steede
led.

it lyeth in Zanana,
ng and feeding of
his Colonie hath a
ine water into the
es and limitts with-
that flood bringeth
the Eccles remayne
and thicke canes,
with the consent of
ippes with that fish
liuers disposition of
impatience of delays
abitants exceeding
e into the plaine,
om hence) there is
of the heauen, all
to their young, all
v-calues, & Mare-
burthen, and that
is they proue by
e transported a Cow
y testimony of the
ith vs) that by that
en hearde of aboue
ce driuen out of the
woorthy of another
commendation

commendation among the Inhabitantes of the Priory of the Conception, the seate of his
creanery, that he was the first that planted the trees of Cassia fistula, the former by liuing
Deatures, the other, by planting himselfe whereby they say, they grew to haue such plenty
of those trees (as great as Mulberry trees) in Hispaniola, Cuba, and Iamaica, (whose rich
abillike Priory gratiuous Caesar lately gaue me) that within few yeeres we may thinke, a
pound thereof will be valued at that price for which the Apothecaries nowe sell an ounce.
But there ariseth no sweet or liquerish thing in humane affaires, but it bringeth some cockle
with it. So great abundance of ants runneth to the smell of these trees, that whatsoever is
sowed among them, or neere about them is deuoured by them, so that they now become very
troublesome to the Inhabitants. They report pleasant stories concerning the coddles of this
tree, or rather sheathes by reason of their length. The windes blowing, especially when
they begin to ripen, there is such a conflict betweene them, that a thousand flockes of geese
and duckes seeme to make a noyse or gagle among them. By that concourse, through the
quality of the tart or ripe iuyce, or through the waight of the small seedes, and marrow or
substance of the codd, they say that sweete melodies of diuers sounds are caused. Con-
cerning the tree, which I might rather call a stalke or stem of an herbe, because it is pithy,
like a thistle, not solid, although it arise to the heighth of a bay tree, many things are to
be repeated: but heereof mention is briefly made in my former Decades. They who
injoy this tree, call it a Plane tree, although it differ very muche from a Plane tree,
and hath no resemblance or affinity with the Plane tree. For the Plane tree is a solid
tree, full of boughes, and more full of leaues then other trees, barren, high or tall, and
long lasting, as I suppose your Excellencie, hath sometimes heard. But this, as I sayd,
is almost bare, and empty, yet fruitfull, a little branching, dull, and brickle, with one
twigg onely, without boughes, contented with a few leaues an armes length and an halfe
from the top, and two spans broad, from the bottome sharpe, very like the leaues of
canes or reedes, when they become weake through the cold of winter, they hang their
heades, and bowe themselves downe to the ground, drawne with their own waight, and this
tree is so prodigall and lauishe of her vegetatiue life, that it withereth, waxeth olde, and
dyeth the ninth month from the time it beganne to growe, or when it continueth longest,
the tenth. It suddenly groweth, and being growne vp, it nourisheth a few clusters or
bunches of berries, from the body thereof. Euery cluster bringeth forth thirty coddles, and
sometimes a few more. These, in the Ilands grow in the clusters to the very precise forme
and bignes of a garden cucumber, and so become greater, but in the Continent much bigger:
the greene ones are sower, and tart, but being ripe they waxe white, or shining. The pulpa
or substance thereof is very like freshe butter, both in softnes, and tast, it seemeth vnpleasant
to him that first tasteth it, but to such as are accustomed thereunto, it is most delightfull.
The Egyptian common people bable that this is the apple of our first created Father Adam,
whereby hee ouerthrewe all mankind. The straunge and forraine Marchantes of vnprofit-
able Spices, perfumes, Arabian effeminating odours, and worthlesse precious stones, trading
those Countries for gaine, call those fruites the Muses. For mine owne part, I cannot call to
minde, by what name I might call that tree, or stalke in Latine. I haue read ouer certaine
Latine Authors, and haue questioned some of the younger sort, who profess themselves to be
best Latinists, but no man directeth me. Plinie maketh mention of a certaine fruit called
Mixa. One (not vnlearned) sayth, it should be called Mixa, because it seemeth to differ
little from Musa in the diuer-sity of the word, or sound. But I consented not vnto it, because
Plinie sayth, that wine is made of Mixa. But it is absurd to thinke that wine might be made
of this. I haue seene many of these, and haue not eaten a few, at Alexandria in Egypt,
when for my Catholike Princes Fernando and Elizabetha, I executed my Soldanian Legation.
It is farre from my iudgement and conceit, that wine may be wronge out of it. Now let vs
declare whence this tree came to the Spaniards the Inhabitants of those countries, and why it
is now so little regarded and accepted. They say, it was first brought from that part of
Ethiopia commonly called Guinea, where it is very familiar, & common, and groweth of the
owne accord: being set, or planted, it is enlarged to such a growth and increase, that many

Antes.

The melody
that the winds
make in the
Cassia tree.

The Plane
tree.

The Cassia tree
grows vp and
withereth in
nine months.

The opinion of
the Egyptians.

The Cassia
thought to be
first brought
out of Guinea.

repent

The Cassia
where it is
planted maketh
the earth barren
and cannot be
killed.

A tree.

A tree that
carrieth wooll.

Bexucum a tree
whereof ropes
are made.

The devils de-
part, the Spa-
niols come in,
which is worst.

A discourse of
the devils and how
they are caught
by the Cucupis.

repent that euer they nourished or planted it in their country farmes: wheresoeuer it is once planted, it maketh the earth vnpromitable for the increase of other things (contrary to the liberality of Lupines, which fatten the ground with their twisted grasse or stalkes) it nourisheth and spreadeth the rootes thereof more abundantly then the fern of the mountaines, so that the field that hath receiued it can neuer any more be purged or cleansed with any plow-share, or mattock, but through the perpetuall growth thereof, arising from every little or hayry roote, new sprouts bud forth againe, which so suck the liuing mother, when they come forth from the bottome of the body of the tree, that they drawe out all the strength thereof, and bring it to vntimely destruction. The like also happeneth afterward to the sprouts themselves, as it were in reuenge of their impietie towards their mother, that hauing yeilded fruite, they presently dye: it is so briclike, and frayle, that although it swell to the bignes of a mans thigh, and grow to the height of a Lawrell tree, as hath beene sayd, yet it is easily ouerthrowne or cut downe with the stroke of a sword, or cudgell, like the plant of fennell gyant, or of a thistle. There is a tree in Hispaniola (and in the iurisdiction of an olde king called Mocarix, from whom the country retaineth yet the name) which equalleth the broad spreading Mulberry tree ingendring gosampine cottō at the endes of the boughs thereof, no lesse profitable then that which is sowed euery yeere, and yeeldeth fruite.

Another tree bringeth forth wooll, as with the Seres, fit for the making of threed, and for weauing. But they haue no vse thereof at all, because now they haue exceeding great plenty of sheepes wooll, yet haue they no workemen to this day, who apply themselves to the making or spinning of wooll. By little and little they will augment the Mechanicall arts, as the people increase. Nor is it to bee omitted, by what meanes nature of her owne accord giueth them ropes, and cordes. There is no tree almost, from whose rootes, a certaine herbe like Verben spouteth not, they call it Bexucum, it climeth vp like hoppers by the body of the tree, holdeth faster then liue, reaching to the highest boughs, and windeth and twisteth it selfe about the tree in such a multitude of wreathes, that it couereth it, as it were a friendly helpe, and a little shadow, to secure it from the heate. Nature seemeth to haue ingendred it to binde great burthens together whatsoeuer, or to sustayne ponderous and waighty thinges, and also to fasten and tye beames, and rafters of houses together: they say that the ioynts set together with Bexucum, are more safely bounde, then those that are fastened with Iron nayles: because it neuer either rotteth with the showers of raine, or waxeth drie with the heate of the Sunne, and that it giueth way a little without breaking, if the house happen to be shaken with the fury of a violent whirlewinde, beeing all of timber. (The Inhabitantes call those raging boysterous windes Furacanes, which vse to plucke vp huge trees by the rootes, and often ouerthrow houses:) such as were compact and set together with nayles, the nayles being plucked out, fell a sunder, but such as the knotty bandes of Bexucum tyed together, wagged, and wauered onely when they were shaken, and after returned to their place, the ioynts beeing closed againe. They say, they were greatly vexed with these furious whirlewindes after our manner, from the very first beginning that Hispaniola was inhabited by our menne, which blowing, infernall deuils were often seene. But they affirme, that horrible calamity ceased, since the Sacrament of the Eucharist was vsed in the Iland, and that the deuils were no more seene, which familiarly vsed to shew themselves to auncient people in the night: therefore they themselves made their Zemes, that is to say, their Idols which they adored, of wood, or of Gosampine cotton stuffed to the hardnes of a stone, in the likenes of walking spirites, as paynters vsed to drawe hobgoblins vpon the walles to terrifie and affright men from errors. Amonge other things I sent two of those Zemes (brought thence by Colonus the first discoverer of the secrets of the Ocean) to Ascanius your vncl, while his fortune was a mother. Of Bexucum, as many cubits as one hath neede of for his present vse, euery one may draw out as it were by one continued threed. Let this suffice for Bexucum: now let vs endeouour to declare another admirable benefitt of nature. In Hispaniola and the rest of the Ocean Ilandes, there are plashy and marsh places, very fit for the feeding of heardes of cattell. Gnattes of diuers kindes, ingendred of that moist heate greiuously afflict the Colonies, seated on the brinke thereof, and that not onely in the night, as in other countries: therefore the inhabitants

as: wheresoeuer it is things (contrary to grasse or stalkes) it the feare of the moun- aged or cleansed with arising from euery liuing mother, when y drawe out all the appeneth afterward to ds their mother, that that although it swell e, as hath beene sayd, h, or cudgell, like the and in the iurisdiction yet the name) which to at the endes of the re, and yeeldeth fruite, ng of threed, and for haue exceeding great apply themselves to the e Mechanicall arts, as re of her owne accord notes, a certaine herbe toppes by the body of windeth and twisteth it it, as it were a friendly th to haue ingendred it as and waigthy things, they say that the ioynts are fastened with iron waxeth drie with the if the house happen to (The Inhabitantes call uge trees by the roots, with nayles, the nayles hexucum tyed together, rned to their place, the th these furious whirle- la was inhabited by our y affirme, that horrible he fland, and that the s to auncient people in y, their Idols which they stone, in the likenes of es to terrifie and affright ought thence by Colonus le, while his fortune was is present vse, euery one or Bexucum: now let vs niola and the rest of the ding of herdes of cattell. afflict the Colonies, seated countries: therefore the inhabitants

inhabitants build low houses, and make little doores therein, scarce able to receiue the maister, and without holes, that the gnats may haue no entrance. And for that cause also they forbear to light torches, or candels, for that the gnatts by naturall instinct follow the light, yet neuerthelesse they often finde a way in. Nature hath giuen that pestilent mischeife, and hath also giuen a remedy, as she hath giuen vs cates to destroy the filthy progeny of mise, so hath shee giuen them prety, and commodious hunters, which they call Cucuij. These be harmeles winged wormes, somewhat lesse then backes or reeremise, I shoulde rather call them a kinde of beetles, because they haue other winges after the same order, vnder their hard winged sheath, which they close within the sheath when they leaue flying. To this liuing creature (as we see flies shine by night, and certaine sluggish woormes lying in thicke hedges) prouident nature hath giuen foure very cleare looking glasses: two in the seate of the eyes, and two lying hid in the flanke vnder the sheath, which he then sheweth, when after the manner of the beetle, vnsheathing his thin winges, he taketh his flight into the ayre, whereupon euery Cucuius bringeth foure lights or candels with him. But how they are a remedy for so great a mischeife, as is the stinging of these gnatts, which in some places are little lesse then bees, it is a pleasant thing to heare. Hee, who eyther vnderstandeth he hath those troublesome gueses (the gnattes) at home, or feareth that they may get in, diligently hunteth after the Cucuij, which hee deceiueh by this meanes and industry, which necessity (effecting wonders) hath sought out. Whoso wanteth Cucuij, goeth out of the house in the first twilight of the night, carrying a burning fier-brande in his hande, and ascendeth the next hillocke, that the Cucuij may see it, and swingeth the fier-brande about calling Cucuius aloud, and beateth the ayre with often calling and crying out Cucuie, Cucuie. Many simple people suppose that the Cucuij delighted with that noyse, come flying and flocking together to the bellowing sound of him that calleth them, for they come with a speedy and headlong course: but I rather thinke the Cucuij make hast to the brightnes of the fier-brande, because swarnies of gnatts fly vnto euery light, which the Cucuij eate in the very ayre, as the Martlets, and Swallows doe. Beholde the desired number of Cucuij, at what time, the hunter casteth the fier-brande out of his hande. Some Cucuius sometimes followeth the fier-brande, and lighteth on the grounde, then is hee easily taken, as trauaylers may take a beetle (if they haue neede thereof) walking with his winges shutt. Others denie that the Cucuij are woont to bee taken after this manner, but say, that the hunters especially haue boughes full of leaues ready prepared or broad linnen cloathes, wherewith they smite the Cucuius flying about on high, and strike him to the ground, where hee lyeth as it were astonished, and suffereth himselfe to bee taken, or as they say, following the fall of the flie, they take the praye, by castinge the same bushie bough, or linnen cloath vpon him: howsoeuer it bee, the hunter hauinge the hunting Cucuius, returneth home, and shutting the doore of the house, letteth the praye goe. The Cucuius loosed, swiftly flyeth about the whole house seeking gnatts, vnder their hanging bedds, and about the faces of them that sleepe, whiche the gnatts vse to assaile, they seeme to execute the office of watchmen, that such as are shutt in, may quietly rest. Another pleasant and profitable commodity proceedeth from the Cucuij. As many eyes as euery Cucuius openeth, the host enioyeth the light of so many candels: so that the Inhabitantes spinne, sewe, weaue, and daunce by the light of the flying Cucuius. The Inhabitantes thinke that the Cucuius, is delighted with the harmony and melodie of their singing, and that hee also exerciseth his motion in the ayre according to the action of their dauncing. But hee, by reason of the diuers circuits of the gnatts, of necessity swiftly flyeth about diuers wayes to seeke his foode: and our men also read, & write by that light, which alwayes continueth, vntill hee haue gotten enough whereby he may be well fedd. The gnats beinge cleaned, or driuen out of doores, the Cucuius beginning to fami-h, the light beginneth to fayne, therefore when they see his light to waxe dim, opening the little doore, they endenour to set him at libertie, that hee may seeke his foode. In sport, and meriment, or to the intent to terrifie such as are allrayd of euery shaddow, they say that many wanton

The manner of
taking the
Cucuij.

The great be-
neft inhabi-
tantes haue by
the Cucuij.

Vtix a kind of
Conies little
bigger then
mice.

The manner of
the childe-birth
amonge their
women very
strange.

Another notable
report of the
Cucuij.

Of a small Ser-
pent with a
dangerous &
strange pro-
pertye.

wanton wild fellowes sometimes rubbed their faces by night with the fleshe of a Cucuius beeing killed, with purpose to meete their neighbours with a flaming countenance, knowing whether they ment to goe, as with vs sometimes wanton young men, putting a gaping toothed visard vpon their face, endeouour to terrifie children, or women who are easily frightened: for the face being anointed with the lumpe or fleshy parte of the Cucuius, shineth like a flame of fire, yet in short space that fiery vertue waxeth feeble, and is extinguished, seeing it is a certayne bright humour receiued in a thin substance. There is also another wonderfull commodity proceeding from the Cucuius: the Ilanders appoynted by our menn, goe with their good will by night, with 2. Cucuij tyed to the great toes of their feete: (for the traualer goeth better by direction of the lights of the Cucuij, then if hee brought so many candels with him, as the Cucuij open eyes) he also carrieth another Cucuius in his hand to seeke the Vtix by night. Vtix are a certayne kinde of Cony, a little exceeding a mouse in bignes, and bulke of bodie: which four-footed beast they onely knewe, before our comming thither, and did eate the same. They goe also a fishing by the lights of the Cucuij, vnto the which art they are chiefly addicted, and exercised therein from the cradell, that it is all one with eyther sexe of them to swimme, and to goe vpon the drie land: and it is no wonder, the childe birth of those women considered, who when they know it is time to bee deliuered of the childe being ripe, they goe forth vnto the neighbouring wood, and there taking holde of the boughes of any tree with both their handes, they are disburdened without the helpe of any midwife, and the mother herselfe speedily running, taketh the childe in her armes, and carryeth it vnto the next riuier. There shee washeth herselfe, and rubbeth, & dippeth the childe often, and returneth home againe without any complaint, or noyse, and giueth it sucke, and afterwarde as the manner is, shee washeth herselfe, and the childe often euery day. All of them doe the like after one manner. There are, who say, that the women being ready to bee deliuered, goe forth to the waters themselves, where (as they report) they stay with their leggs wide open, that the childe may fall into the water. Diuers report diuersly concerning these things. While I was writing this discourse of the prety Cucuius, a little before noone, accompanied with Camillus Gillinus (whom I make my continuall companion, both beecause hee is your Excellencies seruant, as also for his pleasing disposition and behauiour) Iacobus Canizares the doore-keeper of Caesars chamber, came vnto me vnexpected, who also from the first beginning of these things (together with no small number of Palatines, the familiar frindes of the Catholicke Princes Ferdinando and Elizabeth, young men desirous of nouelties) went with Colonus himselfe, when hauing obtayned the second flecte of 17. shippes, hee vndertooke the matter or di-couery of the Ocean: whereof I haue sufficiently, and at large discoursed to Ascanius. He declared many things in the presence of Gillinus, while wee were at dinner. Who when he saw I had made mention of the Cucuius, sayth, that in a certaine Iland of the Canibals, in an exceeding darke night, when they went a shoare and lay on the sandes, hee first saw one onely Cucuius, which comming forth of a wood neere vnto them, so shined vpon their heads, that the company might perfectly see, and know one another: and hee affirmed with an oath, that by the light thereof, letters might easily bee read. Also, a citizen of Siuill, a man of authority, called P. Fernandez de las Varas, one of the first inhabitants of Hispaniola who first erected an house of stone from the foundation, in Hispaniola, confesseth the same, that by the light of a Cucuius hee had read very large letters. Nor will I omit what hee reported concerning certayne small slender Greene snakes very dangerous. Hee sayth, that these serpents speedily creepe vnto the trees neere vnto the wayes, and when they perceiue any traualer about to passe that way, they take holde of a bough with their tayle, hanging thereat, and loosing themselves from the bough, they assaile the traualer vnawares, and leape against his face, that they may hitt him on the eye, and hee sayth that their property and nature is, to ayme at no other place, saue the bright luster of the eye: but fewe fall into that mi-cheife, by reason that long experience hath made them wary, to take heede howe they goe to neere suspected trees as they passe by: this woorthie manne reporteth that one of them leaped downe

flleshe of a Cucuius
countenance, know-
n, putting a gaping
men who are easily
te of the Cucuius,
keth feeble, and is
ubstance. There is
landers appoynted
to the great totes of
the Cucuij, then if
also carrieth another
e kinde of Cony, a
ur-footed beast they
goe also a fishing
icted, and exercised
wimme, and to goe
men considered, who
they goe forth vnto
tree with both their
the mother herselfe
vnto the next riuier,
and returneth home
wardes as the manner
em doe the like after
deliuered, goe forth
eggs wide open, that
these things. While
e, accompanied with
because hee is your
ar) Iacobus Canizares
o also from the first
latines, the familiar
ng men desirous of
second flecte of 17,
of I haue sufficiently,
presence of Gillinus,
of the Cucuius, sayth,
ht, when they went a
comming forth of a
y might perfectly see,
light thereof, letters
e, called P. Fernandez
ted an house of stone
the light of a Cucuius
I concerning certayne
ese serpents speedily
any traouayler about to
g threat, and loosing
leape against his face,
and nature is, to ayme
into that mi-cheife, by
owe they goe to neere
at one of them leaped
downe

downe vpon him, which somewhat astonished him, and hadd hurt him, if (admonished by an Ilander who was his companion) hee hadd not stretched out his left hand against it descending vpon him. They say that the sting of this Serpent is hard. They also adde moreover that it is true which is reported concerning an Iland replenished only with women archers, who are eager and stout defenders of their shoares and that at certaine times of the yeere the Caniballes passe ouer vnto them for the cause of generation, and that after they be great with childe they endure the companie of a manne no longer, and that they sende away the Male children, and retayne the Females: whereof, I made mention in my former Decades, and left it supposed to bee halfe fabulous. A little before, I declar'd, that Alphonsus Argoglius the Secretary sayde the same that Canizares didd, heere I learned an excellent poynt, omitted then, because ample mention was made concerning the Religious rites and Ceremonies of the Ilanders: for neyther doth hee who runneth on horsebacke, attayne to the end of the goale or race at one leape, nor doe shippes passe ouer the whole Sea, with one blast of winde.

Hee againe
confirmeth the
report formerly
made of the
Ilande of wo-
men.

The tenth Chapter.

While the estate and condition of kinges florished the King on certaine dayes by messengers, and common cryers commaunded the subiectes of his dominion to bee called to celebrate their sacred and religious rites. At which time, neatly dressed after their manner, and painted with diuers colours of herbes, as we reade the Agathysi sometimes did, all the men came, especially the young men: but the women resorted thither naked, without any kinde of colouring or painting, if they had neuer bene deflowered, but such as hadd knowne a man, couered their priuities with breeches onely. Both sexes in steede of belles, filled their armes, thighes, calues of their leggs, & ancles with shelles of certaine shellfish fastened vnto them, which made a sweete rattling sound at euery motion, as for the rest, they were all naked. Being thus laden with shelles, shaking the earth with their feete, tripping, singing, and dauncing, they reuerently saluted their King, who sitting in the entrance of a gate, beating on a drumme or taber with a sticke receiued them comming vnto him. When they were about to sacrifice to their Zemes, to their Idoll (I say) like the infernall spirites as they are painted, and to the ende that beeing purged they might bee more acceptable to their godd, euery one thrusting the hooke (which alwaies on these dayes they carry in their handes) downe into their throat euen to the weesell, or vuula, they vomited, and voyded their glorious ostentation, euen to the emptying of themselves. Afterwardes they went into the Kinges court, and all sate before their princely Zemes, in a rounde circle or ring, after the manner of a Theater, as it were in the turning circuites of a Labyrinth, with their feete vnder them like a Tayler, almost trembling through pietie and feare, they beheld their Zemes wry necked, bending their heades to one shoulder, and praied that their sacrifices might not be displeasing to their godd. While these thinges, were thus done in the court of their drumming king the women were busily employed in another place, in offering cakes, a signe giuen by the Bouiti, the women crowned with garlands of diuers flowers, dancing, and singing their hymnes (which they call Areites) offer cakes in baskets very fairely wrought and platted in. In their entrance they began to compasse them that sate, who (as though they had bene raysed by a suddaine leape) together with the women (by their Areites) extolled their Zemes with wonderfull praises and commendation, and singing, recited the renowned actes of the ancestors of their King. And after this, they gave their Zemes thanks for benetits past, and humbly besought him to prosper their future estate, and then at length both sexes kneeling offered cakes vnto their godd, the Bouiti hauing receiued them, sanctified them, and cut them into as many small little peeces, as there were men there. Euery one brought home his portion vntouched and kept it the whole yeere for an holy relique. And by the perswasion of the Bouiti, they thought that house to bee vnlucky, and subject to many dangers of fire, and whirlwindes which they call Furacanes, if it wanted the like little peece of cake. But your Excellency shall heare another ridiculous matter of no small moment: after their oblations, hanging with

A discourse of
the blnd cere-
monies & su-
perstition of the
Ilanders.

The Bouiti the
name of their
priests.

The Oracle.

The authors
opinion of the
Oracle.Dabaiba com-
pared to Nilus.The Idoll Da-
baibe.A tradition of
the anger of their
god.An answer not
answerable to
their Idolatry.
Dabaibe the mo-
ther of the
Creator.Their summons to
religious service
by belles as ours.

open mouth they expected answeres from their wooden, or bombasin cotton stuffed Godd, as simple antiquity did from the Oracle of Apollo. And if eyther by winde included, or deluded by the Bouiti, they perswaded themselves that a voyce came from their Zemes, which the Bouiti interpreted at their pleasure, they went forth cheerfully singing, and making melody, lifting vp their voyces in commendation: and spent the whole day in the open ayre exercising sports, and dauncing. But if they went out sorrowfull hanging their heades, supposing their Zemes to be angry, & tooke that silēce for a greivous and ominous signe, they feared diseases, & other losses would follow theron, and if war assayed them, they greatly feared vnhappy successe. Both sexes going forth sighing, with their hayre hanging loose, & with abundant shedding of teares, casting away their ornaments, pined theselues with fasting, & abstinence frō sweet & pleasant meats, euen to extreme faintnes, vntill they thought they were reconciled to their Zemes. This Iacobus Canizares, & his cōpanions report. If you demand (most renowned Prince) what I think here of, I say, I should iudge they are deceiued by their Bouiti, priests, and Phisitions, through some Magicall or deluding arte. For they are greatly giuen to diuination euen from their ancestors, to whom infernall spirites often shewed themselves by night, and told them what they commaunded, as in my former Decades I haue at large declared. They are also in some place in the supposed Continent incumbred with vayne and idle ceremonies woorthie the reporting. The great and mighty Riuer Dabaiba, which as Nilus is sayd to fall into the /Egyptian sea by many mouthes, so runneth it into the Bay of Vrabia of golden Castile, and that greater then Nilus: what people inhabite the same hath bene sufficiently spoken in his place. Now let vs declare the rites & customes hitherto vnknowne, but lately reported vnto mee by the Inhabitantes of Darien. There is an Idoll called Dabaibe, as the riuer is, the chappell of this Image is about 40. leagues distaunt from Darien, whereunto the Kings at certaine times of the yeere send slaues to bee sacrificed, from very farre remooued countries, and they also adore the place with exceeding great concourse of people. They kill the slaues before their godd, and then burne them, supposing that flaming odor to be acceptable to their Idoll, as the light of a taper, or the fume of frankincense is to our Saints. They say, that within the memory of their greate grandfathers, all the riuers, and fountaines fayled, through the displeasure of that angry Godd: and that the greater parte of the men of those countries perished through hunger, and thirst, and such as remayned aliue, leauing all the montanous places, descending to the plaines neere vnto the Sea, vsed pitts digged on the shoare in steede of fountaines. Therefore all the Kings mindefull of so greate a destruction, through religious feare, haue their priestes at home, and their Chappells compassed with countermures, which they sweepe, and cleanse euery day, & are very carefull that no hoarenes, or mouldines, nor so much as an herbe, or other filth bee in them. When the King thinketh to desire of his particular Idoll, eyther sunshine, or raine, or some such like thing which the neighbourhood wanteth, hee with his priestes getteth vp into a pulpitt standing in his domestical Chappell, not purposing to departe thence, vntill they haue obtayned their requests from the godd, ouercome by their intreaty: they vrge, and vehemently desire him with effectuall prayers, and cruell fasting, that they may obtayne their desires, and humbly pray that they may not be forsaken. Being demaunded to what god they poure forth their prayers, the Spaniardes who were present, reporte, they answered, that they prayd to him, who created the Heauens, the Sunne, and the Moone, and all inuisible thinges, from whom all good thinges proceede. And they say that Dabaibe, the generall godd of those Countries, was the mother of that Creator. In the meane space, while the King, and his companions continue praying in the temple, the people (being so perswaded) macerate theselues with greivous fastinges for foure dayes space, for, all that time, they take neyther meate nor drinke. But the fourth day, least the stomacke shoulde bee oppressed, being pinched with so greate hunger, they onely supp the thinne broth of the liquid pulse, made of the flower of Maizium, that so by little and little they may recouer their decayed strength. But it is not vnfit to bee heard, after what manner they are called, and summoned to their religious, and sacred rites, or what instruments they vse. One day (the cursed thirst of gold prouoking thereunto) the Spaniardes

on stuffed Godd,
nde included, or
om their Zemes,
ully singing, and
whole day in the
full hanging their
r a greiuous and
eron, and if war
ing forth sighing,
casting away their
asant meats, euen
nes. This Iacobus
nce) what I think
Phisitions, through
euen from their an-
old them what they
e also in some place
rthie the reporting,
he Egyptian sea by
nd that greater then
his place. Now let
vnto mee by the In-
the chappell of this
at certaine times of
tries, and they also
e slaues before they
ble to their Idoll, as
say, that within the
ed, through the dis-
those countries pe-
g all the montanus
ged on the shoare in
destruction, through
d with countermures,
arenes, or mouldines,
thinketh to desire of
which the neighbour-
ng in his domestical
their requests from
ire him with effectual
umbly pray that they
rth their prayers, the
d to him, who created
whom all good things
untries, was the mother
ions continue praying
with greiuous fastings
rinke. But the fourth
so greate hunger, they
of Maizium, that so by
ot vnfft to bee heard,
s, and sacred rites, or
uoking thereunto) the
Spaniardes

Spaniardes hauing leied a strong power of armed menn, went to passe through the bankes of that riuer Dabaiba. Heere they light vpon a King whom they ouerthrew, and hadd from him about fourteene thousande penas of gold, brought into diuers formes, very fairely wrought, among which they found three golden trumpets, and as many golden belles, one of the belles weyed sixe hundred penas, the other were lesser. Beeing demaunded, for what seruice they vsed the trumpets, and belles, they answered (as they say) that they were woont to vse the Harmony and Concent of Trumpets to stir them vp to mirth vpon their festiuall Trumpets. dayes, and times to sport, and that they vsed the noyse and ringing of belles to call the people to the ceremonies of their religion. The clappers of the belles seemed to bee made after our manner, but so white, and cleere, that at the first sight, saue that they were too long, our menne woulde haue thought they hadd beene made of pearles, or of the Mother of pearle, in the ende they vnderstoode they were made of the bones of fishes. They say, the eares of the hearers are delighted with a sweete and pleasant sounde, although the ringing of golde vseth to bee dull. The tongues or clappers moued, touch the lippes or brimmes of the belles, as wee see in ours. A thousand three hundred sweete sounding little belles of golde, like ours, and golden breeches, or cod-pees (wherein the Noblemen inclose their priuities, fastened with a little cotton cord behind) were in this booty and praye. It is very necessary and expedient for their Priestres to beware of all luxury, and carnall pleasure, if any (contrary to his vowe and purpose of chastity) shall be found to bee polluted, hee shall eyther bee stoned to death, or burned, for they suppose chastity pleaseth that God the Creator. What time they fast, and giue themselves to prayer, hauing washed and rubbed their faces, (when at other times they walked alwayes painted) they nowe lifted their handes, and eyes to heauen, and abstaine not onely from harlots, and other venereous actions, but also from their owne wiues. They are such simple men, that they know not how to call the soule, nor vnderstand the power thereof: whereupon, they often talke among themselves with admiration what that inuisible and not intelligible essence might bee, whereby the mem- bers of men and brute beastes should be moued: I know not what secret thing they say, should liue after the corporall life. That (I know not what) they beleue that after this peregrination, if it liued without spott, and reserued that masse committed vnto it without iniury done to any, it shoulde goe to a certayne æternall felicity: contrary, if it shall suffer the same to be corrupted with any filthy lust, violent rapine, or raging furie, they say, it shall finde a thousande tortures in rough and vnpleasant places vnder the Center: and speaking these things, lifting vpp their handes they shewe the heauens, and after that casting the right hand down, they poynt to the wombe of the earth. They bury their dead in sepulchers. Many of their liuing wiues follow the funerals of the husband. They may haue as many as they please, (excepting their kindred, & allies) vnlesse they be widdowes, wherupon, they found them infected with a certaine ridiculous superstition. They childishly affirme that the thicke spott scene in the globe of the Moone, at the full, is a mann, and they beleue hee was cast out to the moyst, and colde Circle of the Moone, that hee might perpetually bee tormented betwene those two passions, in suffering colde, and moysture, for incest com- mitted with his sister. In the sepulchers, they leaue certayne trenches on high, whereinto euery yeere they poure a little of the graine Maizium, and certayne suppinges or small quan- tities of wine made after their manner, and they suppose these things will bee profitable to the ghosts of their departed friendes. But your Excellency shall heare an horrible and shamefull act more cruell then any sauage barbarousnes. If it happen that any mother gi- uing suck dyeth, putting the child to the breast, they bury it aliue together with her. But in some place a widdow marryeth the brother of her former husband, or his kinsman, es- pecially if hee left any children. They are easily deceiued through the crafty deuises of their priests, wherupon they religiously obserue a thousand kindes of fooleries. These thinges are reported to be in the large countries of the great riuer of Dabaiba. But you shall heare other thinges of the same nature, (last related vnto mee by men of authority, who diligently searched the South shoares of that country) omitted by Ægidius Gonsalus, and his compa- nions, yet woorthy to bee knowne: for besides Ægidius himselfe, others also haue searched

Golden cod-
pees.

Chastity inioya-
ed to their
priests.

They are igno-
rant of the soule,
yet prattle of a
kinde of immor-
tality.

Their manner of
buriall.

A tale of the
man in the
moone.

A horrible cru-
elty.

That their
kings & nobles
haue only im-
mortall soules
and no other.

Annall fune-
rals.

Inebriating
drinks.

Speeches at Fu-
nerals.

Citrean plankes
not penetrable by
wormes.

diuers coastes, and nations of those huge countries, with seuerall fleets, as I haue often spoken. Among the Kings of those parts, besides other foolish errors, they knewe them touched with one, neuer reade, or heard of before. They are informed in some places that the Kings and Noblemen haue immortall soules, and beleue that the soules of the rest perish together with their bodies, except the familiar friends of the Princes themselues, and those onely (whose masters dying) suffer themselves to be buried aloue together with their maisters funerales: for their auncestors haue left them so perswaded, that the soules of Kings, depriued of their corporal clothing, ioyfully walke to perpetuall delights through pleasant places alwayes greene, eating, drinking, & giuing themselves to sports, and dancing with women, after their olde manner, while they were liuing, and this they hold for a certaine truth. Thereupon many striving with a kinde of emulation cast themselves headlong into the sepulchers of their Lordes, which, if his familiar friendes deferre to doe (as we haue sometimes spoken of the wiues of kings in other countries) they thinke their soules become temporarie, of æternall. The heires of Kings, and Noblemen in those countries, renewe their funerall pompe euery yeere after the old custome: and that funerall pompe is prepared, & exercised after this maner. The King with the people and neighbourhode, or what Nobleman so euer hee bee, assemble together at the place of the sepulcher, & hee who prepareth this funerall pompe, bringeth exceeding great plenty of wine made after their manner, and all kinde of meats. There, both sexes, but specially the women, sleepe not that whole night, one while bewailing the vnhappie fortune of the deade, with sorrowfull rithmes, and funerall songes, especially if hee dyed in the warres, slayne by the enemye (for they pursue one another with perpetuall and deadly hatred, although they lyue contented with a little) then they taxe the life, and manners, of the conquering enemye with rayling speeches, and outrageous contumelies, and call him a tyrant, cruell, and a traytor, who vanquished their Lorde, and wasted his dominion by subtil practises, and not by vertue of the minde or strength of the bodie (for this is their barbarous custome) Then presently they bring the Image of the enemye, and faining fight, they assaulte the Image in a rage with diuers incursions: and at length cutte it in peeces, in a vaine reuenge of their deade Lord. After this, they returne to eating, and drinking, euen to drunkennesse, and surfeting (For they make diuers potions of inebriating graynes, & hearbes, as with the Belgæ ale is made of hopped, and corne, and with the Cantabri Sider is made of apples) After this, they come to dancing, and merry songes, euen till they be extreame weary, extolling the vertues of their Lorde with wonderfull commendation in that he was good, liberall, and very louing to his people, for that also he was carefull of their sowing, or planting, and of their standing corne, and to distribute all fruites for the benefite of the people. For this is the chiefe and principall care of Kinges, that in military affaires hee bee a valiant and couragious souldier, and a wise commander. Returning againe to their mourning, they lift vp their voyces, and bewaile the deade with the rythmes wherewith they beganne, saying: O most famous, and Noble Prince, who hath violently taken thee away from vs? oh vnhappie day, which hath depriued vs of so great felicity, oh miserable wretches that wee are, who haue lost such a father of our country: these and such like thinges proclaymed, turning to the Prince that is present, they deliuer wonderfull commendations of his merits, goodnesse and other vertues, and compass the king about with restles skipping and dancing like the furies of Bacchus, yet withall, looke reuerently vpon him, and adore him, and say that in him they behold a present & future remedie and solace of their afflictions, and so many euils past: and after the maner of flatterers, they call him more elegant and fine then the finest, more beautifull then the fairest, and more liberall then the most liberall, and singing all together with one voyce they proclaime him religious and gracious, and many such like. Now when the day beginneth to appeare, they cōe forth of the house, and finde a Canow (of the bodie of one tree, capable of 60 oars and more) with the image of the dead ready prepared there. For the trees in that place are of an exceeding length, especially the Citrons, the familiar and common trees of those countries, of whose excellent prerogatiues I lately learned one, vnkowne to me before. They say the Citrean plankes, besides the other auncient commendations thereof, be because

as I haue often
 they knewe them
 some places that
 oules of the rest
 themselves, and
 gether with their
 e soules of Kings,
 through pleasant
 and dancing with
 old for a certaine
 es headlong into
 doe (as we haue
 their soules become
 ntries, renue their
 pe is prepared, &
 e, or what Noble
 hee who prepareth
 their manner, and
 t that whole night,
 hmes, and funerall
 they pursue one
 with a little) then
 speeches, and out-
 ished their Lorde,
 minde or strength
 uring the Image of
 ers incursions: and
 r this, they returne
 make diuers potions
 bes, and corne, and
 dancing, and merry
 r Lorde with woon-
 nis people, for that
 corne, and to distri-
 principall care of
 er, and a wise com-
 , and bewaile the
 s, and Noble Prince,
 hath deprived vs of
 a father of our coun-
 hat is present, they
 tues, and compasse
 s, yet withall, looke
 a present & future
 er the maner of flat-
 full then the fairest,
 one voyce they pro-
 e day beginneth to
 of one tree, capable
 e. For the trees in
 ar and common trees
 ne, vnknowne to me
 mmentations thereof,
 because

because they are of a bitter tast, are safe from that mischieuous plague of Sea wormes, which eat through the pumpes of ships, whersoer the sea is full of mire & filth, and boare them worse then a pierced siue. These little sea-woormes the Spanyard calleth Broma. In the meane space while the maister of this funeral pompe cometh forth, the kings Stewardes, and officers, keepe the foresaide Canow of the deade ready prepared without, filled with drinckes, hearbes, & fruits, & fish, flesh and bread, such as he delighted in while hee was liuing: then they who are inuited comming forth, cary the Canow vpon their shoulders, going about the Courte. And presently in the same place, from whence they lifted the Canow vp to cary it, putting fire vnder it, they burne it with all the thinges included, supposing that fume to be most acceptable and pleasing to the soule of the deade. Then all the womanne filled with excesse of wine, with their hayre loose, and their secrets discouered, vttemperatly foming, sometimes with a slowe, and sometimes with a speedie pace, with trembling legges, somewhat leaning to the wals, and sometimes staggering, and raging, with shamelesse falles, & lastly taking the weapons of the men with noyse and outeries, they brandish, and shake the speares, & handle the darts and arrowes, and furiously running hither, and thither shake the court it selfe: and after this being weary, they cast themselues flate vpon the grounde, not couering their secrets, and there sleepe their fill. These thinges are chiefly vsed in an Iland of the Sea called Cesuaco, wherunto our men went by the way vnder the conduct of Spinosa. But one other thing omitted, although but a homely tale yet it is not to be concealed. The young men earnestly buysied in these mad pastimes, exercising their Areites with songs, these are their sports, they perce the middle of their priuie members with the sharpe bone of a fish, which the Spanyardes and Latines call Raia, in Greeke Bitis, and moouing, and exercise themselues with skipping & dancing they bedew the pavement of the court with streames of flowing bloude. At length casting a certayne powder thereon, found out by the Bauti for remedie therof, who execute the office of Surgeons, phisicians, & priests, within 4. daies they cure the woundes given unto themselves. In those countries also there are subtil and craftie Magicians, and Soothsayers, so that they neuer attempt any thing, without consulting with their Argures: for whether they purpose hunting, or fishing, or to gather golde out of the mines, or determine to seek for shell-fishe where the pearles growe, they dare not stirre one foot, vnles the maister of that art Teque-nigna (which is a name of dignitie) first signifye by his appoyntment, that the time is now fit. No degree of affinitie or other kind of kindred is forbiddē with the, though elsewhere they abstaine, the parents vse the act of generatiō with their daughters, and brothers with their sisters (the wiues of the parentes, although they bee mothers by hereditary right procure heiress with other faculties) yet they say, they are finnie, and publicly inclined to preposterous venerie. There is also another custome else-where, which is much vsed in our Ilandes Hispaniola, Cuba, and Iamaica. That womanne is accounted more liberall, and honourable, who beeing able to receiue a manne admitteth most to abuse her, and most excessively prostituteth her selfe beeyonde measure. Heereof they yelde manie examples, but one of them is gracious and well to bee lyked. Certayne Spanyardes intermixed with the barbarous Iamaicanes crossed ouer the Sea from Iamaica to Hispaniola, amonge the womanne one was verie beautifull, who hadde kept her selfe vntouched tyll that day, and was a louer of chastitie. The Spanyardes of purpose turning vnto her, began to call her nig-gardlie, and desirous to preserue her honour after an euill manner. The lasciuious disposition and scurrilitie of those wanton young men was such, that they made the young maiden almost madde, thereupon she determined by prostituting herselfe, to escape as many as would abuse her. This mayden who nicely resisted that conflict at first, shewed her selfe most liberall to such as desired to imbrace her. The name of auarice in both sexes, is odious, and infamous in these Ilandes. But in the Continent in many places it is contrarie. They are louers of the chastity of their wiues: and hereupon they are so ielous, that the wiues offending therein, are punished by cutting their throates.

Wee conclude your portion (most noble Prince) with a prodigious monster. What remaineth, or if any newe matter arise in the writing hercof, the Pope by his parchment pa-
 tent

The brutish be-
 haviour of their
 women.

A foolish and
 filthy prank of
 young men.

A pleasure
 common at
 beates.

A wom. n the
 more common
 the more com-
 mendable.

Let the populus
 number this
 among their
 glorious conuer-
 sions.

A strange tale
of a prodigious
monster.

The taking of
the monster.

tent lately brought vnto mee, commaundeth to be dedicated vnto himselfe. The next countrey to the fountayne or heade of the riuer Dabaiba is called Camara producing the last sillable. In the memorie of menne yet liuing it is reported, that in that countrey a violent tempest of blustering whirlwinds arose from the East, which plucked vp by the rootes whatsoever trees stood in the way, and violently carryed away many houses and tossed them in the ayre, especially such as were made of timber. Through that violent tempest, they say two fowles were brought into the country, almost like the Harpie of the Ilands Strophades so much spoken of, for that they had the countenance of a virgin, with a chinne, mouth, nose, teeth, smooth brow, and venerable eyes, and faire. They say one of these was of such huge bignes, that no bough of any tree was able to beare her lighting thereon, but that it would breake: and further they also say, that through her exceeding waight, the verie print of her talons remayned in the stones of the rockes where shee went to perch all night. But why doe I repeat this? shee seized on a trauailer with her talons, and carryed him to the high toppes of the mountains to eate him, with no more difficultie, then kites vse to carry away a little chicken. The other, for that it was lesse, they suppose to bee the young one of the greater. The Spanyardes, who trauailed through those countries about foure hundred leagues, carryed by shippe from the mouth of this riuer, say plainly that they spake with many, who sawe the greater killed, especially those approued men whom I often mentioned, the Lawyer Corrales, and the Musitian Osorius, and Spinosa. But howe the Debaibensian Camerani freed themselves from suche and so great a plague and mischiefe, it will not be vnfit to bee hearde. Seeing necessitie quickeneth and procureth wittie inuentions, the Camarani deuised a way (worthy the reporting) howe to kill this rauening foule. They cutte a great beame or peece of tymber, and at one of the endes therof they carue the Image and resemblance of a manne (for they are skilfull in all Imaginary art) then digging a trench in a cleere moone-light night they fasten the peece of tymber in the next way to the passage, where the prodigious foule came flying downe from the top of the Mountaynes to seeke her pray, leauing onely the shape and proportion of a manne appearing aboue grounde. Next vnto the way stoode a thicke woode, wherein they lay hidde with their bowes and dartes to smite her vnawares. Beholde a little before the rising of the Sunne the fearefull monster rouseth her selfe, and commeth violently flying downe from the loftie skie, to her wayne and idle pray: shee seisseth vpon the carued Image, taketh and gripeth it, and so fastened her talons, that shee could not free her selfe, vntil the Barbarians issuing from the secret places where they lay hid, shot her through with their arrowes, so that shee escaped pierced more then a shute. At length geting loose shee fel down dead neere vnto the: then binding & haging her on long speares they who killed her carryed her vpon their shoulders through all the neighbouring townes, to the ende they might ease their mindes of the feare they conceiued, and that they might knowe the wayes were safe whiche this outrageous rauening foule made vnpassable. They who killed her, were accounted as Gods, and were honourably intertained by those people, and that, not without giftes and rewardes presented vnto them, as it happeneth with many nations, when presentes are giuen by the neighbours to him that carryeth the signes or tokens of any Lyon, Beare, or Woolfe slayne, who expected losses by those wilde beastes. They say her legs were thicker and greater then the great thygh of a manne, but shorte, as in Eagles, and other rauening fowles. The younger, the damme beeing killed, was neuer seene againe. Nowe, I bidde your Excellencie farewell, to whom I wish a quiet and peaceable lyfe in the kingdome left you by your Auncesters.

FINIS.

The eight Decade of Peter Martyr a Millanois of Angleria, chiefe Secretary, and one of the Emperours Counsell, dedicated to Pope Clement the Seuenth.

The first Chapter.

MOst blessed father, I receiued vnder S. Peters signet (after the manner of Popes) a parchment Bull from your Holinesse, which contained two principall points: the one laudative,

The next coun-
 tending the last silla-
 country a violent
 by the rootes what-
 and tossed them in
 t tempest, they say
 Islands Strophades so
 thinne, mouth, nose,
 se was of such huge
 n, but that it would
 he verie print of her
 l night. But why doe
 to the high toppes of
 to carry away a little
 ag one of the greater.
 dred leagues, caryed
 ith many, who sawe
 ned, the Lawyer Cor-
 sian Camerani freedde
 pe vnfit to bee hearde.
 marani deuised a way
 great beame or peece
 nd resemblance of a
 ch in a cleere moone-
 sage, where the pro-
 ke her pray, leauing
 . Next vnto the way
 artes to smite her vna-
 monster rouseth her
 r wayne and idle pray:
 tened her talons, that
 eret places where they
 erced more the a siue.
 g & hāging her on long
 n all the neighbouring
 conceiued, and that they
 oule made vnpassable.
 ly intertaind by those
 m, as it happeneth with
 hat carryeth the signes
 by those wilde beastes.
 a manne, but shorte, as
 killed, was neuer seene
 a quiet and peaceable

efe Secretary, and
 nt the Seuenth.

the manner of Popes) a
 l points: the one lauda-
 tue,

time, concerning the matters of f newe world by me directed to your predecessors, the other
 imparatiue, that I suffer not the rest f succeeded to be swallowed in the huge gulfe of ob-
 litiou. I will not denie but that I deserue prayse for the desire I haue to obey: as for my
 rude and homly maner of deliery, if I merit no commendation, yet shall I deserue pardon
 at the least. These discourses being of so great importance, and such quality, would require
 Ciceronian spirites, as I haue often protested in the relation of my former Decades, but be-
 cause I could not get silke, or cloth of golde, I haue attyed the most beautifull Nereides
 (I meane the Ilandes of the Ocean ingendring precious stones vnknowne from the beginning
 of the world) with vulgar and homly apparell. Before that commandement of your Holinesse
 came to my hands, I hadde directed many aduertisementes (succeeding those of Pope
 Adrian which your Holinesse hath read) to the Vicecount Franciscus Sfortia Duke of my na-
 tiue country (when his fortune freedde him, from an vtired minde of a most Christian King)
 and that at the earnest requests of his Agents with the Emperor. But now purposing to
 sende my painefull labours to your Holinesse, I thought it needefull to fortifie and strengthen
 these present discourses with the examples of thinges past, though dedicated to another:
 and as a troupe of Prelates and Princely Cardinales of the Church vseth to goe beefore the
 Pope walking abroad, so shall that Decade presented to the Duke open the way. What hath
 beene declared next after them, from diuers partakers of thinges, concerning the aduentures
 of menne, of fourefooted beastes, birdes, flyes, trees, hearbes, the rites & customes of
 people, of the art of Magicke, of the present state and condition of newe Spayne, and di-
 uers flectes, your Holinesse shall vnderstande, from whose commaundement none liuing may
 safely departe. And let vs first rehearse what befeell Franciscus Garaius, the Gouernour of
 Iamaica, by a newe name called Saint Iames (whose Abby-like Priory Cæsars bountie lately
 gaue mee) who contrary to the will and pleasure of Fernandus Cortes, went about to erect
 a Colonie at the ryuer Panucus, which at length brought him to his ende: next, where Ægidius
 Gonsalus arryued seeking the strayght so much desired on the North, and Christopherus
 Olitus, of whom wee touched a few thinges in the former Decade to the Duke. Then will wee
 speake somewhat of Petrus Arias Gouernor of the supposed Continent, seeking the same.
 And presently after, wee will recite Licentiatu Marcellus Villalabos, Iudge of the Indian
 Senate in Hispaniola, & his familiar Iacobus Garsias Barrameda, who comming lately from
 Fernandus Cortes gouernour of Noua Hispania, reported certaine great and strange matters
 vnto me. Many others also shalbe called into this void plot, among whō Fryar Thomas Hortizius
 (one of the 2. coloured Dominican Fryars, a manne of approued honesty) shall be brought
 forth, who was long conuersant with the Chiribichenses the inhabitantes of the supposed
 Continent. Nor shall Iacobus Aluarez Osorius be omitted, being nobly descended, a priest
 of the Priory of Darien, and for his worthinesse a Chaunter, who also himselfe vnder the
 conducte of Spinosa through that vastity of the South Sea spent many yeres with great ex-
 tremities and daungers, and that in searching the countries of Dabaiba. From the large vo-
 lumes of these, and such like menne of authoritie beeing absent, and by woorde of mouth
 of those that come about their affayres, I gather those thinges, which three Popes, and other
 Princes commaunded me to signifie vnto you. Let vs therefore place the life, and the vn-
 happy death of Garaius in the first front of our narration. In the former bookes directed to
 Adrian the Predecessour of your Holinesse, I thinke, in manie places it is sayde, that there
 was secret hatred betweene Fernandus Cortes the Conquerour of newe Spayne, and the
 great Prouinces thereof, and this Garaius, by reason that Garaius seemed desirous to possesse
 the Panucan countries bordering vpon the Dominions of Cortes. Wee haue also said that
 Garaius himselfe with great losses was twice ouerthrowne by the almost naked inhabitautes,
 who dwelt vpon the greates Ryuer Panucus, and wandring like a fugitiue arryued as often
 within the power of Fernandus Cortes, and was by him relieved, and often refreshed with
 necessaries, when he wanted, as appeareth at large by Cortes his writings, and myne, wand-
 ring through the Christian worlde. Foure shippes are arryued from the Indies, and wee
 haue receiued letters from those who were partakers of the paynefull labours, and miseries,
 and also haue the discourse of Garaius, by woorde of mouth from them who returned. Bee-
 ing

He reheareth
 more at large
 the story of Ga-
 raius mentioned
 in the former
 Decade.

Zone Torrida
falsly so called.

Garaiana.

Alphonsus Men-
doza.

Fernandus Fi-
gueroa.

Gonsalus Ouag-
lius.
Iacobus Cifon-
teus.

The ryuer of
Palmetrees.
Gonsalus Do-
campus.

ing about to possesse (by Cæsars permission) the bankes of the great ryuer Panucus nowe discovered, to the intent hee might plant a Colonie there, whereof hee hadde long considered, the eighteenth of the Calendes of Iune, he departed from Iamaica (by a newe name called the Ilande of S. Iames, whiche hee gouerned a long time) with a flecte of 11. shyppes, whereof sixe were of the burden of a hundred and twentie and a hundred and fiftie tunnes, two were of that kinde which the Spanyard calleth Carauelles, and as many Brigantines with two ranges of oares: the number of his souldiers were, 144. horse, 300. archers footemen, 200. shotte, 200. bearing swoordes and targettes, and with this armie he sayled towardes Cuba called Fernandina. The Tropick of Cancer diuideth Cuba. Iamaica lyeth more to the South from it, within the Zone falsely called Torrida by auncient writers. Cuba is almost twice as long as Italie, the furthest West angle whereof full of hauens, called the Heade of the Currentes, Garaius tooke, and purposing to take in freshe water, woode, and grasse to feede the horses, hee aboade there some fewe dayes. That angle is not very farre distaunt from the first limittes of Noua Hispania, which Cortes in Cæsars heehalfe, commaundeth, whereby hee vnderstoode that Cortes hadde erected a Colonie vppon the banke of Panucus. Garaius sendeth for the Centurions, they consult, and deliberate what was needfull to bee doone. Some thought it fitte to seeke newe countries, seeing manie lay open vnto them, and that the fortune and greatnesse of Cortes was to bee feared, others aduise and counselled, that the waighy charge they hadde vndertaken was not to be forsaken, especially beeing confirmed by Cæsars letters patents, whereby he consenteth the Prouince shoulde bee called Garaiana. Their suffrages and consent preuayled, who tooke the woorsere parte: so that the pernicious opinion of his consortes pleased Garaius well. Hauing sounded the mindes of the Centurions, and Commanders, hee excercised a vaine shaddowe and counterfeit shewe of erecting a Common-wealth, and diuideth the places of Magistracy, and authoritie, among them, to the intent that hauing offered honour and prefermentes vnto them, hee might cause the chiefe menne to bee more readie and prompt. And of this shaddowlike & Imaginary Colonie he createth gouernors, Alphonsus Mendoza, the nephewe of Alphonsus Pachecus sometimes Maister of the Spatensians, and ioyned as fellowe in office with him Fernandus Figueroa a citizen of Cæsars Castle of no meane and base parentage, and two others brought away from the Iland of Cuba. But the chiefe Gouernour of the cittie hee created Gonsalus Ouaglius, a noble mann of Salamantinum, neere kinsmanne of the Duke of Alba, and Villagranus his olde familiar of the kings house, and Iacobus Cifonteus, one of the common people, but industrious and wise. Out of the vulgar sorte also hee created Executory souldiers, whiche the Spanyard calleth Alguazillos, and Ediles or clarkes of the Markettes to looke to the waights, and measures. All these, Garaius bindeth to him by oath, agaynst Cortes if peraduenture it shoulde come to armes, or other violent courses. So, decciued with vayne hope, beeing not experienced in the casualties of fortune, nor well acquainted with the craft and subtiltie of Cortes, they sette sayle: if they hadde knowne the good happe proffered, fortune offered them her blessed browe. Suddenly from the South a tempest arose, which decciued the Pilottes. The shyppes comming neere the lande fell into a ryuer somewhat lesse then Panucus, whiche they suppose to bee Panucus. This ryuer lay to the Northwarde from Panucus, whether the violence of the winds trasported them, peraduenture about some 70. leagues towards the lande of Florida lately knowne and discovered. The twenty-fine of Iune vppon whiche day, Spayne celebrateth the solemnitie of Saint Iames their protector with GOD, they entred the mouth of that ryuer, and cast anker, in the shoare whereof they finde Palme, or Datetrees, whereupon they call it the ryuer of Palme trees. The buisinesse or charge of searching the bordering countrey, is committed to Gonsalus Docampus the sisters sonne of Garaius, for whiche seruice they send from the Flecte a small Brigantine whiche drewe litle water. Docampus sayled fiftene leagues vppe the ryuer, spent three dayes, and ascending vppe the ryuer by litle and litle, he found other ryuers were receiued into that greater ryuer, and hauing his cies fixed on Panucus, hee falsely reported that the countrey was vnmanured, vnprofitable, and desert. For they learned afterwarde that this Prouince was pleasant, and well blest, and stored with

uer Panucus nowe
le long considered,
newe name called
e of 11. shypes,
d and fiftie tunnes,
ny Brigantines with
archers footemen,
he sayled towards
a lyeth more to the
s. Cuba is almost
hauens, called the
water, woode, and
t angle is not very
in Cæsars bechale,
Colonie vpon the
and deliberate what
es, seeing manie lay
ee feared, others ad-
not to be forsaken,
enteth the Prouince
no toke the wooser
ll. Hauing sounded
shaddowe and coun-
s of Magistracy, and
d prefermentes vnto
ompt. And of this
ondoza, the nephewe
d as fellowe in office
d base parentage, and
mour of the cittie hee
anne of the Duke of
Cifonteus, one of the
so hee created Exe-
or clarkes of the Mar-
eth to him by oath,
ent courses. So, de-
fortune, nor well ac-
ey hadde knowne the
enly from the South a
e the lande fell into a
This ryuer lay to the
d them, peraduenture
and discovered. The
mnitie of Saint Iames
at anker, in the shoare
ryuer of Palme trees,
ommitted to Gonsalus
om the Fleete a small
agues vppe the ryuer,
little, he found other
es fixed on Panucus,
le, and desert. For
ell blest, and stored
with

with people. But credite was giuen to a lyar, wherefore they determined to proceede on their voyage towards Panucus. The horses were nowe faint with famine, therefore they tooke them out of the ships together with manie footemen. The Marriners are charged to sayle alwayes within viewe of the shore, as if they hadde power to commaunde the sources, and waues of the water. Garaius himselfe taketh his journey by lande towards Panucus, in battayle array, least if any violence of the inhabitantes suddenly assayed them, they shoulde be founde vnprepared. The first three dayes they founde no manured lande where they marched, but all barren and rude, because moorish, and myerie. They meete with another nauigable ryuer in the way, compassed with high Mountaynes, thereupon they called the ryuer Montaltus. They passed ouer that ryuer partly by swimming, and partly vpon raftes or great peeces of timber ioyned and fastened together, so that at length with great danger and labour, beyonde that ryuer so far of they saw an exceeding great towne: then they orderly range the army, and march softly forward, placing the Arquebuss shotte, and other souldiers (to hit them farre of) in the front of the Battayle. Our menne comming towards them, the townsmen left the towne, and fledde away, where, finding their houses full of the country prouision, Garaius recreateth and refresheth the souldiers, and horses nowe faint with hunger, and wearyed with traualle of the journey. And with that which remained, he carrieth prouision of victuall with him.

Montaltus a
ryuer.

The second Chapter.

THE Barbarians fill their barnes or store-houses with two kinds of food with their cōtry graine called Maizium (as we haue often sayde) much like the graine Panicke of Insubria, & with apples, of an vknowne sent to vs, and of an eager sweete tast, apt & profitable for the stopping and restraining of fluxes, as wee reade and finde by experience of the berries of the Seruice, and Corneile trees, which are no lesse then an Oringe or a Quince, and that kinde of fruite the inhabitantes call Guzianus. Beyonde the ryuer inclosed with Mountaynes marching through rude and barren countries, they light on a great lake, whiche by a deepe streame no where shallowe, emptyeth the waters thereof in the neere bordering sea. They ascende vppe the bankes of this lake thirtie leagues from the mouth of the riuer, they trye and search the shallowe places, because they knewe that manie ryuers fell into the lake below, and with great labour and perill halfe swimming they passe it. A broad playne offereth it selfe to their viewe. They see a great towne a farre of. And least as the former moued through feare fled away, Garaius commandeth the armie to make a stande, and pitch their ancients in the open ayre, then sendeth he interpreters before, neere neighbours to these cōtries whom he had gotten the former yeere, who were now skillful in the Spanish tong. Offering peace by them, hee draweth the inhabitantes of the towne to entertayne amitie and friend-shyppe. Heereupon, the inhabitantes lade our men with breade of the graine Maizium, foules of that Prouince, and fruites. By the way they light on another village, where hauing hearde by reporte that our menne abstained from wrong and iniurie, they securely expect them, and giue them prouision of victuall, but not plentifully to their satisfaction. Thereupon a tumulte almoste arose agaynst the Generall Garaius, for that hee would not suffer them to spoyle the village. Marching further, they meet with the thirde ryuer, in passing whereof they lost eight horses violently carryed away with the force of the current. Trauailing thence they founde huge myerie marishes with noysome gnatts, full of diuers sortes of Bexucum, beeing certayne hearbes or long grasse whiche holde fast, infoulding, and intangling the legges of traualyers. Concerning this prouidence of nature touching the Bexuca, I haue at large discoursed in my proceedinges to the Duke. The footemenne couered with water vppe to the wast, the horsemenne to the belly, passed ouer halfe fainte and tyred. Nowe they came into countries inryched with a fruitfull soyle, and therefore inhabited, and beautified with many villages. Garaius suffered no damage or iniurie to bee doone to anie. A certayne seruant of Garaius neere about him, escaping from so great a slaughter, as hereafter wee will describe, writeth a large Epistle to Petrus Spinosa Maister or Stewarde of the house of Garaius, and his sonnes after his death, nowe Agent

A strange kinde
of sple.

A great lake.

A riuer.

Marishes full of
Bexucum.

The lande of
miserie.

Garaius com-
meth to Panucus.

A great towne
destroyed by
Cortes.

Chiglia a great
towne destroyed
by Cortes.
Saint Stephen a
to vne.

The fruitfull
state of the
country of
Panucus.

The ambitious
nation thwarts it
selfe and hinders
his owne endes.

He returnes to
Garaius.

with Cæsar, wherein full of greife, yet after a wittie and conceited manner, hee deliuereth these merrie iesting wordes in Latine, concerning the difficulties of that iourney. Wee came (sayeth hee) to the lande of miserie, where no order, but euerlasting labour, and all calamities inhabite, where famine, heate, noysome Gnattes, stinking Woormes or Flies, cruell Battes, arrowes, intangling Bexuca, deuouring deepe ditches, and muddie lakes most cruelly afflicted vs. At length they attained to the bordering cuntry of the riuier Panucus the vnhappie point or period of their iourney, where Garaius stayeth expecting the ships, but founde nothing fitte for foode. They suspect Cortes had caryed away all prouision of victuall, that finding nothing for themselves, or their horses, they shoulde bee constraind either to depart backe againe, or perish with hunger. The fleet which caried their necessaries of prouision deferred their coming. Where fore Garaius and his companions dispersed themselves through the townes and villages of the Barbarians to gette food, & nowe Garaius beganne to suspect that Cortes was not well inclined vnto him: he therefore sendeth Gonsalus Docampo his sisters sonne to proue howe the Colonies of Cortes stode affected towards him, Gonsalus returneth seduced or deceiued, and fained that all was safe, and that they were ready to yeeld obedience to Garaius. Vpon the report of his sisters sonne, and his associats sent with him, by euill destinie, hee approacheth neere to Panucus. Heere let vs digresse a little, to the ende these thinges, and that whiche followeth may the better be vnderstoode. Vpon the bankes of this great riuier Panucus, not far from y^e mouth, which conueyeth the waters thereof into the sea, stode a great towne of the same name, consisting of 14000. houses of stone for the most parte, with princely Courtes, and sumptuous Temples, as the common reporte goeth. That towne Cortes vtterly ouerthrewe, and wholly burnt it, because it refused his commande, not suffering any thing to be builde vpon that grounde any more. He dealt after the same maner with another towne seated vp the ryuer, about some 25. miles distāt frō this, greater thē Panucus, they say it consisted of 2000. houses, which also (vpon the same occasion) he laide flatte with the grounde, and burnt it. This towne was called Chiella. Above Chiglia ouerthrowne, Cortes erected his Colonie about some three miles, in an excellent plaine, but vpon a little rising hill, and this hee called the towne of Saint Stephen. Shippes of burden may come vppe the channell of this ryuer for many myles together. The people of this Prouince ouerthrewe Garaius twice, as in the former Decades hath beene sufficiently and at large declared, but they coulde not resist Cortes, who ouerthrewe all he mette with. They reporte that those countries are very wealthie and fruitfull, not onely apt for the nourishing of anie thing sowed, and the increase and fruite of trees, but they say it mayntaineth hartes, hares, conies, and bores, and many other wilde beastes, and that they also yelde and ingender water foule, and other wilde foule: they haue verie hygh mountaines within view, some where couered with snow. Beyond those Mountaines, reporte goeth that goodly cities, and excellent townes lye in an huge playne, which those mountaynes diuide from these, bordering on the Sea, and they also shall be subdued, vnlesse the boyling and vaine glorious disposition of the Spanyardes withstand it, who seldome agree in mind, for the desire they haue to aduance their owne honors. Howe much euery one indeuoreth to attribute to himselfe in this blinding meale of ambition, wherein none indureth the soueraigntie and commād of another with quiet spirit, I haue sufficiently and at large declared in those relations which went before, where I spake of the priue hatred and dissentions arising betweene Iacobus Velasquez the gouernour of Fernandina, which is Cuba, and Fernandus Cortes, then, betweene Cortes himselfe, and Pamphilus Nabæzus, and Grisalus, from whom a riuier in the Prouince of Iucatan receiued the name, next, of the reuolt of Christopherus Olitus from Cortes, after that betweene Petrus Arias gouernour of the supposed Continent, and Ægidius Gonsalus, and in the last place of the generall desire of seeking the Strayght or narrowe passage from the North Sea to the South: for Commaunders and Captaynes who inhabite those countries in the kinges name came flocking from all partes. These thinges partly related in their places, what arose on these contentions shall bee declared. Nowe lette vs returne to Garaius from whom wee digressed.

Approach-

hee deliuereth
iourney. Wee
labour, and all
ormes or Flyes,
lddie lakes most
y of the riuier
yeth expecting
caryed away all
they shoulde bee
ete which caried
us and his com-
ans to gette food,
o him: he there-
colonies of Cortes
nd fained that all
the report of his
pacheth neere to
and that whiche
at riuier Panucus,
ea, stoode a great
most parte, with
eth. That towne
s commande, not
calt after the same
it frō this, greater
ame occasion) he
a. Aboue Chiglia
excellent plaine,
phen. Shippes of
ether. The people
beene sufficiently
all he mette with.
apt for the nourish-
say it mayntaineth
at they also yelde
mountaines within
repute goeth that
mountaynes diuide
ue the boyling and
agree in mind, for
y one indeuoreth to
none indureth the
ciently and at large
priue hatred and
ernandina, which is
amphilus Nabaezus,
the name, next, of
trus Arias gouernour
place of the generall
ea to the South: for
es name came flock-
t arose on these con-
whom wee digressed.
Approach-

Approaching to the borders of Panucus, hee found all the countrey impouerished, and knewe manifestly that his sisters sonne hadde made a false reporte concerning the inhabitants of the village of Saint Stephen, because hee sawe no friendly dealing. The followers of Garaius say, that the seruantes of Cortes hadde carryed away all prouision of victuall out of the townes of the Barbarians, to the ende that beeing compelled through famine they might eyther departe, or bee constrayned to disperse their forces through the neighbouring townes to seeke necessary foode, as it fell out, nor came the shippes, detained in the vnfortunate and aduerse sea. In that countrey there is a great towne named Naciapala consisting of about 15000. houses, in that towne the Cortesians tooke Aluaradus ^{Naciapala's great town.} Commander of fortie horse of Garaius, together with his companions feeding his horses there, as an vaurper of anothers soyle, and brought them bounde to the Colony of Saint Stephen, by them erected in the name and behalfe of Cortes. Miserable and wretched Garaius therefore remayned there still betwene Sylla and Charybdis expecting the fleete. Now at length the companie of the fleete arryue at the mouth of Panucus, of eleuen 3. some say foure, the rest perished by ship wracke. Two of Cortes his Commanders of that Province, Iacobus Docampo gouernour of the citie, and Valegius leader of the souldiers, caryed by boat, enter the Admirall of that fleete, they easily seduce the souldiers and quickly drawe the rest into the power of Cortes, so that the shippes are caryed vp the ryuer to the Colony of S. Stephen. While Garaius was in these extremities, he vnderstoode the borderyng country of the riuier of Palmes was a rich and fruitfull soyle, contrary to the deceitfull speech of Gonsalus Docampo his sisters son, yea, and in some places a more blessed and fertile countrey then the boundes of Panucus. There had Garaius planted his Colonie, fearing the fortune of Cortes, if the obstinacy of his sisters sonne had not deceiued him. Garaius being thus distressed, knewe not what counsell they should take, the more he repeateth that that Prouince was designed and allotted him by Cæsar, shewing his letters patentes, his matter succeeded the worse. Through perswasion of the Gouernour Iacobus Docampo, Garaius sendeth messengers vnto Cortes, one named Petrus Canus, ^{Garaius sends messengers to Cortes.} the other Iohannes Ochoa, this, one of Garaius his olde familiars, the other newly admitted, sometimes a familiar friende of Cortes who was well experienced in those countries, both of them are seduced by Cortes, as the Garaianes reporte complayning. Petrus Canus returneth, and Ochoa remayneth still, for it was agreeed that Garaius shoulde goe to Cortes. I haue elsewhere sayde, when, by vncertayne reporte, the Senate of Hispaniola wrote those thinges to Cæsar, and our Colledge of Indian affayres. Nowe although miserable Garaius almost behelde his owne destruction, yet hee dissembled that hee woulde willingly goe, and seeing hee must goe though hee were vnwilling, through so great violence and compulsion, hee pacified his minde, and yeldest to the requestes of Cortes whiche brought power and authoritie with them to commande. Accompanied with Iacobus Docampo hee goeth to Cortes, who chose his seate in that great citie of the lake Tenustitan, otherwise called Mexico, the heade and Metropolis of manie kingdomes. Garaius is receiued with a ioyfull countenance, but whether with the like mind, let him iudge whose ^{Mexico.} propertie it is to search the harts. Hearing of the calamitie of Garaius, and the departure of the Gouernour, the Barbarians sette yppon the souldiers dispersed through their houses, and finding them straggling, they kill about two hundred and fiftie, some say more. With their slaughtered bodies they make themselues sumptuous, and daintie banquets, for they also are menne eaters. Cortes vnderstanding of this discomfiture, sent Sandoualus (a woorthie man of his Commaunders) with fortie horse, and a conuenient and necessarie number of footemen for the purpose to take reuenge for so foule and hainous a fact. Sandoualus is saide to haue cutte a huge number of the slaughterers in peeces, for they durst not now lift vp a finger against the power of Cortes or his Capitaines, whose names they feared. He is reported to haue sent 60. kings to Cortes (for euery village hath his king) whereupon Cortes commandeth that euerie one send for his heire, they obey his commande. Then making an exceeding great fire, he burned all the kings, the heires looking thereon. And presently calling the heires, he demandeth whether they saw the effect

Shipwracke.

The Admirall
reueloth to
Cortes.

Garaius sends
messengers to
Cortes.

Mexico.

A pretty saying.

The Barbarians
slaughter 250. of
Garaius his men.

Cortes reuengeth.

Cortes burneth
sixtie kings.

The vanitie of
reporte.

Suspitions vpon
Garaius his
death.

Jamaica on
Elisian Island.

He compareth
Jamaica with
Adams Paradi-
dice.

of the sentence pronounced against the slaughterers their parents. After that, with a seuer countenance he chargeth them, that being taught by this example, they beware of all suspicion of disobedience. Being thus discouraged and terrified, he sent them euery one awaie to their auncient patrimonyes, yet subiect to tributes. This they report, others, somewhat after another maner. For report is varied euen from the next neighbour, how much more from another worlde. Nowe Cortes commendeth Garaius to be guest to Alphonsus surnamed Villanoua, sometimes footeman to Garaius, (and thrust out of seruice for deflouring his Maisters mayde) then chamberlaine to Cortes, and commanded he should be honorably intreated, and that the bond of amitie might be the firmer, Cortes taketh the legitimate sonne of Garaius to bee his son in law to match with his bastard daughter. Behold vpon Christmas day at night, Cortes and Garaius goe together to heare morninge mattens after our manner. Seruice beeing ended at the risinge of the sunne, they returne, and found a dainty breackfast prepared, Garaius comminge forth of the church, complained first that hee was oppressed with a certaine kinde of windy colde, yet hee tooke some smale sustenance with his companyons, but returninge to his appointed lodginge hee lay downe, the disease increased till the third day, some say, the fourth, at what time hee yielded his borrowed spirit to his Creator. There are some, as I haue elsewhere sayd, who suspect whether there were not a worke of charity in it, to thintent he might free him from the foule prison of vexation and cares, being subiect to so great calamities, least wee should iudge that olde prouerbe to bee vainly spoken, that a kingdome receiueth not two, or, that there is no assured fidelitie or trust in the Competitors and companions of a kingdome. Others say, hee died of the grieve and paine of the ribbes, which the Phisitians call a Plurisie: howsoeuer it bee Garaius dyed, the best of the Gouernours of those countries: which way soeuer the matter happened, it little skilleth, his sonnes, kindred, and freinds of rich menn beinge now fallen into pouerty. The miserable wretched mann dyed, who peraduenture might haue liued a long and quiet life if hee had bin contented with the olde Gouernment of Elisian Iamaica, by a new name called the Ilande of S. Iames, where his authority, and loue of the people were great (but with an obstinate spirit he went the contrary waye, who knewe very well that his neighbourhoode would bee most offensiue and troublesome to Cortes) or if hee being like towe or course flax, woulde haue sett footing elsewhere on the riuier of Palmes farr off from the flaminge fire, whether the violence of the winds happily droue him, if hee had taken hold of the hairy forelocke of that occasion, or elsewhere in a riuier found out further towards Florida called the riuier of the Holy Ghost, which riuers containe exceeding great countries, fruitfull, and replenished with people. So had the destinies decreed, so must it be done. But seeinge I haue presumed to call Iamaica an Elisian country, which Garaius commaunded many yeeres, it is meete that I being the husbando of this comly Nymph, should render a reason of the beauty, and goodnes thereof. Behold therefore the example of preferringe the same.

The third Chapter.

THat remoued and hidden part of the worlde, wherein wee beleuee, that God the Creator of all thinges formed the first mann of the slime of the earth, the sage and prudent woorthies or fathers of the old Mosaicall lawe, and of the new Testament call earthly Paradise, because in that place there is none, or almost no difference beetweene the day and night all the whole yeere. No terrible scorchinge heate, nor rough colde winter are there to bee founde, but an wholesome temperate ayre, bright fountaines, and cleere riuers. Nature like a beenigne and gracious mother, hath beautified this my spouse with all these ornaments. Diuers fruitfull trees (besides those which are brought thether from our countrye) are very familiar and common there, which inioy a perpetuall Springe, and Autumne; for the trees carry leaues, and flowers together all the yeare longe, and beare fruitte, and shewe them ripe, and sower or greene at one time. There, the earth is alwayes full of greene grasse, and the meddowes allwayes flourishinge and (to conclude) their is

at, with a seuer
they beware of
he sent them
es. This they
n from the next
endeth Garaius to
ius, (and thrust
to Cortes, and
of amitie might
his son in law
at night, Cortes
anner. Seruice
a dainty breack-
st that hee was
e sustenance with
e, the disease in-
is borrowed spirit
whether there were
prison of vexation
le prouerbe to bee
sured fidelitie or
hee died of the
howsoeuer it bee
socuer the matter
menn beinge now
enture might haue
ernment of Elisian
y, and loue of the
y, who knewe very
(Cortes) or if hee
the riuier of Palmes
ipily droue him, if
re in a riuier found
riuers containe ex-
had the destinies
Iamaica an Elisian
ng the husbände of
es thereof. Behold

eeue, that God the
, the sage and pru-
stament call earthly
betweene the day
gh colde winter are
taines, and cleere
this my spouse with
ought thether from
petual Springe, and
are longe, and beare
the earth is alwayes
o conclude) their is

no

no part of the earth which inioyeth a more gracious and mild temper of the heauens: Therefore my spouse Iamaica is more blessed and fruitfull then the rest. It extendeth it selfe in length from East to West 60. leagues some others add tenn more, and it inlargeth it selfe in bredth 30. leagues, where it is broadest. But concerninge seedes sett, and sowed by the industry of mann, woonderfull thinges are reported: and although it be at large declared in my former Decades, when I vsed the like speach concerning Hispaniola, & the same also concerninge garden herbes or plants, yet to repeate many of these will not prouoake loathing, or contempt cheefely to Popes, vnder whose throanes all these things dayly more & more increase & growe: § tast of precious things is sauory at all times, because especially those places of my former Decades paraduenture shall not bee brought to your Holinesse his handes. Of breade (without which other dainty delicates are nothinge worth) they haue two sortes, the one of corne, the other of rootes, their corne is gathered twice, and for the most part thrice euery yeare, they want breade of wheate. Of three quarters of a pint of that graine which they call Maizium, sometimes more then 200. times so many pints are gathered. That of rootes is the better, and more excellent breade made of the roote Iucca bruised smale, and dried, which beeing brought into Cakes which they call Cazzabi, may safely bee kept two yeere vncorrupted. A certaine maruelous industry of Nature lieth hidd in the vse of this roote Iucca. Beeing put into a sacke, it is pressed with great waight layd thereon after the manner of a wine presse, to wringe out the iuice thereof. If that iuice bee druncke rawe, it is more poysonous the Aconitum, & presētly killeth, but being boyled it is harmles, & more sauery the whay of milke. They haue also many kindes of othere roote, they call them by one name Batatas, I haue elsewhere described eight sortes thereof which are knowne by the flower, leafe, and shrubb. They are good boyled & no lesse roasted, nor are they of an euill tast though they bee rawe: and they are also like to our Turneps in shewe, or like our rape Rootes, Raddish, parsnepps, and Carretts, but of a differing tast, and substance. At what time I wrote these things some plenty of Batatas were giuen me for a presēt, whereof I had made your Holines partaker, but that the distance of places with stood my desires, and your Holines his Embasadour with Cæsar denoured that portion. This man amonge the worthy & noble men, in § opinio of all good Spaiards, a rare Cusentine Archbishop to who these things are very wel known through his 14. yeares cōuersation, if so it please your Holinesse, may sometimes rehearse and shew them vnto you by word of mouth. For these cōferences & discourses are wont oftentimes to grace § latter endes of feasts with great Princes. I haue sufficiently spoken concerninge the tēper of § ayre, trees, fruites, corne, bread, and roots: & haue also likewise oftē spoakē of gardē fruits fit for foode, at what time of § yeere you may gett melons, gourds, Cucumbers, & others like these lyinge on the grounde: I haue extended the skirts of the ornaments of my Spouse with too amorous, and louinge affection, yet true: therefore I now bidd her farewell, and let others left behinde, come in her place. Another woorthy mann also lately came vnto mee, whose name is Christopherus Perez Herenensis, executioner of Iustice a long time in Iamaica, a soldier vnder Garaius, the Spaniard calleth those kinds of Magistrates Alguazilli. This mann was alwayes a companion with Garaius, and was present when hee dyed: who confesseth, that what other reported concerninge Garaius, and the successe of the whole armye, was true. And returninge from that ouerthrowe, into Iamaica, hee brought letters from Petrus Canus Secretary to Garaius, directed to Petrus Spinosa, Agent with Cæsar for Garaius and his sonnes, in the ende whereof he exhorteth, admonisheth, and instantly requirith him to leaue all these European countries, and forsake all buisines what soeuer and returne into that happy country as if hee should perswade him to flye from vnhappy and barren sandes, to most fruitfull & wealthy possessions: repeating, that he should shortly become rich, if he would obey his wordes. This Alguazill addeth many things, not to be omitted. That Panucus, and the riuier of Palmes breake forth into the Ocean almost with the like fall, and that the mariners get fresh & potable waters of both, nine myles within the sea. The third riuier, which our men call the riuier of the Holy Ghost, neerer to §

Bread of corne
and breade of
rootes.

The excellent
bread made of
the roote Iucca.

A secret in the
the nature of
Iucca.

Of the roote
Batatas.

Christopherus
Perez Herenensis

Note this
hottat in

The riuier of
the holy ghost.
country

country of Florida, hath a more streight & narrowe channell, yet very rich & fruitfull countries lying round about it, & well replenished with people. Being demanded whether by chance, violence of tempestuous stormes, or of sett purpose, the fleete of Garaius arriued at the riuer of Palmes, he answered, they were driuen thether by the mild and gentle southerne windes, and the fall of the Ocean, which as I haue elsewhere sayd runneth alwayes to the West, imitatinge the turninge or wheelinge motions of the Heauens. This Alguazill therefore (that I may vse the Spanish woord) saith, that the pilotts themselves and masters who gouerned and directed the fleete, beinge deceiued for the causes beefore alledged, tooke the riuer of Palmes for Panucus, while entringe the mouth there of, they vnderstoode the difference of the banckes and hee affirmeth that Garaius hadd a purpose to stay and erect a Colony there, if his companions and consorts hadd not withstood him: for they intended, and aduised that the banckes of the riuer Panucus discovered, and the fruitfull countries thereof already known were to bee embraced. Garaius touched with an vnhappy presage assented to his consortes, yet sore against his will, especially when they added, that those Panucan countrys were assigned him by Cæsar, & that by the kings letters patents it was graunted, they should bee called the Countries of Garaius by an eternall name. While they laye at anchor in the mouth of the riuer of Palmes, and expected Garaius his sisters sonne against the streame, many in the meane time goinge out of the shippes, wandred vppon the banckes of the riuer, searchinge what the nature of countries might bee, and light vp on many new and strange thinges but of smale moment. Yet will I add one thinge: This Alguazill in the fielde a little distant thence, found a four-footed beast feedinge, a little greater then a catt, with a foxes snowt of a siluer colour, and halfe scalye, trapped after the same manner that a compleate armed mann beeinge ready to fight, armeth his horse, it is a foolish slothfull beast, for seeing a mann a farr of it hidd it selfe like an hedhogge or a tortoyse, and suffred it selfe to bee taken, beeinge brought to the shippes it was domestically fedd amonge menn, but greater cares succeedinge, and grasse faylinge, the desert and desolate beast dyed. This Alguazill (but with a sad and mournfull countenance because he also was partaker of so great calamities) freeth Cortes from the suspition of poysoninge Garaius, who saith that he died of the greife and payne of his side, which the phisitions call a pleurisie. While Garaius & his miserable companions trauailed through those countrys, which lye in the middle betwene those great riuers of Panucus, & y riuer of Palmes the borderinge inhabitants beinge demaunded, what was beyond those high mountaines which were within there viewe, and cōpassed their countries together with the Sea, they reported that very large plaines lay there & warlike kings of great cities had dominion there. But when we were in Mantua Carpentana, commonly called Madrid, this Alguazil said cōparatiuely, as these neighbouringe mountaines diuide these prouinces, the countrys Carpentana, & Oretana from the Valledoletane and Burgensian, countries, in which, as you knowe there are goodly cities, and famous townes: as Segouia, Methimna of the feild, Abula, Salmantica, and many besides: so, mighty & huge kingdomes are bounded and separated from these straight and narrow countries, lying on the shoare. This Alguazill also confesseth that he knoweth the boundes of Italye, and therefore sayd, that Insubria was separated after the same manner from Hetruria by the Apennine mountaines. And beeinge demaunded with what habit Cortes attireth himselfe, or with what ceremonies he wilbe intertaind by them that are present, and with what title he wilbe stiled, and vseth to exact tributes, or what treasures he thinketh hee hath heaped vp, and whether he sawe that golden warlike Engine called a Culuerin, whereof the report is now diuulged: he answered in these wordes. That he was clothed with a vsuall blacke habit, but of silke, & that he made no sumptuous shewe of maiesty at all, saue in beholdinge the great number of his family: consistinge (I say) of many stewards, and officers of his house, morris dancers, chamberlaines, dore keepers, cheefe bankers or exchaungers of mony, and the rest, fitly agreeing with a great king. Whethersouer Cortes goeth hee bringeth foure kinges with him, to whom hee hath giuen horses, the magistrates of the citty, and soldiers for execution of lustice goinge before with

A strange beast.

Cortes his state
what it is in
some particulars.

very rich & fruitfull
g demanded whether
the fleet of Garaius
ther by the mild and
elsewhere sayd run-
ions of the Heauens.
that the pilotts them-
eiuied for the causes
nge the mouth there
h that Garaius hadd a
sorts hadd not with-
Panucus discovered.
ed. Garaius touched
his will, especially
by Cæsar, & that by
Countries of Garaius
riuer of Palmes, and
eane time goinge out
ge what the nature of
out of smale moment.
thence, found a four-
wt of a siluer colour,
armed mann beeing
ing a mann a farre of it
o bee taken, beeing
greater cares succeed-
Alguazill (but with a
great calamities) freeth
died of the greife and
araius & his miserable
betweene those great
eing demanded, what
ue, and cōpassed their
nes lay there & warlike
antua Carpentana, co-
ighbouring moutaines
n the Valledoletane and
y citties, and famous
nd many besides: so,
ight and narrow coun-
knoweth the boundes of
same manner from He-
with what habit Cortes
them that are present,
or what treasures he
warlike Engine called a
these wordes. That he
de no sumptuous shewe
ily: consistinge (I say)
berlaines, dore keepers,
ing with a great king-
to whom hee hath giuen
of Iustice goinge before
with

with maces, and as hee passeth by all that meete him cast themselves flat vpon the ground after the auncient manner. He sayth also that he courteously receiueh all that salute him, & is more delighted with the title of Adelantado, thē Gouvernour seeing Cæsar hath giuen him both. And this Alguazill saith that the suspicion which our courtiers conceiue touching his disobedience against Cæsar, is a vayne and idle report. That neither he, nor any other euer sawe any signe or token of treason, yea, & that he hath left three Caruelles with treasures to bee conueyed to Cæsar, together with that piece of ordinance called a Culuerin, which he confesseth hee diligently beheld, able to receiue an Oringe, but thinketh it is not so full of gold, as fame reporteth.

The fourth Chapter.

THat which I will now report, is a very merry iest to be heard: the inhabitants these Barbarians after a ridiculous, & simple maner come forth of their townes as our men passe by on their iourney, & bring with them so many domesticall fatt foule (no lesse then our peacocks) as there are traualiers and if they bee on horsebacke, supposing y horses eate flesh, bring as māy fatt foule for y horse. But your Holinesse shall heare how ingenious, & sharpe witted woorkemen these barbarians are, whom Cortes hath subdued to the dominion of Cæsar. Whatsoeuer they see with their eyes, they so paynte, forge, and fashion & forme it, that they may seeme to giue no place to the auncient Corinthians, who were skilfull to drawe liuely countenances out of marble, or luory, or any other matter. And concerning the treasures of Cortes he saith, they are not smale, and meane, yet he supposeth they are lesse then is reported, because hee maintaineth māy Centurions, or soldiers, whereof, y ordinary number of horse is about a thousād, & 4000. footmen, whose helpe he vseth both to bridle those he lately conquered, as also to search out & discouer new countries. He said also that in the South sea of that huge vastity he built ships y frō thence he might trye the Equinoctial line 12. degrees only distant frō the shoares, to the end he might thoroughly search the llands next vnder y line, where, he hopeth to finde plenty of gold, and precious stones, and also newe, and strāg spices. He had attempted the same before, but being disturbed by his Competitors, Iacobus Velazquez y Gouvernour of Cuba, then by Pamphilus Narbaezus & lastly by Garaius, he is sayd to haue forsaken his intended purpose. Touching the maner of exacting tributes, it is this, by one example the rest may bee gathered. In the discourse of my Tenustitan narrations to Pope Leo the tenth your Holinesse his cousin german, and to his Successor Adrian, we sayde that, that puyasant and mighty Kinge Muteczuma, hadde many princes subiect to his dominion, and those, Lordes of great citties, these (for the most parte) Cortes conquered, because they refused to obey, yet in their kingdomes he placed in their steede, some of their children, brethren or other meaner kindred, that the people seeing the Images and representations of their auncient Lordes might the more quietly beare the yoke. The neerest of those citties to the salt Lake, is called Tescucus, whiche containeth about the number of 20000. houses, and it is whiter then a swan, because all the houses are playstered with a kinde of limy Bitumen like morter, so bright & cleere without, that such as beholde them a farre of, not knowing the matter, woulde thinke they were little rising hilles couered with snowe. They say, this citie is almost square, three miles in length, and consisteth of the like breadth with little difference. Ouer this citie he made a yong man gouernour, descended from the proper stocke or bloud of the auncient nobilitie. Otumba is somewhat lesser then Tescucus. He gaue this citie also her ruler, one of a milde nature, and obedient to his commaunde, whom (beeing baptized) hee called Fernandus Cortes after his owne name. The iurisdictions of these cities are great, of a fruitful soyle and famous for the golden sandes of the riuers. Euery one of the kinges, that the Spaniardes may not enter into their boundes, which may hardly be done without iniurie, yeerely by composition giue vnto Cortes one thousand, and sixtie Pensa of gold. We haue often said that Pensum exceedeth the Ducate a fourth part. They likewise giue him of the profits and increase of the lande, the graine Maizium, domesticall foule, and delicate meates of wilde beastes, wherewith the neighbouring Mountains abound: all Princes are handled after this order, and

The golden
Culuerin before
mentioned.

He compareth
these barbarians
for Imagery
to the auncient
Corinthians.
The treasure of
Cortes.
Cortes his pur-
pose for further
discouery.

A good policy
of Cortes.

Tescucus a
great city.

Otumba a
great city.

A treasure of
1060. pensa of
solde payde
yeerely to
Cortes becau-
se of his great
prouision
for his house-
hold.

every one sendeth his tribute for the profittes of his kingdome. He also permitteth many Provinces truly to enioy their libertie without kinges, and to liue after their auncient lawes, except the customes of humane sacrifices, from whom hee hadde no meane supplies and ayde agaynst Mutezuma. Notwithstanding, these countries, euen these pay their tribute to Cortes. The country Guaxaca is free, abounding with golde: seuentie leagues distant from the Princely pallace of the lake. There is also another of the same condition, called Loepoteca, and manie others, which pay golden tributes. Cortes also himselfe hath golde mines assigned to his treasury or exchequer, which he emptieth with the armes of slaues, and setteth their children at libertie, to till the ground, or apply themselves to mechanicall artes. But one particular thing is well worthie the reporting. There is a Prouince called Guacinalgo, whose King hath the same name: he came, onely accompanied with his mother to salute Cortes, and that, not emptie handed. For he brought him thirtie thousande Pensa of golde, caryed vpon the shoulders of slaues, whiche hee gaue Cortes for a present. But what he did in token of obedience, will not be vnfit to heare. Hee came vnto him almost naked, though otherwise hee abounded with precious and costly garments after their manner, we vnderstoode that it was the manner with them, that for an argument and signe of humilitie, the impotent and weake shoulde goe vnto the mightie in meane and homely attyre, and bowing his head downe to the grounde, and kneeling, shoulde speake vnto him almost trembling. But it is very needfull to heare what happie money they vse, for they haue money, which I call happy, because for the greedie desire and gaping to attaine the same, the bowelles of the earth are not rent a sunder, nor through the rauening greedinesse of covetous men, nor terrour of warres assaying, it returneth to the dennes and caues of the mother earth, as golden, or siluer money doth. For this groweth vpon trees, whereof I haue elsewhere spoken at large, both how it is sette, transplanted, and carefully looked vnto vnder the shadowe of another great tree to cherish it, while being growne vp it may beare the Summers scorching heate, and sustaine the violence of blustering whirlewindes. This tree bringeth forth fruit like to smale Almondes, they are wholly of a bitter tast, & therefore not to be eaten, but drinke is made of them for rich, and noble menne: beeing dried, they are bruised and beaten as small as meale, and at dinner, or supper time the seruants take pitchers, or vesselles of tenne or a leuen gallons, or great pottes, and as much water as is needefull, and cast therein the measure and proportion of powder, according to the quantitie of the drinke they prepare, then presently they powre out the myxture from vessel to vessel as high as they are able to lift their armes and cast it out like rayne falling from showers, and it is so often shaken together, till it cast a foame, and the more foamy it is, they say the drinke becomes the more delicate. So for the space almost of one houre that drinke being rowled, they lette it rest a little, that the dregges, or grosser matter may settle in the bottome of the great boll, or vessell of tenne or a leuen gallons: it is a pleasant drinke, not much distempering, although they that drinke thereof vntemperatly, shall perceiue it troubleth the senses, as our fuming wines. They call the tree and the fruites Cacahus, as wee call Chesnutt, & Almond, for both: that foame, as it were the foode of fat milke, the Spaniard calleth the daughter, which they say hath the force of meate and drinke. Particular countries are nourishers of these trees, and money, for they growe not euery where, or prosper being planted, or transported, as wee may see of the fruites of our countrie. For Citrons or Oringes, which wee call Toronias, and Limones, and suche like others, canne hardly prosper, or bring forth fruit in fewe places. From the Kinges therefore, and their fruitfull countries, Cacahus is their tribute to Cortes, wherewith he payeth the souldiers wages, and maketh drinckes, and procureth other necessaries. But the grounde apt for this gift, is not profitable for corne. Marchants trade together, & performe the businesse and affaires of marchandise by exchang and bartering of commodities. They bring the graine Maizium, and Bombasin cotton to make garments, and also garments themselves, into those countries, & returne hauing chaunged them for Cacahus. I haue now spoken sufficiently of money. I repeate many of these things (moste blessed father) least he who beholdeth them intituled with your name, shoulde not be satisfied in these things, not hauing read the bookes

Guaxaca,

Loepoteca,
Cortes his golden
mines,The king Guacinalgo his great
present to
Cortes,The ceremonious humilitie
that Guacinalgo
exhibited to
Cortes,Their happie
money a re-
hearsall thereof.How drinke is
made of the
money tree.

Cacahus.

Tribute of their
money Cacahus
payeth Cortes.
Marchants.

permitted many
their ancient laws,
neane supplies and
e pay their tribute
tie leagues distant
e condition, called
himself hath golde
ne armes of slaues,
ues to mechanically
is a Prouince called
sied with his mother
tie thousande Pensa
for a present. But
me vnto him almost
after their manner,
ent and signe of hu-
e and homly attyre,
ake vnto him almost
vse, for they haue
to attaine the same,
g greedinesse of co-
nes and causes of the
pon trees, whereof I
carefully looked vnto
wne vp it may beare
y whirlwindes. This
bitter tast, & there-
enne: beeing dried,
per time the seruants
s, and as much water
der, according to the
the myxture from ves-
like rayne falling from
the more foamy it is,
most of one houre that
sser matter may settle
it is a pleasant drinke,
ratly, shall perceiue it
the fruite Cacabus, as
the foode of fat milke,
eate and drinke. Par-
rowe not euery where,
ruites of our countrie.
uche like others, canne
ges therefore, and their
e payeth the souldiers
he grounde apt for this
orme the businesse and
They bring the graine
themselves, into those
now spoken sufficiently
least he who beholdeth
gs, not hauing read the
bookes

bookes dedicated to Pope Leo, and Adrian. There are kings also who are mightie, and rich in siluer mines: their tributes are siluer, out of the which Cortes hath full cupboordes, and embossed plate both of siluer, and golde very fairely wrought. By these examples your Holinesse may vnderstande, what estimation and opinion they haue of our Cortes. They say, that Cortes lieth discontented, for the infinite treasures violently taken away three yeeres since, by the French Pyrates, which hee sent vnto Cæsar, among whiche, the ornaments of their Temples were admirable, whiche they (together with humane sacrifices) consecrated to their goddesses. But what shall wee speake of the Iewelles, and precious stones? Omitting the rest, there was an Emrode like a Pyramis, the lowest parte or bottome whereof was almost as broad as the palme of a mans hande, such a one (as was reported to Cæsar, and to vs in the kings Senate) as neuer any humane Eye behelde. The French Admirall is sayd to haue gotten it from the Pyrates at an incredible price. But they executed their sauage outrage most cruelly agaynst miserable Alphonsus Abulensis Commander of the shyppe that was taken: he is a younge manne descended of a noble house, but not rich, hauing taken him, they keepe him close prysoner, resting vpon one onely argument, because they committed such a Iewel, and the rest of the treasures to his trust. Hereupon they thinke, they may exact twentie thousande Ducates of him, if he will bee redeemed. They who knewe the precious stone suppose that it cannot possibly be procured for any weight of golde, and they say it is transparent, bright and very cleere. In these countreys of Tenustitan, for that the colde is vehement there, by reason of the distance from the sea, and the neerenesse of the high mountaines, although it lie eightene degrees within the torride Zone, our corne or wheate groweth if it be sowed, and beareth thicker eares, and also greater graines. But seeing they haue three kinds of the graine Maizium, white, yellow, and red, of those many sortes they like the flower better, and it is more wholesome then the flower of wheate. They haue also wilde Vines in the woods very common, which bring forth great and saury clusters of grapes, but they haue not yet made wine thereof. It is reported that Cortes hath planted vines, but what will succeed, time shall discouer.

Tributes paid to
Cortes out of
rich siluer mines.

An Emrode of
a wonderfull es-
timation.

Maizium better
and more hol-
some then
wheate.
Vines.

The fift Chapter.

BESIDES this foresaide Alguazil, who obtained a sufficient large portion in this trutinie or examination: another also came lately from the same parts of new Spain subdued by Cortes one Iacobus Garsias a towns-man of Saint Lucar Barrameda. Hee sayeth hee departed from the Hauen of Vera Crux aboute the Calendes of April in the yeere 1524. at what time Garraius now died. He also freeth Cortes from the suspition of poyson, and saith, he died of the griefe of his side, or of the pleurisie. And this man also affirmeth that Cortes sheweth no signe or token of disobedience, against Cæsar, as many (through Enny) mutter. But by his report and others wee heare, that none carry themselves more humbly towardes their kinge then Cortes, and that hee bendeth his minde to repaire the ruines made in the great city of the lake in the time of the warres, and that hee hath mended the conducts of water which then were broken, that the stubberne and rebellious Citizens might bee pressed and vexed with thirst, and that the broken bridges are now made vp, and many of the houses ouerthrowne new built, that the ancient face and shewe of the city is resumed, that the faires and markettes cease not, and that their is the same frequent resort of boates comminge, and returninge, which was at the first. The multitude of marchants, is now great, so that it may seeme almost like those times when Mutezuma reigned. Hee permitteth one of the kings bloude to receive the suits, and causes of the people, and to vse a Prætorian scepter, but vnarmed. When this man conuerseth with our menn or with Cortes, hee is attired in Spanish apparell which Cortes gaue him: and while hee remaineth at home amonge his owne people, he weareth garments after the accustomed maner of his natie country. He saith, that the Prætorian bande appointed to guard y body of Cortes, & apease tumults if any arise, consisteth of 500. horse & 400. foote, & that many Centurians or Captaines euery one with their forces are absent, dispersed both by sea, and lande, for diuers seruices, amonge whom is Christopherus Olitus, of whom I made mention beefore: and a little after,

Iacobus Garsias
freeth Cortes of
suspition of poy-
soning Garraius.
Cortes a faithfull
subject to Cæsar.
Cortes repaireth
the great city
Tenustitan.

Cortes permitteth
a Prætorian
scepter.

His Prætorian
band.

Reportes from
Aluaradus.

Aluaradus as-
signed by Cortes
to make search
for a great city
on the West
side of the bay
Figuera.

Aluaradus sends
messengers to
the Tyrant.

The Spaniards
ships thought to
be monsters of
the Sea.

wee shall speake of the rest of his valiant acts. But, what another Centurian named Aluaradus, sent from another part, reporteth, it is a goodly and excellent matter to bee heard. We haue sometime sayd, that betwene Iucatan (which is the beginnings of New Spaine so called by Cortes, & confirmed by Cæsar) & § huge cōtry of § supposed Cōtinent, there lieth an exceeding great Bay which we sometimes thought had a way out to § South coasts of § cōtry: in which Bay also Egidius Gonsalus Abulensis euen to this day thinketh, that some broade riuier may be found, which sucketh or supbeth vp the waters of that great lake of potable waters, whereof I spoake at large in that booke deliuered to your Holines by the Cusentine Archbishop, and in my precedent narration vnto the Duke. The angle of that Bay they cal Figueras lately knowne. On the West side heereof it was reported by diuers inhabitants, that there is a city no lesse then the city Tenustitan, yet by relation of all, more then 400. leagues thence, and that the kinge thereof was the Tyrant of a large Empire. Cortes commendeth the buisines of searchinge what it might bee, to Aluaradus, and assigneth him 500. horse and foote. Aluaradus taketh his journey to the East, hee goeth directly foorth, and sendeth onely two before, who vnderstoode the neere bordering speeches of the Barbarians. He founde diuers countries: some montanous, others plaine, sometimes plashy and marsh countryes, but for the most part dry: diuers countryes vsed diuers languages, out of euery country, such as were skilful in languages, he sent before with his menn. Omittinge what befel them by the way, least I weary your Holines, and my selfe in repeateing smale & trifling matters, let vs at one leape embrace §, which we sayd was excellent to be heard. The messengers goinge before from kingdome to kingdome with their guides of the same country, returned to Aluaradus alwayes staying many leagues behinde, and brought him worde againe what they had searched: as soone as they heard of the fame of the Spaniards the messengers left all in quietnes and peace, so that none of the kings durst euer drawe a sworde against them, or our armyes. Which way soeuer they went the barnes & storehouses were opened to thē & their faces fixed on thē with admiration, but chiefly beholdinge the horses, & ornaments of our men, for these also are almost naked, so they holpe our men with victuals, & porter slaues to carry their fardells in steede of labouringe beastes. For they make slaues of such as they take in § warres, as it happeneth euery where amonge all nations (I will not say kinges) raging mad through couetousnes, or ambition. Aluaradus stayeth on § borders of that Tyrant, and alwayes standeth in the winges of the troops in battayle arraye, he setteth on footing vpō § boundes of that great kinge, least he might seeme to intend to offer wronge for it is accounted the greatest contumelye, and contempt amonge all the kinges of those countries, if any touch or enter the limites of another, without the knowledge of the Lord thereof, and there is nothing more vsuall amonge them, then in that case to take reuenge: hence proceede braules, priuy grudges, and occasions of warres. Hee was yet almost an hundred leagues distant from the princely seate of that Tyrant when hee sendeth Messengers beefore with interpreters of the next nations to that kingdome: they goe vnto the kinge, and salute him, and are peaceably receiued: For the fame of our men hadd come to his eares. Hee demaundeih whether the menn came from that great Malinges whome they reporte to bee sent from Heauen to those countries (for they call a valiant and mighty Noble mann Malinges) they confesse they weere sent from him: Whereupon, he further demaundeth whether they came by Sea or land, if by Sea, in what Piraguas, that is to say huge great shippes, as bigge as the princely courtes in which they were (they themselues haue shippes, but for fishing, and those made of the body of one tree, as in all those countries) heere, that kinge plainly confessed that hee hadd knowledge of our country shippes the former yeere. For the inhabitants of that Kinge from the townes standinge one the Sea side sawe them passe by with their sayles spread. Which Egidius Gonsalus conducted through those Seas, which lye one the backe side of Iucatan, and they thought them to bee monsters of the Sea and strange, and ominous thinges lately arisinge, who beeinge astonished thereat reported them vnto their Kinge. And demaunding, whether any of them two, knewe how to paint such a shippe, one of them called Triuignus, whoe was a caruer in wood, and no ordinary pilot, promised

named Aluaradus, hee heard. We of New Spaine so opposed Cōtinent, a way out to Abulensis euen th or supbeth vp in that booke de- ent narration vnto On the West side lesse then the city the kinge thereof searchinge what it Aluaradus taketh his before, who vnder countries: some the most part dry: were skilful in lan- e way, least I weary at one leape em- goinge before from Aluaradus alwayes had searched: as all in quietnes and hem, or our armyes, to thē & their faces naments of our men, order slaues to carry such as they take in y kinges) raging madd of that Tyrant, and eth no footing vpō y ge for it is accounted countries, if any touch reof, and there is no- nce proceede braules, dred leagues distant s beefore with inter- e, and salute him, and es. Hee demaundeth rte to bee sent from mann Malinges) they th whether they came shippes, as bigge as , but for fishine, and hat kinge plainly con- yeere. For the inha- ve them passe by with ose Seas, which lye one of the Sea and strange, reported them vnto how to paint such a and no ordinary pilot, promised

promised to doe it, hee taketh the matter vpon him to paint a shippe in a great hall, for the great courtes of the Kinge and the Nobility are built with lime and stone as wee haue sayde of Tenuitian standinge in the Lake. Hee painted a monstrous shippe of great burthen, of that kinde, which the Genuenses call Carrackes with six mastes, and as many deckes. The kinge stode longe amazed, wonderinge at the huge greatenes thereof, and then after what manner they fight, so that it might be sayd that each of thē is so stronge, that it may bee an easie matter for every one to bee able to ouerthrowe thousands of menn, which hee declared hee neither could, nor would beeleeue by any meanes, seeinge hee sawe they nothinge exceeded the common stature of menn or had more grimme countenance, or stronger limmes. They sayd, our menn had fierce fourefooted beasts, and swifter then the winde, wherewith they fight: then, he desired that some of them would paint an horse as well as he could. One of the company painted an horse with a terrible, and sterne countenance, much greater then they are (such as Phidias and Praxiteles left, made of brasse, in the Exquilinian hill of your Holinesse) & sett a cōpleat armed man vpō his barbed backe. The king hearing this asked thē whether they would take vpō thē to conquer the neighbouring enemy that invaded his borders, if he sent thē 50000. armed men to helpe them: they sayd y all y Spaniards were of litle greater moment or powerfull strength, then other menn are, but in a well ordered army with horse, and warlike engines they feared noe forces of menn. They promised they would returne to that comāder who sent them, & expecteth them not farr from his bounds the king demāded what word they would bring frō him, who say they thinke he would come to helpe him, & that they should easily destroy the enemy, his city, and whatsoever else is subiect to his dominion. Whereupō he affirmed, y he would yeeld him- selfe & all his subiectes into y power & subiection of y great & valiant noble man, if they wold performe their promise. These things being done & cōcluded, in token of his future obedience, he remained so ready to pleasure our men y he gaue thē 5000. slaues ladē with y moy Cacahus (which extendeth as farr as those coasts) & v prouisiō of victuals to be brought to Aluaradus, and gaue them also 2000. Pensa of gold wrought into diuers Jewels. Returning back to Aluaradus, they made him ioyfull. Aluaradus returned to Cortes, & told him what they had done. He offereth y presents of that great king, they diuide them, as it behooued. But of y two messēgers sent frō Aluaradus y one not trusting to y Cōmāders liberality towards him, stole certaine Pensa after y iourney. His cōpāiō admonished him not to pollute his hāds by violating his fidelity & faith, & exhorteth him rather to proue y liberality of Cortes & Aluaradus: expecting y obstacy of his cōpāiō he held his peace dissemblinge the matter, and accused his companion to Cortes of theft: who for example of others (the gold being found out) was publicquely whipped with rodde & punished with perpetuall banishment from Noua Hispania. These things were done about the ende of the yeare of our Lorde 1523. Then presently after a few dayes ended, the sicke and faint being refreshed and new men placed in steede of the deade, this messenger sayth, that by the commandement of Cortes, Aluaradus departed while he was present, with greater forces, with striking vp of drums & sounde of the trumpetts. This messenger Iacobus Garsias sometimes household seruant of Marcellus Villalobos the Lawier, one of the Senators of Hispaniola, is sent frō his olde Maister to our Senat: what he solicited for his Maister he hath obtained. To wit, that it might be lawfull for him to erect a castle, and plant a Colony in the Ilande Margarita, at his owne proper cost, and charges. This Margarita is an Iland oueragainst the entrance of the Dragons mouth in the supposed Continent, a fruitfull ingendrer of pearls from whence the name of Margarita is giuen vnto it. If he doe it, he shalbe perpetuall Gouernour thereof, and the command thereof shall come to his heires, as the manner is, the supream authority and power notwithstanding reserued to the Crowne of Castile. Their remaineth one thing yet, that wee may ende the matters of this new Spaine.

The sixt Chapter.

Cortes, since that French pyrate named Florinus violently tooke his fleete with many precious things, which he, & the rest of the Magistrates of new Spaine, partakers of

Trivignus paint-
eth a shippe.

He painteth a
horse.

The tyrant
offers a condi-
tion all subie-
ction.

He giues 2000.
pensa of gold.

Theft punished
by Cortes.

A Colony to
be erected in
Margarita.

Cortes his dis-
content.

the victories, sent vnto Cæsar, through griefe, and sorrow for so great an ouerthrowe, hath sent no more letters vnto Cæsar, or our Senate, although from those kingdomes, many returned, & that often: whereupon that suspition of reuoltinge frō Cæsar arose. Now he yeckleth apparant tokens cōtrary to opinions, he indeuoreth to enlarge kingdomes to his Maiesty and not for himselfe: and if peradventure your Holines sometimes considered with yourselfe, whether the ambiguous and doubtfull case of Garaius be to bee exacted from him, and a strict accompt to be required, concerning his death, and he to bee corrected, if it happened by his consent, let your Holinesse receiue this from my iudgement and experience. Such an inquisition will be dissembled as I suppose, for none will attempt to bridle so mighty an Elephant by this meanes: we shall thinke it better, and that it shall rather bee needeful to vse courteous speeches, and comfortable lenitiues for the curing of such a wounde, then to prouoke him to anger. Time the eternall ludge of all things will discover it. Yet we beleue it will come to passe, that heereafter he shall fal into the same snares, into the which hee cast Iacobus Velasquez Gouvernour of Cuba, vnder whose commande being sent young vnto those countries, he aduanced the crest against him, and then Pamphilus Narbaicius, now Garaius, if the opinion of many bee true, as in their places I haue discoursed at large. And the beginning of the payment of this debt is not farre off. It is reported from Cuba, and Iamaica, but more plainly from Hispaniola, whether all resorte as to a generall Mart towne, that Christopherus Olitus sent by him for the searching of the desired Streight, is reuolted from him, and performeth the matter by himselfe, neglecting the authority of Cortes: so things haue their beginnings. We read letters also, whereby I vnderstand, that Ægidius Gonsalus Abulensis (of whom in my former Decades I spoke at large) is now arriued on those coastes of the foresaide Baye called Figueras lately knowne, that from thence searching by litle and litle, he might seeke out the ende or issue of these freshe waters. They say, that Olitus came to the very selfe same shoares, and that hee went further downe 8^{or} leagues onely, from Ægidius Gonsalus. They say also that Ægidius Gonsalus hearing of the coming of Olitus, sent letters and Messengers vnto him, offering peace, and conorde. It is also reported, that Cortes (vnderstanding of the reuolt of Olitus) sent armed forces against him, whom he commanded to take Olitus, and bring him to him bounde, or kill him. They who knewe Olitus, say, hee was a stout and valiant souldier, and no foolish Commaun'er, and that from the beginning of the warres, he had not bene the meanest part of the victories, but as it often vsually falleth out, hee nowe became fearefull vnto Cortes, wherefore vnder the pretence of honour, hee sent him away from him, that hee might not repose any credit in a man to whom he had spoken ignominious wordes. On the other part, wee heare that Petrus Arias Gouvernour of the supposed Continent, hath leuiued a great armie to goe thither, whereupon, wee feare, least the discordes of these menn will bring all to ruine, and destruction. Neyther doth Cæsar, nor our Senate vnderstande, what other counsell to take, then by frequent commaundementes to the Senate of Hispaniola, to increase their authority, that thence, as from the supreme power they endeouour both by courteous speeches, and also by admonitions, and threatenings, that no hurt arise, that they be not contentious, but agree together in minde, except they will bee taxed, or charged with the accusation of treason: they will all fall, and come to nought, vnlesse they obey. For neyther will the rest of the Nobilitie of Spaine, who haue the mindes of the souldiers affected vnto them, assent vnto their opinions, against the obedience of their King. Nor doe wee thinke these commotions, and troubles are to bee appeased by armes, but if wee shal perceiue any arguments or tokens of breach of fidelity, or treachery to breake out, and appeare in any, whatsoever thwart or opposite matter ariseth, shall be ouerthrowne onely with inke, and paper. For the force of honour or prayse especially, is great, & naturally bredd in the breast of the Spaniards, that they may be esteemed faithful to their King. We expect ships from that forraie, & new world every houre. Then if any thing secretly swell, it will breake forth, and we will send for the Chirurgians to cure the same. I learned also many other things (not vnworthy the relation) by Friar Thomas Hortisius, and his fellowes the two coloured Dominican Friars, approued honest men.

These

Time the best
iniquator.

Christoph. Oli-
tus reported
to be reuolted
from Cortes.

That Gonsalus
sent messengers
of peace to
Olitus.

Of the worth of
Olitus.

A report that
Petrus Arias
leuiued a great
armie to goe
against Cortes.
Cæsar seeks to
appease these
contentions of
the Captaines.

Friar Thomas
Hortisius.

t an ouerthrowe,
hose kingdomes,
frō Caesar arose.
rge kingdomes to
ntimes considered
bee exacted from
bee corrected, if it
dgement and ex-
e will attempt to
that it shall rather
curing of such a
things will discover
the same snares,
e commande being
nd then Pamphilus
places I haue dis-
not farre of. It is
ether all resort as
e searching of the
elfe, neglecting the
rs also, whereby I
ecades I spoake at
lately knowne, that
ssue of these freshe
at hee went further
Egidius Gonsalus
ffering peace, and
Olitus) sent armed
him bounde, or kill
and no foolish Com-
the meane part of
refull vnto Cortes,
that hee might not
On the other part,
leued a great armie
n will bring all to
e, what other coun-
paniola, to increase
r both by courteous
e, that they be not
d, or charged with
vnlesse they obey.
des of the souldiers
of their Kings. Nor
l by armes, but if
treachery to breake
seth, shall be ouer-
praye especially, is
y may be esteemed
world euery houre.
for the Chiribichians to
e relation) by Friar
proued honest men.
These

These men for 7. yeeres space inhabited that parte of the supposed Continent, called Chiribichi, which is the next neighbouring Country to the Mouth of the Dragon, and the prouince Paria, often named by vs in our former Decades: where in my precedent treatise to the Duke, I sayde that the Barbarians ouerthrew the Monastery, and killed those that liued therein. This is the opinion of this Friar Thomas Hortisius who remayneth with vs, that twelue Friars of the Dominican order, be assigned to be sent vnto new Spaine vnder his conduct that they may sowe the seede of our faith among those barbarous nations: I vnderstood many things of these friars before, which (as I remember) being set downe in writing, I sent them expresly mentioned to diuers Princes. They affirme, that the inhabitantes of those countries are Canibales, or Caribes, eaters of manns fleshe. The country of the Caribes is an huge quantity of ground, exceeding all Europe: they are found to sayle in fleetes of Canowes, to hunt men, among the heape of Ilandes which are innumerable, as others goe to the forrests, and woodes, to seeke Harts, and wild Bores to kill them. Carib, in the vniuersal languages of those countries, signifieth, stronger then the rest, and from thence they are called Caribes: nor doe any of the Ilanders vtter and pronounce this name without feare. They are also called Caribes of the country Caribana, situate on the East part of the Bay of Vrabia, from whence, that wilde kinde of men dispersed through the large distance of those coasts, hath sometimes slayne, and vtterly ouerthrowne whole armies of the Spanyardes. They liue almost naked, sometimes they inclose their priuities within a golden little goorde, in another place they binde vpp the foreskinne with a little corde, and vntie it not, but to make water, or when they vse the act of generation, and liuing idle at home, they couer no other part: but in the time of warres, they weare many ornaments. They are very nimble, and cast their poysoned darts with most assured ayme, and goe, and returne swifter then the winde, with their arrowes: in their bowes, they are beardless, and if an haire come forth, they plucke it out one from another with certaine little pinsers, and cut their hayre to the halfe of the eare. They boare holes in their eares, and nostrils for elegancy, and the richer sort decke them with Iewels of gold, the common people with diuers shelles of cockles, or sea-nayles, and they also, who can gett gold, are delighted in golden crownes. From the tenth, or twelue yeere of their age, when now they begin to bee troubled with the tickeling prouocations of Venery, they carry leaues of trees to the quantity of nuts, all the day in eyther cheek, and take them not out, but when they receiue meate, or drinke. The teeth growe blacke with that medicine, euen to the foulness of a quenched or dead cole: they call our men women, or children in reproach, because they delight in white teeth, and wilde beastes, for that they endeouour to preserue their beardes, and hayre: Their teeth continue to the ende of their liues, and they are neuer payned with the toothach, nor do they euer rott. These leaues are somewhat greater then those of the Mirtle, and as soft as those which the tree Terebinthus beareth, in feeling, as soft as wooll, or cotton. The Chiribichenses doe not more apply themselves to any culture, or husbandry, then to the care of those trees (which they call Hay) by reason that for the leaues thereof, they gett whatsoever wares, or commodities they like. Throughout the fields of those trees, they cut very well ordered trenches, and conuey small brookes vnto them, wherewith they water the plants in good order. Euery one incloseth his portion onely with a little cotton line drawn out in length, to the height of a mans girdle, and they account it a matter of sacriledge, if any passe ouer the corde, and treade on the possessions of his neighbour, and hold it for certaine that whoso violateth this sacred thing, shall shortly perish. But, howe they preserue the powder of those leaues, that it corrupt not, is worth the hearing. Before the dried leaues be beaten into powder, they goe to the woods of the Mountaynes, where exceeding plenty of shels and snayles are ingendred, by reason of the moisture of the earth, of those shelles heaped vpp, and put into a furnace made for that purpose, with a certaine particular kinde of woodd, and a greate and vehement fire vnder it, they make lime, and mingle it with the powder. The force of that lime is so great, that his lippes that first taketh it, are so baked, and hardened, like diggers and deluers who haue harde and brawny handes with often handling of spades and mattocks, or, as if they rubbed our lippes with vnslaked lime, but with

Chiribichi.

The Country of
the Canibals, or
Caribs and the
manners of
them.

Howe they make
blacke their
teeth.

Their industry
in the planting
of the trees
called Hay.

with such as are accustomed thereto, it is not so. The powder thus mixed, & tempered, they put it vp close in maunds, and baskets of marish canes curiously wrought, and platted in, and keepe it till the marchants come, who goe, and come, to haue that powder, as they come flocking to fayres and markets. They bring the graine Maizium, slaues, and gold, or Iewels of gold, (which they call Guanines) that they may get this powder, which all the bordering countries vse for cure of the teeth, yet the Chiribichenses spitt out the olde leaues euery houre, & take new. There are other trees in this valley famous for their profits and commodities, from one of the, the boughes being a litle cut, a milky moysture issueth, or droppeth out. This sapp or moysture beeing left thus, congealeth into a kinde of pitchy rosin, and that gumme is transparent and cleere, profitable for the pleasing perfume thereof. The iuyce gathered from another tree after the same manner, killeth, if any bee hitt with an arrow annoynted therewith. From other trees bird lime issueth, therewith they take fowle, & put it to other vses. There is another tree like a Mulberry tree, called Gacirma, and beareth fruit harder then our Mulberries of Europe, fitt to bee presently eaten. From them (being first moistened) they wring out a certaine sapp, excellent to purge the throat, and good to take away hoarsenes. From the dried boughes of this tree fire may be stricken, as out of a flint. The sides also of this valley haue Citrean trees very familiar, and common, and very high, they say that garments layd vp in Citrean chestes smell very sweet, and are preserued from mothes. But if bread be shut vp there, to bee kept, it becommeth more bitter then gall, and cannot bee tasted, thereupon (as wee haue sayd) shippes made of those plancks escape the danger of those gnawing woormes. Another tree beareth Gosampine cotton, bigger then a Mulberry tree, in ten yeeres it dyeth and perisheth, the like also happeneth in Hispaniola, and in many other places in this new worlde, as wee haue sayd in the precedent booke to the Duke. These two coloured fathers make their vaunts, that this cotton is more precious then ours of Europe which is yeerely sowed, and exceedeth not the height of a stalke of hempe or flaxe, this slender kinde groweth and prospereth in many parts of Spaine, but cheifly in the Astigitan field. The great tree of Cassia Fistula is very common in this valley, and growth of it owne nature. Another commodity also of this valley is not to be omitted: among the Chiribichenses in some hidden and secrete solitary places, they thought trees grewe which yeelded Cinnamō, vnknowne to the inhabitants, or at the least not regarded, because there is no kinde of spice in vse among these inhabitantes, beside that sort of pepper, whereof I haue often, and at large elsewhere discoursed, which they call Axi, so peculiar and proper that there is no lesse plenty of those shrubbs with them, then of mallowes, or nettles with vs. For example, there was a tree carryed away by the violence of an ouerflowing riuer, & cast vpon the sea shoare next vnto their Monastery, hauing drawne the tree vnto the dry land, they went about to cut it for the vse of the kitchen, sweete smelling sauours comming from all the chippes, they tasted the barke, and perceiued the tast thereof not to be much vnlike Cinnamon, although through long space of time, and violent shaking of the streame, the truncke and body thereof were halfe corrupted. Time, the ludge of all thinges, will discover these, & many other things besides, which are yet hid. We reade that the Creator of all things tooke vnto him the number of sixe dayes to forme, and orderly compose the frame of the vniuersall worlde. Wee cannot with one breath search out all the secrets of great matters. They say the waters of that riuer are apt to purge, and breake the stone of the kidneis, and bladder, but make the sight dimme. They say, that out of a fountaine also springeth f matter of that vnquenchable fire vsually called Ignis Alchitrani, I thinke the Italian commonly calleth it Ignis Græcus.

The senenth Chapter.

ANother thing is worth the noting for the argument and matter thereof, beecause that valley ingendreth lasciuious, and delightfull Spices. At the rising of the sunne, and in cleare weather, wonderfull vapours are dispersed by the gentle morning winde, throughout the whole valley. But if they bee to greedily drawne in at the nostrils, they are hurtfull to the

The cure of the
teeth.

Gumme.

The iuyce of a
tree where with
they poison
their arrowes.

Gacirma a tree
with 2. excel-
lent properties.

Citrean trees
and the pro-
perties thereof.

A tree bearing
Gosampine Cot-
ton.

Cassia Fistula.

Plenty of Cin-
namō.

Waters of a
riuer good to
purge the stom-
acke. Ignis Alchitrani,
Ignis Græcus.

Vapours hurt-
full for the
head.

ced, & tempered,
ly wrought, and
ue that powder, as
n, slaues, and gold,
der, which all the
spitt out the olde
famous for their
a milky moysture
ealeth into a kinde
the pleasing per-
manner, killeth, if
lime issueth, there-
e a Mulberry tree,
e, fitt to bee pre-
ine sapp, excellent
ed boughes of this
y haue Citrean trees
p in Citrean chestes
ut vp there, to bee
upon (as wee haue
wormes. Another
yeeres it dyeth and
places in this new
two coloured fathers
ope which is yeerely
t, this slender kinde
Astigitan field. The
h of it owne nature.
the Chiribichenses in
ch yielded Cinnamō,
e is no kinde of spice
I haue often, and at
r that there is no lesse
th vs. For example,
er, & cast vpon the
e dry land, they went
omming from all the
e much vnlike Cinnā-
e streame, the truncke
ges, will discover these,
Creator of all things
pose the frame of the
crets of great matters.
one of the kidneis, and
tainie also springeth
thinke the Italian com-

thereof, because that
of the sunne, and in
ing winde, throughout
rils, they are hurtfull to
the

the head, and ingender the pose, or stuffing of the head, as it falleth out with vs in many herbes, chiefly Basill, nor is it good to put Muske to the Nose, although the sent thereof be sweete a farre off: but in raynie, or cloudy weather, those odours cease. Another tree on the bankes of the riuers beareth apples, which beeing eaten prouoke vrine, and cause it to come forth of the colour of bloode. Another, beareth excellent plummes, like those which the Spaniards call Monke plummes. Vpon the same bankes, another beareth apples whiche kill, if they bee eaten, although they bee pleasant, those apples falling into the channels are eaten of the fishes, and they who at that time ate those fishes, fall into diuers vnknowne diseases: this Fryar Thomas Hortisius sayth, that hee tasted a litle of the apple but eate it not, who affirmeth that it hadd a sower sweete taste intermixed, it hurt him a litle, but a draught of oyle was a remedy for the poyson. The shaddow also of this Apple-tree hurteth the head, and sight of the eyes. the eating of these apples also killeth dogges, and cattes, and any other foure-footed beast whatsoever. That Country also ingendreth other trees of many sorten: a iuyce issueth from one, which beeing pressed is like the creame of newe milke, and good to bee eaten. Another tree yeeldeth gumme no worse then redd sugar. That Earth also of her owne nature shooteth forth many sweete smelling herbes, and Basill may euery where bee gathered. Beetes growe there, to the height of a manns stature. Three leaued grasse there, is greater then Parsley and Smalage, and Porselane, brings forth branches thicker then a mans thumb. All pot herbes, and garden herbes, brought thither by them of the Monastery growe vp there, as Melons, Goordes, Cucumbers, Radishes, Carrettes, and Parsnepps. Deadly and poysonous herbes also grow there, and chiefly one three ribbed marish herbe, armed with sharpe pointed teeth in manner of a sawe: and if it pricke one vnawares, it sendeth him away complainyng. Certaine herbes also grow in that Sea, which being plucked vp by the rootes through the violence of the windes spread themselues abroad, and for the most part, hinder the way of the ships. In this country of the Chiribichenses, the variety of the foure-footed beastes, and their country fowle is woorth the mentioning. And let vs begin, with the most profitable, and the more hurtfull, which are opposite. In my former books, and those that follow, often mention is made of certaine foure-footed Serpents, terrible to behold, they call them Iuganas, others call them Iuanas. This monstrous beast is good to be eaten, and a beast not to be reiected, among the dainty meates. And the egges also, which shee layeth, and bringeth forth like the Crocodile, or Tortoise, are of an excellent nutriment, and taste. The two coloured Dominican Fryars receyued no small dammage by them, while they inhabited those Countries for seuen yeeres space. The Monastery being erected (as we sayd) they report, for the most parte by night, they were besett with a dangerous multitude of Iuganas, as with the enemye, whereupon they rose out of their beds, not to prouoke them to defende themselues, but to feare, and driue them away from the fruites, and chiefly the garden Melons, sowed, and manured in their season, whereon they willingly fedd. The Inhabitantes of that valley hunt the Iuganas to eate them, who, finding them, kill them with their arrowes, and many take them aliue, with their right hand, seising on the neck of this monstrous beast, which is very slowe, and dull, though fearefull to behold, and seemeth with open mouth, and terrible shewe of teeth, to threaten biting. but like an hissing Goose it becommeth astonied, and dare not assayle them: the increase of them is so great, that they cannot vterly destroye the whole herde and company thereof. Out of the dennes, and holes vpon the sea coast, where any greene thinge buddeth or groweth, they come forth by night in great troopes, and multitudes, to seeke foode, and eate also the excrementes of the sea, which the Ebb leaueth on the shores. That countrey also nourisheth another subtile & cruell beast, (no lesse then a French dogge) seldome scene. In the first twilight of the night, it commeth forth of the lurking places, and couert of the wooddes, goeth to the villages, and compasseth the houses with loude weeping, and lamentation, so that they who are ignorant of that crafty deuise, would suppose some young childe were beaten. Before the experience of things instructed the neighbours, many were deceyued, and vnawares, went out to the crying of the infant, then presently, came the mon-ter, and violently caught the poore miserable man, and in the twinkling of an eye, tare him in peeces. Long space

Basill & Muske
not good to be
put to the nose.
Apples prou-
oking vrine.
Plummes.

Of a pleasant
poysoning apple
the true Pomum
Paradii.

Of the iuyce of
a tree.
Gumme no
worse then redd
sugar.
Herbes.

A foure-footed
serpent good to
eate.

Of a subtil &
cruell beast.

The Chiribichians eate Crocodiles.

Wilde cattles.

Cappa a fierce kind of beast.

Leopards and Lyons of a mild & gentle kinde. A beast resembling the shape of a man.

A beast whose excrementes are snakes.

A beast that feedeth vpon Antes.

of time, and necessity, which stirre vp the drowsie mindes of men, found out a remedy against the nature of this cruell and monstrous beast. If any be to trauaile by night, hee carryeth out a kindled fier brande with him, and swingeth it about as hee goeth, which the monster beholding, flyeth, as a fearfull mann from the sworde of a madd man, by day this monster hath neuer beene seene. They are also much molested, and troubled with Crocodiles, especially in solitary and mirie Bayes, for the most part they take the young, and eate them, but abstaine from the olde ones, being affrayd of them. The Fryars eate of a Crocodile, who say that the vsuauory taste thereof, is like to the soft fleshe of an Asse, as I haue else where sayde of the Crocodiles of Nilus, in my Babilonian Legation for the Catholike Princes Ferdinando, & Elizabeth. From the femall a sent proceedeth much like the smell of ranke muske. That Country engendreth wild Catts, the damme carrieth the young in her bosome, creeping or climbing among the trees, then they hit the damme, who falling downe dead, they take the little ones, and keepe them for delight, as we doe Munkies or Apes, from wich they differ exceeding much, they take them also by setting snares for them on the brinckes of Fountaines. Beyond the mountaines poynted at with the finger, the Inhabitautes say, that Montanous wilde beastes inhabite, which counterfeit the shape of a man, in countenance, feete, and handes, and sometimes stand vpright on their hinder feete, with their face vpwarde, and walke, they who hearde this, suppose them to be Beares, but sawe them not. Another scarce Beast remaineth in their woodes greater then an Asse, a deadly enemy to Dogges, for whatsoever Dogge hee meeteth, hee catcheth him, and carryeth him away with him, euen as a Woolfe, or Lion dooth a sheepe, they violently caught three Dogges (from the Fryars) whiche kept the Monastery, euen out of the entry or porch. The forme of the feete of this Beast greatly differeth from other liuing creatures, the hoofe thereof is like vnto a French shoo, broade before, and rounde, not diuided, or clouen, sharpe from the heele, it is blacke, and shagg hayred, and feareth the sight of a man, the inhabitantes call this fourfooted Beast, Cappa. It nourisheth also Leopardes, and Lyons, but milde, and gentle, and not hurtfull, there are great multitudes of Deere, whiche the inhabitantes (who are hunters) pursue with their arrowes. There is another Beast no greater then a French Dogge named Aranata, the shape whereof is like to a manne, with a thicke bearde, goodly, & reuerent to beholde, they haue handes, feete, and mouth lyke to a mannes, they eate the fruite of trees, and climbing among the trees, as a Catte, or an Ape, they goe in flockes, or companies, and sometimes making a great crying or iabbering together, insomuche as the Fryars of the Monastery when they first arryued, thought them to bee armyes of Diuelles, crying out against them to terrifie them, for rage and madnesse, of their comming thither. It is a very apt, and quicke Beast, for it knoweth howe to auoide arrowes shot at it, and to take them with the hand, and sende them backe to the shooter: I thinke them to be a kinde of Apes, or Munkies, but the Fryars, deny it. There is another carrion leane beast, wonderfull for the gesture and behauiour, for in steede of dounge, it voydeth snakes of a cubite long: these Fryars say, they nourished one at home, and that they sawe the thing by manifest prooffe. Being demaunded, whether the snakes went being set at libertie, they sayd, to the next woodds, where they liue a short time. This beast lyeth stinking vpon euery filthy carrion cast on the dunghilles, and therefore impatient of the rotten saueur thereof, they commaunded it shoulde bee killed: it hath the snout, and haire like a foxe. Considering we see woormes bred in the bellies of young children, and old men are not free from that pestilent disease, and that I haue learned, that they are voyded aliue together with the excrementes, which chaunging the name the common people call maw woormes, why shoulde I not beleue that to be so, especially such men affirming the same? There is another foure-footed beast which seeketh his liuing by a marueilous instinct of nature: for it is an hunter of Antes, as wee know the Pye doth, this beast hath a sharpe snout of a spanne long, and in steade of a mouth hath onely a hoole in the ende of his snout, whereby putting forth his long tongue, he stretcheth it out into beddes of the Antes which lye hidd in the hollowe hoales of trees, and playing, with the motion of his tongue hee allareth them, and perceiuing it to bee full of Antes, hee draweth it back, and so swallowing the Antes, is fed. That Countrie also, ingendreth

at a remedy against night, hee carryeth which the monster by day this monster with Crocodiles, young, and eate eate of a Cro- of an Asse, as I Legation for the ceedeth much like damme carrieth the the damme, who as we doe Mun- by setting snares at with the finger, terfeit the shape of ht on their hinder them to be Beares, eater then an Asse, a th him, and carryeth plently caught three nry or porch. The es, the hoofe thereof clouen, sharpe from an, the inhabitantes ons, but milde, and e ir habitantes (who eater then a French icke bearde, goodly, annes, they eate the ey goe in flocks, or er, insomuche as the armyes of Diuelles. omming thither. It hot at it, and to take m to be a kinde of ne beast, wonderfull es of a cubite long: g by manifest prooffe. ey sayd, to the next uery filthy carrion of, they commaunded ring we see woormes at pestilent disease, excrementes, which de I not beleue that re-forted beast which ater of Antes, as wee and in steade of a orth his long tongue, lowe hoales of trees, receiving it to bee full That Countrey also, ingendreth

ingendreth that barbed or armed beast, whereof I haue often spoken. It aboundeth also with wilde Boares, thorny Hedghogges, and Porkepennes, and diuers kinde of Weesells: it is also adorned with diuers fowles, and is much troubled with the birdes called Onocrotali, whereof I haue spoken at large in my former booke to the Duke. Battes, like Gnattes, as- sayle men sleeping by night. Whatsoeuer the Batt findeth vncouered in a manne, it boldly assayleth it without feare, and suddenly biteth it, sucking the blood. But your Holinesse shall heare a pleasant accident worth the hearing, which fell out about the biting of a Batt. An housholde seruant of the Monastery, was sicke of a grieuous pleurisie, in great daunger of life, and hauing neede presently to bee lette blood, the Phlebotomist as- sayd to strike the veine twice or thrise, but got not any drop of blood with his rasor, where- upon hee beeing left for a dead mann, within fewe howers, the Fryars taking their last fare- well, departed, to goe about to prepare for his buriall. A Batt seiseth on him beeing thus forsaken, and opened a veine of one of the sicke mans feete which was vncouered, the Batt filled with sucking of the blood, flew away, and left the veine open. At the rising of the Sunne the Fryars come to this forsaken man supposing him to be dead, and found him aliue, and cheerefull, and almost well, and after a while hee recouered health, diligently applying himselfe to his olde office, thanked bee the Batt, which was his Phisition. They also kill cats, dogges, and hennes with their biting. The Inhabitaunt calleth a Batt, Rere: I giue the names of things which they giue, but they giue but fewe. There are also Crowes, (not Crows which are blackish birdes) with a crooked Eagles bill, rauenuous, but slow in flight, as wee see, and may obserue in the flying of that slowe birde familiar in Spayne, bigger then a Goose: about the setting of the Sunne, a fragrant breath or vapour commeth from them, but at noone, or in foggy weather, none at all. Partridges, Turtles, and Stock- doves are bredd there in an infinite number, and they haue little Sparrowes lesse then our Wrennes. They report marueilous things concerning their industrious architecture in the building of their nests, to defend their young from rauening fowles and other monstrous beastes. Next vnto the Chiribichenses lyeth the Countrey of Atala, along by the shores Atala. whereof, the Spaniards sayled: they who cast their eyes farre into the Sea, the rest eyther playing, or else idle, sawe an vknowne and strang thing, swimming aboue water and con- sidering with fixed eye what it shoulde bee, confidently affirmed they sawe the hayry head of a man with a thicke bearde, and that it hadd armes. While they quietly behelde a farre off, the monster securely wandered heere, and there, wonderinge at the sight of the shippe, but raysing their Companions with exceedinge loude outcries, and exclamation, the Mon- ster hearing the sounde of the voyce was terrified, and diued vnder Water, and shewed that parte of the body which was hidden vnder the water, and beholding the tayle, they obserued it to bee like the tayle of a fishe, with the shaking, and flapping whereof it made that place of the calme sea full of waues, or sourses. Wee thinke them to bee the Tritones, which fabulous antiquitie calleth Neptunes trumpeters. At the Ilande Cubagua, famous for the fishing of pearle, neere to the Ilande of Margarita, many reported, that another monster of that kinde was scene there. In our Cantabrick Ocean, virgins voyces melodiously singing are sayde to bee hearde at certayne tymes of the yeere: they thinke there are Consortes and companies of them, when they are prouoked to venerie, through the appetite of ingendring, or begetting young of the same kinde. They haue many kinds of fishes vknowne to vs, but specially they delight in 2. sortes euery where, one, they roast or broyle, and keepe it as we doe salted gammons, or fliches of Bacon, or, as we powder or pickle other flesh, or fish, for our future necessities. Another kind, being boyled they knead in maner of a lumpe of wheaten dough, which being brought into rounde balles, they bestowe vpon the neigh- bours wanting that marchandise, for exchange of other forraine commodities. They take fishes by two slights, or cunning deuises. When they purpose to goe about a generall fish- ing, a great multitude of young men gather together, where they know plentie of those fishes are, who without making any noyse compasse about the scoole beehinde in a broad ring, like them that hunte hares, diuing all together, and in the waters after the manner of dauncers, with wandes which they carrie in their right hands moued with great dexteritie,

VOL. V.

3 N

and

Wild Boares,
Hedghoggs,
Porkepennes,
&c.
Battes.

Of a man sick
of a pleurisie
cured by a
Batt.

Of a kinde of
Crowes.

Fowles.

Atala.

Of a Monster of
the Sea like a
man.

Tritones or
Neptunes trum-
petters.

Fishes melodi-
ously singing in
the Cantabrick
Ocean.

Of their manner
of fishing.

A hurtful kind
of fish in the
channell of
Nilus.

Salamanders.

Aspes with the
point of whose
tailes they poy-
son their ar-
rowes.
Spiders that in-
tangle lurds.

Eating of lice
and frogges.

Gnattes.

3. kindes of
Bees.

2. sortes of
Waspes.

Dangerous Ser-
pents.

Catterpillers.

Glowormes.

The red shoare
of the Sea, and
the supposed
reason.

and the left hande open, by little, and little, and by degrees they driue them to the sandie shoares lyke sheepe into the folde, and there cast the pray by whole baskets full vpon the drie lande. I wonder not that this may be done, beecause the like happened to my selfe in the channell of Nilus, when I went against the streame to the Soldan, foure and twentie yeers since. The shyppes that carryed mee, and my trayne, and the Palatines sente vnto mee from the Soldan, staying on the shore to take in newe prouision of victualles, for recreations sake, because it was not safe to lande by reason of the wandring Arabians, by the perswasion and counsell of one of the borderers, I cast little peeces of breade into the ryuer, whereuppon presently a multitude of fishes were gathered togeather, so secure, that they suffered maundes or baskettes to bee putte vnder them, for they come striuing, and flockinge, to the floting peeces of bread, as greedie flyes to any sweete or pleasant thing, then presently wee lifted vpp the baskets full, and that wee might doe at our pleasure againe, and againe. But the borderers being demaunded why the great multitude of those fishes continued so long a time, wee vnderstoode that they ate not those fishes because they were hurtfull. I was aduised to take none of them in my hand, for they shewed me a redd pricke in their back, and that the fish endeouoreth to smite the taker with the poynt of the prickle, as Bees doe with their stinge: but the Chiribichenses haue not that care, for theirs, are good, and profitable fishes. The other kinde of fishing is more safe, and generous, they carry burning torches by night within their Canowes, and where they know by prooffe, the scooles of great fishes are, thether they goe, and swinge about the flaming torches without the sides of the boates, the scooles of fish hasten to the light, which, by casting their harping Irons, and dartes, they kill at their pleasure, and being salted, or dried in the scorching sunne they orderly lay them in chestes, and expect the Marchants that will come to their markets, and let this suffice for the Sea parts. Many kindes also of flyes, and serpents are ingendred there. The Salamanders of the Chiribichenses are broader then the palme of a mans hande, and their biting is deadly: they croake or cackle like young hoarse hen-chickens when they begin to desire the Cocke. Aspes which strike with the stinge of their tayle, are euery where to bee founde there, with the poynt of their tayle they poyson their arrowes. There are also diuers coloured Spiders, beautifull to beholde, twice bigger then ours: their webb is strong, and worth the beholding, whatsoever bird, lesse, or as bigge as a Sparrow lighteth into it, is intangled, and they of the Monastery say that no little strength is required to breake the threedds thereof. They eate Spiders, Frogges, and whatsoever woormes, and lice also without loathing, although in other thinges they are so queasie stomaked, that if they see any thing that doth not like them, they presently cast vpp whatsoever is in their stomacke. Many defend themselues from foure dangerous sortes of Gnattes after this manner, couering themselues in sande, they hide their faces with greene leaues among the boughes, yet so, that they may breath, the small ones of these Gnattes are the most hurtfull. There are 3. kinds of bees, whereof two gather hony in hieues after the manner of ours, the third is small, and blacke, which gathereth hony in the wooddes, without wax. The Inhabitautes willingly eate the young bees, rawe, roasted, and sometimes sodden. There are two sortes of Waspes, one harmelesse, the other very troublesome, the one inhabite the houses, the other remayne in the wooddes. In certayne Bayes of the Sea coast, Serpents of great and huge byignes are ingendred, if the Marriners chaunce to sleepe, taking holde of the side of the boate, they clime into it, and kill, teare, and eate those that are asleepe together, like Vultures seising vpon dead carrion which they finde. At certayne times of the yeere, they are much molested with grasse-woormes, palmer-woormes, and Locustes, in the blossomes of the trees: and in the graine Maizium, vnlesse great care be taken in drying it, and laying it vp in store-houses, the Weeuell groweth, and gnaweth the substance, and pith, leauing the huske, as it happeth in beanes, and somewhere in corne. Glowormes are also very familiar there, of the which I haue spoakē in my former Decade to the Duke, that they vse them for remedies against the gnattes, and to giue them light by night. They say that the shoares of that Sea at certayne times of the yeere are redd of the colour of blood. The elder sort being demaunded what might be the cause, they say, that they thinke, but affirme it not, that an huge

huge multitude of fishes cast their spaune at that time, which beeing violently carryed away by the waues, giues that bloody colour to the brim of the water: I leaue it to them that seeke marrowe in the superficies of bones, to beleue it, or else to infect these, and many things besides, with the naturall corruption of their enuie, and spite. Wee haue nowe spoken sufficiently of fourefooted beasts, fowles, and flies, as also of trees, herbes, and iuyces, and other such like things. Let vs therefore bend our bowe to ayme at the noble actes, and the order, and course of the life of men.

The eight Chapter.

The Chiribichenses are very much addicted to Sooth-saying, or diuination, they are louers of playes or sports, songes, and soundes, euery twilight they salute each other by course with diuers instruments and songes, sometimes they spend eight dayes together in singing, chaunting, dauncing, drinking and eating, and sometimes shake themselves vntill they be extreame weary. Their songes tend to sorow, and mourning, there, euery one furnishe and adorne themselves with Iewels, some set golden crownes vpon their heads, and beautifie their neckes, and legges with wilkes of the Sea, or shelles of snayles, in stead of belles, others take plumes of feathers of diuers colours, others hang golden tablets or brooches at their breastes, which they call Guaninnes, but they all die themselves with diuers iuyces of herbes, and he that seemeth most filthy, and ougly in our eyes, they iudge him, to be the most neate, and trimme: being thus gathered together somewhat like a bowe, then in manner of a strait wedge, and after that, in a round ring, with their handes knit together, then presently loosed, they goe rounde with a thousande diuers kindes of skipinges, and dauncings, alwayes singing, going forth, and returning with diuers gestures of the countenance: sometimes with their lippes close, and silent, and sometimes open with loude outcries. These fryars say, that they sawe them sometimes consume six howers, and more, without any intermission in these vaine, and laborious motions. When, warned by the Cryars, the bordering neighbours are to assemble together at the Court of any cheife King, the Kinges seruantes sweepe, and cleanse the wayes, plucking vpp the herbes, and casting away the Stones, thornes, and Strawe, and all other filth, and if neede require, they make them wider. The neighbours that come from the Townes, make a stande a slinges cast from the Kinges Court, and prepare themselves in the open felde, and hauing set themselves in an orderly array, they shake their Dartes, and Arrowes which they vse in the warres, singing, and dauncing, and first singing with a trembling low voyce, they goe a softe pace, then presently the neerer they come, they lift vp their voyces, and reiterated songes, euer almost vttering the same thing, as for example: It is a cleere day, the day is cleere, it is a cleere day. One Commaunder of euery towne giueth a rule vnto the rest, of their dances, and songes, who aunswere so great a Commander with a muscalle accord, so that it may seeme to bee but one voyce in many, and one motion, in many motions. One of the kinsmen or familiar freindes of that Commaunder, goeth before the troope or cōpany, directing his steppes to the folding gates of the Court, then they enter the house without singing, one counterfeiting the arte of fishing, another hunting, modestly dauncing, after that, another (like an Orator) talketh aloude praysing the King, and his progenitors, and one among the rest counterfeith the gesture and behauiour of a foole or iester, one while distorting his eyes, another while looking directly. This being done, they sitt all silent vppon the ground with their feete vnder them, and cate till they surfeite, and drinke till they be drunke, and the more vntemperatly any one drinketh, the more valiant is he accounted. Then, women vse drinke more modestly, to the intent they may haue the greater care of their husbandes ouercome with drunkenness, for euery husband is licenced to haue his wife to looke vnto him, while these sportes of Bacchus last: they also vse the helpe of women at these times to beare their carriages of meates and drinks to the place of meeting: these reach the cupps from man to man after this manner, the women drinke to him that sitteth first, who ariseth, and reacheth the bole or goblet to him that is nexte, vntill the whole number haue drunke in their order. The Friars say, that they haue seene some of them swolne through

The disposition
of the Chiribi-
chenses.

Ornaments.

Their Bacchus
feast.

A true beastly
barbarous opi-
nion.
The Chiribi-
chenses Magi-
cians.

Their virgins.

Married wo-
men.
Warlike Instru-
ments.

A police of the
Barbarians.

Their language
hard to be under-
stood.
The Barbarians
wash themselves
every day.

These Barba-
rians neuer use
poison.
Poisoned ar-
rows.

too much drinke, that they seemed like to a woman great with childe. After this, they re-
turne to brawling and complayning, and recounting iniuries past, hence arise combates hand
to hand, prouocations, and other controuersies, hence many enmities and hostilities begin,
hence many olde grudges breake forth. Nowe when they are able to rise, to returne home,
they reuiue their mournefull songs againe, especially the women who are more inclined to
sorrowe. They affirme that he that is temperate differeth much from a man, because hee
that falleth not through drunkennesse must needs remayne without the knowledge of future
thinges. They apply themselues to the art of Magicke vnder maisters, and teachers, as
here-after wee shall speake in his proper place, and then, they say, they had conference,
and familiar conuersation with the deuill, when they are most oppressed with drunkennesse,
the spirits being sounde asleepe, wherefore besides the drinking of wyne, they vse the fume
of another inebriating hearbe, that they may more fully and perfectly lie without sense,
others also take the iuyce of hearbes prouoking vomite, that their stomacks being emptied,
they may returne againe to their surfeiting, and drunkennesse. Their virgins also are pre-
sent at their drunken meetinges, who wrappe the partes of the calves of their legges, and
thyghes next the knee with bottoms of yarne, and binde them harde, to the end that their
calves, and thyghes may swell bigger, and through this foolish deuise they thinke they ap-
peare finer to their louers, the other partes are naked. But the married women weare
breeches only to couer their priuities. These people frame warlike instrumentes diuersly
compacted, wherewith they sometimes prouoke mirth, and sometimes sorrowe, and furie,
they make some of great sea-shells with little strings ouerthwart, they also make pipes, or
flutes of sundry pieces, of the bones of Deere, and canes of the riuer. They make also
little Drummes or Tabers beautified with diuers pictures, they forme and frame them also of
gourdes, and of an hollowe piece of timber greater then a mannes arme. By night almost
alwayes many cry aloud like Common cryers, from the highest house of euery towne,
& they carefully answer them from the next towne. Being demanded why they put them-
selues to that trouble, they answere, that their enemies might not finde them vnprovided,
if they suddenly came vpon them, for they destroy one another with perpetuall warres.
They say, their language is harde to be vnderstoode, for they pronounce all their wordes
halfe cutte of, as Poets may say, deum for deorum. If it be verie hotte before the rising of
the sunne, or if it be cold at the rising thereof, they wash themselues euery day, and for
elegancie, and neatnesse, for the most parte they annoynt themselues with a certayne slymy
oyntment, and putting the feathers of birdes thereon, they couer all their body: the Spanish
chiefe Iustices bring baudes or magicians forth of the prison after this manner to the
publique viewe of men, in reproach, for punishment of their hainous crime committed.
Neither heate nor cold much oppresseth the Chiribichenses of the sea shore, though they
be next the Equinoctiall, yet are they scarce vnder the tenth degree of our Pole: that
country lyeth towards the Antarticke (as I haue elsewhere sayde) foure and fifty degrees
beyond the Equinoctiall line, where the dayes are shortest, when they are the longest with
vs, and so contrary. Among them he is accounted most mightie, and noble, who is most
rich in gold, and Canowes, or hath most kindred, or allies, and he that is most renowned for
the famous and worthie acts of his Auncesters, or his owne. If any doe iniurie to another,
lette him take heede to himselfe, for they neuer forgiue, but treacherously seeke reuenge.
They are exceeding vaine glorious, and full of boasting, they are much delighted with their
bowes, & poysoned arrows: with the stings of the tayles of Aspes, and the hearbes of cer-
tain Ants, and with poysonous hearbes, and apples bruised, and also with the iuyce distilling
from trees they annoint them, neither are all permitted to temper those medicines, or com-
positions. They haue old women skilfull in that art, which at certaine times they shut vp
against their willes, giuing them matter or stuffe for that seruice, they keepe them in 2. dayes,
wherein they boile the ointment, and hauing finished the same at length they let them out,
if they finde the olde women in health, so that they lie not halfe dede through the force of
the poyson, they grievously punish them & cast away the ointment as vnprofitable (for they
affirme that the force of the same is so great, that through the smel thereof while it is made,

ter this, they re-
ne combates hand
hostilities begin,
to returne home,
more inclined to
man, because hee
knowledge of future
and teachers, as
had conference,
with drunkennesse,
they vse the fume
lie without sense,
ks being emptied,
virgins also are pre-
their legges, and
the end that they
y thinke they ap-
ried women weare
strumettes diuersly
orrowe, and furie,
also make pipes, or
r. They make also
frame them also of
e. By night almost
e of euery towne,
why they put them-
e them vnprovided,
perpetuall warres.
e all their wordes
before the rising of
euery day, and for
with a certayne slymy
body: the Spanish
this manner to the
a crime committed
shore, though they
ee of our Pole: that
and fifty degrees
are the longest with
noble, who is most
is most renowned for
in iurie to another,
usly seeke reuenge.
e delighted with their
d the hearbes of cer-
h the iuyce distilling
e medicines, or com-
e times they shut vp
epe them in 2. dayes,
h they let them out,
through the force of
vnprofitable (for they
reof while it is made,
it

it almost killeth any that make it) That poyson killeth him that is wounded, but not suddely, so that none of our men euer foud any remedy, although they knew how to cure it. Whoso is wounded, liues a miserable and strict life after that, for he must abstaine from many things, which are pleasing, first from Venerie for 2. yeeres at the least, & al his life time from wine, & food, more then the necessitie of nature onely, & from labour: vnles they forbear these things, they die without further delay: the fryars say, they haue seene many wounded, because they destroy one another with blouddie wars, but none deade except one woman (for the women fight together with the men) who being wounded, refuse to vndergo the strict rules of medicine: our men coulde neuer wring out of them, what remedie they might vse for that cure. They exercise their bowes from their childhoode among themselves with little rounde bullets of waxe, or wood, in steede of arrowes. While they trauaile by sea, one singer sitteth in the prow, or head of the Canow, whom the rowers following from point to point, after a pleasing and delightfull maner, answer him with the vniforme motion or stroke of their oares. The women for the most parte passe the time of their adolescencie, & youth honestly enough, but being elder they become vnconstant. After the generall manner of women, whom strange thinges please more then their owne, they loue Christiās better: they run, swim, sing, & exercise all motions as aptly as me: they are easily deliuered, without anie signe, or token of paine, & neither lie down vpō the bed, nor expect anie pleasing delights: they bolster the neckes of their infants with 2. pillows, the one before, and the other behinde, and bind them hard euen till their eies start, for a smooth plaine face pleaseth them. The yong marriageable maydens the parents shut vp two yeeres in secret chambers, so that for that time, they goe not forth into the ayre, for otherwise by reason of the sun, and often vse of the water, they are somewhat brown: & during the time of their shutting vp, they neuer cut their hayre. Manie desire to haue wiues kept with that seuerity, these if they be first wiues of an husband, are honored of § rest, which the noblemen haue at their pleasure, but the commō people liue contēted with one, yet § baser sort for the most parte yeeld obedience to § more mighty. After mariage they beware of adultery, if it happen, the woman is not charged with § crime, but reuēge sought against § adulterer, the wife may be diuorsed. All § next neighbours are invited to the mariage of this maide thus seuerely first shut vp, & the womē guests bring euery one with thē on their shoulders a burden of drink, & dainty meats, more then they are wel able to beare. The mē cary euery one their buddle of straw, & reeds, to build an house for § new married wife, which is erected with beāes set ypight in maner of a warlike pauliō, § house being built, § bridgroom & bride are adorned according to their abilitie, with their accustomed Iewels, & precious stons of diuers colours, and they that want them, borrowe of their neighbours, then the newe married wife sitteth aparte with the virgins, and the bridegroom with the men. After that they compass them both about, singing, the young men going rounde about him, and the maydens about her: and a Barbar commeth, who cutteth the bride-grooms haire from the care, but a womanne polleth the bride, onely before, vnto the eye-browes, but on the hinder part of the heade, shee remayneth bushy, or ouergrowne with long haire: these things being done, and night approaching, they offer and deliuer the bride to her husband by the hande, and he is permitted to vse her at his pleasure. The women also haue their eares boared through, wherāt they hange Iewels, the men dine together, but the women neuer eate with the men. The women loue to haue charge of the house, and exercise themselves in the affayres of the family, but the men apply themselves to folow the warres, hunting, fishing, and sporting pastimes. Heere I passe ouer many things concerning their behauiour, and manner of life, because in my former treatise to the Duke I mentioned, that they were sufficiently, and at large recited, in our Senate, somewhat whereof I feare is heere repeated not necessary, for the 70. yeere of mine age, which beginneth the fourth of the Nones of February, next comming in the yeere 1526. hath so crased my memory, and wiped it out as it were rubbing it with a sponge, that the period scarce falleth from my penne, when, if any demand what I haue done, I plainly confesse I cannot tell, especially because these things come to my handes at diuers times, obserued and noted by diuers men. Three things

No cure for the
wounds made by
the poysoned ar-
rowes.

The Barbarian
women as like
women as ours.

Locking vp of
maydens a good
desire.

Diuorser.
The manner of
solemnizing of
their mariages.

The women eate
not with the men.

The author in-
geniously con-
fesseth the im-
firmities of age.

A discourse of
their practise of
Magicks.

Austerenes of
life.

Their cure of
the sicke.

Another kind of
cure.

things nowe remayne, which being declared, wee may peradventure conclude this worke, vnlesse new matters bee brought vnto vs. Wee will therefore first shewe howe these barbarous, and almost naked men learne, and practise the art of Magicke, then, with what pompe and solemnitie they celebrate their funeralls, and lastly, what they beleeeue, shall become of the deade. They haue skillfull and expert ministers of Magicke, whiche they call Places, to these they rise vp in token of reuerence, and honour them as gods: out of the multitude of children they chuse some of 10. or 12. yeeres old, whom they know by coniecture to be naturally inclined to that seruice, & as we direct our children to the schooles of grammarians, and Rhetoritians, so do they send them to the secret, and solitary places of the woods. For two yeeres space they leade an harde and strict life in cottages, & receiue seuerer institutions, vnder the Pythagorean rule or instruction of their old masters. They abstaine from all kinde of things nourishing bloud, & from the act of generation, or the thought thereof, drinking onely water, and liue without any conuersation with their parents, kindred, or companions. During the light of the sunne, they see not their maisters at all, who goe vnto their schollers by night but sende not for them. They rehearse to the children songs or charmes that rayse deuils, and together with them, they shew them how to cure the sicke: and at the end of two yeeres they returne backe to their fathers houses. And they bring a testimoniall with them of the knowledg they haue gotten from their masters, the Places, as they that haue attained the title of Doctorship doe, from the cities Bononia, Papija, and Perusium, otherwise, none learned in the art of Phisicke dare practise the same. Their neighbouring allies, or friends, if they be sicke, admit them not to cure them, but send for strangers, and those especially of another king. According to the diuers nature, or quality of the disease, they cure them by diuers superstitions, and they are diuersly rewarded. If a light grieffe oppress him & lyeth sicke, taking certaine hearbes in their mouth, they put their lips to the place of the grieffe, & lulling the asleepe, they sucke it out with great violence, and seeme to draw the offensive humor vnto them, then going forth of the house with either cheeke swelling, they spit, & vomit it out againe, & say, the sick patient shall shortly be well, because through that sucking, & lulling asleepe, the disease is forcibly drawne out of his veines: but if the weake partie be oppressed with a more vehement feuer, & cruell paine, or any other kind of sicknes, they cure them after another maner. The Places go vnto the sicke, & cary in their hands a little sticke of a tree known vnto them, no comon prouocatiō to vomit, & cast it into a platter, or dishful of water, that it may be moistened, or wet, he sitteth with him that lyeth sick, & saith, & the diseased partie vexed with a deuill, they & are present beleeeue his report, & his kindred, & familiar friends intreat the Places to bestow his trauaile & paines for remedy therof. Whereupon he goeth to the weake patient, & continually licketh and sucketh al his body after the manner we haue saide, and mumbling vttereth certaine charmes, saying, that by that meanes he bringeth the deuill out of & marrow of the sicke, & draweth him into himselfe, then presently taking & litle moystened sticke, he rubbeth his own palate euen to the Vuula, & after that he thrusteth the litle sticke downe into his throate, and prouoketh vomit, and straineth vntill hee cast vppe whatsoever meate is in the bottome of the stomacke, or almost whatsoever is in it, and with panting spirit, now trembling, another while submisce, and lowe, hee shaketh his whole bodie, and belloweth forth loude cries, and lamentable grones more strongly then a Bull wounded with darts in a race, and thumpeth and beateth his brest, so that the sweate runnes trickling downe for the space of two houres, like a shower of rayne from the roofes of the houses. The two coloured Fryars of the Monasterie say they sawe it, and also wondered thereat, how that Places should not burst in the middle through so violent a motion and agitation. The Places being demanded why hee suffered these tormentes, sayth he must indure the, that through charmes, inforcing the deuilles from the marrow of the sicke, and by sucking, and lulling him a sleepe, he might cast out the diuel drawn vnto himselfe. Now when the Places hath long disquieted himselfe with diuers vehement actions, filthily belching, he casteth vp a certaine thicke lumpe of fleame, in the middle whereof an harde cole-blacke ball lies wrapped, they gather that lothsome excrement together with the hand, and separate the little

clude this worke,
howe these bar-
then, with what
ey beleue, shall
cke, whiche they
m as gods: out of
m they know by
ren to the schooles
nd solitary places
in cottages, & re-
their old masters.
of generation, or
tion with their pa-
not their maisters
ey rehearse to the
y shew them how
their fathers houses,
s from their masters
the cities Bononia,
e practise the same,
cure them, but send
uers nature, or qua-
e diuersly rewarded.
their mouth, they put
out with great vio-
forth of the house
e sick patient shall
e disease is forcibly
ore vehement feuer,
nother maner. The
nown vnto them, no
that it may be mois-
ased partie is vexed
amiliar frieds intreat
pon he goeth to the
anner we haue saide,
e bringeth the deuill
esently taking § hile
ter that he thrusteth
neth vntill hee cast
hatsoever is in it, and
ee shaketh his whole
strongly then a Bull
hat the sweate runnes
om the roofes of the
t, and also wondered
ent a motion and agi-
sayth he must indure
e sicke, and by suck-
himselfe. Now when
filthily belching, he
harde cole-blacke ball
hand, and separate the
little

little blacke ball from the rest of the rume, the Places lying halfe deade with the sicke partie. then they go forth of the house, and with a loud voyce they cast away the litle ball as farre as they can, repeating these words againe and againe, Maitonoro quian, Maitonoro quian which signifieth: goe diuell from our friende, goe diuel from our friende. This being done, hee requireth of the sicke manne the price or recompence of the cure, insomuch that the sicke partie supposeth he shall shortly be well, and so thinke his kinsmen, & familiars. Then plentie of the graine Maizium, and other food is giue him, according to the qualitie of the disease, they likewise giue him tablets of golde to hange at the breast, if the sicke party bee able, and the infirmitie dangerous, or harde to be cured. But this is to bee remembered, the two coloured Fryars of the Monastery, menne of authoritie, and preachers affirmed, that fewe perished who were thus cured, by the Places: what secrete lyeth hidden here, lette such as are prone to sift out other mens matters, iudge as they please, wee present suche thinges as are giuen vs from men of authoritie, and worth. If the disease growe againe, it is cured by drugges, and iuyces of diuers hearbes. They consult with diuels also concerning things to come, whom they binde with their knowne charmes which they vsed in that solitarie place, from their childhoode, questioning him concernyng showers, and drought, the temper of the ayre, and touching diseases, and contagions, peace, warre, and the successe thereof, & also concerning the euent of iournies, the beginninges of thinges, negotiations, gaines, and losses, and of the comming of the Christians vnto them, whom they abhorre, because they possesse their countries, giue them lawes, and compell them to vse newe and strange rites, and customes, and cause them to reiect their accustomed desires. The Places being demanded concerning future thinges, the Fryars affirme they answer perfectly, and directly: whereof be sides many other thinges, they shewed vs two examples beeing assembled in our Senate. The Fryars with greedie and longing expectation desired the comming of the Christians vnto them who were nowe desolate, and forsaken, in the countrey of the Chiribichenses: the Places beeing asked whether the shippes woulde come shortly, they foretolde that they woulde come at an appoynted day, and likewise told vs the number of the mariners, their habitte, and particularly what they brought with them, they say they fayled in nothing. But another thing seemeth more harde to bee credited, they foretell the Eclipse of the Moone three monethes beefore, and more, although they haue neyther letters, nor knowledge of anie Science. At that tyme they faste, and lye sorrowfully, perswaded thereunto, because they thinke some euill is foretolde thereby, they receiue the Eclipse of the Moone with sorrowfull sounds, and songs, especially the women, beat & smite one another, & marriageable maidens draw bloud out of their armes, cutting their veines with the sharpe prickle of a fish, in steede of swordgrasse. Whatsoeuer meate or drinke is founde stored, and prepared in their houses in the time of the Eclipse, they cast it into the Sea, or channells of riuers, abstayning from all delights vntill they see the Moone hath escaped that danger, which hauinge receiued light againe, they giue themselves to sports, & pastimes, and ioyfull songs, & dancinge. It is ridiculous to be hearde, what the Places contrary to their knowledge perswade the innocent people to bee the cause of the Eclipse of the Moone: for they childishly affirme, that the Moone at that time is cruelly wounded by § angry sunne, & that the fury of the same beinge appeased, she reuiue, and receiue her former state, as though the deuill knewe not the cause of the Eclipse, who beinge cast downe from the seate of the starres, brought with him the knowledge of the starres. But when the Places, at the request of any prince or other friend, are to rayse spirits, they enter into a secret solitary place at ten of the clocke at night, and carry with them a fewe stout and vndaunted young men, the Magitian sitteth vpon a lowe settle, while the younge menn stande immoueable, and cryeth out with outrageous woordes makinge plaine thinges obscure, as antiquitie reporteth Sibilla Cumea did, then presently he shaketh the belles which he carryeth in his hande, and after that, with a heauy sounding voyce almost mourninge, hee speaketh to the spirit which hee calleth vp in these wordes, Prorurure, Prorurure, producinge the last sillable, and that he often repeateth, if the deuill beinge called

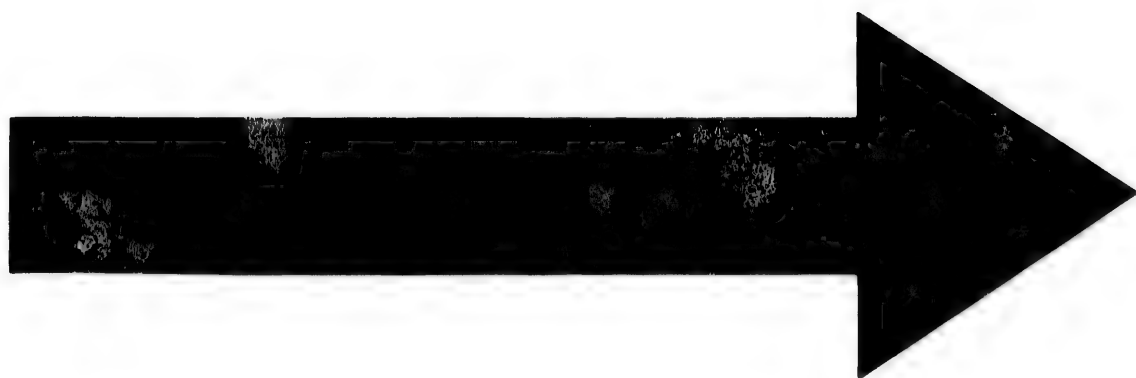
Consulting
with diuels.

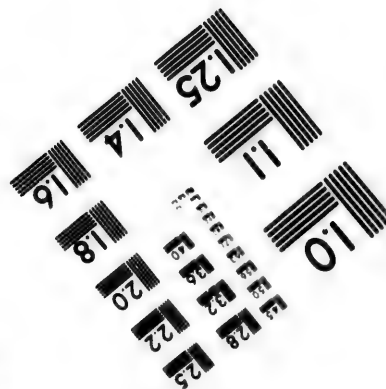
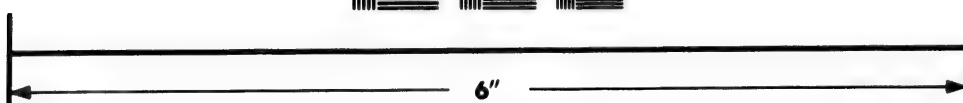
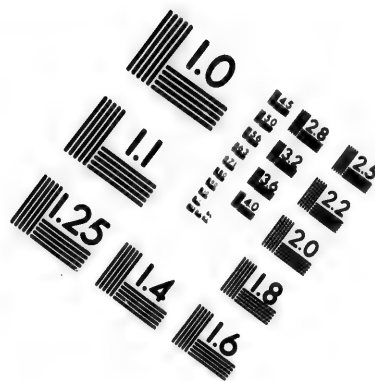
The Places by
the helpe of
the diuell know
things to come.

They foretel the
Eclipse of the
moone without
ordinary learn-
ing. The Eclipse of
the moone they
holde ominous.

A ridiculous
conceit of the
Eclipse.

Rayeing of
spirits & their
maier therein.





Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**



called deferre his comminge, he vexeth & tormenteth himselfe more cruelly, for they are the wordes of one that intreateth him to come, but if hee yet deferr his comminge, he chaungeth his songes and vttereth threateninge charmes, and seemeth with a sterne countenance as it were to commaund him. They execute and put in practise those thinges which we say they had learned in the solitary woods vnder the discipline of their old Masters, now when they perceiue hee is come at length beeing called, preparinge themselves to intertaine the deuill, they oftener rattle, and shake the belles: then, the deuill rayseed, assaileth the Piaces, as if a stronge mann sett vpon a weake child, and this deuillishe guest ouerthroweth the Piaces one the grounde, who wresteth and writheth himselfe, and sheweth signes, and tokens of horrible torment. While hee laboureth and struggeleth thus, one of the boldest and hardiest of the yonge menn admitted goeth vnto him, and propoundeth the commaundements of that kinge, for whose sake the Piaces vnder tooke this waighty busines, then the spirit included within the lippes of the prostrate Magitian maketh aunswere: what questions they vse to demaunde, we haue mentioned beefore. The aunswere beinge receiued the yonge mann demaundeth what reward must bee giuen to the Piaces, and whether the deuill iudge hee should be satisfied with other foode or Mai-zium, the demaundes are surely giuen to the Piaces. When they behold a Comet, euen as a shepheard when the wolfe commeth, vseth to driue him a way with horrible out cryes, so, they thinke a Comet wilbe dissolued with their noyse, & sounde of the drummes. The Monasterians reportinge these, and the like thinges vnto vs perceiued some of our associates to doubt, whether credit were to bee giuen to their wordes, and therefore, that friar Thomas Hortizius who throughly knewe the affaires & maner of behauiour of the Chiribichenses brake forth into this Example saying.

A Comet an
vncleane
guest vnto the.

The ninth Chapter.

The oration of
friar Thomas
Hortizius.

THE happy & blessed friar Peter of Corduba, an holy man by the iudgement of all, and Viceprovinciall of the preaching friars of our order, of the country of Andaluza, whom only the exceeding great desire of increasinge our faith, drew to those desolate, and solitary places, depending onely on the ayde and helpe of God alone, determined to search out the secretts of those Piaces, and desired by his presence to knowe whether such as were vexed with the deuill prophesied, & could giue aunsweres after the manner of the Delphick Apollo. That reuerent father worthy admiration, girdeth his preistly robe about him, bringeth holy water in his right hande to sprinkle the sicke party therewith, & in his left hand carried the Crosse of Christ: and standinge neere the sicke spoake these wordes: if thou be the deuill, that thus vexest this man, I adiure thee by the vertue of this instrument well known vnto thee (and stretcheth out the crosse) that thou presume not to come forth thence without our leaue, before thou first answere to my demâdes. After that, this holy father affirmeth, that he spake many things in Latine, and asked some questions in the Spanish tongue whereunto he sayth the sicke party made particular aunswere, yet neither in Latine, nor Spanish, but in the language wherein the Piaces are instructed, differinge nothinge in sense. This good friar, besides the rest, added one thinge: behold saith hee whether doe the soules of the Chiribichenses goe, after they depart out of this bodily prison? We drawe them (saith he) and violently carry them away to the burninge, and eternall flames, that together with vs, they may suffer punishment of their filthy misdeedes: and these things were done in the presence of many Chiribichenses by the commaundement of the fryar. Notwithstanding this report diuulged throughout the whole cöütry, nothing discouraged the Chiribichenses at all from their old euill beehauiour and manners, but that they followed and executed their appetitie, and desires after the same maner they were woont, as friar Thomas cöplaineth. This beinge done the good friar of Corduba turninge to the Piaces lying sicke, saith, thou vncleane spirit depart from this man. That word beinge spoaken, the Piaces suddenly arose, but so amased, that he stode longe estranged from himselfe, scarce standinge on his feete, who, as soone as he had liberty of speach, begann to curse, and greecuously to complaine of his departed

The friar con-
iures the deuill.

The answere of
the deuill.

A deuill cast
out.

guest,

ruelly, for they are
r his comminge, he
with a sterne coun-
tractise those thinges
discipline of their old
l, preparinge them-
es: then, the deuill
ake child, and this
h and writheth him-
hee labourer and
admitted goeth vnto
ake the Piaces vnder
of the prostrate Magi-
e mentioned beefore.
ard must bee giuen
other foode or Mai-
ld a Comet, euen as
horrible out cryes,
the drummes. The
ome of our associates
re, that friar Thomas
of the Chiribichenses

the iudgement of all,
country of Andaluzia,
drew to those deso-
d alone, determined
presence to knowe
giue aunsweres after
admiration, girdeth
to sprinkle the sick
standinge neere the
his man, I adiure thee
h out the crosse) that
ou first answere to my
things in Latine, and
the sickie party made
language wherein the
friar, besides the rest,
ribichenses goe, after
d violently carry them
they may suffer punish-
the presence of many
ing this report diuulged
as all from their old
their appetitie, and de-
meth. This beinge done
u vncleane spirit depart
se, but so amased, that
feete, who, as soone as
aplaine of his departed
guest,

guest, which so longe time afflicted his body. Garsias Loaisa also one of the two coloured preaching friars, as he affirmeth, whom your Holines hath aduanced to the heighth of his order vnder a Cardinall, now Confessor vnto Caesar, and Oximensian Prælate, cheefe of our Indian Senate, saith, that Cordubensian friar, is worthy of all commendation, & that he speaketh truth. And this thinge seemeth not strange in my iudgement, seeinge our lawe permiteth vs to confesse, that many haue bin vexed with deuilla, and Christ himselfe is often sayd to haue cast vncleane spirits out of men. These Piaces also inioy the society of banquetinges with others, dancings, & other light pastimes, yet are they separated from the people for their grauity. Nor doe these Magitians theselues vnderstand the sense of their charmes, as it falleth out with our cōtry men: although the vulgar tongue be next vnto f Latine, yet few f are present at f sacred ceremonies of religiō perceiue what f priests singe, yea and amonge f priests theselues through f careles negligence of the Prælates there are not a few, that contented only with the pronouncinge of the woordes, not perceiuing the matter, dare presume to say diuine seruice. Now after what manner, they celebrate their funerals, wil not be vnfit to be hearde. The bodies of such as dye, especially of the nobility, they stretch out beinge layd vpon hurdels, or grates, partly of reede, and kindlinge a soft fire of certaine herbes, they drye them, and all the moysture beeing distilled by droppes, they afterwards preserue them and hange them vp in secret roomes for household godds. Other countryes also of this supposed Continent haue that custome whereof I thinke I spoake in my former Decades, to Pope Leo your Holines his cousen german. But such bodies as are put forth vndried, are buried in a trench digged at home with lamentation and teares. The yeare of their first funerals beinge past, the next neighboringe friendes are assembled, and such a multitude (as agreed with the state of the deade) come together, and euery one of them that are inuited cometh accompanied with meates, and drinckes, or bringeth slaues laden therewith, and at the first twilight of the night, the seruantes finde the graue, take vp the bones, and with loude voyces, and loose haire, lament and weepe together, and takinge their feete in their handes, and puttinge their head betwene their legges, they contract themselves into a round compasse, and then they vtter horrible howlings, stretchinge out their loose feete in a rage, with their faces, and armes, erected to the heauens. And whatsoever teares fall from their eyes, or aniuell distilleth from their nostrills they leaue it vnwiped, filthy to behold: and the more beastly they become, the more perfectly they thinke they haue performed their duty: they burne the bones, keepinge the hinder part of the heade, and this, the noblest and best of the womenn bringeth home with her to bee kept for a saccred relique, then, such as were invited, returne home. Now let vs speake what they thinke concerning the soule. They confesse the soule to be immortall, which hauinge put of the bodily cloathing they beleue, it goeth to the woodes of the mountaines, & that it liueth perpetually there in caues, nor doe they exempt it frō eating, & drinking, but f it shuld be fed there. The answering voyces heard frō caues & hollow holes, which f Latines call Echo, they suppose to bee the soules wandering through those places. They knewe them honour the Crosse although lying somewhat oblique, and in another place compassed about with lynes, they putt it vppon suche as are newe borne, supposing the Diuels flie from that instrument, if any fearefull apparition bee seene at any time by night, they set vp the crosse, & say that the place is censured by that remedy. And being demanded whence they learned this, & the speeches which they vnderstande not, they answere that those rites and customes came by tradition from the elders, to the yonger. Let the Chiribichensian affaires excuse mee, though I denie them the last place promised vnto them in this heape of thinges, for I sayde, they should conclude this worke, except some newe thinges arose, it is therefore more meete that those wortheie fleetes which often cutte the Ocean, should driue away the last troope of so great and infinite varietie of matter, and nowe drawe backe my wearie hand from writing. For while I was employed in my former treatise to the Duke, and in the thinges mentioned to your Holinesse in this booke, many occurrents came which partly I reported, & partly occasions offered, compelled to bee reserued vntill this tyme, because also I haue no libertie, for other buisinesse, euerie day to apply my selfe to set downe in writing the successe of the affaires

So blinde is
your popish su-
perstition.

The manner of
of their foolish
funerals.

Reliquie.

Their receipt
of Echo.

He that taught
the papistes to
adore the image
of the crosse
might teach
these miscreants
this ceremony.

24. Ships departed from Barrameda to goe to Hispaniola.

Reports from Iohannes Mendegurensis.

The arrivall of two ships from Cortes and Noua Hispania at the Cassiterides & their successe.

A flecte of sixe ships sent out from Cesar to meeete with the pirates.

The author sheweth to herce the Popes blessing.

of India: sometimes a whole month passeth my handes without anie intelligence, and therefore when I haue leasure all thinges are written in hast, and almost confusedly, nor can order be obserued in them, because they fall out disordered: but let vs come to the flectes. Of 4. ships sent from Hispaniola the former yeere, one came hither, from whose mariners, and the Senate remaining there, those things were related, and written vnto vs, which are declared concerning Garaius, Egidius Gonsalus, Christopherus Olitus, Petrus Arias, and Fernandus Cortes. The fifth of the Nones of May, in this yeere 1525. another flecte of twentie foure shippes departed from Barrameda the mouth of Betis, to goe first to Hispaniola, where the Senate is, whiche gouerneth, and directeth all matters of the Ocean, and from thence presently to disperse themselues to diuerse Prouinces of that newe worlde. In one of those shippes my housholde seruant Iohannes Mendegurensis (a manne well knowne to the Cusentine, & Vianesian Archbishops somtimes legats here) was caried, to looke vnto the affaires of my Paradisian Iamaica. From him, I haue receiued letters, from Gomera, one of the fortunate Ilandes, where all that are to passe the Ocean, arriue to take in fresh water. Hee writeth, that he performed his voyage with prosperous successe in tenne dayes space, and manie swifter ships might haue done it in shorter time, but he was faine to slacke his sayles to expect his slowe consorts, least lagging behinde they shoulde light into the mouth of the French Pirates, who stayd long houerling for them vnder sayle: the fourth day after, he sayth, they woulde set sayle to Sea, then beeing secure from the feare of Pirates, they will hoysse all their sayles, and spreade them at their pleasure: and we pray God they may successfully performe the voyage they haue happily begunne. I doe not well remember whether I haue said that two shippes from Fernandus Cortes, and Noua Hispania (the furthest of countries knowne to vs) arriued at the Cassiterides, Ilandes of the Portugallia dominion called Azores, but whether I so saide, or not, it little skilleth. I must now declare, how it came to passe, that they fell not into the handes of those greedie Pyrates, who houerling vndersayle waited long for them, and how they escaped, or what they bring. One of them beeing vnladen, determined to try her fortune, and by Goddes helpe, light not among the pyrates, but escaped safe. The Captaines of the ships deliuered certaine messages to Cesar, and to vs by Lupus Samanecus brought vp by me from a little one, who went three yeeres since from hence with my good leaue, with Albornazius the kings Secretary, vnder the name of the Kings Auditor. Vnderstanding these things, a flecte of sixe shippes was presently prouided, whereof foure were of the burden of two hundred tunnes, and two Carauelles to accompanye them very well prepared for Sea fight, if they meeete with the Pirates: the King of Portugall also lent vs foure other verie readie shippes, well furnished with munition, and all kinde of ordinance, so they departed the seuenth of the Ides of Iune, tooke in their lading which they had left there, and returned about the ende of Iulie to the cittie of Siuill, where they gaue thanks to God, from whome wee daily expect the chiefe Commanders. What we shal draw from them, we will sometime hereafter giue your Holinesse a tast thereof, if wee vnderstand these thinges please you, by offeringe vs a dish of dainty meates, wherewith your Holinesse doth yeerely fatte more then twenty thousand Idle persons, that they may more liberally inioy the prerogatiues of securitie, and ease. I presumed to speake the like to Cesar, when he gaue me the Abbey of Iamaica: for I deliuered my minde vnto him in these wordes. Most mighty Cesar, what I haue bin to your mothers ancesters and both your parents for these 37. yeeres wherein I haue remained in Spaine, and how profitable I haue bin to your imperiall maiesty, so often as occasion is offered, your maiesty confessest, in word & honor giuen me: but for testimoy of the same that I may perswade my countrymen thereof, the Embassadors of Millaine, Venice, Florence, Genua, Ferrara, & Mantua, I want some outward argument of this loue, in regard of honor, whose hayte no man shall euer bee found who hath reiected it: euery one (as the olde prouerbe saith) commendeth fayres according to the qualitie of $\text{\pounds}$ gaine. Surely after I receiued that gracious & fauorable parchment Bull from your Holinesse may particular poyntes, & clauses of the letters of the most reuerent Datarius written to the Legate Baltasar, were acceptable vnto me, wherein he testifieth your Holinesse his loue is not meane towardes me, and courteously promiseth he will be my

Aduocate

gence, and there-
 refusedly, nor can
 me to the fleets.
 whose mariners,
 vs, which are de-
 as, and Fernandus
 te of twentie foure
 paniola, where the
 in thence presently
 f those shippes my
 the Cusentine, &
 the affaires of my
 the of the fortunate
 ster. Hee writeth,
 space, and manie
 lacke his sayles to
 the mouth of the
 day after, he sayth,
 es, they will hoysa
 ber may successfully
 ber whether I haue
 furthest of countries
 inion called Azores,
 w it came to passe,
 vnder sayle waited
 m beeing vnladen,
 g the pyrates, but
 Cæsar, and to vs by
 yeeres since from
 name of the Kinges
 presently prouided,
 elles to accompanie
 the King of Portugall
 on, and all kinde of
 r lading which they
 ll, where they gaue
 What we shal draw
 of, if wee vnderstand
 rewith your Holines
 may more liberally
 like to Cæsar, when
 m in these wordes.
 both your parents for
 e I haue bin to your
 h, in word & honor
 nrymen thereof, the
 ua, I want some out-
 shall euer bee found
 leth fayres according
 ble parchment Bull
 of the most reuerent
 ein he testifieth your
 eseth he will be my
 Aduocate

Aduocate with your Holinesse. But we thinke y a tree well furnished with leaues is not so much to bee esteemed, which when it may bee beneficiall, desireth rather to bee like an Elme, or a Plane tree. I haue digressed to farr from the purpose, let vs therefore returne to the ships that are brought hether. The shippes sent from Cortes were onely two, and those surely very lile, they ascribe the smale store of treasure to the scarcity and want of shippes of those countryes, for they bring onely 70. thousand Pensa of gold to Cæsar, I haue often sayde that Pensum exceedeth the Spanish Ducat of gold a fourth part, yet I thinke this will nothing exceede it, because the gold is not pure. They bringe also a Culucringe a warlike peece of ordinance, (whereof I haue often spoken) made almost all of gold, but Lupus Samanecus who is now with me, being conueyed in the first shipp which tryed her fortune, saith, it was not of gold, and that it weighed three and twenty Quintales after the Spanish worde (euere Quintall containeth 4. Rubi of poundes of 6. Ounces to the pounde). They also bringe precious stones and diuers, and sundry sortes of rich ornaments, & in the first shippe Lupus Samanecus brought a Tyger of wonderfull beauty, but it was not brought vnto vs. Concerninge Cortes, and his crafty & subtill deuises in seducinge, and deceiuing, farr differinge from y relation of many, and the apparant arguments, that he hath heapes of gold, precious stones, and siluer, piled vp in store, such as haue neuer bin heard of, sent in by burdens, by the slaues of the Kinges, through the posterne gate of his huge court, and that by stealth in the night, without the priuite of the Magistrates, and of the cities, and their priuiledged townes, and innumerable rich villages, their gold and siluer mines, and the number and largenes of the prouince, and many things besides, wee reserue them till another time. Certaine remedies are secretly thought vpon, but it were an haynous matter for me to mutter any other thing for the present, vntill this webb, which we now begin, be thoroughly wouen to an ende: let these things be reserued for their place & let vs now speake a little concerninge the other fleets. In that booke which Antonius Tamaronus a batcheler of art, and my Solliciter deliuered to your Holines (beginninge, Before that) mention is made at large concerninge a flete which was to bee sent to the llandes of Maluchas ingendringe spices, lyinge vnder the Æquinoctiall line, or next vnto it, where, in a controuersie with the king of Portugall in the city of Pax Iulia, commonly called Badaioz, wee sayd, the Portugals were convicted, but woulde not confesse it, the reasons of which matter are there alledged, and set downe: that flet commanded to be stayed (the Pacensian assembly being dissolved) was finished in the Cantabrian roade of Bilbo, and about y Calendes of Iune of this present yeere 1525. was then brought to the hauen of Cluua in Gallæcia, the safest harbor of all, and capable of all sorts of ships which the Seas containe. And being furnished with all things necessary both for a long voyage, & for warr, if necessity of fight gaue occasion, they stayd at an anchor certaine dayes expectinge a fauorable winde. This flete consisteth of 7. shippes, whereof 4. are of the burden of 180. tunnes, and 200. two Carauels also accompanied them. I vse the familiar wordes that I may be vnderstood, & the seuenth is a lile one, which the Spaniard calleth a Patac, they carry also another of the same sort in seuerall peecees, that as soone as they come to the desired hauen, they may ioine her together, that is to say to the lland of Tidore one of the Maluchas (where in compassing the worlde we sayde in our Decade to Adrian, that one of the two shippes that were left remained, with fiftie menne) and with those two drawing lile water, they might sound, and search the llandes, vnder, on this side, and beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne. This flete staying, the king of Portugall cousin germane vnto Cæsar, and his sisters sonne, neuer ceased vehemently to vrge, and earnestly intreate, that Cæsar woulde not consent to indammage him so much. But Cæsar woulde neuer yeeld to the request of his cousin germane the King, least hee shoulde make the Castellanes (being the strength of his Empire, & all his kingdomes) to bee displeased with him. And therefore at length contrarie to the opinion, and desire of the Portugalles, at the first dawning of the day, before the feast of S. Iames the patron of the Spaniardes, the prosperous Easterne windes blowing from the lande, the flete sette sayle. At the weighing of their anchors they sounded the trumpettes, and drummes, and discharged the great ordinance, as if heauen

70. Thousand
 pensa of gold
 sent from Cortes
 to Cæsar.

The golden
 culucringe ar-
 rived at last.

A Tyger of a
 wonderful beuty
 brought into
 Spaine.
 Cortes his subtil
 deuises com to
 light.

A flete of 7.
 ships & 2. Ca-
 ravelles prepared
 to goe to y^e
 Maluccas.

The King of
 Portugall in
 vaine intreats
 the stay of the
 flete.

The flete sets
 sayle.

Fryar Garsias Loaisa the Commander of the fleete does homage.

Iohannes Sebastianus de Cano Vice-admirall.

Petrus Vera captain of the third.

Don Rodericus of the fourth.

Don Georgius Mauricus captain of the fifth.

Hozes a Cordubensian captain of the sixth.

Why the traffike of Spices is exercised in the Clunian haven and not in Siuill.

A dangerous Sea betwene the haven of Galisia and the mouth of Betis.

The lurking places of pirates.

The course of the fleete.

Two other fleetes in the riuer Betis prepared for Hispaniola.

The frequent traffike to the Indies in this Authors tyme is notable.

hadde seemed to haue false, & the mountaynes trembled for ioy: yet the euenig before, the Commander of the fleete Fryar Garsias Loaisa the crosse-bearer of S. Iohn, foure yeeres since sent Embassador from Cæsar to the great Emperor of the Turks, did homage in the hands of Count Fernando De Andrada a Prince of Galisia (who sometimes ouerthrowe Aubegnius Captayne of the French in Calabria) and in the hands of the Viceroy himselfe of the kingdome of Galisia, the rest of the Captaines did homage to the chiefe Commander, and the soldiers, and officers to the Captaynes: homage being doone on both sides with solemne pompe, hee first receiued the kings sacred ensigne with great applause: so these stayed, and they departed, the prosperous East winds blowing in the pup, or sterne. They promise from the fortunate Ilandes, called the Canaries, where their way lieth to the South, to write backe to our Senate whereon they depende, for Cæsar so commaunded. The Admirall of the fleete, the Admirall himselfe commandeth: the Vice-Admirall, Iohannes Sebastianus de Cano, who brought the ship called the Victory laden with Cloues, and left her companion that remained, behinde, because she was very much bruised, and shaken, Petrus Vera goeth Captaine of the thirde ship, of the 4. Don Rodericus de Alcutna nobly descended, both these, haue bin Admiralles of many warlike fleetes, and famous for their worthie attempts, both nobly borne, of the fift Don Georgius Mauricus, brother of the Duke of Naiara, who being yonger, and of lesse experience, although more nobly borne, yet with a contented minde indured any inferior place, for he thought it good reason to yeelde to them that hadde better experience. A certayne Cordubensian noblemanne surnamed Hozes commaundeth the sixt shippe, and another noble gentlemanne commandeth the last small Patac. One other thing of no small moment remaineth (worth the hearing) before we leaue this fleete. Wee are therefore to declare what cause moued Cæsar, and vs his Senate, that this aromaticall negotiation or marchandise shoulde bee exercised in the Clunian haven of Galisia, to the great discontentment and griefe of that famous citie of Siuill, where, all the affayres of India haue hitherto beene doone. That haven of Galisia (besides the securitie of the shippes which are to bee harbored there) is situate on that side of Spaine, whiche by a shorte and direct course lyeth towarde the greater Britaine; and is next to the boundes of France, and is more fitte for the Northerne marchants that seeke Spices. Nor are two fearefull dangers to Sea-faring menne, to bee omitted heere, which by this inuention are auoyded. That Ocean sea, whiche lyeth in the middle betweene this haven, and the mouth of Betis, through which they goe to Siuill, is so tempestuous, that small stormes or gustes of the Westerne winde, eyther swallowe, or tossing the shippes taken on that coast of the Promontory of Cape Sacer, or neere vnto it, dash them agaynst the fretted, and craggie clifles, more cruelly, then is reported of the rockes of deuouring Sylla, and the gulfes of Charibdis. The other danger is, in the sallies, and assaults of Pyrates: on those coastes betweene the rough Mountaynes lye manie desert valleyes, whiche suffer no resorte of people by reason of their barrennesse, here are the lurking places of Pyrates, who receiuing notice by their owne men from the high watch towers on the top of the Mountaynes, assaile the shippes as they passe by: and for these causes it was decreede, that that negotiation or traffike should bee exercised there. That fleete is to goe the same way that Fernandus Magaglianus the Portugall did, passing along all that coast, whiche the Philosophers called Torrida Zona, who went to the Antarticke beyonde the lyne of Capricorne, whiche way another fleete is to goe vnder the conduct of Sebastian Cabot an Italian, of both which, I haue spoken in the compassing of the world to Pope Adrian, and in the precedent Decade to the Duke. Two other fleetes also are prepared in the channell of the riuer Betis to goe to Hispaniola, and the rest of the Ilandes, of S. Iohn, to Cuba, called Fernandina, & my Priory of Iamaica, by a new name called the Island of S. Iames, & from thence they shalbe diuided to the supposed Continent, & new Spaine conquered by Fernando Cortes, of the Iargnes, and riches whereof, we promised a litle before, that we would sometimes speake. So now the concourse of fleets sloting vpon the waues of the Ocean, going and returning to the new worlds are no lesse, then the resorte of marchants from the borders of Italy to the Lugdunensian faires, or from France, and Germany, to the Belgicke Anuerpians. I could wish (most holy father) from

the evening before, John, foure yeeres old homage in the times ouerthrowe the Viceroy himselfe chiefe Commander, on both sides with applause: so these or sterne. They lieth to the South, ded. The Admirall ones Sebastianus de left her companion Petrus Vera goeth y descended, both y worthe attempts, ke of Naiara, who t with a contented to them that hadde lozes commaundeth small Patac. One we leaue this fleete, that this aromaticall n of Galisia, to the the affayres of India tie of the shippes the by a shorte andes of France, and vo fearefull dangers are auoyded. That uth of Betis, through tes of the Westerne the Promontory of raggie cliffes, more s of Charibdis. The etweene the rough le by reason of their otice by their owne the shippes as they r trafficke should bee Magaglianus the Por d Torrida Zona, who other fleete is to goe spoken in the com- e Duke. Two other paniola, and the rest of Iamaica, by a new led to the supposed largnes, and riches o now the concourse the new worlds are Lugdunensian faires, sh (most holy father) from

from some secret chinke of your priuy chamber to behold, what ioy will then breake forth from your sacred brest into your countenance the first proclaimer of secrets, when your Holinesse shall reade such, and so great thinges of new worlds hitherto vnknowne, spiritually giuen vnto the Church of Christ his Spouse, as it were nuptiall Jewels, & that nature through the diuine goodnes is not satisfied in giuing liberally: but if any other countreyes are yet vnknown, they prepare theselues to be subiected to your Holines, & Cæsars command. Now, let your Holines bee contented with this first tast of a feast, to whom I wish many happie yeers. From the city of Toledo the Carpentane, and Cæsars Court, the 13. of the Calendes of Nouember in the yeere 1525.

The tenth Chapter.

THIS our pregnat Ocean, houely sendeth forth new broods, and this noble, & renowned messenger from your Holines, Baltasar Castillion, a man famous for al vertues, & graces, when he saw these 2. Decads to the Duke, & Pope bou'd vp together, earnestly treated, that I would send them by him vnto your Holines, I said, I was well contented: but behold, he fell grievously sicke, so that he could not as he desired, followe his affaires, although many thinges dayly came to light, and therefore at that time he sent no messenger away, to whom hee could commit the great and weightie actions of your Holines, together with our books, least they might haue perished. Through this delay it commeth to passe, that we may adde a few thinges, by way of aduantage, or ouerplus. We haue had 3. ships from the countreyes of the new worlde, one called a Carauell from new Spaine subiect to the Government of Fernandus Cortes oftē named: what she brought, are miserable thinges to be spoken, and those not a few, but we must begin with 5 letters in those 2. ships, mentioned before, to the intent these thinges, & the rest may more plainly be vnderstood. There are 2. sorts of letters, one commo, the other particular: in the great common volume, subscribed with the hands of Cortes, and the magistrates, the Auditor, Treasurer, & Factor, there is a large discourse concerning the nature of the countreyes, of those thinges which are sent to Cæsar, of the scarcitie of shippes in those coasts (in excuse that they bring but small sums of gold, & Jewels) and of their great costs, & charges, in which narration Cortes saith he is poore, and greatly indebted: of the ships made by him on the South shore, wherewith he sayd he would attempt the neerest part to the Equinoctiall line scarce 12. degrees of the pole, because he vnderstood by the people of those shores, 5 the llads ingedring Spices, gold, & precious stons were bordering neere vnto the: 5 discourse is long, & the complaints grievous, for 5 he heard 5 ships were burnt with al their furniture, & prouisiō, because he could not prosecute the attēpt he had vnderaken by reason of the fury of the aduersaries, yet promiset, 5 he will recouer, and recompense this losse, so the disturbers cease: of diuers, and many mines of gold, & siluer lately discovered, & concerning those thinges which want new remedies, & of 63. thousand Pensa of gold taken out of 5 Treasury, contrary to 5 assent of the magistrates, vnder the shew & colour of a lone, for the leauying of a new army, and of Captaines appointed to goe seuerall wayes, to subdue diuers countreyes, & of many thinges besides. But particular, and secret letters are sent only from the Auditor Albornozius 5 kings Secretary vnder vnknown characters, called vsually ciphers, assigned to Albornozius at his departure because at that time wee were suspitious of 5 mind of Cortes. These were framed against 5 subtile craft, greedy couetousnes, & almost apparēt tyranny of Cortes, but whether truly, or (as it oftē falleth out) to procure fauour, time will heereafter discover, for certaine graue men are chosen to be sent to inquire, of these thinges, now when these hidden thinges shall be manifest, they shalbe signified to your Holinesse, but let them passe, & let vs returne to the discourse of Cortes. Vpon the disobediēce of Christopherus Olitus of whom large mention is made before, Cortes was in such a rage, that he seemed not to desire life, if Olitus were not punished, for he often shewed apparant tokens of the perturbation of his minde, by the vehement swelling of 5 veines of his throate & nostrils through extreame anger, nor did hee abstaine from wordes signifying the same. Olitus was now distant from him 500. leagues and more vnto the East, from the salt lake of Tenustitan, and he was to goe vnto him by wayes which

Vultus spec-
trum animi.

Three shippes
arrayed where
of one from
Cortes.

The purport of
2. letters.

Secret letters
from Alborno-
zius the Audi-
tor.

He returneth to
Cortes highly in-
censed with the
disobediēce of
Christopherus
Olitus.

Olitus seated in
the Bay Figure
Tab.

Cortes leuieth
forces against
Olitus.

Cortes contrary
to his oath
goeth against
Olitus.
The power &
terror of Cortes
in his march.

Petrus Aluaradus
sent to the
South coastes.
Godolius tow-
wards the
North to seeke
Olitus.

Franciscus de
las Casas sent
by sea to take
Olitus.

A one of the
presentes sent
therewith from
Cortes and
others.

The 3. ship.

which had no passage in many places. This Olitus had seated him selfe in the Bay called Figueras, long since found, vpon hope of discovering the straight so much desired, where three other Captaines also arriuing consumed one another with mutuall conflicts, of whose unhappy actions wee shall heereafter speake, but let vs not leaue Cortes. Cortes leuieth forces, the kings magistrats seeing that assaile him first with mild and quiet speeches, exhorting & admonishing him, not to vndertake such a matter wherein many dangers offer theselues, seeing he was to fight with our owne menn, & that he would not be cause of so great a slaughter of Christians, nor put the principall poynt of the whole matter in so great a danger: for (they sayd) they sawe present destruction of all that remained, if he left the country of Tenustitan (the head of the kingdomes) destitute of soldiers, being but lately subdued, and yet mourning & lamenting for the slaughter of their auncient kinges, and destruction of their household gods, kindred, and friends. And if he himselfe, which is more, should depart, whose name they confessed was fearefull to all those nations behold what followes, if any misfortune happen (which God forbid) would not all come to ruine? They saye, Caesar would provide for the chastisement of Olitus, & that Olitus should suffer punishment for his Error. These, and many things besides, they alledged, but all in vaine: and after that, in Caesars name and their owne they manifestly denounce againe, he for sake his purpose. The he promised with an oath he would not goe vnto Olitus, but to subdue certaine rebellious kinges & not farr off: yet he performeth not promise, but goeth a long journey to the East, where (incensed with fury against Olitus) in some places he light vpon huge lakes on the sea coast, maryshes of the valleyes in another place, and rough mountaynes elsewhere, whether soeuer he went, he commandeth bridges to be built by the handes of the inhabitantes, maryshes to be made drie, and mountaines ouerthrown: none durst refuse to execute his commande, for he destroyed all with fire, & swordes, that went about to doe the contrary, so whatsoever impediments hee mett with, were made passable, so great a terror was he to all the inhabitants, after the conquering of so great a king as Mutezuma was, and the taking of that Empire, that they thought this man coulede overthrow heauen, if he had so determined. Hee caried with him store of munition, and horses, an vnknowne kind of fight to those nations: and the bordering neighbours (sometmes enemies) gaue him ayde, through whose dominions and kingdomes hee marched. On the other part, he sent Petrus Aluaradus before, towardes the South coast, and towardes the North one Godolius, captaines by lande, from whom Cortes receiued letters, and we also, conceiuing great, and large new countries, and warlike people, and cities in some places standing vpon lakes, and montanous, and champion countries in another: of which things, the father of Cortes who is with vs, hath deliuered the volume sent from him, to the Printers to bee published in his country language, and it wandereth from stall to stall in the streetes. But by sea, with three great shippes and many noble men, hee sent another Captaine named Franciscus de las Casas, whom I mentioned a little before, & of whom I shal speake more hereafter, although in a præposterous order, the successe of thinges so requiring. To this sea Captaine hee gaue in charge, that if it were possible, he shoulde take Olitus, as he had him whereof we spake in his place. These two ships left the affaires of Tenustitan in this state, now being long since aryued with seuentie thousande Pensa of golde, and two Tygers, wherof one, through the shaking, and working of the ship, died at Siuill, the other we haue here made tame, and gentle, but a yong whelpe. The Culuering also much blown abroad through the mouths of men may here commonly be seen, which in truth hath not so much gold in it, as fame reported, yet it is worth the beholding. And all such as accompanied that most reuerent Legate of your Holines, haue scene the ornaments, & warlike instruments framed and fashioned with much gold, and precious stones, and Iewelles composed with wonderfull art, presents partly directed from Cortes, and partly from other Gouvernors of those countries: all which they wil hereafter by word of mouth recoit vnto your Holines. Concerning the relation of the 2. ships I haue sufficiently spoken. Now let vs come to the Carauell, which onely of her 7. consorts escaped by flight out of the hauen of Medellinum, the Scale of New Spaine. But let vs declare why Cortes determined to call that place of harbour

in the Bay called
desired, where
of whose vn-
leuieth forces,
exhorting &
offer theselues,
of so great a
in so great a
ed, if he left the
being but lately
cient kinges, and
himselfe, which is
ose natiōs behold
ll come to ruine?
Olitus should suffer
l, but all in vaine:
againē, & he for-
nto Olitus, but to
not promise, but
us) in some places
another place, and
bridges to be built
taines ouerthrow:
re, & swordes, that
h, were made passa-
of so great a king
is man coulede ouer-
munition, and horses,
ighbours (somtimes
e marched. On the
st, and towarde the
letters, and we also,
ties in some places
er: of which things,
him, to the Printers
o stall in the streetes.
ther Capitaine named
I shal speake more
requiring. To this
ke Olitus, as he had
of Tenustitan in this
olde, and two Tygers,
ll, the other we haue
much blown abroad
uth hath not so much
such as accompanied
s, & warlike instru-
Iewelless composed
m other Gouvernors of
t vnto your Holines-
w let vs come to the
haue of Medellinum,
to call that place of
harbour

harbour by this name. Medellinum is a famous towne in Castele, where Cortes was borne, hauing therefore chosen it to be the Mart towne of all those countries, hereupon hee wil haue that place called Medellinum by the name of the towne where he was borne, nor is it gainsayd. He also gaue the name to New Spaine, and desired to haue it confirmed by Cæsar. In that haue there were 7. marchants ships, shortly ready to returne into Spaine, hauing vnladen their marchādises. In the mean time, there arose a sedition between the kings officers, who thought it better that those sums of gold and precious stones gathered together should be sent with those ships vnto Cæsar (whose necessitie by reason of imminent wars was great) such an occasion of ships offering it selfe, as seldome happeneth. For two hundred thousand Pensa of gold, had bin long since promised vnto Cæsar by Iohannes Ribera, Cortes his Secretary, so that ships might be so set fit to carry them. The rest of their fellow officers, & associates withstoode this opinion, vrging, they were to expect Cortes their Gouvernour, & woulde suffer no innouation in his absence, so that in the ende they came to armes. By chaunce Franciscus de las Casas Cortes his sea Capitaine, sodainly came vnlodged for, who being proud that Olitus was slaine, took part with the Cortesians against the Kinges officers, & they say the Auditor Albornozius hauing his horse slaine, was himselfe wounded, and cast in prison. The Conquerers runne to the shore, apprehende the factor of the 7. ships and taking all their sailes, flagges, and yardes a shore, that they could not depart, they vnlade the ships. The maister of this Carauell arriued, much moued & vexed through so great an ouerthrow, hauing gotten some fit occasion returneth to his ship: who also being bereft & spoyled of his sayles, & the rest of the furniture of his ship, attemped an enterprise worthy comēdation. He had cast certaine olde, and halfe torne sayles in a secret place, as past seruice, and vnprofitable, and of the tottered rags of them together with a fewe canes or ells of new cloth, he made a patched sayle of diuers peeces. Then weighing anchor (without saluting them who exercised this tyranny) hee spread his sayles, & by the helpe of the prosperous western windes, was brought hither with a more speedy course, then euer happened to any ship, comming from those furthest partes of the Ocean. The masters of this ship brought neither letters, nor message from any man liuing, yet the speeches of the mariners thereof were so cōposed and well ordered, that credite was giuen to their report. Concerning Cortes, these pilots say it is gathered by coniecture that he was slaine with all his company by the inhabitautes, (through whose dominions hee determined obstinately to traualle) after this manner. He left many captains behind, with commādemēt to follow when they were ready, who following his steps, founde the bridges broken, and all the wayes cut off behind, & a certain wandring rumor went, that the bones of men, and horses were scene among certaine marish weedes of the sea coast, ingendred in the moystened earth through the violent motion of tēpestes, & overflowings, & among the braks, & bushes therabouts. These things this Carauell which fled, reported cōcerning Cortes, & the kings intraged magistrates. Now concerning those 4. Captaines greedily gaping after the searching of the desired straight with breathlesse spirit, these mariners say they heard this. But this matter is a litle further to bee repeated. If your Holinesse remember (most blessed father) after the death of Pope Adrian, that reuerēt manne, Antonius Tamaronus the Lawyer, deliuered your Holinesse a booke in my name, which beginneth (Before that) who wrote vnto me that it pleased you wel: in that discourse, there is speech of a noble man, one Egus Gonsalus Abulensis (commonly called Gilgonzalez de Auila) after what manner he founde a chanell of fresh water so great, that he called it lake the sea of fresh waters, & of the banks thereof renowned for the frequēt habitatiō of people of the great abundance of raine that comes powring down, of the ceremonies, customes, and sacred rites of those nations, of the plentie of golde, and first of the beginning of peace, and quiet trafficke, then of warre, and grievous conflicts with the kinges Nicoragua, and Diriangen, and of his returne to Hispaniola, from whence hauinge procured an army of menn and horses we sayd, hee would goe to the Bay called Figueras, which seemeth to deuide the coasts of the supposed Continent, as the Adriaticke Gulfe diuideth Italy frō Illyricum, & the rest of Græcia, into which Bay he thought

The haue of
Medellinu why
so named.

A sedition
amongst the
king's officers at
Medellinum.

Albornozius
wounded and
cast in prison.

The maister of
the Carauell
escapeth with
his tottered
sayles.

News of Cortes
his expedition
against Olitus.

One of these
Decades.

The Adriatic
gulf.

some

Ticinus, Verbanus, Mincius, Benacus.

The Bay of Figueras why so called.

Ægidius Gonsalus his traualle into the Bay.

Franciscus Fernandez his colony in y^e kingdome of Nicoragua.

Ægid. Gonsalus fights with Franciscus Fernandez. 130000. Pensa of gold taken by Gonsalus from Fernandez.

Gonsalus goeth to Olitus & is taken. A Colony erected by Olitus called the Triumph of the holy Crosse.

Franciscus de las Casas commeth suddely vpon Olitus.

A shipp of Olitus sunke.

Franciscus taken by Olitus.

some navigable river fell, that druncke vp that huge vastity of waters, as y^e river Ticinus sucketh in the lake Verbanus, & Mincius the lake Benacus of which thinges, & examples we haue there sufficiently spokē. But why y^e Bay so much spoken of in the mouthes of men, should be so called, it is not to be omitted. They say, that the name of Figueras was giuen it by the first finders, because vpon that coast they found whole woodes of certaine trees very common with leaues much like vnto figg trees, although vnlike in body, these are solid but figg trees consist of a pithy kinde of wood, or substance, and seeing in the Spanish tongue they call the figg trees Figueras, they call them Figueras by a name somewhat corrupted: of the bodyes, and longer boughes whereof the inhabitants make turned vessels, fit for the ornament of cubbardes and the seruice of tables, y^e is to say, dishes, basons, platters, cuppes, & pottingers & other of the same sort fit for y^e vse of man, very fairly wrought. Ægidius Gonsalus or Gilgōzales hauing traualled by lād through the angle of the Bay to the lake discouered by him, and not findinge where the waters issued forth, in the kingdome of the king Nicoragua, left friend, by him, as hee saith, he founde a Capitaine of Petrus Arias Gouvernour of Golden Casteele, called Franciscus Fernandez, to haue possessed that kingdome, & to haue erected a Colony there but what happened thereon, I wil cōclude in a short Epitome. Behold they first grewe to words, then came to conference, and lastly to handy strokes: Gilgonzalez obiecieth that violence was offered him, complayninge that his discouery was disturbed, and these mariners say they fought thrice, in which sedition eight men were slaine, many wounded and thirty horses perished. So impatient are the Spaniards of society, that whether soeuer they goe, they kill, & destroy one another. These mariners say y^e Ægidius Gonsalus tooke two hundred thousand Pensa of gold (though not very pure) from Franciscus Fernandez. And Petrus Arias y^e Gouvernour (frō whom we haue receiued a great packet of letters from the supposed Continent) greinously cōplayninge of Ægidius Gonsalus, writeth that he had taken an hundred and thirty thousand Pensa from his Capitaine. These Pensa they had gathered amonge the bordering kinges, whether against their will, or willingly by way of barteringe or exchange of our cōuntry cōmodities, it is not our purpose now to dispute: this being but a smale matter, & a greater peece of worke remaineth yet behind. These things thus falling out by the way, through the vnquiet & restlesse disposition of y^e Spaniards, Ægidius Gonsalus cometh to Christopherus Olitus sēt by Cortes, who also had erected a Colony a little further on the same shoare, which he called by the name of the Triumph of the Holy Crosse, (whom Olitus tooke) & he called the place so because after diuers shippwracks, which himselfe reporteth in a long discourse, hauing escaped thether frō the fury of mighty, & boysterous windes, he landed there, on y^e day which the church of Rome solemnisseth for the victory of Herodius the Romane Emperour against y^e Persians. But your Holines shal heare a ridiculous game, or pastime in y^e table of fortune: y^e fourth Capitaine Franciscus de las Casas sent from Cortes against Olitus, came suddely vpon him, Olitus goeth fourth vnto his associate & fellow officer (a little before) vnder the cōmand of Cortes: they fight at Sea, & through y^e violence of y^e great ordināce, Franciscus hauing shott one of y^e ships of Olitus through, sunke her, together with the men, & after betooke him to the mayne Ocean, & Olitus went to the shoare, & landed. That Bay is subiect to māy tempestuous stormes, by reason it is exposed to the furious blastes of y^e North and is straightened, or inclosed for a long space betweene y^e sides of high mountaines, therefore a few dayes after being violently carryed away through y^e fury of the windes, & for the most part hauing lost his men, horses, & shippes, Franciscus was forcibly driuen into the dominiō, & power of Olitus, being a most cruell enemy of Olitus, so Olitus tooke him. Behold two Capitaines of greater worth, then he himselfe who tooke them. Olitus shutt vp his guests at home not well contented, but as a pray for his owne destruction. They both agree to kill their hoste, and seduce the seruants of Olitus least (attemptinge the matter) they should runne to helpe y^e traitor Olitus, who innocēly drew thē into suspitiō of treason. Vpon a night sittinge downe of purpose with their noble host, in steed of a shot, or reckōing for the supper he gaue thē taking the kniues which were there for seruice of y^e table, they set vpon their vnpleasing host (for the seruants after their

as $\S$ ruer Ticinus
en, & examples we
e. mouths of men,
Figueras was giuen
of certaine trees
in body, these are
ing in the Spanish
ame somewhat cor-
ke turned vessells,
ay, dishes, basons,
of man, very fairly
gh the angle of the
aued forth, in the
ounde a Captaine of
e, to haue possessed
ereon, I wil cōclude
ference, and lastly
complayninge that
e, in which sedition
so impatient are the
one another. These
old (though not very
frō whom we haue
sinously cōplayninge
irty thousand Pena
ring kinges, whether
r cōtury cōmodities,
& a greater peece of
through the vnquiet
Christopherus Olitus
ame shoare, which he
ooke) & he called
h in a long discourse,
he landed there, on $\S$
as the Romane Empe-
ame, or pastime in $\S$
Cortes against Olitus,
fellow officer (a little
h $\S$ violēce of $\S$ great
nke her, together with
ent to the shoare, &
on it is exposed to the
space betwene $\S$ sides
arried away through $\S$
& shippes, Franciscus
a most cruell enemy of
orth, then he himselfe
ented, but as a pray for
e the seruants of Olitus
r Olitus, who innocently
urpose with their noble
king the kniues which
(for the seruants after
their

their master had supped, were absent earnestly buisied at their owne supper) and wounde Olitus with māy strokes, yet kill him not: so that Olitus fled, & conueighed himselfe to certaine cottages of the inhabitants, which he knewe. Whereupon proclamation was made by the common cryers that hee shoulde bee slaine, whosoever shuld support, or defend the traytor Olitus, or knowing where he lay hid, woulde not declare it, a reward is proposed to the party that shoulde discover and make it known: by this meanes hee is betrayed by his owne menn, and a libell of treason beinge framed against him, by publique proclamation of the cryer, hee was slaine. This was the ende of Olitus, vnto the which, if I bee not deceiued, the rest of his fellow officers, shalbee brought yer it bee longe. But your Holinesse shall heare another horrible and shamefull act, ridiculous in the playing table of fortune; Franciscus de las Casas another Sea Captaine Olitus being slaine, is sayd forcibly to haue brought his bold companyon Gonsalus, though not comparable in armes, vnto the city of Tenustitan, supposinge it would be an acceptable present vnto Cortes. Behold the madnes of these four Capitaines in the Bay of Figueras, desirous to tast bitter delicacies, who through ambition, and auarice ouerthrew themselues, and many kingdomes, which peaceably would haue obeyed Caesar. There are some who say they saw $\S$ gidius Gonsalus in the power of Franciscus de las Casas, in the city of Tenustitan, others deny it: so that these mutteringe speeches cōcerning Gonsalus are vncertainly reported. After my booke of two Decades concluded, & sowed together, we twice receiued shippes from the Senators of Hispaniola, fower at one time, and seuen at another, but none from Noua Hispania saue only this which escaped by flight: that great packet of letters sent from Petrus Arias Gouverneur of Golden Castele, we read in the Senate: the sense & substance of the principall points whereof are concerning his owne actiōs, wherein many things are spoaken of the hard & difficult labours, & trauailes of his fellow soldiers, & his owne, of the next future departure of the kinges Treasurer of those parts, with a summe of gold whereof he setteth downe no number, of a voyage begunn which being performed, both Seas shalbe traded by an easie passage, and wee may haue the llands vnder the Equinoctiall familiar, because $\S$ distance from $\S$ hauen called Nomen Dei, is 16. leagues only, or litle more, from the Colony of Panama, and that well harboured, six degrees only, and an halfe distant from the $\S$ equinoctiall, where the difference of day, and night, is scarce discerned the whole yeere. Concerninge the prerogatiues of these coasts I haue sufficiently spoakē in my former Decades. In another clause hee accuseth $\S$ gidius Gonsalus for violence offered to his Captaine Franciscus Fernandez, and commendeth him for his modesty, & temperance, but others thinke otherwise. Wee shall sometimes heereafter heare the complaints of the other party, & then shall we iudge what is to be done: the manner of the discourse is long and the circumstances tedious, which I neither will, nor yet am able to comprehend, nor are they necessary for your Holinesse to know, yet Petrus Arias humbly intreateth one thinge, that now at length through Cæsars fauour hee may be licensed to returne to his wife, and children, because hee now perceiueth himselfe to be wasted, and consumed with old age and a thousande diseases besides: and so it is decreed, for he is called home and a certaine Noble man a knight of Corduba named Petrus Rios is placed in his roome, he is now with vs, and prepareth himselfe for his departure. In our former Decades, where we discoursed concerning the vnfortunate successe of Franciscus Garaius, of $\S$ comminge of Olitus to Cuba, frō whence he prepared to passe ouer to Figueras, of $\S$ gidius Gonsalus, & his preparation to the same place, and of the imaginations, and deuises of Petrus Arias, to that matter wee haue also sayd, that no other thinge could be provided by our Senate, saue to giue absolute power to the Senate of Hispaniola, and to cōmand that they being neerer would endeour, $\S$ their meetinges might not procure any damage, or hurt, which wee greatly feared. And for that buisines they haue speedily appointed an approoued mann called Baccalarius Morenus procurator or soliciter of the Exchequer amonge them, who hath receiued Cæsars letters and ours. He came to late for it was already done, he fouid all things cōfused: & the relatiō of this good man differeth litle from that which we haue declared. So by reason of their disagreeing mindes, māy notable things worth $\S$ knowing are

VOL. V.

3 P

inter-

Olitus wounded and fled.

Olitus betrayed by his own men, taken and slaine,

Franciscus reported to bring Gonsalus captiue to Tenustitan.

A great packet of lres frō Petrus Arias Gouverneur of Golden Castele.

Petrus Arias licensed to returne home.

Petrus Rios placed in his roome.

Baccalarius Morenus solicitor of the Exchequer of Hispaniola.

A discovery of
fresh waters
neere the great
lake.

The doubtfull
report of Cortes
his death.

Ludouicus Pon-
tius sent by
Cæsar to Tenus-
titan.
His commission.

The order of S.
Iacobi baptis-
m sent to
Cortes.

37. churches
erected in Te-
nustitan.

Stephanus Go-
mez returned.

A repetition of
Licentius Aig-
lionus his tra-
uailes.

interrupted & cut of. Franciscus Fernúdes being long cōuersant wth this Morenus of y^e Exchequer saith y^e in the bordering cōuntry of y^e great lake he light vpon a forrest ful of fresh waters falling into the Baye, as we know Nilus falleth downe frō y^e high mōtaines of Æthiopia into Ægypt, that thereby Ægypt being watered, it might be powred out into our sea: if that be true, which as yet is vncertaine, it shall be in valne to seeke that which Ægidius Gonzalus hath long considered in his minde, concerning a great nauigable riuer whiche drinketh vppre those waters, compassed about with people. But concerning the misfortune, and vniuersall slaughter of Cortes, and his companions commonly diuulged, this Morenus of the Exchequer returning, reported hee hearde nothing thereof in those countries, because those coasts are more then 500. leagues distant from the Prouince of Tenustitan, but sayeth, that while he lay at anchor in the haue of Fabana, the Mart towne of Cuba, Diecus Ordassus one of Cortes his Captaynes (a discret man) arryued there, who sayd, hee came thither to inquire whither they hearde any thing of Cortes, of whose life they greatly doubted in Tenustitan the heade cite of the kingdome, and more then this, they knowe nothing. For cure of this so greate a blemish, a manne nobly descended, one Ludouicus Pontius a Lawyer of Lyons, of this cōuntry of Carpentana, whereof this cittle Toletum is the heade (where wee nowe remayne with Cæsar) beeing chiefe Iustice of the cittle a long time, is chosen to bee sent, because he exercised his magistracy most vprightly, and wisely: hee is a modest manne, and of a noble disposition, through whose prouidence we hope it will come to passe, that that shippe of Cæsars floting for the happie and good fortune of Cæsar, shall be brought vnto the calme, and quiet haue. Hee bringeth this charge with him, to intreate Cortes with a thousand fayre inticing speeches (if hee finde him aliue) to drawe him to true obedience, from the which, hee neuer yet openly departed, for the name of Cæsar the king is alwayes reuerent in his mouth, and letters: but secretly, as hath beene largely spoken, wee suspect I knowe not what, both by coniectures, and the accusations of manie, hee alwayes desired with a proude and haughtie mynde to bee graced with new prerogatiues, and dignities, and hath long since obtained the titles of Gouverneur, and Atlantado of those large countries, included vnder the name of Newe Spayne. Hee lately also desired the badge or cognisance of Saint Iacobus Spatenis whiche this Pontius bringeth with him, to bee giuen vnto him, who shortly is to departe, beeing already dismissed by Cæsar, and shall goe hence with a flete of two and twenty shippes. But if he finde that Cortes is gone vnto his auncesters, he is to do otherwise. None of the other will presume to aduance their plumes, so hee finde the state of the inhabitants to stand cleere from defection and reuolt, all things will prosperously succeed, and be subiected to the happy fete of your Holinesse. In that great city of the lake, which now resumeth the face & resemblance of a citty, repayed by the buildinge of fifty thousand houses, there are seuen and thirty churches erected, wherein the inhabitants intermixed with the Spaniards most deuoutly apply themselves to the Christian religion, reiectinge the olde ceremonies, and sacrificing of mans bloud, which they now abhorre. And that fruitfull graine wil infinitely increase through those 8. slippered, Franciscan Friars, instructinge the inhabitants with apostolicall feruency, if the seditions of our men doe not withstand it. I haue sufficiently insisted in these things: now I come to Stephanus Gomez, who as I haue already sayd in the ende of that booke presented to your Holinesse beginninge (Before that) was sent with one Carauell to seeke another Straight betweene the lād of Florida, and the Bachalao sufficiently known, and frequented. He neither findinge the Straight, nor Gataia which he promised, returned backe within tenn monethes after his departure. I alwayes thought, and presupposed this good mans Imaginations were wayne, and friuolous. Yet wanted he no suffrages, & voyces in his fauour, & defence. Notwithstanding, hee found pleasant, & profitable countries, agreeable with our Parallels, and degrees of the Pole. Licentius Aiglionus also a Senator in Hispaniola by his freindes, & familiars trauailed & passed the same strange shores to y^e North of Hispaniola, Cuba, & the Iucaian Ilands neere y^e Bachalao, and the cōuntries of Chicora, and Duraba, whereof I speake at large before. Where, after the declaration of the rites, and customes of the nations, and the descriptions of notable hauens and great riuers, groues of Holme, Oake, and Oliues, and wild vines euery

Morenus of y^e Exche-
 a Forrest full of fresh
 mountaines of Ethiopia
 d out into our sea: if
 which Egidius Gon-
 riuier whiche drinke
 misfortune, and vi-
 this Morenus of the
 untries, because those
 titian, but sayeth, that
 uba, Dicus Ordassus
 hee came thither to
 greatly doubted in Te-
 knowe nothing. For
 icus Pontius a Lawyer
 in is the heade (where
 ng time, is chosen to
 ely: hee is a modest
 e it will come to passe,
 Caesar, shall be brought
 im, to intreate Cortes
 drawe him to true obe-
 e of Caesar the king is
 ne largely spoken, wee
 manie, hee alwayes de-
 gatiues, and dignities,
 f those large countries,
 he badge or cognisance
 e giuen vnto him, who
 e hence with a flete of
 auncesters, he is to do
 es, so he finde the state
 s will prosperously suc-
 great city of the lake,
 y the building of fifty
 in the inhabitants inter-
 ristian religion, reiect-
 now abhor. And that
 anciscan Friars, instruct-
 men doe not withstand
 hanus Gomez, who as I
 esse beginninge (Before
 the lād of Florida, and
 age the Straight, nor Ga-
 is departure. I alwayes
 ne, and friuolous. Yet
 withstanding, he found
 egrees of the Pole. Li-
 familiars trauailed &
 the Iucaian Ilands neere
 speake at large before.
 ns, and the descriptions
 Oliues, and wild vines
 euery

euery where spreadinge in the woods, they say, they founde also other trees of our coun-
 trey and that surely not in a short Epitome, but consuming and spending great bundles of
 paper therein. But what need haue we of these things which are common with all the peo-
 ple of Europe? to the South, to the South, for the great & exceeding riches of the Equi-
 noctiall, they that seeke riches must not goe vnto the cold, and frozen North. In this aduen-
 ture your Holiness shall heare a pleasant conceited puffe of winde arisinge, able to procure
 laughter. This Stephanus Gomez hauing attained none of those things which hee thought
 he should haue found, least hee should returne empty, contrary to the lawes sett downe by
 vs, that no man should offer violence to any nation, fraughted his shipp with people of both
 sexes, taken from certaine innocent halfe naked nations, who contented themselues with cot-
 tages in steede of houses. And when hee came into the hauen of Clunia, from whence he
 set sayle, a certaine man hearing of the arriual of his shippe, and that hee hadd brought
 Esclaus that is to say slaues, seekinge no further, came postinge vnto vs, with pantinge
 and breathles spirit sayinge, that Stephanus Gomez bringeth his shippe laden with cloues
 and precious stones: and thought thereby to haue receiued some rich present, or reward.
 They who fauoured the matter, attentiu to this manns foolish and idle report, wearied the
 whole Court with exceedinge great applause, cuttings of the worde by Aphæresis, pro-
 clayminge, that for Esclaus, hee hadd brought Clauos (for the Spanish tongue calleth slaues,
 Esclaus, and cloues Clauos) but after the Court vnderstoode that the tale was transformed
 from Cloues to slaues, they brake forth into a great laughter, to the shame and blushing
 of the fauorers who shouted for ioy. If they hadd learned that the influence of the heauens
 could bee noe where infused into terrestriall matters prepared to receiue that aromaticall spi-
 rit, saue from the Equinoctiall sunne, or next vnto it, they woulde haue knowne, that in
 the space of tenn moneths (wherein hee performed his voyage) aromaticall Cloues could
 not bee founde. While I was busily employed in this corollary, or addition, behold the
 accustomed artes and subtiltie of whirling fortune, which neuer gaue ounce of hony vnto
 any, but shew cast as much, or oftentimes more gall in his dish. The streetes of this famous
 city range with the sounde of Trumpettes, and Drummes for ioy of the espousalls, and re-
 iterated affinity with the kinge of Portugall Cesars sisters sonne and his cousin germanne,
 by takinge his sister now marriageable and forsakinge the English womann yet young, and
 tender, which thinge the kingdomes of Casteele cheefly desired, at what time a sorrowfull
 and grievous message to bee indured presently issued: which filled the minde of Caesar,
 and all the Casteelians with disdain, and contempt. In that treatise of the world compassed,
 directed to Pope Adrian, I sayd, that the companion of the ship called the Victory, remained
 broken in the Iland of Tidore, one of the Ilandes of the Maluchas ingenderinge spices,
 which shipp called the Trinitie, was left there with 57. men, whose proper names besides
 the head officers, I haue extracted out of the accomptants bookes of these negotiations.
 That shipp being repaired, returned laden with cloues, & certaine precious stones: shee
 light on the Portugall flete, and comming vpon them vnawares, they tooke her violently,
 and brought her being vanquished to Malacha, supposed to bee the golden Chersonesus,
 and the Portugall Commander named Georgius de Brito a sea faring man violently tooke whatso-
 euer was in her. But it is a lamentable thinge to bee spoken, what happened to the mariners
 of this shippe: the fury of the Sea against them was so great, that being tossed to and froe
 with perpetuall stormes, they all perished almost with famine, and ouerwatchinge. The
 shipp called the Trinitie being taken, that Portugallian Commander is said to haue gone to
 our Ilandes of the Maluchas, and in one of them (whereof there are seuen) hee built a
 Castle, and whatsoeuer wares were left in the Ilandes for negotiation, or trade of marchan-
 die, he violently tooke them all. The pilotts, and kinges seruants who are safly returned,
 say that both robberies, and pillages exceede the valew of two hundred thousande Ducates,
 but Christopherus de Haro especially the generall director of this aromaticall negotiation,
 vnder the name of Factor, confirmeth the same. Our Senate yeeldeth great credit to this
 mann. Hee gaue mee the names of all the 5. shippes that accompanied the Victorie, and
 of all the mariners, and meane officers whatsoeuer. And in our Senate assembled he shewed

To the South,
to the South.A pleasant ob-
script.Whirling for-
tune.The returne of
the Trinitie, & of
the misshippes.Christopherus
de Haro.

why he assigned that valewe of the booty or pray, because he particularly declared, how much spices & Trinitie brought, how much spice was left in the handes of Zabazulla king of the Iland of Machiana, one of our 7. Ilands ingendring spices, and of another next bordering kinge of the Ilande of Tidore, and his sonne, and of the stewardestes of both the kinges, and their domesticall noble menne by name, all whiche was bought for a price, assigned to Iohannes de Campo remaining there with & rest. And concerning the wares, or marchandise, how much steele, & copper plate, how much hempen, and flaxen cloath, how much pitch, quick-siluer, Peter lightes, tapers of Turkie, Arsenicke Orpin for pictures, corals, and reddish fannes, or hats, caps, looking glasses, glassy and cleere stones, bells, poynts, seats fit for kings, and what engines with their munition was therein, for the exchange of which thinges by the kinges chiefe officers remaining there, to wit, the Auditor, and Treasurer, spices might be gathered, to be brought backe by our shippes which were to bee sent. It may be doubted what Cæsar will doe in such a case, I thinke he will dissemble the matter for a while, by reason of the renewed affinity, yet though they were twinnes of one birth, it were harde to suffer this iniurious losse to passe unpunished, I suppose the matter will first peaceably bee treated by Embassadors. But I heare another thing which will be distastfull to the king of Portugall, Cæsar cannot although he desired to dissemble the matter, for the owners of those marchandises will earnestly require iustice to be done, which were dishonest to deny vnto the enemy, how much more to his owne tributaries. The auncient Portugalles prophesie the insuing destruction of his kingdome, through these rash and vnadvised attempts: for they too proudly despise the people of Castele, without whose reuennues and commodities they should perish through famine, seeing that is but a mean, and poore kingdome, sometimes a County of Castele. The Casteelians through rage and fury, fret, and foame, and desire that Cæsar would indeuour to reduce that kingdome to the crowne of Castele: king Philip, Cæsars father sometime thought, & saide, that he would doe it, and time will publish the sentence. In the meane space, I bidde your Holinesse farewell, prostrate beefore whose sight I present my kisses to your feete.

The fatall prophesie of the Portugalles.

FINIS.

Soli Deo, Trino, & Vni, Laus & gloria.

The eight Decade.

icularly declared, how
es of Zabazulla king of
f another next border-
des of both the kinges,
for a price, assigned to
wares, or merchandise,
ken cloath, how much
in for pictures, corals,
re stones, bels, poynts,
erein, for the exchange
, to wit, the Auditor,
by our shippes which
such a case, I thinke
ed affinity, yet though
asse to passe vnpunished,
rs. But I heare another
ot although he desired to
enestly require lustice to
more to his owne tribu-
of his kingdōe, through
the people of Castele,
h famine, seeing that is
The Casteelians through
our to reduce that king-
etime thought, & saide,
neane space, I bidde your
s to your feete.

VIRGINIA

Richly Valued,

BY THE DESCRIPTION OF THE AINE LAND OF

FLORIDA,

HER NEXT NEIGHBOUR:

OUT OF THE FOURE YEERES CONTINUALL TRAUELL AND DISCOVERIE, FOR ABOVE
ONE THOUSAND MILES EAST AND WEST,

OF

DON FERDINANDO DE SOTO,

AND SIXE HUNDRED ABLE MEN IN HIS COMPANIE.

WHEREIN ARE TRULY OBSERUED

THE RICHES AND FERTILITIE OF THOSE PARTS,
ABOUNDING WITH THINGS NECESSARIE, PLEASANT AND PROFITABLE

FOR THE LIFE OF MAN: WITH THE NATURES AND DISPOSITIONS

OF THE INHABITANTS:

WRITTEN BY A PORTUGALL GENTLEMAN OF ELUAS, EMPLOYED IN ALL THE ACTION,

AND TRANSLATED OUT OF THE PORTUGESE

BY RICHARD HAKLVYT.

At London:

PRINTED BY FELIX KYNSTON FOR MATTHEW LOWNES, AND ARE TO BE SOLD AT THE
SIGNE OF THE BISHOPS HEAD IN PAULS CHURCHYARD.

1609.



TO THE
RIGHT HONOVABLE,
THE
RIGHT WORSHIPFULL COUNSELLORS,

AND OTHERS THE CHEERFULL ADVENTURORS FOR THE ADUANCEMENT OF THAT
CHRISTIAN AND NOBLE PLANTATION IN VIRGINIA.

This worke, right Honourable, right Worshipfull, and the rest, though small in shew, yet great in substance, doth yeeld much light to our enterprise now on foot: whether you desire to know the present and future commodities of our cuntry; or the qualities and conditions of the Inhabitants, or what course is best to be taken with them.

Touching the commodities, besides the generall report of Cabeça de Vaca to Charles the Emperour (who first trauelled through a great part of the Inland of Florida, next adioyning vpon our Virginia) That Florida was the richest cuntry of the world; and, that after hee had found clothes made of cotton wooll, he saw gold and siluer, and stones of great value: Chap. 35. I referre you first to the rich mines of gold reported to be in the prouince of Yupaha, and described in the twelfth Chapter of this Treatise to come within our limits: And againe, to the copper hatchets found in Cutifachiqui, standing vpon the Riuer of Santa Helena, which were said to haue a mixture of gold. It seemeth also that the last Chronicler of the West Indies,

Antonio de Herrera, speaking of the foresaid Riuer of Santa Helena, which standeth in 32. degrees and an halfe, alludeth to the prouince of Yupaha, in these words: Y el oro, y plata, que hallaron, no era de aquella tierra, sino de 60. leguas, adentro al norte, de los pueblos dichos Otapales y Olagatanos, adonde se intiende, que ay minas de oro, plata, y cobre. That is to say, That the gold and siluer which they found, was not of that cuntry (of Santa Helena) but 60. leagues distant toward the North, of the townes called Otapales and Olagatanos, where we vnderstand that there are mines of gold, siluer, and copper. By which reckoning these rich mines are in the latitude of 35. degrees and an halfe. I desire you likewise to take knowledge of the famous golden prouince of Chisca, stretching further to the North, whereof the Cacique of Coste gaue notice to Ferdinando de Soto in the towne of Chiahua, affirming, that there were mines of copper, and of another mettall of the same colour, saue that it was finer, and of a farre more perfect lustre, and farre better in sight, and that they vsed it not so much, because it was softer. And the selfesame thing was before told the Gouvernour in Cutifachiqui: who sent two Christians from Chiahua with certaine Indians which knew the cuntry of Chisca, and the language thereof, to view it, and to make report of that which they should finde. We likewise reade not long after, that the Gouver- Chap. 33. nour set forward to seeke a prouince called Pacaha, which hee was informed to be neere vnto Chisca, where the Indians told him, that there was gold. And in another place hee saith;

That

Chap. 24.

That from Pacaha hee sent thirtie horsemen and fiftie footmen to the prouince of Caluca, to see if from thence he might trauell to Chisca, where the Indians said, there was a worke of gold and copper. So that here is foure times mention, and that in sundrie places, of the rich and famous goldē mines of Chisca, and that they lie beyond the mountaines toward the North, ouer which they were not able to trauell for the roughnes thereof. But what neede I to stand vpon forren testimonies, since Master Thomas Heriot, a man of much iudgement in these causes, signified vnto you all, at your late solemne meeting at the house of the right honourable the Earle of Exeter, how to the Southwest of our old fort in Virginia, the Indians often informed him, that there was a great melting of red mettall, reporting the manner in working of the same. Besides, our owne Indians haue lately reuealed either this or another rich mine of copper or gold in a towne called Ritanoē, neere certaine mountaines lying West of Roanoac.

Chap. 14.

Another very gainfull commoditie is, the huge quantitie of excellent perles, and little babies and birds made of them; that were found in Cutifachiqui. The abundance whereof is reported to be such, that if they would haue searched diuers graues in townes thereabout, they might haue laded many of their horses. Neither are the Turkie stones and cotton wool found at Guasco to be forgotten, nor passed ouer in silence.

But that, which I make no small account of, is, the multitude of Oxen. which, from the beginning of the 16. to the end of the 26. Chapter, are nine seuerall times made mention of, and that along from Chiaha, Coste, Pacaha, Coligoa, and Tulla, still toward the North, to wit, toward vs, there was such store of them, that they could keepe no corne for them: and that the Indians liued vpon their flesh. The haire of these Oxen is likewise said to be like a soft wooll, betweene the course and fine wooll of sheepe: and that they vse them for couerlets, because they are very soft and woollled like sheep: and not so onely, but they make bootes, shooes, targets, and other things necessarie of the same. Besides the former benefits, their young ones may be framed to the yoke, for carting and tillage of our ground. And I am in good hope, that ere it be long we shall haue notice of their being neerer vs, by that which I reade in the Italian relation of Cabeça de Vaca, the first finder of them; which writeth, That they spread themselues within the countrie aboue foure hundred leagues. Moreouer, Vases de Coronado, and long after him, Antonio de Espejo (whose voiajes are at large in my third volume) trauelled many leagues among these herds of Oxen, and found them from 33. degrees ranging very farre to the North and Northeast.

A fourth chiefe commoditie wee may account to be the great number of Mulberrie trees, apt to feede Silke-wormes to make silke: whereof there was such plentie in many places, that, though they found some hempe in the countrie, the Spaniards made ropes of the barks of them for their brigandines, when they were to put to sea for Noua Hispania.

A fifth is the excellent and perfect colours, as black, white, greene, yellow, and red, and the materials to dye withall, so often spoken of in this discourse: among which I haue some hope to bring you to the knowledge of the rich graine of Cochonillio, so much esteemed, and of so great price. I speake nothing of the seuerall sorts of passing good grapes for Wine and Raisons.

Chap. 31. & 32.

Neither is it the least benefit, that they found salt made by the Indians at Cayas, and in two places of the prouince of Aguacay: the manner also how the Inhabitants make it, is very well worth the obseruation.

Chap. 31. & 32.

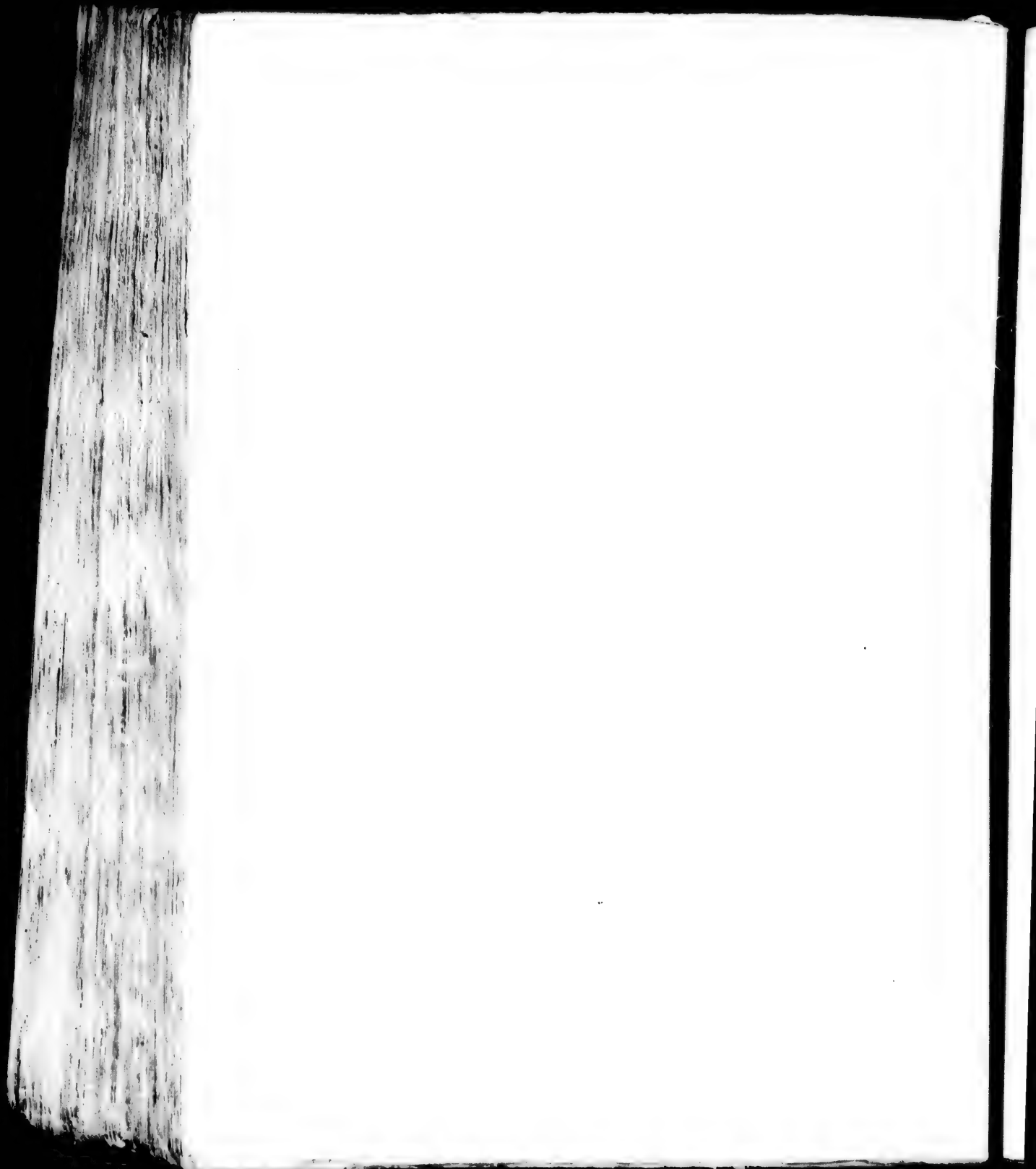
One of the chieftest of all the rest may be the notice of the South Sea, leading vs to Iapan and China, which I finde here twice to be spoken of. Whereof long since I haue written a discourse, which I thinke not fit to be made ouer common.

For closing vp this point, The distances of places, the qualities of the soiles, the situations of the regions, the diuersities and goodnesse of the fruits, the seuerall sorts of beasts, the varietie of fowles, the difference betweene the Inhabitants of the mountaines and the plaines, and the riches of the Inland in comparison of the Sea coast, are iudicially set downe in the conclusion of this booke, whereunto for mine owne ease I referre you.

To come to the second generall head, which in the beginning I proposed, concerning the manners

manners and dispositions of the Inhabitants: among other things, I finde them here noted to be very eloquent and well spoken, as the short Orations, interpreted by Iohn Ortiz, which liued twelue yeeres among them, make sufficient prooffe. And the author, which was a gentleman of Elias in Portugall, employed in all the action, whose name is not set downe, speaking of the Cacique of Tulla, saith, that aswell this Cacique, as the others, and all those which came to the Gouvernour on their behalfe, deliuered their message or speech in so good order, that no Oratour could vtter the same more eloquently. But for all their faire and cunning speeches, they are not ouermuch to be trusted: for they be the greatest traitors of the world, as their manifold most craftie contriued and bloody treasons, here set down at large, doe evidently proue. They be also as vnconstant as the wethercock, and most readie to take all occasions of aduantages to doe mischief. They are great liars and dissemblers; for which faults often times they had their deserued paiments. And many times they gaue good testimonie of their great valour and resolution. To handle them gently, while gentle courses may be found to serue, it will be without comparison the best: but if gentle polishing will not serue, then we shall not want hammerours and rough masons enow, I meane our old soldiours trained vp in the Netherlands, to square and prepare them to our Preachers hands. To conclude, I trust by your Honours and Worships wise instructions to the noble Gouvernour, the worthy experimented Lieutenant and Admirall, and other chiefe managers of the businesse, all things shall be so prudently carried, that the painfull Preachers shall be reuerenced and cherished, the valiant and forward soldiour respected, the diligent rewarded, the coward emboldened, the weake and sick relieued, the mutinous suppressed, the reputation of the Christians among the Saluages preserued, our most holy faith exalted, all Paganisme and Idolatrie by little and little vtterly extinguished. And here reposing and resting my selfe vpon this sweete hope, I cease, beseeching the Almighty to blesse this good work in your hands to the honour and glorie of his most holy name, to the enlargement of the dominions of his sacred Maiestie, and to the generall good of all the worthie Aduenturers and vndertakers. From my lodging in the Colledge of Westminster this 15. of Aprill, 1609.

By one publicly and anciently denoted to Gods seruice,
and all yours in this so good action,
RICHARD HAKLUYT.



A
RELATION OF SVCH THINGS

AS
DON FERDINANDO DE SOTO,

THE
ADELANTADO OF FLORIDA PASSED IN SEEKING TO CONQUER
THE SAID COUNTRY:

WHEREIN IS DECLARED WHO HE WAS, AND WHAT SOME OF THEM WERE THAT WENT WITH HIM:
AND SOME PARTICULARS AND DIUERSITIES OF THE COUNTRY, AND WHATSOEVER THEY
SAW AND HAPPENDD VNTO THEM IN THE SAME.

Chap. I.

Which declareth who Don Ferdinando de Soto was, and how he got the gouernment
of Florida.

Captaine Soto was the son of a Squire of Xerez of Badaioz. He went into the Spanish Indies, when Peter Arias of Auila was Gouernour of the West Indies: And there he was without any thing else of his owne, saue his sword and target: and for his good qualities and valour, Peter Arias made him Captaine of a troope of horsemen, and by his commandement hee went with Fernando Pizarro to the conquest of Peru: where (as many persons of credit reported, which were there present) as well at the taking of Atabalipa, Lord of Peru, as at the assault of the citie of Cusco, and in all other places where they found resistance, wheresoeuer hee was present, hee passed all other Captaines and principall persons. For which cause, besides his part of the treasure of Atabalipa, he had a good share: whereby in time he gathered an hundred and fourescore thousand Duckets together, with that which fell to his part: which he brought into Spaine: whereof the Emperour borrowed a certaine part, which he repaied againe with 60000 Rials of plate in the rent of the silkes of Granada, and all the rest was deliuered him in the Contractation house of Siuil. He tooke seruants, to wit, a Stewart, a Gentleman Vsher, Pages, a Gentleman of the Horse, a Chamberlaine, Lakies, and al other officers that the house of a Noble mā requireth. From Siuil hee went to the Court, and in the Court, there accompanied him Iohn Danusco of Siuil, and Lewis Moscoso D'Aluarado, Nunno de Touar, and Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo. Except Iohn Danusco, all the rest came with him from Peru: and euery one of them brought foureene or fiftene thousand Duckets: all of them went well and costly apparrelled. And although Soto of his owne nature was not liberall, yet because that was the first time that hee was to shew himselfe in the Court, he spent frankly, and went accompanied with those which I haue named, and with his seruants, and many other which resorted vnto him. Hee married with Donna Isabella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias of Auila, Earle of Punno en Rostro. The Emperour made him the Gouernor of the Isle of Cuba, and Adelantado or President of Florida, with a title of Marques of certaine part of the lands, that he should conquer.

Chap. II.

How Cabeça de Vaca came to the Court, and gaue relation of the Countrie of Florida:
And of the Companie that was assembled in Siuil to goe with Don Ferdinando de Soto.

Florida is the
richest Countrie
of the world.

Eluas is a Citie
in Portugall.

When Don Ferdinando had obtained the government, there came a Gentlemen from the Indies to the Court, named Cabeça de Vaca, which had been with the Gouvernour Pamphilo de Naruæz which died in Florida, who reported that Naruæz was cast away at sea with all the companie & went with him. And how he with foure more escaped and arriued in Nueua Espanna: Also he brought a relation in writing of that which hee had seene in Florida; which said in some places: In such a place I haue seene this; and the rest which here I saw, I leaue to conferre of betweene his Maie-tie and my selfe. Generally he reported the miserie of the Countrie, and the troubles which hee passed: and hee told some of his kinsfolke, which were desirous to goe into the Indies, and vrged him very much to tell them whether he had seene any rich country in Florida, that he might not tell them, because hee and another, whose name was Orantes, (who remained in Nueua Espanna with purpose to returne into Florida: for which intent hee came into Spaine to beg the gouernment thereof of the Emperour) had sworne not to discover some of those things which they had scene, because no man should preuent them in begging the same: And hee informed them, That it was the richest Countrie of the world. Don Ferdinando de Soto was very desirous to haue him with him, and made him a fauourable offer: and after they were agreed, because Soto gaue him not a summe of money which he demanded to buy a ship, they broke off againe. Baltasar de Gallegos, and Christopher de Spindola, the kinsmen of Cabeça de Vaca, told him, that for that which hee had imparted to them, they were resolu'd to passe with Soto into Florida, and therefore they prayed him to aduise them what they were best to doe. Cabeça de Vaca told them, that the cause why he went not with Soto was, because hee hoped to beg another government, and that hee was loth to goe vnder the command of another: and that hee came to beg the conquest of Florida: but seeing Don Ferdinando de Soto had gotten it alreadie, for his othes sake hee might tell them nothing of that which they would know: but hee counselled them to sell their goods and goe with him, and that in so doing they should doe well. Assoone as he had opportunity hee spake with the Emperour, and related vnto him whatsoever hee had passed and seene, and come to vnderstand. Of this relation made by word of mouth to the Emperour, the Marques of Astorga had notice, and forthwith determined to send with Don Ferdinando de Soto his brother Don Antonio Osorio: & with him two kinsmen of his prepared themselves, to wit, Francis Osorio, and Garcia Osorio. Don Antonio disposessed himselfe of 60000 Rials of rent which hee held by the Church: and Francis Osorio of a town of Vassals, which he had in the Countrie de Campos. And they made their Rendezuous with the Adelantado in Siuil. The like did Nunnez de Touar, and Lewis de Moscoso, and Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo, each of who had brought from Peru foureteen or fifteene thousand Duckets. Lewis de Moscoso carried with him two brethren: there went also Don Carlos, which had married the Gouvernours Neece, and tooke her with him. From Badaioz there went Peter Calderan, and three kinsmen of the Adelantado, to wit, Arias Tinoco, Alfonso Romo, and Diego Tinoco. And as Lewis de Moscoso passed through * Eluas, Andrew de Vasconcelos spake with him, and requested him to speake to Don Ferdinando de Soto concerning him, and deliuered him certaine warrants which he had receiued from the Marques of Villa real, wherein he gaue him the Captaineship of Ceuta in Barbarie, that he might shew them vnto him. And the Adelantado saw them; and was informed who hee was, and wrote vnto him, that hee would fauour him in all things, and by al meanes, and would giue him a charge of men in Florida. And from Eluas went Andrew de Vasconcelos, and Fernan Pegado, Antonio Martinez Segurado, Men Roiz Pereira, Iohn Cordero, Stephen Pegado, Benedict Fernandez, and Aluaro Fernandez. And out of Salamanca, and Iuen, and Valencia, and Albuquerque, and from other partes of Spaine, many

Country of Florida:
Hernando de Soto.

Gentlemen from the
Gouverneur Pamphilo
away at sea with all
and arrived in Nucua
had scene in Florida;
the rest which here I
generally he reported
he told some of his
him very much to tell
not tell them, because
Spanna with purpose
beg the government
things which they had
d hee informed them,
so was very desirous to
were agreed, because
ship, they broke off
semen of Cabeça de
ere resolved to passe
what they were best
not with Soto was,
oth to goe vnder the
Florida: but seeing
hee might tell them
n to sell their goods
soone as he had op-
whatsoever hee had
by word of mouth
determined to send
& with him two
Garcia Osorio. Don
held by the Church:
Country de Campos.
The like did Nunnez
of who had brought
carried with him two
purs Neece, and tooke
semen of the Adelan-
as Lewis de Moscoso
requested him to speake
aine warrants which he
m the Captainship of
lantado saw them; and
our him in all things,
And from Eluas went
ado, Men Roiz Pereira,
ernandez. And out of
other partes of Spaine,
many

many people of Noble birth assembled at Siuil: insomuch that in Saint Lucar many men of good account which had sold their goods remained behind for want of shipping, whereas for other known and rich Countries, they are wont to want men: and this fell out by occasion of that which Cabeça de Vaca told the Emperour, and informed such persons as hee had conference withall touching the State of that Country. Soto made him great offers: and being agreed to goe with him (as I haue said before) because he would not giue him monie to pay for a ship, which he had brought, they brake off, & he went for Gouverneur to the Riuer of Plate. His kinsemen Christopher de Spindola, and Baltasar de Gallegos went with Soto. Baltasar de Gallegos sold houses and vineyards, and rent corne, and ninetie rankes of Oliue trees in the Xarafe of Siuil: Hee had the office of Alcalde Mayor, and tooke his wife with him: And there went also many other persons of account with the President, and had the officers following by great friendship, because they were officers desired of many: to wit, Antonio de Biedma was Factor, John Danusco was Auditor, and John Gaytan nephew to the Cardinall of Ciguenza had the office of Treasurer.

Cabeça de Vaca
was the Gouver-
neur of the
Riuer of Plate.

Chap. III.

How the Portugales went to Siuil, and from thence to S. Lucar: he appointed Captaines ouer the ships, and distributed the people which were to goe in them.

THE Portugales departed from Eluas the 15. of Ianuarie, and came to Siuil the 19. of the same moneth, and went to the lodging of the Gouverneur, and entred into a court, ouer the which were certaine galleries where hee was, who came downe and receiued them at the staires, whereby they went vp into the galleries: when he was come vp, he commanded chaires to be giuen them to sit on. And Andrew de Vasconcelos told him who hee and the other Portugales were, and how they all were come to accompany him, and serue him in his voiage. He gaue him thanks, and made shew of great contentment for his coming and offer. And the table being alreadie laid he invited them to dinner. And being at dinner he commanded his steward to seeke a lodging for them neere vnto his owne, where they might bee lodged. The Adelantado departed from Siuil to Saint Lucar with all the people which were to goe with him: And he commanded a muster to be made, at the which the Portugales shewed themselues armed in verie bright armour, and the Castellans very gallant with silke vpon silke, with many pinkings and cuts. The Gouverneur, because these brauaries in such an action did not like him, commanded that they should muster another day, and euery one should come forth with his armour: at the which the Portugales came as at the first armed with very good armour. The Gouverneur placed them in order neere vnto the standard which the ensigne-bearer carried. The Castellanes for the most part did weare very bad and rustie shirts of maile, and all of them head peeces and steele cappes, and very bad lances. And some of them sought to come among the Portugales. So those passed and were counted and enroled, which Soto liked and accepted of, and did accompanie him into Florida; which were in all sixe hundred men. He had alreadie bought seuen ships, and had all necessarie prouision aboard them: He appointed Captaines, and deliuered to euery one his ship, and gaue them in a role what people euery one should carrie with them.

Sixe hundred
men went with
Soto into Florida.

Chap. IV.

How the Adelantado with his people departed from Spaine, and came to the Canaries, and afterward to the Antiles.

IN the yeere of our Lord 1538. in the moneth of Aprill, the Adelantado deliuered his shippes to the Captaines which were to goe in them: and tooke for himselfe a new ship, and good of saile, and gaue another to Andrew de Vasconcelos, in which the Portugales went: hee went ouer the barre of S. Lucar on Sunday being S. Lazarus day, in the morning.

morning, of the moneth and yeere aforesaid, with great ioy, commanding his trumpets to be sounded, and many shots of the ordinance to be discharged. Hee sailed foure daies with a prosperous wind; and suddenly it calmed: the calmes continued eight daies with swelling seas, in such wise, that wee made no way. The 15. day after his departure from S. Lucar, hee came to Gomera, one of the Canaries, on Easter day in the morning. The Earle of that Island was apparelled all in white, cloke, ierkin, hose, shooes, and cappe, so that hee seemed a Lord of the Gypsies. He receiued the Gouvernour with much ioy: hee was well lodged, and all the rest had their lodgings gratis, and gat great store of victuals for their monie, as bread, wine and flesh: and they tooke what was needfull for their ships: and the Sunday following, eight daies after their arriual, they departed from the Isle of Gomera. The Earle gaue to Donna Isabella the Adelantados wife a bastard daughter that hee had to bee her waiting maid. They arriued at the Antilles, in the Isle of Cuba, at the port of the City of Sant Iago vpon Whitsunday. Assone as they came thither, a Gentleman of the Citie sent to the sea side a very faire roan horse and well furnished for the Gouvernour, and a mule for Donna Isabella: and all the horsemen and footemen that were in the towne came to receiue him at the sea-side. The Gouvernour was well lodged, visited, and serued of all the inhabitants of that Citie, and all his companie had their lodgings freely: those which desired to goe into the countrie, were diuided by foure and foure, and sixe and sixe in the farmes or granges, according to the abilitie of the owners of the farmes, and were furnished by them with all things necessary.

Chap. V.

Of the inhabitants which are in the Citie of S. Iago, and in the other townes of the Island: and of the qualitie of the soile, and fruites that it yeeldeth.

The Citie of S. Iago hath fourescore houses which are great and well contriued. The most part haue their walles made of bords, & are couered with thatch; it hath some houses builded with lime & stone, and couered with tiles. It hath great Orchards and many trees in them, differing from those of Spaine: there be figgetrees which beare figges as big as ones fist, yellow within, and of small taste; and other trees which beare a fruit which they call Ananes, in making and bignes like to a small Pineapple: it is a fruit very sweete in taste: the shel being taken away, the kernel is like a peece of fresh cheese. In the granges abroad in the countrie there are other great pineapples, which grow on low trees, and are like the * Aloetree: they are of a very good smell and exceeding good taste. Other trees do beare a fruit, which they call Mameis of the bignes of Peaches. This the Islanders do hold for the best fruit of the countrie. There is another fruit which they call Guayabas like Filberds, as bigge as figges. There are other trees as high as a ianeline, hauing one only stocke without any bough, and the leaues as long as a casting dart: and the fruit is of the bignes and fashion of a Cucumber, one bunch beareth 20. or 30. and as they ripen, the tree bendeth downward with them: they are called in this countrie Plantanos; and are of a good taste, & ripen after they be gathered, but those are the better which ripen vpon the tree it selfe: they beare fruit but once: and the tree being cut downe, there spring vp others out of the but, which beare fruit the next yeere. There is another fruit; whereby many people are sustained, and chiefly the alauces, which are called Batatas. These grow now in the Isle of Terçera, belonging to the Kingdome of Portugal, and they grow within the earth, and are like a fruit called Iname, they haue almost y taste of a chestnut. The bread of this countrie is also made of rootes which are like the Batatas. And the stocke whereon those rootes doe grow is like an Elder tree: they make their ground in little hillocks, and in each of them they thrust 4. or 5. stakes; and they gather the rootes a yeere and an halfe after they set them. If any one, thinking it is a Batata or Potato roote, chance to eate of it neuer so little, hee is in great danger of death: which was seene by experience in a souldier, which assone as hee had eaten a very little of one of those rootes, hee died quicklie. They pare these rootes and stampe them, and

Great figges.

Ananes.

Great Pine-apples.
* Erua habosa.
Mameis, an excellent fruit.

Guayabas.

Plantanos.

Batatas, or Potatos.

The Cassau roote.

ing his trumpets to
sailed foure daies
ed eight daies with
his departure from
the morning. The
shoes, and cappe,
with much ioy: hee
eat store of victuals
dfull for their ships:
ed from the Isle of
astard daughter that
le of Cuba, at the
ie thither, a Gentle-
ll furnished for the
footemen that were
well lodged, visited,
e had their lodgings
by foure and foure,
of the owners of the

er townes of the
yeeldeth.

well contriued. The
; it hath some houses
hards and many trees
beare figges as big as
h beare a fruit which
is a fruit very sweete
fresh cheese. In the
ich grow on low trees,
exceeding good taste.
of Peaches. This the
fruit which they call
as high as a ianeline,
as a casting dart: and
beareth 20. or 30. and
called in this countrie
red, but those are the
e: and the tree being
fruite the next yeere.
chiefly the slaues, which
g to the Kingdome of
alled Iname, they haue
de of rootes which are
ke an Elder tree: they
ust 4. or 5. stakes; and
any one, thinking it is
is in great danger of
he hee had eaten a very
ootes and stampe them,
and

and squeeze them in a thing like a presse: the iuyce that commeth from them is of an euill
smell. The bread is of little taste and lesse substance. Of the fruites of Spaine, there
are Figges and Oranges, and they beare fruit all the yeere, because the soile is very ranke
and fruitfull. In this countrie are many good horses, and there is greene grasse all the
yeere. There be many wild oxen and hogges, whereby the people of the Island is well
furnished with flesh: Without the townes abroad in the Countrie are many fruites. And it
happeneth sometimes that a Christian goeth out of the way and is lost 15. or 20. daies,
because of the many paths in the thicke groues that crosse too and fro made by the oxen:
and being thus lost, they sustaine themselves with fruites and palmtos: for there bee many
great groues of Palme trees through all the Island: they yeeld no other fruit that is of any
profit. The Isle of Cuba is 300. leagues long from the East to the West, and is in some
places 30. in others 40. leagues from North to South. It hath 6. townes of Christians: to
wit, S. Iago, Baracôa, Bayamo, Puerto de Principes, S. Espirito, and Hauana. Euery one
hath betwene 30. and 40. households, except S. Iago and Hauana, which haue about 60.
or 80. houses. They haue Churches in each of them, and a Chaplen which confesseth
them and saith Masse. In S. Iago is a Monasterie of Franciscan Friars: it hath but few
Friars, and is well prouided of almes, because the countrie is rich: The Church of S. Iago
hath honest reuenew, and there is a Curat and Prebends and many Priests, as the Church
of that Citie, which is the chiefe of all the Island. There is in this countrie much gold,
and few slaues to get it: For many haue made away themselves, because of the Christians
euill vsage of them in the mines. A steward of Vasques Porcallo, which was an inhabi-
tour in that Island, vnderstanding that his slaues would make away themselves, staied for
them with a cudgill in his hand at the place where they were to meete, and told them, that
they could neither doe nor thinke any thing, that hee did not know before; and that hee
came thither to kill himselfe with them, to the end, that if hee had vsed them badly in this
world, hee might vsd them worse in the world to come: And this was a meane that they
changed their purpose, and turned home againe to doe that which he commanded them.

Store of good
horres.

The length and
breadth of Cuba.

A wittle stre-
tagem.

Chap. VI.

How the Gouvernour sent Donna Isabella with the ships to Hauana, and he with
some of his people went thither by land.

THE Gouvernour sent from S. Iago his Nephew Don Carlos with the ships in company of
Donna Isabella to tarrie for him at Hauana, which is an hauen in the West part toward the
head of the Island, 180. leagues from the Citie of Saint Iago. The Gouvernour and those
which staied with him bought horses and proceeded on their iournie. The first towne they
came vnto was Bayamo: they were lodged foure and foure, and sixe and sixe, as they went
in company, and where they lodged, they tooke nothing for their diet, for nothing cost
them ought saue the Maiz or corne for their horses, because the Gouvernour went to visit them
from towne to towne, and seased them in the tribute and seruice of the Indians. Bayamo
is 25. leagues from the Citie of S. Iago. Neere vnto the towne passeth a great Riuer,
which is called Tanto; it is greater then Guadiana, and in it be very great Crocodiles, which
sometimes hurt the Indians, or the cattell which passeth the Riuer. In all the countrie are
neither Wolfe, Foxe, Beare, Lion, nor Tiger. There are wild dogges which goe from the
houses into the woods and feed vpon swine. There be certaine Snakes as bigge as a mans
thigh or bigger, they are very slow, they doe no kind of hurt. From Bayamo to Puerto
delllos principes are 50. leagues. In al the Island from towne to towne, the way is made by
stubbing vp the vnderwood: and if it bee left but one yeere vndone, the wood groweth so
much, that the way cannot be seene, and the paths of the oxen are so many, that none can
trauell without an Indian of the Countrie for a guide: for all the rest is very hie and thicke
woods. From Puerto delllos principes the Gouvernour went to the house of Vasques Porcallo
by sea in a bote, (for it was neere the sea) to know there some newes of Donna Isabella,
which at that instant (as afterward was knowne) was in great distresse, in so much that the
ships

Bayamo.

Puerto delllos
Principes.

The Cape of S.
Antonio.

Santo Espirito.

La Trinidad.

Hauana.

ships lost one another: and two of them fell on the coast of Florida, and all of them endured great want of water and victuals. When the storme was ouer, they met together, without knowing where they were: in the end they descried the Cape of S. Anton, a countrie not inhabited of the Island of Cuba: there they watered; and at the end of 40. daies, which were passed since their departure from the City of S. Iago, they arriued at Hauana. The Gouvernour was presently informed thereof, and went to Donna Isabella. And those which went by land, which were one hundred and fiftie horsemen, being diuided into two parts, because they would not oppresse the inhabitants, trauelled by S. Espirito, which is 60. leagues from Puerto dello principles. The food which they carried with them was Caçabe bread, which is that whereof I made mention before: and it is of such a qualitie, that if it be wet, it breaketh presently, whereby it happened to some to eate flesh without bread for many daies. They carried dogges with them, and a man of the Country, which did hunt; & by the way, or where they were to lodge that night, they killed as many hogges as they needed. In this iourne they were well prouided of beefe and porke: And they were greatly troubled with Muskitos, especially in a lake, which is called the mere of Pia, which they had much adoe to passe from noone till night, the water might be some halfe league ouer, and to be swome about a crosse bow shot, the rest came to the waste, and they waded vp to the knees in the mire, and in the bottome were cockle shels, which cut their feete very sore; in such sort, that there was neither boote nor shooe sole that was hole at halfe way. Their clothes and saddels were passed in baskets of Palme trees. Passing this lake, stripped out of their clothes, there came many muskitos, vpon whose biting there arose a wheale that smarted very much: they strooke them with their hands, and with the blowe which they gaue they killed so many, that the blood did runne downe the armes and bodies of the men. That night they rested very little for them, and other nights also in the like places and times. They came to Santo Espirito, which is a towne of thirtie houses; there passeth by it a little Riuer: it is very pleasant and fruitfull, hauing great store of Oranges and citrons, and fruites of the Countrie: One halfe of the companie were lodged here, and the rest passed forward 25. leagues to another towne called la Trinidad of 15. or 20. households. Here is an hospitall for the poore, and there is none other in all the Island. And they say, that this towne was the greatest in all the Countrie, and that before the Christians came into this land, as a ship passed along the coast, there came in it a very sicke man, which desired the Captaine to set him on shore: and the Captaine did so, and the ship went her way: The sicke man remained set on shore in that countrie, which vntill then had not been haunted by Christians; whereupon the Indians found him, carried him home, and looked vnto him till he was whole; and the Lord of that towne married him vnto a daughter of his, and had warre with all the inhabitants round about, and by the industrie and valour of the Christian, he subdued and brought vnder his command all the people of that Island. A great while after, the Gouvernour Diego Velasques went to conquer it, and from thence discovered new Spaine: And this Christian which was with the Indians did pacifie them, and brought them to the obedience and subiection of the Gouvernour. From this towne della Trinidad vnto Hauana are 80. leagues, without any habitation, which they trauelled. They came to Hauana in the end of March; where they found the Gouvernour, and the rest of the people which came with him from Spaine. The Gouvernour sent from Hauana John Dannusco with a carauale & two brigantines with 50. men to discover the haue of Florida; and from thence hee brought two Indians, which he tooke vpon the coast, wherewith (aswell because they might be necessarie for guides and for interpretours, as because they said by signes that there was much gold in Florida) the Gouvernour and all the companie receiued much contentment, and longed for the houre of their departure, thinking in himselfe that this was the richest Countrie, that vnto that day had been discovered.

Chap. VII.

How we departed from Hauana, and ariued in Florida, and of such things as happened vnto vs.

BEfore our departure, the Gouvernour ~~deprived~~ Nunno de Tour of ~~his~~ office of Capitaine General, & gaue it to Porcallo de Figueroa, an inhabitant of Cuba, which was a meane that the shippes were well furnished with victuals: for he gaue a great many loads of Cacabe bread, and manie hogges. The Gouvernour ~~tooke~~ away this office from Nonno de Tour, because hee had fallen in loue with the daughter of ~~the~~ Earle of ~~Comera~~, Donna Isabellas waighting maid, who, though his office ~~was~~ taken from him, (to returne againe to the Gouvernours fauour) though she were with child by him, yet ~~tooke~~ her to his wife, and went with ~~her~~ into Florida. The Gouvernour left Donna Isabella in Hauana; and with her remained the wife of Don Carlos, and the wiues of Baltasar de Gallegos, and of Nonno de Tour. And hee left for his Lieutenant a Gentleman of Hauana, called Iohn de Roias, for the government of the Island.

On Sunday the 18. of May, in the yeere of our Lord, 1539. the Adelantado or president departed from Hauana in Cuba with his fleete, which were nine vessels, five great ships, two carauels, and two brigantines: They sailed seuen daies with a prosperous wind. The 25. day of May, the day de Pasca de Spirito Santo, (which we call Whitson Sunday,) they saw the land of Florida; and because of the shoalds, they came to an anchor a league from the shore. On Friday the 30. of May they landed in Florida, two leagues from a towne of an Indian Lord, called Veita. They set on land two hundred and thirteene horses, which they brought with them, to vnburden the shippes, that they might draw the lesse water. Hee landed all his men, and only the sea men remained in the shippes, which in eight daies, going vp with the tide euery day a little, brought them vp vnto the towne. Assoone as the people were come on shore, hee pitched his campe on the sea side, hard vpon the Bay which went vp vnto the towne. And presently the Capitaine generall Vasques Porcallo with other 7. horsemen foraged the Countrie halfe a league round about, and found sixe Indians, which resisted him with their arrowes, which are the weapons which they vse to fight withall: The horsemen killed two of them, and the other foure escaped; because the countrie is cumbersome with woods and bogs, where the horses stacke fast, and fell with their riders, because they were weake with traueilling vpon the sea. The same night following the Gouvernour with an hundred men in the brigantines lighted vpon a towne, which he found without people, because, that assoone as the Christians had sight of land, they were descried, and saw along the coast many smokes, which the Indians had made to giue aduice the one to the other. The next day Luys de Moscoso, Master of the Campe set the men in order, the horsemen in three squadrons, the Vantgard, the Batallion, and the Rerewarde: and so they marched that day, and the day following, compassing great Creekes which came out of the Bay: They came to the towne of Veita, where the Gouvernour was, on Sunday the first of Iune, being Trinitie Sunday. The towne was of seuen or eight houses. The Lordes house stode neere the shore vpon a very hie mount, made by hand for strength. At another end of the towne stood the Church, and on the top of it stood a fowle made of wood with gilded eies. Heere were found some pearles of small valew, spoiled with the fire, which the Indians do pierce and string them like beades, and weare them about their neckes and hand wrists, and they esteeme them very much. The houses were made of timber, and couered with Palme leaues. The Gouvernour lodged himselfe in the Lordes houses, and with him Vasques Porcallo, and Luys de Moscoso: and in others that were in the midst of the towne, was the chiefe Alcalde or Iustice, Baltasar de Gallegos lodged; and in the same houses was set in a place by it selfe, al the prouision that came in the ships: the other houses and the Church were broken down, and euery three or foure souldiers made a little cabin wherein they lodged. The Countrie round about was very fennie, and embred with great and hie trees. The Gouvernor commanded to fel the woods a crosse-

VOL. V.

3 R

bow

Chap.

This place was called Baya de Spirito Sancto, being on the West side of Florida, in 29. degrees, 1.

The ships came up to the towne of Veita.

The towne of Veita. Iune.

Some pearles found.

bow shot round about the towne, that the horses might runne, and the Christians might haue the aduantage of the Indians, if by chance they should set vpon them by night. In the waies and places conuenient, they had their Centinelles of footemen by two and two in euery stand, which did watch by turnes, and the horsemen did visit them, and were readie to assist them, if there were any alarme. The Gouvernour made foure Capitaines of the horsemen, and two of the footemen. The Capitaines of the horsemen were, one of them Andrew de Vasconcelos, and another Pedro Calderan de Badaioz: and the other two were his kinsemen, to wit, Arias Tinoco, and Alfonso Romo, borne likewise in Badaioz. The Capitaines of the footemen, the one was Francisco Maldonado of Salamanca, and the other Iuan Rodriguez Lobillo. While wee were in this towne of Veita, the two Indians, which Iohn Danusco had taken on that coast, and the Gouvernour caried along with him for guides and interpretours, through carelessness of two men, which had the charge of them, escaped away one night. For which the Gouvernour and all the rest were very sorie, for they had already made some roades, and no Indians could bee taken, because the countrie was full of marish grounds, and in many places full of very hie and thicke woods.

Chap. VIII.

Of some inrodes that were made into the Countrie: and how there was a Christian found, which had bin long time in the power of an Indian Lord.

Certaine cabins
of Indians.

FROM the towne of Veita, the Gouvernour sent the Alcalde Mayor, Baltasar de Gallegos with 40. horsemen and 80. footemen into the Countrie to see if they could take any Indians: and the Capitaine Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo another way with 50. footemen, the most of them were swordmen and targettours, and the rest were shot and crossebowmen. They passed through a countrie full of bogges, where horses could not trauell. Halfe a league from the campe, they lighted vpon certaine cabins of Indians neere a Riuer: The people that were in them leaped into the Riuer; yet they tooke foure Indian women: And twentie Indians charged vs, and so distressed vs, that wee were forced to retire to our campe, being, as they are, exceeding readie with their weapons. It is a people so warlike and so nimble, that they care not awhit for any footemen. For if their enemies charge them, they runne away, and if they turne their backs, they are presently vpon them. And the thing that they most flee, is the shot of an arrow. They neuer stand still, but are alwaies running and trauersing from one place to another: by reason whereof neither crossebow nor arcubuse can ayme at them: and before one crossebowman can make one shot, an Indian will discharge three or foure arrowes; and he seldome misseth what hee shooteth at. An arrow, where it findeth no armour, pierceth as deeply as a crossebow. Their bowes are very long, and their arrowes are made of certaine canes like reedes, very heauie, & so strong, that a sharpe cane passeth thorow a target: Some they arme in the point with a sharpe bone of a fish like a chisel, and in others they fasten certaine stones like points of Diamants. For the most part when they light vpon an armour, they breake in the place where they are bound together. Those of cane do split and pierce a coate of maile, and are more hurtfull then the other. Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo returned to the Campe with sixe men wounded, whereof one died; and brought the foure Indian women which Baltasar Gallegos had taken in the cabins or cotages. Two leagues from the towne, comming into the plaine field, he espied ten or eleuen Indians, among whom was a Christian, which was naked, and scorched with the Sunne, and had his armes razed after the manner of the Indians, and differed nothing at all from them. And assoone as the horsemen saw them they ran toward them. The Indians fled, and some of them hid themselves in a wood, and they ouertooke two or three of them, which were wounded: and the Christian, seeing an horseman runne vpon him with his lance, began to crie out, Sirs, I am a Christian, slay me not, nor these Indians, for they haue saued my life. And straightway he called them, and put them out of feare, and they came forth of the wood vnto them. The horse men tooke both the Christian and the Indians vp behind them; and toward night came into the Campe with much ioy: which thing being knowne by the Gouvernour, and them that remained in the Campe, they were receiued with the like.

Chap.

Chap. IX.

How this Christian came to the land of Florida, and who he was: and what conference he had with the Gouvernour.

This Christians name was Iohn Ortiz, and he was borne in Siuil, of worshipful parentage. John Ortiz liued 12. yeeres, among the Floridians of Vcita and Mocoço. He was 12. yeeres in the hands of the Indians. He came into this Countrey with Pamphilo de Naruaez, and returned in the ships to the Island of Cuba, where the wife of the Gouvernour Pamphilo de Naruaez was: and by his commandement with 20. or 30. other in a brigandine returned backe againe to Florida: and comming to the port in the sight of the towne, on the shore they saw a cane sticking in the ground, and riuen at the top, and a letter in it: and they beleued that the Gouvernour had left it there to giue aduertisement of himselfe, when he resolved to goe vp into the land: and they demanded it of foure or five Indians, which walked along the sea shore: and they bad them by signes to come on shore for it: which against the will of the rest Iohn Ortiz and another did. And assoone as they were on land, from the houses of the towne issued a great number of Indians, which compassed them about, and tooke them in a place where they could not flee: and the other which sought to defend himselfe, they presentlie killed vpon the place, and tooke Iohn Ortiz aliuie, and carried him to Vcita their Lord. And those of the brigandine sought not to land, but put themselves to sea, and returned to the Island of Cuba. Vcita commanded to bind Iohn Ortiz hand and foote vpon foure stakes aloft vpon a raft, and to make a fire vnder him, that there he might bee burned: But a daughter of his desired him that he would not put him to death, alleaging, that one only Christian could do him neither hurt nor good, telling him, that it was more for his honour to keepe him as a captiue. And Vcita granted her request, and commanded him to be cured of his wounds: and assoone as he was whole, he gaue him the charge of the keeping of the Temple: because that by night the wolues did cary away the dead corpses out of the same: who commended himselfe to God and tooke vpon him the charge of his temple. One night the wolues gate from him the corpses of a little child, the sonne of a principal Indian; and going after them he threw a darte at one of the wolues and strooke him that carried away the corps, who feeling himselfe wounded left it, and fell downe dead neere the place: and hee not woting what he had done, because it was night, went backe againe to the Temple: the morning being come, and finding not the bodie of the child, he was very sad. Assoone as Vcita knew thereof, he resolved to put him to death: and sent by the tract, which he said the wolues went, and found the bodie of the child, and the wolfe dead a little beyond: whereat Vcita was much contented with the Christian, and with the watch which hee kept in the Temple, and from thence forward esteemed him much. Three yeeres after hee fell into his hands, there came another Lord, called Mocoço, who dwelleth two daies iourney from the Port, and burned his towne. Mocoço dwelleth two daies iourney from Vcita. Vcita fled to another towne that he had in another sea port. Thus Iohn Ortiz lost his office and fauour that he had with him. These people being worshippers of the diuell, are wont to offer vp vnto him the liues and blood of their Indians, or of any other people they can come by: and they report, that when he will haue them doe that sacrifice vnto him, he speaketh with them, and telleth them that he is athirst, and willet them to sacrifice vnto him. Iohn Ortiz had notice by the damsell that had deliuered him from $\frac{1}{2}$ fire, how her father was determined to sacrifice him $\frac{1}{2}$ day following, who willed him to flee to Mocoço: for shee knew $\frac{1}{2}$ he would vse him wel: for she heard say, that he had asked for him, and said hee would bee glad to see him: and because he knew not the way, she went with him halfe a league out of the towne by night, and set him in the way, & returned, because she would not be discouered. Iohn Ortiz trauiailed all that night, and by $\frac{1}{2}$ morning came vnto a Riuer, which is in the territorie of Mocoço: and there he saw two Indians fishing; and because they were in war with the people of Vcita, and their languages were different, and hee knew not the laguage of Mocoço, he was afraid, because he could not tell them who hee was, nor how hee came thither, nor was able to answer any thing for himselfe, that they would kill him, taking him for one of the Indians

Christians might haue
m by night. In the
by two and two in
em, and were readie
aptaines of the horse-
one of them Andrew
r two were his kins-
taioz. The Captaines
the other Iuan Rodri-
s, which Iohn Danusco
ides and interpreters,
aped away one night,
d alreadie made some
ill of marish grounds,

ere was a Christian
ian Lord.

r, Baltasar de Gallegos
could take any Indians:
men, the most of them
bowmen. They passed
l. Halfe a league from
riuer: The people that
omen: And twentie In-
re to our campe, being,
warlike and so nimble,
harge them, they runne
And the thing that they
alwaies running and tra-
sebow nor arcubuse can
an Indian will discharge
at. An arrow, where it
s are very long, and their
strong, that a sharpe cane
pe bone of a fish like a
nants. For the most part
they are bound together.
hurtfull then the other.
nded, whereof one died;
aken in the cabins or cot-
l, he espied ten or eleuen
shed with the Sunne, and
nothing at all from them.
he Indians fled, and some
three of them, which were
n with his lance, began to
r they haue saued my life.
they came forth of the
e Indians vp behind them;
ing being knowne by the
eiuied with the like.

Chap.

Mocoço his
towne within
2. leagues of
the sea.

Paracossi 30.
leagues from
Puerto de Spirito
Santo.

Indians of Vcita, and before they espied him, he came to the place where they had laid their weapons: & assoone as they saw him, they fled toward the towne, and although he willed the to stay, because he meant to do the no hurt, yet they vnderstood him not, and ran away as fast as euer they could. And assoone as they came to the towne with great outcries, many Indians came forth against him, and began to compasse him to shoote at him: Iohn Ortiz seeing himselfe in so great danger, sheilded himselfe with certaine trees, and began to shreeke out, and crie very loud, and to tell them that he was a Christian, and that he was fled from Vcita, and was come to see and serue Mocoço his Lord. It pleased God that at that very instant there came thither an Indian that could speake the language and vnderstood him; and pacified the rest; who told them what hee said. Then ran from thence three or foure Indians to beare the newes to their Lord: who came forth a quarter of a league from the towne to receiue him; and was very glad of him. He caused him presently to swaere according to the custome of the Christians, that hee would not run away from him to any other Lord: and promised him to entreate him very well; and that if at any time there came any Christians into that countrie, he would freely let him goe, and giue him leaue to goe to them: and likewise tooke his oth to performe the same according to the Indian custome. About three yeeeres after certaine Indians, which were fishing at sea two leagues from the towne, brought newes to Mocoço that they had seene ships: and hee called Iohn Ortiz, and gaue him leaue to go his way: who taking his leaue of him, with all the haste he could came to the sea, and finding no ships, he thought it to be some deceit, and that the Cacique had done the same to learne his mind. So he dwelt with Mocoço nine yeeeres, with small hope of seeing any Christians. Assoone as our Gouvernour arriued in Florida, it was knowne to Mocoço, & straightway he signified to Iohn Ortiz, that Christians were lodged in the towne of Vcita: And he thought he had iested with him, as he had done before, and told him, that by this time he had forgotten the Christians, and thought of nothing else but to serue him. But he assured him that it was so, and gaue him licence to goe vnto them: saying vnto him, that if hee would not doe it, and if the Christians should goe their way, he should not blame him, for hee had fulfilled that which he had promised him. The ioy of Iohn Ortiz was so great, that hee could not beleue that it was true: notwithstanding he gaue him thanks, and tooke his leaue of him: and Mocoço gaue him tenne or eleuen principall Indians to beare him companie: and as they went to the port where the Gouvernour was, they met with Baltasar de Gallêgos, as I haue declared before. Assoone as he was come to the campe, the Gouvernour commanded to giue him a suite of apparrell, and very good armour, and a faire horse; and enquired of him, whether hee had notice of any countrie, where there was any gold or siluer: He answered, No, because he neuer went ten leagues compasse from the place where he dwelt: But that 30. leagues from thence dwelt an Indian Lord, which was called Parocossi, to whom Mocoço and Vcita, with al the rest of that coast paid tribute, and that hee peraduenture might haue notice of some good countrie: and that his land was better then that of the sea coast, and more fruitfull and plentifull of maiz. Whereof the Gouvernour receiued great contentment: and said that he desired no more then to finde victuals, that hee might goe into the maine land, for the land of Florida, was so large, that in one place or other there could not chuse but bee some rich Countrie. The Cacique Mocoço came to the Port to visit the Gouvernour and made this speech following.

Right hie and mightie Lord, I being lesser in mine owne conceit for to obey you, then any of those which you haue vnder your command; and greater in desire to doe you greater seruices, doe appeare before your Lordship with so much confidence of receiuing fauour, as if in effect this my good will were manifested vnto you in workes: not for the small seruice I did vnto you touching the Christian which I had in my power, in giuing him freely his libertie, (For I was bound to doe it to preserue mine honour, and that which I had promised him:) but because it is the part of great men to vse great magnificences: And I am perswaded, that as in bodily perfections, and commanding of good people, you doe exceede all men

where they had laid
e, and although he
stood him not, and
wne with great out-
n to shoote at him:
nine trees, and began
and that he was fled
God that at that very
vnderstood him; and
three or foure Indian.
ue from the towne
to sweare according
n to any other Lord:
ere came any Chris-
eue to goe to them:
ian custome. About
gues from the towne,
ohn Ortiz, and gaue
ste he could come to
that the Cacique had
res, with small hope
da, it was knowne to
e lodged in the towne
efore, and told him,
ing else but to serue
oe vnto them: saying
l goe their way, he
ed him. The ioy of
: notwithstanding he
him tenne or eleuen
ort where the Gouver-
efore. Assoone as he
uite of apparrell, and
hee had notice of any
ecause he neuer went
leagues from thence
e Vcita, with al the
e notice of some good
and more fruitfull and
ent: and said that he
aine land, for the land
huse but bee some rich
uernor and made this
to obey you, then any
ire to doe you greater
of receiuing fauour, as
ot for the small seruice
n giuing him freely his
at which I had promised
iencies: And I am per-
le, you doe exceede all
men

men in the world, so likewise you doe in the parts of the minde, in which you may boast of the bountie of nature. The fauour which I hope for of your Lordship is, that you would hold mee for yours, and bethinke your selfe to command me any thing, wherein I may doe you seruice.

The Gouvernour answered him, That although in freeing and sending him the Christian, he had preserved his honour and promise, yet he thanked him, and held it in such esteeme, as it had no comparison; and that hee would alwaies hold him as his brother, and would fauour him in all things to the utmost of his power. Then he commanded a shirt to be giuen him, and other things, where with the Cacique being verie well contented, tooke his leaue of him, and departed to his owne towne.

Chap. X.

How the Gouvernour sent the ships to Cuba: and left an hundred men at the Hauen de Spirito Santo, and himself with the rest of his people went into the maine land.

FROM the Port de Spirito Santo where the Gouvernour lay, he sent the Alcalde Mayor Baltasar de Gallégo with 50. horsemen, and 30. or 40. footemen to the prouince of Paracossi, to view the disposition of the countrie, and enforme himselfe of the land farther inward, and to send him word of such things as he found. Likewise he sent his shippes backe to the Iland of Cuba, that they might returne within a certaine time with victuals. Vasques Porcallo de Figueroa, which went with the Gouvernour as Captaine Generall, (whose principall intent was to send slaues from Florida, to the Iland of Cuba, where he had his goods and mines;) hauing made some inrodes, and seeing no Indians were to be got, because of the great bogs and thicke woods y were in the Countrie, considering the disposition of the same, determined to returne to Cuba. And though there was some difference between him & the Gouvernour, whereupon they neither dealt nor conuersed together with good countenance, yet notwithstanding with louing words he asked him leaue and departed from him. Baltasar de Gallégo came to the Paracossi: There came to him 30. Indians from the Cacique, which was absent from his towne, and one of them made this speech:

Paracossi, the Lord of this prouince, whose vassals we are, sendeth vs vnto your worship, to know what it is that you seeke in this his Countrie, and wherein he may doe you seruice.

Baltasar de Gallegos said vnto him, that hee thanked them very much for their offer, willing them to warne their Lord to come to his towne, and that there they would talke and confirme their peace and friendship, which he much desired. The Indians went their way, and returned the next day, and said, that their Lord was ill at ease, and therefore could not come, but that they came on his behalfe to see what he demanded. He asked them if they knew or had notice of any rich Countrie where there was gold or siluer. They told them, they did: and that toward the West, there was a Prouince which was called Cale; and that others that inhabited other Countries had warre with the people of that Countrie, where the most part of the yeere was sommer, and that there was much gold: and that when those their enemies came to make warre with them of Cale, these inhabitants of Cale did weare hats of gold, in manner of head peeces. Baltasar de Gallegos, seeing that the Cacique came not, thinking all that they said was fained, with intent that in the meane time they might set themselves in safetie, fearing, that if he did let them goe, they would returne no more, commanded the thirty Indians to be chained, and sent word to the Gouvernour, by eight horsemen, what had passed: whereof the Gouvernour with al that were with him, at the Port de Spirito Santo receiued great comfort, supposing, that that which the Indians reported, might be true. Hee left Captaine Calderan at the Port, with thirtie horsemen, and seuentie footemen, with prouision for two yeeres, and himselfe with all the rest marched into the maine land, and came to the Paracossi, at whose towne Baltasar de Gallegos was: and from thence with all his men tooke the way to Cale. He passed by a little towne called Acela,

Acela.
Tocaste.
Another towne.
A Lake.
A swift Riuer.

Cale.

Acela, and came to another, called Tocaste: and from thence hee went before with 30. horsemen, and 50. footemen toward Cale. And passing by a towne, whence the people were fled, they saw Indians a little from thence in a lake; to whom the Interpretour spake. They came vnto them and gaue them an Indian for a guide: and hee came to a Riuer with a great current, and vpon a tree, which was in the midst of it, was made a bridge, whereon the men passed: the horses swam ouer by a hawser, that they were pulled by from the otherside: for one, which they droue in at the first without it, was drowned. From thence the Gouvernour sent two horsemen to his people that were behind, to make haste after him; because the way grew long, and their victuals short. Hee came to Cale, and found the towne without people. He tooke three Indians, which were spies, and tarried there for his people that came after, which were sore vexed with hunger and euill waies, because the Countrie was very barren of Maiz, low, and full of water, bogs, and thicke woods; and the victuals, which they brought with them from the Port de Spirito Santo, were spent. Whersoever any towne was found, there were some beetes, and hee that came first gathered them, and sodden with water and salt, did eate them without any other thing: and such as could not get them, gathered the stalkes of Maiz and eate them, which because they were young, had no Maiz in them. When they came to the Riuer which the Gouvernour had passed, they found palmitos vpon low Palmettrees like those of Andaluzia. There they met with the two horsemen which the Gouvernour sent vnto them, and they brought newes that in Cale there was plentie of Maiz: at which newes they all reioyced. Assoone as they came to Cale, the Gouvernour commanded them to gather all the Maiz that was ripe in the field, which was sufficient for three moneths. At the gathering of it the Indians killed three Christians, and one of them which were taken told the Gouvernour that within seuen dayes iournie, there was a very great Prouince, and plentifull of Maiz, which was called Apalache. And presently hee departed from Cale with 50. horsemen, and 60. footemen. He left the master of the Campe Luys de Moscoso with all the rest of the people there, with charge that hee should not depart thence vntill he had word from him. And because hitherto none had gotten any slaues, the bread that euery one was to eate, he was faine himselfe to beate in a mortar made in a peece of timber with a pestle, and some of them did sift the flower through their shirts of maile. They baked their bread vpon certaine tilshares which they set ouer the fire, in such sort as heretofore I haue said they vse to doe in Cuba. It is so troublesome to grind their Maiz, that there were many that would rather not eate it, then grind it: and did eate the Maiz parched and sodden.

Chap. XI.

How the Gouvernour came to Caliquen, and carrying from thence the Cacique with him went to Napetuca, where the Indians sought to haue taken him from him, and in an assault many of them were slaine, and taken prisoners.

Ytara.
Potano.
Vtinamo.
The towne of
Euil peace.

THE 11. day of August 1539. the Gouvernour departed from Cale: hee lodged in a little town called Ytara, and the next day in another called Potano, and the third day at Vtinamo, and came to another towne, which they named the towne of Euil peace; because an Indian came in peace, saying, That he was the Cacique, and that he with his people would serue the Gouvernour, and that if he would set free 28. persons, men and women, which his men had taken the night before, he would command prouision to be brought him, and would giue him a guide to instruct him in his way: The Gouvernour commanded them to be set at libertie, and to keepe him in safegard. The next day in the morning there came many Indians, and set themselves round about the towne neere to a wood. The Indian wished them to carrie him neere them; and that he would speake vnto them, and assure them, and that they would doe whatsoever hee commanded them. And when he saw himselfe neere vnto them he brake from them, and ran away so swiftly from the Christians, that there was none that could ouertake him, and all of them fled into the woods. The Gouvernour commanded to loose a grayhound, which was alreadye fleshed on them which

went before with 30. whence the people Interpreter spake. hee came to a Riuer was made a bridge, at they were pulled out it, was drowned, were behind, to make short. Hee came to ns, which were spies, with hunger and euill water, bogs, and thicke de Spirito Santo, were s, and hee that came without any other thing: and ate them, which me to the Riuer which trees like those of Anour sent vnto them, and newes they all reioiced. gather all the Maiz that gathering of it the ne Governour that within full of Maiz, which was horsemen, and 60. footmen the rest of the people word from him. And one was to eate, he was h a pestle, and some of their bread vpon certaine ore I haue said they se t there were many that ched and sodden.

thence the Cacique haue taken him from en prisoners.

le: hee lodged in a little no, and the third day at ne of Euil peace; because that he with his people persons, men and women, rousion to be brought him, uernour commanded them day in the morning there wne neere to a wood. The ould speake vnto them, and ded them. And when he y so swiftly from the Chris- f them fled into the woods alreadie fleshed on them which

which passing by many other Indians, caught the counterfait Cacique, which had escaped from the Christians, and held him till they came to take him. From thence the Gouvernour lodged at a towne called Cholupaha: and because it had store of Maiz in it, they named it Villa farta. Beyond the same there was a Riuer, on which he made a bridge of timber, and trauelled two daies through a desert. The 17. of August, he came to Caliquen, where he was informed of the Prouince of Apalache: They told him that Pamphilo de Naruaez had bin there, and that there hee tooke shipping, because hee could find no way to goe forward: That there was none other towne at al; but that on both sides was all water. The whole companie were very sad for these newes; and counselled the Gouvernour to goe backe to the Port de Spirito Santo, and to abandon the Countrie of Florida, lest hee should perish as Naruaez had done: declaring, that if he went forward, he could not returne backe when he would, and that the Indians would gather vp that small quantitie of Maiz which was left. Whereunto the Gouvernour answered, that he would not go backe, till he had seene with his eies that which they reported: saying, that he could not beleuee it, and that wee should be put out of doubt before it were long. And he sent to Luys de Moscoso to come presently from Cale, and that he tarried for him here. Luys de Moscoso and many others thought, that from Apalache they should returne backe; and in Cale they buried their yron tooles, and diuers other things. They came to Caliquen with great trouble; because the Countrie, which the Gouvernour had passed by, was spoiled and destitute of Maiz. After all the people were come together, hee commanded a bridge to bee made ouer a Riuer that passed neere the towne. Hee departed from Caliquen the 10. of September, and carried the Cacique with him. After hee had trauelled three daies, there came Indians peaceably, to visit their Lord, and euery day met vs on the way playing vpon flutes: which is a token that they vse, that men may know that they come in peace. They said, that in our way before there was a Cacique, whose name was Vzachil, a kinsman of the Cacique of Caliquen their Lord, waiting for him with many presents, and they desired the Gouvernour that he would loose the Cacique. But he would not, fearing that they would rise, and would not giue him any guides, & sent them away from day to day with good words. He trauelled fise daies, he passed by some smal townes, he came to a towne called Napetuca, the 15. day of September. Thither came 14. or 15. Indians, and besought the Gouvernour to let loose the Cacique of Caliquen their Lord. He answered them that he held him not in prison, but that hee would haue him to accompanie him to Vzachil. The Gouvernour had notice by Iohn Ortiz, that an Indian told him how they determined to gather themselves together, and come vpon him, and giue him battell, and take away the Cacique from him. The day that it was agreed vpon, the Gouvernour commanded his men to bee in a readines, and that the horsemen should bee readie armed and on horsebacke euery one in his lodging, because the Indians might not see them, and so more confidently come to the towne. There came foure hundred Indians in sight of the campe with their bowes and arrowes, and placed themselves in a wood, and sent two Indians to bid the Gouvernour to deliuer them the Cacique. The Gouvernour with sixe footemen leading the Cacique by the hand, and talking with him, to secure the Indians, went toward the place where they were: And seeing a fit time, commanded to sound a trumpet: and presently those that were in the towne in the houses, both horse and foot, set vpon the Indians, which were so suddenly assaulted, that the greatest care they had was which way they should flee: They killed two horses; one was the Gouvernours, and hee was presently horsed againe vpon another. There were 30. or 40. Indians slaine. The rest fled to two very great lakes, that were somewhat distant the one from the other: There they were swimming, and the Christians round about them. The calieuermen and crossebowmen shot at them from the banke: but the distance being great and shooting asfarre off, they did them no hurt. The Gouvernour commanded that the same night they should compasse one of the lakes, because they were so great, that there were not mē enow to compasse them both: being beset, assoone as night shut in, the Indians, with determination to runne away, came swimming very softly to the banke; and to hide themselves, they put a water lillie leafe on their heads. The horsemen

Cholupaha.
A Riuer.
Caliquen.

A Riuer.

Some small
townes.
Napetuca.

Two very great
lakes.

A new conspiracy.

Two hundred Indians taken.

horsemen assoone as they perceiued it to stirre, ran into the water to the horses breasts, and the Indians fled againe into the lake. So this night passed without any rest on both sides. Iohn Ortiz perswaded them, that seeing they could not escape, they should yeeld themselves to the Gouverneur: which they did, enforced thereunto by the coldnes of the water; and one by one, hee first whom the cold did first ouercome, cried to Iohn Ortiz desiring that they would not kill him, for he came to put himselfe into the hands of the Gouverneur. By the morning watch they made an end of yeelding themselves: only 12. principall men, being more honorable and valorous then the rest, resolved rather to die then to come into his hands. And the Indians of Paracossi, which were now loosed out of chaines, went swimming to them, and pulled them out by the haire of their heads, and they were all put in chaines; and the next day were diuided among the Christians for their seruice. Being thus in captiuitie, they determined to rebell; and gaue in charge to an Indian, which was interpretour, and held to be valiant, that assoone as the Gouverneur did come to speak with him, hee should cast his hands about his necke, and choke him: Who, whē he saw opportunitie, laid hands on the Gouverneur, and before he cast his hands about his necke, he gaue him such a blow on the nostrils, that hee made them gush out with blood, and presently all the rest did rise. He that could get any weapons at hand, or the handle wherewith he did grind the Maiz, sought to kill his master, or the first hee met before him: and hee that could get a lance or sword at hand, bestirred himselfe in such sort with it, as though he had vsed it all his life time. One Indian in the market place enclosed betweene 15. or 20. footemen, made a way like a bull with a sword in his hand, till certaine halbardiers of the Gouverneur came, which killed him. Another gat vp with a lance to a loft made of canes, which they build to keepe their Maiz in, which they call a Barbacoa, and there hee made such a noise, as though tenne men had been there defending the doore: they slew him with a partisan. The Indians were in all about two hundred men. They were all subdued. And some of the youngest the Gouverneur gaue to them which had good chaines, and were carefull to looke to them that they gat not away. Al the rest he commanded to be put to death, being tied to a stake in the midst of the market place: and the Indians of the Paracossi did shoote them to death.

Chap. XII.

How the Gouverneur came to Apalache, and was informed, that within the land, there was much gold.

A Riuer.

Hapaluya a great towne.
Vzachil.
• Aboborau.

THE Gouverneur departed from Napetuca the 23. of September: he lodged by a Riuer, where two Indians brought him a buck from the Cacique of Vzachil. The next day he passed by a great towne called Hapaluya; and lodged at Vzachil, and found no people in it, because they durst not tarrie for the notice the Indians had of the slaughter of Napetuca. He found in that towne great store of Maiz, French beanes, and * pompions, which is their foode, and that wherewith the Christians there sustained themselves. The Maiz is like course millet, and the pompions are better and more sauorie than those of Spaine. From thence the Gouverneur sent two Captaines each a sundry way to seeke the Indians. They tooke an hundred men and women: of which aswel there as in other places where they made any inrodes, the Captaine chose one or two for the Gouverneur, and diuided the rest to himselfe, and these that went with him. They led these Indians in chaines with yron collars about their neckes: and they serued to carrie their stufle, and to grind their Maiz, and for other seruices that such captiues could doe. Sometimes it happened that going for wood or Maiz with them, they killed the Christian that led them, and ran away with the chaine: others filed their chaines by night with a peece of stone, wherewith they cut them, and vse it in stead of yron. Those that were perceiued paid for themselves, and for the rest, because they should not dare to doe the like another time. The women and young boyes, when they were once an hundred leagues from their Countrey, and had forgotten things, they let goe loose, and so they serued; and in a very short space they vnderstood

to the horses breasts, out any rest on both e, they should yeeld y the coldnes of the y cried to Iohn Ortiz to the hands of the themselves: only 12. resolved rather to die e now loosed out of e of their heads, and e Christians for their gaue in charge to an as the Gouvernour did and choke him: Who, e cast his hands about e them gush out with eapons at hand, or the e, or the first hee met rred himselfe in such e the market place en- sword in his hand, till er gat vp with a lance which they call a Bar- been there defending out two hundred men. r gaue to them which ot away. Al the rest of the market place:

within the land,

he lodged by a Riuer, hil. The next day he d found no peopie in it, slaughter of Napetua. ompions, which is their lues. The Maiz is like those of Spaine. From ke the Indians. They other places where they ur, and diuided the rest ans in chaines with yron and to grind their Maiz, appened that going for and ran away with the e, wherewith they cut aid for themselves, and time. The women and r Countrie, and had for a very short space they vnderstood

vnderstood the language of the Christians. From Vzachil the Gouvernour departed toward Apalache, and in two daies iournie, hee came to a towne called Axille, and from thence Axille. forward the Indians were carelesse, because they had as yet no notice of the Christians. The next day in the morning, the first of October, he departed from thence, and com- manded a bridge to bee made ouer a Riuer which hee was to passe. The deepe of the A Riuer. Riuer where the bridge was made, was a stones cast, and forward a crossebow shot the water came to the waste; and the wood, whereby the Indians came to see if they could defend the passage, and disturbe those which made the bridge, was very hie and thicke. The crossebow men so bestirred themselves that they made them giue back: and certain plancks were cast into the Riuer, whereon the men passed, which made good the passage. The Gouvernour passed vpō Wednesday, which was S. Francis his day, and lodged at a towne which was called Vitachuco, subiect to Apalache: he found it burning; for the Indians had set it on fire. From thence forward the countrie was much inhabited, and had great store of Maiz. Hee passed by many granges like hamlets. On Sunday the 25. of October, he came to a towne, which is called Vzela, and vpon Tuesday to Anaica Apalache, where the Lord of all that Countrie and Prouince was resident: in which towne the Campemaster, whose office it is to quarter out, and lodge men, did lodge all the companie round about within a league, and halfe a league of it. There were other townes, where was great store of Maiz, Pompions, French Beanes, and Plummes of the Countrie, which are better then those of Spaine, and they grow in the fields without planting. The victuals that were thought necessarie to passe the winter, were gathered from these townes to Anaica Apalache. The Gouvernour was informed, that the sea was ten leagues from thence. Hee presently sent a Capitaine thither with horsemen and footemen: And sixe leagues on the way, he found a towne, which was named Ochete, and so came to the sea; and found a great tree felled, and cut into peeces, with stakes set vp like mangers, and saw the skulles of horses. Hee returned with this newes. And that was held for certaine, which was reported of Pamphilo de Naruaz, that there hee had builded the barkes wherewith he went out of the land of Florida, and was cast away at Sea. Presently the Gouvernour sent Iohn Danusco with 30. horsemen to the port de Spiritu Santo, where Calderan was, with order, that they should abandon the port, and all of them come to Apalache. Hee departed on Saturday the 17. of Nouember. In Vzachil and other townes that stood in the way he found great store of people alreadie carelesse. Hee would take none of the Indians, for not hindring himselfe, because it behooued him to giue them no leasure to gather themselves together. He passed through the townes by night, and rested without the townes three or foure houres. In tenne daies he came to the Port de Spirito Santo. He carried with him 20. Indian women, which he tooke in Ytara, and Potano, neere vnto Cale, and sent them to Donna Isabella in the two carauels, which hee sent from the Port de Spirito Santo to Cuba. And he carried all the footemen in the brigandines, and coasting along the shore, came to Apalache. And Calderan with the horsemen, and some crosse-bowmen on foote went by land; and in some places the Indians set vpon him, and wounded some of his men. Assoone as he came to Apalache; presently the Gouvernour sent sawed planks and spikes to the sea-side, wherewith was made a piragna or barke, wherein were embarked 30. men well armed; which went out of the Bay to the Sea, looking for the brigandines. Sometimes they fought with the Indians, which passed along the harbour in their canoes. Vpon Saturday the 29. of Nouember, there came an Indian through the Watch vndiscovered, and set the towne on fire, and with the great wind that blew, two parts of it were consumed in a short time. On Sondag the 28. of December came Iohn Danusco with the brigandines. The Gouvernour sent Francisco Maldonado a Capitaine of footemen with 50. men to discover the coast Westward, and to seeke some Port, because he had determined to go by land, and discover y part. That day there went out eight horsemen by commandement of the Gouvernour into the field, two leagues about the towne to seeke Indians: for they were now so emboldened, that within two crossebow shot of y camp, they came and slew men. They found two men and a woman gathering French Beanes: the men, though they might haue fled, yet because

Vitachuco.

October 25.

Vzela. Anaica Apalache.

Apalache within 10 leagues of the sea. Ochete. The sea.

The Port de Spiritu Santo tenne daies iournie from Apalache.

Nouem. 29.

Decem. 28.

they would not leaue the woman, which was one of their wiues, they resolu'd to die fighting: and before they were slaine, they wounded three horses, whereof one died within a few daies after. Calderan going with his men by the Sea-coast, from a wood that was neere the place, the Indians set vpon him, and made him forsake his way, and many of them that went with him forsooke some necessarie victuals, which they carried with them. Three or foure daies after the limited time giuen by the Gouvernour to Maldonado for his going and coming, being already determined and resolu'd, if within eight daies he did not come to tarrie no longer for him, he came, and brought an Indian from a Prouince, which was called Ochus, sixtie leagues Westward from Apalache; where he had found a good Port of good depth and defense against weather. And because the Gouvernor hoped to find a good cuntry forward, he was very well contented. And he sent Maldonado for victuals to Hauana, with order, that he should tarrie for him at the Port of Ochus, which hee had discovered, for hee would goe seeke it by land: and if he should chance to stay, and not come thither that summer, that then hee should returne to Hauana, and should come againe the next summer after, and tarrie for him at that port: for hee said hee would doe none other thing but goe to seeke Ochus. Francisco Maldonado departed, and in his place for Captaine of the footemen remained Iohn de Guzman. "Of those Indians which were taken in Napetuca, the treasurer Iohn Gaytan had a young man, which said, that he was not of that Cuntry, but of another farre off toward the Sunrising, and that it was long since he had trauelled to see Countries; and that his Cuntry was called Yupaha, and that a woman did gouerne it: and that the towne where she was resident was of a wonderfull bignesse, and that many Lords round about were tributaries to her: and some gaue her clothes, and others gold in abundance: and hee told, how it was taken out of the mines, and was moulten and refined, as if hee had seene it done, or the diuel had taught it him." So that all those which knew any thing concerning the same, said that it was impossible to giue so good a relation, without hauing seene it: And all of them, as if they had seene it, by the signes that he gaue, beleued all that he said to be true.

Chap. XIII.

How the Gouvernour departed from Apalache to seeke Yupaha, and of that which happened vnto him.

March the 3.
1540.

ON Wednesday the third of March, of the yeere 1540. the Gouvernor departed from Anaica Apalache to seeke Yupaha. He commanded his men to goe prouided with Maiz for sixtie leagues of desert. The horsemen carried their Maiz on their horses, and the footemen at their sides: because the Indians that were for seruice, with their miserable life that they lead that winter, being naked and in chaines, died for the most part. Within foure daies iournie they came to a great Riuer: and they made a piragua or ferrie bote, and because of the great current, they made a cable with chaines, which they fastened on both sides of the Riuer; and the ferrie bote went along by it; and the horses swam ouer, being drawne with capstans. Hauing passed the Riuer, in a day and an halfe, they came to a towne called Capachiqui. Vpon Friday, the 11. of March, they found Indians in armes. The next day fise Christians went to seeke morters, which the Indians haue to beate their Maiz, and they went to certaine houses on the backside of the Campe enuironed with a wood: And within the wood were many Indians which came to spie vs; of the which came other fise and set vpon vs. One of the Christians came running away, giuing an alarme vnto the Campe. Those which were most readie answered the alarme. They found one Christian dead, and three sore wounded. The Indians fled vnto a lake adioyning neere a very thicke wood, where the horses could not enter. The Gouvernour departed from Capachiqui, and passed through a desert. On Wednesday the 21. of the month he came to a towne called Toalli: And from thence forward there was a difference in the houses. For those which were behind vs were thatched with straw, and those of Toalli were couered with reeds, in manner of tiles. These houses are verie cleanly. Some of them had walles daubed with clay, which shewed like a mudwall. In all the cold cuntry the Indians haue euery one a house for the winter daubed

A great Riuer.

Capachiqui.

Toalli.

Ochus 60.
leagues West of
Apalache.

Chap. 11.

Abundance of
gold.

couerte of Florida,

ued to die fighting:
died within a few
d that was neere the
ny of them that went
em. Three or foure
his going and com-
he did not come to
nce, which was called
a good Port of good
o find a good cuntry
uals to Hauana, with
e had discovered, for
not come thither that
ine the next summer
e other thing but goe
Captaine of the foote.
aken in Napetuca, the
of that COUNTRY, but
e he had trauelled to
woman did gouerne it:
se, and that many Lords
d others gold in abun-
dulten and refined, as if
those which knew any
ood a relation, without
ignes that he gaue, be-

and of that which

or departed from Anaica
ded with Maiz for sixtie
es, and the footemen at
miserable life that they
art. Within foure daies
errie bote, and because of
ned on both sides of the
ouer, being drawne with
came to a towne called
in armes. The next day
ate their Maiz, and they
with a wood: And within
came other five and set
h alarme vnto the Campe
d one Christian dead, and
neere a very thicke wood.
m Capachiqui, and passed
e to a towne called Toalli:
or those which were behind
th reeds, in manner of tiles.
with clay, which shewed like
ne a house for the winter
daubed

next adioyning to Virginia. **TRAFFIQUES, AND DISCOVERIES.**

499

daubed with clay within and without, and the doore is very little: they shut it by night, and make fire within; so that they are in it as warme as in a stoue: and so it continueth all night that they need not clothes: and besides these, they haue others for summer; and their kitchins neere them, where they make fire and bake their bread: and they haue barbacoas wherein they keepe their Maiz; which is an house set vp in the aire vpon foure stakes, boorded about like a chamber, and the floore of it is of cane hurdles. The differēce which Lords or principall mens houses haue from the rest, besides they be greater, is, that they haue great galleries in their fronts, and vnder them seates made of canes in manner of benches: and round about them they haue many lofts, wherein they lay vp that which the Indians doe giue them for tribute, which is Maiz, Deeres skins, and mantles of the COUNTRY, which are like blankets: they make them of the inner rinde of the barks of trees, and some of a kind of grasse like vnto nettles, which being beaten, is like vnto flaxe. ^{A grasse like flaxe.} The women couer themselves with these mantles; they put one about them from the wast downe-ward; and another ouer their shoulder, with their right arme out, like vnto the Egyptians. The men weare but one mantle vpon their shoulders after the same manner: and haue their secrets hid with a Deeres skin, made like a linen breech, which was wont to be vsed in Spaine. The skins are well corried, and they giue them what colour they list, so perfect, that if it be red, it seemeth a very fine cloath in graine, and the blacke is most fine: and of the same leather they make shooes; and they die their mantles in the same colours. ^{Excellent colours.} The Gouverneur departed from Toalli the 24. of March: he came on Thursday at euening to a small Riuer, ^{A small Riuer.} where a bridge was made whereon the people passed, and Benit Fernandez a Portugall fell off from it, and was drowned. Assoone as the Gouverneur had passed the Riuer, a little distance thence he found a towne called Achese. The Indians had no notice of the Christians: Achese. they leaped into a Riuer: some men and women were taken; among which was one that vnderstood the youth which guided the Gouverneur to Yupaha: whereby that which he had reported was more confirmed. For they had passed through Countries of diuers languages, and some which he vnderstood not. The Gouverneur sent by one of the Indians that were taken to call the Cacique, which was on the other side of the Riuer. Hee came and made this speech following:

Right high, right mightie, and excellent Lord, those things which seldome happen doe cause admiration. What then may the sight of your Lordship, and your people doe to mee and mine, whom we neuer saw? especially being mounted on such fierce beasts as your horses are, entring with such violence and furie into my COUNTRY, without my knowledge of your comming. It was a thing so strange, and caused such feare and terrour in our mindes, that it was not in our power to stay and receiue your Lordship with the solemnitie due to so high and renowned a Prince, as your Lordship is. And trusting in your greatnesse and singular vertues, I doe not onely hope to be freed from blame, but also to receiue fauours: and the first which I demand of your Lordship is, that you will vse me, my COUNTRY, and subiects as your owne: and the second, that you will tell mee who you are, and whence you come, and whither you goe, and what you seeke, that I the better may serue you therein.

The Gouverneur answered him, that hee thanked him as much for his offer and good will, as if hee had receiued it, and as if hee had offered him a great treasure: and told him that he was the sonne of the Sun, and came from those parts where he dwelt, and trauelled through that COUNTRY, and sought the greatest Lord, and richest Prouince that was in it. The Cacique told him; that farther forward dwelt a great Lord, and that his dominion was called Ocute. He gaue him a guide, and an interpretour for that Prouince. The Gouverneur commanded his Indians to bee set free, and trauelled through his COUNTRY vp a Riuer very well ^{A Riuer very well inhabited.} inhabited. He departed from his towne the first of Aprill; and left a very high crosse of Wood set vp in the midst of the market place: and because the time gaue no more leasure, hee declared to him onely, that that crosse was a memorie of f same, whereon Christ, which was God and man, and created the heauens and the earth, suffered for our saluation: therefore he exhorted them that they should reuerence it: and they made shew as though they would doe so. The fourth of Aprill the Gouverneur passed by a towne called Altamaca, ^{Altamaca.} and

Ocute.

Conies, Partridges,
Hens, Dogges.

the 10. of the moneth he came to Ocute. The Cacique sent him two thousand Indians with a present, to wit, many conies, and partridges, bread of Maiz, two hens, and many dogs: which among the Christians were esteemed as if they had been fat wethers, because of the great want of flesh meate and salt, and hereof in many places, and many times was great need; and they were so scarce, that if a man fell sicke, there was nothing to cherish him withall: and with a sicknesse, that in another place easilie might have been remedied, he consumed away till nothing but skinne and bones were left: and they died of pure weaknes, some of them saying, If I had a slice of meate, or a few cornes of salt, I should not die. The Indians want no fleshmeat: for they kill with their arrowes many deere, hennes, conies, and other wild fowle: for they are very cunning at it: which skill the Christians had not: and though they had it, they had no leasure to vse it: for the most of the time they spent in trauell, and durst not presume to straggle aside. And because they were thus scant of flesh, when sixe hundred men that went with Soto, came to any towne, and found 30. or 40. dogs, he that could get one and kill it, thought himselfe no small man: and he that killed it, and gaue not his Captaine one quarter, if he knew it, he frowned on him, and made him feele it, in the watches, or in any other matter of labour that was offered, wherein hee might doe him a displeasure. On Monday the 12. of Aprill, the Gouvernour departed from Ocute: The Cacique gaue him two hundred Tamenes, to wit, Indians to carrie burdens: hee passed through a towne, the Lord whereof was named Cofaqui, and came to a prouince of an Indian Lord, called Patofa, who, because he was in peace with the Lord of Ocute, and with the other bordering Lords, had many daies before notice of the Gouvernour, and desired to see him: He came to visit him, and made this speech following.

Cofaqui.
Patofa.

Mightie Lord, now with good reason I will craue of fortune to requite this my so great prosperitie with some small aduersitie; and I will count my selfe verie rich, seeing I haue obtained that, which in this world I most desired, which is, to see, and bee able to doe your Lordship some seruice. And although the tongue bee the image of that which is in the heart, and that the contentment which I feele in my heart I cannot dissemble, yet is it not sufficient wholly to manifest the same. Where did this your Countrie, which I doe governe, deserue to be visited of so soueraigne, and so excellent a Prince, whom all the rest of the world ought to obey and serue? And those which inhabit it being so base, what shall bee the issue of such happines, if their memorie doe not represent vnto them some aduersitie that may betide them, according to the order of fortune? If from this day forward we may be capable of this benefit, that your Lordship will hold vs for your owne, we cannot faile to be fauoured and maintained in true iustice and reason, and to haue the name of men. For such as are void of reason and iustice, may bee compared to brute beasts. For mine owne part, from my very heart with reuerence due to such a Prince. I offer my selfe vnto your Lordship, & beseech you; that in reward of this my true good will, you will vouchsafe to make vse of mine owne person, my Countrie, and subiects.

An excellent
Countrie for 50.
leagues.

The Gouvernour answered him, that his offers and good wil declared by the effect, did highly please him, whereof he would alwaies be mindfull to honour and fauour him as his brother. This Countrie, from the first peaceable Cacique, vnto the Prouince of Patofa, which were fiftie leagues, is a fat Countrie, beautifull, and very fruitfull, and very well watered, and full of good Riuers. And from thence to the Port de Spirito Santo, where wee first arriued in the land of Florida, (which may bee 350. leagues little more or lesse) is a barren land, and the most of it groues of wild Pine-trees, low and full of lakes, and in some places very hie and thicke groues, whither the Indians that were in armes fled, so that no man could find them, neither could any horses enter into them. Which was an inconuenience to the Christians, in regard of the victuals which they found conueied away; and of the trouble which they had in seeking of Indians to bee their guides.

ousand Indians with
p, and many dogs:
hers, because of the
any times was great
ing to cherish him
been remedied, he
ied of pure weaknes,
it, I should not die.
ere, hennes, conies,
Christians had not:
the time they spent
were thus scantied of
and found 30. or 40.
n: and he that killed
on him, and made him
ed, wherein hee might
departed from Ocute:
burdens: hee passed
prouince of an Indian
Ocute, and with the
ur, and desired to see

quite this my so great
ie rich, seeing I haue
d bee able to doe your
of that which is in the
dissemble, yet is it not
e, which I doe gouerne,
hom all the rest of the
o base, what shall bee
o them some aduersitie
his day forward we may
owne, we cannot faile
haue the name of men.
rute beasts. For mine
e. I offer my selfe vnto
d will, you will vouch-

clared by the effect, did
r and fauour him as his
the Prouince of Patofa,
itfull, and very well wa-
Spirito Santo, where wee
little more or lesse) is a
full of lakes, and in some
n armes fled, so that no
Which was an inconue-
d coucieed away; and of
es.

Chap.

Chap. XIII.

How the Gouvernour departed from the Prouince of Patofa, and went through a desert, where he and all his men fell into great distresse, and extreme miserie.

IN the towne of Patofa the youth, which the Gouvernour carried with him for an interpreter and a guide, began to fume at the mouth, and tumble on the ground, as one possessed with the diuell: They said a Gospell ouer him; and the fit left him. And he said, that foure daies iournie from thence toward the Sunne rising, was the prouince that he spake of. The Indians of Patofa said, that toward that part they knew no habitation; but that toward the Northwest, they knew a Prouince which was called Coça, a verie plentifull countrie, which had very great townes in it. The Cacique told the Gouvernour, that if he would go thither, he would giue him guides and Indians for burdens; and if he would goe whither the youth spake of, that he would likewise giue him those that he needed: and so with louing words and offers of courtesie, they tooke their leaues the one of the other. Hee gaue him seuen hundred Indians to beare burdens. He tooke Maiz for foure daies iournie. Hee trauelled sixe daies by a path which grew narrow more and more, till it was lost altogether: He went where the youth did lead him, and passed two Riuers which were waded: each of them was two crossebowshot ouer: the water came to the stirrups, and had so great a current, that it was needfull for the horsemen to stand one before another, that the footemen might passe about them leaning vnto them. He came to another Riuer of a greater current and largenes, which was passed with more trouble, because the horses did swim at the comming out about a lances length. Hauing passed this Riuer, the Gouvernour came to a groue of pinetrees, and threatned the youth, and made as though hee would haue cast him to the dogges, because he had told him a lie, saying, it was but foure daies iournie, and they had trauelled nine, and euery day 7. or 8. leagues, and the men by this time were growne wearie and weake, and the horses leane through the great scanting of the Maiz. The youth said, that hee knew not where hee was. It saued him that he was not cast to the dogges, that there was neuer another whom Iohn Ortiz did vnderstand. The Gouvernour with them two, and with some horsemen and footemen, leauing the Campe in a groue of pinetrees, trauelled that day 5. or 6. leagues to seek a way, and returned at night very comfortlesse, and without finding any signe of way or towne. The next day there were sundrie opinions deliuered, whether they should goe backe, or what they should doe: and because backward the Countrie whereby they had passed was greatly spoiled and destitute of Maiz, and that which they brought with them was spent, and the men were very weake, and the horses likewise, they doubted much whether they might come to any place where they might helpe themselves. And besides this, they were of opinion, that going in that sort out of order, that any Indians would presume to set vpon them, so that with hunger, or with warre, they could not escape. The Gouvernour determined to send horsemen from thence euery way to seeké habitation: and the next day he sent foure Capitaines, euery one a sundrie way with eight horsemen. At night they came againe, leading their horses, or driving them with a stick before; for they were so wearie, that they could not lead them; neither found they any way nor signe of habitation. The next day, the Gouvernour sent other foure with as many horsemen that could swim, to passe the Ose and Riuers which they should find, and they had choice horses the best that were in the Campe. The Capitaines were Baltasar de Gallegos, which went vp the Riuer; and Iohn Danusco, downe the Riuer: Alfonso Romo, and Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo went into the inward parts of the land. The Gouvernour brought with him into Florida thirteene sowes, and had by this time three hundred swine: He commanded euery man should haue halfe a pound of hogs flesh euery day: and this hee did three or foure daies after the Maiz was all spent. With this small quantitie of flesh, and some sodden hearbs, with much trouble the people were sustained. The Gouvernour dismissed 5 Indians of Patofa, because hee had no food to giue them; who desiring to accompanie and serue the Christians in their necessitie, making shew that it grieved them very much to returne, vntill they had left them

Two swift Ri-
uers.

Another greater
Riuer.

Nine daies
iournie.

The great in-
crease of swine.

in

Aymay.

An Indian burn-
ed for his false-
hood.

Cutifa-Chiqui.

A great cordon
of perles.
They passe the
Riuer.
Cutifa-Chiqui.

in a peopled Countrey, returned to their owne home. Iohn Danusco came on Sunday late in the euening, and brought newes that he had found a little towne 12. or 13. leagues from thence: he brought a woman and a boy that he tooke there. With his comming and with those newes, the Gouvernour and all the rest were so glad, that they seemed at that instant to haue returned from death to life. Vpon Monday, the twentie sixe of Aprill, the Gouvernour departed to goe to the towne, which was called Aymay; and the Christians named it the towne of Reliefe. He left where the Camp had lien at the foote of a Pinetree a letter buried, and letters carued in the barke of the pine, the contents whereof was this: Dig here at the foot of this pine, & you shal find a letter. And this he did, because when the Capitaines came, which were sent to seeke some habitation, they might see the letter, and know what was become of the Gouvernour, and which way he was gone. There was no other way to the town, but the markes that Iohn Danusco left made vpon the trees. The Gouvernour with some of them that had the best horses came to it on the Monday: And all the rest inforcing themselues the best they could, some of them lodged within two leagues of the towne, some within three and foure, euery one as he was able to goe, and his strength seru- ed him. There was found in the towne a storehouse full of the flowre of parched Maiz; and some Maiz, which was distributed by allowance. Here were foure Indians taken, and none of them would confesse any other thing, but that they knew of none other habita- tion. The Gouvernour commanded one of them to be burned; & presently another confessed, that two daies iournie from thence, there was a Prouince that was called Cutifa-Chiqui. Vpon Wednesday came the Capitaines Baltasar de Gallegos, Alfonso Romo, and Iohn Rodri- guez Lobillo: for they had found the letter, and followed the way which the Gouvernour had taken toward the towne. Two men of Iohn Rodriguez companie were lost, because their horses tired: the Gouvernour checked him very sore for leauing them behind, and sent to seeke them: and assoone as they came, he departed toward Cutifa Chiqui. In the way three Indians were taken, which said, that the Ladie of that Countrey had notice alreadie of the Christians, and staid for them in a towne of hers. The Gouvernour sent by one of them to offer her his friendship, and to aduertise her how hee was comming thither. The Gouver- our came vnto the towne: and presently there came foure canoes to him; in one of them came a sister of the Ladie, and approching to the Gouvernour she said these words:

Excellent Lord, my sister sendeth vnto you by me to kisse your Lordships hands, and to signifie vnto you, that the cause why she came not in person, is, that she thinketh to do you greater seruice staying behind, as she doth, giuing order, that with all speed, al her canoes be readie, that your Lordship may passe the Riuer, and take your rest, which shall bee presentlie performed.

The Gouvernour gaue her thanks, and she returned to the other side of the Riuer. Within a little while the Ladie came out of the towne in a Chaire, whereon certaine of the principall Indians brought her to the Riuer. She entred into a barge, which had the sterne tilted ouer, and on the floore her mat readie laied with two cushions vpo it one vpon another, where she sate her downe; and with her came her principall Indians in other barges, which did wait vpon her. She went to the place where the Gouvernour was, and at her comming she made this speech following:

Excellent Lord, I wish this comming of your Lordship into these your Countreies, to be most happie: although my power be not answerable to my wil, and my seruices be not ac- cording to my desire, nor such as so high a Prince, as your Lordship, deserueth; yet since the good will is rather to be accepted, then all the treasures of the world, that without it are offered, with most vnfaileable and manifest affection, I offer you my person, lands, and sub- iects, and this small seruice.

And therewithal she presented vnto him great store of clothes of the Countrey, which shee brought in other canoes; to wit, mantles and skinnes; and tooke from her owne necke a great cordon of perles, and cast it about the necke of the Gouvernour, entertaining him with very gracious speeches of loue and courtesie, and commanded canoes to be brought thither, wherein the Gouvernour and his people passed the Riuer. Assoone as hee was lodged

in

ne on Sunday late
r 13. leagues from
omming and with
med at that instant
Aprill, the Gouver-
Christians named it
a Pinetree a letter
was this: Dig here
ause when the Cap-
the letter, and know
re was no other way
es. The Gouverneur
And all the rest in-
two leagues of the
nd his strength scru-
e of parched Maiz;
Indians taken, and
none other habita-
another confessed,
called Cutifa-Chiqui,
omo, and John Rodri-
the Gouverneur had
re lost, because their
behind, and sent to
a Chiqui. In the way
had notice alreadie of
r sent by one of them
thither. The Gouver-
him; in one of them
d these words:
ordships hands, and to
at she thinketh to do
with all speed, al her
your rest, which shall

de of the River. Within
ertaine of the principall
had the sterne tilted
o it one vpon another,
s in other barges, which
and at her coming she
your Countries, to be
d my seruices be not ac-
p. deserueth; yet since
world, that without it are
y person, lands, and sub-

of the Countrey, which
oke from her owne necke
ernour, entertaining him
ed canoes to be brought
asooner as hee was lodged

in the towne, she sent him another present of many hens. This Countrey was verie plea-
sant, fat, and hath goodly meadows by the Riuer. Their woods are thin, and full of walnut
trees and Mulberrie trees. They said the sea was two daies iournie from thence. Within a
league, and halfe a league about this towne, were great townes dispeopled, and ouergrowne
with grasse; which shewed, that they had been long without inhabitants. The Indians said,
that two yeere before there was a plague in that Countrey, and that they remooued to other
townes. There was in their storehouses great quantitie of clothes, mantles of yarne made
of the barks of trees, and others made of feathers, white, greene, red, and yellow, very
fine after their vse, and profitable for winter. There were also many Deeres skinner, with
many compartiments traced in them, and some of them made into hose, stockings, and
shooes. And the Ladie perceiuing, that the Christians esteemed the perles, aduised the
Gouverneur to send to searce certaine graues that were in that towne, and that hee should
find many: and that if hee would send to the dispeopled townes, hee might load all his
horses. They sought the graues of that towne, and there found foureteene rooues of perles,
and little babies and birds made of them. The people were browne, well made, and well
proportioned, and more ciuill then any others that were seene in all the Countrey of Florida,
and all of them went shod and clothed. The youth told the Gouverneur, that hee began now
to enter into the land which he spake of: and some credit was giuen him that it was so,
because hee vnderstood the language of the Indians: and hee requested that he might bee
Christened, for he said hee desired to become a Christian: Hee was Christened, and named
Peter; and the Gouverneur commanded him to bee loosed from a chaine, in which vntill that
time he had gone. This Countrey, as the Indians reported, had been much inhabited, and
had the fame of a good Countrey. And, as it seemeth, the youth, which was the Gouverneur's
guide, had heard of it, and that which he knew by heresay, hee affirmed that hee had seene,
and augmented at his pleasure. In this towne was found a dagger, and beades, that had
belonged to Christians. The Indians reported, that Christians had been in the hauen, which
was two daies iournie from this towne, many yeeres agoe. Hee that came thither was the
Gouverneur, the Licenciado Lucas Vazquez de Ayllon, which went to conquer this Countrey,
and at his coming to the Port hee died; and there was a diuision, quarrels and slaughters
betweene some principall men which went with him, for the principall gouernment: And
without knowing any thing of the Countrey, they returned home to Hispaniola. All the
Companie thought it good to inhabit that Countrey, because it was in a temperat climate:
And that if it were inhabited, al the shippes of New Spaine, of Peru, Santa Martha, and
Tierra firme, in their returne for Spaine, might well touch there: because it was in their
way; and because it was a good Countrey, and sited fit to raise commoditie. The Gouver-
neur, since his intent was to seeke another treasure, like that of Atabalipa Lord of Peru,
was not contented with a good Countrey, nor with pearles, though many of them were worth
their weight in gold. And if the Countrey had been diuided among the Christians, those
which the Indians had fished for afterward, would haue been of more value: for those which
they had, because they burned them in the fire, did leese their colour. The Gouverneur an-
swered them, that vrged him to inhabit, That in all the Countrey, there were not victuals
to sustaine his men one moneth; and that it was needfull to resort to the Port of Ocus, where
Maldonado was to stay for them: and that if no richer Countrey were found, they might re-
turne againe to that whensoever they would: and in the meane time the Indians would sow
their fields, and it would be better furnished with Maiz. He inquired of the Indians, whether
they had notice of any great Lord farther into the land. They told him, that 12. daies iour-
nie from thence, there was a Prouince called Chiaha, subiect to the Lord of Coça. Pre-
sently the Gouverneur determined to seeke that land. And being a sterne man, and of few
words, though he was glad to sift and know the opinion of all men, yet after hee had deli-
uered his owne, hee would not be contraried, and alwaies did what liked himselfe, and so all
men did condescend vnto his will. And though it seemed an errour to leaue that Countrey,
(for others might haue been sought round about, where the people might haue been sus-
tained,

Walnut trees.
Mulberry trees
for silke.
The sea two
daies iournie off.

Mantles of the
barks of trees.
Mantles of fea-
thers.

Three hundred
ninety two
pounds of perles
found.

This towne was
but two daies
iournie from the
hauen of Santa
Helena.
In the yeere
1535.

It is in 31. de-
grees 4.

Chiaha 12. daies
iournie from
Santa Helena:
and Coate 7.
daies iournie
from Chiaha: at
which towne of
Coate, they had
an ore hide:
Chap. 16.

tained, vntill the harvest had been readie there, and the Maiz gathered) yet there was none that would say any thing against him, after they knew his resolution.

Chap. XV.

How the Gouvernour departed from Cutifa-Chiqui to seeke the Prouince of Coça ; and what happened vnto him in the way.

Chalacue seven
daies iournie
from Cutifa-
Chiqui.

700. Hennes.

Xualla 5. daies
off.

Rough and
hie hilles.

The Gouvernour departed from Cutifa-Chiqui the third day of May. And because the Indians had reuolted, and the will of the Ladie was perceined, that if she could, she would depart without giuing any guides or men for burdens, for the wrongs which the Christians had done to the Indians: (for there neuer want some among many of a base sort, that for a little gaine doe put themselves and others in danger of vndoing.) The Gouvernour commanded her to be kept in safegard, and carried with him, not with so good vsage as she deserved for good wil she shewed, and good entertainment that she had made him. And he verified that old prouerb which saith; For weldoing I receiue euill. And so he carried her on foot with his bondwomen to looke vnto her. In all the townes where the Gouvernour passed, the Ladie commanded the Indians to come and carrie the burdens from one towne to another. We passed through her Countrie an hundred leagues, in which, as we saw, she was much obeyed. For the Indians did all that she commanded them with great efficacie and diligence. Peter the youth that was our guide, said, that she was not the Ladie her selfe, but a neece of hers, which came to that towne to execute certaine principal men by commandement of the Ladie, which had withheld her tribute: which words were not beleued, because of the lies which they had found in him before: but they bare with all things, because of the need which they had of him, to declare what the Indians said. In seven daies space the Gouvernour came to a Prouince called Chalacue, the poorest Countrey of Maiz that was seene in Florida. The Indians fed vpon rootes and herbes which they seeke in the fields, and vpon wild beasts, which they kil with their bowes and arrowes: and it is a verie gentle people. All of them goe naked, and are very leane. There was a Lord, which for a great present, brought the Gouvernour two Deeres skins: and there were in that Countrie many wild hennes. In one towne they made him a present of 700. hennes, and so in other townes they sent him those which they had or could get. From this Prouince to another, which is called Xualla, he spent fife daies: here he found very little Maiz; and for this cause, though the people were wearied, and the horses very weake, he staid no more but two daies. From Ocute to Cutifa-chiqui, may bee some hundred and thirtie leagues, whereof 80. are wilderness. From Cutifa-chiqui to Xualla, two hundred and fiftie, and it is an hille Countrie. The Gouvernour departed from Xualla toward Guaxule: he passed very rough and hie hilles. In that iournie, the Ladie of Cutifa-chiqui (whom the Gouvernour carried with him, as is afore said, with purpose to carrie her to Guaxule, because her territorie reached thither) going on a day with the bondwomen which lead her, went out of the way, and entred into a wood, saying, she went to ease her selfe, and so she decciued them, and hid her selfe in the wood; and though they sought her they could not find her. She carried away with her a little chest made of canes in manner of a coffer, which they call Petaca, full of vnborned perles. Some which could iudge of them, said, that they were of great value. An Indian woman that waited on her did carrie them. The Gouvernour not to discontent her altogether, left them with her, making account that in Guaxule he would ask them of her, when he gaue her leaue to returne: which coffer she carried away, and went to Xualla with three slaues which fled from the Campe, and one horseman which remained behind, who falling sicke of an ague went out of the way, and was lost. This man, whose name was Alimamos, dealt with the slaues to change their euill purpose, and returne with him to the Christians: which two of them did; and Alimamos and they ouertooke the Gouvernour 50. leagues from thence in a Prouince called Chiaba; and reported how the Ladie remained in Xualla with a slaue of Andrew de Vasconcellos, which would not come backe with them, and that of a certaintie they

And because the
e could, she would
which the Christians
base sort, that for a
The Gouverneur com-
so good vsage as she
d made him. And he
so he carried her on
e Gouverneur passed,
ne towne to another.
saw, she was much
fleacie and diligence.
er selfe, but a neere
oy commandement of
eued, because of the
because of the need
space the Gouverneur
was seene in Florida.
and vpon wild beasts,
people. All of them goe
present, brought the
wild hennes. In one
s they sent him those
n is called Xualla, he
se, though the people
but two daies. From
thereof 80. are wilder-
it is an hillie Countrie.
ry rough and hie hills.
arried with him, as is
ritorie reached thither)
way, and entred into a
and hid her selfe in the
arried away with her a
petaca, full of vnboied
great value. An Indian
content her altogether,
of her, when he gaue
Xualla with three slaues
nd, who falling sicke of
as Alimamos, dealt with
e Christians: which two
leagues from thence in
in Xualla with a slaue of
and that of a certaintie
they

they liued as man and wife together, and meant to goe both to Cutifa-chiqui. Within fūe daies the Gouverneur came to Guaxule. The Indians there gaue him a present of 300. dogges, because they saw the Christians esteeme them, and sought them to feed on them: for among them they are not eaten. In Guaxule, and all that way, was very little Maiz. The Gouverneur sent from thence an Indian with a message to the Cacique of Chiaha, to desire him to gather some Maiz thither, that he might rest a few daies in Chiaha. The Gouverneur departed from Guaxule, and in two daies iournie came to a towne called Canasagua. There met him on the way 20. Indians euery one loaden with a basket ful of Mulberries: for there be many, and those very good, from Cutifa-chiqui thither, and so forward in other Prouinces, and also nuts and plummies. And the trees grow in the fields without planting or dressing them, and are as big and as rancke, as though they grew in gardens digged and watered. From the time that the Gouverneur departed from Canasagua, hee iournied fūe daies through a desert; and two leagues before hee came to Chiaha, here met him 15. Indians loaden with Maiz, which the Cacique had sent; and they told him on his behalfe, that he waited his coming with 20. barnes full of it; and farther, that himselfe, his Countrie, and subiects, & al things els were at his seruice. On the 5. day of Iune, the Gouverneur entred into Chiaha: The Cacique voided his owne houses, in which he lodged, & receiued him with much ioy, saying these words following:

Mightie and excellent Lord, I hold my selfe for so happie a man, in that it hath pleased your Lordship to vse me, that nothing could haue happened vnto me of more contentment, nor that I would haue esteemed so much. From Guaxule your Lordship sent vnto me, that I should prepare Maiz for you in this towne for two moneths: Here I haue for you 20. barnes full of the choicest that in all the Countrie could be found. If your Lordship bee not entertained by me in such sort, as is fit for so hie a Prince, respect my tender age, which excuseth me from blame, and receiue my good will, which with much loyaltie, truth, and sinceritie, I will alwaies shew in any thing, which shall concerne your Lordships seruice.

The Gouverneur answered him, that he thanked him very much for his seruice and offer, and that he would alwaies account him as his brother. There was in this towne much butter in gourds melted like oile: they said it was the fat of beares. There was found also great store of oile of walnuts, which was cleare as butter, and of a good taste, and a pot full of honie of bees, which neither before nor afterward was seene in all the Countrie. The towne was in an Island betweene two armes of a Riuer, and was seated nigh one of them. The Riuer diuideth it selfe into those two branches two crossebow shot about the towne, and meeteth againe a league beneath the same. The plaine betweene both the branches is sometimes one crosse-bow shot, sometimes two crossebow shot ouer. The branches are very broad, and both of them may be waded ouer. There were all along them verie good meadows, and manie fields sowne with Maiz. And because the Indians staid in their towne, the Gouverneur only lodged in the houses of the Cacique, and his people in the fields; where there was euer a tree, euerie one tooke one for himselfe. Thus the Camp lay separated one from another, and out of order. The Gouverneur winked at it, because the Indians were in peace, and because it was very hot, and the people should haue suffered great extremitie, if it had not bin so. The horses came thither so weake, that for feeblenesse, they were not able to carrie their masters: because that from Cutifa-chiqui, they alwaies trauelled with very little prouender, and were hunger-starued and tired euer since they came from the desert of Ocute. And because the most of them were not in case to vse in battell, though the need should require, they sent them to feed in the night a quarter of a league from the Camp. The Christians were there in great danger, because that if at this time the Indians had set vpon them, they had been in euill case to haue defended themselues. The Gouverneur rested there thirtie daies, in which time, because the Countrie was very fruitfull, the horses grew fat. At the time of his departure, by the importunitie of some, which would haue more then was reason, hee demanded of the Cacique 30. women to make slaues of. Hee answered that he would conferre with his chiefe men. And before hee returned an answer, one night all of them with their wiues and children forsooke the towne, and fled away. The

Guaxule fūe
daies off.

Canasagua
two daies iournie
off.
Great store of
Mulberrie trees
to make silke.

Iune 5.
Chiaha fūe diest
iournie off, and
to. leagues from
Xualla.

The fat of
beares.
Oile of Wal-
nuts.
Honie of Bees.
Chiaha seated in
an Island.

The desert of
Ocute, chap. 14.

30. Daies rest.

next day the Gouvernour purposing to goe to seeke them, the Cacique came vnto him, and at his comming vsed these words vnto the Gouvernour :

Mightie Lord, with shame and feare of your Lordship, because my subiects against my will haue done amisse in absenting themselves, I went my way without your license ; and knowing the errour which I haue committed, like a loyall subiect, I come to yeeld my selfe into your power, to dispose of mee at your owne pleasure. For my subiects do not obey mee, nor doe any thing but what an Vncle of mine commandeth, which gouerneth this Countreie for me, vntill I be of a perfect age. If your Lordship will pursue them, and execute on them that, which for their disobedience they deserue, I will be your guide, since at this present my fortune will not suffer me to performe any more.

Presently the Gouvernour with 30. horsemen, and as many footmen, went to seeke the Indians, and passing by some townes of the principall Indians which had absented themselves, hee cut and destroyed great fields of Maiz ; and went vp the Riuer, where the Indians were in an Island, where the horsemen could not come at them. There he sent them word by an Indian to returne to their towne and feare nothing, and that they should giue him men to carrie burdens, as al those behind had done ; for he would haue no Indian women, seeing they were so loth to part with them. The Indians accepted his request, and came to the Gouvernour to excuse themselves ; and so all of them returned to their towne. A Cacique of a Prouince called Coste, came to this towne to visit the Gouvernour. After hee had offered himselfe, and passed with him some words of tendring his seruice and curtesie ; the Gouvernour asking him whether he had notice of any rich Countreie ? he said, yea : to wit, " that toward the North, there was a Prouince named Chisca : and that there was a melting of copper, and of another metall of the same colour, saue that it was finer, and of a farre more perfect colour, and farre better to the sight ; and that they vsed it not so much, because it was softer. And the selfe same thing was told the Gouvernour in Cutifa-chiqui ; where we saw some little hatchets of copper, which were said to haue a mixture of gold." But in that part the Countreie was not well peopled, and they said there were mountaines, which the horses could not passe : and for that cause, the Gouvernour would not goe from Cutifa-chiqui directly thither : And hee made account, that traouelling through a peopled Countreie, when his men and horses should bee in better plight, and hee were better certified of the truth of the thing, he would returne toward it, by mountaines, and a better inhabited Countreie, whereby hee might haue better passage. He sent two Christians from Chiaha with certain Indians which knew the Countreie of Chisca, and the language thereof to view it, and to make report of that which they should find ; where he told them that he would tarrie for them.

Chap. XVI.

How the Gouvernour departeth from Chiaha, and at Coste was in danger to haue been slaine by the hands of the Indians, and by a stratageme escaped the same : And what more happened vnto him in this iournie, and how he came to Coça.

When the Gouvernour was determined to depart from Chiaha to Coste, he sent for the Cacique to come before him, and with gentle words tooke his leaue of him, and gaue him certaine things, wherewith he rested much contented : In seven daies hee came to Coste. The second of Iulie he commanded his Campe to be pitched two crossebow shot from the town : and with eight men of his guard he went where he found the Cacique, which to his thinking receiued him with great loue. As hee was talking with him, there went from the Campe certaine footmen to the towne to seeke some Maiz, and not contented with it, they ransacked and searched the houses, and tooke what they found. With this despite the Indians began to rise and to take their armes : and some of them with cudgils in their hands, ran vpon fiue or sixe Christians, which had done them wrong, and beat them at their pleasure. The Gouvernour seeing them al in an vprere, and himselfe among them with so few Christians, to escape their hands vsed a stratagem, farre against his owne disposition, being, as hee was, very francke and open : and though it grieved him very much that any Indian should

Mines of copper and gold in Chisca toward the North.

Hatchets of copper holding gold. Chisca is directly North from Cutifa-chiqui, which is within two daies of Santa Helena.

Two Christians sent from Chiaha to seeke Chisca.

Coste seven daies from Chiaha, chap. 14.

A wile stratagem.

subjects against my
your license; and
me to yeeld my selfe
subjects do not obey
gouerneth this Coun-
them, and execute on
de, since at this pre-

went to seeke the In-
absented themselves,
here the Indians were
sent them word by an
old giue him men to
Indian women, seeing
test, and came to the
towne. A Cacique of
After hee had offered
curtesie; the Gouver-
d, yea: to wit, "that
ere was a melting of
er, and of a farre more
ot so much, because it
utifa-chiqui; where we
of gold." But in that
mountaines, which the
goe from Cutifa-chiqui
a peopled Countrie,
e better certified of the
and a better inhabited
Christians from Chiaha
language thereof to view
ld them that he would

in danger to haue
escaped the same:
he came to Coça.

Coste, he sent for the
ie of him, and gaue him
ies hee came to Coste,
crossebow shot from the
e Cacique, which to his
im, there went from the
ot contented with it, they
with this despite the In-
h cudgils in their hands,
beat them at their plea-
among them with so few
s owne disposition, being,
ry much that any Indian
should

should be so bold, as with reason, or without reason to despise the Christians, he tooke vp a cudgel, and tooke their parts against his owne men; which was a meanes to quiet them: And presently he sent word by a man very secretly to the Campe, that some armed men should come toward the place where he was; and hee tooke the Cacique by the hand, vying very mild words vnto him, and with some principall Indians that did accompanie him, he drew them out of the towne into a plaine way, and vnto the sight of the Campe, whither by little and little with good discretion the Christians began to come and to gather about them. Thus the Gouvernour led the Cacique, and his chiefe men vntill he entred with them into the Campe: and neere vnto his tent, hee commanded them to be put in safe custodie: and told them, that they should not depart without giuing him a guide and Indians for burthens, and till certaine sicke Christians were come, which he had commanded to come downe the Riuier in canoes from Chiaha; and those also which he had sent to the Prouince of Chisca: (for they were not returned; and he feared that the Indians had slaine the one, and the other.) Within three daies after, those which were sent to Chisca returned, and made report, that the Indians had carried them through a Countrie so poore of Maiz, and so rough, and ouer so high mountaines, that it was impossible for the armie to trauell that way; and that seeing the way grew very long, and that they lingered much, they consulted to returne from a little poore towne, where they saw nothing that was of any profit, and brought an ox hide, which the Indians gaue them, as thinne as a calves skinn, and the haire like a soft wool, betwene the course and fine wooll of sheepe. The Cacique gaue a guide, and men for burdens, and departed with the Gouvernours leaue. The Gouvernour departed from Coste the ninth of Iulie, and lodged at a towne called Tali: The Cacique came forth to receiue him on the way, and made this speech:

Excellent Lord and Prince, worthie to be serued and obeyed of all the Princes in the world; howsoeuer for the most part by the outward physiognomic, the inward vertue may bee iudged, and that who you are, and of what strength was knowne vnto mee before now: I will not inferre hereupon how meane I am in your presence, to hope that my poore seruices will bee gratefull and acceptable: since whereas strength faileth, the will doth not cease to be praised and accepted. And for this cause I presume to request your Lordship, that you will be pleased onely to respect the same, and consider wherein you will command my seruice in this your Countrie.

The Gouvernour answered him, that his good will and offer was as acceptable vnto him, as if he had offered him all the treasures of the world, and that hee would alwaies intreate, fauour, and esteeme him as if he were his owne brother. The Cacique commanded prouision necessarie for two daies, while the Gouvernour was there, to be brought thither: and at the time of his departure, he gaue him foure women and two men, which hee had need of to beare burthens. The Gouvernour trauelled sixe daies through many townes subject to the Cacique of Coça: & as he entred into his Countrie many Indians came vnto him euery day from the Cacique, and met him on the way with messages, one going, and another comming. Hee came to Coça vpon Friday, the 26. of Iulie. The Cacique came forth to receiue him two crossebow shot from the towne in a chaire, which his principall men carried on their shoulders, sitting vpon a cushion, and couered with a garment of Marterns, of the fashion and bignes of a womans huke: hee had on his head a diadem of feathers, and round about him many Indians playing vpon flutes, and singing. Assoone as he came vnto the Gouvernour, he did his obeysance, and vttered these words following:

Excellent and mightie Lord, aboue all them of the earth; although I come but now to receiue you, yet I haue receiued you many daies agoe in my heart, to wit, from the day wherein I had first notice of your Lordship; with so great desire to serue you, with so great pleasure and contentment, that this which I make shew of, is nothing in regard of that which is in my heart, neither can it haue any kind of comparison. This you may hold for certaine, that to obtaine the dominion of the whole world, would not haue reioyced me so much, as your sight, neither would I haue held it for so great a felicitie. Doe not looke for me to offer you that which is your owne: to wit, my person, my lands and subjects:

Those which
were sent to
seeke Chisca
returne. High
mountaines.

A little poore
towne.
An ox hide
with haire like
wooll. cap. 26.
and Gomara
Histor. Gene-
ral. cap. 215.
saith so.
Tali, 1. day
from Coste.

Many townes
of Coça.

Coça.
Iulie 26.

Marterns.

onely I will busie my selfe in commanding my men with all diligence and due reuerence to welcome you from hence to the towne with playing and singing, where your Lordship shall be lodged and attended vpon by my selfe and them: and all that I possesse, your Lordship shall vse as it were your owne. For your Lordship shall doe me a verie great fauour in so doing.

The towne.

Many great townes.

Many plum-trees of diuers sorts.

Two sorts of grapes.

The Gouvernour gaue him thanks, and with great ioy they both went conferring together, till they came to the towne: and he commanded his Indians to void their houses, wherein the Gouvernour and his men were lodged. There was in the barnes, and in the fields, great store of Maiz and French Beanes: The Country was greatly inhabited with many great townes, and many sowne fields, which reached from the one to the other. It was pleasant, fat, full of good meadows vpon Riuer. There were in the fields, many Plum trees, aswell of such as grow in Spaine, as of the Countrie: and wild tall vines, that runne vp the trees; and besides these, there were other low vines with big and sweet grapes; but for want of digging and dressing, they had great kirkels in them. The Gouvernour vsed to set a guard ouer the Caciques, because they should not absent themselves, and carried them with him, till he came out of their Countries: because that carrying them along with him, he looked to find people in the townes, and they gaue him guides, and men to carrie burdens: and before hee went out of their Countries, he gaue them licence to returne to their houses, and to their porters likewise, assoone as he came to any other Lordship, where they gaue him others. The men of Coça seeing their Lord detained, tooke it in euill part, and revolted, and hid themselves in the woods, aswell those of the towne of the Cacique, as those of the other townes of his principall subiects. The Gouvernour sent out foure Capitaines, euery one his way to seeke them. They tooke many men and women, which were put into chaines: They seeing the hurt which they receiued, and how little they gained in absenting themselves, came againe, promising to do whatsoeuer they were commanded. Of those which were taken prisoners, some principall men were set at libertie, whom the Cacique demanded: and euery one that had any, carried the rest in chaines like slaues, without letting them goe to their Countrie: neither did any returne, but some few, whose fortune helped them with the good diligence which they vsed to file off their chaines by night, or such as in their traouelling could slippe aside out of the way, seeing any negligence in them that kept them; some escaped away with the chaines, and with the burdens, and clothes which they carried.

Chap. XVII.

How the Gouvernour went from Coça to Tascaluca.

20. of August.

Tallimuchase, a great towne. Ytaua

A great Riuer. Vllibahali.

Vllibahali, walled about. The wall, not of their wallies.

The Gouvernour rested in Coça 25. daies. He departed from thence the 20. of August to seeke a Prouince called Tascaluca: hee carried with him the Cacique of Coça. He passed that day by a great towne called Tallimuchase, the people were fled: he lodged halfe a league farther neere a brooke. The next day he came to a towne called Ytaua, subiect to Coça. Hee staid there sixe daies because of a Riuer that passed by it, which at that time was very hie; and assoone as the Riuer suffered him to passe, he set forward, and lodged at a towne named Vllibahali. There came to him on the way, on the Caciques behalfe of that Prouince, ten or twelue principall Indians to offer him his seruice; all of them had their plumes of feathers, and bowes and arrowes. The Gouvernour comming to the towne with twelue horsemen, and some footemen of his guard, leauing his people a crossebow shot from the towne, entred into it, hee found all the Indians with their weapons: and as farre as he could ghesse, they seemed to haue some euill meaning. It was knowne afterward, that they were determined to take the Cacique of Coça from the Gouvernour, if hee had requested it. The Gouvernour commanded all his people to enter the towne, which was walled about, and neere vnto it passed a small Riuer. The wall, aswell of that, as of others, which afterward wee saw, was of great posts thrust deepe into the ground and very rough, and many long railes as big as ones arme laid acrosse between them,

and due reuerence to
there your Lordship
that I possesse, you
doe me a verie great

conferring together,
their houses, wherein
d in the fields, great
ed with many great
It was pleasant, fat,
lum trees, aswell of
t runne vp the trees;
pes; but for want of
r used to set a guard
ried them with him,
with him, he looked
carrie burdens: and
turne to their houses,
ip, where they gaue
it in euill part, and
e of the Cacique, as
sent out foure Cap-
women, which were
little they gained in
were commanded. Of
at libertie, whom the
in chaines like slaues,
but some few, whose
e off their chaines by
ay, seeing any negli-
and with the burdens,

ence the 20. of August
Cacique of Coça. He
were fled: he lodged
a towne called Ytaua,
passed by it, which at
e, he set forward, and
way, on the Caciques
im his seruice; all of
Gouernour comming to
leaving his people a
the Indians with their
me euill meaning. It
que of Coça from the
his people to enter the
uer. The wall, aswell
s thrust deepe into the
e laid acrosse between
them,

them, and the wall was about the height of a lance, and it was daubed within and without with clay, and had loope holes. On the otherside of the Riuer was a towne, where at that present the Cacique was. The Gouernour sent to call him, and hee came presently. After he had passed with the Gouernour some words of offering his seruices, he gaue him such men for his cariages as he needed, and thirtie women for slaues. In that place was a Christian lost, called Mançano, borne in Salamanca, of noble parentage, which went astray to seeke for grapes, whereof there is great store, and those very good. The day that the Gouernour departed from thence, he lodged at a towne subiect to the Lord of Vllibahali; and the next day hee came to another towne called Toasi. The Indians gaue the Gouernour thirtie women, and such men for his cariages as he needed. Hee trauelled ordinarily 5. or 6. leagues a day when he trauelled through peopled Countries: and going through deserts, he marched as fast as he could, to eschew the want of Maiz. From Toasi, passing through some townes subiect to a Cacique, which was Lord of a prouince called Tallise, hee trauelled fife daies: He came to Tallise the 18. of September: The towne was great, and situated neere vnto a maine Riuer. On the other side of the Riuer were other townes, and many fields sowne with Maiz. On both sides it was a very plentifull Countrey, and had store of Maiz: they had voided the towne. The Gouernour commanded to call the Cacique; who came, and betweene them passed some words of loue and offer of his seruices, and hee presented vnto him 40. Indians. There came to the Gouernour in this towne a principall Indian in the behalfe of the Cacique of Tascaluca, and made this speech following:

Mightie, vertuous, and esteemed Lord, the great Cacique of Tascaluca my Lord, sendeth by me to kisse your Lordships hands, and to let you vnderstand, that he hath notice, how you iustly rauish with your perfections and power, all men on the earth; and that euerie one by whom your Lordship passeth doth serue and obey you; which he acknowledgeth to be due vnto you, and desireth, as his life, to see, and to serue your Lordship. For which cause by me he offereth himselfe, his lands and subiects, that when your Lordship pleaseth to go through his Countrey, you may be receiued with all peace and loue, serued and obeyed; and that in recompense of the desire he hath to see you, you will doe him the fauour to let him know when you will come: for how much the sooner, so much the greater fauour he shall receiue.

The Gouernour receiued and dispatched him graciously, giuing him beades, which among them were not much esteemed, and some other thinges to carrie to his Lord. And he gaue licence to the Cacique of Coça to returne home to his owne Countries. The Cacique of Tallise gaue him such men for burthens as he needed. And after he had rested there 20. daies, hee departed thence toward Tascaluca. That day when hee went from Tallise, hee lodged at a great towne called Casiste. And the next day passed by another, and came to a small towne of Tascaluca; and the next day hee camped in a wood two leagues from the towne where the Cacique resided, and was at that time. And he sent the Master of the Camp, Luys de Moscoso, with 15. horsemen, to let him know how hee was comming. The Cacique was in his lodgings vnder a Canopie: and without doores, right against his lodgings, in an high place, they spread a mat for him, & two cushions one vpon another, where he sat him downe, and his Indians placed themselues round about him, somewhat distant from him, so that they made a place, and a void roome where he sate: and his chiefeest men were neereest to him, and one with a shadow of Deeres skinn, which kept the Sunne from him, being round, and of the bignes of a target, quartered with black and white, hauing a rundell in the midst: a farre off it seemed to be of taffata, because y colours were very perfect. It was set on a small staffe stretched wide out. This was the deuice which hee carried in his warres. Hee was a man of a very tall stature, of great limmes, and spare, and well proportioned, and was much feared of his neighbours and subiects. He was Lord of many territories and much people: In his countenance hee was very graue. After the Master of the Campe had spoken with him, he and those that went with him coursed their horses, pransing them to and fro, and now and then toward the place

A towne.

Great store of
good grapes.
A towne.He trauelled
ordinarily fife
or sixe leagues
a day.Tallise, a great
towne.
September 18.
A maine RiuerCasiste a great
towne.
Tascaluca.

place where the Cacique was, who with much grauitie and dissimulation now and then lifted vp his eies, and beheld them as it were with disdain. At the Gouernours comming, hee made no offer at all to rise. The Gouernour tooke him by the hand, and both of them sat downe together on a seate which was vnder the cloth of estate. The Cacique said these words vnto him:

Mighty Lord, I bid your Lordship right hartily welcome. I receiue as much pleasure and contentment with your sight, as if you were my brother whom I dearly loued: vpon this point it is not needfull to vse many reasons; since it is no discretion to speake that in many wordes, which in few may be vttered. How much the greater the will is, so much more giueth it name to the workes, and the workes giue testimonie of the truth. Now touching my will, by it you shall know, how certaine & manifest it is, and how pure inclination I haue to serue you. Concerning the fauour which you did me, in the things which you sent me, I make as much account of them as is reason to esteeme them: and chiefly because they were yours. Now see what seruice you will command me.

*Piache.
A great Riuer.*

The Gouernour satisfied him with sweet words, and with great breuitie. When hee departed from thence he determined to carrie him along with him for some causes, and at two daies iournie hee came to a towne called Piache, by which there passed a great Riuer. The Gouernour demanded canoes of the Indians: they said, they had them not, but that they would make rafts of canes and drie timber, on which he might passe well enough: And they made them with all diligence and speed, and they gouerned them; and because the water went very slow, the Gouernour and his people passed very well.

From the Port de Spirito Santo to Apalache, which is about an hundred leagues, the Gouernour went from East to West: And from Apalache to Cutifa-chiqui, which are 40. leagues, from the Southwest to the Northeast: and from Cutifa-chiqui to Xualla, which are about two hundred and fiftie leagues, from the South to the North: And from Xualla to Tascaluca, which are two hundred and fiftie leagues more, an hundred and ninetie of them he trauelled from East to West, to wit, to the Prouince of Coça: and the other 60. from Coça to Tascaluca from the North to the South.

*Mauilla.
18. Of October.*

Hauiing passed the Riuer of Piache, a Christian went from his companie from thence to seeke a woman slaue that was runne away from him, and the Indians either tooke him captiue, or slue him. The Gouernour vrged the Cacique that he should giue account of him, and threatened him, that if he were not found, he would neuer let him loose. The Cacique sent an Indian from thence to Mauilla, whither they were traueilling, which was a towne of a principall Indian and his subiect, saying, that he sent him to aduise them to make readie victuals, and men for carriages. But, (as afterward appeared) hee sent him to assemble all the men of warre thither, that hee had in his Countrie. The Gouernour trauelled three-daies; and the third day he passed all day through a peopled Countrie: and he came to Mauilla vpon Monday the 18. of October. He went before the Camp with 15. horsemen and 30. footemen. And from the towne came a Christian, whom he had sent to the principall man, three or foure daies before, because he should not absent himselfe, and also to learne in what sort the Indians were: who told him that hee thought they were in an euill purpose: for while hee was there, there came manie people into the towne, and many weapons, and that they made great haste to fortifie the wall. Luys de Moscoso told the Gouernour, that it would bee good to lodge in the field, seeing the Indians were of such disposition: and hee answered, that he would lodge in the towne, for hee was wearie of lodging in the field. When hee came neere vnto the towne, the Cacique came forth to receiue him with many Indians playing vpon flutes and singing: And after hee had offered himselfe, hee presented him with three mantels of martens. The Gouernour, with both the Caciques, and seuen or eight men of his guard, and three or foure horsemen which alighted to accompanie him, entred into the towne, and sat him downe vnder a cloth of estate. The Cacique of Tascaluca requested him, that hee would let him remaine in that towne, and trouble him no more with traueilling: And seeing he would not giue him leaue, in his talke he changed his purpose, and dissemblinglie faigned that he would speake with some principall

*S. Marten of
Martens.*

now and then lifted
nours comming, hee
and both of them sat
e Cacique said these

due as much pleasure
I dearly loued: vpon
ion to speake that in
the will is, so much
e of the truth. Now
and how pure incli-
e, in the things which
them: and chiefly be-

eutie. When hee de-
some causes, and at
passed a great Riuer,
ad them not, but that
ght passe well enough:
hed them; and because
well.

h hundred leagues, the
chiqui, which are 430
ul to Xualla, which are
: And from Xualla to
d and ninetie of them
nd the other 60. from

mpanie from thence to
dians either tooke him
ould giue account of
er let him loose. The
rauellling, which was a
t him to aduise them to
appeared) hee sent him
ntrie. The Gouverneur
peopled Countie: and
fore the Camp with 15.
n, whom he had sent to
ot absent himselfe, and
thought they were in an
to the towne, and many
ys de Moscoso told the
e Indians were of such
e, for hee was wearie of
Cacique came forth to
and after hee had offered
e Gouverneur, with both
orsemen which alighted to
r a cloth of estate. The
aine in that towne, and
e him leaue, in his talke
speak with some prin-
cipall

cipall Indians, and rose vp from the place where hee sate with the Gouverneur, and entred into a house, where many Indians were with their bowes and arrowes. The Gouverneur when he saw he returned not, called him, and he answered, that he would not come out from thence, neither would he goe any farther then that towne, and that if he would goe his way in peace, hee should presently depart, and should not seeke to carrie him perforce out of his Countie and territorie.

Chap. XVIII.

How the Indians rose against the Gouverneur, and what ensued thereupon.

The Gouverneur seeing the determination, and furious answere of the Cacique, went about to pacifie him with faire words: to which he gaue no answere, but rather with much pride and disdain, withdrew himselfe where the Gouverneur might not see him, nor speake with him. As a principall Indian passed that way, the Gouverneur called him, to send him word, that hee might remaine at his pleasure in his Countie, and that it would please him to giue him a guide, and men for carriages, to see if he could pacifie him with mild words. The Indians answered with great pride, that hee would not hearken vnto him. Baltasar de Gallegos, which stood by, tooke hold of a gowne of marten's which hee had on; and hee cast it ouer his head, and left it in his hands: and because all of them immediatly began to stirre, Baltasar de Gallegos gaue him such a wound with his cutillas, that hee opened him downe the backe, and presently all the Indians with a great crie came out of the houses shooting their arrowes. The Gouverneur considering, that if hee tarried there, hee could not escape, and if hee commanded his men to come in, which were without the towne, the Indians within the houses might kill their horses, and doe much hurt, ranne out of the towne, and before hee came out, hee fell twice or thrice, and those that were with him did helpe him vp againe; and hee and those that were with him were sore wounded: and in a moment there were fye Christians slaine in the towne. The Gouverneur came running out of the towne, crying out, that euery man should stand farther off, because from the wall they did them much hurt. The Indians seeing that the Christians retired, and some of them, or the most part, more then an ordinary pase, shot with great boldnesse at them, and strooke downe such as they could ouertake. The Indians which the Christians did lead with them in chaines, had laid downe their burthens neere vnto the wall: and assoone as the Gouverneur and his men were retired, the men of Mauilla laid them on the Indians backs againe, and tooke them into the towne, and loosed them presently from their chaines, and gaue them bowes and arrowes to fight withall. Thus they possessed themselues of al the clothes and perles, and all that the Christians had, which their slaues carried. And because the Indians had been alwaies peaceable vntill wee came to this place, some of our men had their weapons in their fardels and remained vnarmed. And from others that had entred the towne with the Gouverneur they had taken swords and halebards, and fought with them. When the Gouverneur was gotten into the field, hee called for an horse, and with some that accompanied him, hee returned and slew two or three Indians: All the rest retired themselues to the towne, and shot with their bowes from the wall. And those which presumed of their nimblenes, sallied forth to fight a stones cast from the wall: And when the Christians charged them, they retired themselues at their leasure into the towne. At the time that the broile began, there were in the towne a Frier, and a Priest, and a seruant of the Gouverneur, with a woman slaue: and they had no time to come out of the towne: and they tooke an house, and so remained in the towne. The Indians being become Masters of the place, they shut the doore with a field gate: and among them was one sword which the Gouvernors seruant had, and with it he set himselfe behind the doore, thrusting at the Indians which sought to come into them: and the Frier and the Priest stood on the other side, each of them with a barre in their hands to beate him downe that first came in. The Indians seeing they could not get in by the doore, began to vncouer the house top. By this time, all the horsemen and footemen which were behind, were come to Mauilla. Here there were sundrie opinions, whether they should charge the Indians to enter the towne, or whether they should leaue it, because it was hard to enter: and in the end it was resolved to set vpon them.

A gowne of
marten's.

Al the clothes
and perles of the
Christians were
lost.

Chap,

Chap. XIX.

How the Gouvernour set his men in order, and entred the towne of Mauilla.

A consultation
of the Indians to
send away their
Cacique.

ASsoone as the battell and the rereward were come to Mauilla, the Gouvernour commanded all those that were best armed to alight, and made foure squadrons of footmen. The Indians, seeing how he was setting his men in order, concluded with the Cacique, that hee should goe his way, saying vnto him, as after it was knowne by certaine women that were taken there, that he was but one man, and could fight but for one man, and that they had there among them many principall Indians verie valiant and expert in feates of armes, that any one of them was able to order the people there; and forasmuch as matters of warre were subiect to casualtie, and it was vncertaine which part should ouercome, they wished him to saue himselfe, to the end, that if it fel out that they should end their daies there, as they determined, rather then to be ouercome, there might remaine one to gouerne the Countrie. For all this hee would not haue gon away: but they vrged him so much, that with fifteene or twentie Indians of his owne, hee went out of the towne, and carried away a skarlat cloke, and other things of the Christians goods; as much as hee was able to carrie, and seemed best vnto him. The Gouvernour was informed how there went men out of the towne, and hee commanded the horsemen to beset it, and sent in euery squadron of footemen one souldier with a firebrand to set fire on the houses, that the Indians might haue no defense: all his men being set in order, hee commanded an harcubuz to bee shot off. The signe being giuen, the foure squadrons, euery one by it selfe with great furie, gaue the onset, and with great hurt on both sides they entred the towne. The Frier and the Priest, and those that were with them in the house were saued, which cost the liues of two men of account, and valiant, which came thither to succour them. The Indians fought with such courage, that many times they draue our men out of the towne. The fight lasted so long, that for wearinesse and great thirst many of the Christians went to a poole that was neere the wal, to drink, which was all stained with the blood of the dead, and then came againe to fight. The Gouvernour seeing this, entred among the footemen into the towne on horseback, with certaine that accompanied him, and was a meane that the Christians came to set fire on the houses, and brake and ouercame the Indians, who running out of the towne from the footemen, the horsemen without draue in at the gates again, where being without all hope of life, they fought valiantly, & after the Christians came among the to handy blowes, seeing themselves in great distresse without any succour, many of them fled into the burning houses, where one vpon another they were smothered and burnt in the fire. The whole number of the Indians that died in this towne, were two thousand and fife hundred, little more or lesse. Of the Christians there died eightene; of which one was Don Carlos, brother in law to the Gouvernour, and a nephew of his, and one Iohn de Gamez, and Men Rodriguez Portugals, and Iohn Vasquez de Villanoua de Barca Rota, all men of honour, and of much valour; the rest were footemen. Besides those that were slaine, there were an hundred and fiftie wounded with 700. wounds of their arrowes: and it pleased God that of very dangerous wounds they were quickly healed. Moreouer, there were twelue horses slaine, and seuentie hurt. All the clothes which the Christians carried with them to clothe themselves withall, and the ornaments to say Masse, and the perles, were all burnt there: and the Christians did set them on fire themselves; because they held for a greater inconuenience, the hurt which the Indians might doe them from those houses, where they had gathered all those goods together, then the losse of them. Here the Gouvernour vnderstood, that Francisco Maldonado waited for him at the Port of Ochuse, and that it was sixe daies iournie from thence; and he dealt with Iohn Ortiz to keepe it secret, because he had not accomplished that which he determined to doe; and because the perles were burnt there, which he meant to haue sent to Cuba for a shew, that the people hearing the newes, might be desirous to come to that Countrie. He feared also, that if they should haue newes of him without seeing from Florida neither gold nor siluer, nor any thing of value, it would get such a name, that no man would seeke to goe thither

The death of
2500. Indians.

The Port of
Ochuse sixe
daies iournie
from Mauilla.

Gouverneur commanded
 men. The Indians,
 que, that hee should
 men that were taken
 d that they had there
 of armes, that any one
 of warre were subiect
 shed him to saue him-
 as they determined,
 Countrie. For all this
 th fifteene or twentie
 arlat cloke, and other
 nd seemed best vnto
 owne, and hee com-
 men one souldier with
 fense: all his men be-
 gne being giuen, the
 t, and with great hurt
 se that were with them
 nt, and valiant, which
 , that many times they
 wearinesse and great
 l, to drink, which was
 The Gouverneur see-
 th certaine that accom-
 e houses, and brake and
 en, the horsemen with-
 , they fought valiantly,
 selues in great distresse
 here one vpon another
 e Indians that died in
 esse. Of the Christians
 to the Gouverneur, and
 gals, and Iohn Vasquez
 r: the rest were foot-
 tie wounded with 700.
 ounds they were quickly
 hurt. All the clothes
 , and the ornaments to
 did set them on fire
 which the Indians might
 oods together, then the
 donado waited for him
 ; and he dealt with Iohn
 he determined to doe;
 ent to Cuba for a shew,
 at Countrie. He feared
 Florida neither gold nor
 an would seeke to goe
 thither

thither, when he should haue neede of people. And so he determined to send no newes of himselfe, vntill hee had found some rich Countrie.

Chap. XX.

How the Gouverneur departed from Mauilla toward Chicaça, and what happened vnto him.

FROM the time that the Gouverneur entred into Florida, vntill his departure from Mauilla, there died an hundred and two Christians, some of sicknesse, and others which the Indians slew. He staid in Mauilla, because of the wounded men, eight and twentie daies: all which time he lay in the field. It was a well inhabited and a fat Countrie, there were some great & walled townes: and many houses scattered all about the fields, to wit, a crossebow shot or two, the one from the other. Vpon Sunday, the eighteenth of Nouember, when the hurt men were knowne to bee healed, the Gouverneur departed from Mauilla. Euery one furnished himselfe with Maiz for two daies, and they trauelled fise daies through a desert: they came to a Prouince called Pafallaya, vnto a towne, named Taliepataua: and from thence they went to another, called Cabusto: neere vnto it ran a great Riuer. The Indians on the other side cried out, threatning the Christians to kill them, if they sought to passe it. The Gouverneur commanded his men to make a barge within the towne, because the Indians should not perceiue it: it was finished in foure daies, and being ended, he commanded it to be carried one night vpon sleds halfe a league vp the Riuer. In the morning there entred into it thirtie men well armed. The Indians perceiued what was attempted, and those which were neerest, came to defend the passage. They resisted what they could, till the Christians came neere them; and seeing that the barge came to the shore, they fled away into the groues of canes. The Christians mounted on horsebacke, and went vp the Riuer to make good the passage, whereby the Gouverneur and his companie passed the Riuer. There were along the Riuer some townes well stored with Maiz and French Beanes. From thence to Chicaça the Gouverneur trauelled fise daies through a desert. Hee came to a Riuer, where on the other side were Indians to defend the passage. He made another barge in two daies; and when it was finished, the Gouverneur sent an Indian to request the Cacique to accept of his friendship, and peaceably to expect his comming: whom the Indians that were on the other side the Riuer slew before his face, and presently making a great shout went their way. Hauing passed the Riuer, the next day, being the 17. of December, the Gouverneur came to Chicaça, a small towne of twentie houses. And after they were come to Chicaça, they were much troubled with cold, because it was now winter and it snowed, while most of them were lodged in the field, before they had time to make themselves houses. This Countrie was very well peopled, and the houses scattered like those of Mauilla, fat and plentifull of Maiz, and the most part of it was fielding: they gathered as much as sufficed to passe the winter. Some Indians were taken, among which was one whom the Cacique esteemed greatly. The Gouverneur sent an Indian to signifie to the Cacique, that he desired to see him and to haue his friendship. The Cacique came vnto him, to offer him his person, Countrie and subiects, and told him, that he would cause two other Caciques to come to him in peace; who within few daies after came with him, and with their Indians: The one was called Alimamu, the other Nicalasa. They gaue a present vnto the Gouverneur of an hundred and fiftie conies, and of the Countrie garments, to wit, of mantles and skinnes. The Cacique of Chicaça came to visit him many times; and sometimes the Gouverneur sent to call him, and sent him a horse to goe and come. He complained vnto him, that a subiect of his was risen against him, and depriued him of his tribute, requesting his aide against him, for hee meant to seeke him in his Countrie, and to punish him according to his desert. Which was nothing els but a fained plot. For they determined, assoone as the Gouverneur was gone with him, and the Campe was diuided into two parts, the one part of them to set vpon the Gouverneur, and the other vpon them that remained in Chicaça. Hee went to the towne where he used to keepe his residence, and brought with him two hundred Indians with their bowes and arrows.

Great and
 walled townes.
 18. Of Nouem-
 ber.

Taliepataua.
 Cabusto.
 A great Riuer.

Cansuarale.

Some townes.
 A Riuer.

December 17.
 Chicaça.

Snow and much
 cold.

Conies.

An Indian stra-
 tegem.

Saquechuma.

A walled towne.

March, 1541.

Chicaça on
the border
of Florida.

rowes. The Gouverneur tooke thirtie horsemen, and eightie footemen, and they went to Saquechuma (for so was the Prouince called of that chiefe man, which he said had rebelled.) They found a walled towne, without any men; and those which went with the Cacique set fire on the houses, to dissemble their treason. But by reason of the great care and heedfulness, that was as well in the Gouvernours people which hee carried with him, as of those which remained in Chicaça, they durst not assault them at that time. The Gouverneur invited the Cacique, and certaine principall Indians, and gaue them hogges flesh to eate. And though they did not commonly vse it, yet they were so greedie of it, that euerynight there came Indians to certaine houses a crossebow shot from the Camp, where the hogges lay, and killed, and carried away as many as they could. And three Indians were taken in the manner. Two of them the Gouverneur commanded to be shot to with arrowes; and to cut off the hands of the other; & he sent him so handled to the Cacique. Who made as though it grieved him & they had offended the Gouverneur, and that he was glad that he had executed that punishment on them. He lay in a plaine Countrey half a league from the place, where the Christians lodged. Foure horsemen went a straggling thither, to wit, Francisco Osorio, and a seruant of the Marques of Astorga called Reynoso, and two seruants of the Gouverneur, the one his page called Ribera, and the other Fuentes his Chamberlaine: and these had taken from the Indians some skinnies, and some mantles, wherewith they were offended, and forsooke their houses. The Gouverneur knew of it, and commanded them to bee apprehended; and condemned to death Francisco Osorio, and the Chamberlaine as principals, and al of them to losse of goods. The Friers and Priests and other principall persons were earnest with him to pardon Francisco Osorio his life, & to moderate his sentence, which hee would not grant for any of them. While he was readie to command them to be drawne to the market place to cut off their heads, there came certaine Indians from the Cacique to complaine of them. John Oriiz, at the request of Baltasar de Gallegos and other persons, changed their words, and told the Gouverneur, that the Cacique said he had notice how his Lordship held those Christians in prison for his sake, and that they were in no fault, neither had they done him any wrong, and that if he would do him any fauour he would set them free. And he told the Indians; That the Gouverneur said, he had them in prison, & that he would punish them in such sort, that they should bee an example to others. Hereupon the Gouverneur commanded the prisoners to be loosed. Assoone as March was come, hee determined to depart from Chicaça, and demanded of the Cacique two hundred men for cariages. He sent him answere, that hee would speake with his principall men. Vpon Tuesday the eight of March, the Gouverneur went to the towne where he was, to aske him for the men: Hee told him, he would send them the next day. Assoone as the Gouverneur was come to Chicaça, he told Luys de Moscoso the Camp-master, that hee misliked the Indians, and that he should keepe a strong watch that night, which hee remembered but a little. The Indians came at the second watch in foure squadrons, euery one by it selfe, and assoone as they were descried, they sounded a drum, and gaue the assault with a great cry, and with so great celeritie, that presently they entred with the scoutes, that were somewhat distant from the Campe. And when they were perceiued of them which were in the towne, halfe the houses were on fire, which they had kindled. That night three horsemen chanced to bee skouts, two of them were of base calling, and the worst men in all the Camp, and the other, which was a nephew of the Gouverneur, which vntill then was held for a tall man, shewed himselfe there as great a coward, as any of them: for all of them ran away. And the Indians without any resistance came and set the towne on fire; and taried without behind the doores for the Christians, which ran out of the houses, not hauing any leasure to arme themselves; and as they ran hither and thither amazed with the noise, and blinded with the smoke & flame of the fire, they knew not which way they went, neither could they light vpon their weapons, nor saddle their horses, neither saw they the Indians that shot them. Manie of the horses were burned in the stables, and those which could breake their halters gat loose. The disorder and flight was such, that euery man fled which way he could, without leauing any to resist the Indians. But God, (which chastiseth his according to his pleasure, and in the greatest necessities and dangers

and they went to
he said had rebelled.)
with the Cacique set
great care and heedful-
with him, as of those
the Gouverneur invited
flesh to eat. And
that euerynight there
the hogges lay, and
taken in the manner,
; and to cut off the
who made as though it
he had executed that
the place, where the
Francisco Osorio, and
ts of the Gouverneur,
; and these had taken
re offended, and for-
to bee apprehended;
ncipals, and al of them
were earnest with him
h hee would not grant
he to the market place
o complaine of them,
changed their words,
s Lordship held those
er had they done him
m free. And he told
he would punish them
the Gouverneur com-
e determined to depart
carriages. He sent him
day the eight of March,
men: Hee told him, he
me to Chicaça, he told
d that he should keepe
ians came at the second
ey were descried, they
reat celeritie, that pre-
the Campe. And when
uses were on fire, which
ts, two of them were of
ch was a nephew of the
life there as great a cow-
se without any resistance
sors for the Christians,
selues; and as they ran
oke & flame of the fire,
their weapons, nor saddle
the horses were burned
The disorder and flight
any to resist the Indians,
e greatest necessities and
dangers

dangers sustaineth them with his hand,) so blinded the Indians, that they saw not what they had done, and thought that the horses which ran loose, were men on horsebacke, that gathered themselves together to set vpon them. The Gouverneur only rood on horsebacke, and with him a souldier called Tapia, and set vpon the Indians, and striking the first he met with his lance, the saddle fell with him, which with haste was euill girded. and so hee fell from his horse. And all the people that were on foote were fled to a wood out of the towne, and there assembled themselves together. And because it was night, and that the Indians thought the horses were men on horsebacke which came to set vpon them, as I said before, they fled; and one onely remained dead, and that was he whom the Gouverneur slew with his lance. The towne lay all burnt to ashes. There was a woman burned, who, after shee and her husband were both gone out of their house, went in againe for certaine perles, which they had forgotten, and when she would haue come out, the fire was so great at the doore that shee could not, neither could her husband succour her. Other three Christians came out of their lodgings so cruelly burned, that one of them died within three daies, and the other two were carried many daies each of them vpon a couch betweene staues, which the Indians carried on their shoulders, for otherwise they could not trauell. There died in this hurliburie eleuen Christians, and fiftie horses; and there remained an hundred hogges, and foure hundred were burned. If any perchance had saued any clothes from the fire of Mauilla, here they were burned, and many were clad in skinnes, for they had no leasure to take their coates. They endured much cold in this place, and the chiefest remedie were great fires. They spent all night in turnings without sleepe: for if they warmed one side, they freessed on the other. Some inuented the weaving of certaine mats of drie iuie, & did weare one beneath, and another aboue: many laughed at this device, whom afterward necessitie inforced to doe the like. The Christians were so spoiled, and in such want of saddles & weapons which were burned, that if the Indians had come the second night, they had ouercome them with little labour. They remoued thence to the towne where the Cacique was wont to lie, because it was in a champion countrie. Within eight daies after, there were many lances and saddles made. There were ash trees in those parts, whereof they made as good lances as in Biscay.

The increase of hogges.

The towne where the Cacique lay. Ash trees.

Chap. XXI.

How the Indians set againe vpon the Christians, and how the Gouverneur went to Alimamu, beyond which towne in warlike sort they tarried for him in the way.

Vpon Wednesday the 15. of March 1541. after the Gouverneur had lodged 8. daies in a plaine, halfe a league from the place which he had wintered in, after he had set vp a forge, and tempered the swords which in Chicaça were burned, and made many targets, saddles, and lances, on Tuesday night, at the morning watch, many Indians came to assault the Campe in three squadrons, euery one by themselves: Those which watched gaue the alarme. The Gouverneur with great speed set his men in order in other three squadrons, and leauing some to defend the Campe, went out to incounter them. The Indians were ouercome and put to flight. The ground was champion and fit for f Christians to take the aduantage of them; and it was now breake of day. But there happened a di-order, whereby there were not past thirtie or fortie Indians slaine: and this it was: that a Frier cried out in the Campe without any iust occasion, To the Campe, To the Campe: Whereupon the Gouverneur and all the rest repaired thither, and the Indians had time to saue themselves. There were some taken, by whom the Gouverneur informed himselfe of the Countrie, through which hee was to passe. The 25. of Aprill, he departed from Chicaça, and lodged at a small towne called Alimamu. They had very little Maiz, and they were to passe a desert of seuen daies iournie. The next day, the Gouverneur sent three Capitaines euerie one his way with horsemen and footemen to seeke prouision to passe the desert. And Iohn Dannusco the Auditor went with fiftene horsemen, and 40. footemen that way that the Gouverneur was to goe, and found a strong fort made, where the Indians staid for him, and many of them walked on the top of it with their weapons, hauing their bodies, thighes and armes okered and died with blacke, white,

25. of Aprill. Alimamu.

Blacke, white, yellow and red colours.

yellow and red, striped like vnto paines, so that they shewed as though they went in hose and doublets: and some of them had plumes, and others had hornes on their heads, and their faces blacke, and their eies done round about with strakes of red, to seeme more fierce. As-soone as they saw that the Christians approched, with a great crie sounding two drummes with great furie they sallied forth to receiue them. Iohn Dannusco and those that were with him, thought good to auoid them, and to acquaint the Gouvernour therewith. They retired to a plaine place, a crossebowshot from the fort in sight of it, the footemen, the crossebowmen, and targetters placed themselves before the horsemen, that they might not hurt the horses. The Indians sallied out by seuen and seuen, and eight and eight to shoote their arrowes, and retired againe: and in sight of the Christians they made a fire, and tooke an Indian, some by the feete, and some by the head, and made as though they went to cast him into the fire, and gaue him first many knocks on the head: signifying, that they meant so to handle the Christians. Iohn Danusco sent three horsemen to aduertise the Gouvernour hereof. He came presently: for his intent was to driue them from thence, saying, that if he did it not, they would be emboldned to charge him another time, when they might doe him more harme. He made the horsemen to alight, and set his men in foure squadrons: The signe being giuen, they set vpon the Indians, which made resistance till the Christians came neere the fort, and as-soone as they saw they could not defend themselves, by a place where a brooke passed neere the fort, they ran away, and from the otherside they shot some arrowes: and because at that instant we knew no ford for the horses to passe, they had time enough to get out of our danger. Three Indians were slaine there, and many Christians were hurt, whereof within few daies, there died fiftene by the way. All men thought the Gouvernour to bee in fault, because he sent not to see the disposition of the place on the other side of the Riuer, and to know the passage before hee set vpon them. For with the hope they had to saue themselves by flight that way, when they saw none other meanes, they fought til they were broken, and it was an incouragement to defend themselves vntill then, and to offend the Christians without any danger to themselves.

Chap. XXII.

How the Gouvernour went from Alimamu to Quizquiz, and from thence to Rio Grande, or the great Riuer.

THree daies after they had sought some Maiz, whereof they found but little store, in regard of that which was needfull, and that for this cause, as well for their sakes that were wounded, it was needfull for them to rest, as for the great iournie they were to march to come where store of Maiz was: yet the Gouvernour was inforced to depart presentlie toward Quizquiz. He trauelled seuen daies through a desert of many marishes and thicke woods: but it might all be trauelled on horseback, except some lakes which they swamme ouer. Hee came to a towne of the Prouince of Quizquiz without being descried, and tooke all the people in it before they came out of their houses. The mother of the Cacique was taken there: and he sent vnto him by an Indian, that he should come to see him, and that he would giue him his mother, and al the people which he had taken there. The Cacique sent him answere againe, that his Lordship should loose and send them to him, and that he would come to visit and serue him. The Gouvernour, because his people for want of Maiz were somewhat weake and wearie, and the horses also were leane, determined to accomplish his request, to see if hee could haue peace with him, and so commanded to set free his mother and all the rest, and with louing words dismissed them and sent them to him. The next day, when the Gouvernour expected the Cacique, there came many Indians with their bowes and arrowes with a purpose to set vpon the Christians. The Gouvernour had commanded all the horsemen to be armed, and on horsebacke, and in a readines. When the Indians saw that they were readie, they staid a crossebowe shot from the place where the Gouvernour was neere a brooke. And after halfe an houre that they had stood there stil, there came to the Camp sixe principall Indians, and said, they came to see what people they were, and that long agoe, they had been

A desert of
seuen daies.

A towne of
Quizquiz.

they went in hose
their heads, and their
ne more fierce, and
nding two drummes
those that were with
ewith. They retired
men, the crossebow-
ey might not hurt the
ht to shoote their ar-
ire, and tooke an In-
went to cast him into
ey meant so to handle
uernour hereof. He
t, that if he did it not,
t doe him more harme,
he signe being giuen,
me neere the fort, and
a brooke passed neere
s: and because at that
ugh to get out of our
hurt, whereof within
ernour to bee in fault,
side of the Riuer, and
ey had to saue them-
ey fought til they were
en, and to offend the

from thence to Rio

but little store, in regard
akes that were wounded,
o march to come where
entlie toward Quizquiz,
cke woods: but it might
e ouer. Hee came to a
ke all the people in it
was taken there: and he
at he would giue him his
sent him answere againe,
would come to visit and
ere somewhat weake and
his request, to see if hee
ther and all the rest, and
xt day, when the Gouver-
owes and arrowes with a
ed all the horsemen to be
aw that they were readie,
was neere a brooke. And
the Camp sixe principall
that long agoe, they had
been

been informed by their forefathers, " That a white people should subdue them: and that
" therefore they would returne to their Cacique, and bid him come presently to obey and
" serue the Gouvernour:" and after they had presented him with sixe or seuen skinned
mantles which they brought, they tooke their leaue of him, and returned with the other,
which waited for them by the brookeside. The Cacique neuer came againe nor sent other
message. And because in the towne where the Gouvernour lodged, there was small store
of Maiz, he remooued to another halfe a league from Rio Grande, where they found plentie
of Maiz: And he went to see the Riuer, and found, that neere vnto it was great store of
timber to make barges, and good situation of ground to incampe in. Presently he remooued
himselfe thither. They made houses, and pitched their Campe in a plaine field a crossebow
shot from the Riuer. And thither was gathered all the Maiz of the townes, which they had
lately passed. They began presently to cut and hew down timber, and to saw plankes for
barges. The Indians came presently down the Riuer: they leaped on shore, and declared
to § Gouvernour, That they were subiects of a great Lord, whose name was Aquixo, who was
Lord of many townes, and gouerned many people on the other side of the Riuer, and came
to tell him on his behalfe, that the next day he with al his men would come to see, what it
would please him to command him. The next day with speed, the Cacique came with two
hundred canoes full of Indians with their bowes and arrowes, painted, and with great plumes
of white feathers, and many other colours, with shields in their hands, wherewith they de-
fended the rowers on both sides, and the men of warre stood from the head to the sterne,
with their bowes and arrowes in their hands. The canoe wherein the Cacique was, had a
tilt ouer the sterne, and hee sate vnder the tilt; and so were other canoes of the principall
Indians. And from vnder the tilt where the chiefe man sat, hee gouerned and commanded
the other people. All ioyned together, and came within a stones cast of the shore. From
thence the Cacique said to the Gouvernour, which walked along the Riuer side with others
that waited on him, that he was come thither to visit, to honour, and to obey him; because
he knew he was the greatest and mightiest Lord on the earth: therefore he would see what
he would command him to doe. The Gouvernour yielded him thankes, and requested him
to come on shore, that they might the better communicate together. And without any answere
to that point, hee sent him three canoes, wherein was great store of fish and loaves, made of
the substance of prunes like vnto bricke. After he had receiued al, he thanked him, and
prayed him againe to come on shore. And because the Caciques purpose was, to see if with
dissimulation he might doe some hurt, when they saw that the Gouvernour and his men were in
readinesse, they began to goe from the shore: and with a great crie, the crossebowmen which
were ready, shot at them, and slue fiue or sixe of them. They retired with great order:
none did leaue his oare, though the next to him were slaine; and shielding themselves, they
went farther off. Afterward they came many times and landed: and when any of vs came
toward them, they fled vnto their canoes, which were verie pleasant to behold: for they were
very great and well made, and had their tilts, plumes, pauseses, and flagges, and with the
multitude of people that were in them, they seemed to be a faire armie of gallies. In thi-
tie dayes space, while the Gouvernour remained there, they made foure barges: In three of
which hee commanded twelue horsemen to enter, in each of them foure; in a morning, three
houres before day, men which hee trusted would land in despite of the Indians, and make
sure the passage, or die, and some footemen being crossebowmen went with them, and
rowers to set them on the other side. And in the other barge he commanded Iohn de Guz-
man to passe with the footemen, which was made Capitaine in stead of Francisco Maldonado.
And because the streame was swift, they went a quarter of a league vp the Riuer along the
bancke, and crossing ouer, fell downe with the streame, and landed right ouer against
the Camp. Two stones cast before they came to land, the horsemen went out of the barges
on horsebacke to a sandie plot very hard and cleere ground, where all of them landed with-
out any resistance. Assoone as those that passed first, were on land on the other side, the
barges returned to the place where the Gouvernour was: and within two houres after Sunne-
rising, all the people were ouer. The Riuer was almost halfe a league broad. If a man
stood

An old pro-
phesie.

Another towne.
Rio Grande, or
Rio de Espiritu
Santo.

Aquixo, a great
Lord on the
Westside of Rio
Grande.

Two hundred
canoes.

Loaves made of
prunes.

Goodly great
canoes.

Foure barges
made.

They passe ouer
Rio Grande.

The Riuer here
almost halfe a
league broad.

stood still on the other side, it could not be discerned, whether he were a man or no. The Riuer was of great depth, and of a strong current: the water was alwaies muddie: there came downe the Riuer continually many trees and timber, which the force of the water and streame brought downe. There was great store of fish in it of sundrie sorts, and the most of it differing from the freshwater fish of Spaine, as hereafter shall be shewed.

Chap. XXIII.

How the Gouvernour departed from Aquixo to Casqui, and from thence to Pacaha: and how this Countrey differeth from that which we had passed.

HAuing passed Rio grande, the Gouvernour trauelled a league and an halfe, and came to a great towne of Aquixo, which was dispeopled before hee came thither. They espied thirtie Indians comming ouer a plaine, which the Cacique sent, to discover the Christians determination: and assoone as they had sight of them, they tooke themselves to flight. The horsemen pursued them, and slue tenne, and tooke fifteene. And because the towne, whither the Gouvernour went, was neere vnto the Riuer, he sent a Capitaine, with as many men as he thought sufficient to carrie the barges vp the Riuer. And because in his traueilling by land many times he went farre from the Riuer to compasse the creekes that came from it, the Indians tooke occasion to set vpon them of the barges, and put them in great danger, because that by reason of the great current, they durst not leaue the shore, and from the bancke they shot at them. Assoone as the Gouvernour was come to the towne, hee presently sent crossebow men downe the Riuer, which came to rescue them: and vpon the comming of the barges to the towne, hee commanded them to bee broken, and to saue the iron for others, when it should bee needfull. Hee lay there one night, and the day following, hee set forward to seeke a Prouince, called Pacaha: which hee was informed to bee neere vnto Chisca, where the Indians told him there was gold. He passed through great townes of Aquixo, which were all abandoned for feare of the Christians. Hee understood by certaine Indians that were taken, that three daies iournie from thence dwelt a great Cacique, whose name was Casqui. Hee came to a small Riuer, where a bridge was made, by which they passed: that day till Sunset, they went all in water, which in some places came to the waste, and in some to the knees. When they saw themselves on dry land, they were very glad, because they feared they should wander vp and downe as forlorne men al night in the water. At noone they came to the first towne of Casqui: they found the Indians carelesse, because they had no knowledge of them. There were many men and women taken, and store of goods, as mantles and skinnies, as well in the first towne, as in another, which stood in a field halfe a league from thence in sight of it; whither the horsemen ran. This Countrey is higher, drier, and more champion, than any part bordering neere the Riuer, that vntill then they had seene. There were in the fields many Walnut trees, bearing soft shelled Walnuts in fashion like bullets, and in the houses they found many of them, which the Indians had laid vp in store. The trees differed in nothing else from those of Spaine, nor from those which we had seene before, but onely that they haue a smaller leafe. There were many Mulberrie trees and Plum trees, which bare red plums like those of Spaine, and other gray, somewhat differing, but farre better. And all the trees are all the yeere so fruitfull, as if they were planted in orchards: and the woods were verie thinne. The Gouvernour trauelled two daies through the Countrey of Casqui, before hee came to the towne where the Cacique was: and the most of the way was alway by champion ground, which was full of great townes, so that from one towne, you might see two or three. He sent an Indian to certifie the Cacique, that hee was comming to the place where hee was, with intent to procure his friendship, and to hold him as his brother. Whereunto he answered, That he should be welcome, and that he would receiue him with speciall good wil, and accomplish all that his Lordship would command him. Hee sent him a present vpon the way; to wit, skinnies, mantles, and fish: And after these complements, the Gouvernour found all the townes, as he passed, inhabited with people, which peaceable attended his comming, and offered him skinnies, mantles, and fish. The Cacique accom-

A towne.

Pacaha neere
vnto Chisca.

Great townes.

The first towne
of Casqui.

Another towne.

Walnut trees
with soft shells.Many Mulber-
rie trees and
plum trees.Many great
townes.

ere were a man or no. alwaies muddie: there e force of the water undrie sorts, and the ll be shewed.

thence to Pacaha: passed.

an halfe, and came to a r. They espied thirtie r the Christians deter- mselues to flight. The nd because the towne, Captaine, with as many because in his traueiling eekes that came from it, en in great danger, be- re, and from the bancke ne, hee presently sent pon the comming of the aue the iron for others, y following, hee set for- bee neere vnto Chisca, townes of Aquixo, which y certaine Indians that cique, whose name was which they passed: that o the waste, and in some very glad, because they in the water. At noone elesse, because they had , and store of goods, a ch stood in a field halfe a Countrie is higher, drier, that vntill then they had helled Walnuts in fashion dians had laid vp in store. hose which we had seene many Mulberrie trees and gray, somewhat differing, as if they were planted in lled two daies through the e was: and the most of the , so that from one towne, e, that hee was comming to to hold him as his brother. he would receiue him with mand him. Hee sent him after these complements, people, which peaceable sh. The Cacique accom- panied

panied with many Indians came out of the towne, and staid halfe a league on the way to receiue the Gouvernour, and when hee came to him, he spake these words following:

Right high, right mighty, and renowned Lord, your Lordship is most hartlie welcome. Assoone as I had notice of your Lordship, of your power, and your perfections, although you came into my Countrie, killing and taking captiues the inhabitants thereof and my subiects: yet I determined to conformance my will vnto yours, and as your owne to interpret in good part all that your Lordship did: beleeuing, that it was conuenient it should be so for some iust respect, to preuent some future matter reuealed vnto your Lordship, and concealed from me. For well may a mischiefe be permitted to auoid a greater, and that good may come thereof: which I beleue will so fall out. For it is no reason to presume of so excellent a Prince, that the noblesse of his heart, and the effect of his will would permit him to suffer any vnjust thing. My abilitie is so small to serue you as your Lordship deserueth, that if you respect not mine abundant good will, which humble offereth all kind of seruice, I deserue but little in your presence. But if it bee reason that this be esteemed, receiue the same, my selfe, my Countrie, and subiects for yours, and dispose of me and them at your pleasure. For if I were Lord of all the world, with the same good will should your Lordship by me be receiued, serued and obeyed.

The Gouvernour answered him to the purpose, and satisfied him in few words. Within a while after both of them vsed words of great offers & courtesie the one to the other, and the Cacique requested him to lodge in his houses. The Gouvernour, to preserue the peace the better, excused himselfe, saying, that hee would lodge in the fields. And because it was very hot, they camped neere certaine trees a quarter of a league from the towne. The Cacique went to his towne, and came againe with many Indians singing. Assoone as they came to the Gouvernour, all of them prostrated themselves vpon the ground. Among these came two Indians that were blind. The Cacique made a speech: to auoid tediousnesse, I will onely tell in few words the substance of the matter. Hee said, that seeing the Gouvernour was the sonne of the Sunne, and a great Lord, he besought him to doe him the fauour to giue sight to those two blind men. The blind men rose vp presently, and very earnestly requested the same of the Gouvernour. He answered, That in the high heauens was he that had power to giue them health, and whatsoever they could aske of him, whose seruant he was: And that this Lord made the heauens and the earth, and man after his owne likenesse, and that he suffered vpon the crosse to saue mankind, and rose againe the third day, and that he died as he was man, and as touching his diuinitie, he was, and is immortall; and that he ascended into heauen, where he standeth with his armes open to receiue all such as turne vnto him: and straightway he commanded him to make a verie high crosse of wood, which was set vp in the highest place of the towne; declaring vnto him, that the Christians worshipped the same in resemblance and memorie of that whereon Christ suffered. The Gouvernour and his men kneeled downe before it, and the Indians did the like. The Gouvernour willed him, that from thenceforth hee should worship the same, and should aske whatsoever they stood in need of, of that Lord that he told him was in heauen. Then he asked him how far it was from thence to Pacaha: He said, one daies iournie, and that at the end of his Countrie, there was a lake like a brooke which falleth into Rio Grande, and that hee would send men before to make a bridge whereby he might passe. The same day that the Gouvernour departed thence, he lodged at a towne belonging to Casqui: and the next day hee passed in sight of other townes, and came to the lake, which was halfe a crossebow shot ouer, of a great depth and current. At the time of his comming, the Indians had made an end of the bridge, which was made of timber, laid one tree after another: and on one side it had a course of stakes higher then the bridge, for them that passed to take hold on. The Cacique of Casqui came to the Gouvernour, and brought his people with him. The Gouvernour sent word by an Indian to the Cacique of Pacaha, that though hee were enemie to the Cacique of Casqui, and though hee were there, yet he would doe him no disgrace nor hurt, if he would atted him peaceable, and embrace his friendship; but rather would intreate him as a brother. The Indian, which the Gouvernour sent, came againe, and said, that the Cacique made none account of that which hee told him, but fled with all his men out at the other side of the towne.

The chiefe towne of the Cacique of Casqui.

A towne belonging to Casqui.

Other townes.

towne. Presentlie the Gouvernour entred, and ran before with the horsemen, that way, by which the Indians fled; and at another towne distant a quarter of a league from thence, they tooke many Indians: and assoone as the horsemen had taken them, they deliuered them to the Indians of Casqui, whom, because they were their enemies, with much circumspection and reioycing, they brought to the towne where the Christians were: and the greatest grieve they had, was this, that they could not get leaue to kill them. There were found in the towne many mantles, and Deere skines, Lions skins, and Beares skines, and many Cats skins. Many came so farre poorly apparrclled, and there they clothed themselues: of the mantles, they made them cotes and cassocks, and some made gownes, and lined them with Cats skins; and likewise their cassocks. Of the Deeres skines, some made them also ierkins, shirts, hose and shooes: and of the Beare skines, they made them verie good clokes: for no water could pierce them. There were targets of raw oxo hides found there; with which hides they armed their horses.

Mantles,
Deeres skines,
Lions skines,
Beares skines,
and Cats skines.

Targets of raw
oxo hides.

Chap. XXIII.

How the Cacique of Pacaha came peaceable to the Gouvernour, and the Cacique of Casqui absented himselfe, and came againe to make his excuse, and how the Gouvernour made them both friends.

Vpon Wednesday, the 19. of Iune, the Gouvernour entred into Pacaha: He lodged in the towne, where the Cacique vsed to reside, which was very great, walled, and beset with towers, and many loopeholes were in the towers and wall. And in the towne was great store of old Maiz, and great quantitie of new in the fields. Within a league and halfe a league were great townes all walled. Where the Gouvernour was lodged, was a great lake, that came neere vnto the wall: and it entred into a ditch that went round about the towne, wanting but a little to euiron it round. From the lake to the great Riuer was made a weare by the which the fish came into it; which the Cacique kept for his recreation and sport: with nets, that were founde in the towne, they tooke as much as they would: and tooke they neuer so much, there was no want perceiued. There was also great store of fish in many other lakes that were thereabout, but it was soft, and not so good as that which came from the Riuer, and the most of it was different from the fresh water fish of Spaine. There was a fish which they called Bagres: the third part of it was head, and it had on both sides the gilles, and along the sides great prickes like very sharpe aules: those of this kind that were in the lakes were as big as pikes: and in the Riuer, there were some of an hundred, and of an hundred and fiftie pounds weight, and many of them were taken with the hooke. There was another fish like barbilles; and another like breames, headed like a delicate fish, called in Spaine besugo, betweene red and gray. This was there of most esteeme. There was another fish called a pele fish: it had a snout of a cubit long, and at the end of the ypper lip it was made like a peece. There was another fish like a Westerne shad: And all of them had scales, except the bagres, and the pele fish. There was another fish, which sometimes the Indians brought vs, of the bignes of an hog, they called it the Pereo fish: it had rowes of teeth beneath and aboue. The Cacique of Casqui sent many times great presents of fish, mantles, and skines. Hee told the Gouvernour that he would deliuer the Cacique of Pacaha into his hands. He went to Casqui, and sent many canoes vp the Riuer, and came himselfe by land with many of his people. The Gouvernour with 40. horsemen and 60. footemen tooke him along with him vp the Riuer. And his Indians which were in the canoes, discouered where the Cacique of Pacaha was in a little Island, situated betweene two armes of the Riuer. And fise Christians entred into a canoe, wherein Don Antonio Osorio went before, to see what people the Cacique had with him. There were in the Isle fise or sixe thousand soules. And assoone as they saw them, supposing that the Indians which were in the other canoes were also Christians, the Cacique, and certaine which were in three canoes, which they had there with the, fled in great haste to the other side of the Riuer: The rest with great feare and danger, lept into the Riuer, where much people was drowned, especially women and little children. Pre-ently the Gouvernour which was on land, not knowing what

Pacaha, a very
great towne be-
set with towers.

Great walled
townes.

Nets found.

The diuers sorts
of excellent fish
in Rio Grande.

Fise or sixe
thousand In-
dians.

horsemen, that way, by league from thence, they they deliuered them to much circumspection and the greatest griefe they were found in the towne, and many Cats skins, selues: of the mantles, ed them with Cats skina; them also ierkins, shirts, ood clokes: for no water there; with which hides

, and the Cacique of case, and how the

Pacaha: He lodged in the ed, and beset with towers, yne was great store of old halfe a league were great lake, that came neere vnto he, wanting but a little to reare by the which the fish port: with nets, that were ke they neuer so much, h in many other lakes that me from the Riuer, and there was a fish which they hides the gilles, and along at were in the lakes were l, and of an hundred and e. There was another fish, called in Spaine besugo, e was another fish called a per lip it was made like a hem had scales, except the es the Indians brought vs, ves of teeth beneath and fish, mantles, and skinnes, Pacaha into his hands. He mselve by land with many men tooke him along with es, discovered where the armes of the Riuer. And o went before, to see what e or sixe thousand soules, which were in the other ere in three canoes, which the Riuer: The rest with e was drowned, especially was on land, not knowing what

what had happened to Don Antonio, and those that went with him, commanded y Christians with all speed to enter with the Indians of Casqui in the canoes, which were quickly with Don Antonio in the little Island, where they tooke many men and women, and much goods. Great store of goods, which the Indians had laid vpon hurdles of canes, and rafts of timber to carrie ouer to the other side, draue down the riuer, wherewith the Indians of Casqui filled their canoes: and for feare lest the Christians would take it from them, the Cacique went home with them downe the Riuer, without taking his leaue of the Gouvernour: whereupon the Gouvernour was highly offended with him: and presently returning to Pacaha, he ouerran the Countrie of Casqui the space of two leagues, where hee tooke twentie or thirtie of his men. And because his horses were wearie, and he wanted time that day to goe any farther, hee returned to Pacaha, with determination within three or foure daies after to inuade Casqui. And presently he let loose one of the Indians of Pacaha, and sent word by him to the Cacique, that if hee would haue his friendship, he should repaire vnto him, and that both of them would make warre vpon Casqui. And presently came many Indians that belonged to Pacaha, and brought an Indian, in stead of the Cacique, which was discovered by the Caciques brother which was taken prisoner. The Gouvernour wished the Indians that their Master himselfe should come: for hee knew very well that that was not hee, and told them, that they could doe nothing, which he knew not before they thought it. The next day the Cacique came, accompanied with many Indians, and with a present of much fish, skinnes and mantles. He made a speech that all were glad to heare, and concluded, saying, That though his Lordship, without his giuing occasion of offence had done him hurt in his Countrie and subiects, yet he would not therefore refuse to bee his, and that he would alwaies be at his commandement. The Gouvernour commanded his brother to be loosed, and other principall Indians that were taken prisoners. That day came an Indian from the Cacique of Casqui, and said, that his Lord would come the next day to excuse himselfe of the error which he had committed, in going away without licence of the Gouvernour. The Gouvernour willed the messenger to signifie vnto him, that if he came not in his owne person, he would seeke him himselfe, and giue him such punishment as he deserued. The next day with all speede came the Cacique of Casqui, and brought a present to the Gouvernour of many mantles, skinnes, and fish, and gaue him a daughter of his, saying, that he greatly desired to match his blood with the blood of so great a Lord as he was, and therefore he brought him his daughter, and desired him to take her to his wife. Hee made a long and discreet oration, giuing him many commendations, and concluded, saying, that hee should pardon his going away without licence, for that Crosses sake, which he had left with him: protesting that hee went away for shame of that which his men had done without his consent. The Gouvernour answered him, that hee had chosen a good patrone; and that if he had not come to excuse himselfe, hee had determined to seeke him, to burne his townes, to kill him and his people, and to destroy his Countrie. To which he replied saying:

My Lord, I and mine are yours, and my Countrie likewise is yours: therefore if you had done so, you should haue destroyed your owne Countrie, and haue killed your owne people: whatsoever shall come vnto me from your hand, I will receiue as from my Lord, as well punishment as reward: And know you, that the fauour which you did me in leauing me the Crosse, I do acknowledge the same to be a very great one, and greater then I haue euer deserued. For you shall vnderstand, that with great droughts, the fields of Maiz of my Countrie were withered; and assoone as I and my people kneeled before the Crosse, and prayed for raine, presently our necessitie was relieved.

The Gouvernour made him, and the Cacique of Pacaha friends; and set them with him at his table to dine with him: and the Caciques fell at variance about the seates, which of them should sit on his right hand. The Gouvernour pacified them; telling them, that among the Christians, all was one to sit on the one side, or on the other, willing them so to behaue themselves, seeing they were with him, that no bodie might heare them, and that euery one should sit in the place that first hee lighted on. From thence he sent thirtie horsemen, and fiftie footemen to the Prouince of Caluca, to see if from thence hee might trauel to

The Cacique of Pacaha commeth to the Gouvernour.

Gold and copper
in Chisca.

A poore towne.

Great store of
Oxen toward
the North of
Pacaha.
This is like
Quigaute.

Chisca, where the Indians said, there was a worke of gold and copper. They trauelled seven daies iournie through a desert, and returned verie wearie, eating greene plums and stalkes of Maiz, which they found in a poore towne of sixe or seven houses. From thence forward toward the North; the Indians said, That the Country was very ill inhabited, because it was very cold: And that there were such store of Oxen, that they could keepe no corne for them: that the Indians liued vpon their flesh. The Gouvernor seeing that toward that part the Countrie was so poore of Maiz, that in it they could not bee sustained, demanded of the Indians, which way it was most inhabited: and they said, they had notice of a great Prouince, and a very plentifull Countrie, which was called Quigaute, and that it was toward the South,

Chap. XXV.

How the Gouverneur departed from Pacaha to Quigaute, and to Coligoa, and came to Cayas.

The Caciques
towne.

A towne of
Casqui
Another towne,
Quigaute.
The fourth of
August.

The greatest
towne scene in
Florida.

A towne.

The Gouverneur rested in Pacaha fortie daies. In all which time the two Caciques serued him with great store of fish, mantles, and skinnes, and stroue who should doe him greatest seruice. At the time of his departure, the Cacique of Pacaha gaue him two of his sisters, saying, that in signe of loue that he might remember him, he should take them for his wiues: the ones name was Macanoche, and the others Mochila: they were well proportioned, tall of bodie, and well fleshed. Macanoche was of a good countenance, and in her shape and physiognomie looked like a Ladie: the other was strongly made. The Cacique of Casqui commanded the bridge to be repaired, and the Gouverneur returned through his Countrey, and lodged in the field neere his towne, whither hee came with great store of fish, and two women, which hee exchanged with two Christians for two shirts. He gaue vs a guide and men for carriages. The Gouverneur lodged at a towne of his, and the next day at another neere a Riuer, whither he caused canoes to be brought for him to passe ouer, and with his leaue returned. The Gouverneur tooke his iournie toward Quigaute. The fourth day of August, he came to the towne, where the Cacique vsed to keep his residencie: on the way he sent him a present of many mantles and skinnes, and not daring to stay for him in the towne, he absented himselfe. The towne was the greatest that was seene in Florida. The Gouverneur and his people lodged in the one halfe of it: and within few daies, seeing the Indians became liars, he commanded the other halfe to be burned, because it should not bee a shelter for them, if they came to assault him by night, nor an hindrance to his horsemen for the resisting of them. There came an Indian very well accompanied with many Indians, saying, that hee was the Cacique. He deliuered him ouer to the men of his guard to look vnto him. There went and came many Indians, and brought mantles and skinnes. The counterfeited Cacique, seeing so little opportunitie to execute his euill thought, as hee went one day abroad talking with the Gouverneur, he shewed him such a paire of heeles, that there was no Christian that could ouertake him, and he leaped into the Riuer, which was a crossebow shot from the towne: and assoone as hee was on the other side, many Indians that were thereabout making a great crie began to shoote. The Gouverneur passed presently ouer to them with horsemen and footemen, but they durst not tarrie for him. Going forward on his way, hee came to a towne where the people were fled, and a little further to a lake, where the horses could not passe, and on the otherside were many women. The footemen passed, and tooke many of them, and much spoile. The Gouverneur came to the Camp: And that night was a spie of the Indians taken by them of the watch. The Gouverneur asked him, whether he would bring him where the Cacique was? he said, he would. And he went presently to seeke him with twentie horsemen, and fiftie footemen: and after he had sought him a day, and an halfe, hee found him in a strong wood: And a souldiour not knowing him, gaue him a wound on the head; and he cried out, that he should not kill him, saying, that he was the Cacique: so he was taken, & an hundred and fortie of his men with him. The Gouverneur came againe to Quigaute, and willed him to cause his men to come to serue the Christians: and staying some daies for their comming, and seeing they came not, he sent two Captaines, cuery

they trauelled seven
plums and stalkes of
ence forward toward
because it was very
o corne for them:
that part the Coun-
dred of the Indians,
reat Prouince, and a
ard the South.

ligoa, and came

two Caciques serued
uld doe him greatest
im two of his sisters,
e them for his wiues:
proportioned, tall of
d in her shape and
e Cacique of Casqui
through his Countrey,
store of fish, and two
gaue vs a guide and
next day at another
e ouer, and with his
fourth day of August,
on the way he sent
him in the towne, he
rida. The Gouverneur
seeing the Indians be-
uld not bee a shelter
his horsemen for the
many Indians, saying,
his guard to look vnto
kinnes. The counter-
as hee went one day
eles, that there was no
h was a crossebow shot
dians that were there-
esently ouer to them
ng forward on his way,
r to a lake, where the
footemen passed, and
Camp: And that night
ur asked him, whether
d he went presently to
had sought him a day,
knowing him, gaue him
n, saying, that he was
h him. The Gouverneur
to serue the Christians:
he sent two Capitaines,
euery

euery one his way on both sides of the Riuer with horsemen and footemen. They tooke many men and women. Now seeing the hurt which they sustained for their rebellion, they came to see what the Gouverneur would command them, and passed to and fro many times, and brought presents of cloth and fish. The Cacique and his two wiues were in the lodging of the Gouverneur loose, and the halbardiers of his guard did keepe them. The Gouverneur asked them which way the Countrey was most inhabited? They said, that toward the South downe the Riuer, were great townes and Caciques, which commanded great Countreies, and much people: And that toward the Northwest, there was a Prouince neere to certaine mountaines, that was called Coligoa. The Gouverneur and all the rest thought good to goe first to Coligoa: saying, that peradventure the mountains would make some difference of soile, and that beyond them there might be some gold or siluer: As for Quigaute, Casqui, and Pacaha, they were plaine Countreies, fat grounds, and full of good medowes on the Riuers, where the Indians sowed large fields of Maiz. From Tascaluca to Rio grande, or the great Riuer, is about 300. leagues: it is a very low Countrey, and hath many lakes. From Pacaha to Quigaute may bee an hundred leagues. The Gouverneur left the Cacique of Quigaute in his owne towne: And an Indian, which was his guide, led him through great woods without any way seven daies iournie through a desert, where, at euery lodging, they lodged in lakes and pooles in verie shold water: there were such store of fish, that they killed them with cudgils; and the Indians which they carried in chaines, with the mud troubled the waters, and the fish being therewith, as it were, astoned, came to the top of the water, and they tooke as much as they listed. The Indians of Coligoa had no knowledge of the Christians, & when they came so neere the towne, that the Indians saw them, they fled vp a Riuer, which passed neere the towne, and some leaped into it; but the Christians went on both sides of the Riuer, and tooke them. There were many men and women taken, and the Cacique with them. And by his commandement within three daies came many Indians with a present of mantles and Deeres skinnies, and two oxe hides: And they reported, that 5. or 6. leagues from thence toward the North, there were many of these oxen, and that because the Countrey was cold, it was euill inhabited: That the best Countrey which they knew, the most plentifull, and most inhabited, was a Prouince called Cayas, lying toward the South. From Quigaute to Coligoa may be 40. leagues. This towne of Coligoa stood at the foote of an hill, on the bank of a meane Riuer, of the bignes of Cayas, the Riuer that passeth by Estremadura. It was a fat soile and so plentifull of Maiz, that they cast out the old, to bring in the new. There was also great plentie of French beanes and pompions. The French beanes were greater, and better than those of Spaine, and likewise the pompions, and being roasted, they haue almost the taste of chestnuts. The Cacique of Coligoa gaue a guide to Cayas, and staid behind in his owne towne. Wee trauelled fise daies, and came to the Prouince of Palisema. The house of the Cacique was found couered with Deeres skinnies of diuers colours and works drawne in them, and with the same in manner of carpets was the ground of the house couered. The Cacique left it so, that the Gouverneur might lodge in it, in token that he sought peace and his friendship. But hee durst not tarrie his comming. The Gouverneur, seeing he had absented himselfe, sent a Capitaine with horsemen and footemen to seeke him. Hee found much people, but by reason of the roughnesse of the Countrey, he tooke none saue a few women and children. The towne was little and scattering, and had very little Maiz. For which cause the Gouverneur speedilie departed from thence. Hee came to another towne called Tatalicoya, hee carried with him the Cacique thereof, which guided him to Cayas. From Tatalicoya are foure daies iournie to Cayas. When hee came to Cayas, and saw the towne scattered; hee thought they had told him a lie, and that it was not the Prouince of Cayas, because they had informed him that it was well inhabited: He threatned the Cacique, charging him to tell him where hee was: and he and other Indians which were taken neere about that place, affirmed that this was the towne of Cayas, and the best that was in that Countrey, and that though the houses were distant the one from the other, yet the ground that was inhabited was great, and that there was great store of people, and many fields of Maiz. This towne was called Tanico: he pitched his Campe in the best part of it neere

Coligos neere to certaine mountaines Northwest.

A new way to take fish.

Coligos. A Riuer.

Two oxe hides. Store of oxen toward the North.

From Quigaute to Coligoa are 40. leagues.

The Prouince of Palisema.

Tatalicoya Cayas.

Tanico. vnto

vnto a Riuer. The same day that the Gouvernour came thither, he went a league farther with certaine horsemen, and without finding any people, hee found many skinnes in a pathway, which the Cacique had left there, that they might bee found, in token of peace. For so is the custome in that Countrie.

Chap. XXVI.

How the Gouvernour discovered the Prouince of Tulla, and what happened vnto him.

A like of hot
and somewhat
brackish water.
Store of salt
made at Cayas.

THE Gouvernour rested a moneth in the Prouince of Cayas. In which time the horses fattened and thrived more, then in other places in a longer time, with the great plentie of Maiz and the leaues thereof, which I thinke was the best that hath been seene, and they dranke of a lake of very hot water, and somewhat brackish, and they dranke so much, that it swelled in their bellies when they brought them from the watering. Vntill that time the Christians wanted salt, and there they made good store, which they carried along with them. The Indians doe carrie it to other places to exchange it for skinnes and mantles. " They make it along the Riuer, which when it ebbeth, leaueth it vpon the vpper part of the sand. And because they cannot make it, without much sand mingled with it, they throw it into certaine baskets which they haue for that purpose, broad at the mouth, and narrow at the bottom, and set it in the aire vpon a barre, and throw water into it, and set a small vessell vnder it, wherein it falleth: Being strained and set to boile vpon the fire, when the water is sodden away, the salt remaineth in the bottome of the pan." On both sides of the Riuer the Countrie was full of sowne fields, and there was store of Maiz. The Indians durst not come ouer where wee were: & when some of them shewed themselves, the souldiers that saw them called vnto them; then the Indians passed the Riuer, and came with them where the Gouvernour was. He asked the for the Cacique. They said, that he remained quiet, but that he durst not shew himselfe. The Gouvernour presently sent him word, that he should come vnto him, and bring him a guide and an interpretour for his iournie, if he made account of his friendship: and if he did not so, he would come himselfe to seeke him, and that it would bee the worse for him. Hee waited three daies, and seeing he came not, he went to seeke him, and brought him prisoner with 150. of his men. He asked him, whether hee had notice of any great Cacique, & which way the Countrie was best inhabited. Hee answered, that the best Countrie thereabout was a Prouince toward the South, a day and an halfe iournie, which was called Tulla; and that he could giue him a guide, but no interpretour, because the speech of that Countrie was different from his, and because he and his ancestors had alwaies warres with the Lords of that Prouince; therefore they had no commerce, nor vnderstood one anothers language. Immediately the Gouvernour with certaine horsemen, and 50. footemen, departed toward Tulla, to see if the Countrie were such, as hee might passe through it with all his companie: and assoone as he arriued there, and was espied of the Indians, the Countrie gathered together, and assoone as 15. and 20. Indians could assemble themselves, they set vpon the Christians: and seeing that they did handle them shrewdly, and that the horsemen ouertooke them when they fled, they gat vp into the tops of their houses, and sought to defend themselves with their arrowes: and being beaten downe from one, they gat vp vpon another. And while our men pursued some, others set vpon them another way. Thus the skirmish lasted so long, that the horses were tired, and they could not make them runne. The Indians killed there one horse, and some were hurt. There were 15. Indians slaine there, and 40. women and boies were taken prisoners. For whatsoever Indian did shoot at them, if they could come by him, they put him to the sword. The Gouvernour determined to returne toward Cayas, before the Indians had time to gather a head; and presently that euening, going part of 3 night to leaue Tulla, he lodged by the way, and the next day came to Cayas: and within three daies after he departed thence toward Tulla with all his companie: He carried the Cacique along with him, and among all his men, there was not one found that could vnderstand the speech of Tulla. He staid three daies by the way, and the day that he came thither, he found the towne abandoned:

Tulla.

The Gouvernour
sent to Cayas
the Tulla with all
his companie.

for

scouerie of Florida,
nt a league farther
y skinnies in a path-
oken of peace. For

opened vnto him.

which time the horses
the great plentie of
een scene, and they
dranke so much, that
Vntill that time the
ried along with them,
d mantles. " They
per part of the sand,
t, they throw it into
h, and narrow at the
and set a small vessell
re, when the water is
sides of the Riuer the
ndians durst not come
the souldiers that saw
with them where the
ained quiet, but that
t, that he should come
if he made account of
eeke him, and that it
e came not, he went to
ked him, whether hee
st inhabited. Hee an-
ne South, a day and an
a guide, but no inter-
and because he and his
ore they had no com-
ouernour with certaine
Countrie were such, as
arried there, and was
as 15. and 20. Indians
that they did handle
d, they gat vp into the
wes: and being beaten
rsued some, others set
horses were tired, and
se, and some were hurt.
e taken prisoners. For
ey put him to the sword.
dians had time to gather
e Tulla, he lodged by
after he departed thence
ng with him, and among
ch of Tulla. He staid
the towne abandoned:
for

next adloyning to Virginia. TRAFFIQUES, AND DISCOUERIES.

525

for the Indians durst not tarrie his coming. But assoone as they knew that the Gouvernour was in Tulla, the first night about 3 morning watch, they came in two squadrons two seuerall waies, with their bowes and arrowes, and long staues like pikes. Assoone as they were descried, both horse and foot sallied out vpon them, where many of the Indians were slaine: And some Christians and horses were hurt: Some of the Indians were taken prisoners, whereof the Gouvernour sent sixe to the Cacique, with their right hands and noses cut off: and sent him word, that if he came not to him to excuse and submit himselfe, that hee would come to seeke him, and that hee would doe the like to him, and as many of his as hee could find, as hee had done to those which hee had sent him: and gaue him three daies respit for to come. And this he gaue them to vnderstand by signes, as well as hee could, for there was no interpretour. At the three daies end, there came an Indian laden with Oxe hides. He came weeping with great sobs, and comming to the Gouvernour cast himselfe downe at his feete: He tooke him vp, and he made a speech, but there was none that vnderstood him. The Gouvernour by signes commanded him, to returne to the Cacique, and to will him, to send him an interpretor, which could vnderstand the men of Cayas. The next day came three Indians laden with oxen hides: and within three daies after came 20. Indians, and among them one that vnderstood them of Cayas: Who, after a long oration of excuses of the Cacique, and praises of the Gouvernour, concluded with this, that he and the other were come thither on the Caciques behalfe, to see what his Lordship would command him to doe, for he was readie at his commandement. The Gouvernour and all his companie were verie glad. For in no wise could they trauell without an interpretour. The Gouvernour commanded him to be kept safe, and bad him tell the men that came with him, that they shuld returne to the Cacique, and signifie vnto him, that he pardoned him for that which was past, and thanked him much for his presents and interpretour, which he had sent him, and that he would bee glad to see him, and that he should come the next day to talke with him. After three daies, the Cacique came, and 80. Indians with him: and himselfe and his men came weeping into the Camp, in token of obedience and repentance for the error passed, after the manner of that Countrie: He brought a present of many oxen hides: which, because the Countrie was cold, were verie profitable, and serued for couerlets, because they were very soft, and wolled like sheepe. Not farre from thence toward the North were many oxen. The Christians saw them not, nor came into the Countrie where they were, because those parts were euil inhabited, and had small store of Maiz where they were bred. The Cacique of Tulla made an oration to the Gouvernour, wherein he excused himselfe, and offered him his Countrie, subiects, and person. Aswell this Cacique as the others, and all those which came to the Gouvernour on their behalfe, deliuered their message or speech in so good order, that no oratour could vtter the same more eloquentlie.

Chap. XXVII.

How the Gouvernour went from Tulla to Autiamque, where he passed the winter.

The Gouvernour enformed himselfe of all the Countrie round about; and vnderstood, that toward the West was a scattered dwelling, and that toward the Southeast were great townes, especially in a Prouince called Autiamque, tenne daies iournie from Tulla; which might be about 80. leagues; and that it was a plentifull Countrie of Maiz. And because winter came on, and that they could not trauell two or three moneths in the yeere for cold, waters, and snow: and fearing, that if they should stay so long in the scattered dwelling, they could not be sustained: and also because the Indians said, that neere to Autiamque was a great water, and according to their relation, the Gouvernour thought it was some arme of the Sea: And because he now desired to send newes of himselfe to Cuba, that some supplie of men & horses might be sent vnto him: for it was about three yeeres, since Donna Isabella, which was in Hauana, or any other person in Christendome had heard of him, and by this time he had lost 250. men, and 150. horses) he determined to winter in Autiamque, and the

Indians haue
their right hands
and noses cut
off.

Oxe hides.

Oxe hides.

The Cacique of
Tulla.

Many Oxe
hides with wooll
on them, as soft
as sheepe wooll.
Gomara. Histor.
Gener. cap. 215.
Many Oxen
toward the
North.

The great elo-
quence of the
Indians.

A winter of
two or three
moneths.

Quipana, five
daies iournie
from Tulla.

Guahate.

Anoixi.

Catamaya.

Autiamque sixe
daies iournie
from Quipana.

A Riuer.

Tietiquaquo.

Great prou-
denice.

Three months
and six daies
from Autiamque.

the next spring, to goe to the sea coast, and make two brigantines, and send one of them to Cuba, and the other to Nueva Espanna, that that which went in safetie, might giue newes of him: Hoping with the goods which he had in Cuba, to furnish himselfe againe, and to attempt the discouery and conquest toward the West: for he had not yet come where Cabeça de Vaca had been. Thus hauing sent away the two Caciques of Cayas and Tulla, he tooke his iournie toward Autiamque: Hee trauelled five daies ouer very rough mountaines, and came to a towne called Quipana, where no Indians could be taken for the roughnesse of the Countrey: and the towne being betweene hilles, there was an ambush laid, wherewith they tooke two Indians; which told them, that Autiamque was sixe daies iournie from thence, and that there was another Prouince toward the South eight daies iournie off, plentiful of Maiz, and very well peopled, which was called Guahate. But because Autiamque was neerer, and the most of the Indians agreed of it, the Gouvernour made his iournie that way. In three daies he came to a towne called Anoixi. He sent a Capitaine before with 30. horsemen, and 50. footemen, and tooke the Indians carelesse, hee tooke many men and women prisoners. Within two daies after the Gouvernour came to another towne called Catamaya, and lodged in the fields of the towne. Two Indians came with a false message from the Cacique to know his determination. Hee bad them tell their Lord, that hee should come and speake with him. The Indians returned and came no more, nor any other message from the Cacique. The next day the Christians went to the towne, which was without people: they tooke as much Maiz as they needed. That day they lodged in a wood, and the next day they came to Autiamque. They found much Maiz laid vp in store, and French beanes, and walnuts, and prunes, great store of all sorts. They tooke some Indians which were gathering together the stuffe which their wiues had hidden. This was a champion Countrey, and well inhabited. The Gouvernour lodged in the best part of the towne, and commanded presently to make a fense of timber round about the Campe distant from the houses, that the Indians might not hurt them without by fire. And measuring the ground by pases, hee appointed euery one his part to doe according to the number of Indians which he had: presently the timber was brought by them; and in three daies there was an inclosure made of very hie and thicke posts thrust into the ground, and many railes laid acrosse. Hard by this towne passed a Riuer, that came out of the Prouince of Cayas; and aboue and beneath it was very well peopled. Thither came Indians on the Caciques behalfe with a present of mantles and skinner; and an halting Cacique, subiect to the Lord of Autiamque, Lord of a towne called Tietiquaquo, came many times to visit the Gouvernour, and to bring him presents of such as hee had. The Cacique of Autiamque sent to know of the Gouvernour, how long time hee meant to stay in his Countrey? And vnderstanding that he meant to stay aboue three daies, he neuer sent any more Indians, nor any other message, but conspired with the lame Cacique to rebell. Diuers inrodes were made, wherein there were many men and women taken, and the lame Cacique among the rest. The Gouvernour respecting the seruices which he had receiued of him, reprehended and admonished him, and set him at libertie, and gaue him two Indians to carrie him in a chaire vpon their shoulders. The Cacique of Autiamque desiring to thrust the Gouvernour out of his Countrey, set spies ouer him. And an Indian comming one night to the gate of the inclosure, a soldier that watched espied him, and stepping behind the gate, as he came in, he gaue him such a thrust, that he fell downe; and so he carried him to the Gouvernour: and as hee asked him wherefore he came, not being able to speake, hee fell downe dead. The night following the Gouvernour commanded a souldiour to giue the alarme, and to say that he had seene Indians, to see how ready they would be to answer the alarme. And hee did so sometimes as well there, as in other places, when he thought that his men were carelesse, & reprehended such as were slacke. And as well for this cause, as in regard of doing their dutie, when the alarme was giuen, euery one sought to be the first that should answer. They staid in Autiamque three months with great plentie of Maiz, French beanes, Walnuts, Prunes, and Conies: which vntill that time they knew not how to catch. And in Autiamque the Indians taught them how to take them: which was, with great sprindges, which lifted vp their feete from the ground: And the

send one of them to
ie, might giue newes
melfe againe, and to
et come where Cabeça
as and Tulla, he tooke
ugh mountaines, and
the roughnesse of the
laid, wherewith they
urnie from thence, and
off, plentiful of Maiz,
amque was neerer, and
ie that way. In three
with 30. horsemen, and
and women prisoners,
Catamaya, and lodged
ge from the Cacique to
ould come and speake
message from the Caci-
s without people: they
wood, and the next day
and French beanes, and
ians which were gather-
ption Countrie, and well
d commanded presently
houses, that the Indians
y pases, hee appointed
h he had: presently the
losure made of very hic
se. Hard by this towne
and beneath it was very
a present of mantles and
p, Lord of a towne called
him presents of such as
mour, how long time hee
o stay about three daies,
red with the lame Caci-
y men and women taken,
g the seruices which he
him at libertie, and gaue
he Cacique of Autiamque
er him. And an Indian
watched espied him, and
rust, that he fell downe;
h wherefore he came, not
e Gouverneur commanded
s, to see how ready they
there, as in other places,
as were slacke. And as
me was giuen, euery one
mque three moneths with
conies: which vntill that
taught them how to take
ete from the ground: And
the

the snare was made with a strong string, whereunto was fastened a knot of a cane, which ran close about the neck of the conie, because they should not gnaw the string. They tooke many in the fields of Maiz, especiallie when it freed or snowed. The Christians staid there one whole moneth so inclo-ed with snow, that they went not out of the towne: and when they wanted firewood, the Gouverneur with his horsemen going and coming many times to the wood, which was two crossebow shot from the towne, made a pathway, whereby the footemen went for wood. In this meane space, some Indians which went loose, killed many conies with their giues, and with arrowes. These conies were of two sorts, some were like those of Spaine, and the other of the same colour and fashion, and as big as great Hares, longer, and hauing greater loines.

Frost and snow.
A moneth of
snow.

Conies of two
sorts.

Chap. XXVIII.

How the Gouverneur went from Autiamque to Nilco, and from thence to Guacoya.

Vpon Monday the sixt of March 1542, the Gouverneur departed from Autiamque to seeke Nilco, which the Indians said was neere the Great riuer, with determination to come to the Sea, and procure some succour of men and horses: for hee had now but three hundred men of warre, and fortie horses, and some of them lame, which did nothing but helpe to make vp the number: and for want of iron they had gone aboute a yeere vnshod: and because they were used to it in the plaine countrie, it did them no great harme. John Ortiz died in Autiamque; which grieved the Gouverneur very much: because that without an Interpreter hee feared to enter farre into the land, where he might be lost. From thence forward a youth that was taken in Cutifachiqui did serue for Interpretour, which had by that time learned somewhat of the Christians language. The death of Iohn Ortiz was so great a mischief for the discovering inward, or going out of the land, that to learne of the Indians, that which in foure words hee declared, they needed a whole day with the youth: and most commonly hee vnderstood quite contrarie that which was asked him: whereby it often happened that the way that they went one day, and sometimes two or three daies, they turned backe, and went astray through the wood here and there. The Gouverneur spent ten daies in traueilling from Autiamque to a prouince called Ayays; and came to a towne that stood neere the Riuer that passeth by Cayas and Autiamque. There hee commanded a barge to be made, wherewith he passed the Riuer. When he had passed the Riuer there fell out such weather, that foure daies he could not trauell for snow. Assoone as it gaue ouer snowing, he went three daies iourney through a Wildernesse, and a countrie so low, and so full of lakes and euill waies, that hee trauelled one time a whole day in water, sometimes knee deepe, sometimes to the stirrup, and sometimes they swamme. He came to a towne called Tutelpinco, abandoned, and without Maiz: there passed by it a lake, that entered into the riuer, which carried a great streame and force of water. Fiue Christians passing ouer it in a periagua, which the Gouverneur had sent with a Capitaine, the periagua ouerset: some tooke hold on it, some on the trees that were in the lake. One Francis Sebastian, an honest man of Villa noua de Barca Rota, was drowned there. The Gouverneur went a whole day along the lake seeking passage, and could finde none, nor any way that did passe to the other side. Comming againe at night to the towne hee found two peaceable Indians, which shewed him the passage, and which way hee was to goe. There they made of canes and of the timber of houses thatched with canes, rafts wherewith they passed the lake. They trauelled three daies, and came to a towne of the territorie of Nilco, called Tianto. There they tooke thirtie Indians, and among them two principall men of this towne. The Gouverneur sent a Capitaine with horsemen and footmen before to Nilco, because the Indians might haue no time to carrie away the prouision. They passed through three or foure great townes; and in the towne where the Cacique was resident, which was two leagues from the place where the Gouverneur remained, they found many Indians with their bowes and arrowes, in manner as though they would haue staid to fight, which did compasse the towne; and assoone as they saw the Christians come neere them without misdoubting them, they set the Caciques

March 6. 1542.

The death of
Iohn Ortiz, and
the great misse
of him being
their interpre-
tour.

Ayays.

A Riuer.

Great snow about
the twentieth of
March.

Tutelpinco.
A great lake.

Rafts wherewith
they passed the
lake.
Tianto.

Three or foure
great townes.

March 29.
Nilco.

Verie great
townes.

The best Coun-
trie of Florida.

Marterns skin-
nes.
A cordon of
perles.

A Riuer falling
into Rio grande.

Guachoya.

Fourte names of
Rio grande.

Caciques house on fire, and fled ouer a lake that passed neere the towne, through which the horses could not passe. The next day being Wednesday the 29. of March the Gouvernour came to Nilco: he lodged with all his men in the Caciques towne, which stood in a plaine field, which was inhabited for the space of a quarter of a league: and within a league and halfe a league were other very great townes, wherein was great store of Maiz, of French beanes, of Walnuts, and Prunes. This was the best inhabited countrie, that was seene in Florida, and had most store of Maiz, except Coça, and Apalache. There came to the campe an Indian accompanied with others, and in the Caciques name gaue the Gouvernour a mantle of Marterns skinnes, and a cordon of perles. The Gouvernour gaue him a few small Margarites, which are certaine beades much esteemed in Peru, and other things, wherewith he was very well contented. He promised to returne within two daies, but neuer came againe: but on the contrarie the Indians came by night in canoes, and carried away all the Maiz they could, and made them cabins on the other side of the Riuer in the thickest of the wood, because they might flee if wee should goe to seeke them. The Gouvernour seeing hee came not at the time appointed, commanded an ambush to be laid about certaine store-houses neere the lake, whither the Indians came for Maiz: where they tooke two Indians, who told the Gouvernour, that hee which came to visit him, was not the Cacique, but was sent by him vnder pretence to spie whether the Christians were carelesse, and whether they determined to settle in that country or to goe forward. Presently the Gouvernour sent a Capitaine with footmen and horsemen ouer the riuer; and in their passage they were desiered of the Indians, and therefore he could take but tenne or twelue men and women, with whom hee returned to the campe. This Riuer which passed by Nilco, was that which passed by Cayas and Autiamque, and fell into Rio grande, or the Great Riuer, which passed by Pachaha and Aquixo neere vnto the prouince of Guachoya: and the Lord thereof came vp the Riuer in canoes to make warre with him of Nilco. On his behalf there came an Indian to the Gouvernour and said vnto him, That he was his seruant, and prayed him so to hold him, and that within two daies hee would come to kisse his Lordships hands: an at the time appointed he came with some of his principal Indians, which accompanied him, and with words of great offers and courtesie hee gaue the Gouvernour a present of many mantles and Deeres skinnes. The Gouvernour gaue him some other things in recompense, and honoured him much. Hee asked him what townes there were downe the Riuer? Hee answered that he knew none other but his owne: and on the other side of the Riuer a prouince of a Cacique called Quigalta. So hee tooke his leaue of the Gouvernour and went to his owne towne. Within few daies the Gouvernour determined to goe to Guachoya, to learne there whether the Sea were neere, or whether there were any habitation neere, where hee might relieue his companie, while the brigantines were making, which he meant to send to the land of the Christians. As he passed the Riuer of Nilco, there came in canoes Indians of Guachoya vp the streame, and when they saw him, supposing that he came to seeke them to doe them some hurt, they returned downe the Riuer, and informed the Cacique thereof: who with all his people, spoiling the towne of all that they could carrie away, passed that night ouer to the other side of Rio grande, or the Great Riuer. The Gouvernour sent a Capitaine with fiftie men in sixe canoes downe the Riuer, and went himselfe by land with the rest: hee came to Guachoya vpon Sunday the 17. of April: he lodged in the towne of the Cacique, which was inclosed about, and seated a crossebow shot distant from the Riuer. Here the Riuer is called Tamalieu, and in Nilco Tapatu, and in Coça Mico, and in the port or mouth Ri.

Chap. XXIX.

Of the message which the Gouvernour sent to Quigalta, and of the answere which he returned; and of the things which happened in this time.

AS soone as the Gouvernour came to Guachoya, hee sent Iohn Danusco with as many men as could goe in the canoes vp the Riuer. For when they came downe from Nilco, they saw on the other side the Riuer new cabins made. Iohn Danusco went and brought the canoes laden

ne, through which the
f March the Gouverneur
which stood in a plaine
and within a league and
ore of Maiz, of French
intrie, that was seene in
there came to the campe
the Gouverneur a mantle
him a few small Margae
er things, wherewith he
but neuer came againe:
ried away all the Maiz
the thickest of the wood,
ernour seeing hee came
out certaine store-houses
ke two Indians, who told
Cacique, but was sent by
and whether they deter-
ouernour sent a Capitaine
they were desiered of the
l women, with whom hee
at which passed by Cayas
ch passed by Pachaha and
eof came vp the Riuer in
an Indian to the Gouver-
so to hold him, and that
at the time appointed he
and with words of great
antles and Deeres skines,
onoured him much. Hee
d that he knew none other
a Cacique called Quigalta,
yne. Within few daies the
er the Sea were neere, or
ie his companie, while the
of the Christians. As he
choya vp the streame, and
e them some hurt, they re-
o with all his people, spoilt
ht ouer to the other side of
e with fiftie men in sixe
est: hee came to Guachoya
cacique, which was inclosed
e the Riuer is called Tama-
r mouth Ri.

answered which he returned:
time.

Danusco with as many men
downe from Nilco, they saw
ent and brought the canoes
loden

loden with Maiz, French beanes, Prunes, and many loaves made of the substance of prunes. That day came an Indian to the Gouverneur from the Cacique of Guachoya, and said, that his Lord would come the next day. The next day they saw many canoes come vp the Riuer, and on the other side of the great Riuer, they assembled together in the space of an hour: they consulted whether they should come or nor; & at length concluded to come, and crossed the Riuer. In the came the Cacique of Guachoya, and brought with him manie Indians with great store of Fish, Dogges, Deeres skines, and Mantles: And assoone as they landed, they went to the lodging of the Gouverneur, and presented him their gifts, and the Cacique vitered these words:

Many loaves
made of prunes.

Mightie and excellent Lord, I beseech your Lordship to pardon mee the error which I committed in absenting my selfe, and not tarrying in this towne to haue receiued and serued your Lordship; since, to obtaine this opportunitie of time, was, and is as much as a great victorie to me. But I feared that, which I needed not to haue feared, and so did that which was not reason to do: But as haste maketh waste, and I remoued without deliberation; so, as soone as I thought on it, I determined not to follow the opinion of the foolish, which is, to continue in their error: but to imitate the wise and discreet, in changing my counsell, and so I came to see what your Lordship will command me to doe, that I may serue you in all things that are in my power.

The Gouverneur receiued him with much ioy, and gaue him thanks for his present and offer. He asked him, whether hee had any notice of the Sea. Hee answered, no, nor of any towne downe the Riuer on that side; saue that two leagues from thence was one towne of a principall Indian a subiect of his; and on the other side of the Riuer, three daies iourne from thence downe the Riuer, was the Prouince of Quigalta, which was the greatest Lord that was in that Countie. The Gouverneur thought that the Cacique lied vnto him, to rid him out of his owne townes, and sent Iohn Danusco with eight horsemen downe the Riuer, to see what habitation there was, and to informe himselfe, if there were any notice of the Sea. Hee trauelled eight daies, and at his returne hee said, that in all that time he was not able to go about 14. or 15. leagues, because of the great creekes that came out of the Riuer, and groues of canes, and thicke woods that were along the bancks of the Riuer, and that hee had found no habitation. The Gouverneur fell into great dumps to see how hard it was to get to the Sea: and worse, because his men and horses euery day diminished, being without succour to sustaine themselves in the country: and with that thought he fell sick. But before he tooke his bed hee sent an Indian to the Cacique of Quigalta to tell him, that hee was the Childe of the Sunne, and that all the way that hee came all men obeyed and serued him, that he requested him to accept of his friendship, and come vnto him; for he would be very glad to see him; and in signe of loue and obedience to bring something with him of that which in his countie was most esteemed. The Cacique answered by the same Indian:

The Gouverneur
falleth sick of
thought.

That whereas he said he was the Child of the Sunne, if he would drie vp the Riuer he would belecue him: and touching the rest, that hee was wont to visit none; but rather that all those of whom he had notice did visit him, serued, obeyed and paid him tributes willingly or perforce: therefore if hee desired to see him, it were best he should come thither: that if hee came in peace, he would receiue him with speciall good will; and if in warre, in like manner hee would attend him in the towne where he was, and that for him or any other hee would not shrinke one foote backe.

A most witty
and stout an-
swere of the
Cacique of
Quigalta.

By that time the Indian returned with this answer, the Gouverneur had betaken himselfe to bed, being euill handled with feuers, and was much aggrieved, that he was not in case to passe presently the Riuer and to seeke him, to see if he could abate that pride of his, considering the Riuer went now very strongly in those parts; for it was neere halfe a league broad, and 16. fathomes deep, and very furious, and ranne with a great current; and on both sides there were many Indians, and his power was not now so great, but that hee had need to helpe himselfe rather by slights then by force. The Indians of Guachoya came euery day with fish in such numbers, that the towne was full of them. The Cacique said, that on

a certaine night hee of Quigalta would come to giue battell to the Gouverneur. Which the Gouverneur imagined that he had devised, to drive him out of his country, and commanded him to bee put in hold: and that night and all the rest, there was good watch kept. Hee asked him wherefore Quigalta came not? He said that hee came, but that he saw him prepared, and therefore durst not giue the attempt: and hee was earnest with him to send his Captaines over the Riuer, and that he would aide him with many men to set vpon Quigalta. The Gouverneur told him that assoone as he was recovered, himselfe would seeke him out. And seeing how many Indians came daily to the towne, and what store of people was in that countrie, fearing they should al conspire together and plot some treason against him; and because the towne had some open gaps which were not made an end of inclosing, besides the gates which they went in and out by: because the Indians should not thinke he feared them, he let them all alone vnrepaiied; and commanded the horsemen to be appointed to them, and to the gates: and all night the horsemen went the round; and two and two of euery squadron rode about, and visited the skouts that were without the towne in their standings by the passages, and the crossebowmen that kept the canoes in the Riuer. And because the Indians should stand in feare of them, hee determined to send a Captaine to Nilco, for those of Guachoya had told him that it was inhabited; that by vsing them cruelly, neither the one nor the other should presume to assaile him; and hee sent Nunnez de Touar with fiftene horsemen, and Iohn de Guzman Captaine of the footmen with his companie in canoes vp the Riuer. The Cacique of Guachoya sent for many canoes and many warlike Indians to goe with the Christians: and the Captaine of the Christians, called Nunnez de Touar, went by land with his horsemen, and two leagues before he came to Nilco hee staid for Iohn de Guzman, and in that place they passed the Riuer by night: the horsemen came first, and in the morning by breake of day in sight of the towne they lighted vpon a spie; which assoone as he perceiued the Christians, crying out amaine fled to the towne to giue warning. Nunnez de Touar and his companie made such speed, that before the Indians of the towne could fully come out, they were vpon them: it was champion ground that was inhabited, which was about a quarter of a league. There were about fise or sixe thousand people in the towne: and, as many people came out of the houses, & fled from one house to another, and many Indians came flocking together from all parts, there was neuer a horseman that was not alone among many. The Captaine had commanded that they should not spare the life of any male. Their disorder was so great, that there was no Indian that shot an arrow at any Christian. The shreekes of women and children were so great, that they made the eares deafe of those that followed them. There were slaine an hundred Indians, little more or lesse: and many were wounded with great wounds, whom they suffered to escape to strike a terror in the rest that were not there. There were some so cruell and butcherlike, that they killed old and young, and all that they met, though they made no resistance: and those which presumed of themselves for their valour, and were taken for such, brake through the Indians, bearing downe many with their stirrups and breasts of their horses; and some they wounded with their lances, and so let them goe: and when they saw any youth or woman they tooke them, and deliuered them to the footmen. "These mens sinnes by Gods permission lighted on their own heads: who, because they would seeme valiant, became cruell; shewing themselves extreme cowards in the sight of all men, when as most neede of valour was required, and * afterward they came to a shameful death." Of the Indians of Nilco were taken prisoners, fourescore women and children, and much spoile. The Indians of Guachoya kept back before they came at the towne, and staid without, beholding the successe of the Christians with the men of Nilco. And when they saw them put to flight, and the horsemen busie in killing of them, they hastened to the houses to rob, and filled their canoes with the spoile of the goods; and returned to Guachoya before the Christians; and wondring much at the sharpe dealing which they had seene them vse toward the Indians of Nilco, they told their Cacique all that had passed with great astonishment.

Fise or sixe
thousand people
in Nilco.

* Chap. 37.

Gouernour. Which the
they, and commanded
ood watch kept. Hee
that he saw him pre-
with him to send his
n to set vpon Quigalta,
would seeke him out,
store of people was in
treason against him;
end of inclosing, be-
should not thinke he
the horsemen to be ap-
t the round; and two
were without the towne
the canoes in the Riuer,
ned to send a Captaine
; that by vsing them
; and hee sent Nunnez
the footmen with his
many canoes and many
Christians, called Nunnez
e he came to Nilco hee
by night: the horsemen
ne they lighted vpon a
ine fled to the towne to
ed, that before the In-
t was champion ground
were about fise or sixe
the houses, & fled from
om all parts, there was
ad commanded that they
that there was no Indian
children were so great,
were slaine an hundred
nds, whom they suffered
were some so cruell and
, though they made no
ur, and were taken for
irrops and breasts of their
m goe: and when they
the footmen. "These
ho, because they would
s in the sight of all men,
me to a shameful death,"
and children, and much
owne, and staid without,
and when they saw them
ened to the houses to rob,
to Guachoya before the
ad scene them vse toward
h great astonishment.

Chap.

Chap. XXX.

Of the death of the Adelantado Fernando de Soto: And how Luys Moscoso de Aluarado was elected Gouernour in his stead.

The Gouernour felt in himselfe that the houre approached, wherein hee was to leaue this present life, and called for the Kings officers, Capitaines and principall persons, to whom he made a speech, saying:

That now he was to goe to giue an account before the presence of God of all his life past: and since it pleased him to take him in such a time, and that the time was come that he knew his death, that he his most vnworthie seruant did yeeld him many thanks therefore; and desired all that were present and absent (whom he confessed himselfe to be much beholding vnto for their singular vertues, loue and loyaltie, which himselfe had well tried in the trauels, which they had suffered, which alwaies in his mind he did hope to satisfie and reward, when it should please God to giue him rest, with more prosperitie of his estate,) that they would pray to God for him, that for his mercie he would forgiue him his sinnes, and receiue his soule into eternall glorie: and that they would quit and free him of the charge which hee had ouer them, and ought vnto them all, and that they would pardon him for some wrongs which they might haue receiued of him: And to auoid some diuision, which vpon his death might fall out vpon the choice of his successour, he requested them to elect a principall person, and able to gouerne, of whom all should like well; and when he was elected, they should swear before him to obey him: and that he would thanke them very much in so doing; because the griefe that he had, would somewhat be swaged, and the paine that he felt, because he left them in so great confusion, to wit, in leaving them in a strange Countrie, where they knew not where they were.

Baltasar de Gallegos answered in the name of all the rest: And first of all comforting him, he set before his eyes how short the life of this world was, and with how many troubles and miseries it is accompanied, and how God shewed him a singular fauor which soonest left it: telling him many other things fit for such a time. And for the last point, that since it pleased God to take him to himselfe, although his death did iustly grieve them much, yet as well he, as al the rest, ought of necessitie to conforme themselves to the will of God. And touching the Gouernour which he commanded they should elect, he besought him, that it would please his Lordship to name him which he thought fit, and him they would obey. And presently he named Luys de Moscoso de Aluarado his Captaine generall. And presently he was sworne by all that were present and elected for Gouernour. The next day, being the 21. of May, 1542. departed out of this life, the valorous, virtuous, and valiant Captaine. Don Fernando de Soto, Gouernour of Cuba, and Adelantado of Florida: whom fortune aduanced, as it vseth to doe others, that hee might haue the higher fall. He departed in such a place, and at such a time, as in his sicknesse he had but little comfort; and the danger wherein all his people were of perishing in that Countrie, which appeared before their eyes, was cause sufficient, why euery one of them had need of comfort, and why they did not wait nor accompanie him as they ought to haue done. Luys de Moscoso determined to conceale his death from the Indians, because Ferdinando de Soto had made them beleue, That the Christians were immortall; and also because they tooke him to be hardie, wise, and valiant: and if they should know that he was dead, they would bee bold to set vpon the Christians, though they liued peaceable by them. In regard of their disposition, and because they were nothing constant, and beleueed all that was tolde them, the Adelantado made them beleue, that he knew some things that passed in secret among themselves, without their knowledge, how, or in what manner he came by them: and that the figure which appeared in a glasse, which he shewed them, did tell him whatsoever they practised and went about: and therefore neither in word nor deed durst they attempt any thing that might bee preiudiciall vnto him.

Assoone as he was dead, Luis de Moscoso commanded to put him secretly in an house, where hee remained three daies: and remoouing him from thence, comanded him to bee

3 Y 2

buried

The death of
Don Ferdinando
de Soto the 21.
of May, 1542. at
Guacoya.

A little story
generall.

buried in the night at one of the gates of the towne within the wall. And as the Indians had seene him sick, and missed him, so did they suspect what might bee. And passing by the place where hee was buried, seeing the earth mouued, they looked and spake one to another. Luys de Moscoso vnderstanding of it, commanded him to be taken vp by night, and to cast a great deale of sand into the mantles, wherein he was winded vp, wherein hee was carried in a canoe, and throwne into the midst of the Riuer. The Cacique of Guachoya inquired for him, demanding what was become of his brother and Lord, the Gouverneur: Luys de Moscoso told him, that hee was gon to heauen, as many other times hee did: and because hee was to stay there certaine daies, hee had left him in his place. The Cacique thought with himselfe that he was dead; and commanded two young and well proportioned Indians to be brought thither; and said, that vse of that Countrie was, when any Lord died, to kill Indians to wait vpon him, and serue him by the way: and for that purpose by his commandement were those come thither: and prayed Luys de Moscoso to command them to be beheaded, that they might attend and serue his Lord and brother. Luys de Moscoso told him, that the Gouverneur was not dead, but gone to heauen, and that of his owne Christian souldiers, he had taken such as he needed to serue him, & praised him to command those Indians to be loosed, and not to vse any such bad custome from thenceforth: straightway hee commanded them to be loosed, and to get them home to their houses. And one of them would not goe; saying, that hee would not serue him, that without desert had iudged him to death, but that hee would serue him as long as hee liued, which had saued his life.

This is also the
custome of the
old Tartars.

Seven hundred
hogges.

Luys de Moscoso caused all the goods of the Gouverneur to be sold at an outcrie: to wit, two men slaues, & two women slaues, and three horses, and 700. hogges. For euery slaue or horse, they gaue two or three thousand ducats: which were to be paid at the first melting of gold or siluer, or at the diuision of their portion of inheritance. And they entred into bonds, though in the Countrie there was not wherewith, to pay it within a yeere after, and put in sureties for the same. Such as in Spaine had no goods to bind, gaue two hundred ducats for an hog, giuing assurance after the same maner. Those which had any goods in Spaine, bought with more feare, and bought the lesse. From that time forward, most of the companie had swine, and brought them vp, and fed vpon them; and obserued Fridaies and Saturdaies, and the euenings of feasts, which before they did not. For sometimes in two or three moneths they did eate no flesh, and whensoever they could come by it, they did eate it.

Chap. XXXI.

How the Gouverneur Luys de Moscoso departed from Guachoya, and went to Chaguate; and from thence to Aguacay.

Some were glad of the death of Don Ferdinando de Soto, holding for certaine, that Luys de Moscoso (which was giuen to his ease) would rather desire to be among the Christians at rest, then to continue the labours of the warre in subduing and discovering of Countries; whereof they were alreadie wearie, seeing the small profit that issued thereof. The Gouverneur commanded the Captaines and principall persons to meet to consult and determine what they should doe. And being informed what peopled habitation was round about, he vnderstood that to the West, the Countrie was most inhabited, and that downe the Riuer beyond Quigalta was vninhabited, and had little store of food. He desired them all, that euerie one would giue his opinion in writing, & set his hand to it: that they might resolue by generall consent, whether they should goe downe the Riuer, or enter into the maine land. All were of opinion, that it was best to go by land toward the West, because Nueva Espanna was that way; holding the voyage by sea more dangerous, and of greater hazard, because they could make no ship of any strength to abide a storme, neither had they Master, nor Pilot, Compasse, nor Chart, neither knew they how farre the sea was off, nor had any notice of it; nor whether the Riuer did make any great turning into the

Their generall
resolution to
trauell by land
Westward.

And as the Indians
bee. And passing by
ed and spake one to
be taken vp by night,
inded vp, wherein hee
The Cacique of Gua-
and Lord, the Gouver-
ny other times hee did :
in his place. The Ca-
oung and well propor-
prountie was, when any
; and for that purpose
e Moscoso to command
and brother. Lays de
neauen, and that of his
him, & praised him to
come from thenceforth :
ne to their houses. And
that without desert had
e liued, which had saued

ld at an outerie : to wit,
ogges. For euery slaue
e paid at the first melt-
nce. And they entred
y it within a yeere after,
to bind, gaue two hun-
ose which had any goods
that time forward, most
hem ; and obserued Fri-
did not. For sometimes
y could come by it, they

, and went to Cha-

holding for certaine, that
e to be among the Chris-
uing and discouering of
profit that insued thereof.
ns to meet to consult and
ppled habitation was round
habited, and that downe
f food. He desired them
his hand to it : that they
e the Riuer, or enter into
y land toward the West,
a more dangerous, and of
to abide a storme, neither
y they how farre the sea
ake any great turning into
the

the land, or had any great fall from the rocks, where all of them might be cast away. And some which had seene the sea-chart, did find, that from the place where they were by the sea coast to Noua Espanna, might bee 400. leagues, little more or lesse; and said, that though they went somewhat about by land in seeking a peopled Countrie, if some great wilderness which they could not passe did not hinder the, by spending that sommer in trauell, finding prouision to passe the winter in some peopled Countrie, that the next sommer after they might come to some Christian land, and that it might fortune in their trauel by land to find some rich Countrie, where they might doe themselves good. The Gouvernour, although he desired to get out of Florida in shorter time, seeing the inconueniences they laid before him, in traouelling by sea, determined to follow that which seemed good to them all. On Monday the fifth of Iune, he departed from Guachoya. The Cacique gaue him a guide to Chaguate, and staid at home in his owne towne. They passed through a Prouince called Catalte: and hauing passed a wilderness of sixe daies iourne, the twentieth day of y moneth he came to Chaguate. The Cacique of this Prouince had visited the Gouvernour Don Ferdinando de Soto at Autiamque, whither he brought him presents of skinnies, and mantles and salt. And a day before Luys de Moscoso came to his towne, we lost a Christian that was sicke; which hee suspected that the Indians had slaine. Hee sent the Cacique word, that he should command his people to seeke him vp, and send him vnto him, and that he would hold him, as he did, for his friend: and if he did not, that neither he, nor his, should escape his hands, and that hee would set his Countrie on fire. Presently the Cacique came vnto him, and brought a great present of mantles and skinnies, and the Christian that was lost, and made this speech following:

Right excellent Lord, I would not deserue that conceit which you had of me, for all the treasure of the world. What enforced me to goe to visit and serue the excellent Lord Gouvernour your father in Autiamque, which you should haue remembered, where I offered my selfe with all loyaltie, faith and loue, during my life to serue and obey him? What then could be the cause, I hauing receiued fauours of him, and neither you nor he hauing done me any wrong, that should mooue me to doe the thing, which I ought not? Beleeue this of mee, that neither wrong, nor any worldly interest, was able to make me to haue done it, nor shall be able to blind me. But as in this life it is a naturall course, that after one pleasure, many sorrowes doe follow: so by your indignation, fortune would moderate the ioy, which my heart conceiueith with your presence: and that I should erre, where I thought surest to haue hit the marke; in harboring this Christian which was lost, and vsing him in such manner, as he may tell himselfe, thinking that herein I did you seruite, with purpose to deliuer him vnto you in Chaguate, and to serue you to the vttermost of my power. If I deserue punishment for this, I will receiue it at your hands, as from my Lord, as if it were a fauour. For the loue which I did beare to the excellent Gouvernour, and which I beare to you hath no limit. And like as you giue me chastisement, so will you also shew me fauour. And that which now I craue of you is this, to declare your will vnto me, and those things, wherein I may bee able to doe you the most and best seruite.

The Gouvernour answered him, that because he did not find him in that towne, hee was incensed against him, thinking he had absented himselfe, as others had done: But seeing he now knew his loyaltie and loue, he would alwaies hold him as a brother, and fauour him in all his affaires. The Cacique went with him to the towne where he resided, which was a daies iourne from thence. They passed through a smal town, where there was a lake, where the Indians made salt: and the Christians made some one day while they rested there, of a brackish water, which sprang neere the towne in ponds like fountaines. The Gouvernour staid in Chaguate sixe daies. There he was informed of the habitation that was toward the West. They told him, that three daies iourne from thence was a Prouince called Aguacay. The day that he departed from Chaguate, a Christian, called Francisco de Guzman, the base sonne of a Gentleman of Siuill, staid behind, and went to the Indians, with an Indian woman which he kept as his concubine, for feare he should be punished for gaming

The fifth of Iune.

Catalte. Chaguate.

A smal towne. Salt made of salt springs of water.

Aguacay.

Knowledge of
the South Sea.
Store of Salt
made.

gaming debts, that he did owe. The Gouvernour had trauelled two daies before he missed him; hee sent the Cacique word to seeke him vp, and to send him to Aguacay, whither he trauelled: which hee did not performe. From the Cacique of Aguacay, before they came into the Countrie, there met him on the way 15. Indians with a present of skinnes, fish and roasted venison. The Gouvernour came to his towne on Wednesday, the fourth of Iulie. He found the towne without people, and lodged in it: he staid there about a day; during which, he made some roades, and tooke many men and women. There they had knowledge of the South Sea. Here there was great store of salt made of sand, which they gather in a vaine of ground like pebble stones. And it was made as they make salt in Cayas.

Chap. XXXII.

How the Gouvernour went from Aguacay to Naguatex, and what happened vnto him.

A smal towne.

Salt made here.

Pato.

Amaye.

Iulie 10.

Hacanac.

Naguatex.

A Riuer.

The same day that the Gouvernour departed from Aguacay he lodged in a small towne subject to the Lord of that prouince. The Campe pitched hard by a lake of salt water; and that euening they made some salt there. The day following hee lodged betwene two mountaines in a thinne groue of wood. The next day hee came to a small towne called Pato. The fourth day after his departure from Aguacay he came to the first habitation of a prouince called Amaye. There an Indian was taken, which said that from thence to Naguatex was a day and a halfe's journey; which they trauelled, finding all the way inhabited places. Hauing passed the peopled countrie of Amaye, on Saturday the 20. of Iulie they pitched their Campe at noone betwene Amaye and Naguatex along the corner of a groue of very faire trees. In the same place certaine Indians were discovered, which came to view them. The horsemen went out to them, and killed six, and tooke two; whom the Gouvernour asked, wherefore they came? They said, to know what people hee had, and what order they kept; and that the Cacique of Naguatex their Lord had sent them, and that he, with other Caciques which came to aide him, determined that day to bid him battell. While they were occupied in these questions and answeres, there came many Indians by two waies in two squadrons: and when they saw they were descried, giuing a great crie they assaulted the Christians each squadron by it selfe: but seeing what resistance the Christians made them, they turned their backs and betooke themselves to flight, in which many of them lost their liues; and most of the horsemen following them in chase, carelesse of the Campe, other two squadrons of Indians, which lay in ambush, set vpon the Christians that were in the Campe, which also they resisted, who also had their reward as the first. After the flight of the Indians, and that the Christians were retired, they heard a great noise a crossebow shot from the place where they were. The Gouvernour sent twelue horsemen to see what it was. They found sixe Christians, foure footmen and two horsemen, among many Indians; the horsemen defending the footmen with great labour. These being of them that chased the first two squadrons, had lost themselves, and comming to recouer the Campe fell among those with whom they were fighting: and so they, and those that came to succour the, slew many of the Indians, and brought one aliuie to the Campe: whom the Gouvernour examined, who they were that came to bid him battell. He told him, that they were the Cacique of Naguatex, and of Amaye, and another of a prouince called Hacanac, a Lord of great countries and many subjects: and that the Cacique of Naguatex came for Captaine and chieftest of them all. The Gouvernour commanded his right arme and nose to be cut off, and sent him to the Cacique of Naguatex, charging him to tell him, that the next day hee would bee in his countrey to destroy him; and if hee would withstand his entrance, hee should stay for him. That night he lodged there; and the next day hee came to the habitation of Naguatex, which was very scattering: he inquired where the Caciques chiefe towne was? They told him that it was on the other side of a Riuer, that passed thereby: hee trauelled thitherward, and came vnto it: and on the other side hee saw many Indians, that taried for him, making shew as though they

daies before he missed Aguacay, whither he came, before they came present of skinned fish, the fourth of Iulie. about a day; during There they had knowledge of sand, which they as they make salt in

appened vnto him.

edged in a small towne by a lake of salt water; lodged betwene two small towne called the first habitation of a d that from thence to d, finding all the way on Saturday the 20. of uatex along the corner were discovered, which d six, and tooke two; know what people hee ex their Lord had sent determined that day to d answers, there came aw they were descried, selfe: but seeing what d betooke themselves to orsmen following them which lay in ambush, set sted, who also had their Christians were retired, y were. The Gouverneur ians, foure footmen and the footmen with great had lost themselves, and y were fighting: and so d, and brought one aliue at came to bid him bat of Amaye, and another any subjects: and that the ll. The Gouverneur com- the Cacique of Naguatex, country to destroy him; n. That night he lodged, which was very scatter- ld him that it was on the erward, and came vnto it: making shew as though they

they would defend the passage. And because hee knew not whether it could bee waded, nor where the passage was; and that some Christians and horses were hurt; that they might haue time to recouer, he determined to rest certaine daies in the towne where he was. So hee pitched his campe a quarter of a league from the Riuer, because the weather was very hot, neere vnto the towne, in a thinne groue of very faire and hie trees neere a brookes side: and in that place were certaine Indians taken; whom hee examined, whether the Riuer were wadeable or no? They said, yea, at some times, and in some places. Within ten daies after he sent two Capitaines with fiftene horsemen a peece vpward and downe the Riuer with Indians to shew them where they should goe ouer, to see what habitation was on the other side: And the Indians withstood them both, defending the passage of the Riuer as farre as they were able, but they passed in despite of them: and on the other side of the Riuer they saw great habitation, and great store of victuals; and with these newes returned to the Camp.

August.

They passe the Riuer.

Chap. XXXIII.

How the Cacique of Naguatex came to visite the Gouverneur: and how the Gouverneur departed from Naguatex and came to Nondacao.

The Gouverneur sent an Indian from Naguatex where hee lay, to command the Cacique to come to serue and obey him, and that hee would forgiue him all that was past; and if he came not, that he would seeke him, and giue him such punishment as he had deserued for that which he had done against him. Within two daies the Indian returned, & said that the Cacique would come the next day: which, the same day when he came, sent many Indians before him, among whom there were some principall men: hee sent them to see what countenance they found in the Gouverneur, to resolute with himselfe whether hee should goe or not. The Indians let him vnderstand, that he was comming, and went away presently: and the Cacique came within two houres accompanied with many of his men: they came all in a ranke one before another on both sides, leauing a lane in the midst where hee came. They came where the Gouverneur was, all of them weeping after the manner of Tulla, which was not farre from thence toward the East. The Cacique made his due obedience, and this speech following:

Tulla not far from Naguatex, Eastward.

Right high and mightie Lord, whom all the world ought to serue and obey, I was bold to appeare before your Lordship, hauing committed so heinous and abominable an act, as only for me to haue imagined, deserued to be punished; trusting in your greatnes, that although I deserue to obtaine no pardon, yet for your owne sake only you will vse clemencie toward me, considering how small I am in comparison of your Lordship; and not to think vpon my weaknesses, which, to my griefe and for my greater good, I haue knowne. And I belecue that you and yours are immortall; and that your Lordship is Lord of the land of nature, seeing that you subdue all things, and they obey you, euen the very hearts of men. For when I beheld the slaughter and destruction of my men in the battell, which, through mine ignorance, and the counsell of a brother of mine, which died in the same, I gaue your Lordship, presently I repented me in my heart of the error, which I had committed; and desired to serue and obey you: and to this end I come, that your Lordship may chastise and command mee as your owne.

The Gouverneur answered him, that he forgaue him all which was past, that from thenceforth hee should do his dutie, & that he would hold him for his friend, and that he would fauour him in all things. Within foure daies hee departed thence, and comming to the Riuer he could not passe, because it was growne very bigge; which seemed to him a thing of admiration, being at that time that it was, and since it had not rained a moneth before. The Indians said, that it increased many times after that manner without raining in all the countrie. It was supposed, that it might bee the tide that came into it. It was learned, that the flood came alway from aboue, and that the Indians of all that countrie had no knowledge of the Sea. The Gouverneur returned vnto the place where he had lodged before:

The Riuer growne vnpasseable in August, at Naguatex. Coniectures of a Sea to the Northward.

A towne.

Townes burned.

Nissoone.

Lacane.

Nondacao.

before: and vnderstanding within eight daies after that the Riuer was passeable, he departed. He passed ouer and found the towne without people: he lodged in the field, and sent the Cacique word to come vnto him, and to bring him a guide to goe forward. And some daies being past, seeing the Cacique came not, nor sent any bodie, hee sent two Captaines sundrie waies to burne the townes, and to take such Indians as they could finde: They burnt great store of victuals, and took many Indians. The Cacique seeing the hurt that he receiued in his countrie, sent sixe principall Indians with three men for guides which knew the language of the countrie, through which the Gouvernour was to passe. Hee departed presently from Naguatex, and within three daies journey came to a towne of foure or fiue houses, which belonged to the Cacique of that prouince, which is called Nissoone: it was euill inhabited and had little Maiz. Two daies iourney forward the guides which guided the Gouvernour, if they were to goe Westward, guided him to the East; and sometimes went vp and downe through very great woods out of the way. The Gouvernour commanded them to bee hanged vpon a tree: and a woman that they tooke in Nissoone guided him, and went backe againe to seeke the way. In two daies he came to another miserable towne, called Lacane: an Indian was taken in that place, that said, that the countrie of Nondacao was a countrie of great habitation, and the houses scattering the one from the other, as they vse to bee in mountains, and had great store of Maiz. The Cacique came with his men weeping, like them of Naguatex: for this is their vse in token of obedience: hee made him a present of much fish, and offered to doe what he would command him. Hee tooke his leaue, and gaue him a guide to the prouince of Soacatino.

Chap. XXXIII.

How the Gouvernour went from Nondacao to Soacatino and Guasco, and passed through a desert, from whence, for want of a guide, and an interpretour, he returned to Nilco.

Aysa.

A towne.

Soacatino.

20. daies trauell toward the South.

Guasco: here they found some Turkie stones, and mantles of cotton wooll.
Chap. 35.

The Gouvernour departed from Nondacao toward Soacatino, and in fiue daies iourney came to a Prouince called Aays. The Indians which inhabited it, had no notice of the Christians: but assoone as they saw that they entred into their country, they assembled themselves: and as they came together 50. or 100. they came forth to fight: while some fought, others came and charged our men another way, and while they followed some, others followed them. The fight lasted the greatest part of the day, till they came to their towne. Some horses and men were wounded, but not to any hurt of their traueilling: for there was no wound that was dangerous. There was a great spoile made of the Indians. That day that the Gouvernour departed from thence, the Indian that guided him said, that in Nondacao he had heard say, that the Indians of Soacatino had seene other Christians, whereof they all were very glad: thinking it might be true, and that they might haue entred into those parts by Nueva Espanna; and that if it were so, it was in their owne hand to goe out of Florida, if they found nothing of profit: for they feared they should lose themselves in some wilderness. This Indian led him two daies out of the way. The Gouvernour commanded to torture him. He said, that the Cacique of Nondacao, his Lord, had commanded him to guide them so, because they were his enemies, and that hee was to doe as his Lord commanded him. The Gouvernour commanded him to be cast to the dogs: and another guided him to Soacatino, whither hee came the day following. It was a verie poore Countrie: there was great want of Maiz in that place. Hee asked the Indians, whether they knew of any other Christians. They said, that a little from thence toward the South they heard they were. He trauelled 20. daies through a Countrie euill inhabited, where they suffered great scarcitie and trouble. For that little Maiz which the Indians had, they had hidden and buried in the woods, where the Christians, after they were well wearied with their trauell, at the end of their iourney went to seeke by digging what they should eat. At last, comming to a Prouince that was called Guasco, they found Maiz, wherewith they loaded their horses, and the Indians that they had.

From

was passeable, he de-
 dged in the field, and
 to goe forward. And
 y bodie, hee sent two
 as they could finde:
 cacique seeing the hurt
 three men for guides
 ouernour was to passe.
 ey came to a towne of
 uince, which is called
 ey forward the guides
 him to the East; and
 way. The Gouverneur
 ey tooke in Nissoone
 chies he came to another
 ace, that said, that the
 uses scattering the one
 of Maiz. The Cacique
 is their vse in token
 dered to doe what he
 ide to the province of

Guasco, and passed
 an interpretour, he

n five daies ounie came
 notice of the Christians:
 embled themselves: and
 some fought, others came
 hers followed them. The
 e. Some horses and men
 was no wound that was
 day that the Gouverneur
 adacao he had heard say,
 they all were very glad:
 hose parts by Nueva Es-
 t of Florida, if they found
 some wildernes. This In-
 ded to torture him. He
 m to guide them so, he-
 rd commanded him. The
 guided him to Soacatino,
 rie: there was great want
 w of any other Christians.
 ey were. He travelled 20.
 scaritie and trouble. For
 d in the woods, where the
 end of their iournie went
 a Province that was called
 d the Indians that they had.

From

From thence they went to another towne called Naquiscoga. The Indians said, they had ^{Naquiscoga}
 no notice of any other Christians. The Gouverneur commanded to torment them. They
 said, that they came first to another Lordship, which was called Naçacahoz, and from ^{Naçacahoz}
 thence returned again to the West, from whence they came. The Gouverneur came in
 two daies to Naçacahoz: Some women were taken there: among whom there was one,
 which said, that she had seene Christians, and had been taken by them, and had run
 away. The Gouverneur sent a Capitaine with 15. horsemen to the place where the woman
 said she had seene them, to see if there were any signe of horses, or any token of their
 being there. After they had gone three or foure leagues, the woman that guided them said,
 that all that she had told them was vntrue. And so they held all the rest that the Indians had
 said, of seeing Christians in the land of Florida. And, because the Countrie that way was
 poore of Maiz, and toward the West, there was no notice of any habitation, they returned <sup>They returned
to Guasco.</sup>
 to Guasco. The Indians told them there, that 10. daies iournie from thence toward the West,
 was a Riuer called Daycao; whither they went sometimes a hunting and killing of Deere:
 and that they had seene people on the other side, but knew not what habitation was there.
 There the Christians tooke such Maiz as they found and could carrie, and, going 10. daies
 iournie through a wildernes, they came to the Riuer which the Indians had told them of. <sup>The Riuer of
Daycao: which
seemeth to be
Rio del oro.</sup>
 Ten horsemen, which the Gouverneur had sent before, passed ouer the same, and went in a
 way that led to the Riuer, and lighted vpon a companie of Indians that dwelt in verie little
 cabins: who, assoone as they saw them, tooke themselves to flight, leauing that which they
 had; all which was nothing but miserie and pouertie. The Countrie was so poore, that
 among them all there was not found halfe a peck of Maiz. The horsemen tooke two Indians,
 and returned with them to the Riuer, where the Gouverneur staid for them. He sought to
 learne of them what habitation was toward the West. There was none in the Camp that
 could understand their language. The Gouverneur assembled the Captaines and principall
 persons, to determine with their aduice what they should doe. And the most part said, that
 they thought it best to returne backe to Rio grande, or the Great Riuer of Guachoya; be-
 cause that in Nilco and thereabout was store of Maiz: saying, that they would make pinaces
 that winter, and the next sommer passe down the Riuer to the seaward in them, and coming
 to the Sea they would goe along the coast to Nueva Espanna. For though it seemed a doubt-
 full thing and difficult, by that which they had already alleaged, yet it was the last remedie
 they had. For by land they could not goe for want of an Interpretour. And they held, that <sup>No travelling by
land without an
interpretour.</sup>
 the countrie beyond the Riuer of Daycao, where they were, was that which Cabeça de Vaca
 mentioned in his relation that he passed of the Indians, which liued like the Alarbes, hauing
 no settled place, and fed vpon Tunas and rootes of the fields, and wilde beasts that they
 killed. Which if it were so, if they should enter into it and finde no victuals to passe the
 winter, they could not chuse but perish. For they were entred alreadie into the beginning
 of October: and if they staid any longer, they were not able to returne for raine and
 snowes, nor to sustaine themselves in so poore a countrey. The Gouverneur (that desired
 long to see himselfe in a place where hee might sleepe his full sleep, rather then to conquer
 and gouerne a countrie where so many troubles presented themselves) presently returned
 back that same way that he came.

Chap. XXXV.

How they returned to Nilco, and came to Minoya, where they agreed to make ships
 to depart out of the land of Florida.

When that which was determined was published in the Campe, there were many that were
 greatly grieved at it: for they held the Sea voyage as doubtfull, for the euill meanes they
 had, and of as great danger, as the traueilling by land: and they hoped to finde some rich
 countrie before they came to the land of the Christians, by that which Cabeça de Vaca had
 told the Emperour: and that was this; That after hee had found clothes made of cotton wooll,
 hee saw gold and siluer, and stones of great value. And they had not yet come where hee
 had been. For vntill that place hee alwaies trauelled by the Sea coast: and they trauelled <sup>Gold, siluer and
precious stones
in Florida.</sup>

Turkie stones
and mantles of
cotton wooll
found in Guasco.

150. leagues be-
tweene the
Riuer of Day-
cao, and Rio
grande.

Naguatex.

Fine earthen
vessels
Chaguete.

Aays.
Chilano.
Nilco.

farre within the land; and that going toward the West, of necessitie they should come where hee had been. For he said, That in a certain place he trauelled many daies, and entred into the land toward the North. And in Guasco they had already found some Turkie stones, and mantles of cotton wooll: which the Indians signified by signes that they had from the West: and that holding that course they should draw neere to the land of the Christians. But though they were much discontented with it, and it grieved many to goe backward, which would rather haue aduentured their liues and haue died in the land of Florida, then to haue gone poore out of it: yet were they not a sufficient part to hinder that which was determined, because the principall men agreed with the Gouvernour. And afterward there was one that said, hee would put out one of his owne eyes, to put out another of Luis de Moscoso; because it would grieve him much to see him prosper: because aswell himself as others of his friends had crossed that which hee durst not haue done, seeing that within two daies hee should leaue the gouernment. From Daycao, where now they were, to Rio grande, or the Great Riuer, was 150. leagues: which vnto that place they had gone Westward. And by the way as they returned backe they had much adoe to find Maiz to eate: for where they had passed, the country was destroyed: and some little Maiz that was left the Indians had hidden. The townes which in Naguatex they had burned (whereof it repented them) were repaired againe, and the houses full of Maiz. This countrie is well inhabited and plentifull. In that place are vessels made of clay, which differ very little from those of Estremoz, or Monte-mor. In Chaguete the Indians by commandement of the Cacique came peaceably, and said, that the Christian which remained there would not come. The Gouvernour wrote vnto him, and sent him inke and paper that he might answer. The substance of the words of the letter was to declare vnto him his determination, which was, to goe out of the land of Florida, and to put him in remembrance that he was a Christian, that hee would not remaine in the subiection of Infidels, that hee pardoned him the fault which he had done in going away to the Indians, that hee should come vnto him: and if they did stay him, that hee would aduertise him thereof by writing. The Indian went with the letter, and came again without any more answer, then, on the back side, his name and his seale, that they might know he was aliue. The Gouvernour sent twelue horsemen to seeke him: but he, which had his spies, so hid himselfe, that they could not find him. For want of Maiz the Gouvernour could not stay any longer to seeke him. Hee departed from Chaguete, and passed the Riuer by Aays; going downe by it hee found a towne called Chilano, which as yet they had not seen. They came to Nilco, & found so little Maiz, as could not suffice till they made their ships; because the Christians, being in Guachoya in the seede time, the Indians for feare of them durst not come to sow the grounds of Nilco: and they knew not thereabout any other countrie where any Maiz was: and that was the most fruitfull soile that was thereaway, and where they had most hope to finde it. Euery one was confounded, and the most part thought it bad counsell to come backe from the Riuer of Daycao, and not to haue followed their fortune, going that way that went ouer land. For by Sea it seemed impossible to saue themselves, vnlesse God would worke a miracle for them: for there was neither Pilot, nor Sea-chart, neither did they know where the Riuer entred into the Sea, neither had they notice of it, neither had they any thing wherewith to make sailes, nor any store of Enequem, which is a grasse whereof they make Okam, which grew there: and that which they found they saued to calke the Pinaces withall, neither had they any thing to pitch them withall: neither could they make ships of such substance, but that any storme would put the in great danger: and they feared much it would fall out with them, as it did with Pamphilo de Naruæz, which was cast away vpon that coast: And about all other it troubled them most, that they could finde no Maiz: for without it they could not bee sustained, nor could doe any thing that they had neede of. All of them were put to great confusion. Their chiefe remedy was to commit themselves to God, and to beseech him that he would direct them the way that they might saue their liues. And it pleased him of his goodnesse, that the Indians of Nilco came peaceably, and told them, that two daies iourney from thence, neere vnto the Great Riuer, were two townes, whereof the Christians had no notice, and that the prouince was called Minoya, and was a fruitfull

should come where
daies, and entred into
the Turkie stones, and
y had from the West:
Christians. But though
ward, which would ra-
en to haue gone poore
determined, because
was one that said, hee
Moscoso; because it
others of his friends
daies hee should leaue
e, or the Great Riuer,
and by the way as they
e they had passed, the
ans had hidden. The
) were repaired againe,
ntifull. In that place
noz, or Monte-mor. In
bly, and said, that the
ote vnto him, and sent
ords of the letter was
land of Florida, and to
maine in the subiection
ing away to the Indians,
hee would aduertise him
n without any more an-
ght know he was aliue,
ad his spies, so hid him-
pur could not stay any
Riuer by Aays; going
l not seen. They came
heir ships; because the
care of them durst not
ny other countrie where
ay, and where they had
t thought it bad counsell
their fortune, going that
themselves, vnlesse God
ca-chart, neither did they
of it, neither had they
hich is a grasse whereof
they saued to calke the
neither could they make
dnger: and they feared
ez, which was cast away
ey could finde no Maiz:
that they had neede of
to commit themselves to
ey might saue their liues,
me peaceable, and told
Riuer, were two townes,
alled Minoya, and was a
fruitfull

fruitfull soile: that, whether at this present there was any Maiz or no, they knew not, because they had warre with them: but that they would be very glad with the fauour of the Christians to goe and spoyle them. The Gouvernour sent a Capitaine thither with horsemen and footmen, and the Indians of Nilco with him. Hee came to Minoya, and found two great townes seated in a plaine and open soile, halfe a league distant, one in sight of another, and in them he tooke many Indians, and found great store of Maiz. Presently he lodged in one of them, and sent word to the Gouvernour what hee had found: wherewith they were all exceeding glad. They departed from Nilco in the beginning of December; and all that way, and before from Chilano, they endured much trouble: for they passed through many waters, and many times it rained with a Northren winde, and was exceeding cold, so that they were in the open field with water ouer and vnderneath them: and when at the end of their daies journey they found drie ground to rest vpon, they gaue great thanks to God. With this trouble almost all the Indians that serued them died. And after they were in Minoya, many Christians also died: and the most part were sicke of great and dangerous diseases, which had a spice of the lethargie. At this place died Andrew de Vasconcelos, and two Portugals of Eluas, which were very neere him: which were brethren, and by their surname called Sotis. The Christians lodged in one of the townes, which they liked best: which was fensed about, and distant a quarter of a league from the Great Riuer. The Maiz that was in the other towne was brought thither; and in all it was esteemed to bee 6000. hanegs, or bu-hels. And there was the best timber to make ships, that they had scene in all the land of Florida: wherfore all of them gaue God great thanks for so singular a fauour, and hoped that that which they desired would take effect, which was, that they might safely bee conducted into the land of the Christians.

Minoya.
Two great
townes.

The beginning
of December.

Raine with
Northren wind
exceeding cold.

The death of
Andrew Vas-
concelos.

Chap. XXXVI.

How there were seuen Brigandines builded, and how they departed from Minoya.

ASsoone as they came to Minoya, the Gouvernour commanded them to gather all the chaines together, which euerie one had to lead Indians in; and to gather al the yron which they had for their prouision, and al the rest that was in the Camp: and to set vp a forge to make nailes, and commanded them to cut downe timber for the brigandines. And a Portugall of Ceuta, who hauing bin a prisoner in Fez, had learned to saw timber with a long saw, which for such purposes they had carried with them, did teach others, which helped him to saw timber. And a Genowis, whom it pleased God to preserue (for without him they had neuer come out of the countrie: for there was neuer another that could make ships but hee) with foure or fiue other Biscaine carpenters, which hewed his plancks and other timbers, made the brigandines: And two calkers, the one of Genua, the other of Sardinia did calke them with the tow of an hearb like hempe, whereof before I haue made mention, which there is named Enecquen. And because there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flaxe of the Countrie, and with the mantles, which they rauelled for that purpose. A cooper which they had among them fell sicke, and was at the point of death: and there was none other that had any skill in that trade: it pleased God to send him his health: And albeit he was verie weake, and could not labour; yet 15. daies before they departed, he made for euery brigandine two halfe hogs heads, which the mariners call quarterets, because foure of them hold a pipe of water. The Indians which dwelt two daies iournie about the Riuer in a Prouince called Taguanate, and likewise those of Nilco and Guacoya, and others their neighbours seeing the brigandines in making, thinking, because their places of refuge are in the water, that they were to goe to seeke them: and because the Gouvernour demanded mantles of them, as necessarie for sailes, came many times, and brought many mantles, and great store of fish. And for certaine it seemed that God was willing to fauour them in so great necessitie, moouing the minds of the Indians to bring them: for to goe to take them, they were neuer able. For in the towne where they were, assoone as winter came in, they were so inclosed and compassed with water, & they could

Enecquen is a
herbe-like
Hempe.
Flaxe of the
countrie.

Taguanate
daies iournie
about Nilco.

go no farther by land, then a league, & a league & an half. And if they would go farther, they could carrie no horses, & without the they were not able to fight with the Indians, because they were many: and so many for so many on foote they had the aduantage of them by water and by land, because they were more apt and lighter, and by reason of the disposition of the Countrie, which was according to their desire for the vse of their warre. They brought also some cords, and those which wanted for cables were made of the barkes of Mulberrie trees. They made stirrops of wood, & made ankers of their stirrops. In the moneth of March, when it had not rained a moneth before, the Riuer grew so big, that it came to Nilco, which was nine leagues off: and on the other side, the Indians said, that it reached other nine leagues into the land. In the towne where the Christians were, which was somewhat high ground, where they could best goe, the water reached to the stirrops. They made certaine rafts of timber, and laid manie boughes vpon them, wheron they set their horses, and in the houses they did the like. But seeing that nothing preuailed, they went vp to the lofts: and if they went out of the houses, it was in canoes, or on horseback in those places where the ground was hiest. So they were two moneths, and could doe nothing, during which time the Riuer decreased not. The Indians ceased not to come vnto the brigantines as they were wont, and came in canoes. At that time the Gouverneur feared they would set vpon him. Hee commanded his men to take an Indian secretly of those that came to the towne, and to stay him till the rest were gone: and they tooke one. The Gouverneur commanded him to bee put to torture, to make him confesse, whether the Indians did practise any treason or no. Hee confessed that the Caciques of Nilco, Guachoya, & Taguanate, and others, which in al were about 20. Caciques, with a great number of people, determined to come vpon him; and that three daies before, they would send a great present of fish to colour their great treason and malice, and on the verie day they would send some Indians before with another present: And these with those which were our slaues, which were of their conspiracie also, should set the houses on fire, and first of all possesse themselves of the lances which stood at the doores of the houses; and the Caciques with all their men should bee neere the towne in ambush in the wood, and when they saw the fire kindled, should come, and make an end of the conquest. The Gouverneur commanded the Indian to be kept in a chaine, and the selfesame day that he spake of, there came 30. Indians with fish. Hee commanded their right hands to be cut off, and sent them so backe to the Cacique of Guachoya, whose men they were. He sent him word, that he and the rest should come when they would, for he desired nothing more, and that hee should know, that they thought not any thing which he knew not before they thought of it. Hereupon they all were put in a very great feare: And the Caciques of Nilco and Taguanate came to excuse themselves: and a few daies after came he of Guachoya, and a principall Indian and his subiect, said, he knew by certaine information, That the Caciques of Nilco and Taguanate were agreed to come and make warre vpon the Christians. Assoone as 5 Indians came from Nilco, the Gouverneur examined them, and they confessed it was true. Hee deliuered them presently to the principall man of Guachoya, which drew them out of the towne and killed them. Another day came some from Taguanate, and confessed it likewise. The Gouverneur commanded their right hands and noses to be cut off, and sent them to the Cacique, where with they of Guachoya remained very well contented: and they came oftentimes with presents of mantles and fish, and hogs, which bred in the Countrie of some swine that were lost by the way the last yeere. Assoone as the waters were slaked, they perswaded the Gouverneur to send men to Taguanate: They came and brought canoes, wherein the footemen were conueied downe the Riuer, and a Captaine with horsemen went by land; and the Indians of Guachoya, which guided him, till they came to Taguanate, assaulted the towne, and took many men and women, and mantles, which with those that they had alreadye were sufficient to supplie their want. The brigandines being finished in the moneth of Iune, the Indians hauing told vs, That the Riuer increased but once a yeere, when the snowes did melt, in the time wherein I mentioned it had alreadye increased, being now in sommer, and hauing not rained a long time, it pleased God, that the flood came vp to the towne to seeke the brigandines,

The great vse of horses.

Mulberrie trees.

The mightie increasing of the Riuer for two moneths space, so wit, all March and April.

The grand conspiracie of the Indians against the Christians.

Note well.

Thirtie Indians of the Cacique of Guachoya haue their right hands cut off.

The right hands and noses of traitours cut off. Hogges in Florida.

Taguanate taken.

Iune. The Riuer increaseth but once a yeere when the snowes

they would go farther, but with the Indians, because the advantage of them by reason of the disposition of their warre. They made of the barks of their stirrups. In the winter grew so big, that it was the Indians said, that if the Christians were, which reached to the stirrups, and then, whereon they set nothing preuailed, they canoes, or on horseback nonetheless, and could decrease not to come vnto the Gouverneur feared the Indian secretly of those and they tooke one. The lesse, whether the Indians of Nilco, Guachoya, & great number of people, could send a great present by they would send some were our slaues, which first of all possesse themselves Caciques with all their they saw the fire kindled, commanded the Indian to come 30. Indians with them so backe to the that he and the rest should know, that they of it. Hereupon they all Taguanate came to excuse principal Indian and his of Nilco and Taguanate ne as Indians came from true. Hee deliuered them out of the towne and killed likewise. The Gouverneur came to the Cacique, where came oftentimes with pre of some swine that were d, they perswaded the Go- goes, wherein the footmen sent by land; and the Indians vaulted the towne, and took had alreadie were sufficient oneth of Iune, the Indians the snowes did melt, in now in sommer, and hauing to the towne to seeke the brigandines,

brigandines, from whence they carried them by water to the Riuer. Which, if they had gone by land, had been in danger of breaking and splitting their keeles, and to bee all vndone; because that for want of iron, the spikes were short, and the planckes and timber were very weake. The Indians of Minoya, during the time that they were there, came to serue them (being driuen thereunto by necessity) that of the Maiz which they had taken from them, they would bestow some crummes vpon them. And because the Countrey was fertill, and the people vsed to feed of Maiz, and the Christians had gotten all from them that they had, and the people were many, they were not able to sustaine themselves. Those which came to the towne were so weake and feeble, that they had no flesh left on their bones: and many came and died neere the towne for pure hunger and weakenesse. The Gouverneur commanded vpon grieuous punishments to giue them no Maiz. Yet, when they saw that the hogges wanted it not, and that they had yielded themselves to serue them, & considering their miserie and wretchednes, hauing pity of the, they gaue them part of the Maiz which they had. And when the time of their embarkment came, there was not sufficient to serue their owne turnes. That which there was, they put into the brigandines, and into great canoes tied two and two together. They shipped 22. of the best horses, that were in the Camp, the rest they made dried flesh of; and dressed the hogges which they had in like manner. They departed from Minoya the second day of Iulie, 1543.

done melt in March and April. A miraculous accident.

Chap. XXXVII.

As the Christians went downe the great Riuer on their voyage, the Indians of Quigalta did set vpon them, and what was the successe thereof.

The day before they departed from Minoya, they determined to dismisse al the men & women of the Countrey, which they had detained as slaues to serue them, saue some hundred, little more or lesse, which the Gouverneur embarked, and others whom it pleased him to permit. And because there were many men of qualitie, whom he could not deny that which he granted to others, he vsed a policy, saying, that they might serue them as long as they were in the Riuer, but when they came to the sea, they must send them away for want of water, because they had but few vessels. He told his friends in secret, that they should carrie theirs to Nueva Espanna: And all those whom hee bare no good will vnto (which were the greater number) ignorant of that which was hidden from them, which afterward time discovered, thinking it inhumanitie for so little time of seruice, in reward of the great seruice that they had done them, to carrie them with them, to leaue them slaues to other men out of their owne Countries; left fife hundred men and women; among whom were many boies and girles, which spake & vnderstood the Spanish tongue. The most of them did nothing but weepe: which moued great compassion; seeing that all of them with good will would haue become Christians, and were left in state of perdition. There went from Minoya 322. Spaniards in seuen brigandines, well made, saue that the plankes were thin, because the nailes were short, and were not pitched, nor had any decks to keep the water from comming in. In stead of decks they laid plankes, whereon the mariners might runne to trim their sailes, and the people might refresh themselves aboue and below. The Gouverneur made his Captaines, and gaue to euery one his brigandine, and took their oth and their word, that they would obey him, vntill they came to the land of the Christians. The Gouverneur tooke one of the brigandines for himself, which he best liked. The same day that they departed from Minoya, they passed by Guachoya, where the Indians tarried for them in canoes by the Riuer. And on the shore, they had made a great arbour with boughes: They desired him to come on shore; but he excused himselfe, and so went along: The Indians in their canoes accompanied him; and comming where an arme of the Riuer declined on the right hand, they said, that the Prouince of Quigalta was neere vnto that place, and importuned the Gouverneur to set vpon him, and that they would aide him. And because they had said, that he dwelt three daies iournie downe the Riuer, the Gouverneur supposed that they had plotted some treason against him, and there left them;

500. Slaues left in the Countrey.

They saile downe Rio Grande from Minoya 17. daies before they came to the mouth thereof.

and

and went downe with the greatest force of the water. The current was very strong, and with the helpe of ores, they went very swiftly. The first day they landed in a wood on the left hand of the Riuer, and at night they withdrew themselves to the brigandines. The next day they came to a towne, where they went on shore, and the people that was in it durst not tarrie. A woman that they tooke there being examined, said, that that towne belonged to a Cacique named Huasene, subiect to Quigalta, and that Quigalta tarried for them below in the Riuer with many men. Certaine horsemen went thither, and found some houses, wherein was much Maiz. Immediately more of them went thither and tarried there one day, in which they did beate out, and tooke as much Maiz as they needed. While they were there, many Indians came from the nether part of the Riuer, and on the other side right against them somewhat carelessly set themselves in order to fight. The Gouvernour sent in two canoes the crossebowmen that he had, and as many more as could goe in them. They ran away, and seeing the Spaniards could not ouertake them, they returned backe, and tooke courage; and comming neerer, making an outerie, they threatened them: and assoone as they departed thence, they went after them, some in canoes, and some by land along the Riuer; and getting before, comming to a towne that stood by the Riuers side, they ioyned al together, making a shew that they would tarrie there. Euerie brigandine towed a canoe fastened to their sternes for their particular seruice. Presently there entred men into euerie one of them, which made the Indians to flic, and burned the towne.

As one burned.
The third day. The same day they presently landed in a great field, where the Indians durst not tarrie.

A fleet of an hundred Euro- pean canoes.
The next day there were gathered together an hundred canoes, among which were some that carried 60. and 70. men, and the principall mens canoes had their tilts, and plumes of white and red feathers for their ensignes: and they came within two crossebow shot of the brigandines, and sent three Indians in a small canoe with a fained message to view the manner of the brigandines, and what weapons they had. And comming to the side of the Gouvernours brigandine, one of the Indians entred, and said:

That the Cacique of Quigalta his Lord, sent him his commendations, and did let him vnderstand, that all that the Indians of Guachoya had told him concerning himselfe, was false, and that they had incensed him, because they were his enemies; that he was his seruant, and should find him so.

The Gouvernour answered him, that he beleueed all that he said was true, and willed him to tell him, that he esteemed his friendship very much. With this answer they returned to the place where the rest in their canoes were waiting for them, and from thence all of them fell downe, and came neere the Spaniards, shouting aloud, and threatning of them. The Gouvernour sent Iohn de Guzman, which had been a Capitaine of footemen in Florida, with 15. armed men in canoes to make them giue way. Assoone as the Indians saw them come towards them, they diuided themselves into two parts, and stood still till the Spaniards came nee them, and when they were come neere them, they ioyned together on both sides, taking Iohn de Guzman in the midst, and them that came first with him, and with great furie borded them: And as their canoes were bigger, and many of them leaped into the water to stay them, and to lay hold on the canoes of the Spaniards, and ouerwhelme them; so presently they ouerwhelmed them. The Christians fell into the water, and with the weight of their armour sunke downe to the bottome: and some few, that by swimming or holding by the canoe could haue saued themselves, with oares and stauces, which they had, they strooke them on the head and made them sinke. When they of the brigandines saw the ouerthrow, though they went about to succour them, yet through the current of the Riuer they could not goe backe. Foure Spaniards fled to the brigandine that was neereest to the canoes; and only these escaped of those that came among the Indians. They were eleuen that died there: among whom Iohn de Guzman was one, and a sonne of Don Carlos, called Iohn de Vargas: the rest also were persons of accout and men of great courage. Those that escaped by swimming, said, that they saw the Indians enter the canoe of Iohn de Guzman at the sterne of one of their canoes, and whether they carried him away dead or alieue they could not certainly tell.

Chap. XXXVIII.

Which declareth how they were pursued by the Indians.

THE Indians, seeing that they had gotten the victorie, tooke such courage, that they assaulted them in the brigandines, which they durst not doe before. They came first to that brigandine wherein Calderon went for Captaine, and was in the rereward: and at the first volie of arrowes they wounded 25. men. There were only foure armed men in this brigandine: these did stand at the brigandines side to defend it. Those that were vnarmed, seeing how they hurt them, left their oares and went vnder the deck: whereupon the brigandine began to crosse, and to goe where the current of the streame carried it. One of the armed men seeing this, without the commandement of the Captaine, made a footman to take an oare and stirre the brigandine, hee standing before him and defending him with his target. The Indians came no neerer then a bowshot, from whence they offended and were not offended, receiuing no hurt: for in euery brigandine was but one crossebow, and those which wee had were very much out of order. So that the Christians did nothing else but stand for a butte to receiue their arrowes. Hauing left this brigandine they went to another, and fought with it halfe an houre; and so from one to another they fought with them all. The Christians had mattes to lay vnder them, which were double, and so close and strong, that no arrow went thorow them. And assoone as the Indians gaue them leisure, they fensed the brigandines with them. And the Indians seeing that they could not shoote leuell, shot their arrowes at randon vp into the aire, which fell into the brigandines, and hurt some of the men: and not therewith contented, they sought to get to them which were in the canoes with the horses. Those of the brigandines enuironed them to defend them, and tooke them among them. Thus seeing themselves much vexed by them, and so wearied that they could no longer endure it, they determined to trauell all the night following, thinking to get beyond the countrie of Quigalta, and that they would leaue them: but when they thought least of it, supposing they had now left them, they heard very neere them so great outcries, that they made them deafe, and so they followed vs all that night, and the next day till noone, by which time we were come into the countrie of others, whom they desired to vse vs after the same manner; and so they did. The men of Quigalta returned home; and the other in fiftie canoes fought with vs a whole day and a night: and they entred one of the brigandines, that came in the rereward by the canoe which she had at her sterne, and tooke away a woman which they found in it, and afterward hurt some of the men of the brigandines. Those which came with the horses in the canoes, being wearie with rowing night and day, lingered behind; and presently the Indians came vpon them, and they of the brigandines tarried for them. The Gouverneur resolved to goe on shore and to kill the horses, because of the slow way which they made because of them. Assoone as they saw a place conuenient for it, they went thither and killed the horses, and brought the flesh of them to drie it aboard. Foure or fiue of them remained on shore aloue: the Indians went vnto them, after the Spaniards were embarked. The horses were not acquainted with them, and began to neigh, and runne vp and downe, in such sort, that the Indians, for feare of them, leaped into the water; and getting into their canoes went after the brigandines, shooting cruelly at them. They followed vs that euening and the night following till the next day at tenne of the clocke, and then returned vp the Riuer. Presently from a small towne that stood vpon the Riuer came seuen canoes, and followed vs a little way downe the Riuer, shooting at vs: but seeing they were so few that they could doe vs but little harme, they returned to their towne. From thence forward, vntill they came to the Sea, they had no encounter. They sailed downe the Riuer seuentene daies: which may be two hundred and fiftie leagues iourney, little more or lesse: and neere vnto the Sea the Riuer is diuided into two armes; each of them is a league and an halfe broad.

25. Spaniards wounded.

The great vse of large targets.

Strong mattes a good defence against arrowes.

Another Pinuince.

Dried horseflesh for food.

A small towne.

They sailed 17. daies downe the Riuer, which is about 250. leagues.

Chap. XXXIX.

How they came vnto the sea: and what happened vnto them in all their volage.

HALfe a league before they came to the sea, they came to anker to rest themselues there about a day: for they were very weary with rowing and out of heart. For by the space of many daies they had eaten nothing but parched and sodden Maiz; which they had by allowance euery day an headpeece ful by strike for euery three mē. While they rode there at anker seuen canoes of Indians came to set vpō those, which they brought with them. The Gouvernour commanded armed men to go aboard them, and to driue them farther off. They came also against them by land through a thick wood, and a moorish ground, and had staues with very sharp forked heads made of the bones of fishes, and fought verie valiantly with vs, which went out to encounter them. And the other that came in canoes with their arrowes staid for them that came against them, and at their coming both those that were on land, and those in the canoes wounded some of vs: And seeing vs come neere them, they turned their backs, and like swift horses among footemen gat away from vs; making some returnes, and reuniting themselues together, going not past a bow shot off: for in so retiring they shot, without receiuing any hurt of the Christians. For though they had some bowes, yet they could not vse them; and brake their armes with rowing to ouertake them. And the Indians easily in their compasse went with their canoes, staying and wheeling about as it had been in a skirmish, perceiuing that those that came against them could not offend them. And the more they stroue to come neere them, the more hurt they receiued. Assoone as they had driuen them farther off, they returned to the brigandines. They staid two daies there: And departed from thence vnto the place, where the arme of the Riuer entred into the sea. They sounded in the Riuer neere vnto the Sea, and found 40. fathoms water. They staid there. And the Gouvernour commanded al and singular persons to speake their minds touching their volage, whether it were best to crosse ouer to Nueva Espanna, committing theselues to the hie sea, or whether they should keepe along the coast. There were sundry opinions touching this matter: wherein Iohn Danusco, which presumed much, and tooke much vpon him in the knowledge of nauigation, and matters of the sea, although hee had but little experience, moued the Gouvernour with his talke: and his opinion was seconded by some others. And they affirmed, that it was much better to passe by the hie sea, and crosse the gulfe, which was three of foure parts the lesser trauell, because in going along y coast, they went a great way about, by reason of the compasse, which the land did make. Iohn Danusco said, that he had seene the seacard, and that from the place where they were, the coast ran East and West vnto Rio de las Palmas; and from Rio de las Palmas to Nueva Espanna from North to South: and therefore in sailing alwaies in sight of land would bee a great compassing about and spending of much time; & that they would be in great danger to be ouertaken with winter before they should get to the land of the Christians: and that in 10. or 12. daies space, hauing good weather, they might bee there in crossing ouer. The most part were against this opinion, and said, that it was more safe to go along the coast, though they staid the longer: because their ships were very weake and without decks, so that a very little storme was enough to cast them away: and if they should be hindred with calmes, or contrarie weather, through the small store of vessels which they had to carrie water in, they should likewise fall into great danger: and that although the ships were such as they might venture in them, yet hauing neither Pilot nor Seacard to guide themselues, it was no good counsell to crosse the gulfe. This opinion was confirmed by the greatest part: and they agreed to go along the coast. At the time wherein they sought to depart from thence, the cable of the anker of the Gouvernours brigandine brake, and the anker remained in the Riuer. And albeit, they were neere the shore, yet it was so deepe, that the Diuers diuing many times could neuer find it: which caused great sadnes in the Gouvernour, and in all those that went with him in his brigandine: But with a grindstone which they had, and certaine bridles which remained to

some

all their volage.

rest themselves there
For by the space of
z; which they had by
While they rode there
ey brought with them.
drive them farther off,
poorish ground, and had
d fought verie valiantly
ne in canoes with their
ng both those that were
ng vs come neere them,
t away from vs; making
bow shot off: for in so
or though they had some
owing to ouertake them.
h, staying and wheeling
against them could not
more hurt they received.
brigandines. They staid
re the arme of the Riuer
ca, and found 40. fathoms
and singular persons to
to crosse over to Nueva
should keepe along the
rein Iohn Danusco, which
nauigation, and matters of
rnour with his talke: and
that it was much better to
re parts the lesser trauell,
y reason of the compass,
the seacard, and that from
de las Palmas; and from
refores in sailing alwaies in
g of much time; & that
ore they should get to the
auing good weather, they
his opinion, and said, that
nger: because their ships
was enough to cast them
weather, through the small
d likewise fall into great
enture in them, yet hauing
ounsell to crosse the gulfe.
reed to go along the coast.
le of the anker of the Go-
er. And albeit, they were
any times could neuer find
that went with him in his
bridles which remained to
some

some of the Gentlemen, and men of worship which had horses, they made a weight which serued in stead of an anker. The 18. of Iuly, they went fourth to sea with faire and prosperous weather for their volage. And seeing that they were gone two or three leagues from the shore, the Capitaines of the other brigandines ouertooke them, and asked the Gouvernour, wherefore he did put off from the shore: and that if he would leaue the coast, he should say so; and he should not do it without the consent of all: and that if hee did otherwise, they would not follow him, but that euery one would doe what seemed best vnto himselfe. The Gouvernour answered, that hee would doe nothing without their counsell, but that hee did beare off from the land to saile the better and safer by night; and that the next day when time serued, he would returne to the sight of land againe. They sailed with a reasonable good wind that day and the night following, and the next day till euening song, alwaies in fresh water: whereat they wondred much: for they were very farre from land. But the force of the current of the Riuer is so great, and the coast there is so shallow and gentle, that the fresh water entreth farre into the Sea. That euening on their right hand they saw certaine creekes, whither they went, and rested there that night: where Iohn Danusco with his reasons wonne them at last, that all consented and agreed to commit themselves to the maine Sea, alleaging, as he had done before, that it was a great aduantage, and that their voyage would be much shorter. They sailed two daies, and when they would haue come to sight of land they could not, for the winde blew from the shore. On the fourth day, seeing their fresh water began to faile, fearing necessitie and danger, they all complained of Iohn Danusco, and of the Gouvernour that followed his counsell: and euery one of the Capitaines said, that they would no more goe from the shore, though the Gouvernour went whither he would. It pleased God that the winde changed though but a little: and at the end of foure daies after they had put to sea, being already destitute of water, by force of rowing they got within sight of land, and with great trouble recovered it, in an open roade. That euening the winde came to the South, which on that coast is a crosse winde, and draue the brigandines against the shore, because it blew very hard, and the anchors were so weake, that they yeilded and began to bend. The Gouvernour commanded all men to leape into the water, and going between them and the shore, and thrusting the brigandines into the Sea assoone as the waue was past, they saued them till the winde ceased.

They landed the
30. of May,
1539. Chap. 7.
they went fourth
to sea Iuly 18.
1543.

Fresh water al-
most too much
sailing in the
Sea.
The coast
shallow.
Certaine creekes
where they
rested a 15. day.

An open Roade.

Fresh water is
commonlie
found by digging
in the sands on
the sea side.

An arme of the
sea.

A wild roade.

Chap. XL.

How they lost one another by a storme, and afterward came together in a creeke.

IN the bay where they rode, after the tempest was past, they went on shore, and with mattocks, which they had, they digged certaine pits, which grew full of fresh water, where they filled all the cask which they had. The next day they departed thence, and sailed two daies, and entred into a creeke like vnto a poole, fenced from the South winde, which then did blow, and was against them: and there they staid foure daies, not being able to get out: and when the Sea was calme they rowed out: they sailed that day, and toward euening the winde grew so strong that it draue them on the shore, and they were sorie that they had put fourth from the former harbour: for assoone as night approached a storme began to rise in the Sea, and the winde still waxed more and more violent with a tempest. The brigandines lost one another: two of them, which bare more into the Sea, entred into an arme of the Sea, which peared into the land two leagues beyond the place where the other were that night. The fiue which staid behinde, being alwaies a league, and halfe a league the one from the other, met together, without any knowledge the one of the other, in a wilde roade, where the winde and the waues droue them on shore: for their anchors did streighten and came home; and they could not rule their oares, putting seuen or eight men to euery oare, which rowed to seaward: and all the rest leaped into the water, and when the waue was past that draue the brigandine on shore, they thrust it againe into Sea with all the diligence and might that they had. Others, while another waue was in

A swarme of
grievous Mos-
kitoes.

A skomme of
the sea like
pitch, called
Copee.

Another deep
bay.

A small Island.

Great store of
fish.

Fourteene daies
abode in this
place.

Five daies
sailing.

Floting of
Palme leaves.
Great moun-
taines.
All the North-
side of the Gulfe
of Mexico is
very low land,
save in this
one place.

comming, with bowles laued out the water that came in ouerboard. While they were in this tempest in great feare of being cast away in that place, from midnight forward they endured an intollerable tormēt of an infinite swarme of Moskitoes which fell vpon them, which assoone as they had stung the flesh, it so infected it, as though they had bin venomous. In the morning the Sea was asswaged and the wind slaked, but not the Muskitoes: for f sailes which were white seemed blacke with them in the morning. Those which rowed, vnlesse others kept them away, were not able to row. Having passed the feare & danger of the storme, beholding the deformities of their faces, and the blowes which they gaue themselves to driue them away, one of them laughed at another. They met all together in the creek where the two brigandines were, which outwent their fellows. There was found a skomme, which they call Copee, which the Sea casteth vp, and it is like pitch, where-with in some places, where pitch is wanting, they pitch their ships: there they pitched their brigandines. They rested two daies, and then eftsoones proceeded on their voyage. They sailed two daies more, and landed in a Bay or arme of the Sea, where they staid two daies. The same day that they went from thence sixe men went vp in a canoe toward the head of it, and could not see the end of it. They put out from thence with a South winde, which was against them: but because it was little, and for the great desire they had to shorten their voyage, they put out to sea by force of oares, and for all that made very little way with great labour in two daies, and went vnder the lee of a small Island into an arme of the Sea, which compassed it about. While they were there, there fell out such weather, that they gaue God many thanks, that they had found out such an harbour. There was great store of fish in that place, which they tooke with nets, which they had, and hookes. Heere a man cast an hooke and a line into the Sea, and tied the end of it to his arme, and a fish caught it, and drew him into the water vnto the necke: and it pleased God that hee remembered himselfe of a knife that he had, and cut the line with it. There they abode fourteene daies: and at the end of them it pleased God to send them faire weather, for which with great deuotion they appointed a procession, and went in procession along the strand, beseeching God to bring them to a land, where they might serue him in better sort.

Chap. XLI.

How they came to the Riuer of Panuco in Nueua Espanna.

IN all the coast wheresoeuer they digged they found fresh water: there they filled their vessels; and the procession being ended, embarked themselves, and going alwaies in sight of the shore they sailed sixe daies. John Danusco said that it would doe well to beare out to seaward: for he had seene the Seacard, and remembered that from Rio de las Palmas forward the coast did runne from North to South, and thitherto they had runne from East to West, and in his opinion, by his reckoning, Rio de las Palmas could not be farre off, from where they were. That same night they put to sea, and in the morning they saw Palme leaues floting, and the coast, which ranne North and South: from midday forward they saw great Mountaines, which vntill then they had not seene: for from this place to Puerto de Spiritu Santo, where they first landed in Florida, was a very plaine and low countrey: and therefore it cannot be descried, vnlesse a man come very neere it. By that which they saw, they thought that they had ouershot Rio de Palmas that night, which is 60. leagues from the Riuer of Panuco, which is in Nueua Espanna. They assembled all together, and some said it was not good to saile by night, lest they should ouershoot the Riuer of Panuco: and others said, it was not well to lose time while it was fauourable, and that it could not be so neere that they should passe it that night: and they agreed to take away halfe the sailes, and so saile all night. Two of the brigandines, which sailed that night with all their sailes, by breake of day had ouershot the Riuer of Panuco without seeing it. Of the fve that came behind, the first that came vnto it was that wherein Calderan was Captaine. A quarter of a league before they came at it, and before they did see it, they saw the water muddie, and

While they were in
 night forward they
 which fell vpon them,
 they had bin venom-
 of the Muskitoes: for
 Those which rowed,
 the feare & danger
 wes which they gaue
 they met all together in
 es. There was found
 is like pitch, where-
 there they pitched
 eeded on their voyage.
 where they staid two
 in a canoe toward the
 e with a South winde,
 at desire they had to
 all that made very little
 all Island into an arme
 fell out such weather,
 n harbour. There was
 they had, and hookes,
 of it to his arme, and
 pleased God that hee
 with it. There they
 d to send them faire
 on, and went in pro-
 where they might serue

panna.

there they filled their
 going alwaies in sight
 doe well to beare out
 Rio de las Palmas for-
 ward runne from East to
 d not be farre off, from
 morning they saw Palme
 midday forward they saw
 this place to Puerto de
 and low country: and
 By that which they saw,
 which is 60. leagues from
 d all together, and some
 the Riuer of Panuco: and
 that it could not be so
 away halfe the sailes, and
 with all their sailes, by
 Of the fise that came
 Capitaine. A quarter of a
 saw the water muddie,
 and

and knew it to be fresh water: and comming right against the Riuer, they saw, where it
 entred into the Sea, that the water brake vpon a shold. And because there was no man
 there that knew it, they were in doubt whether they should goe in, or goe along, and they
 resolu'd to goe in: and before they came vnto the current, they went close to the shore,
 and entred into the port: and assoone as they were come in, they saw Indian men and
 women apparelled like Spaniards: whom they asked in what countrey they were? They
 answered in Spanish, that it was the Riuer of Panuco, and that the towne of the Christians
 was 15. leagues vp within the land. The ioy that all of them receiued vpon these newes
 cannot sufficiently be expressed: for it seemed vnto them, that at that instant they were
 borne again. And many went on shore and kissed the ground, and kneeling on their
 knees, with lifting vp their hands and eyes to heauen, they all ceased not to giue God
 thanks. Those which came after, assoone as they saw Calderan come to an anchor with
 his brigandine in the Riuer, presently went thither, and came into the hauen. The other
 two brigandines which had ouershot the place, put to sea to returne backe to seeke the rest,
 and could not doe it, because the winde was contrarie and the Sea growne: they were
 afraid of being cast away, and recouering the shore they cast anchor. While they rode
 there a storme arose: and seeing that they could not abide there, much lesse endure at Sea,
 they resolu'd to runne on shore: and as the brigandines were but small, so did they draw
 but little water; and where they were it was a sandie coast. By which occasion the force
 of their sailes draue them on shore, without any hurt of them that were in them. As those
 that were in the port of Panuco at this time were in great ioy; so these felt a double griefe
 in their hearts: for they knew not what was become of their fellowes, nor in what countrey
 they were, and feared it was a countrey of Indian enemies. They landed two leagues
 below the port: and when they saw themselves out of the danger of the Sea, euery one
 tooke of that which he had, as much as he could carrie on his backe: and they trauelled vp
 into the countrey, and found Indians, which told them where their fellowes were; and gaue
 them good entertainment: wherewith their sadnes was turned into ioy, and they thanked
 God most humbly for their deliuerance out of so many dangers.

The Riuer of
 Panuco: the
 towne 15.
 leagues from the
 mouth of the
 Riuer.

Chap. XLII.

How they came to Panuco, and how they were receiued of the inhabitants.

From the time that they put out of Rio Grande to the sea, at their departure from Florida,
 vntil they arriued in the Riuer of Panuco, were 52. daies. They came into the Riuer of
 Panuco the 10. of September, 1543. They went vp the Riuer with their brigandines. They
 trauelled foure daies; and because the wind was but little, and many times it serued them
 not, because of the many turnings which the Riuer maketh, and the great current, drawing
 them vp by towing, and that in many places; for this cause they made very little way, and
 with great labour: and seeing the execution of their desire to be deferred, which was to come
 among Christians, and to see the celebration of diuine seruice, which so long time they had
 not seene; they left the brigandines with the mariners, and went by land to Panuco. All of
 them were apparelled in Deeres skins tanned and died blacke, to wit, cotes, hose, and shoces.
 When they came to Panuco, presently they went to the Church to pray and giue God
 thanks, that so miraculously had saued them. The townes-men which before were aduer-
 tis'd by the Indians, and knew of their arriual, caried some of them to their houses, and en-
 tertained them, whom they knew, and had acquaintance of, or because they were their
 Countermen. The Alcade Mayor tooke the Gouvernour home to his house: and commanded
 all the rest, assoone as they came, to be lodged 6. & 6. and 10. & 10. according to the habi-
 litie of euery townesman. And all of them were provided for by their hostes of many hennes
 and bread of Maiz, and fruites of the Countrey, which are such as be in the Isle of Cuba,
 whereof before I haue spoken. The towne of Panuco may containe about 70 families; the
 most of their houses are of lime and stone, and some made of timber, and all of them are
 thatched. It is a poore Countrey, and there is neither gold nor siluer in it: The inhabitants

They arriued in
 the Riuer of
 Panuco, 1543.
 Septem. 10.

The description
 of Panuco.

311. Christians
arrived at
Panuco.

live there in great abundance of victuals and seruants. The richest haue not aboue 500. crownes rent a yeere, and that is in cotten clothes, hennes, and Maiz, which the Indians their seruants doe giue them for tribute. There arriued there of those that came out of Florida, three hundred and eleuen Christians. Presently the Alcalde Mayor sent one of the townsmen in post to aduertise the Viceroy, Don Antonio de Mendoca, which was resident in Mexico, that of ʒ people that went with Don Ferdinando de Soto to discouer and conquer Florida, three hundred and eleuen men were arriued there, that seeing they were imploied in his Maiesties seruice, he would take some order to prouide for them. Whereat the Viceroy, and all the inhabitants of Mexico wondred. For they thought they were miscarried, because they had trauelled so farre within the maine land of Florida, and had no newes of them for so long a time: and it seemed a wonderfull thing vnto them, how they could saue themselves so long among Infidels, without any fort, wherein they might fortifie themselves, and without any other succour at all. Presently the Viceroy sent a warrant, wherein hee commaded, that whithersoever they sent, they should giue them victuals, and as many Indians for their cariages as they needed: and where they would not furnish them, they might take those things that were necessarie perforce without incurring any danger of law. This warrant was so readilie obeyed, that by the way before they came to the townes, they came to receiue them with hennes, and victuals.

Chap. XLIII.

Of the fauour which they found at the hands of the Viceroy, and of the inhabitants of the Citie of Mexico.

This is the
first time
that the
Christians
came to
Panuco.

From Panuco to the great Citie Temistitan Mexico is 60. leagues; and other 60. from Panuco to the Port de Vera Cruz, where they take shipping for Spaine, and those that come from Spaine do land to go for Nueva Espanna. These three townes stand in a triangle: to wit, Vera Cruz, to the South, Panuco to the North, and Mexico to the West, 60. leagues asunder. The Countrie is so inhabited with Indians, that from towne to towne, those which are farthest, are but a league, and halfe a league asunder. Some of them that came from Florida, staid a moneth in Panuco to rest themselves, others fifteene daies, and euery one as long as he listed: for there was none that showed a sower countenance to his guests, but rather gaue them any thing that they had, and seemed to be grieved when they took their leaue. Which was to be beleueed. For the victuals, which the Indians doe pay them for tribute, are more than they can spend: and in that towne is no commerce; and there dwelt but few Spaniards there, and they were glad of their companie. The Alcalde Mayor diuided all the Emperours clothes which he had (which there they pay him for his tribute) among those that would come to receiue them. Those which had shirts of maile left, were glad men: for they had a horse for one shirt of maile: Some horsed themselves: and such as could not (which were the greatest part) tooke their iournie on foote: in which they were well receiued of the Indians that were in the townes, and better serued, then they could haue been in their owne houses, though they had been well to liue. For if they asked one hen of an Indian, they brought them foure: and if they asked any of the Countrie fruit, though it were a league off, they ran presently for it. And if any Christian found himselfe cuill at ease, they carried him in a chaire from one towne to another. In whatsoever towne they came, the Cacique, by an Indian which carried a rod of Iustice in his hand, whom they call Tapile, that is to say, a sergeant, commanded them to prouide victuals for them, and Indians to beare burdens of such things as they had, and such as were needfull to carrie them that were sicke. The Viceroy sent a Portugall 20. leagues from Mexico, with great store of sugar, raisons of the Sunne, and conserues, and other things fit for sicke folkes, for such as had neede of them: and had giuen order to cloth them all at the Emperours charges. And their approach being knowne by the citizens of Mexico, they went out of the towne to receiue them: and with great courtesie, requesting them in fauour to come to their houses, euery one carried such as hee met home with him, and clothed them euery one the best they could.

scouerie of Florida,

haue not about 500,
which the Indians
at came out of Flori-
or sent one of the
which was resident in
discouer and conquer
they were imploied

Whereat the Vice-
they were miscarried,
nd had no newes of
how they could saue
ht fortifie themselves,
warrant, wherein hee
ictuals, and as many
ng any danger of law,
to the townes, they

could: so that he which had the meanest apparrell, it cost about 30. ducats. As many as were willing to come to the Viceroyes house he commanded to be apparelled, and such as were persons of qualittie sate at his table: and there was a table in his house for as many of the meaner sort as would come to it: and he was presently informed who euery one was, to shew him the courtesie that he deserued. Some of the Cōquerors did set both gentlemen and clownes at their owne table, and many times made the seruant sit cheeke by cheeke by his master: and chiefly the officers and men of base condition did so: for those which had better education did enquire who euery one was, and made difference of persons: but all did what they could with a good will: and euery one told them whom they had in their houses, that they should not trouble themselves, nor thinke themselves the worse, to take that which they gaue them: for they had bin in the like case, and had bin relieued of others, and that this was the custome of that country. God reward them all: and God grant, that those which it pleased him to deliuer out of Florida, and to bring againe into Christendome, may serue him: and vnto those that died in that country, and vnto all that beleue in him and confesse his holy faith, God for his mercie sake grant the kingdome of heauen. Amen.

Chap. XLIV.

Which declareth some diuersities and particularities of the land of Florida: and the fruites, and beasts, and fowles that are in that Countrey.

of the inhabitants

s; and other 60. from
e, and those that come
stand in a triangle: to
the West, 60. leagues
owne to towne, those
nder. Some of them
selves, others fiftene
that showed a sower
had, and seemed to be
for the victuals, which
and in that towne is no
glad of their companie.
(which there they pay
Those which had shirts
ile: Some horsed them-
their iournie on foote: in
and better serued, then
ell to liue. For if they
ked any of the Countrey
ny Christian found him-
nother. In whatsoever
iustice in his hand, whom
uide victuals for them,
were needfull to carrie
from Mexico, with great
fit for sicke folkes, for
the Emperours charges,
ent out of the towne to
to come to their houses,
euery one the best they
could

From the Port de Spiritu Santo, where they landed when they entred into Florida, to the Prouince of Ocute, which may bee 400. leagues, little more or lesse, is a verie plaine Countrey, and hath many lakes and thicke woods, and in some places they are of wild pinetrees; and is a weake soile: There is in it neither Mountaine nor hill. The Countrey of Ocute is more fat and fruitfull; it hath thinner woods, and very goodly medows vpon the Riuers. Frō Ocute to Cutifachiqui may be 130. leagues: 80. leagues thereof are desert, and haue many groues of wild Pine trees. Through the wilderness great Riuers doe passe. From Cutifachiqui to Xuala, may be 250. leagues: it is al an hilly Countrey. Cutifachiqui and Xuala stand both in plaine ground, hie, and haue goodly medows on the Riuers. From thence forward to Chiaha, Coça, and Talise, is plaine ground, dry and fat, and very plentifull of Maiz. From Xuala to Tascaluca may be 250. leagues. From Tascaluca to Rio Grande, or y Great Riuer, may be 300. leagues: the Countrey is low, and full of lakes. From Rio Grande forward, the Countrey is hier and more champion, and best peopled of all the land of Florida. And along this Riuer from Aquixo to Pacaha, and Coligoa, are 150. leagues: the Countrey is plaine, and the woods thinne, and in some places champion, very fruitfull and pleasant. From Coligoa to Autiamque are 250 leagues of hillie Countrey. From Autiamque to Aguacay, may be 230. leagues of plaine ground. From Aguacay to the Riuer of Daycao 120. leagues, all hillie Countrey.

Port de Spiritu Santo is in 29. degrees N on the West side of Florida.

Ocute. Cutifachiqui.

Xuala.

Chiaha, Chiabo, Coça, and Talise.

Tascaluca.

Rio Grande.

Aquixo.

Coligoa.

Autiamque.

Aguacay.

From the Port de Spiritu Santo vnto Apalache, they trauelled from East to West, and North-west. From Cutifachiqui to Xuala from South to North. From Xuala to Coça from East to West. From Coça to Tascaluca, and to Rio Grande, as far as the Prouinces of Quizquiz and Aquixo from East to West. From Aquixo to Pacaha to the North. From Pacaha to Tulla from East to West: and from Tulla to Autiamque from North to South, to the Prouince of Guachoya and Daycao.

Pagina 73

The bread which they eate in all the land of Florida is of Maiz, which is like course millet. And this Maiz is common in all the Isles and West Indies from the Antiles forward. There are also in Florida great store of Walnuts and Plummes, Mulberries, and Grapes. They sow and gather their Maiz euery one their seuerall crop. The fruits are common to all: for they grow abroad in the open fields in great abundance, without any neede of planting or dressing. Where there be Mountaines, there be chestnuts: they are somewhat smaller then the chestnuts of Spaine. Frō Rio Grande Westward, the Walnuts differ from those that grow more Eastward: for they are soft, and like vnto Acornes: And those which grow from Rio Grande to Puerto del Spiritu Santo for the most part are hard; and the trees

Maiz.

Walnuts, Plummes, Mulberries, Grapes.

Chestnuts.

Soft Walnuts

Eastward from

Rio Grande.

Hard Walnuts

Westward from

and Rio Grande.

A Peare riall.

Strawberries.

Plummes of two
kinds.

Beasts.

Fowles.

and Walnuts in shew like those of Spaine. There is a fruit through all the Countrey which groweth on a plant like Ligoacan, which the Indians doe plant. The fruit is like vnto Peares Riall: it hath a verie good smell, and an excellent taste. There groweth another plant in the open field, which beareth a fruit like vnto strawberries, close to the ground, which hath a verie good taste. The Plummes are of two kinds, red and gray, of the making and bignesse of nuts, and haue three or foure stones in them. These are better then all the plummes of Spaine, & they make farre better Prunes of them. In the Grapes there is onelie want of dressing: for though they bee big, they haue a great Kirnell. All other fruits are very perfect, and lesse hurtfull then those of Spaine.

There are in Florida many Beares, and Lyons, Wolues, Deere, Dogges, Cattes, Martern and Conies.

There be many wild Hennes as big as Turkies, Partridges small like those of Africa, Cranes, Duckes, Pigeons, Thrushes and Sparrowes. There are certaine Blacke birds bigger then Sparrowes, and lesser then Stares. There are Gosse Hawkes, Falcons, Ierfalcons, and all Fowles of prey that are in Spaine.

The Indians are well proportioned. Those of the plaine Countreies are taller of bodie, & better shapen, then those of the Mountaines. Those of the Inland haue greater store of Maiz, and commodities of the Countrey, then those that dwell upon the sea coast. The Countrey along the sea coast is barren and poore: and the people more warlike. The coast runneth from Puerto del Spiritu Santo to Apalache, East and West; and from Apalache to Rio de las Palmas from East to West: from Rio de las Palmas vnto Nueva Espanna from North to South. It is a gentle coast, but it hath many sholdes, and great shelues of sand.

Deo gratias.

This relation of the discoverie of Florida was printed in the house of Andrew de Burgos, Printer and Gentleman of the house of my Lord Cardinall the Infante.

It was finished the tenth of Februarie in the yeere one thousand, five hundred, fiftie and seuen, in the noble and most loyall citie of Euora.

couerie of Florida, &c.

all the Countrie which
fruit is like unto Peares
with another plant in the
ground, which hath a
of the making and big-
ger then all the plumes
there is onely want of
all other fruits are very

ogges, Cattes, Marten

shall like those of Africa,
nine Blacke birds bigger
Falcones, Ierfalcones, and

es are taller of bodie, &
and haue greater store of
upon the sea coast. The
more warlike. The coast
is; and from Apalache to
unto Nueva Espanna from
a great sheldes of sand.

of Andrew de Burgos,
te.
, five hundred, fiftie and

A
DISCOVERY

OF

T H E B A R M V D A S,

OTHERWISE CALLED THE

I L E O F D I V E L S :

BY

SIR THOMAS GATES, SIR GEORGE SOMMERS,

AND

CAPTAYNE NEWPORT,

WITH DIUERS OTHERS.

SET FORTH FOR THE LOUE OF MY COUNTRY,

AND ALSO

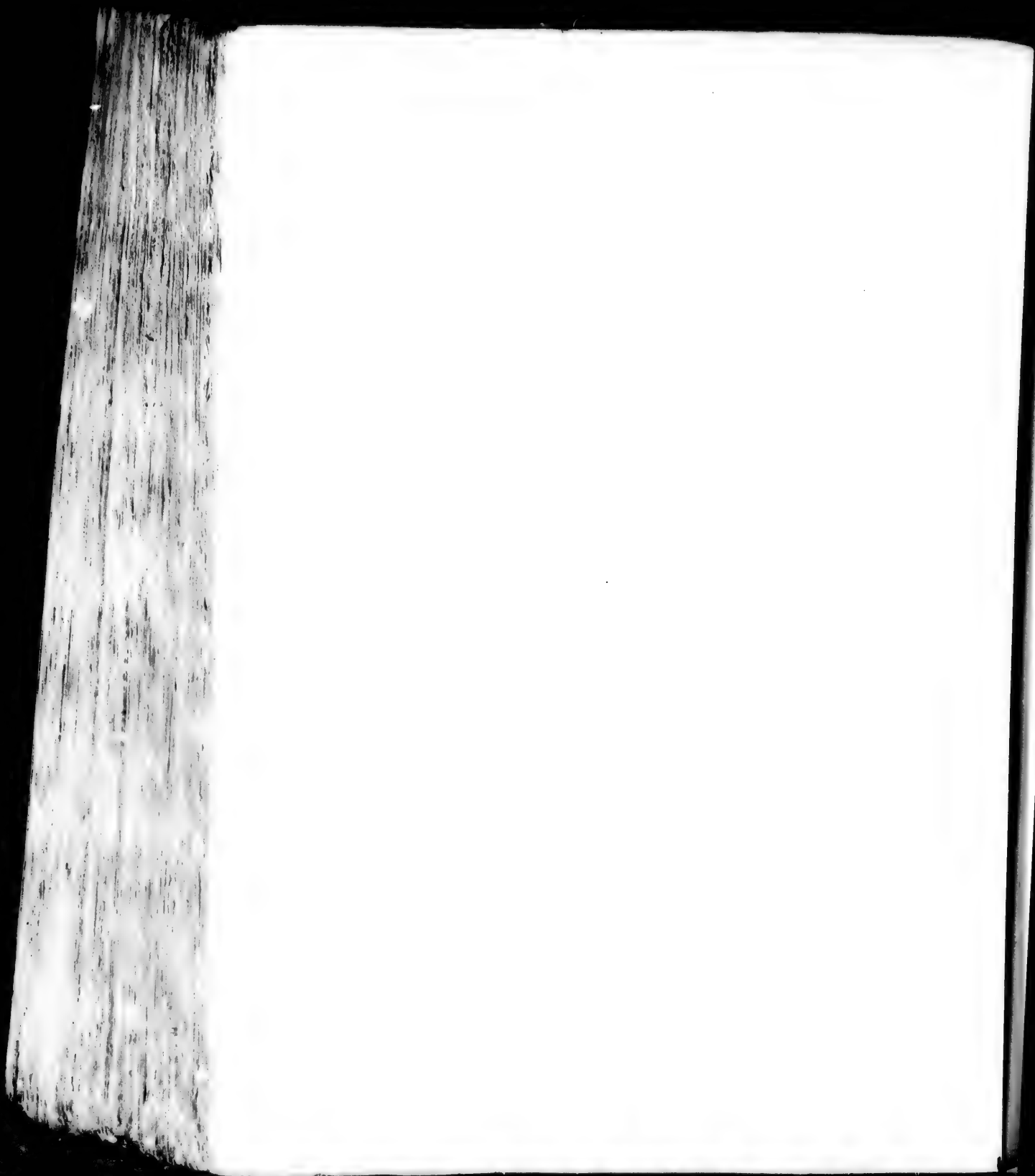
FOR THE GOOD OF THE PLANTATION IN VIRGINIA.

SIL. IOURDAN.

London :

PRINTED BY IOHN WINDET, AND ARE TO BE SOLD BY ROGER BARNES IN S. DUNSTONES
CHURCH-YARD IN FLEETE-STREETE, VNDER THE DIAL.

1610.

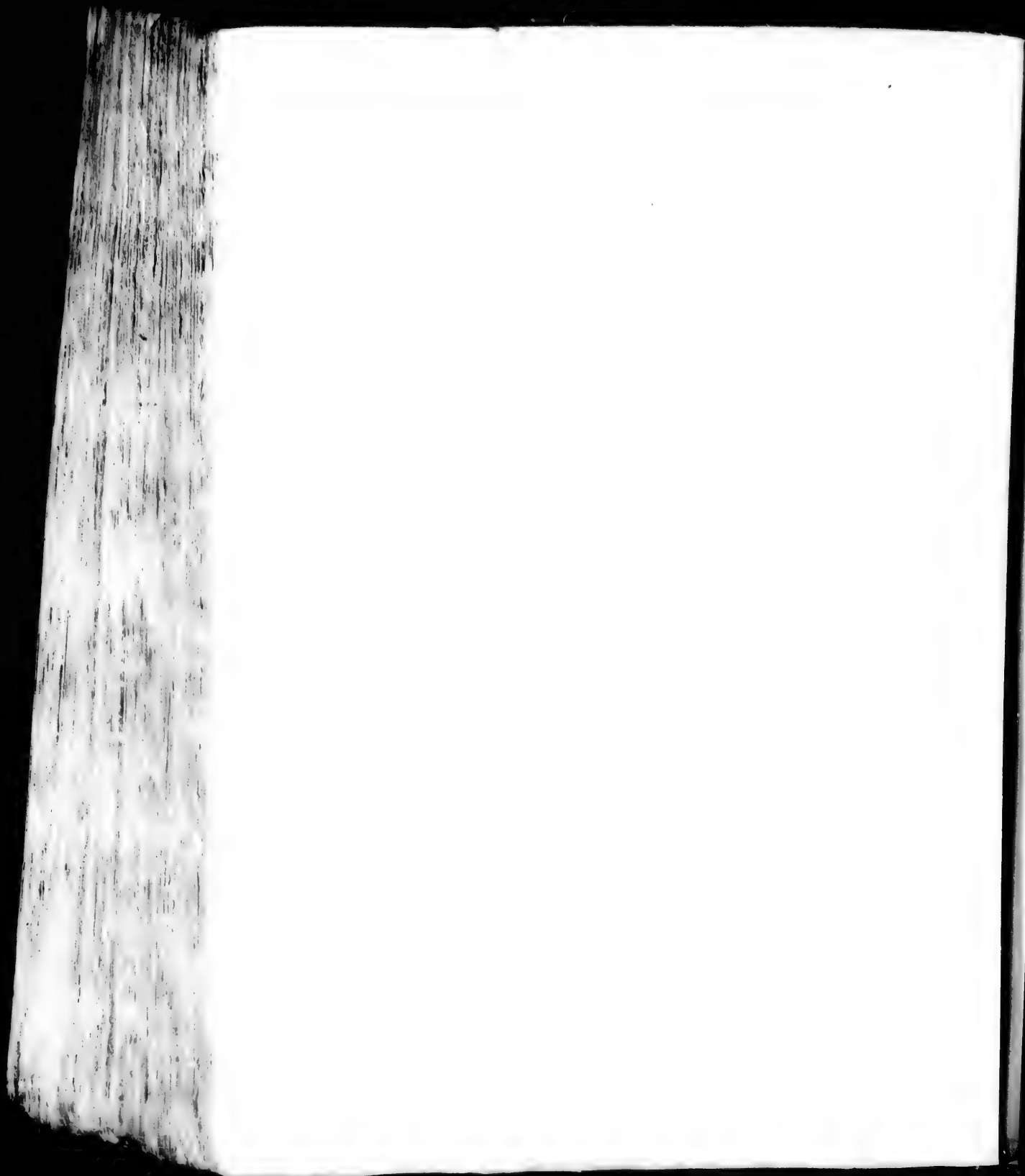


TO THE
RIGHT WORSHIPFULL
MASTER IOHN FITZ-IAMES, ESQUIRE,
ONE OF HIS MAIESTIES CHIEFE IUSTICES OF PEACE
WITHIN THE
COUNTIE OF DORSET.

Sir, amongst all the sinnes, that humane nature doth stand possest with, ingratitude doth challenge a proprietie in man, although it bee a thing repugnant to reason, and disagreeing with all mutuall societie. To free myselfe from this vitium naturæ, I am bold in these fewe lines to dedicate my loue to you: for it were too tedious to vse many wordes, where good wil is the bond of loue. This smal gift I would intreate you to accept, if not for the quantitie, yet for the qualitie. From London the thirteenth of October, 1610.

Your Worships to commaund

SIL. IOURDAN.



A
DISCOVERY
OF THE
BARMVDAS,
OTHERWISE CALLED
THE ILE OF DIVELS.

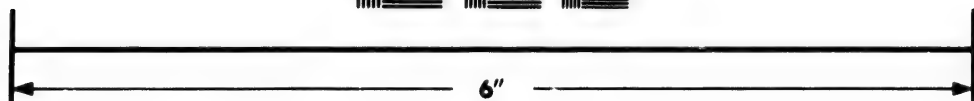
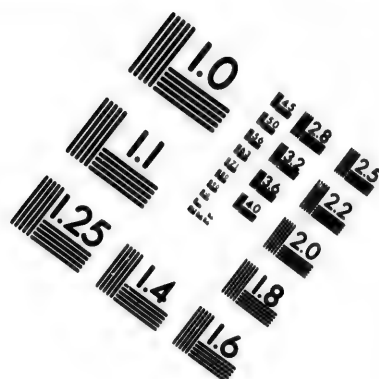
I Being in ship called the seauenture, with Sir Thomas Gates, our Gouvernour, Sir George Sommers, and Captaine Newport, three most worthy honoured Gentlemen, (whose valour and fortitude the world must needs take notice off, and that in most honourable designes) bound for Virginia, in the height of thirty degrees of northerly latitude, or thereabouts: we were taken with a most sharpe and cruell storme vpon the fife and twentieth day of Iuly, Anno 1609. which did not only separate vs from the residue of our fleete, (which were eight in number) but with the violent working of the Seas, our ship became so shaken, torne, and leaked, that shee receiued so much water, as couered two tire of hogshheads aboue the ballast; that our men stooode vp to the middles, with buckets, baricos, and kettles, to baile out the water, and continually pumped for three dayes and three nights together, without any intermission; and yet the water seemed rather to increase, then to diminish: in so much that all our men, being vtterly spent, tyred, and disabled for longer labour, were euen resolu'd, without any hope of their liues, to shut vp the hatches, and to haue committed themselues to the mercy of the sea, (which is said to be mercilesse) or rather to the mercy their mighty God and redeemer, (whose mercies exceed all his works) seeing no helpe, nor hope, in the apprehension of mans reason, that any mothers child could escape that ineuitable danger, which euery man had proposed and digested to himselfe, of present sinking. So that some of them hauing some good and comfortable waters in the ship, fetcht them, and drunke one to the other, taking their last leaue one of the other, vntill their more ioyfull and happy meeting, in a more blessed world; when it pleased God out of his most gracious and mercifull prouidence, so to direct and guide our ship, (being left to the mercy of the sea) for her most aduantage; that Sir George Sommers (sitting vpon the poepe of the ship,) where he sate three dayes and three nights together, without meales meate, and little or no sleepe, coursing the shippe to keepe her as vpriight as he could, (for otherwise shee must needs instantly haue foundred) most wishedly happily discryed land; whereupon he most comfortably encouraged the company to follow their pumping, and by no meanes to cea-e bayling out of the water with their buckets, baricos, and kettles; whereby they were so ouer wearied, and their spirits so spent with long fasting, and continuance of their labour, that for the most part they were fallen asleepe in corners, and wheresoeuer they chanced first to sit or lie: but hearing news of land, wherewith they grew to bee somewhat reuiued, being carried with wil and desire beyond their strength, euery man busled vp, and gathered his strength and feeble spirits together, to performe as much as their weake force would permit him; through which weake meanes, it pleased God to worke so strongly as the water was staide for that little time, (which as we all much feared, was the last period of our breathing) and the ship kept from present sinking, when it pleased God to send her within halfe an English mile of that land that Sir George Sommers had not long before discryed: which were the Ilandes of the

Barmudas. And there neither did our ship sincke, but more fortunately in so great a misfortune, fell in betwene two rockes, where shee was fast lodged and locked, for further budging: whereby we gayned, not only sufficient time, with the present helpe of our boate, and skiffe, safely to set, and conuey our men ashore (which were one hundred and fifty in number) but afterwards had time and leasure to saue some good part of our goodes and prouision, which the water had not spoyled, with all the tackling of the ship, and much of the yron about her, which were necessities not a little auailable, for the building and furnishing of a new ship and pinnis, which we made there, for the transporting and carrying of vs to Virginia. But our deliury was not more strange in falling so opportunely, and happily vpon the land, as our feeding and preservation, was beyond our hopes, and all mens expectations most admirable. For the llands of the Barmudas, as euery man knoweth that hath heard or read of them, were neuer inhabited by any Christian or heathen people, but euer esteemed, and reputed, a most prodigious and enchanted place, affording nothing but gusts, stormes, and foule weather; which made euery Nauigator and Mariner to auoide the, as Scylla and Charibdis; or as they would shunne the Deuill himselfe; and no man was euer heard, to make for the place, but as against their wils, they haue by stormes and dangerousnesse of the rocks, lying seauen leagues into the sea, suffered shipwracke; yet did we finde there the ayre so temperate and the Country so abundantly fruitful of all fit necessities, for the sustentation and preservation of mans life, that most in a manner of all our prouisions of bread, beare, and victuall, being quite spoyled, in lying long drowned in salt water, notwithstanding we were there for the space of nine monethes (few dayes ouer or vnder) not only well refreshed, comforted, and with good satiety contented, but of the abundance thereof, provided vs some reasonable quantity and proportion of prouision, to carry vs for Virginia, and to maintaine ourselues, and that company we found there, to the great releefe of them, as it fell out in their so great extremities, and in respect of the shortnesse of time, vntill it pleased God, that by my Lords comming thither, their store was better supplied, and greater, and better prouisions wee might haue made, if we had had better meanes for the storing and transportation thereof. Wherefore my opinion sincerely of this Island is, that whereas it hath bene, and is still accounted, the most dangerous, infortunate, and most forlorne place of the world, it is in truth the richest, healthfullest, and pleasing land, (the quantity and bignesse thereof considered) and meerely naturall, as euer set foote vpon: the particular profits and benefits whereof, shal be more especially inserted, and hereunto annexed, which euery man to his owne priuate knowledge, that was there, can auouch and iustifie for a truth. Vpon the eight and twentieth day of Iuly 1609. (after the extremity of the storme was something qualified) we fell vpon the shore at the Barmudas; where after our generall Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Sommers, and Captaine Newport, had by their prouident carefulnesse landed all their men, and so much of the goods, and prouisions out of the ship, as was not vtterly spoyled, euery man disposed and applyed himselfe, to search for, and to seeke out such releefe and sustentation, as the Country afforded: and Sir George Sommers, a man inured to extremities, (and knowing what thereunto belonged) was in this seruice, neither idle nor backward, but presently by his careful industry, went and found out sufficient, of many kind of fishes, and so plentifull thereof, that in halfe an houre, he tooke so many great fishes with hookes, as did suffice the whole company one day. And fish is there so abundant, that if a man steppe into the water, they will come round about him; so that men were faine to get out for feare of byting. These fishes are very fat and sweete, and of that proportion and bignesse, that three of them will conveniently lade two men: those we called rock fish. Besides there are such abundance of mullets that with a seane might be taken at one draught one thousand at the least, and infinite store of pilchards, with diuers kindes of great fishes, the names of them vnkowne to me: of crayfishes very great ones, and so great store as that there hath bene taken in one night with making lights, euen sufficient to feede the whole company a day. The Country affordeth great abundance of Hogs, as that there hath bene taken by Sir George Sommers, who was the first that hunted for them, to
the

in so great a misfortune, for further budging: of our boate, and hundred and fifty in of our goodes and ship, and much of the building and furnishing and carrying of vs fortunely, and happily our hopes, and all mudas, as every man by any Christian or is and enchanted place, de every Nauigator and ne the Deuill himselfe; their wils, they haue by the sea, suffered ship-country so abundantly of mans life, that most being quite spoyled, in for the space of nine comforted, and with good reasonable quantity and mine ourselues, and that it in their so great extre- God, that by my Lords and better prouisions wee transportation thereof. it hath bene, and is still ice of the world, it is in d bignes thereof consi- lar profits and benefits which euery man to his for a truth. Vpon the the storme was something r our generall Sir Thomas ir prouident carefulnesse out of the ship, as was not ch for, and to seeke out George Sommers, a man as in this seruice, neither nd found out sufficient, of re, he tooke so many great and fish is there so abund- ut him; so that men were sweete, and of that pro- two men: those we called th a seane might be taken elchards, with diuers kindes s very great ones, and so ing lights, euen sufficient boundance of Hogs, as that t that hunted for them, to the

the number of two and thirty at one time, which he brought to the company in a boate, built by his owne hands. There is fowle in great number vpon the Ilands, where they breed, that there hath bene taken in two or three houres, a thousand at the least; the bird being of the bignes of a good Pidgeon, and layeth egges as bigge as Hen egges vpon the sand, where they come and lay them dayly, although men sit downe amongst them; that there hath bene taken vp in one morning, by Sir Thomas Gates men, one thousand of egges: and Sir George Sommers men, comming a little distance of time after them, haue stayed there whilst they came and layed their egges amongst them, that they brought away as many more with them; with many young birds very fat and sweet. Another Sea fowle there is that lyeth in little holes in the ground, like vnto a cony-hole, and are in great numbers, exceeding good meate, very fat and sweet (those we had in the winter) and their egges are white, and of that bignes, that they are not to be knowne from Hen egges. The other birds egges are speckled, and of a different colour: there are also great store and plenty of Herons, and those so familiar and tame, that wee beate them downe from the trees with stones and stauies, but such were young Herons: besides many White Herons, without so much as a blacke or gray feather on them; with other small birds so tame and gentle, that a man walking in the woods with a stick, and whistling to them, they wil come and gaze on you, so neare that you may strike and kill many of them with your stick; and with singing and hallowing you may doe the like. There are also great store of Tortoses, (which some call Turtles) and those so great, that I haue seene a bushel of egges in one of their bellies, which are sweeter then any Henne egge: and the Tortose it selfe, is all very good meate, and yeeldeth great store of oyle, which is as sweete as any butter; and one of them will suffice fifty men a meale, at the least: and of these hath bene taken great store, with two boates, at the least forty in one day. The Country yeeldeth diuers fruits, as prickled pears, great abundance, which continue greene vpon the trees all the yeare; also great plenty of Mulberries, white and red: and on the same are great store of silke-wormes, which yeeld tods of silke, both white and yellow, being some coarse, and some fine. And there is a tree called a Palmito tree, which hath a very sweet berry, vpon which the hogs doe most feede; but our men finding the sweetnesse of them, did willingly share with the hogs for them, they being very pleasant and wholesome, which made them carelesse almost of any bread with their meate; which occasioned vs to carry in a manner all that store of flower and meale, we did or could saue for Virginia. The head of the Palmito tree is very good meate, either raw or sodden, it yeeldeth a head which waigheth about twenty pound, and is farre better meate, then any cabbidge. There are an infinite number of Cedar trees, (the fairest I thinke in the world) and those bring forth a very sweet berry and wholesome to eate. The Country (for as much as I could find my self, or heare by others) affords no venomous creature or so much as a Rat or Mouse, or any other thing vnwholsome. There is great store of Pearle, and some of them very faire, round and Orientall; and you shall finde at least one hundred seede of Pearle in one Oyster; there hath bene likewise found, some good quantity of Amber Greece, and that of the best sort. There are also great plenty of Whales, which I conceaue are very easie to be killed, for they come so vsually, and ordinarily to the shore, that we heard them oftentimes in the night a bed; and haue seene many of them neare the shore, in the day time. There was borne vpon the Bermudas, at the time of our being there two children, the one a man child, there baptised, by the name of Bermudas: and a woman child, baptised by the name of Bermuda: as also there was a marriage betwene two English people vpon that Iland. This Iland, I meane the mayne Iland, with all the broken Ilandes adiacent, are made in the forme of a half Moone, but a little more rounder and diuided into many broken Ilands, and there are many good harbours in it, but wee could finde one especiall place to goe in, or rather to goe out from it, which was not altogether free from some danger, and that lyeth on the South-east side, where there is three fathoms water, at the entrance therof, but within sixe, seauen, or eight fathoms at the least, where you may safely lie land-locked, from the danger of all winds and weathers, and more to the trees. The coming into it, is so narrow and straight betwene the rocks, as that it will with small store of munition be fortified, and easily defended, with all aduantage the place affords, against the forces of the Potentest King





Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**



King of Europe. There are also plenty of Haukes, and very good Tobacco, as I thinke, which through forgetfulnesse, I had almost omitted: now hauing finished and rigged our ship, and pinnis, the one called the Deliuérance, the pinnis the Patience, wee prepared and made our selues ready, to ship for Virginia, hauing powdred some store of hogs flesh, for prouision thither, and the company thereof, for some reasonable time: but were compelled to make salt there for the same purpose, for all our salt was spent and spoyled, before wee recovered the shore. Wee carryed with vs also a good portion of Tortose oyle, which either for frying or baking did vs very great pleasure, it being very sweete, nourishing, and wholesome: the greatest defects we found there, was tarre and pitch for our ship, and pinnis, in steede whereof wee were forced to make lime there of a hard kinde of stone, and vse it: which for the present occasion and necessity, with some wax we found cast vp by the Sea, from some shipwracke, serued the turne to pay the seames of the pinnis Sir George Sommers built, for which hee had neither pitch nor tarre: so that God in the supplying of all our wants, beyond all measure, shewed himselfe still mercifull vnto vs, that we might accomplish our intended voyage to Virginia, for which I confidently hope, hee doth yet reserue a blessing in store, and to the which I presume, euery honest and religious heart will readily giue their amen. When all thinges were made ready, and commodiously fitted, the winde comming faire, wee set saile and put off from the Bermudas, the tenth day of May, in the yeare 1610. and arriued at Iames towne in Virginia, the foure and twentieth day of the same Moneth: where wee found some threescore persons liuing. And being then some three weeks or thereabouts passed, & not hearing of anye supply, it was thought fitting by a generall consent, to vse the best meanes for the preservation of all those people that were liuing, being all in number two hundred persons. And so vpon the eight of Iune one thousand six hundred and ten, wee vnbarkeed at Iames Towne: not hauing aboue fourteene dayes victaile, and so were determined to direct our course for New-found-land, there to refresh vs, and supply our selues with victaile, to bring vs home; but it pleased God to dispose otherwise of vs, and to giue vs better meanes. For being all of vs shipped in foure pinnices, and departed from the towne, almost downe half the Riuer, wee met my Lord De La Warre comming vp with three ships, well furnished with victaile, which reuiued all the company, and gaue them great content. And after some few dayes, my Lord vnderstanding of the great plenty of hogges and fish, was at the Bermudas, and the necessity of them in Virginia, was desirous to send thither, to supply himselfe with those things, for the better comforting of his men, and the plantation of the Country. Whereupon Sir George Sommers being a man best acquainted with the place, and being willing to doe seruice vnto his Prince and Country: without any respect of his owne priuate gaine: And being of threescore yeares of age at the least, out of his worthy and valiant minde, offered himselfe to vndertake to performe with Gods help that dangerous voyage for the Bermudas, for the better releefe and comfort of the people in Virginia, and for the better plantation of it, which offer my Lord De La Warre, very willingly and thankfully accepted: and so vpon the nineteenth of Iune, Sir George Sommers imbarkeed himself at Iames towne in a small barge of thirty tonne, or thereabout, that he built at the Bermudas: wherein he laboured from morning vntill night, as duellie as any workeman doth labour for wages, and built her all with Cedar, with little or no yron worke at all: hauing in her but one boulte, which was in the Kilson: notwithstanding thanks be to God, shee brought vs in safety to Virginia, and so I trust he will protect him, and send him well backe againe, to his hearts desire, and the great comfort of all the company there.

The Bermudas lyeth in the height of two and thirty degrees and a halfe, of Northerly latitude, Virginia bearing directly from it, West, North West, two hundred and thirty leagues.

FINIS.

ery of the Barmudas.

Tobacco, as I thinke,
inished and rigged our
nce, wee prepared and
store of hogs flesh, for
: but were compelled
nd spoyled, before wee
of Tortose oyle, which
sweete, nourishing, and
itch for our ship, and
ard kinde of stone, and
vax we found cast vp by
seames of the pinnis Sir
arre: so that God in the
still mercifull vnto vs,
which I confidently hope,
e, euery honest and re-
made ready, and com-
f from the Barmudas, the
in Virginia, the foure and
reescore persons liuing.
aring of anye supply, it
es for the preseruatiō of
ndred persons. And so
nbarked at Iames Towne:
l to direct our course for
with victaile, to bring vs
vs better meanes. For
the towne, almost downe
ith three ships, well fur-
hem great content. And
y of hogges and fish, was
esirous to send thither, to
s men, and the plantation
best acquainted with the
ntry: without any respect
ge at the least, out of his
forme with Gods help that
d comfort of the people in
d De La Warre, very will-
lune, Sir George Sommers
ne, or thereabout, that he
ill night, as duellie as any
ar, with little or no yron
e Kilson: notwithstanding
I trust he will protect him,
he great comfort of all the

es and a halfe, of Northerly
st, two hundred and thirty

A

TRUE COPPIE

OF A

DISCOURSE WRITTEN BY A GENTLEMAN,

EMPLOYED IN THE LATE VOYAGE

OF

SPAINE AND PORTINGALE:

SENT TO HIS PARTICULAR FRIEND,

AND BY HIM PUBLISHED,

FOR THE BETTER SATISFACTION OF ALL SUCH,

AS HAUING BEEN SEDUCED BY PARTICULAR REPORT,

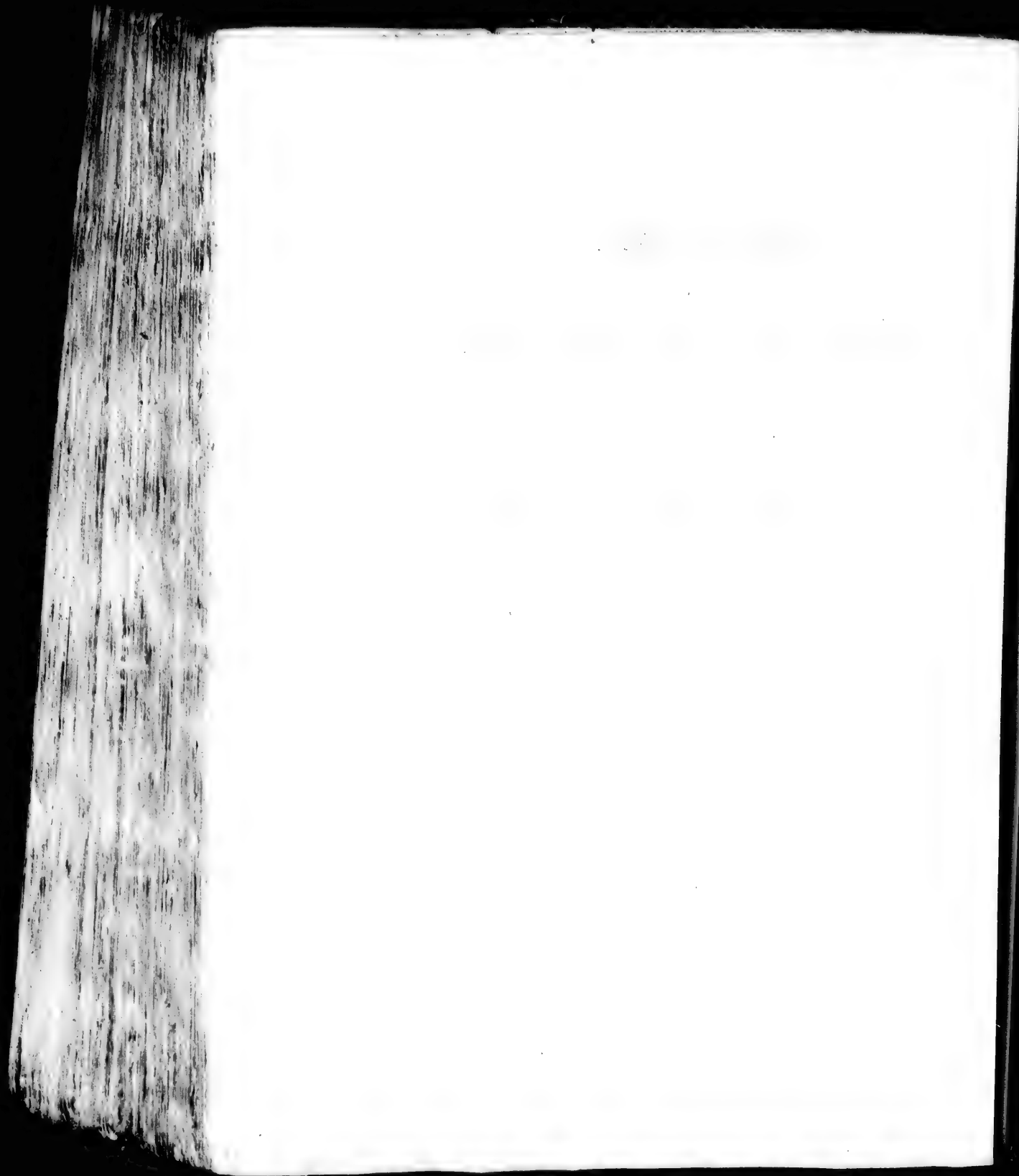
HAUE ENTRED INTO CONCEIPTS TENDING TO THE DISCREDIT OF THE ENTERPRISE,

AND ACTORS OF THE SAME.

At London

PRINTED FOR THOMAS WOODCOCK DWELLING IN PAULES CHURCHYARD, AT THE
SIGNE OF THE BLACKE BEARE.

1589.



TO THE READER.

SOME holding opinion, that it is onely proper to men of learning (whose Arte may grace their dooings) to write of matter worthie to be committed to the view of future Ages, may iudge the publication of such Discourses as are contained in this Pamphlet, to be an aduventure too great for a professed Souldier to vndertake: but I, more respecting the absolute trueth of the matter, than the faire shew that might be set thereon; and preferring the high reputation of the Actors in this Iourney before the request of my particular friend, haue presumed to present vnto you a report of the late Voyage into Spaine and Portingall, sent vnto me almost 4. moneths sithence frō a Gentleman my verie nere friend employed in the same; who, as it appeareth in his obseruations, hath aduisedlie seene into euerie action thereof: and because I haue often conferred with manie that were in the same Iourney, verie nere vpon euerie particular of his relation, and finde as much confirmed as I haue receiued, I presume to deliuer it vnto you for true & exact. Howbeit, forasmuch as it came vnto my hands with his earnest request to reserue it to my selfe, I had almost consented thereunto; had not the desire I haue to reconcile the contrarietie of opinions that be held of that action, & to make it known what honour the cause hath laid vpon our whole Nation, moued me to publish the same: whereof sith there may growe a greater benefit in publique, (for that manie shall partake thereof) than the pleasure can be to him in smothering the labors he hath bestowed in setting downe the Discourse, I doubt not but he esteeming a cōmon good before his priuate fancie, will pardon me herein. In the behalfe of whom, I beseech you to whose viewe and reading the same is offered, not so curioslie to looke vpon the forme, as vpon the matter; which I present vnto you as he sent it, naked and vnpolished. And you that were companions with him of the Iourney, if anie of you may thinke your selues not fully satisfied, in the report of your deseruings, let me intreate you to excuse him, in that he indeuouring to write thereof briefly for my particular vnderstanding, did onely take notice of them who cōmaunded the seruices in chiefe, as being of greatest marke, and lay the blame vpon me, who can by no meanes auoyd it: sauing that from the fault I haue committed, (if it be a fault) I hope there may some good proceed. It hath satisfied me in many things, whereof I beeing ignorant, was led into an erronious concept of the matter and of the persons: and I hope it shall both confirme others who maie remaine doubtfull of either; and reforme them that hauing been seduced, are become sectaries agaynst the same. I will therefore commend the man and matter to your friendly censure, forbearing to notifie his name, least I might increase mine offence against him; & be namelesse my selfe for other good considerations: which I leaue friendly Reader to thy best construction.



THE
TRUE COPIE
OF
A LETTER SENT FROM A GENTLEMAN,
WHO WAS IN ALL THE SERVICES THAT WERE IN THE LATE JOURNEY
OF
SPAINE AND PORTINGALL,
TO A FRIEND OF HIS.

Although the desire of aduancing my reputation, caused me to withstand the manie perswasions you vsed, to hold me at home, and the pursute of honorable actions drew me (contrarie to your expectation) to neglect that aduise, which in loue I know you gaue me: yet in respect of the manie assurances you haue yeelded me of your kindest friendship, I cannot suspect that you wil either loue or esteeme me the lesse, at this my returne: and therefore will not omit anie occasion which may make me appeare thankfull, or discharge anie part of that dutie I owe you; which now is none other, than to offer you a true discourse how these warres of Spaine and Portingall haue passed since our going out of England the xviii. of Aprill, till our returne which was the first of Iuly. Wherein I wil (vnder your fauourable pardon) for your further satisfaction, as well make relation of those reasons which confirmed me in my purpose of going abroad, as of these accidents which haue happened during our abode there; thereby hoping to perswade you, that no light fancie did draw me from the fruition of your dearest friendship, but an earnest desire by following the warres, to make my selfe more worthie of the same.

Having therefore determinately purposed to put on this habit of a Souldiour, I grewe doubtfull whether to imploy my time in the warres of the Lowe Countreyes, which are in auxiliarie manner mainteined by her Maiestie; or to follow the fortune of this voyage, which was an aduventure of her and manie honorable personages, in reuenge of vnsupportable wrongs offered vnto the estate of our Countrey by the Castilian King: in arguing whereof, I finde that by how much the Challenger is reputed before the defendant, by so much is this iorney to be preferred before those defensiuue warres, for had the Duke of Parma his turne been to defend, as it was his good fortune to inuade, from whence could haue proceeded that glorious honor which these late warres haue laid vppon him, or what could haue been

said more of him, than of a Respondent (though neuer so valiant) in a priuate Duell: Euen, that he hath done no more than by his honour he was tied vnto. For the gaine of one Towne or anie small defeat giueth more renowne to the Assailant, than the defence of a Countrey, or the withstanding of twentie encoûters can yeeld any man who is bound by his place to gard the same: whereof as well the particulers of our age, especially in the Spaniard, as the reports of former histories may assure vs, which haue still laid the fame of all warres vpon the Inuador. And do not ours in these daies liue obscured in Flanders, either not hauing wherewithall to manage anie warre, or not putting on armes, but to defend themselves when the Enemie shall procure them? Whereas in this short time of our Aduenture, wee haue wonne a Towne by escalade, battred and assaulted another, ouerthrowen a mightie Princes power in the field, landed our Armie in three seuerall places of his Kingdome, marched seauen daies in the hart of his Countrey, lyen three nights in the Suburbes of his principall Citie, beaten his forces into the gates thereof, and possessed two of his frontier forts, as shall in discourse thereof more particularly appeare: whereby I conclude, that going with an Inuadour, and in such an action as euerie daie giueth new experience, I haue much to vaunt of, that my fortune did rather carry me thither, than into the warres of Flanders. Notwithstanding the vehement perswasions you vsed with me to the contrarie, the ground whereof sithence you receiued them from others, you must giue me leaue to acquaint you with the error you were lead into by them; who labouring to bring the world into an opinion, that it stood more with the safetie of our Estate to bend all our forces against the Prince of Parma, than to followe this action, by looking into the true effects of this Iourney, will iudicially conuince themselves of mistaking the matter. For, may the Conquest of these Countreies against the Prince of Parma, bee thought more easie for vs alone now, than the defence of them was xi. yeares agoe, with the men and money of the Queene of England? the power of the Monsieur of France? the assistance of the principall States of Germanie? and the Nobilitie of their owne Countrey: Could not an armie of more than 20000. horse and almost 30000. foote, beate Iohn de Austria out of the Countrey, who was possessed of a verie few frontier Townes: and shall it now be vpon her Maiesties shoulders to remoue so mightie an Enemie, who hath left vs but 3. whole parts of 17. vncôquered? It is not a Iourney of a few months, nor an auxiliarie warre of few yeres that can damnishe the King of Spaine in those places, where we shall meete at euerie 8. or 10. miles end with a Towne, which will cost more the winning, than will yearly pay 4. or 5000. mens wages, where all the Countrey is quatered by Riuers, which haue no passage vnfortified: and where most of the best Souldiers of Christendome that be on our aduerse partie be in pencion. But our Armie which hath not cost her Maiestie much about the third part of one yeares expences in the Lowe Countries, hath alreadie spoyled a great part of the prouision he had made at the Groyne of all sorts, for a newe voyage into England; burnt 3. of his ships, whereof one was the second in the last yeares expedition, taken from him about 150. pieces of good artillarie, cut off more than 60 bulkes, and 20. French ships well manned, fit & readie to serue him for men of warre against vs, laden for his store with corne, victuals, masts, cables, and other merchandizes; slaine and taken the principall men of warre hee had in Galitia; made Don Pedro Enriques de Gusmañ, Conde de Fuentes, Generall of his forces in Portingall, shamefullie runne at Penicha; laide along of his best Commanders in Lisbone: and by these fewe aduentures discovered how easelie her Maiestie may without any great aduenture in short time pull the Tirant of the World vpon his knees, as well by the disquieting his usurpation of Portingall as without difficultie in keeping the commoditie of his Indies from him, by sending an armie so accomplished, as may not bee subject to those extremities which we haue endured: except he draw for those defences, his forces out of the Lowe Countries and dis-furnish his garisons of Naples and Milan, which with safetie of those places he may not doo. And yet by this meane shall rather be enforced thereunto, than by any force that can be vsed there against him: Wherefore I directly conclude, that this proceeding is the most safe and necessarie way to be held against him; and therefore more importing, than the warre in the Lowe Countries.

Yet

a private Duell: Euen, for the gaine of one than the defence of a n who is bound by his specially in the Spaniard, the fame of all warres in Flanders, either not out to defend themselves of our Adventure, wee querthrowen a mightie ces of his Kingdome, in the Suburbes of his sed two of his frontier hereby I conclude, that new experience, I haue into the warres of Flan- to the contrarie, the ue me leaue to acquaint bring the world into an our forces against the e effects of this Iourney, may the Conquest of e for vs alone now, than the Queene of England? all States of Germanie? more than 20000. horse who was possessed of a s shoulders to remoue so mered? It is not a Iour- can damnfie the King of files end with a Towne, mens wages, where all died: and where most of e in pencion. But our f one yeares expences in ion he had made at the s ships, whereof one was pieces of good Artillarie, t & readie to serue him masts, cables, and other ad in Galitia; made Don ces in Portingall, shame- Lisbone: and by these any great aduenture in the disquieting his vsurp- of his Indies from him, ose extremities which we the Lowe Countries and hose places he may not an by any force that can is proceeding is the most mporting, than the warre

Yet

Yet hath the Iourney (I know) been much disliked by some, who either thinking too worthy of the Spaniards valour, too indifferently of his purposes against vs, or too vnworthy of them that vnderooke this Iourney against him, did thinke it a thing dangerous to encounter the Spaniard at his owne home, a thing needlesse to proceede by inuasion against him, a thing of too great moment for two subiects of their qualitie to vndertake. And therefore did not so aduance the beginnings as though they hoped for any good successe thereof.

The chaunces of warres bee things most vncertaine: for what people soeuer vndertake them, they are indeede but as chastizements appointed by God for the one side or the other, for which purpose it hath pleased him to giue some victories to the Spaniards of late yeares against some whome he had in purpose to ruine. But if we consider what warres they be that haue made their name so terrible, we shall finde them to haue been none other, than against the barbarous Moores, the naked Indians, and the vnarmed Nederlanders: whose yeelding rather to the name than act of the Spaniards, hath put them into such a conceipt of their mightines, as they haue considerably vndertaken the conquest of our Monarchie, consisting of a people vnited and alwaies held sufficiently warlike: against whom what successe their inuincible Armie had the last yeare, as our verie children can witnes, so I doubt not but this voyage hath sufficiently made knowne, what they are euen vpon their owne dounge-hill: which had it been set out in such sort as it was agreed vpon by their first demaund, it might haue made our Nation the most glorious people of the world. For hath not the want of 8. of the 12. peeces of Artillerie which was promised vnto the Adventure, lost her Maiestie the possession of the Groyne and many other places, as hereafter shal appeare: whose defencible Rampiers were greater than our batterie (such as it was) cold force: and therefore were left vnattempted.

It was also resolved to haue sent 600. English horse of the Lowe Countries, whereof we had not one, notwithstanding the great charges expended in their transportation hither: and that may the Armie assembled at Puente de Burgos thanke God of, as well as the forces of Portingall: who foreranne vs sixe daies together: Did wee not want seauen of ʒ thirteene old Companies, we should haue had from thence: foure of the ten Dutch Companies: & sixe of their men of warre for the Sea, from the Hollanders: which I may iustly say we wanted, in that we might haue had so many good souldiers, so many good shippes, and so many able bodies more than we had:

Did there not, vpon the first thinking of the Iourney diuers gallant Courtiers put in their names for aduenturers to the summe of 1000l. who seeing it went forward in good earnest, aduised themselves better, and laid the want of so much money vpon the Iourney?

Was there not moreouer a round summe of the aduenture spent in leuieng, furnishing, and mainteyning three moneths 1500. men for the seruice of Berghen: with which Companies the Mutinies of Ostend, was suppressed: a seruice of no small moment?

What miserie the detracting of the time of our setting out, which should haue been the first of Februarie, did lay vpon vs, too many can witnesse: and what extremitie the want of that monethes victuals which we did eate, during the moneth wee lay at Plimoth for a winde, might haue driuen vs vnto, no man can doubt of, that knoweth what men doo liue by, had not God giuen vs in the end a more prosperous winde and shorter passage into Galitia, then hath been often seen; where our owne force and fortune recalled vs largely: of which crosse windes that held vs two daies after our going out, the Generalls being wearie, thrust to Sea in the same, wisely choosing rather to attend the change thereof there; than by being in harborough to loose any part of the better when it should come by hauing their men on shoare: in which two daies 25. of our companies shipped in parte of the flecte, were scattered from vs, either not being able or willing to double Vshant.

These burthens laid vpon our Generalls before their going out, they haue patientlie endured, and I thinke they haue thereby much enlarged their honor: for hauing done thus much with the want of our Artillarie, 600. horse, 3000. foote, 20000l. of their aduenture,

and

and one moneths victualls of their proportion, what may bee coniectured they would haue done with their full compliment :

For the losse of our men at Sea, since wee can lay it on none but the will of GOD, what can be saide more, than that it is his pleasure, to turne all those impediments to the honour of them, against whome they were intended : and he will still shew himselfe the God of hoasts in doing great things by them, whome many haue sought to obscure : who if they had let the action fall at the height thereof in respect of those defects, which were such especially for the seruice at land, as would haue made a mightie subiect stoope vnder them ; I doe not see, how any man could iustly haue laide any reproach vpon him who commanded the same : but rather haue lamented the iniquitie of this time, wherein men whom forrein Countries haue for their conduct in seruice worthily esteemed of, should not only in their own Countrey not be seconded in their honourable endeours, but mightily hindred, euen to the impairing of their owne estates, which most willingly they haue aduentured for the good of their Countries : whose worth I will not valew by my report, least I should seeme guiltie of flatterie, (which my soule abhorreth) and yet come short in the true measure of their praise. Onely for your instruction, against them who had almost seduced you from the true opinion you ought to holde of such men, you shall vnderstand that Generall Norris from his booke was trained vp in the warres of the Admirall of France : and in verie young yeares had charge of men vnder the Erle of Essex in Ireland : which with what commendations he then discharged, I leaue to the reporte of them who obserued those seruices. Vpon the breach betwixt Don Iohn and the States, he was made Colonell Generall of all the English forces there present, or to come, which he continued two yeares : hee was then made Marshall of the field, vnder Conte Hohenlo : and after that, Generall of the armie in Frisland : at his coming home in the time of Monsiers gouernement in Flanders, hee was made Lord President of Monster in Ireland : which he yet holdeth, from whence within one yeare he was sent for, and sent Generall of the English forces her Maiestie then lent to the Lowe Countries : which hee held till the Earle of Leicesters going ouer. And hee was made Marshall of the field in England, the enemye being vpon our Coast, and when it was expected the Crowne of England should haue been tried by battaile. All which places of commandement which neuer any English-man successiue attained vnto in foraine Warres, and the high places her Maiestie hath thought him worthie of, may suffice to perswade you, that he was not altogether vnlikely to discharge that which he vndertooke.

What fame Generall Drake hath gotten by his iourney about the world, by his aduentures to the West Indies : and the scourges he hath laid vpon the Spanish Nation, I leaue to the Sutherne parts to speak of, and referre you to the booke extant in our own language treating of the same ; and beseech you, considering the waightie matters they haue in all the course of their liues with wonderfull reputation managed, that you will esteeme them not well informed of their proceedings, that thinke them insufficient to passe through that which they vndertooke, especiallie hauing gone thus farre in the viewe of the world, through so many incombrances, and disappointed of those agreements which led them the rather to vndertake the seruice. But it may be you will thinke me herein either too much opinionated of the Voiage, or conceited of the Comanders, that labouring thus earnestly to aduance the opinion of them both, haue not so much as touched any part of the misorders, weakenes and wants that haue been amongst vs, whereof, they that returned did plentifullie report : True it is, I haue conceiued a great opinion of the Iourney, and doo thinke honorably of the Commanders : for we finde in greatest antiquities, that many Commanders haue bene receiued home with triumph for lesse merite, and that our owne Countrey hath honoured men heretofore with admiration, for aduentures vnequall to this : it might therefore in those daies haue seemed superfluous to extend any mans commendations by particuler remembrances, for that then all men were readie to giue euerie man his due. But I holde it most necessarie in these daies sithence euerie vertue findeth her direct opposit, and actions worthy of all memory, are in danger to be enuiously obscured to denounce

tured they would haue

but the will of GOD, those impediments to the still shew himselfe the due sought to obscure: of those defects, which mightie subiect stooped any reproach vpon him of this time, wherein viliy esteemed of, should endeuours, but mightily at willingly they haue not vaued by my report, and yet come short in at them who had almost en, you shall vnderstand the Admirall of France: Essex in Ireland: which of them who obserued, he was made Colonell which he continued two tohenlo: and after that, one of Monsiers gouerne- Ireland: which he yet Generall of the English held till the Earle of Leigland, the enimie being should haue been tried any English-man successe- aiestie hath thought him her vnlikely to discharge

world, by his aduentures sh Nation, I leaue to the ant in our own language e matters they haue in all at you will esteeme them ent to passe through that the viewe of the world, ments which led them the e herein either too much bouring thus earnestly to any part of the misorders, at returned did plentifully ey, and doo thinke honor- that many Commanders t our owne Countrey hath ill to this: it might there- mans commendations by giue euerie man his due. vertue findeth her direct be enuiously obscured to denounce

denounce the praises of the action, and actors to the full, but yet no further than with sinceritie of truth, and not without grieving at the iniurie of this time, wherein is enforced a necessitie of Apologies for those mē, & matters, which all former times were accustomed to entertaine with the greatest applause that might be. But to answer the reports which haue been giuen out in reproch of the actors & action by such as were in the same. Let no man thinke otherwise, but, that they who fearing the casuall accidents of warre had any purpose of retourning, did first aduise of some occasion that should moue them thereunto: and hauing found any what so euer did thinke it sufficiently iust, in respect of the earnest desire they had to seek out matter that might colour their comming home.

Of these there were some, who hauing noted the late Flemmish warres, did finde that many young men haue gone ouer and safely returned Soldiers within fewe Moneths, in hauing learned some words of Art, vsed in the warres, and thought after that good example to spend like time amongst vs: which being expired they began to quarrell at the great Mortallitie that was amongst vs:

The neglect of discipline in the Armie, for that men were suffered to be drunck with the plentie of Wines.

The scarcetie of Surgions.

The want of Carriages for the hurt and sicke: and the penurie of victualls in the Campe.

Thereupon diuining that there would be no good done. And that therefore they could be content to lose their time, and aduenture to returne home againe.

These men haue either conceiued well of their owne wits (who by obseruing the passages of the warre: were become sufficient Soldiers in these fewe weekes) and did long to be at home, where their discourses might be wondred at, or missing of their Portugues and Milrayes they dreamed on in Portingall, would rather returne to their former manner of life, than attend the end of the Iourney. For seeing that one hazard brought on another: and that though one escaped the bullet this day it might light vpon him to morow, the next day, or any day; & that the warre was not confined to any one place, but that euerie place brought forth new enemies, were glad to see some of the poore Soldiers fall sicke, that they fearing to be infected by them might iustly desire to goe home.

The sicknes I confesse was great, because any is too much. But hath it been greater than is ordinarie amongst Englishmen at their first entrance into the warres, whether soeuer they goe to want the fulnes of their flesh pots? Haue not ours decayed at al times in France, with eating young fruites and drinking new wines? haue they not abundantly perished in the Lowe Countreies with cold, and rawnes of the Ayre, euen in their Garrisons? haue there not more died in London in sixe Moneths of the Plague, than double our Armie being at the strongest? And could the Spanish Armie the last yeare (who had all prouisions that could bee thought on for an Armie, and tooke the fittest season in the yeare for our Climate) auoide sicknes amongst their Soldiers? May it then be thought that ours could escape there, where they found inordinate heat of weather, and hot wines to distemper them withal? But can it bee, that wee haue lost so many as the common sort perswade themselves we haue? It hath been proued by strickt examinations of our musters, that wee were neuer in our fulnes before our going from Plymoth 11000. Soldiers, nor about 2500. Marriners. It is also euident that there returned about 6000. of all sorts, as appeareth by the seuerall pay- ments made to them since our comming home. And I haue truly shewed you that of these number verie neare 3000. forsooke the Armie at the Sea, whereof some passed into France and the rest returned home. So as wee neuer being 13000. in all, and hauing brought home about 6000. with vs, you may see how the world hath been seduced, in beleeuing that wee haue lost 16000. men by sicknes.

To them that haue made question of the gouernement of the warres (litle knowing what appertaineth therunto in that ther were so many drūkards amongst vs) I answer, that in their gouernment of shires & parishes, yea in their verie houtholdes, themselves can hardlie bridle their vassalls from that vice. For we see it a thing almost impossible, at any your faires or publique assemblies to finde any quarter thereof sober, or in your Townes any Alepoles vn- frequented:

Answers to the first.

Answers to the second.

frequented: And we obserue that though any man hauing any disordered persons in their houses, doo locke vp their drinke and set buttlers vpon it, that they will yet either by indirect meanes steale themselves drunke from their Masters tables, or runne abroad to seeke it. If then at home in the eyes of your Iustices, Mayors, Preachers, and Masters, and where they pay for euerie pot they take, they cannot be kept from their liquor: doo they thinke that those base disordered persons whome themselves sent vnto vs, as liuing at home without rule, who hearing of wine do long for it as a dainetie that their purses could neuer reach to in England, & hauing it there without money euē in their houses where they lie & hold their garde they can be kept from being drunke: and once drunk held in any order or tune, except we had for euerie drunckard an officer to attend him. But who be they that haue runne into these disorders: Euen our newest men, our youngest men, and our idlest men, and for the most parte, our sloouely prest men, whome the Iustices (who haue alwaies thought vnworthely of any warre) haue sent out as the scumme and dregges of their Countrey. And those were they, who distempering themselves with these hot wines, haue brought in that sicknes, which hath infected honest men than themselves. But I hope (as in other places) the recouerie of their diseases dooth acquaint their bodies with the ayre of the Countreies where they be; so the remainder of these which haue either recouered, or past without sicknes will prouue most fit for Martiall seruises.

Answers to the
third.

If we haue wanted Surgions, may not this rather be laide vpon the Captaines: who are to prouide for their seuerall Companies, than vpon the Generalls, whose care hath been more generall. And how may it be thought that euerie Captaine, vpon whome most of the charges of raising their Companies was laid as an aduerture could prouide themselves of all things expedient for a warre, (which was alwaies wont to bee maintained by the purse of the Prince:) But admit euerie Captaine had his Surgion: yet were the want of curing neuer the lesse, for our English Surgions (for the most part) bee vnexperienced in hurts that come by shot; because England hath not knowne warres, but of late, from whose ignorance proceeded this discomfort, which I hope will warne those that heereafter goe to the warres to make preparation of such as may better preserue mens liues by their skill.

Answers to the
fourth.

From whence the want of carriages did proceede, you may coniecture in that we marched through a Countrey, neither plentifull of such prouisions, nor willing to parte from any thing: yet this I can assure you that no man of worth was left either hurt or sicke in any place vnprovided for. And that the General commanded all the Mules & Ases, that were laden with any baggage, to be vnburdened and taken to that vse: and the Earle of Essex and hee, for money hired men to carrie men vpon Pikes. And the Earle (whose true vertue and Nobilitie, as it dooth in all other his actions appeare, so did it very much in this) threw his owne stuffe: I meane apparell and necessities which he had there from his owne carriages, and let them be left by the way, to put hurt and sicke men vpon them. Of whose most honorable deseruings: I shall not neede here to make any particular discourse, for that many of his actions doo hereafter giue mee occasion to obserue the same.

Answers to the
fifth.

And the great complaint that these men make for the want of victualls: may well proceed from their not knowing the wants of the warre; for if to feede vpon good beeces, mutton and goats, be to want, they haue indured great scarcitie at land; whereunto they neuer wanted two daies together, wine to mixe with their water, nor bread to eate with their meate (in some quantitie,) except it were such as had vowed rather to starue, than to stirre out of their places for food: of whom we had too manie; who if their time had serued for it, might haue scene in manie Campes in the most plentifull Countreies of the world for victualls, men daylie die with want of bread and drink, in not hauing money to buy, nor the Countrey yeelding anie good or healthfull water in anie place; whereas both Spaine and Portingall, do in euerie place afford the best water that may be, and much more healthfull than any wine for our drinking.

And although some haue most iniuriouslie exclaimed against the small prouisions of victualls for the Sea, rather grounding the same vpon an euill that might haue fallen, than anie that did light vpon vs: yet knowe you this, that there is no man so forgetfull, that will

ordered persons in their will yet either by induriance abroad to seeke it, and Masters, and where liquor: doo they thinke as liuing at home without res could neuer reach to ere they lie & hold their eld in any order or tune, who be they that haue men, and our idlest men, who haue alwaies thought of their Countrey. And res, haue brought in that hope (as in other places) the ayre of the Countreies couered, or past without

the Capitaines: who are to ose care hath been more home most of the charges themselves of all things ned by the purse of the want of curing neuer experienced in hurts that ate, from whose ignorance ereafter goe to the warres by their skill.

ecture in that we marched willing to parte from any either hurt or sicke in any Mules & Ases, that were; and the Earle of Essex the Earle (whose true verdid it very much in this) e had there from his owne en vpon them. Of whose particular discourse, for serue the same.

Victuals: may well proceed vpon good beecus, mutton and; whereunto they neuer lead to eate with their meate starue, than to stirre out of time had serued for it, might the world for victuals, men to buy, nor the Countreith Spaine and Portingall, do ore healthfull than any wine

the small prouisions of victat might haue fallen, than is no man so forgetfull, that will

will say they wanted before they came to the Groyne; that whosouer made not verie large prouisions for himselfe and his company at the Groyne, was verie improuident, where was plentifull store of wine, beefe, and fish, and no man of place prohibited to lye in the same into their shippes; wherewith some did so furnish themselves, as they did not onely in the Iourney supplie the wants of such as were lesse prouident than they, but in their return home made a round commoditie of the remainder thereof. And that at Cascais there came in such store of prouisions into the flecte out of England, as no man that would haue vsed his diligence could haue wanted his due proportion thereof: as might appeare by the Remainder that was returned to Plymouth, and the plentifull sale thereof made out of the Merchants ships after their coming into the Thames.

But lest I should seeme vnto you too studious in confuting idle opinions, or answering friuolous questions, I will addresse me to the true report of those actions that haue passed there: wherein I protest, I will neither hide anie thing that hath happened against vs, nor attribute more to anie man or matter, than the iust occasions thereof leadeth vnto: wherein it shall appeare, that there hath been nothing left vndone by the Generalls which was before our going out vnderaken by them; but that there hath been much more done than was at the first required by Don Antonio, who should haue reaped the fruite of our Aduenture.

After 6. daies sailing from the Coast of England, and the fift after we had the winde good, beeing the 20. of Aprill in the euening, we landed in a Bay more than an English mile from the Groyne, in our long Boates and Pinnyes without anie impeachment: from whence we presently marched toward the Towne, within one halfe mile whereof we were encountered by the Enemy, who being charged by ours, retired into their gates. For that night our Armie lay in the villages, houses and milles next adioyning, and verie neare round about the Towne, into the which the Galeon named Saint Iohn (which was the second of the last yeres flecte against England) one hulk, two smaller ships, and two Gallies which were found in the Rode, did beate vpon vs and vpon our Companies, as they passed too and fro that night and the next morning.

Generall Norris hauing that morning before day viewed the Towne, found the same defended on the land side (for it standeth vpon the neck of an Iland) with a wal vpon a drie ditch: wherupon he resolved to trie in two places what might be done against it by e-calade, and in the meane time aduised for the landing of some Artillarie to beat vpon the ships & Gallies, that they might not annoy vs: which being put in execution, vpon the planting of the first peece the Gallies abandoned the Road, and betooke them to Farroll, not farre from thence: and the Armado being beaten with the artillary & musketers that was placed vpon the next shoare, left her playing vpon vs. The rest of the day was spent in preparing the Companies, & other prouisions readie for the surprise of the Base towne, which was effected in this sort.

There were appointed to be landed 1200. men vnder the conduct of Colonell Huntley, and Capitaine Fenner the Vizeadmirall, on that side next fronting vs by water in long boates and pynnies, wherein were placed manie peeces of artillarie to beate vpon the Towne in their approach: at the corner of the wall which defended the other water side, were appointed Captain Richard Wingfeild Lieutenant Colonell to Generall Norris, and Capitaine Sampson Lieutenant Colonell to Generall Drake to enter at lowe water with 500. men if they found it passable, but if not, to betake them to the escalade, for they had also ladders with them: at the other corner of the wall which ioyned to that side, that was attempted by water, were appoynted Colonell Vmpton, and Colonell Brett with 300. men to enter by escalade. All the Companies which should enter by boate being imbarked before the lowe water: and hauing giuen the Alarme Capitaine Wingfeild and Capitaine Sampson betooke the to the escalade, for they had in commandement to charge all at one instant. The boates landed without anie great difficultie: yet had they some men hurt in y landing. Colonell Bret & Col. Vmpton entred their quarter without encounter, nor finding anie defence made against them: for Captain Hinder being one of them that entred by water, at his first entrie (with some of

his owne Companie whom he trusted well, betooke himselfe to that part of the wall, which he cleered before that they offered to enter, & so still scoured the wall) till he came on the backe of them who maintained the fight against Capteine Wingfeild & Captaine Sampson; who were twice beaten from their ladders, and found verie good resistance, till the enemies perceiuing ours entred in two places at their backs, were driuen to abandon the same. The reason why that place was longer defended than the other, is (as Don Iuan de Luna who commanded the same affirmeth) that the Enemie that day had resolued in counsell how to make their defences, if they were approached: and therein concluded, that if we attempted it by water, that it was not to be helde, and therefore vpon the discouerie of our Boates, they of the high Towne should make a signall by fier frō thence, that al the low Towne might make their Retreat thither: but they, (whither troubled with the sodaine terror we brought vpon them, or forgetting their decree) omitted the fier, which made them gard that place till wee were entred on euerie side.

Then the Towne being entred in three seuerall places with an huge crie, the inhabitants betooke them to the high Towne: which they might with lesse perrill doo: for that ours being strangers ther, knew not the way to cut the of. The rest that were not put to the sword in furie, fled to the Rockes in the Iland, and hid themselves in chambers and sellers, which were euerie day found out in great numbers.

Amongst those Don Iuan de Luna a man of verie good commandement, hauing hidden himselfe in a house, did the next morning yeeld himselfe.

There was also taken that night a Commissarie of vittels called Iuan de Vera, who confessed that there were in the Groyne at our entrie 500. Soldiers being in seauen companies which returned verie weake (as appeareth by the small numbers of them) from the Iourney of England, namely,

Vnder Don Iuan de Luna.

Don Diego Barran, a bastard sonne of the Marques of Santa Cruz; his companie was that night in the Galeon.

Don Antonio de Herera then at Madrid.

Don Pedro de Mauriques Brother to the Earle of Paxides.

Don Ieronimo de Mourray of the order of Saint Iuan, with some of the Towne were in the fort.

Don Gomer de Caramasal then at Madrid.

Capt. Manço, Caucasos de Socas.

Also there came in that day of our landing from Retanzas the companies of Don Iuan de Mosalle, and Don Petro Pourre de Leon.

Also hee saith that there was order giuen for baking of 300000. of Bisquet, some in Bantancas, some in Riudea, and the rest there.

There was then in the Towne 2000. pipes of wine, and an 150. in the ships.

That there was lately come vnto the Marquis Seralba 300000. ducats.

That there was 1000. larrs of oyle.

A great quantitie of beanes, pease, wheate, and fish.

That there was 3000. quintells of beefe.

And that not 20. dayes before there came in three Barques laden with match and harquebuses.

Some others also found fauour to bee taken prisoners, but the rest falling into the hands of the common Soldiers, had their throates cut: to the number of 500. as I coniecture first and last after wee had entred the Towne; and in the enterie thereof, there was found euerie celler full of Wine, whereon our men by inordinate drinking, both grewe themselves for the present senceles of the danger of the shot of the Towne, which hurt many of them being drunke, and tooke, the first ground of their sicknes, for of such was our first and chiefest mortalitie. There was also abundant store of victualls, salt and all kinde of prouision for shipping and the warre: which was confessed by the sayd Commissarie of victualls taken there to be the beginning of a Magasin of all sorts of prouision for a new Voiage into

England:

The late Voyage of

part of the wall, which
the wall) till he came on
feild & Captaine Samp-
l resistance, till the ene-
men to abandon the same.
Don Iuan de Luna who
blued in councel how to
led, that if we attempted
discouerie of our Boates,
at al the low Towne might
adaine terror we brought
ade them gard that place

ge crie, the inhabitants
errill doo: for that ours
that were not put to the
in chambers and sellers,

ndement, hauing hidden

Iuan de Vera, who con-
ing in seauen companies
f them) from the Iourney

uz; his companie was that

me of the Towne were in

companies of Don Iuan de

D. of Bisquet, some in Ba-

in the ships.
ducats.

den with match and har-

rest falling into the hands
of 500. as I coniecture first
eof, there was found euerie
both grewe themselves for
which hurt many of them
of such was our first and
salt and all kinde of pro-
ayd Commissarie of victuals
ision for a new Voiage into
England:

England: whereby you may coniecture what the spoile thereof hath aduantaged vs, and preiudiced the King of Spaine.

The next morning about eight of the clocke, the Enemie abandoned their Shippes. And hauing ouercharged the Artillarie of the Gallion, left her on fier, which burnt in terrible sort two daies together, the fier and ouercharging of the peeces being so great, as of 50. that were in her, ther wer not aboue 16. taken out whole, the rest with ouer charge of the powder beeing broken and molten, with heat of the fire, was taken out in broken peeces into diuerse Shippes. The same day was the Cloister on the South side of the Towne entered by vs, which ioyned very neare to the wall of the Towne, out of the Chambers and other places whereof wee beate into the same with our Musquetiers.

The next day in the afternoone there came downe some 2000. men gathered together out of the cuntry, euen to the gates of the towne, as resolutlie (led by what spirit I know not) as though they would haue entered the same: but at the first defence made by ours that had the gard there, wherein were slaine about eightene of theirs, they tooke them to their heeles in the same disorder they made their approach, and with greater speede than ours were able to followe; Notwithstanding, we followed after them more than a mile.

The second day Col. Huntley was sent into the cuntry with three or foure hundred men, who brought home verie great store of Cowes and Sheepe for our reliefe.

The third day in the night the Generall had in purpose to take a long Munition house builded vpon their wall, opening towards vs, which would haue giuen vs great aduantage against them; but they knowing the commoditie thereof for vs. burnt it in the beginning of the euening: which put him to a newe counsell, for hee had likewise brought some Artillarie to that side of the towne. During this time, there happened a verie great fire in the lower end of the towne; which had it not been by the care of the Generals heedilie seen vnto, and the furie thereof preuented, by pulling downe many houses which were most in danger, as next vnto them, had burnt all the prouisions we found there, to our wonderfull hinderance.

The 4. day were planted vnder the garde of the Cloyster two demie Canons, and two Culuerings against the towne, defended or gabbioned with a crosse wall, through the which our batterie lay; the first & second tyre whereof shooke al the wall downe, so as the ordnance lay al open to the enemy, by reason whereof some of y^e Canoniers were shot & some slaine. The Lieutenant also of the ordnance Master Spencer was slaine fast by sir Edward Norris, Master thereof: whose valor being accompanied with an honorable care of defending that trust committed vnto him, he neuer left that place, till he receiued direction from the Generall his brother to cease the Batterie which hee presently did, leauing a guard vpon the same for that day: and in the night following made so good defence for the place of the Batterie, as after there were verie few or none annoyed therein.

That day Captain Goodwin had in commandement from the Generall, that when the assault should be giuen to the Towne, he should make a profer of an escalade on the other side, where hee helde his guard: but he (mistaking the signall that should haue been giuen) attempted the same long before the assault, & was shot in the mouth. The same daye the Generall hauing planted his Ordinance readie to batter, caused the towne to be summoned, in which summons, they of the Towne shot at our Drum: immediately after that there was one hanged ouer the wall, and a parley desired, wherein they gaue vs to vnderstand, that the man hanged, was he that shot at the Drum before; wherein also they intreated to haue faire warre, with promise of the same on their parts: the rest of the parley was spent in talking of Don Iuan de Luna, and some other prisoners, and somewhat of the rendring of the Towne, but not much, for they listened not greatly thereunto.

Generall Norris hauing by his skilfull viewe of the Towne (which is almost all seated vpon a Rocke) found one place therof myneable, & did presently set workmen in hand withal: who after 3. daies labor, (& the seuenth after wee were entred the base Towne) had bedded their powder, but indeed not farre enough into the wall. Agaynst which time y^e breach made by y^e cannon being thought assaultable, and Companies appoynted as wel to

enter the same, as that which was expected should be blown vp by the Myne: namely, to that of the Cannon, Captaine Richard Wingfeild, and Captaine Philpot, who lead the Generalls foote Companie; with whom also Captaine Yorke went, whose principall Commandment was ouer the horsmen. And to that of the Myne, Captaine Iohn Sampson, and Captaine Anthonie Wingfeild Lieutenant Colonell to the Master of the Ordinance, with certain selected out of diuers Regiments. All these Companies being in Armes, and the assault intended to be giuen in all places at an instant, fier was put to the train of the Myne: but by reason the powder brake out backwards in a place where the caue was made too high, there could be nothing done in either place for that day. During this time, Captaine Hinder was sent with some chosen out of euerie Companie into the countrie for prouisions, whereof hee brought in good store, and returned without losse.

The next day Captaine Anthonie Sampson was sent out with some 500. to fetch in prouisions for the armie, who was encountred by them of the Countrie: but he put the to flight, & returned with good spoyle. The same night the Myners were set to worke againe, who by the second day after had wrought verie well into the foundation of the wall. Against which time the Companies aforesaid being in readines for both places (Generall Drake on the other side with 2. or 300. men in Pinnaces, making profer to attempt a strong fort vpon an Iland before the Towne, where he left more than 30. men) fier was giuen to the trayne of the Myne, which blew vp halfe the Tower vnder which the powder was planted. The Assailants hauing in charge vpon the effecting of the Myne presently to giue the assault, which they did accordingly; but too soone, for hauing entred the top of the breach, the other halfe of the Tower, which with the first force of the powder was onely shaken and made loose, fell vpon our men: vnder which were buried about 20. or 30. then being vnder that part of the Tower. This so amazed our men that stood in the breach, not knowing from whence that terror came, as they forsooke their Commanders, and left them among the ruines of the Myne. The two Ensignes of Generall Drake and Captaine Anthonie Wingfeild, were shot in the Breach, but their colours were rescued: the Generals by Captaine Sampsons Lieutenant, and Captaine Wingfeilds by himselfe. Amongst them that the wall fell vpon, was Captaine Sydenham pitifully lost: who hauing three or foure great stones vpon his lower parts, was helde so fast, as neither himselfe could stirre, nor anie reasonable Companie recouer him. Notwithstanding the next daye being found to be aliue, ther was 10. or 12. lost in attempting to relieue him.

The breach made by the Cannon, was wonderful wel assaulted by them that had the charge therof, who brought their men to the push of the pike at the top of the Breach. And being readie to enter, the loose earth (which was indeede but the rubbish of the outside of the wall) with the weight of them that were thereon slipped outwards from vnder their feete. Whereby did appeare halfe the wal vn battered. For let no man thinke that Culuerine or Demie Cannon can sufficiently batter a defensible Rampier: and of those peeces we had, the better of the Demi Canons at the second shot brake in her carriages, so as the battrie was of lesse force, being but of three peeces.

In our Retreat (which was from both breaches thorowe a narrowe lane) were many of our men hurt: and Captaine Dolphin, who serued verie well that day, was hurt in the verie Breach. The failing of this attempt, in the opinion of all the beholders, & of such as were of best iudgement, was the fall of the Myne: which had doubtlesse succeeded, the rather, because the approach was vnlooked for by the Enemie in that place, and therefore not so much defence made there as in the other. Which made the Generall grow to a new resolution: for finding that two dayes batterie had so little beaten their wall, and that he had no better preparation to batter withall: he knewe in his experience, there was no good to be done that way: which I thinke he first put in prooffe, to trie if by that terror he could get the vpper Towne, hauing no other waie to put it in hazard so speedilie, and which in my conscience had obtained the Towne, had not the Defendants been in as great perill of their liues by the displeasure of their King in giuing it vp, as by the bullet or sword in defending the same. For that day before the assault, in the view of our Armie, they burnt a Cloyster within the

Towne,

the Myne: namely, to
 pot, who lead the Ge-
 e principall Command-
 n Sampson, and Cap-
 rdinance, with certain
 nes, and the assault in-
 a of the Myne: but by
 s made too high, there
 e, Captaine Hinder was
 prouisions, whereof hee

500. to fetch in proui-
 but he put the to flight,
 to worke againe, who
 n of the wall. Against
 ces (Generall Drake on
 empt a strong fort vpon
 was giuen to the trayne
 vnder was planted. The
 tly to giue the assault,
 of the breach, the other
 nely shaken and made
 , then being vnder that
 ch, not knowing from
 t them among the ruines
 Anthonie Wingfeild, were
 by Captaine Sampsons
 that the wall fell vpon,
 at stones vpon his lower
 reasonable Companie re-
 ther was 10. or 12. lost

them that had the charge
 the Breach. And being
 sh of the outside of the
 from vnder their feete.
 thinke that Culuerine or
 of those peeces we had,
 ges, so as the battrie was

lane) were many of our
 hurt in the verie Breach.
 of such as were of best
 ded, the rather, because
 therefore not so much de-
 to a new resolution: for
 at he had no better pre-
 no good to be done that
 r he could get the vpper
 which in my conscience
 the perill of their liues by
 d in defending the same.
 ent a Cloyster within the
 Towne,

Towne, and manie other houses adioyning to the Castle, to make it the more defencible: whereby it appeared how little opinion themselves had of holding it against vs, had not God (who would not haue vs sodainly made proud) laid that misfortune vpon vs.

Hereby it may appeare, that the foure Cannons, and other pieces of batterie promised to the iourney, and not performed, might haue made her Maiestie Mistres of the Groyne: for though the Myne were infortunate, yet if the other breach had been such as the earth would haue helde our men thereon, I doo not thinke but they had entred it thoroughly at the first assault giuen: which had been more than I haue heard of in our age. And being as it was, is no more than the Prince of Parma hath in winning of all his Townes endured, who neuer entred anie place at the first assault, nor about three by assault.

The next day, the Generall hearing by a prisoner that was brought in, that the Conde de Andrada had assembled an Armie of 8000. at Puente de Burgos, sixe miles from thence in the way to Petance, which was but the beginning of an Armie: in that there was a greater leaue readie to come thether vnder the Conde de Altemira, either in purpose to relieue the Groyne, or to encamp themselves neere the place of our embarking, there to hinder the same; for to that purpose had the Marques of Seralba written to them both the first night of our landing, as the Commissarie taken then confessed, or at the least to stop our further entrance into the Countrey, (for during this time, there were many incursions made of three or foure hundred at a time, who burnt, spoyled, and brought in victuals plentifullic.) The Generall, I say, hearing of this Armie, had in purpose the next day following to visite them, against whom he carried but nine Regiments: in the Vanguard were the Regiment of Sir Roger Williams, Sir Edward Norris, and Colonell Sidney: in the Battaille, that of the Generall, of Colonell Lane, and Colonell Medkerk: and in the Rere-ward, Sir Henrie Norris, Colonell Huntley, and Colonell Brets Regiments; leauing the other fise Regiments with Generall Drake, for the garde of the Cloyster and Artillarie. About tenne of the clocke the next day, being the sixt of May, halfe a mile from the Campe, wee discouering the Enemye, Sir Edward Norris, who commanded the Vanguard in chiefe, appoynted his Lieutenant Colonell, Captaine Anthonie Wingfeild to command the shot of the same, who deuided the into three troupes; the one he appoynted to Captaine Middleton to be conducted in a way on the left hand: another to Captaine Erington to take the way on the right hand, and the bodie of them (which were Musketters) Captaine Wingfeild tooke himselfe, keeping the direct way of the march. But the way taken by Captaine Middleton met a little before with the way helde by Captaine Wingfeild, so as he giuing the first charge vpon the Enemye, was in the instant seconded by Captaine Wingfeild, who beate them from place to place (they hauing verie good places of defence, and crosse walles which they might haue held long) till they betooke them to their bridge, which is ouer a creeke comming out of the Sea, builded of stone vpon Arches. On the foote of the further side whereof, lay the Campe of the Enemye verie stronglie entrenched, who with our shot beaten to the further end of the bridge, Sir Edward Norris marching in the poynt of the pikes, without stay passed to the bridge, accompanied with Colonell Sidney, Captaine Hinder, Captaine Fulford, and diuers others, who found the way cleere ouer y same, but through an incredible volie of shot; for that the shot of their Armie flanked vpon both sides of the bridge, the further end whereof was barricaded with barrells: but they who should haue garded the same, seeing the proude approach wee made, forsooke the defence of the Barricade, where Sir Edward entered, and charging the first defendand with his pike, with verie earnestnes in ouerthrusting, fell, and was grievouslie hurt at the sword in the head, but was most honorablie reskued by the Generall his brother, accompanied with Colonell Sidney, and some other gentlemen: Captaine Hinder also hauing his Caske shot off, had fise wounds in the head and face at the sword: and Captaine Fulford was shot into the left arme at the same counter: yet were they so thoroughlie seconded by the Generall, who thrust himselfe so neere to giue encouragement to the attempt, (which was of wonderful difficultie) as their brauest men that defended that place being ouerthrowne, their whole Armie fell presentlie into route, of whom

whom our men had the chase three miles in foure sondrie waies, which they betooke themselves vnto. There was taken the stander with the Kings Armes, and borne before the Generall. How many, two thousand men (for of so many consisted our Vanguard) might kill in pursuit of 4. sundrie parties, so many you may imagine fell before vs that day. And to make the number more great, our men hauing giuen ouer the execution, and returning to their stands, found many hidden in the Vineyards and hedges which they dispatched. Also Colonell Medkerk was sent with his Regiment three miles further to a Cloyster, which he burnt and spoyled, wherein he found two hundred more and put them to the sword. There were slaine in this fight on our side onlie Captaine Cooper, and one priuate souldier: Captaine Barton was also hurt vpon the bridge in the eye. But had you seene the strong Baracades they had made on either side of the bridge, and how strongly they lay encamped thereabouts, you would haue thought it a rare resolution of ours to giue so braue a charge vpon an Armie so strongly lodged. After the furie of the execution, the Generall sent the Vanguard one way, and the Battell another, to burne and spoyle: so as you might haue seen the Countrie more than three miles compasse on fire. There was found very good store of Munition and Victuals in the Campe, some plate and rich apparell, which the better sort left behind, they were so hotlie pursued. Our Sailors also landed in an Island next adioyning our shippes, where they burnt and spoyled all they found. Thus we returned to the Groyne, bringing small comfort to the enemy within the same, who shot many times at vs as wee marched out, but not once in our coming backe againe.

The next day was spent in shipping our Artillarie landed for the Batterie, and of the rest taken at the Groyne, which had it been such as might haue giuen vs any assurance of a better batterie, or had there been no other purpose of our Iourney but that, I thinke the Generall would haue spent some more time in the siege of the place.

The two last nights, there were that vndertooke to fire the higher towne in one place, where the houses were builded vpon the wall by the water side: but they within suspecting as much, made so good defence against vs, as they prevented the same. In our departure there was fire put into euerie house of the lowe towne, in somuch as I may iustlie say, there was not one house left standing in the Base towne, or the Cloyster.

The next day, being the eight of May, wee embarked our Armie without losse of a man, which (had we not beaten the Enemy, at Puente de Burgos) had been impossible to haue done, for that without doubt they would haue attempted something against vs in our imbarcking: as appeared by the report of the Commissarie aforesayd, who confessed, that the first night of our landing, the Marques of Seralba writ to the Conde de Altemira, the Conde de Andrada, & to Terneis de Santisso, to bring al the forces against vs that they could possiblie raise, thinking no way so good to assure that place, as to bring an Armie thether, wherewithall they might either besiege vs in their Base Towne, if we should get it, or to lie betweene vs and our place of imbarcking, to fight with vs vpon the aduantage, for they had about 15000. souldiers vnder their commandements.

After wee had put from thence, wee had the winde so contrarie, as wee could not vnder nine daies recouer the Burlings: in which passage on the 13. day, the Earle of Essex, and with him Master Walter Deuereux his brother (a Gentleman of wonderful great hope), Sir Roger Williams, Colonell generall of the foot men, Sir Philip Butler, who hath alwaies been most inward with him, and Sir Edward Wingfield, came into the flecte. The Earle hauing put himselfe into the Iourney against the opinion of the world, and as it seemed to the hazard of his great fortune, though to the great aduancement of his reputation, (for as the honorable carriage of himselfe towards all men, doth make him highlie esteemed at home; so did his exceeding forwardnes in all seruices, make him to be wondred at amongst vs) who, I say, put off in the same winde from Famouth, that wee left Plymouth in, where he lay, because he would auoide the importunitie of messengers that were daylie sent for his returne, and some other causes more secret to himselfe, not knowing (as it seemed) what place the Generals purposed to land in, had been as farre as Cales in Andalosia, and lay vp and downe about the South Cape, where he tooke some ships laden with Corne, and brought

which they betooke themselves, and borne before the red our Vangard) might before vs that day. And execution, and returning which they dispatched, ther to a Cloyster, which put them to the sword, and one priuate souldier: ad you seene the strong longly they lay encamped to giue so braue a charge on, the Generall sent the p as you might haue seen found very good store of ell, which the better sort in an Iland next adioyn. Thus we returned to the no shot many times at vs

Batterie, and of the rest en vs any assurance of a they but that, I thinke the ce.

gher towne in one place, but they within suspecting same. In our departure as I may iustlie say, there r.

ie without losse of a man, been impossible to haue hing against vs in our im-

who confessed, that the Conde de Altemira, the forces against vs that they lace, as to bring an Armie towne, if we should get it, s vpon the aduantage, for

e, as wee could not vnder y, the Earle of Essex, and of wonderful great hope), o Butler, who hath alwaies into the fleete. The Earle world, and as it seemed to of his reputation, (for as ke him highlie esteemed at to be wondred at amongst ce left Plymouth in, where that were daylie sent for his owing (as it seemed) what ce in Andalosia, and lay vp ps laden with Corne, and brought

brought them vnto the fleete. Also in his retourne from thence to meete with our fleete, he fell with the Ilands of Bayon; and on that side of the riuer which Cannas standeth vpon: he, with Sir Roger Williams, & those Gentlemen that were with him went on shore, with some men out of the ship he was in, whom the enemie that held gard vpon the Coast, would not abide, but fled vp into the Countrey. After his coming into the fleet (to the great reioycing of vs all) he demaunded of the Generals, that after our Armie should come on shore, he might alwaies haue the leading of the Vantgard, which they easilie yeilded vnto: as being desirous to satisfie him in all things, but especially in matters so much tending to his honor as this did; so as from the time of our first landing in Portingall, hee alwaies marched in the poynt of the vangard, accompanied with Sir Roger Williams (except when the necessitie of the place hee held) called him to other seruices.

The 16. day we landed at Penicha in Portingall, vnder the shot of the Castle, and about the wast in water, more than a mile from y towne, wherein many were in peril of drowning, by reason the wind was great, & the Sea went high, which ouerthrew one boat wherein 25. of Captaine Dolphins men perished. The Enemie, being fife cōpanies of Spanyards vnder the cōmaundement of y Conde de Fuentes, sallied out of the towne against vs, & in our landing made their approach close by the water side. But the Earle of Essex, & Sir Roger Williams & his brother, hauing landed sufficient number to make 2. troupes, left one to hold the way by the water side, and led y other ouer the Sandhills: which the Enemy seeing, drew theirs likewise further into the land; not, as we coniectured, to encounter vs, but indeede to make their speedie passage away: notwithstanding they did it in such sort, as being charged by ours which were sent out by y Colonell generall vnder Captaine Iacson, they stood the same euen to the push of the pike: in which charge & at the push, Captaine Robert Piew was slaine. The Enemie being fled further thā we had reason to follow them, al our companies were drawn to the town: which being vnfortified in any place, we found vndefended by anie man against vs. And therefore the Generall caused the Castle to be sōmoned y night: which being abandoned by him that cōmaunded it, a Portingall, named Antonio de Aurid, being possessed thereof, desired but to be assured that Don Antonio was landed, whervpon he would deliuer y same, which he honestly performed. There was taken out of the Castle 100. shot & pikes, which Don Emanuel furnished his Portingals withall, & 20. barrels of powder: so as possessing both y towne & the Castle, we rested there one day; wherein some friers & other poore men came vnto their new King, promising in the name of their Countrie next adioyning, that within two daies he should haue a good supplie of horse & foote for his assistance. That day we remained there, the Generals company of horses were vnshipped.

The Generals hauing there resolved y the Armie should march ouer land to Lisbone vnder y conduct of generall Norris: & that general Drake should meet him in the riuer thereof with the fleete: that there should be one company of foote left in gard of the Castle, & 6. of the ships: also y the sicke and hurt should remaine there with prouisions for their cures.

The General, to trie y euent of the matter by expedition, the next day began to march on this sort: his owne regiment, & the regiments of Sir Roger Williams, Sir Henrie Norris, Colonel Lane, & Colonel Medkerk, in the Vangard: Generall Drake, Colonel Deuereux, S. Edward Norris, & Colonel Sidneis in y Battaile: S. Iames Hales, Sir Edward Wingfield, Colonell Vmptons, Colonell Huntleis, & Colonell Brets in the arrearward. By that time our armie was thus marshalled, general Drake, who though he were to passe by Sea, yet to make known the honorable desire he had of taking equal part of al fortunes w vs, stood vpō the ascent of an hil, by y which our Battalions must of necessitie march, & with a pleasing kindnes tooke his leaue seuerally of the cōmaunders of euerie regiment, wishing vs al happy successe in our iourney ouer the land, with a constant promise y he would, if the iniury of y wether did not hinder him, meet vs in the riuer of Lisbone with our fleete. The want of carriages the first day was such, as they were enforced to carrie their Munition vpon mens backs, which was the next day remedied.

In this march Captaine Crispe, the Prouost Marshall, caused one who (contrarie to the proclamation published at our arriual in Portingall) had broken vp a house for pillage, to be hanged, with the cause of his death vpon his breast, in the place where the act was committed: which good example prouidentlie giuen in the beginning of our march, caused the commandement to be more respectiuelie regarded all the iourney after, by them whom feare of punishment doth onlie hold within compasse. The Camp lodged that night at Lorina: The next day we had intelligence al the way that the enemie had made head of horse and foote against vs at Toras Vedras, which wee thought they would haue held: But comming thither the seconde day of our march, not two houres before our Vangarde came in, they lefte the Towne and Castle to the possession of Don Antonio.

There began the greatest want we had of victuals, especiallie of bread, vpon a Commandement giuen from the Generall, that no man should spoyle the Countrey, or take anie thing from anie Portingall: which was more respectiuelie obserued, than I thinke would haue been in our owne Countrey, amongst our owne friends and kindred: but the Countrey (contrarie to promise) hauing neglected the prouision of victuals for vs, whereby we were driuen for that time into a great scarcitie. Which moued the Colonell Generall to call all the Colonels together, and with them to aduise for some better course for our people: who thought it best, first to aduertise f King what necessitie we were in, before we shuld of our selues alter the first institution of abstinence: the Colonell generall hauing acquainted the General herewith, with his very good allowance thereof, went to the King; who after some expostulations vsed, tooke the more carefull order for our men, and after that our Armie was more plentifully relieued.

The third daye wee lodged our Armie in three sundrie villages, the one Battalion lying in Enchara de los Caualleros, another in Enchara de los Obispos, and the third in San Sebastians.

Captaine Yorke who commanded the Generals horse companie, in this march made triall of the valour of the horsemen of the Enemie; who by one of his Corporalls charged with 8. horses through 40. of them, and himselfe through more than 200. with some 40. horse: who would abide him no longer than they could make way from him.

The next day we marched to Loris, and had diuers intelligences that the enemie would tarrie vs there: for the Cardinall had made publique promise to them of Lisbonne, that he would fight with vs in that place, which hee might haue done aduantageouslie; for we had a bridge to passe ouer in the same place: but before our comming hee dislodged, notwithstanding it appeared vnto vs that hee had in purpose to encampe there: for wee found the ground staked out where their trenches should haue been made: and their horsemen with some few shot shewed themselves vpon a hill at our comming into that village. Whom Sir Henrie Norris (whose Regiment had the poynt of the Vanguard) thought to draw vnto some fight, and therefore marched without sound of Drum, and somewhat faster than ordinarie, thereby to get neere them before hee were discouered, for he was shadowed from them by an hill that was betweene him and them: but before he could draw his companies anie thing neere, they retired.

Generall Drakes regiment that night for the commoditie of good lodging, drewe themselves into a Village, more than one English mile from thence, and neare the Enemie: who not daring to doo anie thing against vs in foure dayes before, tooke that occasion, and in the next morning fell downe vpon that Regiment, crying, *Viua el Rey Don Antonio*, which was a generall salutation thorough all the Countrey as they came: whom our young Souldiers (though it were vpon their guard, and befe re the watch were discharged) began to entertaine kindly, but hauing got within their guard, they fell to cut their throates: but the Alarme being taken inwards, the Officers of the two next Companies, whose Captaines, (Captaine Sydnam and Captaine Young) were lately dead at the Groyne, brought down their colours and pikes vpon them in so resolute manner, as they presently draue them to retyre with losse: they killed of ours at their first entrance 14. and hurt sixe or seauen.

The next day we lodged at Aluelana within three miles of Lisbonne, where many of our Souldiers drinking in two places of standing waters by the waie, were poysoned, & t ereon presently

who (contrarie to the
a house for pillage, to
place where the act was
ginning of our march,
journey after, by them
Camp lodged that night
emie had made head of
would haue held: But
fore our Vangarde came
io.

of bread, vpon a Com-
e Countrey, or take anie
ed, than I thinke would
kindred: but the Coun-
tualls for vs, whereby we
the Colonell Generall to
me better course for our
ssitie we were in, before
e the Colonell generall
nce thereof, went to the
ll order for our men, and

the one Battalion lying in
he third in San Sebastians.
in this march made triall
Corporalls charged with 8
with some 40. horse: who

ces that theemie would
them of Lisbonne, that he
antagonuslie: for we had a
ng hee dislodged, notwith-
e there: for wee found the
and their horsemen with
to that village. Whom Sir
thought to draw vnto some
what faster than ordinarie,
was shadowed from them by
aw his companies anie thing

lodging, drew themselves
neare the Enemie: who not
ke that occasion, and in the
y Don Antonio, which was a
our young Souldiers (though
began to entertaine kindly,
but the Alarme being taken
nes, (Captaine Sydnam and
wn their colours and pikes
to retire with losse: they

Lisbonne, where many of our
were poisoned, & t ereon
presently

presently died: some doo thinke it came rather by eating of honnie, which they found in
the houses plentifully. But whether it were by water or by honnie, the poore men were
poysoned.

That night the Earle of Essex, and Sir Roger Williams went out about eleuen of the clock
with 1000. men to lye in Ambuscade neere the Towne, and hauing layd the same verie neere,
sent some to giue the Alarme vnto the Enemie: which was well performed by them that had
the charge thereof, but the Enemie refused to issue after them, so as the Earle returned as
soone as it was light without dooing anie thing, though he had in purpose, and was readie to
haue giuen an honourable charge on them.

The 25. of May in the euening we came to the Suburbes of Lisbonne: at the verie entrance
whereof, Sir Roger Williams calling Captain Anthony Wingfield with him, tooke thirtie shot
or thereabouts, and first scowred al the streetes till they came verie neare the Towne; where
they found none but olde folkes and beggers, crying Viua el Rey Don Antonio, and the
houses shut vp: for they had carried much of their wealth into the Towne, and had fired
some houses by the water side, ful of corne and other prouisions of victualls, least we should
be benefited thereby, but yet left behinde them great riches in manie houses.

The foure Regiments that had the Vanguard that day which were Colonell Deuereux, Sir
Edward Norris, Colonell Sydneys, and Generall Drakes whome I name as they marched, the
Colonell Generall caused to hold guard in the nearest streates of the Suburbs: The Battaile
and the arrierward stood in Armes al the night in the field neare to Alcantara. Before morn-
ing Captaine Wingfield by direction from y Colonell Generall Sir Roger Williams helde guard
with Sir Edward Norris his Regiment in three places verie neere the Towne wal, and so helde
the same till the other Regiments came in the morning. About midnight they within the
Towne burnt all their houses that stood vpon their wall either within or without, least we
possessing them, might thereby greatly haue annoyed the Towne.

The next morning Sir Roger Williams attempted, (but not without perill) to take a Church
called S. Antonio, which ioyned to the wall of the towne, and woulde haue been a verie euill
neighbour to the towne: but the Enemie hauing more easie entrie into it than wee, gained
it before vs. The rest of that morning was spent in quartering the Battaile and arrierward
in the Suburbs called Bona Vista, & in placing Musquetiers in houses, to frunt their shot
vpon the wall, who from the same scowred the great streates verie dangerouslie.

By this time our men being thoroughly wearie with our sixe dayes March: and the last
nights watch, were desirous of rest: whereof the Enemie being aduertised, about one or two
of the clocke sallied out of the Town, and made their approach in three seuerall streates vpon
vs, but chiefly in Colonell Bretts quarter: who (as most of the Armie was) being at rest,
with as much speed as he could drew his men into Armes, and made head against them so
thoroughly, as himselfe was slaine in the place, Captaine Carsey shot through the thigh, of
which hurt he died within four dayes after, Captaine Carre slaine presently, and Captaine
Caue hurt (but not mortally) who were all of his Regiment.

This resistance made as wel here, as in other quarters where Colonell Lane and Colonell
Medkerke commanded, put them to a sodaine fowle retreat: in so much, as the Earle of
Essex had the chase of them euen to the gates of the high Towne, wherein they left behinde
them many of their best Commanders: their Troope of horsemen also came out, but being
charged by Captaine Yorke, withdrew themselves againe. Manie of them also lefte the streates,
and betooke them to houses which they found open: for the Sericant Maior Captaine Wilson
slewe in one house with his owne hands three or foure, and caused them that were with him to kil
manie others. Their losse I can assure you did triple ours, as well in qualitie as in quantitie.

During our march to this place Generall Drake with the whole flecte was come into Cas-
cais, and possessed the Towne without anie resistance: manie of the inhabitants at their
discoverie of our Naue, fled with their baggage into the Mountaines, and lefte the Towne
for anie man that would possesse it, till Generall Drake sent vnto them by a Portingall Pilot
which he had on board, to offer them all peaceable kindnes, so farre forth as they would ac-
cept of their King, and minister necessities to the Armie he had brought: which offer they
joyfully

joyfully embraced, & presently sent two chieffemen of their Towne, to signifie their loyaltie to Don Antonio, and their honest affections to our people. Whereupon the Generall landed his Cōpanies not farre from the Cloyster called San Domingo, but not without perill of the shot of the Castle, which being guarded with sixtie flue Spaniards helde still agaynst him.

As our fleete were casting anker when they came first into that Road, there was a small ship of Brasil that came from thence, which bare too with them, and seemed by striking her sayles, as though she would also haue ankered: but taking her fittest occasion, hoysed againe, and would haue passed vp the Riuer, but the Generall presently discerning her purpose, sent out a Pinnace or two after her, which forced her in such sort, as she ranne her selfe vpon the Rocks: all the men escaped out of her, and the lading (being manie chests of sugar) was made nothing woorth by the salt water. In his going thether also, he tooke ships of the Port of Portingall, which wer sent from thence, with fiteene other from Pedro Ver- mendes Xantes Serieant Maior of the same place, laden with men and victuals to Lisbon: the rest that escaped, put into Sant' Vués. The next day it pleased General Norris to cal al ʒ Colonells together, and to aduise with them, whether it were more expedient to tarrie there to attend the forces of the Portingall horse and foote whereof the King had made promise, and to march some conuenient number to Cascais to fetch our Artillerie and munition, which was all at our ships, sauing that which for the necessitie of the Seruice, was brought along with vs: Whereunto, some carried away with the vaine hope of Don Antonio, that most part of the Towne stood for vs, held it best to make our abode there, and to send some 3000. for our Artillarie: promising to themselves, that the Enemie being wel beaten the day before, would make no more sallies: Some others, (whose vnbeleefe was verie strong of anie hope from the Portingall) perswaded rather to march whollie away, than to be anie longer carried away with an opinion of things, whereof there was so little apparence. The Generall, not willing to leaue anie occasion of blott to be layd vpon him for his speedie going from thence, nor to loose anie more time by attending the hopes of Don Antonio; tolde them, that though the Expedition of Portingall were not the onely purpose of their Iourney, but an aduerture therein; which if it succeeded prosperously, might make them sufficiently rich, & wonderfull honorable; and that they had done so much already in triall thereof, as what ende soeuer happened, could nothing impair their credits: Yet in regard of the Kings last promise, that hee should haue that night 3000. men armed of his owne Countrey, he would not for that night dislodge. And if they came, thereby to make him so strong, that hee might send the like number for his munition, he would resolute to trie his fortune for the Towne. But if they came not, he found it not conuenient to diuide his forces, by sending anie to Cascais, and keeping a Remainder behinde, sithence he saw them the day before so boldly sally vpon his whole Armie, and knew that they were stronger of Soldiers armed within the Towne, than hee was without: And that before our returne could be from Cascais, that they expected more supplies from all places of Souldiers, for the Duke of Bragantia, and Don Francisco de Toledo were looked for with great reliefe. Whereupon his conclusion was, that if the 3000. promised, came not that night, to march wholly away the next morning.

It may bee here demanded, why a matter of so great moment should be so slenderlie regarded, as that the Generall should march with such an Armie against such an Enemie, before hee knewe either the fulnes of his owne strength, or certaine meanes how he should abide the place when he should come to it. Wherein I pray you remember the Decree made in the Councell at Penicha, and confirmed by publike protestation the first day of our march, that our Nauie should meete vs in the Riuer of Lisbon, in the which was the store of all our provisions, & so the mean of our tariance in that place, which came not, though we continued till we had no Munition left to entertaine a verie small fight. We are also to consider that the King of Portingall (whether carried away with imagination by the aduertisements hee received from the Portingalls, or willing by any promise to bring such an Armie into his Countrey, thereby to put his fortune once more in triall) assured the Generall, that vpon his first landing, there would be a reult of his subjects: whereof there was some hope giuen at our first entrie to Penicha, by the manner of the yeelding of that Towne and fort, which made

to signifie their loyaltie
pon the Generall landed
ot without perill of the
lde still agaynst him.

Road, there was a small
and seemed by striking
fittest occasion, hoysed
ntly discerning her pur-
ort, as she ranne her selfe

(being manie chests of
ether also, he tooke ships
ne other from Pedro Ver-
nd victuals to Lisbonne:
General Norris to cal at

expedient to tarrie there
King had made promise,
erie and munition, which
uice, was brought along
Antonio, that most part of

o send some 3000. for our
ten the day before, would
ng of anie hope from the
anie longer carried away

The Generall, not willing
going from thence, nor to
le them, that though the
ourney, but an adventure

ufficiently rich, & wonder-
ereof, as what ende soeuer
e Kings last promise, that
ey, he would not for that

t, that hee might send the
e for the Towne. But if
ending anie to Cascais,
efore so boldly sally vpon

ed within the Towne, than
scals, that they expected
tia, and Don Francisco de
sion was, that if the 3000.

orning.
ould be so slenderlie re-
st such an Enemie, before
anes how he should abide

ber the Decree made in the
first day of our march, that
as the store of all our pro-
not, though we continued

are also to consider that
the aduertisements hee re-
ng such an Armie into his
e Generall, that vpon his
e was some hope giuen at

at Towne and fort, which
made

made the Generall thinke it most conuenient speedilie to march to the principall place, thereby to giue courage to the rest of the Countrie. The friers also and the poore people that came vnto him, promised that within two daies f Gentlemen and others of the Countrie would come plentifully in: within which two daies came manie more Priestes, and some verie fewe Gentlemen on horsebacke; but not till we came to Toras Vedras, where they that noted f course of things how they passed, might somewhat discover the weakenes of that people. There they tooke two daies more: and at the ende thereof, referred him till our comming to Lisbonne, with assurance that so soone as our Armie should be seene there, all the inhabitants would be for the King and fall vpon the Spaniards.

After two nights tarriance at Lisbonne, the King, as you haue heard, promised a supplie of 3000. foote, and some horse: but all his appoyntments being expired, euen to the last of a night, all his horse could not make a Cornet of 40. nor his foote furnish two Ensignes fullie, although they carried three or foure Colours: and these were altogether such as thought to enrich themselves by the ruine of their neighbors: for they committed more disorders in euerie place wher we came by spoyle, thā any of our own.

The Generall, as you see hauing done more than before his comming out of England was required by the King, and giuen credite to his many promises euen to the breach of the last, he desisted not to perswade him to stay yet nine daies longer: in which time he might haue engaged himselfe further, than with any honor he could come out of againe, by attempting a Towne fortified, wherein were more men armed against vs, than wee had to appugne them with all our Artillarie and Munition, being fiftene miles from vs, and our men then declining; for there was the first shewe of any great sicknes amongst them. Whereby it seemeth, that either his Prelacie did much abuse him in perswading him to hopes, whereof after two or three daies he sawe no semblance; or he like a sillie louer, who promiseth himselfe fauour by importuning a coy mistris, thought by our long being before his Towne, that in the ende taking pitie on him, they would let him in.

What end the friers had by following him with such deuotion, I knowe not, but sure I am, the Laitie did respite their homage till they might see which way the victorie would sway; fearing to shewe themselves apparantlie vnto him, least the Spaniard should after our departure (if we preuailed not) call them to account: yet sent they vnder hand messages to him of obedience, thereby to saue their owne if he became King; but indeede verie well contented to see the Spaniards and vs trie by blowes, who should carrie away the Crowne. For they bee of so base a mould; as they can verie well subiect themselves to any gouernment, where they may liue free frō blowes, and haue libertie to become rich, being loath to endure hazard either of life or goods. For durst they haue put on anie minds throughly to reuolt, they had three wonderfull good occasions offered them during our being there.

Themselves did in generall confesse, that there were not aboue 5000. Spaniards in that part of the Countrie, of which number the halfe were out of the Towne till the last day of our march: during which time, how easilie they might haue preuailed against the rest, any man may conceiue. But vpon our approach they tooke them all in, and combined themselves in generall to the Cardinall.

The next day after our comming thether when the sallie was made vpon vs by their most resolute Spaniards how easilie might they haue kept them out, or haue giuen vs the Gate which was held for their retreat, if they had had any thought thereof.

And two daies after our comming to Cascaies, when 6000. Spaniards and Portingalls came against vs as farre as S. Iulians by land, as you shall presentlie heare, (all which time I thinke there were not many Spaniards left in the Towne) they had a more fit occasion to shewe their deuotion to the King, than any could be offered by our tarrying there. And they could not doubt, that if they had shut them out, but that we would haue fought with them vpon that aduantage, hauing sought them in Galitia vpon disadvantage to beate them: and hauing taken so much paines to seeke them at their owne houses, whereof wee gaue sufficient testimonie in the same accident. But I thinke the feare of the Spaniard had

taken so deepe impression within them, as they durst not attempt any thing against them vpon anie hazard.

For, what ciuill Country hath euer suffred themselves to be conquered by so few men as they were; to be deprived of their naturall King, and to be tyrannized ouer thus long but they? And what Countrey liuing in slauerie vnder a stranger whom they naturally hate: hauing an Armie in the field to fight for them & their libertie, would lie still with the yoke vpon their neckes, attending if anie strangers would vnburthē them, without so much as rousing themselves vnder it but they? They will promise much in speeches, for they bee great talkers, whom the Generall had no reason to distrust without triall, & therefore marched on into their Countrey: But they perfourmed little in action, whereof wee could haue had no prooffe without this thorough triall. Wherein hee hath discovered their weaknesse, and honorably performed more than could be in reason expected of him: which had he not done, would not these malingners who seeke occasions of slander, haue reported him to bee suspicious of a people, of whose infidelitie he had no testimonie: and to be fearfull without cause, if he had refused to giue credite to their promises without anie aduventure? Let no friuolous Questionist therefore further enquire, why he marched so manie dayes to Lisbonne, and tarried there so small a while.

The next morning, seeing no performance of promise kept, he gaue order for our marching away: himselfe, the Earle of Essex, and Sir Roger Williams remaining with the Stande that was made in the high streate, till the whole Armie was drawne into the field, and so marched out of the Towne, appoynting Captain Richard Wingfield, and Captaine Anthonie Wingfield in the Arrereward of them with the shot; thinking that the Enemie (as it was most likelie) would haue issued out vpon our rising; but they were otherwise aduised.

When we were come into the field, euerie Battaillon fell into that order which by course appertained vnto them, and so marched that night vnto Cascaies. Had wee marched through his Countrie as enemies, our Souldiers had been well supplied in all their wants: but had wee made enemies of the Suburbs of Lisbonne, wee had been the richest Armie that euer went out of England: for besides the particuler wealth of euerie house, there were many warehouses by the water side full of all sorts of rich Marchandizes.

In our march that day, the Gallies which had somewhat, but not much, annoyed vs at Lisbonne, (for that our way lay along the riuer) attended vs till we were past S. Iulians, bestowing many shot amongst vs, but did no harme at all, sauing they strooke off a priuate Gentlemans legge, and killed the Sergeant Maiors moyle vnder him. The horsemen also followed vs a farre of, and cut off as many sicke men as were not able to hold in march, nor we had carriage for.

After we had been two daies at Cascais, wee had intelligence by a frier, that the Enemie was marching strongly towards vs, and then come as farre as S. Iulians: which newes was so welcome to the Earle of Essex and the Generalls, as they offered euerie one of them to giue the messenger a hundred Crownes if they found them in the place: for the Generall desiring nothing more than to fight with them in field rounge, dispatched that night a messenger with a Trompet, by whom he writ a Cartell to the Generall of their Armie, wherein he gaue them the lie, in that it was by them reported that we dislodged from Lisbonne in disorder and feare of them (which indeede was most false) for that it was fise of the clock in the morning before wee fell into Armes, and then went in such sort, as they had no courage to followe out vpon vs. Also he challenged him therein, to meete him the nexte morning with his whole Armie, if he durst attend his comming, and there to trie out the iustnes of their quarrell by battaile: by whom also the Earle of Essex (who preferring the honor of the cause, which was his Countries, before his owne safetie) sent a particuler Cartell, offering himselfe against any of theirs, if they had any of his qualitie: or if they would not admit of that, sixe, eight, or tenne, or as many as they would appoynt, should meete so many of theirs in the head of our Battaile to trie their fortunes with them, and that they should haue assurance of their returne and honorable intreatie.

The

any thing against them

tered by so few men as
ized ouer thus long but
on they naturally hate:
d lie still with the yoke
em, without so much as
speeches, for they bee
out triall, & therefore
on, whereof wee could
discouered their weak-
expected of him: which
ons of slander, haue re-
d no testimonie: and to
promises without anie
re, why he marched so

he gaue order for our
ams remaining with the
drawne into the field,
Vingfield, and Capitaine
king that the Enemie (as
but they were other-

at order which by course
ies. Had wee marched
plied in all their wants:
been the richest Armie
th of euerie house, there
archandizes.

not much, annoyed vs at
we were past S. Iulians,
they strooke off a priuate
him. The horsemen also
able to hold in march,

a frier, that the Enemie
ans: which newes was so
euerie one of them to
place: for the Generall
dispatched that night a
Generall of their Armie,
dislodged from Lisbon
for that it was faine of the
in such sort, as they had
erein, to meete him the
ing, and there to trie out
f Essex (who preferring
safetie) sent a particuler
his qualitie: or if they
y would appoynt, should
fortunes with them, and
eatie.

The

The Generall accordingly made all his Armie readie by three of the clocke in the morn-
ing and marched euen to the place where they had encamped, but they were dislodged in
the night in great disorder, being taken with a sodaine feare that we had been come
vpon them, as the Generall was the next daye certainly informed: so as the Trumpet
followed them to Lisbon, but could not get other answere to either of his letters,
but threatning to bee hanged, for daring to bring such a message: howbeit the
Generall had caused to bee written vpon the backside of their passport, y if they
did offer any violence vnto the messengers, he would hang the best prisoners he had
of theirs: which made them to aduise better of the matter and to returne them home, but
without answere.

After our Armie came to Cascais, and the Castle sommoned, the Castilian thereof
graunted, that vpon fife or sixe shot of the Cannon hee would deliuer the same, but not
without sight thereof. The Generall thinking that his distresse within had been such for
want of men or victuals as he could not hold it many daies, because he sawe it otherwise
defensible enough, determined rather to make him yeeld to that necessitie, than to bring
the Cannon, and therefore onlie set a gard vpon the same, least anie supplie of those
things which hee wanted should bee brought vnto them. But he still standing vpon those
conditions, the Generall about two daies before he determined to goe to Sea, brought three
or foure peeces of batterie against it: vpon the first tire whereof he rendered, and com-
pounded to goe away with his baggage and Armes: he had one Cannon, two Culuerings,
one Basiliske, and three or foure other field peeces, threescore and fife Souldiers, verie
good store of munition, and victuals enough in the Castle; insomuch as hee might haue
held the same longer than the Generall had in purpose to tarie there. One Companie of
foot men was put into the garde thereof, til the Artillarie was taken out, & our Armie em-
barked; which without hauing that fort, we could not without great perill haue done. When
we were readie to set saile (one halfe of the fort being by order from the General blowne
vp by myne) the Companie was drawne away.

During the time we lay in the Road, our fleete began the second of Iune, and so con-
tinued sixe daies after to fetch in some hulks to the number of 60. of Dansik, Staten, Ras-
tock, Lubec, and Hamburg, laden with Spanish goods, and as it seemed for the Kings
prouision, and going for Lisbon: their principall lading was Corne, Mastes, Cables, Cop-
per and Waxe: amongst which were some of great burthen wonderfull well builded for sail-
ing, which had no great lading in them, and therefore it was thought that they were brought
for the Kings prouision, to reinforce his decayed Nauie: whereof there was the greater like-
lihood, in that the owner of the greatest of them, which carried two Misnes, was knowne to
be verie inward with the Cardinall, who rather hee would be taken with his ships, committed
himselfe vnto his small boate, wherein he recouered S. Sebastians. Into the which our men,
that before were in fleebatoes, were shipped, and the fleebatoes sent home with an offer
of Corne to the value of their hire. But the wind being good for them for Rochel, they
chose rather to lose their Corne than the winde, and so departed. The Generall also sent his
horses with them, and from thence shipped them into England.

The third of Iune, Colonell Deuereux and Colonell Sydney, being both verie sicke, de-
parted for England, who in the whole journey had shewed themselues verie forward to all
seruices, and in their departure verie vnwilling to leaue vs; that day we embarked all our
Armie, but lay in the Road vntil the eight thereof.

The sixt day the Earle of Essex, vpon receipt of letters from her Maiestie, by them that
brought in the victuals, presentlie departed towards England, with whom Sir Roger Williams
was verie desirous to goe, but found the Generals verie vnwilling he should do so, in y he
bare the next place vnto them, and if they should miscarrie, was to command the Armie.
And the same day there came vnto vs two small Barks that brought tidings of some other
shippes come out of England with victuals, which were passed vpwards to the Cape: for
meeting with whom, the second day after wee set saile for that place, in purpose after our
meeting with them to goe to the Iles of Agores, the second day, which was the ninth, wee
met

met with them comming backe againe towards vs, whose prouision little answered our expectation. Notwithstanding, we resolu'd to continue our course for the Ilands.

About this time was the Marchant Royal, with three or foure other shippes sent to Penicha, to fetch away the Companies that were left there; but Captaine Barton hauing receiued letters from the Generalls that were sent ouerland, was departed before, not being able by reason of the enemies speedie marching thether, either to bring away the Artillarie, or all his men, according to the direction those letters gaue him; for hee was no sooner gone, than the Enemie possessed the Towne and Castle, and shot at our ships as they came into the Road.

At this time also was the Ambassador from the Emperour of Moroco, called Rajs Hamet Bencasamp, returned, and with him Master Ciprian, a Gentleman of good place and desert, was sent from Don Anthonio, and Captaine Ousley from the Generalls, to the Emperour.

The next morning, the nine Gallies which were sent not siue daies before out of Andalo. sia for the strengthening of the riuier of Lisbone (which being ioyned with the other twelue that were there before, though wee lay hard by them at S. Iulians, durst neuer make any attempt against vs vpon our departure from thence) were returning home, and in the morning being a verie dead calme, in the dawning thereof fell in the winde of our fleete, in the vttermost part whereof they assailed one stragling Barke of Plymouth, of the which Captaine Cauery being Captaine of the land Companie, with his Lieutenant, the Master, and some of the Marriners abandoned the shippe, and betooke them to the ship boates, whereof one, in which the Master & the Captain wer, was ouerrun with the Gallies, and they drowned. There was also two hulks stragled farre from the strength of the other ships, which were so calmed, as neither they could get to vs, nor we to them, though all the great ships towed with their boates to haue relieued them, but could not be recovered; in one of which was Captaine Minshaw with his Companie, who fought with them to the last, yea after his ship was on fire, which whether it was fired by himselfe or by them we could not well discerne, but might easilie iudge by his long and good fight, that the Enemie could not but susteine much losse, who setting also vpon one other hulk wherein was but a Lieutenant, and he verie sicke, were by the valour of the Lieutenant put off, although they had first beaten her with their Artillarie, and attempted to board her. And seeing also one other hulke a league of, a sterne of vs, they made towards her; but finding that she made readie to fight with them, they durst not further attempt her: whereby it seemed their losse being great in the other fights, they were loath to proceed any further.

From that day till the 19. of Iune, our direction from the Generall was, that if the winde were Northerlie wee should plie for the Açores; but if Southerlie, for the Iles of Bayon.

Wee lay with contrarie windes about that place and the Rocke, till the Southerlie wind preuailling carried vs to Bayon, part of our ships to the number of 25. in a great winde which was two dayes before, hauing lost the Admiralls and fleete, according to their direction, fell in the morning of that day with Bayon, among whom, was Sir Henrie Norris in the Ayde: who had in purpose (if the Admiralls had not come in) with some 500. men out of them all to haue landed, and attempted the taking of Vigo. The rest of the fleete helde with Generall Drake, who though he were two dayes before put vpon those Islandes, cast off againe to sea for the Açores: but remembring how vnprovided he was for that Iourney, & seeing that he had lost manie of his great ships, returned for Bayon, and came in there that night in the Euening, where he passed vp the riuier more than a mile aboue Vigo.

The next morning we landed as manie as were able to fight, which were not in the whole about 2000. men, (for in the 17. dayes wee continued on board wee had cast manie of our men ouer board) with which number the Colonell Generall marched to the Towne of Vigo, neare the which when hee approached, hee sent Captaine Anthonie Wingfield with a Troope of shot to enter one side of the same, who found vpon euerie streetes end a strong Barricade, but altogether abandoned: for hauing entered the Towne, he found but one man therin, but might see them making way before him to Bayon. On the other side of the Towne entred Generall Drake with Captaine Richard Wingfield, whose approach on that

little answered our ex-
the Islands.
shippes sent to Penicha,
arton hauing receiued
ore, not being able by
ay the Artillarie, or all
as no sooner gone, than
as they came into the

co, called Rays Hamet
f good place and desert,
s, to the Emperour.
before out of Andalo.
d with the other twelve
durst neuer make any
home, and in the morn-
de of our fleete, in the
of, of which Capitaine
t, the Master, and some
ip boates, whereof one,
llies, and they drowned.
her ships, which were so
t the great ships towed
; in one of which was
ast, yea after his ship was
d not well discerne, but
d not but susteine much
enant, and he verie sicke,
st beaten her with their
ke a league of, a sterne of
with them, they durst not
e other fights, they were

ll was, that if the winde
e, for the Iles of Bayon,
till the Southerlie wind
f 25. in a great winde
according to their direc-
was Sir Henric Norris in
) with some 500. men
The rest of the fleete
put vpon those Islandes,
ded he was for that four-
for Bayon, and came in
than a mile aboue Vigo,
which were not in the
oord wee had cast manie
ll marched to the Towne
ine Anthonie Wingfield
on euerie streetes end a
he Towne, he found but
yon. On the other side
eld, whose approach on
that

that side (I thinke) made them leaue the places they had so artificially made for defence:
there were also certaine ships sent with the Vizeadmirall to lye close before the Towne, to
beate vpon the same with their artillarie.

In the afternoone were sent 300. vnder the conduct of Capitaine Petuin and Capitaine
Henric Pour, to burne another village betwixt that & Bayon, called Borsis, & as much
of the Countrey as the day would giue them leaue to doo; which was a verie pleasant rich
Valley, but they burnt it all, houses and corne, as did others on the other side of the
Towne, both that and the next day, so as the Countrey was spoyled seuen or eight miles in
length. There was found great store of wine in the Towne, but not anie thing els: for the
other daies warning of the ships that came first in, gaue them a respite to carrie all away.

The next morning by breake of the day, the Colonell Generall, (who in absence of the
Generalls that were on board their ships, commanded that night on shore) caused all our
Companies to be drawn out of the Towne, and sent in two Troops to put fier in euerie house
of the same, which done we embarked againe.

This day, there were certaine Marriners (without anie direction) put themselves on shoare,
on the contrarie side of the Riuer from vs, for pillage; who were beaten by the Enemie
from their boates, and punished by the Generalls for their offer, in going without allowance.

The reasons why we attempted nothing against Bayon, were before shewed to bee want of
artillarie, and may now be alledged to be the small number of our men: who should haue
gone against so strong a place, manned with verie good souldiers, as was showed by Iuan de
Vera taken at the Groyne, who confessed that there were 600. olde Souldiers in Garrison
there of Flanders, and the Tercios of Naples, lately also returned out of the Iourney of En-
gland: vnder the leading of Capitan Puebla.

Christofero Vasques de Viralta, a Souldier of Flanders.

Don Petro Camascho, de tercio de Napoles.

Don Francisco de Cospedes.

Capt. Iuan de Solo, de tercio de Napoles.

Don Diego de Cassana.

Capt. Sauban.

Also he saith, there be 18. peeces of brasse, and foure of yron lately layd vpon the walls
of the Towne, besides them that were there before.

The same day the Generalls seeing what weake estate our Armie was drawn into by sick-
nesse, determined to man and victuall 20. of the best ships for the Islandes of Açores with
Generall Drake, to see if he could meeete with the Indian fleete, and Generall Norris to re-
turne home with the rest. And for the shifting of men and victualls accordingly, purposed
the next morning to fall downe to the Islandes of Bayon againe, and to remaine there that
daye. But Generall Drake according to their appoyntment being vnder sayle, neuer strooke
at the Islandes, but put straight to sea; whom all the fleete followed sauing 33. which being
in the Riuer further than he, and at the enterance out of the same, finding the winde and
tide too hard against them, were inforced to cast Anker there for that night: amongst whom,
by good fortune was the Foresight, and in her Sir Edward Norris. And the night following,
Generall Norris being driuen from the rest of the fleete by a great storme, (for all that daye
was the greatest storme we had all the time we were out) came agayne into the Islands, but
not without great perill, hee beeing forced to trust to a Spanish fisher-man (who was taken
two dayes before at sea) to bring him in.

The next morning he called a Councell of as manie as he found there, holding the pur-
pose he had before concluded with Sir Francis Drake the day before, and directed all their
courses for England, tarying there all that day to water and helpe such with victuall, as
were left in wonderfull distresse, by hauing the victualls that came last, caried away the
day before to sea.

The next day he set sayle, & the tenth day after, which was the second of Iuly came into
Plymouth, where he found Sir Francis Drake, & all the Queenes ships, with manie of the
others, but not all: for the fleete was dispersed into other harbors; some lead by a desire of
returning

returning from whence they came, and some being possessed of the hulkes, sought other Ports from their Generals eye, wher they might make their priuate commoditie of them, as they haue done to their great aduantage.

Presently vpon their arriall there, the Generals dissolued all the Armie, sauing 8. Companies, which are yet held together, giuing euerie Souldier fīue shillings in money, and the Armes he bare to make money of, which was more than could by anie meanes be due vnto the; for they were in seruice three months, in which time they had their victualls, which no man will value at lesse than halfe their pay; for such is the allowance in her Maiesties ships to her Marriners, so as there remained but ten shillings a month more to be paid, for which there was not any priuate man but had apparell and furniture to his own vse, so as euerie common Souldier discharged, receaued more in money, victualls, apparell, and furniture, than his pay did amount vnto.

Notwithstanding, there be euen in the same place wher those things haue passed, that either doo not or will not conceaue the Souldiers estate, by comparing their pouertie and the shortnesse of the time together, but lay some iniuries vpon the Generalls and the action. Where, and by the way, but especiallie here in London, I finde there haue been some false prophets gone before vs, telling straunge tales: for as our Countrey doth bring forth manie gallant men, who desirous of honour, doo put themselues into the actions thereof, so dooth it manie more dull spirited, who though their thoughtes reach not so high as others, yet doo they listen how other mens acts doo passe, and eyther beleueing what anie man will report vnto them, are willingly caried away into errors, or tied to some greater mans faith, become secretaries against a noted truth. The one sort of these do take their opinions from the high way side, or at the fardest goe no farther than Paules to enquire what hath been done in this Voyage: where, if they meete with anie, whose capacitie before their going out could not make them liue, nor their valour maintain their reputation, and who went onely for spoyle, complayning on the hardnesse and miserie thereof, they thinke they are bound to giue credite to these honest men who were parties therein, and in verie charitie become of their opinions. The others to make good the faction they are entred into, if they see anie of those malecontents (as euerie journey yeeldeth some) doo runne vnto them like tempting spirits to confirme them in their humour, with assurance that they foresawe before our going out what would become thereof.

Be ye not therefore too credulous in beleueing euerie report, for you see there haue been many more beholders of these things I haue passed, thā actors in the same; who by their experience, not hauing the knowledge of the ordinarie wants of the warre, haue thought that to lie hard, not to haue their meate well dressed, to drinke sometimes water, to watch much, or to see men die and be slaine, was a miserable thing; and not hauing so giuen their minds to the seruice as they are any thing instructed thereby, doo for want of better matter discourse ordinarilie of these things: whereas the iourney (if they had with that iudgement seen into it, and as their places required) hath giuen them farre more honorable purpose and argument of discourse.

These mens discontentments and mislikings before our comming home, haue made me labour thus much to instruct you in the certaintie of euerie thing, because I would not willinglie haue you miscarried in the iudgements of them, wherein you shall giue me leaue somewhat to delate vpon a question, which I onlie touched in the beginning of my letter, namelie, whether it bee more expedient for our estate to maintaine an offensive warre against the King of Spaine in the Lowe Countries, or as in this iourney, to offend him in his neerer Territories, seeing the grounds of arguing thereof are taken from the experience which the actions of this iourney haue giuen vs.

There is no good subject that will make question whether it bee behoofefull for vs to hold friend-ship with these neighbours of ours or no, as well in respect of the infinite proportion of their shipping, which must stand either with vs or against vs; as of the commoditie of their harbors, especiallie that of Vlissing, by the fauour wherof our Naue may continuallie keepe the Narrow Seas, and which would harbour a greater flecte against vs, than the Spaniard

the hulkes, sought other
commoditie of them, as

the Armie, sauing 8. Com-
hillings in money, and the
anie meanes be due vnto
their victualls, which no
nce in her Maiesties ships
ore to be paid, for which
his own vse, so as euerie
apparell, and furniture,

things haue passed, that
paring their pouertie and
e Generalls and the action.
ere haue been some false
ey doth bring forth manie
e actions thereof, so dooth
so high as others, yet doo
what anie man will report
e greater mans faith, be-
ke their opinions from the
uire what hath been done
efore their going out could
who went onely for spoyle,
they are bound to giue cre-
aritie become of their opi-
if they see anie of those
them like tempting spirits
we before our going out

or you see there haue been
in the same; who by their
of the warre, haue thought
sometimes water, to watch
d not hauing so giuen their
o for want of better matter
ey had with that iudgement
more honorable purpose

g home, haue made me la-
cause I would not willinglie
ill giue me leaue somewhat
ing of my letter, namelie,
offensiu warre against the
fend him in his neerer Ter-
e experience which the ac-

e behooffull for vs to hold
t of the infinite proportion
; as of the commoditie of
our Naue may continuallie
against vs, than the Spa-
niard

niard shall neede to annoy vs withall; who being now distressed by our common Enemie, I thinke it most expedient for our safetie to defend them, and if it may bee to giue them a reentrie into that they haue of late yeares lost vnto him. The one without doubt her Maies- tie may doo without difficultie, and in so honorable sort as he shall neuer be able to dispos- sesse her or them of any the townes they now hold. But if any man thinke that the Spa- niard may bee expelled from thence more speedilie, or conuenientlie by keeping an Armie there, than by sending one agaynst him into his own Countrie: let him foresee of how many men and continuall supplies that Armie must consist, and what intollerable expences it re- quireth. And let him thinke by the example of the Duke of Alua, when the Prince of Orrenge had his great Armie against him: and of Don Iohn, when the States had their mightie assemblie against him, how this wise Enemie, with whom wee are to deale, may but by pro- longing to fight with vs, leaue vs occasions enough for our Armie within fewe moneths to mutine and breake; or by keeping him in his Townes leaue vs a spoyled field: where though our prouision may be such of our owne as we starue not, yet is our weaknes in any strange Countrie such, as with sicknes and miserie we shall be dissolued. And let him not forget what a continuall burthen wee hereby lay vpon vs, in that to repoesse those Countries which haue been lately lost, will be a warre of longer continuance than wee shall be able to endure.

In the verie action whereof, what should hinder the King of Spaine to bring his forces home vnto vs? for it is certaine he hath long since set downe in Councell, that there is no way for him whollie to recouer those Lowe Countries, but by bringing the warre vpon En- gland it selfe, which hath alwaies assisted them against him: and that being determined, and whereunto he hath been vehementlie vrged by the last yeeres losse he sustained vpon our Coasts, and the great dishonor this iourney hath laid vpon him; no doubt if we shall giue him respite to doo it, but he will mightelie aduance his purpose, for he is richlie able thereunto, and wonderfull desirous of reuenge.

To encounter wherewith, I wish euen in true and honest zeale to my Countrie, that wee were all perswaded that there is no such assured meanes for the safetie of our estate, as to busie him with a well furnished Armie in Spaine, which hath so many goodlie Bayes open, as wee may land without impeachment as many men as shall be needfull for such an inua- sion. And hauing an Armie of twentie thousand royallie furnished there, wee shall not neede to take much care for their paiment: for shall not Lisbon be thought able to make so fewe men rich, when the Suburbs thereof were found so abounding in riches, as had we made enemie of them, they had largely enriched vs all? which with what small losse it may be wonne, is not here to shewe; but why it was not wonne by vs, I haue herein shewed you. Or is not the spoyle of Ciuill sufficient to pay more than shall be needfull to be sent against it, whose defence (as that of Lisbon) is onlie force of men, of whom how many may for the present bee raised, is not to be esteemed, because wee haue discovered what kinde of men they bee; euen such as will neuer abide ours in field, nor dare withstand any resolute attempt of ours against them: for during the time wee were in many places of their Coun- trie, they cannot say that euer they made twentie of our men turne their faces from them. And be there not many other places of lesse difficultie to spoyle, able to satisfie our forces?

But admit that if vpon this Alarme that wee haue giuen him, he tendring his naturall and neerest soyle before his further remoued off governments, do drawe his forces of old Soul- diers out of the Low Countries for his own defence, is not the victorie then wonne by draw- ing and holding them from thence, for the which we should haue kept an Armie there at a charge by many parts greater than this, and not stirred them?

Admit further our Armie bee impeached from landing there, yet by keeping the Sea, and possessing his principall Roades, are wee not in possibilitie to meete with his Indian Mer- chants, and verie like to preuent him of his prouisions comming out of the East Countries? without the which, neither the subiect of Lisbon is long able to liue, nor the King able to maintain his Naue: for though the countrey of Portingall doo some yeres finde themselves corne, yet are they neuer able to victuall the least part of that Citie. And albeit the King

of Spaine be the richest Prince in Christendome, yet can he neyther draw cables, hew maais, nor make powder out of his mettalls, but is to bee supplied of them all from thence. Of whom (some will holde opinion) it is no reason to make prize, because they be not our enemies: and that our disagreement with them, will impeach the trade of our Merchants, and so impouerish our Countrey. Of whose minde I can hardly be drawn to be: for, if my enemy fighting with me doo breake his sword, so as I thereby haue the aduantage against him; what shall I thinke of him that putteth a new sword into his hand to kil me withal? And may it not be thought more fitting for vs in these times to loose our trades of Cloath, than by suffering these mischiefes, to put in hazard, whether we shall haue a Countrey lefte to make cloth in, or no? And yet though neither Hamburgh, Embden, nor Stode doo receiue our cloth, the necessarie vse thereof in all places is such, as they will finde meanes to take it from vs, with our sufficient commoditie.

And admit (which were impossible) that wee damnifie him neither at sea nor land (for vnlesse it bee with a much more mightie Armie than ours, he shall neuer be able to withstand vs) yet shal we by holding him at his home, free our selues from the warre at our owne walles: the benefite whereof let them consider, y best can iudge, & haue obserued the differēce of inuading, & being inuaded; the one giuing courage to the Souldier, in that it dooth set before him commoditie and reputation; the other a fearfull terror to the Countrey man, who if by chaunce hee play the man, yet is he neuer the richer: and who knowing manie holes to hide himselfe in; will trie them all before hee put his life in perill by fighting: whereas the Inuador casteth vp his accompt before he goeth out, and being abroad must fight to make himselfe way, as not knowing what place or strength to trust vnto. I will not say what I obserued in our Countrey men when the enemy offered to assaile vs here: but I wish that all England knewe what terror we gaue to the same people that frightened vs, by visiting them at their owne houses.

Were not Alexanders fortunes great against the mightie Darius, onely in that his Macedonians thirsted after the wealth of Persia, and were bound to fight it out to the last man, because the last man knewe no safer waye to saue himselfe, than by fighting? Whereas the Persians, either trusting to continue still masters of their wealth by yielding to the Inuador, began to practise against their owne King: or hauing more inward hopes, did hide themselves euen to the last, to see what course the Conquerour would take in his Conquest. And did not the aduice of Scipio, though mightely impugned at the first, proue verie sound and honorable to his Countrey? Who, seeing the Romanes wonderfully amazed at the nearnesse of their enemies forces, and the losses they dayly sustained by them, gaue counsaile, rather by way of diuersion to carrie an Armie into Affricke, & there to assaile, than by a defensieue warre at home to remaine subiect to the commō spoyles of an assailing Enemy. Which being put in execution, drew the Enemy from the Gates of Rome, and Scipio returned home with triumph: albeit his beginnings at the first, were not so fortunate against thē, as ours haue been in this small time against the Spaniard. The good successe whereof, maye encourage vs to take Armes resolutely against him. And I beseech God it may stirre vp all men that are particularly interested therein, to bethinke themselves how small a matter will assure them of their safetie, by holding the Spaniard at a bay, so farre of: whereas if wee giue him leaue quietly to hatch and bring forth his preparations, it will bee with danger to vs all.

He taketh not Armes against vs by anie pretence of title to the Crowne of this Realme, nor led altogether with an ambitious desire to command our Countrey, but with hatred towards our whole Nation and Religion: Her Maiesties Scepter is already giuen by Bull to another, the honours of our Nobilitie are bestowed for rewardes vpon his attendants, our Clergie, our Gentlemen, our Lawyers, yea all men of what condition soeuer, are offered for spoyle vnto the common Souldier. Let euerie man therefore in defence of the libertie and plentie hee hath of long enioyed, offer a voluntarie contribution of the smallest part of their store for the assurance of the rest. It were not much for euerie Iustice of peace, who by his blewē coatē protecteth the properest and most seruiceable men at euerie

draw cables, hew masts, and
em all from thence. Of
use they be not our ene-
of our Merchants, and
drawn to be: for, if my
e the aduantage against
s hand to kil me withal?
se our trades of Cloath,
shall haue a Countrey left
en, nor Stode doo receiue
will finde meanes to take it

ther at sea nor land (for
all neuer be able to with-
es from the warre at our
iudge, & haue obserued
urage to the Souldier, in
er a fearfull terror to the
uer the richer: and who
e hee put his life in perill
he goeth out, and being
e or strength to trust vnto.
emie offered to assaile vs
e same people that frighted

is, onely in that his Mace-
out to the last man, because
ing? Whereas the Persians,
ling to the Inuador, began
hopes, did hide themselves
ke in his Conquest. And
he first, proue verie sound
wonderfully amazed at the
ined by them, gaue coun-
e, & there to assaile, than
no spoyles of an assailing
in the Gates of Rome, and
first, were not so fortunate
aniard. The good successe
him. And I beseech God it
o bethinke themselves how
Spaniard at a bay, so farre
g forth his preparations, it

the Crowne of this Realme,
Country, but with hatred
er is already giuen by Bull
des vpon his attendants, our
condition soeuer, are offered
therefore in defence of the
untarie contribution of the
e not much for euerie Iustice
nd most seruiceable men at
euerie

euerie muster from the warres, to contribute the charge that one of these idle men doo put him to for one yere: nor for the Lawyer, who riseth by the dissensions of his neighbors, to take but one yeares giftes (which they call fees) out of his coffers. What would it hinder euerie Officer of the Exchequer, and other of her Maiesties Courtes, who without checke doo sodainlie grow to great wealth, honestlie to bring forth, the mysticall commoditie of one yeres profites? or the Clergie, who looke precisely for the Tenths of euerie mans increase, simply to bring forth the Tenth of one yeares gathering, and in thankfulness to her Maiestie, (who hath continued for all our safeties, a most chargeable warre both at land and sea) bestowe the same for her honour and their owne assurance vpon an Armie which may make this bloodie Enemie, so to knowe himselfe and her Maiesties power, as hee shall bethinke him what it is to moue a stirring people? Who, though they haue receaued some small checke by the sicknesses of this last Iourney, yet doubt I not, but if it were made known, that the like Voyage were to be supported by a generalitie, (that might and would beare the charge of a more ample prouision) but there would of all sortes most willingly put themselves into the same: some carried with an honorable desire to be in action, & some in loue of such, would affectionately follow their fortunes, some in thirsting to reuenge the death and hearts of their brethren, kindred, and friends: and some in hope of the plentiful spoyles to be found in those Countreyes, hauing been there already and returned poore, would desire to goe againe, with an expectation to make amends for the last: and all, in hatred of that cowardly proud Nation, and in contemplation of the true honor of our own, would with courage take Armes, to hazard their liues against them, whom euerie good English man is in nature bound to hate as an implacable Enemie to England, thirsting after our blood, and labouring to ruine our land, with hope to bring vs vnder the yoke of perpetuall slauerie.

Against them is true honour to bee gotten, for that wee shall no sooner set foote in their land, but that euery steppe we tread will yeeld vs newe occasion of action, which I wish the gallantrie of our Countrey rather to regarde, than to followe those soft vnprofitable pleasures, wherein they now consume their time and patrimonie. And in two or three Townes of Spaine is the wealth of all Europe gathered together, which are the Magasins of the fruits and profites of the East and West Indies: whereunto I wish our young able men, who against the libertie they are borne vnto, (terme themselves Seruing men) rather to bend their desires and affections, than to attend their double liuerie and fortie shillings by the yeare wages, and the reuersion of the old Coppie-hold, for carrying a dish to his masters table. But let me here reprehend my selfe and craue pardon, for entring into a matter of such state and consequence, the care whereof is already laid vpon a most graue and honorable Councill, who will in their wisdomes foresee the dangers that may bee threatned against vs. And why do I labour to disquiet the securitie of these happie Gentlemen, & the trade of those honest Seruing men, by perswading them to the warres, when I see the profession thereof so slenderlie esteemed? for though al our hope of peace bee frustrate, and our quarels determinable by the sword: though our Enemie hath by his own forces and his pensionaries industrie, confined the vnited Prouinces into a narrowe rounge, and almost disunited the same: if he be now in a good way to harbour himselfe in the principall Hauens of France, from whence he may frunt vs at pleasure: yea though wee are to hope for nothing but a bloodie warre, nor can trust to any helpe but Armes; yet how farre the common sort are from reuerencing or regarding any persons of Conduction, was too apparent in the returne of this our Iourney, wherein the base and common souldier hath been tollerated to speake against the Captaine, and the souldier and Captaine against the Generalls, and wherein mechanicall and men of base condition doo dare to censure the dooings of them, of whose acts they be not worthe to talke.

The auncient graue degree of the Prelacie is yphelde, though Martin rayle neuer so much, and the Lawyer is after the olde manner worshipped, whosoever inueigh against him: But

the auncient English honour is taken from our Men of Warre, and their Profession in disgrace, though neuer so necessarie. Either we commit Idolatrie to Neptune, and will put him alone still to fight for vs as he did the last yere, or we be enchanted with some diuellish opinions, that trauaile nothing more than to diminish the reputation of them, vpon whose shoulders the burthen of our defence against the Enemie must lie when occasion shall be offered. For whensoever he shall set foote vpon our land, it is neither the preaching of the Clergie that can turne him out againe, nor the pleading of any Lawyers that can remoue him out of possession: no, then they will honour them whom now they thinke not on, and then must those men stand betweene them and their perills, who are now thought vnworthie of any estimation.

May the burning of one Towne (which cost the King then being, sixe times as much as this hath done her Maiestie, wherein were lost seauen times as many men as in any one seruice of this iourney, and tarried not the tenth part of our time in the Enemies Countrey) bee by our elders so highly reputed, and sounded out by the historie of the Realme; and can our voyage be so meanlie esteemed, wherein wee burned both Townes and Countries without the losse of fortie men in any such attempt?

Did our Kings in former times reward some with the greatest titles of honour for ouerthrowing a number of poore Scots, who after one battaile lost, were neuer able to reenforce themselues against him; and shall they in this time who haue ouerthrowne our mightie Enemie in battaile, and taken his royall Standard in the field, besieged the Marques of Saralba fifteene daies together, that should haue been the Generall of the Armie against vs, brought away so much of his Artillarie (as I haue before declared) be vnworthelie esteemed of?

Is it possible that some in some times should receiue their reward for looking vpon an Enemie, and ours in this time not receiue so much as thanks, for hauing beaten an Enemie at handie strokes?

But it is true, that no man shall be a Prophet in his Countrey: and for my owne part, I will lay aside my Armes till that profession shall haue more reputation, and liue with my friends in the Countrey, attending either some more fortunate time to vse them, or some other good occasion to make me forget them.

But what? shall the blind opinion of this Monster, a beast of many heads, (for so hath the generalitie of old been termed) cause me to neglect the profession from whence I challenge some reputation; or diminish my loue to my Countrey, which hetherto hath nourished mee? No, it was for her sake I first tooke Armes: and for her sake I will handle them so long as I shall be able to vse them: not regarding how some men in priuate conuenticles doo measure mens estimations by their owne humours; nor how euerie populer person doth giue sentence on euerie mans actions by the worst accidents. But attending the gracious aspect of our dread Soueraigne, who neuer yet left vertue vnrewarded: and depending vpon the iustice of her most rare and graue aduisors, who by their heedie looking into euerie mans worth, doo giue encouragement to the vertuous to exceede others in vertue: and assuring you that there shall neuer any thing happen more pleasing vnto me, than that I may once againe be a partie in some honorable iourney against the Spaniard in his owne Countrey, I will cease my complaint: and with them that deserue beyond me, patiently endure the vnaduised censure of our malicious reprouers.

If I haue seemed in the beginning hereof troublesome vnto you in the discouering of those impediments; and answering the slaunders which by the vulgar malicious and mutinous sort are laid as blemishes vpon the iourney, and reproaches vpon the Generalls (hauing indeede proceeded from other heads:) let the necessitie of conseruing the reputation of the action in generall, and the honors of our Generalls in particular, be my sufficient excuse: the one hauing by the vertue of the other made our Countrey more dreaded and renowned, than any act that euer England vnderooke before? Or if you haue thought my perswasible discourse long in the latter end; let the affectionate desire of my Countries good bee therein answerable for me. And such as it is I pray you accept it, as onely recommended to your selfe, and not to bee deliuered to the publique view of the world, least any man take offence thereat;

their Profession in disgrace,
he, and will put him alone
in some diuellish opinions,
in, vpon whose shoulders
vision shall be offered. For
aching of the Clergie that
can remoue him out of pos-
sion on, and then must those
ht vnworthie of any esti-

ing, sixe times as much as
any men as in any one ser-
in the Enemies Countrie)
storie of the Realme; and
both Townes and Countries

titles of honour for ouer-
ere neuer able to reenforce
erthrowne our mightie Ene-
ed the Marques of Saralba
e Armie against vs, brought
nworthelie esteemed of?
ward for looking vppon an
or hauing beaten an Enemie

y: and for my owne part, I
putation, and liue with my
time to vse them, or some

of many heads, (for so hath
offession from whence I chal-
which hetherto hath nourished
sake I will handle them so
n in priuate conuenticles doo
erie populer person doth giue
attending the gracious aspect
l: and depending vpon the
die looking into euerie mans
hers in vertue: and assuring
to me, than that I may once
iard in his owne Countrie, I
me, patiently endure the vn-

ou in the discovering of those
r malicious and mutinous sort
ne Generalls (hauing indeede
the reputation of the action
my sufficient excuse: the one
dreaded and renowned, than
thought my perswasible dis-
Countries good bee therein
onely recommended to your
ld, least any man take offence
thereat;

thereat; which some particuler men may seeme iustlie to doo, in that hauing deserued verie well, I should not herein giue them their due commendations; whereas my purpose in this priuate discourse, hath been onelie to gratifie you with a touch of those principall matters that haue passed, wherein I haue onelie taken notes of those men who either commanded euery seruice, or were of chieftest marke: if therefore you shall impart the same to one, and hee to another, and so it passe through many hands, I knowe not what constructions would be made thereof to my preiudice; for that the Hares eares may happelie bee taken for hornes. Howbeit, I hold it very necessarie (I must confesse) that there should bee some true manifestation made of these things: but bee it farre from me to bee the author thereof, as verie vnfit to deliuer my censure of any matter in publique, and most vnwilling to haue my weaknes discovered in priuate. And so doo leaue you to the happie successe of your accustomed good exercises, earnestlie wishing that there may bee some better acceptance made of the fruites of your studies, than there hath been of our hazards in the warres. From London the 30. of August. 1589.

FINIS.



THE
OMISSIONS
OF
CALES VOYAGE,

STATED AND DISCUSSED

BY
THE EARL OF ESSEX.

NOW
FIRST PUBLISHED FROM A MANUSCRIPT IN THE POSSESSION

OF THE MOST NOBLE

THE MARQUIS OF STAFFORD.



THE
OMISSIONS
OF
CALES VOYAGE.

The * first & greatest occasion let slip in our Voyage was, that we did not possess our selues of the flecte that was bound for the Indies, the lading whereof would not onelie haue paid all charges of the iorneie, but haue enabled vs a great while to wage warre with Spaine, with the meanes of Spaine. To which I aunswere, that if either I had ben followed the first morning of our comminge before the harbor when I bare with it; or if we had entred the same Sundaie in the afternoone when we were vnder saile, & within cannon shot of the enemies flecte, or after the men of warre were taken & burnt, the next daie if anie shipping had gone vp as I vrged by mine owne speech sent by Sir Anthonie Ashlie, who being secretarie at wars was to record euerie mans seruice or omission; if anie of these had ben don, then I saie had that fleet ben easilie possessed. For the first morning they had neither their men aboard, as it was since confessed by our prisoners, nor were provided of any counsel what to doe. In the afternoone the same daie we had found the men of warre & the Marchaunts fleet altogether in one bodie, & engaged them both at once, so as at the same time we had defeated the one, we had possessed the other. And the next daie presentlie vpon the fight & victorie against the Kings shippes, we had found them all so amazed & confounded as they would have thought of nothing but of sauing themselues, & we had taken the ships, the riches in them, & the fleet of gallies, without striking a blow; as both our prisoners & captaines out of the gallies haue assured vs. But the first morning when I boare with the harbor, almost all the fleet came to an anchor by the point Saint Sebastian a league wide of me, & gaue the enemy leasure to send men & all necessaries aboard. When I was gon in, I could neither get my companion to waigh his anchor, nor most of those that were waied to goe in with me. And the next daie I had much a do to make our ships fight at all. And when God had giuen vs victorie, my perswasions nor protestations could make them that were sea-commanders go or send vp to possess the fleet of the Indies, whiles we assailed the towne, so as the enemy had almost 48. howers to burne his owne shippes.

* The Editor takes this opportunity of making his grateful acknowledgements to the Marquis of Stafford, for his permission to print this Tract from his curious Manuscript; and to the Reverend H. J. Todd, for furnishing him with the accurate transcript from which it is printed.

The second imputation that maie be laid to vs, was, that we did abandon Cales, when we were possesst of it, whereas the holding of it would haue ben a naile not in the foote of this great monarch but in his side, & haue serued for a diuersion of all the wars in these parts. To which I aunswere, that some of our sea-commanders, & especiallie my colleague, did not onelie oppose themselves to that designe, (whose oppositions mine instructions made an absolute barre,) but when we came to see how the forces that should be left there might be victualed till succours came, the victualls were for the most part hidden & embeazled, & euery ship began at that instant to feare their wants, & to talke of goeing home; soe as I should neither haue had one ship to staie at Cales, nor victualls for the garrison for 2. moneths. And therefore I was forced to leaue Cales, & did not choose to abandon it.

The third obiection we haue to aunswere is, whie we did not lie for the carricks & Indian ships, seing we were on the coast the verie time that is thought fittest for their intercepting & vsuall of their retourne. In which I must first cite the testimonie of all our commanders by land & sea, that when we had in our retourne from Cales doubled the Cape St. Vincent comonlie called the South Cape, I vrged our going to th' Islands of Ozores, founding my selfe vpon these reasons: first, that, it was more certaine to attend them at the land-fall where theie must needs touch, then to seeke them in the wide sea; & next, that the aduises sent out of Spaine & Portingall since our being of myght meete them at the Islands, & make them diuert from coming thither. Besides, the Spaniards after theie saw vs engaged at Cales would neuer suspect or dreame of our going to the Islands. And when this counsell was reiected, & we come in the sight of Lisbon, I there againe pressed the lying for them with a selected fleet, & offered vpon that condition to send home the land-forces, & all such ships as want of victualls, leaks, sickness, or anie thing els had made vnfit to staie out at sea. But first the L. Admirall & Sr. W[il]liam Rawligh did directlie by attestation vnder their hands contradict the first proposition that I made, that some ships should attend that seruice. And when we came to the hypothesis, which were fitt & their capitaines content to staie out in all the fleet, except the Low Countrie Squadron, there could be found but two, my L. Thom. Howard & my selfe; so as by the whole counsell at wars, it was resolued that as well my offer & opinion, as euerie mans els amongst vs, should be kept vnder his hand, for our particuler discharges, & I be barred of staieing, except my L. Admirall would assent to leaue some 8. or 10. of the Marchaunts ships besides 2. of the Queenes: which he refused to doe: & soe our designe brake of.

The last omission maie seeme to be in this, that since all our seruice consisted in taking or destroyinge the Spanish shipping & sea prouisions, that we did not looke into all his cheife ports, & do him in that kind as much hurt as we might haue done. To which I aunswere, that first my end in goeing to Cales was not onelie because it was a principall port & the likeliest to be held by vs, by cause of the seat & naturall strength of it; but also for that it was the farthest good porte south-ward; so as beginning with it we might, if some greater seruice did not diuert vs, goe to all the good ports betwixt that & the northmost ports of Biskiae: which was a better waie then to haue begonne or giuen the enemye an alarm in the midst of his Countrie, or the nearest ports to vs; for so our attempts would haue ben more difficile, & our retreats at last from those farthest ports less safe; considering the wants, infections, & other inconveniences that for the most parte doe accompanie the retraicts of our fleet & armies in long iorneyes. But after we had ended at Cales, it was by all our seamen thought a capitall offence to name the goeing ouer the Barre at St. Lucars. Betwixt St. Lucars & Lisbon there is no good porte. From Lisbon I was barred by name, if it had bene free for vs to haue gone. Yet our seamen are made of the same stuffe, Sr. Francis D: & his companie was, when theie lost the occasion of his taking Lisbon, for feare of passing by the castle of St. Iulian's. From Lisbon to the Groine there is no port to hold the Kings or anie other great shipping. To the Groin with cart-ropes I drew them: for both I vowed & protested
against

and abandon Cales, when
a naile not in the foote
raion of all the wars in
nders, & especiallie my
hose oppositions mine in-
w the forces that should
e were for the most part
feare their wants, & to
ip to staie at Cales, nor
ted to leaue Cales, & did

ot lie for the carricks &
is thought fittest for their
cite the testimonie of all
e from Cales doubled the
r going to th' Islands of
s more certaine to attend
ke them in the wide sea;
ur being of myght meete
t. Besides, the Spaniards
ame of our going to the
e sight of Lisbon, I there
ed vpon that condition to
ls, leaks, sickness, or anie
irall & Sr. Wa[l]ter Raw-
the first proposition that
en we came to the hypo-
n all the fleet, except the
L. Thom. Howard & my
that as well my offer &
his hand, for our particuler
ould assent to leaue some
which he refused to doe: &

service consisted in taking
ve did not looke into all his
t haue done. To which I
because it was a principall
naturall strength of it; but
eginning with it we might,
d ports betwixt that & the
aue begonne or giuen the
eereest ports to vs; for so
st from those farthest ports
eniences that for the most
ng iorneies. But after we
pittall offence to name the
one there is no good porte.
vs to haue gone. Yet our
mpanie was, when theie lost
y the castle of St. Iulian's.
Kings or anie other great
both I vowed & protested
against

against their refusall, & parted companie with them when they offered to hold another course. But when we came to the mouth of the harbor, & sent in some of our small vessells, we saw there was nothing there, nor yet at Furroll; for into that port also we made our discoveries to looke.

After which discoverie we held our last counsell. And then I vrged our going to St. Audica, the passage St. Sebastian, & all other good ports all along the coast. But mine associat did altogether refuse to goe farther alonge the coaste, complaininge of wants, & obiecting our being embayed, & I know not what. In which opinion Sir Walter Rawlighe strengthened him; & theie were both desirous to take vpon them the honor of breaking that designe. And of landing at the Groyne, or attempting the towne, theie would not heare by anie meanes. And presentlie every man cried to set saile homewards. Since which time theie haue made such haste, as I, tarieng behind to bring along with me the St. Andrew taken at Cales & the flie boate that carries our artillarie, haue lost them all, sauing Monsieur Oauerworme & his squadron, & some few small shippes.

THE END.

